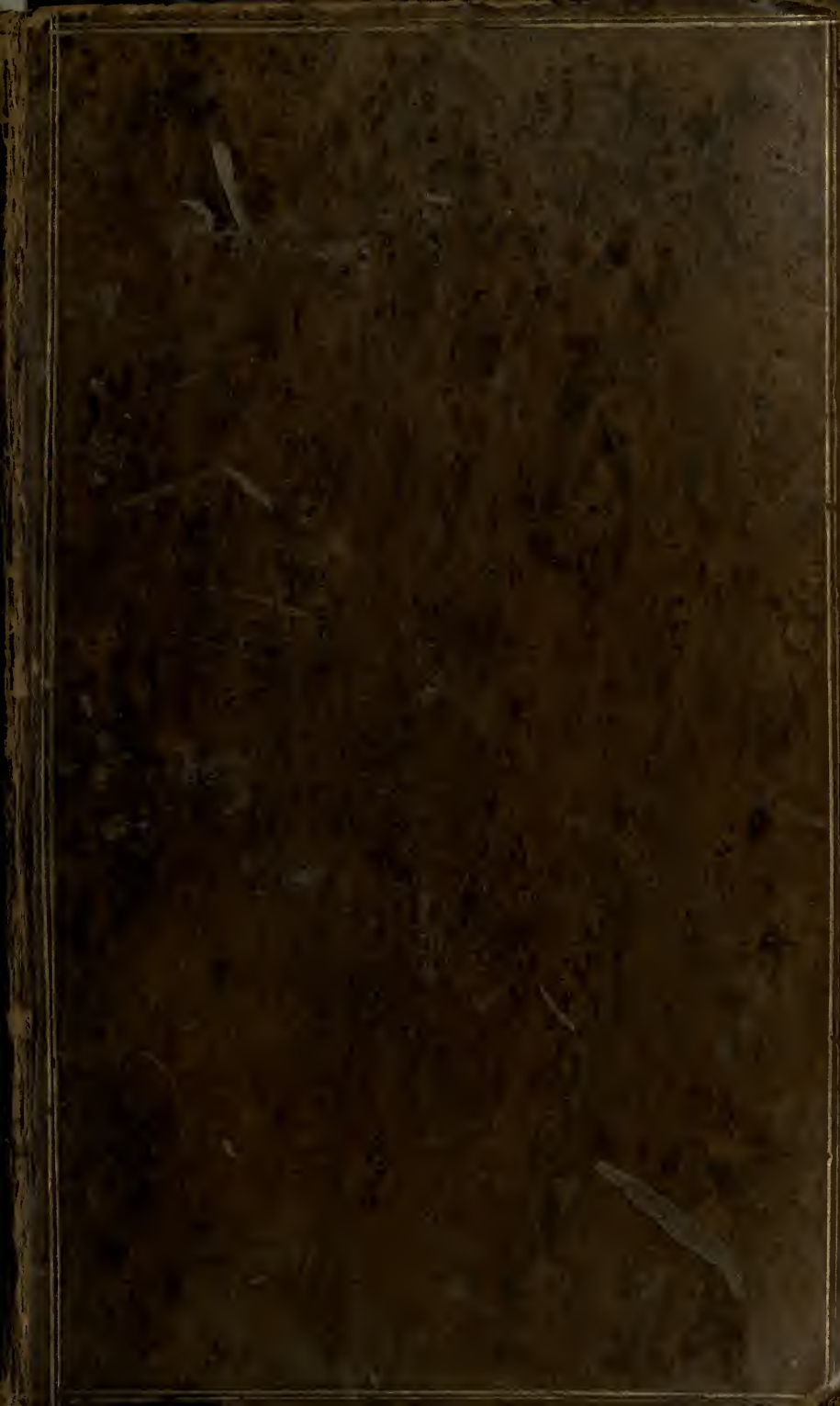
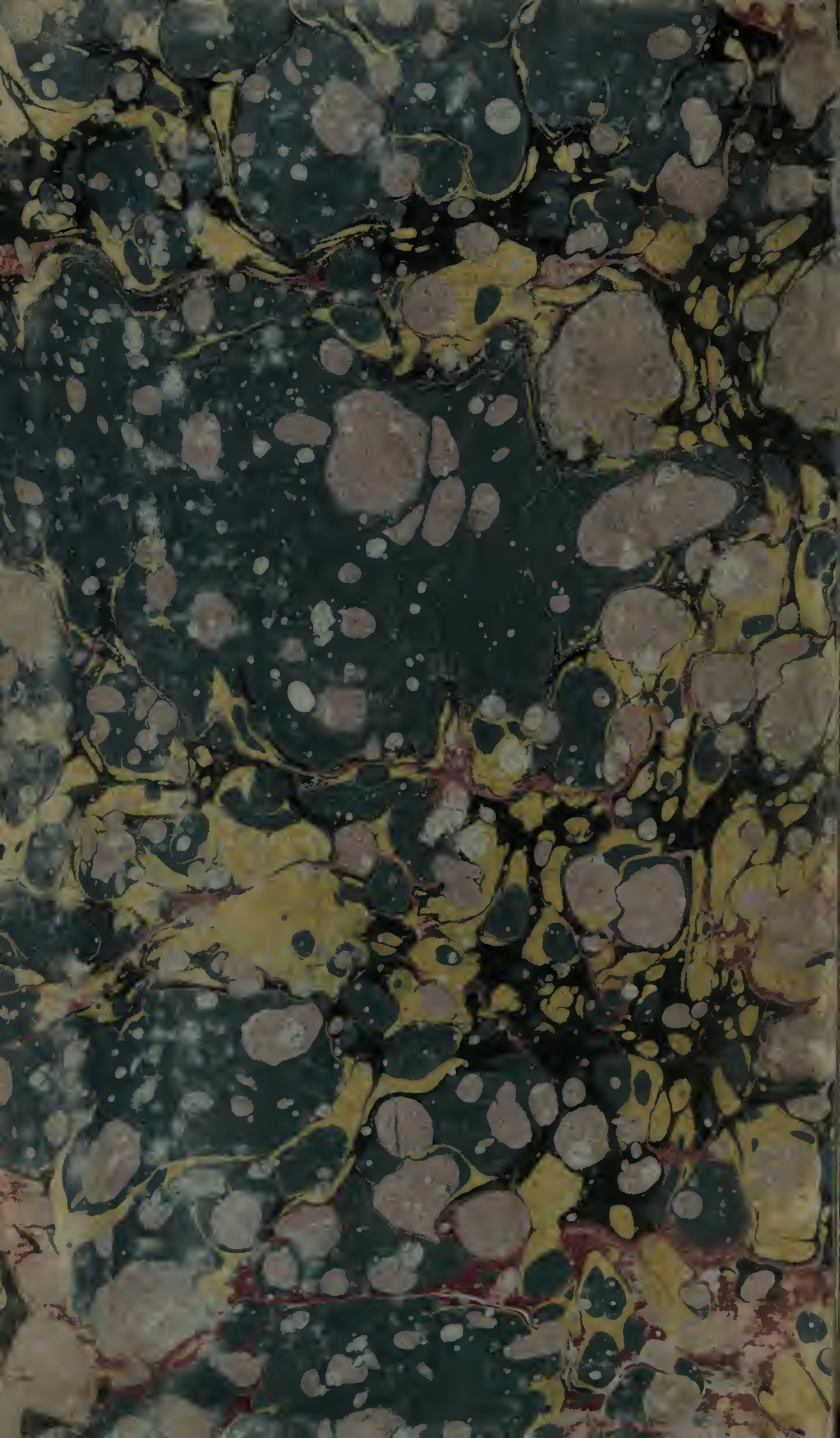
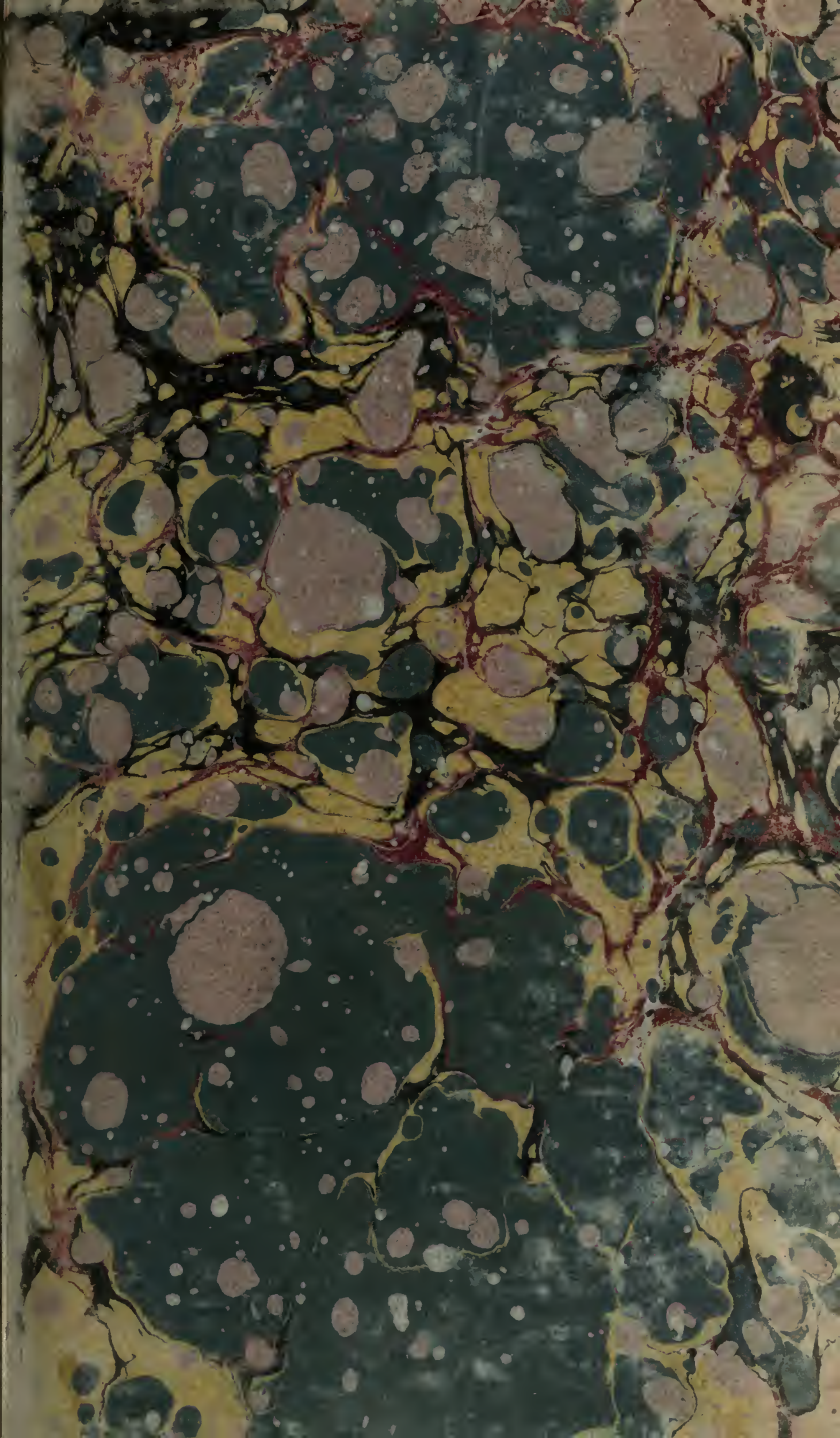








13

77

139

205

13

57

67

41

76

123

186

29

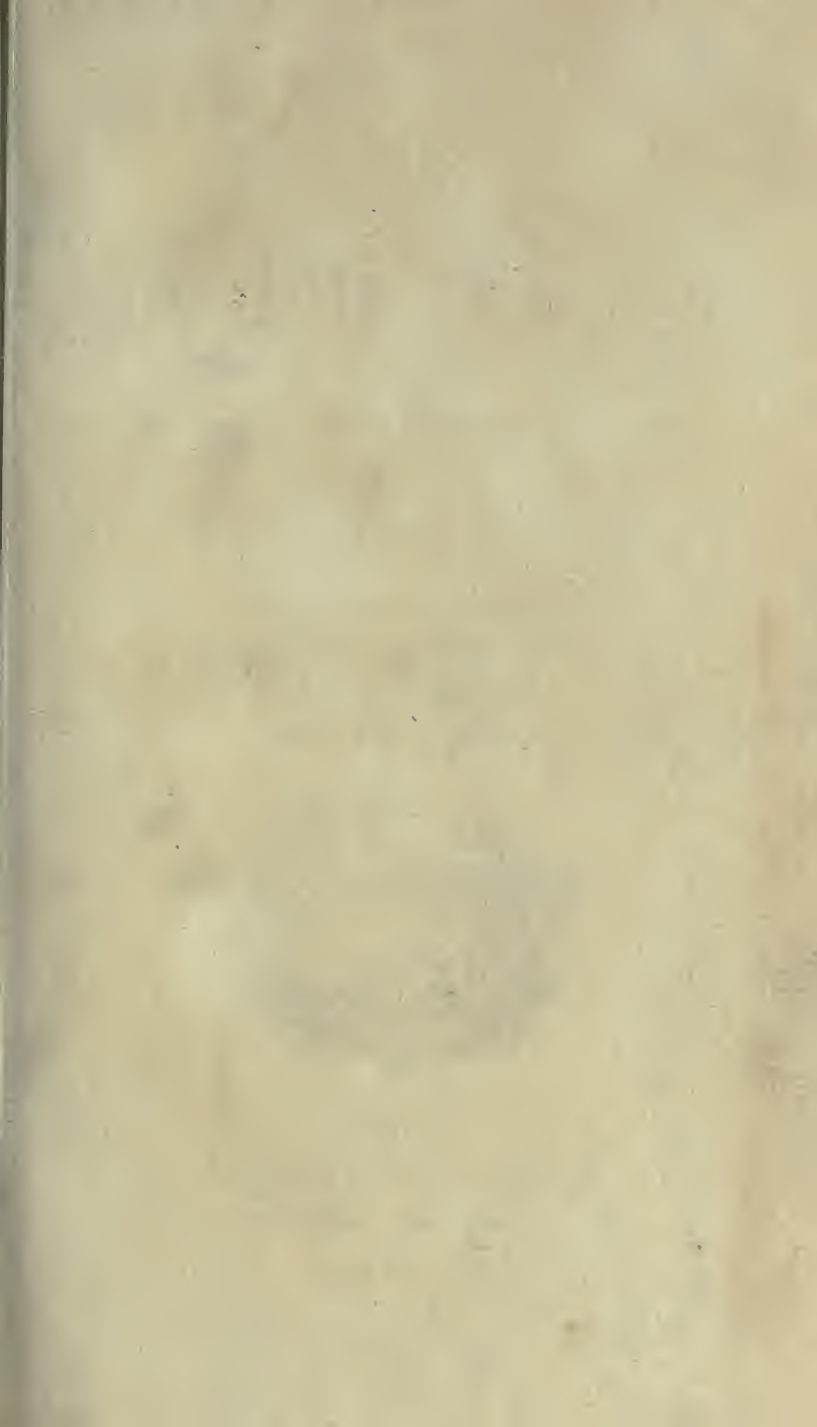
55

78

103

130

150



Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2007 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

THE
Novelist's Magazine.

VOL. XII.

(CONTAINING)

The Female Quixote,
Journey from this World to the next.
Joe Thompson,
and Peter Wilkins.



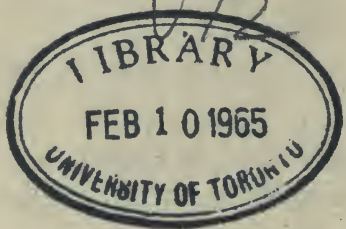
LONDON:

Printed for Harrison and C^o

N^o 18 Paternoster Row.

1783.

PR
1297
N6
U12



960464

THE
FEMALE QUIXOTE;
OR, THE
ADVENTURES
OF
ARABELLA.

BY MRS. LENOX.

IN TWO VOLUMES.



L O N D O N :

Printed for HARRISON and Co. No. 18, Paternoster-Row.

M DCC LXXXIII.

THE
FEMALE QUIXOTE;

OF THE
ADVENTURES

OF
ALABE L.A.

BY MRS. LENOX.

IN TWO VOLUMES.



NEW YORK:
PUBLISHED BY HENRY & CO. 12, NASSAU ST.
1847.



TO THE

Right Honourable the Earl of Middlesex.

MY LORD,

SUCH is the power of interest over almost every mind, that no one is long without arguments to prove any position which is ardently wished to be true, or to justify any measures which are dictated by inclination.

By this subtle sophistry of desire, I have been persuaded to hope, that this book may, without impropriety, be inscribed to your lordship; but am not certain that my reasons will have the same force upon other understandings.

The dread which a writer feels of the publick censure; the still greater dread of neglect; and the eager wish for support and protection, which is impressed by the consciousness of imbecility; are unknown to those who have never ventured into the world; and I am afraid, my lord, equally unknown to those, who have always found the world ready to applaud them.

It is, therefore, not unlikely, that the design of this address may be mistaken, and the effects of my fear imputed to my vanity: those who see your lordship's name prefixed to my performance, will rather condemn my presumption, than compassionate my anxiety.

But, whatever be supposed my motive, the praise of judgment cannot be denied me; for to whom can timidity so properly fly for shelter, as to him who has been so long distinguished for candour and humanity? How can vanity be so compleatly gratified, as by the allowed patronage of him whose judgment has so long given a standard to the national taste? Or by what other means could I so powerfully suppress all opposition, but that of envy, as by declaring myself,

My LORD,

Your LORDSHIP'S

Obliged and most Obedient

Humble Servant,

THE AUTHOR

Right Honorable the Earl of Minto

I have the honor to acknowledge the receipt of your letter of the 14th inst. in relation to the proposed extension of the charter of the Bank of Montreal, and in reply to inform you that the same has been forwarded to the proper authorities for their consideration.

I am, Sir, very respectfully, Sir, your obedient servant.

I am, Sir, very respectfully, Sir, your obedient servant.

I am, Sir, very respectfully, Sir, your obedient servant.

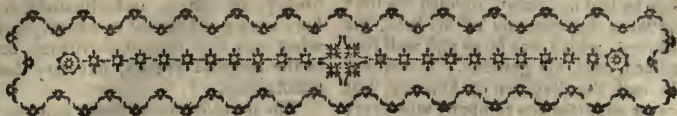
I am, Sir, very respectfully, Sir, your obedient servant.

Yours, Sir, very respectfully,

James Minto

James Minto

James Minto



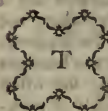
THE FEMALE QUIXOTE.

VOLUME THE FIRST.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

CONTAINS A TURN AT COURT,
NEITHER NEW NOR SURPRIZING.
—SOME USELESS ADDITIONS TO
A FINE LADY'S EDUCATION.—
THE BAD EFFECTS OF A WHIM-
SICAL STUDY, WHICH SOME WILL
SAY IS BORROWED FROM CER-
VANTES.

HE Marquis of —, for a long series of years, was the first and most distinguished favourite at court: he held the most honourable employments under the crown, disposed of all places of profit as he pleased, presided at the council, and in a manner governed the whole kingdom.

This extensive authority could not fail of making him many enemies: he fell at last a sacrifice to the plots they were continually forming against him; and was not only removed from all his employments, but banished the court for ever.

The pain his undeserved disgrace gave him, he was enabled to conceal by the natural haughtiness of his temper; and, behaving rather like a man who had resigned, than been dismissed from his posts, he imagined he triumphed sufficiently over the malice of his enemies, while he seemed to be wholly insensible of the effects it produced.

His secret discontent, however, was so much augmented by the opportunity he now had of observing the baseness and ingratitude of mankind, which in some degree he experienced every day, that he resolved to quit all society whatever, and devote the rest of his life to solitude and privacy. For the place of his retreat, he pitched upon a castle he had in a very remote province of the kingdom, in the neighbourhood of a small village, and several miles distant from any town. The vast extent of ground which surrounded this noble building, he had caused to be laid out in a manner peculiar to his taste: the most laborious endeavours of art had been used to make it appear like the beautiful product of wild uncultivated nature. But if this epitome of Arcadia could boast of only artless and simple beauties, the inside of the castle was adorned with a magnificence suitable to the dignity and immense riches of the owner.

While things were preparing at the castle for his reception, the marquis, though now advanced in years, cast his eyes on a young lady, greatly inferior to himself in quality, but whose beauty and good sense promised him an agreeable companion. After a very short courtship, he married her, and in a few weeks carried his new bride into the country, from whence he absolutely resolved never to return.

The marquis, following the plan of

life he had laid down, divided his time between the company of his lady, his library, which was large and well furnished, and his gardens. Sometimes he took the diversion of hunting, but never admitted any company whatever; his pride and extreme reserve rendered him so wholly inaccessible to the country gentry about him, that none ever presumed to solicit his acquaintance.

In the second year of his retirement, the marchioness brought him a daughter, and died in three days after her delivery. The marquis, who had tenderly loved her, was extremely afflicted at her death; but time having produced it's usual effects, his great fondness for the little Arabella entirely engrossed his attention, and made up all the happiness of his life. At four years of age he took her from under the direction of the nurses and women appointed to attend her, and permitted her to receive no part of her education from another, which he was capable of giving her himself. He taught her to read and write in a very few months; and, as she grew older, finding in her an uncommon quickness of apprehension, and an understanding capable of great improvements, he resolved to cultivate so promising a genius with the utmost care; and, as he frequently, in the rapture of paternal fondness, expressed himself, render her mind as beautiful as her person was lovely.

Nature had indeed given her a most charming face, a shape easy and delicate, a sweet and insinuating voice, and an air so full of dignity and grace, as drew the admiration of all that saw her. These native charms were improved with all the heightenings of art; her dress was perfectly magnificent; the best masters of musick and dancing were sent for from London to attend her. She soon became a perfect mistress of the French and Italian languages, under the care of her father; and it is not to be doubted, but she would have made a great proficiency in all useful knowledge, had not her whole time been taken up by another study.

From her earliest youth she had discovered a fondness for reading, which extremely delighted the marquis; he permitted her therefore the use of his

library, in which, unfortunately for her, were great store of romances, and, what was still more unfortunate, not in the original French, but very bad translations.

The deceased marchioness had purchased these books, to soften a solitude which she found very disagreeable; and, after her death, the marquis removed them from her closet into his library, where Arabella found them.

The surprizing adventures, with which they were filled, proved a most pleasing entertainment to a young lady who was wholly secluded from the world; who had no other diversion, but ranging like a nymph through gardens, or, to say better, the woods and lawns in which she was inclosed; and who had no other conversation but that of a grave and melancholy father, or her own attendants.

Her ideas, from the manner of her life, and the objects around her, had taken a romantick turn; and supposing romances were real pictures of life, from them she drew all her notions and expectations. By them she was taught to believe, that love was the ruling principle of the world; that every other passion was subordinate to this; and that it caused all the happiness and misery of life. Her glais, which she often consulted, always shewed her a form so extremely lovely, that, not finding herself engaged in such adventures as were common to the heroines in the romances she read, she often complained of the insensibility of mankind, upon whom her charms seemed to have so little influence.

The perfect retirement she lived in, afforded indeed no opportunities of making the conquests she desired; but she could not comprehend, how any solitude could be obscure enough to conceal a beauty like hers from notice; and thought the reputation of her charms sufficient to bring a crowd of adorers to demand her of her father. Her mind being wholly filled with the most extravagant expectations, she was alarmed by every trifling incident; and kept in a continual anxiety by a vicissitude of hopes, fears, wishes, and disappointments.

CHAP. II.

CONTAINS A DESCRIPTION OF A LADY'S DRESS, IN FASHION NOT MUCH ABOVE TWO THOUSAND YEARS AGO.—THE BEGINNING OF AN ADVENTURE WHICH SEEMS TO PROMISE A GREAT DEAL.

ARABELLA had now entered into her seventeenth year, with the regret of seeing herself the object of admiration to a few rusticks only, who happened to see her; when, one Sunday, making use of the permission the marquis sometimes allowed her, to attend divine service at the church belonging to the village near which they lived, her vanity was flattered with an adorer not altogether unworthy of her notice.

This gentleman was young, gay, handsome, and very elegantly dressed; he was just come from London with an intention to pass some weeks with a friend in that part of the country; and at the time Arabella entered the church, his eyes, which had wandered from one rural fair to another, were in an instant fixed upon her face. She blushed with a very becoming modesty; and, pleased with the unusual appearance of so fine a gentleman, and the particular notice he took of her, passed on to her seat through a double row of country people; who, with a profusion of awkward bows and curtsies, expressed their respect.

Mr. Hervey, for that was the stranger's name, was no less surprized at her beauty, than the singularity of her dress; and the odd whim of being followed into the church by three women attendants, who, as soon as she was seated, took their places behind her.

Her dress, though singular, was far from being unbecoming. All the beauties of her neck and shape were set off to the greatest advantage by the fashion of her gown, which, in the manner of a robe, was made to sit tight to her body, and fastened on the breast with a knot of diamonds. Her fine black hair hung upon her neck in curls, which had so much the appearance of being artless, that all but her maid, whose employment it was to give them that form, imagined they were so. Her

head-dress was only a few knots advantageously disposed, over which she wore a white sarfenet hood, somewhat in the form of a veil, with which she sometimes wholly covered her fair face, when she saw herself beheld with too much attention.

This veil had never appeared to her so necessary before. Mr. Hervey's eager glances threw her into so much confusion, that, pulling it over her face as much as she was able, she remained invisible to him all the time they afterwards stayed in the church. This action, by which she would have had him understand that she was displeased at his gazing on her with so little respect, only increased his curiosity to know who she was.

When the congregation was dismissed, he hastened to the door, with an intention to offer her his hand to help her to her coach; but seeing the magnificent equipage that waited for her, and the number of servants that attended it, he conceived a much higher idea of her quality than he had at first; and, changing his design, contented himself with only bowing to her as she passed; and as soon as her coach drove away, inquired of some persons nearest him, who she was.

These rusticks, highly delighted with the opportunity of talking to the gay Londoner, whom they looked upon as a very extraordinary person, gave him all the intelligence they were able, concerning the lady he enquired after; and filled him with an inconceivable surprise at the strange humour of the marquis, who buried so beautiful a creature in obscurity.

At his return home he expressed his admiration of her in terms that persuaded his friend she had made some impression on his heart; and, after railling him a little upon this suspicion, he assumed a more serious air, and told him, if he really liked Lady Bella, he thought it not impossible but he might obtain her. 'The poor girl,' added he, 'has been kept in confinement so long, that I believe it would not be difficult to persuade her to free herself by marriage. She never had a lover in her life; and therefore the first person who addresses her has the fairest chance for succeeding.'

Mr. Hervey, though he could not persuade himself his cousin was in earnest

when he advised him to court the only daughter of a man of the marquis's quality, and heiress to his vast estates; yet relished the scheme, and resolved to make some attempt upon her before he left the country. However, he concealed his design from his cousin, not being willing to expose himself to be ridiculed, if he did not succeed; and, turning the advice he had given him into a jest, left him in the opinion, that he thought no more of it.

CHAP. III.

IN WHICH THE ADVENTURE GOES ON AFTER THE ACCUSTOMED MANNER.

ARABELLA, in the mean time, was wholly taken up with the adventure, as she called it, at church: the person and dress of the gentleman who had so particularly gazed on her there, was so different from what she had been accustomed to see, that she immediately concluded he was of some distinguished rank. It was past a doubt, she thought, that he was excessively in love with her; and, as she soon expected to have some very extraordinary proofs of his passion, her thoughts were wholly employed on the manner in which she should receive them.

As soon as she came home, and had paid her duty to the marquis, she hurried to her chamber, to be at liberty to indulge her agreeable reflections; and, after the example of her heroines, when any thing extraordinary happened to them, called her favourite woman; or, to use her own language, her in whom she confided her most secret thoughts.

'Well, Lucy,' said she, 'did you observe that stranger who eyed us so heedfully to-day at church?'

This girl, notwithstanding her country simplicity, knew a compliment was expected from her on this occasion; and therefore replied, that she did not wonder at the gentleman's staring at her; for she was sure he had never seen any body so handsome as her ladyship before.

'I have not all the beauty you at-

'tribute to me,' said Arabella, smiling a little; 'and with a very moderate share of it, I might well fix the attention of a person who seemed not to be over much pleased with the objects about him. However,' pursued she, assuming a more serious air, 'if this stranger be weak enough to entertain any sentiments more than indifferent for me; I charge you, upon pain of my displeasure, do not be accessory to the conveying his presumptuous thoughts to me either by letters or messages; nor suffer him to corrupt your fidelity with the presents he will very probably offer you.'

Lucy, to whom this speech first gave a hint of what she ought to expect from her lady's lovers, finding herself of more importance than she imagined, was so pleased at the prospect which opened to her, that it was with some hesitation she promised to obey her orders.

Arabella, however, was satisfied with her assurances of observing her directions; and dismissed her from her presence, not without an apprehension of being too well obeyed.

A whole week being elapsed without meeting with the importunities she expected, she could hardly conceal her surprise at so mortifying a disappointment; and frequently interrogated Lucy, concerning any attempts the stranger had made on her fidelity; but the answers she received only increased her discontent, as they convinced her, her charms had not had the effect she imagined.

Mr. Hervey, however, had been all this time employed in thinking of some means to get acquainted with the marquis; for, being possessed with an extraordinary opinion of his wit, and personal accomplishments, he did not fear making some impression on the heart of the young lady; provided he could have an opportunity of conversing with her.

His cousin's advice was continually in his mind, and flattered his vanity with the most agreeable hopes: but the marquis's fondness for solitude, and that haughtiness which was natural to him, rendered him so difficult of access, that Hervey, from the intelligence he received of his humour, de-

spaired of being able to prosecute his scheme; when, meeting with a young farmer in one of his evening-walks, and entering into conversation with him upon several country subjects, the discourse at last turned upon the Marquis of —, whose fine house and gardens were within their view; upon which the yoting fellow informed him, he was brother to a young woman that attended the Lady Arabella; and, being fond of lengthening out the conversation with so fine a gentleman, gave him, without being desired, the domestick history of the whole family, as he had received it from Lucy, who was the sister he mentioned.

Hervey, excessively delighted at this accidental meeting with a person so capable of serving his design, affected a great desire of being better acquainted with him; and, under pretence of acquiring some knowledge in rural affairs, accustomed himself to call so often at William's farm, that, at last, he met with the person whom the hopes of seeing had so often carried him thither.

Lucy, the moment she saw him enter, knowing him again, blushed at the remembrance of the discourse which had passed between her lady and herself concerning him; and was not at all surprized at the endeavours he used to speak to her apart: but as soon as he began a conversation concerning Arabella, she interrupted him by saying, 'I know, Sir, that you are *disfranchised* by in love with my lady; but she has forbid me to receive any letters or messages from you; and therefore I beg you will not offer to bribe me; for I dare not disobey her.'

Mr. Hervey was at first so astonished at her speech, that he knew not what to think of it; but, after a little reflection, attributing to an excess of awkward cunning what, in reality, was an effect of her simplicity, he resolved to make use of the hint she had given him; and, presenting her with a couple of guineas, intreated her to venture displeasing her lady, by bearing a letter from him; promising to reward her better, if she succeeded.

Lucy made some difficulty to comply; but, not being able absolutely to refuse the first bribe that ever was offered to her, she, after some intreaties, con-

sented to take the letter; and receiving the money he presented her, left him at liberty to write, after she had got her brother to furnish him with materials for that purpose.

CHAP. IV.

A MISTAKE, WHICH PRODUCES NO GREAT CONSEQUENCES—AN EXTRAORDINARY COMMENT UPON A BEHAVIOUR NATURAL ENOUGH—AN INSTANCE OF A LADY'S COMPASSION FOR HER LOVER, WHICH THE READER MAY POSSIBLY THINK, NOT VERY COMPASSIONATE.

HERVEY, who was master of no great elegance in letter-writing, was at first at some loss how to address a lady of her quality, to whom he was an absolute stranger, upon the subject of love; but, conceiving there was no great occasion for much ceremony in declaring himself to one who had been educated in the country, and who, he believed, could not be displeased with a lover of his figure, he therefore, in plain terms, told her, how deeply he was enamoured of her; and conjured her to afford him some opportunity of paying his respects to her.

Lucy received this letter from him with a worse grace than she did the gold; and, though she promised him to deliver it to her lady immediately, yet she kept it a day or two before she had the courage to attempt it; at last, drawing it out of her pocket, with a bashful air, she presented it to her lady, telling her it came from the fine gentleman whom she saw at church.

Arabella blushed at the sight of the letter; and though in reality, she was not displeased, yet, being a strict observer of romantick forms, she chid her woman severely for taking it. 'Carry it back,' added she, 'to the presumptuous writer of it; and let him know how greatly his insolence has offended me.'

Lucy, however, suffered the letter to remain on the toilet, expecting some change in her lady's mind; for she traversed the chamber in great seeming irresolution, often stealing a glance to the letter which she had a strong inclination to open; but searching the records of
her

her memory for a precedent, and not finding that any lady ever opened a letter from an unknown lover, she reiterated her commands to Lucy to carry it back, with a look and accent so very severe, that the girl, extremely apprehensive of having offended her, put the letter again in her pocket, resolving to return it the first opportunity.

Mr. Hervey, who had his thoughts wholly taken up with the flattering prospect of success, no sooner saw Lucy, who gave him his letter without speaking a word, than, supposing it had been the answer he expected, he eagerly snatched it out of her hand, and, kissing it first in a rapture of joy, broke it open; but his surprize and confusion, when he saw it was his own letter returned, was inexpressible. For some moments he kept his eyes fastened upon the tender billet, as if he was really reading it. His disappointment, and the ridiculous figure he knew he must make in the eyes of his messenger, filled him with so much confusion, that he did not dare to look up; but, recovering himself at last, he affected to turn it into a jest; and, laughing first himself, gave Lucy the liberty of laughing also, who had, with much difficulty, been able to prevent doing it before.

The curiosity he felt to hear how she had acquitted herself of the trust he had reposed in her, made him oblige her to give a truce to her mirth, in order to satisfy him; and Lucy, who was extremely exact in her relations, told him all that had passed, without omitting the smallest circumstance.

Though it was impossible to draw any favourable omen from what he heard, yet he determined to make another effort, before he set out for London; and taking leave of his confidant, after he had appointed her to meet him again the next day, at her brother's, he went home to consider upon means to effect his designs, which the ill success of his first attempt had not forced him to abandon.

Arabella, who expected to hear that the return of his letter would make her lover commit some very extravagant actions; and having impatiently waited for an account of them from Lucy; finding she seemed to have no intention to begin a discourse concern-

ing him; asked her, at last, if she had executed her commission, and returned the letter to the insolent unknown?

The girl answered, 'Yes.'

Which not being all that her lady expected—'And how did he receive it?' resumed she, peevishly.

'Why, Madam,' replied Lucy, 'I believe he thought your ladyship had sent him an answer; for he kissed the letter several times.'

'Foolish wench!' replied Arabella, 'how can you imagine he had the temerity to think I should answer his letter? A favour which, though he had spent years in my service, would have been infinitely greater than he could have expected. No, Lucy, he kissed the letter, either because he thought it had been touched at least by my hands, or to shew the perfect submission with which he received my commands; and it is not to be doubted but his despair will force him to commit some desperate outrage against himself, which I do not hate him enough to wish, though he has mortally offended me.'

Arabella was possessed of great sensibility and softness; and being really persuaded that her lover would entertain some fatal design, seemed so much affected with the thoughts of what might happen, that Lucy, who tenderly loved her, begged her not to be so much concerned for the gentleman: 'There is no fear,' added she, 'that he will do himself a mischief; for when he discovered his mistake, he laughed heartily, as well as myself.'

'How!' replied Arabella, extremely surprized, 'Did he laugh?'

Which Lucy confirming, 'Doubtless,' resumed she, 'having taken a little time to consider of so strange a phenomenon, he laughed, because his reason was disturbed at the sudden shock he received; unhappy man! his presumption will be severely enough punished, though I do not add anger to the scorn which I have expressed for him; therefore, Lucy, you may tell him, if you please, that, notwithstanding the offence he has been guilty of, I am not cruel enough to wish his death, and that I command him to live, if he can live without hope.'

CHAP. V.

IN WHICH ONE WOULD IMAGINE THE ADVENTURE CONCLUDED, BUT FOR A PROMISE THAT SOMETHING ELSE IS TO COME.

LUCY now began to think there was something more, than she imagined, in this affair. Mr. Hervey, indeed, in her opinion, had seemed to be very far from having any design to attempt his own life: but her lady, she thought, could not possibly be mistaken; and therefore she resolved to carry her message to him immediately, though it was then late in the evening.

Accordingly, she went to her brother's, where she had some hope of meeting with him; but not finding him there, she obliged him to go to the house where he lived, and tell him she desired to speak with him.

William being let into the secret of his sister's frequent meetings with Mr. Hervey, imagined she had some agreeable news to acquaint him with; and therefore ran immediately to his relation's house, which was but at a small distance; but he was told Mr. Hervey was in bed, very much indisposed, and could not be seen.

This news put Lucy in a terrible fright: she told her apprehensions to her brother; which being such as her lady had put into her head, and were now confirmed by Mr. Hervey's illness, the young farmer stood amazed, not being able to comprehend her meaning; and she, without staying to explain herself any farther, went home to the castle, and told her lady, that what she feared was come to pass, the gentleman would certainly die, for he was very ill in bed.

This being no more than what Arabella expected, she discovered no surprize; but only asked Lucy, if she had delivered her message to him.

'Would you have me, Madam,' replied she, 'go his house? I am afraid the marquis will hear of it.'

'My father,' replied Arabella, 'can never be offended with me for doing a charitable action.'

'Ah! Madam,' interrupted Lucy, 'let me go then immediately, for fear the poor gentleman should grow worse.'

'If he be sick almost to death,' resumed Arabella, 'he will recover, if I command him to do so. When did you hear of a lover dying through despair, when his mistress let him know it was her pleasure he should live? But as it will not be altogether so proper for you to go to his house, as it may be suspected you come from me, I'll write a few lines, which you shall copy, and your brother may carry them to him to-morrow, and I'll engage he shall be well in a few hours.'

Saying this, she went into her closet; and, having written a short note, made Lucy write it over again. It was as follows—

'LUCY, TO THE UNFORTUNATE
'LOVER OF HER LADY.'

'MY lady, who is the most generous person in the world, has commanded me to tell you, that, presumptuous as you are, she does not desire your death; nay, more, she commands you to live, and permits you, in case you obey her, to hope for her pardon, provided you keep within the bounds she prescribes to you. Adieu.'

This letter Lucy copied; and Arabella, examining it again, thought it rather too kind: and, seeming desirous of making some alteration in it, Lucy, who was extremely anxious for Mr. Hervey's life, fearing lest she should alter it in such a manner that the gentleman might be at liberty to die if he chose it, conjured her lady in such pressing terms to let it remain as it was, that Arabella suffered herself to be prevailed upon by her intreaties; and, remembering that it was not uncommon for the ladies in romances to relax a little in their severity through the remonstrances of their women, told her, with an enchanting smile, that she would grant her desire; and went to bed with that pleasing satisfaction, which every generous mind experiences at the consciousness of having done some very benevolent action.

In the morning, this life-restoring billet was dispatched by Lucy to her brother, inclosed in one to him, charging him to carry it to the sick gentleman immediately.

William,

William, having a strong curiosity to see what his sister had written, ventured to open it; and, not being able to imagine Lady Bella had really given her orders to write what appeared to him the most unintelligible stuff in the world, resolved to suppress this letter till he had questioned her a little concerning it.

A few hours after, Mr. Hervey, who expected to meet Lucy at her brother's, came in. His illness having been only a violent head-ache, to which he was subject, being now quite off, he remembered the appointment he had made; but having waited some time, and she not coming, he returned again to his cousin's, leaving word for her, that he would see her the next day.

Scarce was he gone out, when Lucy, who longed to know what effect her letter had produced in his health, came in; and eagerly enquiring of her brother how Mr. Hervey was, received for answer, that he had been there a moment before she came.

'Well,' cried she, clasping her hands together, with surprise, 'my lady said, her letter would cure him, if he was ever so sick; but I did not imagine he would have been well enough to come abroad so soon.'

'Your lady!' interrupted William; 'why, was it not yourself that wrote the letter you gave to me?'

'No, truly, brother,' resumed she; 'how was it possible I should write so fine a letter? My lady made every word of it, and I only wrote it after her.'

William, hearing this, would not own the indiscretion he now thought he had been guilty of, in keeping the letter; but suffered his sister to return to her lady, in the belief that he had delivered it; resolving, when he saw her next, to say he had lost it: for he knew not what excuse to make to Mr. Hervey for not giving it him when he saw him.

Arabella received the account of her lover's recovery as a thing she was absolutely sure of before; and thinking she had now done all that could be expected from her compassion, resumed her usual severity, and commanded Lucy to mention him no more. 'If he loves me with that purity he ought to do,' pursued she, 'he will cease to importune me any farther: and though his passion be ever so violent, his respect and submission to my com-

mands will oblige him to silence. The obedience he has already shewn, in recovering at the first intimation I gave, that it was my will he should do so, convinces me, I need not apprehend he will renew his follies to displease me.'

Lucy, who found by this discourse of her lady's, that her commission was at an end with regard to Mr. Hervey, followed her directions so exactly, that she not only spoke no more of him to her; but also, in order to avoid him, neglected to go to her brother's.

His impatience at not seeing her made him prevail upon her brother to go to the castle, and intreat her to give him another interview: but Lucy positively refused; and, to make a merit with her lady of her obedience, informed her what he had requested.

Arabella, resenting a boldness which argued so little respect to her commands, began now to repent of the compassion she had shewn him; and, commending Lucy for what she had done, bid her tell the insolent unknown, if he ever sent to her again, that she was resolved never to pardon the contempt he had shewn for her orders.

Mr. Hervey, finding himself deserted by Lucy, resolved to give over his attempts, congratulating himself for his discretion in not acquainting his cousin with what he had already done: his heart not being very much engaged, he found no great difficulty in consoling himself for his bad success. In a few days he thought of Lady Bella no more than if he had never seen her; but an accident bringing her again in his way, he could not resist the inclination he felt to speak to her: and by that means drew upon himself a very sensible mortification.

CHAP. VI.

IN WHICH THE ADVENTURE IS REALLY CONCLUDED; THOUGH, POSSIBLY, NOT AS THE READER EXPECTED.

THE marquis sometimes permitting his daughter to ride out; and this being the only diversion she was allowed, or ever experienced, she did not fail to take it as often as she could.

She was returning from one of these airings



Stothard del.

Walker sculp.

airings one day, attended by two servants, when Mr. Hervey, who happened to be at some distance, observing a lady on horseback, who made a very graceful figure, he rode up to her, in order to have a nearer view; and, knowing Lady Bella again, resolved to speak to her: but while he was considering how he should accost her, Arabella suddenly seeing him, and observing he was making up to her, her imagination immediately suggested to her, that this insolent lover had a design to seize her person; and this thought terrifying her extremely, she gave a loud shriek; which Mr. Hervey hearing, rode eagerly up to her to enquire the reason of it, at the same time that her two attendants, as much amazed as himself, came galloping up also.

Arabella, upon his coming close to her, redoubled her cries. 'If you have any valour,' said she to her servants, 'defend your unfortunate mistress, and rescue her from this unworthy man.'

The servants, believing him to be an highwayman, by this exclamation, and dreading lest he should present his pistol at their heads, if they offered to make any resistance, recoiled a few paces back, expecting he would demand their purses when he had robbed their lady: but the extreme surprize he was in, keeping him motionless, the fellows not seeing any pistols in his hand, and animated by Arabella's cries, who, calling them cowards and traitors, urged them to deliver her; they both, in a moment, laid hold of Mr. Hervey, and forced him to alight; which they did also themselves, still keeping fast hold of him, whom surprize, shame, and rage, had hitherto kept silent.

'Rascals!' cried he, when he was able to speak, 'what do you mean by using me in this manner? Do you suppose I had any intention to hurt the lady?—What do you take me for?'

'For a ravisher,' interrupted Arabella, 'an impious ravisher! who, contrary to all laws, both human and divine, endeavour to possess yourself by force of a person whom you are not worthy to serve; and whose charity and compassion you have returned with the utmost ingratitude.'

'Upon my word, Madam,' said Mr. Hervey, 'I don't understand one word

you say: you either mistake me for some other person, or are pleased to divert yourself with the surprize I am in. But, I beseech you, carry the jest no farther, and order your servants to let me go; or, by Heaven—' cried he, struggling to get loose—'if I can but free one of my hands, I'll stab the scoundrels before your face.'

'It is not with threats like these,' resumed Arabella, with great calmness, 'that I can be moved. A little more submission and respect would become you better; you are now wholly in my power: I may, if I please, carry you to my father, and have you severely punished for your attempt; but, to shew you that I am as generous as you are base and designing, I'll give you freedom, provided you promise me never to appear before me again. But, in order to secure my own safety, you must deliver up your arms to my servants, that I may be assured you will not have it in your power to make a second attempt upon my liberty.'

Mr. Hervey, whose astonishment was increased by every word she spoke, began now to be apprehensive, that this might prove a very serious affair, since she seemed resolved to believe he had a design to carry her off; and, knowing that an attempt of that nature upon an heiress might have dangerous consequences, he resolved to accept the conditions she offered him: but while he delivered his hanger to the servant, he assured her in the strongest terms, that he had no other design in riding up to her, but to have a nearer view of her person.

'Add not falshood,' said Arabella sternly, 'to a crime already black enough; for though, by an effect of my generosity, I have resolved not to deliver you up to the resentment of my father, yet nothing shall ever be able to make me pardon this outrage. Go then,' pursued she, 'go, base man, unworthy of the care I took of thy safety; go to some distant country, where I may never hear of thee more; and suffer me, if possible, to lose the remembrance of thy crimes.'

Saying this, she ordered her servants, who had got the hanger in their possession, to set him at liberty, and mount their horses; which they did immediately, and followed their lady, who

rode with all imaginable speed to the castle.

Mr. Hervey, not yet recovered from his surprize, stood some moments considering the strange scene he had been witness to; and in which he had, much against his will, appeared the principal character. As he was not acquainted with Lady Bella's toible, he concluded her fears of him were occasioned by her simplicity, and some misrepresentations that had been made her by Lucy, who, he thought, had betrayed him; and, fearing this ridiculous adventure would be soon made publick, and himself exposed to the sneers of his country acquaintance, he resolved to go back to London as soon as possible.

The next day, pretending he had received a letter which obliged him to set out immediately, he took leave of his cousin, heartily glad at the escape he should make from his raillery; for he did not doubt but the story would very soon be known, and told greatly to his disadvantage.

But Arabella, in order to be completely generous, a quality for which all the heroines are famous, laid a command upon her two attendants not to mention what had passed, giving them, at the same time, money to secure their secrecy; and threatening them with her displeasure, if they disobeyed.

Arabella, as soon as she had an opportunity, did not fail to acquaint her faithful Lucy with the danger from which she had so happily escaped, thanking Heaven at the same time, with great devotion, for having preserved her from the hands of the ravisher.

Two or three months rolled away, after this accident, without offering any new adventure to our fair visionary; when her imagination, always prepossessed with the same fantastick ideas, made her stumble upon another mistake, equally absurd and ridiculous.

CHAP. VII.

IN WHICH SOME CONTRADICTIONS
ARE VERY HAPPILY RECON-
CILED.

THE marquis's head-gardener had received a young fellow into his master's service, who had lived in several families of distinction. He had a

good face; was tolerably genteel; and, having an understanding something above his condition, joined to a great deal of *second-hand* politeness, which he had contracted while he lived at London, he appeared a very extraordinary person among the rusticks who were his fellow servants.

Arabella, when she walked in the garden, had frequent opportunities of seeing this young man, whom she observed with a very particular attention. His person and air had something, she thought, very distinguishing. When she condescended to speak to him about any business he was employed in, she took notice that his answers were framed in a language vastly superior to his condition; and the respect he paid her had quite another air from that of the awkward civility of the other servants.

Having discerned so many marks of a birth far from being mean, she easily passed from an opinion that he was a gentleman, to a belief that he was something more; and every new sight of him adding strength to her suspicions, she remained, in a little time, perfectly convinced that he was some person of quality, who, disguised in the habit of a gardener, had introduced himself into her father's service, in order to have an opportunity of declaring a passion to her, which must certainly be very great, since it had forced him to assume an appearance so unworthy of his noble extraction.

Wholly possessed with this thought, she set herself to observe him more narrowly: and soon found out, that he went very awkwardly about his work; that he sought opportunities of being alone; that he threw himself in her way as often as he could, and gazed on her very attentively. She sometimes fancied she saw him endeavour to smother a sigh when he answered her any question about his work; once saw him leaning against a tree with his hands crossed upon his breast; and, having lost a string of small pearls, which she remembered he had seen her threading as she sat in one of the arbours, was persuaded he had taken it up, and kept it for the object of his secret adoration.

She often wondered, indeed, that she did not find her name carved on the trees, with some mysterious expressions

of love; that he was never discovered lying along the side of one of the little rivulets, increasing the stream with his tears; nor, for three months that he had lived there, had ever been sick of a fever caused by his grief and the constraint he put upon himself in not declaring his passion. But she considered again, that his fear of being discovered kept him from amusing himself with making the trees bear the records of his secret thoughts, or of indulging his melancholy in any manner expressive of the condition of his soul; and, as for his not being sick, his youth, and the strength of his constitution, might, even for a longer time, bear him up against the assaults of a fever: but he appeared much thinner and paler than he used to be; and she concluded, therefore, that he must in time sink under the violence of his passion, or else be forced to declare it to her, which she considered as a very great misfortune; for, not finding in herself any disposition to approve his love, she must necessarily banish him from her presence, for fear he should have the presumption to hope that time might do any thing in his favour; and it was possible also, that the sentence she would be obliged to pronounce, might either cause his death, or force him to commit some extravagant action, which would discover him to her father, who would, perhaps, think her guilty of holding a secret correspondence with him.

These thoughts perplexed her so much, that, hoping to find some relief by unburdening her mind to Lucy, she told her all her uneasiness. Ah! said she to her, looking upon Edward, who had just passed them, 'how unfortunate do I think myself in being the cause of that passion which makes this illustrious unknown wear away his days in so shameful an obscurity! Yes, Lucy,' pursued she, 'that Edward, whom you regard as one of my father's menial servants, is a person of sublime quality, who submits to this disguise only to have an opportunity of seeing me every day. But why do you seem so surprised? Is it possible that you have not suspected him to be what he is! Has he never unwittingly made any discovery of himself? Have you not surprized him in discourse with his faithful squire, who certainly lurks

hereabouts to receive his commands, and is haply the confident of his passion? Has he never entertained you with any conversation about me? Or have you never seen any valuable jewels in his possession, by which you suspected him to be not what he appears?' 'Truly, Madam,' replied Lucy, 'I never took him for any body else but a simple gardener; but, now you open my eyes, methinks I can find I have been strangely mistaken, for he does not look like a man of low degree, and he talks quite in another manner from our servants. I never heard him indeed speak of your ladyship, but once; and that was, when he first saw you walking in the garden, he asked our John if you was not the marquis's daughter; and he said you was as beautiful as an angel. As for fine jewels, I never saw any, and I believe he has none; but he has a watch, and that looks as if he was something, Madam: nor do I remember to have seen him talk with any stranger that looked like a squire.'

Lucy, having thus with her usual punctuality, answered every question her lady put to her; proceeded to ask her, what she should say, if he should beg her to give her a letter as the other gentleman had done. 'You must by no means take it,' replied Arabella; 'my compassion had been fore like to have been fatal to me. If he discovers his quality to me, I shall know in what manner to treat him. They were in this part of their discourse, when a noise they heard at some distance, made Arabella bend her steps to the place from whence it proceeded; and, to her infinite amazement, saw the head-gardener, with a stick he had in his hand, give several blows to the concealed hero; who suffered the indignity with admirable patience.

Shocked at seeing a person of sublime quality treated so unworthily, she called out to the gardener to hold his hand; who immediately obeyed: and Edward, seeing the young lady advance, sneaked off with an air very different from an Oroondates.

For what crime, pray, said Arabella, with a stern aspect, 'did you treat the person I saw with you so cruelly? He whom you take such an

becoming liberties with, may possibly

'bly.—But again I ask you, what has he done? You should make some allowance for his want of skill, in the abject employment he is in at present.'

'It is not for his want of skill, Madam,' said the gardener, 'that I corrected him; he knows his business very well, if he would mind it; but, Madam, I have discovered him—'

'Discovered him, do you say?' interrupted Arabella: 'and has the knowledge of his condition not been able to prevent such usage? or rather has it been the occasion of his receiving it?'

'His conditions are very bad, Madam,' returned the gardener; 'and I am afraid are such as will one day prove the ruin of body and soul too. I have for sometime suspected he had evil designs in his head; and just now watched him to the fish-pond, and prevented him from—'

'O dear!' interrupted Lucy, looking pitifully on her lady, whose fair bosom heaved with compassion, 'I warrant he was going to make away with himself.'

'No,' resumed the gardener, smiling at the mistake, 'he was only going to make away with some of the carp, which the rogue had caught, and intended, I suppose, to sell; but I threw them into the water again, and if your ladyship had not forbid me, I would have drubbed him soundly for his pains.'

'Fye! fye!' interrupted Arabella, out of breath with shame and vexation, 'tell me no more of these idle tales.'

Then, hastily walking on, to hide the blushes which this strange accusation of her illustrious lover had raised in her face, she continued for some time in the greatest perplexity imaginable.

Lucy, who followed her, and could not possibly reconcile what her lady had been telling her concerning Edward, with the circumstance of his stealing the carp, ardently wished to hear her opinion of this matter; but, seeing her deeply engaged with her own thoughts, she would not venture to disturb her.

Arabella, indeed, had been in such a terrible consternation, that it was some time before she even reconciled appearances to herself; but, as she had a most happy facility in accommodating

every incident to her own wishes and conceptions, she examined this matter so many different ways, drew so many conclusions, and fancied so many mysteries in the most indifferent actions of the supposed noble unknown, that she remained at last more than ever confirmed in the opinion that he was some great personage, whom her beauty had forced to assume an appearance unworthy of himself: when Lucy, no longer able to keep silence, drew off her attention from those pleasing images, by speaking of the carp-stealing affair again.

Arabella, whose confusion returned at that disagreeable sound, charged her, in an angry tone, never to mention so injurious a suspicion any more: 'For, in fine,' said she to her, 'do you imagine a person of his rank could be guilty of stealing carp? Alas!' pursued she, sighing, 'he had, indeed, some fatal design; and, doubtless, would have executed it, had not this fellow so luckily prevented him.'

'But Mr. Woodbind, Madam,' said Lucy, 'saw the carp in his hand: I wonder what he was going to do with them.'

'Still,' resumed Arabella, extremely chagrined, 'still will you wound my ears with that horrid sound? I tell you, obstinate and foolish wench, that this unhappy man went thither to die; and if he really caught the fish, it was to conceal his design from Woodbind; his great mind could not suggest to him, that it was possible he might be suspected of a baseness like that this ignorant fellow accused him of; therefore he took no care about it, being wholly possessed by his despairing thoughts.'

'However, Madam,' said Lucy, 'your ladyship may prevent his going to the fish-pond again, by laying your commands upon him to live.'

'I shall do all that I ought,' answered Arabella; 'but my care for the safety of other persons must not make me forget what I owe to my own.'

As she had always imputed Mr. Hervey's fancied attempt to carry her away, to the letter she had written to him, upon which he had probably founded his hopes of being pardoned for it, she resolved to be more cautious for the future in giving such instances of

of her compassion; and was at a great loss in what manner to comfort her despairing lover, without raising expectations she had no inclination to confirm: but she was delivered from her perplexity a few days after, by the news of his having left the marquis's service; which she attributed to some new design he had formed to obtain her; and Lucy, who always thought as her lady did, was of the same opinion; though it was talked among the servants, that Edward feared a discovery of more tricks, and resolved not to stay till he was disgracefully dismissed.

CHAP. VIII.

IN WHICH A MISTAKE, IN POINT OF CEREMONY, IS RECTIFIED.

ARABELLA had scarce done thinking of this last adventure, when the marquis communicated a piece of intelligence to her, which opened a prospect of an infinite number of new ones.

His nephew, having just returned from his travels, was preparing to come and pay him a visit in his retreat; and, as he always designed to marry Arabella to this youth, of whom he was extremely fond, he told his daughter of the intended visit of her cousin, whom she had not seen since she was eight years old; and, for the first time, insinuated his design of giving him to her for an husband.

Arabella, whose delicacy was extremely shocked at this abrupt declaration of her father, could hardly hide her chagrin; for, though she always intended to marry some time or other, as all the heroines had done, yet she thought such an event ought to be brought about with an infinite deal of trouble; and that it was necessary she should pass to this state through a great number of cares, disappointments, and distresses of various kinds, like them; that her lover should purchase her with his sword from a crowd of rivals; and arrive to the possession of her heart by many years of services and fidelity.

The impropriety of receiving a lover of a father's recommending, appeared in it's strongest light. What lady in romance ever married the man that

was chose for her? In those cases the remonstrances of a parent are called persecutions; obstinate resistance, constancy and courage; and an aptitude to dislike the person proposed to them, a noble freedom of mind which disdains to love or hate by the caprice of others.

Arabella, strengthening her own resolutions by those examples of heroick disobedience, told her father, with great solemnity of accent, that she would always obey him in all just and reasonable things; and, being persuaded that he would never attempt to lay any force upon her inclinations, she would endeavour to make them conformable to his, and receive her cousin with that civility and friendship due to so near a relation, and a person whom he honoured with his esteem.

The marquis, having had frequent occasions of admiring his daughter's eloquence, did not draw any unpleasing conclusion from the nice distinctions she made; and, being perfectly assured of her consent whenever he demanded it, expected the arrival of his nephew with great impatience.

Arabella, whose thoughts had been fully employed since this conversation with her father, was indulging her meditations in one of the most retired walks in the garden; when she was informed by Lucy, that her cousin was come, and that the marquis had brought him into the garden to look for her.

That instant they both entered the walk; when Arabella, prepossessed as she was against any favourable thoughts of the young Glanville, could not help betraying some surprize at the gratefulness of his figure.

'It must be confessed,' said she to her attendant, with a smile, 'that this lover my father has brought us, is no contemptible person: nevertheless, I feel an invincible repugnance in myself against receiving him in that character.'

As she finished these words, the marquis came up, and presented Mr. Glanville to her; who, saluting her with the freedom of a relation, gave her a disgust that shewed itself immediately in her fair face, which was overspread with such a gloom, that the marquis was quite astonished at it. Indeed, Arabella, who expected he

would

would hardly have presumed to kiss her hand, was so surprized at his freedom, in attempting her lips, that she not only expressed her indignation by frowns, but gave him to understand he had mortally offended her.

Mr. Glanville, however, was neither surprized nor angry at her resentment; but, imputing it to her country education, endeavoured to railly her out of her ill-humour; and the marquis, being glad to find a behaviour, which he thought proceeded from her dislike of her cousin, was only an effect of an over-scrupulous modesty, told her that Mr. Glanville had committed no offence by saluting her, since that was a civility which was granted to all strangers at the first interview, and therefore could not be refused to a relation.

‘Since the world is so degenerate in it’s customs from what it was formerly,’ said Arabella, with a smile full of contempt upon her cousin, ‘I am extremely happy in having lived in a solitude which has not yet exposed me to the mortification of being a witness to manners I cannot approve; for if every person I shall meet with for the future be so deficient in their respects to ladies as my cousin is, I shall not care how much I am secluded from society.’

‘But, dear Lady Bella,’ interrupted Mr. Glanville, gaily, ‘tell me, I beseech you, how I must behave to please you; for I should be extremely glad to be honoured with your good opinion.’

‘The person,’ resumed she, ‘whom I must teach how to acquire my good opinion, will, I am afraid, hardly recompence me by his docility in learning, for the pains I should be at in instructing him.’

‘But,’ resumed Glanville, ‘that I may avoid any more occasions of offending you, only let me know how you would be approached for the future.’

‘Since,’ answered she, ‘there is no necessity to renew the ceremony of introducing you again to me, I have not a second affront of that kind to apprehend; but I pray tell me, if

‘all cavaliers are as presuming as yourself; and if a relation of your sex does not think a modest embrace from a lady a welcome sufficiently tender*?’

‘Nay, cousin,’ cried Glanville, eagerly, ‘I am now persuaded you are in the right; an embrace is certainly to be preferred to a cold salute. What would I give, that the marquis would introduce me a second time, that I might be received with so delightful a welcome?’

The vivacity with which he spoke this was so extremely disagreeable to Arabella, that she turned from him abruptly, and, striking into another walk, ordered Lucy to tell him she commanded him not to follow her.

Mr. Glanville, however, who had no notion of the exact obedience which was expected from him, would have gone after her, notwithstanding this prohibition, which Lucy delivered in a most peremptory manner, after her lady’s example; but the marquis, who had left the two young people at liberty to discourse, and had walked on that he might not interrupt them, turning about, and seeing Glanville alone, called him to have some private discourse with him; and, for that time, spared Arabella the mortification of seeing her commands disobeyed.

CHAP. IX.

IN WHICH A LOVER IS SEVERELY PUNISHED FOR FAULTS WHICH THE READER NEVER WOULD HAVE DISCOVERED, IF HE HAD NOT BEEN TOLD.

THE marquis, though he had resolved to give Arabella to his nephew, was desirous he should first receive some impressions of tenderness for her, before he absolutely declared his resolution; and ardently wished he might be able to overcome that reluctance which she seemed to have for marriage; but, though Glanville in a very few days became passionately in love with his charming cousin, yet she discovered so strong a dislike to him, that

* The heroines, though they think a kiss of the hand a great condescension to a lover, and never grant it without blushes and confusion, yet make no scruple to embrace him upon every short absence.

the marquis feared it would be difficult to make her receive him for an husband: he observed she took all opportunities of avoiding his conversation; and seemed always out of temper when he addressed any thing to her; but was well enough pleased when he discoursed with him; and would listen to the long conversations they had together with great attention.

The truth is, she had too much discernment not to see Mr. Glanville had a great deal of merit; his person was perfectly handsome; he possessed a great share of understanding, an easy temper, and a vivacity which charmed every one, but the insensible Arabella.

She often wondered, that a man, who, as she told her confident, was master of so many fine qualities, should have a disposition so little capable of feeling the passion of love, with a delicacy and fervour she expected to inspire; or that he, whose conversation was so pleasing on every other subject, should make so poor a figure when he entertained her with matters of gallantry. 'However,' added she, 'I should be to blame to desire to be loved by Mr. Glanville; for I am persuaded that passion would cause no reformation in the coarseness of his manners to ladies, which makes him so disagreeable to me, and might possibly increase my aversion.'

The marquis, having studied his nephew's looks for several days, thought he saw inclination enough in them for Arabella, to make him receive the knowledge of his intention with joy: he, therefore, called him into his closet, and told him in few words, that, if his heart was not pre-engaged, and his daughter capable of making him happy, he resolved to bestow her upon him, together with all his estates.

Mr. Glanville received this agreeable news with the strongest expressions of gratitude; assuring his uncle, that Lady Bella, of all the women he had ever seen, was most agreeable to his taste; and that he felt for her all the tenderness and affection his soul was capable of.

'I am glad of it, my dear nephew,' said the marquis, embracing him: 'I will allow you,' added he, smiling, 'but a few weeks to court her; gain her heart as soon as you can, and

when you bring me her consent, your marriage shall be solemnized immediately.'

Mr. Glanville needed not a repetition of so agreeable a command: he left his uncle's closet, with his heart filled with the expectation of his approaching happiness; and, understanding Arabella was in the garden, he went to her with a resolution to acquaint her with the permission her father had given him to make his addresses to her.

He found his fair cousin, as usual, accompanied with her women; and, seeing that, notwithstanding his approach, they still continued to walk with her, and impatient of the restraint they laid him under, 'I beseech, you, cousin,' said he, 'let me have the pleasure of walking with you alone: what necessity is there for always having so many witnesses of our conversation?—You may retire,' said he, speaking to Lucy, and the other woman; 'I have something to say to your lady in private.'

'Stay, I command you,' said Arabella, blushing at an insolence so uncommon, 'and take orders from no one but myself.—I pray you, Sir,' pursued she, frowning, 'what intercourse of secrets is there between you and me, that you expect I should favour you with a private conversation? an advantage which none of your sex ever boasted to have gained from me; and which, haply, you should be the last upon whom I should bestow it.'

'You have the strangest notions,' answered Glanville, smiling at the pretty anger she discovered: 'certainly you may hold a private conversation with any gentleman, without giving offence to decorum; and I may plead a right to this happiness, above any other, since I have the honour to be your relation.'

'It is not at all surprizing,' resumed Arabella gravely, 'that you and I should differ in opinion upon this occasion: I don't remember that ever we agreed in any thing; and, I am apt to believe, we never shall.'

'Ah! don't say so, Lady Bella,' interrupted he: 'what a prospect of misery you lay before me! for, if we are always to be opposite to each other,

‘other, it is necessary you must hate me as much as I admire and love you.’

These words, which he accompanied with a gentle pressure of her hand, threw the astonished Arabella into such an excess of anger and shame, that, for a few moments, she was unable to utter a word.

What a horrid violation this, of all the laws of gallantry and respect, which decree a lover to suffer whole years in silence before he declares his flame to the divine object that causes it; and then with awful tremblings and submissive prostrations at the feet of the offended fair!

Arabella could hardly believe her senses when she heard a declaration, not only made without the usual forms, but also, that the presumptuous criminal waited for an answer without seeming to have any apprehension of the punishment to which he was to be doomed; and that, instead of deprecating her wrath, he looked with a smiling wonder upon her eyes, as if he did not fear their lightnings would strike him dead.

Indeed, it was scarce possible for him to help smiling, and wondering too, at the extraordinary action of Arabella; for, as soon as he had pronounced those fatal words, she started back two or three steps; cast a look at him full of the highest indignation; and, lifting up her fine eyes to Heaven, seemed, in the language of romance, to accuse the gods for subjecting her to so cruel an indignity.

The tumult of her thoughts being a little settled, she turned again towards Glanville, whose countenance expressing nothing of that confusion and anxiety common to an adorer in so critical a circumstance, her rage returned with greater violence than ever.

‘If I do not express all the resentment your insolence has filled me with,’ said she to him, affecting more scorn than anger, ‘’tis because I hold you too mean for my resentment; but never hope for my pardon for your presumptuous confession of a passion I could almost despise myself for inspiring. If it be true that you love me, go and find your punishment in that absence to which I doom

you; and never hope I will suffer a person in my presence, who has affronted me in the manner you have done.’

Saying this, she walked away, making a sign to him not to follow her.

Mr. Glanville, who was at first disposed to laugh at the strange manner in which she received his expressions of esteem for her, found something so extremely haughty and contemptuous in the speech she had made, that he was almost mad with vexation.

As he had no notion of his cousin’s heroick sentiments, and had never read romances, he was quite ignorant of the nature of his offence; and supposing the scorn she had expressed for him was founded upon the difference of their rank and fortune, his pride was so sensibly mortified at that thought, and at her so insolently forbidding him her presence, that he was once inclined to shew his resentment of such ungentle usage, by quitting the castle without taking leave even of the marquis, who, he thought, could not be ignorant of the reception he was likely to meet with from his daughter, and ought to have guarded him against it, if he really meant him so well as he seemed to do.

As he was extremely violent and hasty in his resolutions, and nicely sensible of the least affront, he was not in a condition to reason justly upon the marquis’s conduct in this affair; and while he was fluctuating with a thousand different resolutions, Lucy came to him with a billet from her lady, which she delivered without staying till he opened it, and was superscribed in this manner—

‘ARABELLA, TO THE MOST PRESUMPTUOUS MAN IN THE WORLD—

‘YOU seem to acknowledge so little respect and deference for the commands of a lady, that I am afraid it will be but too necessary to reiterate that which, at parting, I laid upon you: know, then, that I absolutely insist upon your repairing, in the only manner you are able, the affront you have put upon me; which is, by never appearing before me again. If you

'you think proper to confine me to my chamber, by continuing here any longer, you will add disobedience to the crime by which you have already mortally offended

'ARABELLA.'

The superscription of this letter, and the uncommon stile of it, persuaded Mr. Glanville, that what he had been foolish enough to resent as an affront, was designed as a jest, and meant to divert him as well as herself: he examined her behaviour again, and wondered at his stupidity in not discovering it before. His resentment vanishing immediately, he returned to the house; and went, without ceremony, to Arabella's apartment, which he entered before she perceived him, being in a profound musing at one of the windows: the noise he made, in approaching her, obliged her at last to look up; when, starting, as if she had seen a basilisk, she flew to her closet, and, shutting the door with great violence, commanded him to leave her chamber immediately.

Mr. Glanville, still supposing her in jest, intreated her to open the door; but, finding she continued obstinate, 'Well,' said he, going away, 'I shall be revenged on you some time hence, and make you repent the tricks you play me now.'

Arabella not being able to imagine any thing, by these words he spoke in raillery, but that he really, in the spite and anguish of his heart, threatened her with executing some terrible enterprize; she did not doubt, but he either intended to carry her away; or, thinking her aversion to him proceeded from his having a rival happy enough to be esteemed by her, those mysterious words he had uttered related to his design of killing him; so that as she knew he could discover no rival to wreak his revenge upon, she feared that, at once to satisfy that passion as well as his love, he would make himself master of her liberty: 'For, in fine,' said she to Lucy, to whom she communicated all her thoughts, 'have I not every thing to apprehend from a man who knows so little how to treat my sex with the respect which is our due; and who, after having,

'contrary to the timorous nature of that passion, insulted me with a free declaration of love, treated my commands with the utmost contempt by appearing before me again; and even threatens me with the revenge he is meditating at this moment?'

Had Mr. Glanville been present, and heard the terrible misfortunes which she presaged from the few words he had jestingly spoke, he would certainly have made her quite furious, by the diversion her mistake would have afforded him. But the more she reflected on his words, the more she was persuaded of the terrible purpose of them.

It was in vain to acquaint her father with the reasons she had for disliking his choice; his resolution was fixed, and if she did not voluntarily conform to it, she exposed herself to the attempts of a violent and unjust lover, who would either prevail upon the marquis to lay a force upon her inclinations, or make himself master of her person, and never cease persecuting her till he had obliged her to give him her hand.

Having reasoned herself into a perfect conviction that all these things must necessarily happen, she thought it both just and reasonable to provide for her own security by a speedy flight: the want of a precedent, indeed, for an action of this nature, held her a few moments in suspense; for she did not remember to have read of any heroine that voluntarily left her father's house, however persecuted she might be; but she considered, that there was not any of the ladies in romances, in the same circumstances with herself, who was without a favoured lover, for whose sake it might have been believed she had made an elopement, which would have been highly prejudicial to her glory; and, as there was no foundation for any suspicion of that kind in her case, she thought there was nothing to hinder her from withdrawing from a tyrannical exertion of parental authority, and the secret machinations of a lover, whose aim was to take away her liberty, either by obliging her to marry him, or by making her a prisoner.

CHAP. X.

CONTAINS SEVERAL INCIDENTS,
IN WHICH THE READER IS EX-
PECTED TO BE EXTREMELY IN-
TERESTED.

ARABELLA had spent some hours in her closet, revolving a thousand different stratagems to escape from the misfortune that threatened her, when she was interrupted by Lucy, who, after desiring admittance, informed her, that the marquis, having rode out to take the air that evening, had fallen from his horse and received some hurt; that he was gone to bed, and desired to see her.

Arabella, hearing her father was indisposed, ran to him, excessively alarmed; and reflecting on the resolution she had just before taken, of leaving him, which aggravated her concern, she came to his bedside with her eyes swimming in tears. Mr. Glanville was sitting near him; but, rising at her appearance to give her his chair, which she accepted without taking any notice of him, he stood at some distance contemplating her face, to which sorrow had given so many charms, that he gazed on her with an eagerness and delight that could not escape her observation.

She blushed excessively at the passionate looks he gave her; and, finding the marquis's indisposition not considerable enough to oblige her to a constant attendance at his bed-side, she took the first opportunity of returning to her chamber; but, as she was going out, Glanville presented his hand to lead her up stairs, which she scornfully refusing—

‘Sure, cousin,’ said he, a little piqued, ‘you are not disposed to carry on your ill-natured jest any farther?’

‘If you imagined I jesting with you,’ said Arabella, ‘I am rather to accuse the slowness of your understanding, for your persisting in treating me thus freely, than the insolence I first imputed it to: but, whatever is the cause of it, I now tell you again, that you have extremely offended me; and if my father's illness did not set bounds to my resentment at present, I would make you know, that I would not suffer the injury you do me, so patiently.’

‘Since you would have me to believe you are serious,’ replied Glanville, ‘be pleased to let me know what offence it is you complain of; for I protest I am quite at a loss to understand you.’

‘Was it not enough,’ resumed Arabella, ‘to affront me with an insolent declaration of your passion, but you must also, in contempt of my commands to the contrary, appear before me again, pursue me to my chamber, and use the most brutal menaces to me?’

‘Hold, pray, Madam,’ interrupted Glanville, ‘and suffer me to ask you, if it is my presumption, in declaring myself your admirer, that you are so extremely offended at?’

‘Doubtless it is, Sir,’ answered Arabella; ‘and such a presumption as, without the aggravating circumstances you have since added to it, is sufficient to make me always your enemy.’

‘I beg pardon,’ returned Mr. Glanville, gravely, ‘for that offence; and also for staying any longer in a house which you have so genteelly turned me out of.’

‘My pardon, Mr. Glanville,’ resumed she, ‘is not so easily gained: time, and your repentance, may, indeed, do much towards obtaining it.’

Saying this, she made a sign to him to retire, for he had walked up with her to her chamber; but finding he did not obey her, for really he was quite unacquainted with these sorts of dumb commands, she hastily retired to her closet, lest he should attempt to move her pity by any expressions of despair for the cruel banishment she had doomed him to.

Mr. Glanville, seeing she had shut herself up in her closet, left her chamber, and retired to his own, more confounded than ever at the behaviour of his cousin.

Her bidding him so peremptorily to leave the house, would have equally persuaded him of her ignorance and ill-breeding, had not the elegance of her manners, in every other respect, proved the contrary; nor was it possible to doubt she had a great share of understanding, since her conversation, singular as some of her sentiments seemed to him, was far superior to most other ladies. Therefore, he concluded, the

affront

affront he had received proceeded from her disdain to admit the addressees of any person whose quality was inferior to hers; which, probably, was increased by some particular dislike she had to his person.

His honour would not permit him to make use of that advantage her father's authority could give him; and, wholly engrossed by his resentment of the usage he had received from her, he resolved to set out for London the next day without seeing the marquis, from whom he was apprehensive of some endeavours to detain him.

Having taken this resolution, he ordered his servant to have the horses ready early in the morning; and, without taking any notice of his intention, he left the castle, riding as fast as possible to the next stage, from whence he wrote to his uncle; and, dispatching a messenger with his letter, held on his way to London.

The marquis being pretty well recovered from his indisposition by a good night's rest, sent for Mr. Glanville in the morning, to walk with him, as was his custom, in the garden; but hearing he had rode out, though he imagined it was only to take the air, yet he could not help accusing him, in his own thoughts, of a little neglect; for which he resolved to chide him when he returned: but his long stay filling him with some surprize, he was beginning to express his fears that something had befallen him, to Arabella, who was then with him, when a servant presented him the letter, which Mr. Glanville's messenger had that moment brought.

The marquis casting his eyes on the direction, and knowing his nephew's hand, 'Bless me!' cried he, extremely surprized, 'What can this mean?'—

'Bella,' added he, 'here's a letter from your cousin.'

Arabella, at these words, started up; and preventing her father, with a respectful action, from opening it, 'I beseech you, my lord,' said she, 'before you read this letter, suffer me to assure you, that if it contains any thing fatal, I am not at all accessory to it: 'tis true, I have banished my cousin, as a punishment for the offence he was guilty of towards me; but, Heaven is my witness, I did not desire his death; and if he has taken

'any violent resolution against himself, he has greatly exceeded my commands.'

The marquis, whose surprize was considerably increased by these words, hastily broke open the letter, which she perceiving, hurried out of the room; and, locking herself up in her closet, began to bewail the effect of her charms, as if she was perfectly assured of her cousin's death.

The marquis, however, who, from Lady Bella's exclamation, had prepared himself for the knowledge of some very extraordinary accident, was less surprized, than he would otherwise have been, at the contents; which were as follow—

'MY LORD,

'AS my leaving your house so abruptly will certainly make me appear guilty of a most unpardonable rudeness, I cannot dispense with myself from acquainting your lordship with the cause; though, to spare the reproaches Lady Bella will probably cast on me for doing so, I could wish you knew it by any other means.

'But, my lord, I value your esteem too much to hazard the loss of it by suffering you to imagine, that I am capable of doing any thing to displease you. Lady Bella was pleased to order me to stay no longer in the house, and menaced me with some very terrible usage, if I disobeyed her: she used so many other contemptuous expressions to me, that, I am persuaded, I shall never be so happy as to possess the honour you designed for, my lord, your most obedient, &c.

'CHARLES GLANVILLE.'

When the marquis had read this letter, he went to his daughter's apartment with an intention to chide her severely for her usage of his nephew; but seeing her come to meet him with her eyes bathed in tears, he insensibly lost some part of his resentment.

'Alas! my lord,' said she, 'I know you come prepared to load me with reproaches upon my cousin's account; but I beseech your lordship, do not aggravate my sorrows: though I banished Mr. Glanville, I did not desire his death; and, questionless, if

‘he knew how I *resent* it, his ghost would be satisfied with the sacrifice I make him.’

The marquis not being able to help smiling at this conceit, which he saw had so strongly possessed her imagination that she had no sort of doubt but that her cousin was dead, asked her, if she really believed Mr. Glanville loved her well enough to die with grief at her ill usage of him.

‘If,’ said she, ‘he loves me not well enough to die for me, he certainly loves me but little; and I am the less obliged to him.’

‘But I desire to know,’ interrupted the marquis, ‘for what crime it was you took the liberty to banish him from my house?’

‘I banished him, my lord,’ resumed she, ‘for his presumption in telling me he loved me.’

‘That presumption, as you call it, though I know not for what reason,’ said the marquis, ‘was authorized by me; therefore know, Bella, that I not only permit him to love you, but I also expect you should endeavour to return his affection, and look upon him as the man whom I design for your husband: there’s his letter,’ pursued he, putting it into her hand. ‘I blush for the rudeness you have been guilty of; but endeavour to repair it by a more obliging behaviour for the future: I am going to send after him immediately to prevail upon him to return; therefore, write him an apology, I charge you, and have it done by the time my messenger is ready to set out.’

Saying this he went out of the room: Arabella eagerly opened the letter, and finding it in a style so different from what she expected, her dislike of him returned with more violence than ever.

‘Ah! the traitor!’ said she aloud, ‘is it thus that he endeavours to move my compassion? How greatly did I over-rate his affection, when I imagined his despair was capable of killing him?—Disloyal man!’ pursued she, walking about, ‘is it by complaints to my father that thou expectest to succeed? And dost thou imagine the heart of Arabella is to be won by violence and injustice?’

In this manner she wasted the time allotted for her to write; and when the

marquis sent for her letter, having no intention to comply, she went to his chamber, conjuring him not to oblige her to a condescension so unworthy of her.

The marquis, being now excessively angry with her, rose up in a fury, and, leading her to his writing-desk, ordered her instantly to write to her cousin.

‘If I must write, my lord,’ said she, sobbing, ‘pray be so good as to dictate what I must say.’

‘Apologize for your rude behaviour,’ said the marquis; ‘and desire him, in the most obliging manner you can, to return.’

Arabella, seeing there was a necessity for obeying, took up the pen, and wrote the following billet—

‘THE UNFORTUNATE ARABELLA,
‘TO THE MOST UNGENEROUS
‘GLANVILLE.

‘IT is not by the power I have over you, that I command you to return; for I disclaim any empire over so unworthy a subject; but, since it is my father’s pleasure I should invite you back, I must let you know, that I repeal your banishment, and expect you will immediately return with the messenger who brings this: however, to spare your acknowledgments, know, that it is in obedience to my father’s absolute commands, that you receive this mandate from

‘ARABELLA.’

Having finished this billet, she gave it to the marquis to read; who, finding a great deal of his own haughtiness of temper in it, could not resolve to check her for a disposition so like his own: yet he told her her style was very uncommon. ‘And pray,’ added he, smiling, ‘who taught you to superscribe your letters thus, “The unfortunate Arabella, to the most ungenerous Glanville?” Why, Bella, this superscription is wholly calculated for the bearer’s information: but come, alter it immediately; for I don’t chuse my messenger should know that you are unfortunate, or that my nephew is ungenerous.’

‘Pray, my lord,’ replied Arabella, ‘content yourself with what I have already done in obedience to your commands, and suffer my letter to remain

‘ remain as it is, methinks it is but reasonable I should express some little resentment at the complaint my cousin has been pleased to make to you against me; nor can I possibly make my letter more obliging, without being guilty of an unpardonable meanness.’

‘ You are a strange girl,’ replied the marquis, taking the letter, and inclosing it in one from himself; in which he earnestly intreated his nephew to return, threatening him with his displeasure if he disobeyed, and assuring him that his daughter would receive him as well as he could possibly desire.

The messenger being dispatched, with orders to ride post, and overtake the young gentleman, he obeyed his orders so well, that he came up with him at —, where he intended to lodge that night.

Mr. Glanville, who expected his uncle would make use of some methods to recal him, opened his letter without any great emotion; but seeing another inclosed, his heart leaped to his mouth, not doubting but it was a letter from Arabella; but the contents surprized him so much, that he hardly knew whether he ought to look upon them as an invitation to return, or a new affront, her words were so distant and haughty. The superscription being much the same with a billet he had received from her in the garden, which had made him conclude her in jest, he knew not what to think of it. ‘ One would swear this dear girl’s head is turned,’ said he to himself, ‘ if she had not more wit than her whole sex besides.’

After reading Arabella’s letter several times, he at last opened his uncle’s; and seeing the pressing instances he made him to return, he resolved to obey; and the next morning set out for the castle.

Arabella, during the time her cousin was expected, appeared so melancholy and reserved, that the marquis was extremely uneasy. ‘ You have never,’ said he to her, ‘ disobeyed me in any one action of your life; and I may with reason expect you will conform to my will in the choice I have made of a husband for you, since it is impossible to make any objection either to his person or mind; and being the son of my sister, he is certainly not

‘ unworthy of you, though he has not a title.’

‘ My first wish, my lord,’ replied Arabella, ‘ is to live single, not being desirous of entering into any engagement which may hinder my solicitude and cares, and lessen my attendance upon the best of fathers, who, till now, has always most tenderly complied with my inclinations in every thing: but if it is your absolute command that I should marry, give me not to one, who, though he has the honour to be allied to you, has neither merited your esteem, or my favour, by any action worthy of his birth, or the passion he pretends to have for me; for in fine, my lord, by what services has he deserved the distinction with which you honour him? Has he ever delivered you from any considerable danger? Has he saved your life, and hazarded his own for you, upon any occasion whatever? Has he merited my esteem by his sufferings, fidelity, and respect? or, by any great and generous action, given me a testimony of his love, which should oblige me to reward him with my affection? Ah! my lord, I beseech you, think not so unworthily of your daughter, as to bestow her upon one who has done so little to deserve her: if my happiness be dear to you, do not precipitate me into a state from whence you cannot recal me, with a person whom I can never affect.’

She would have gone on, but the marquis interrupted her sternly. ‘ I’ll hear no more,’ said he, ‘ of your foolish and ridiculous objections. What stuff is this you talk of? What service am I to expect from my nephew? And by what sufferings is he to merit your esteem? Assure yourself, Arabella,’ continued he, ‘ that I will never pardon you, if you presume to treat my nephew in the manner you have done: I perceive you have no real objection to make to him; therefore I expect you will endeavour to obey me without reluctance; for, since you seem to be so little acquainted with what will most conduce to your own happiness, you must not think it strange, if I insist upon directing your choice in the most important business of your life.’

Arabella

Arabella was going to reply, but the marquis ordered her to be silent; and she went to her own apartment in so much affliction, that she thought her misfortunes were not exceeded by any she had ever read.

CHAP. XI.

IN WHICH A LOGICAL ARGUMENT IS
UNSEASONABLY INTERRUPTED.

THE marquis was also extremely uneasy at her obstinacy: he desired nothing more ardently than to marry her to his nephew; but he could not resolve to force her consent; and, however determined he appeared to her, yet, in reality, he intended only to use persuasions to effect what he desired; and, from the natural sweetness of her temper, he was sometimes not without hopes that she might at last be prevailed upon to comply.

His nephew's return restored him to part of his usual tranquillity: after he had gently chid him for suffering himself to be so far transported with his resentment at the little humours of a lady, as to leave his house without acquainting him, he bid him go to Arabella, and endeavour to make his peace with her.

Mr. Glanville accordingly went to her apartment, resolving to oblige her to come to some explanation with him concerning the offence she complained of; but that fair incensed lady, who had taken shelter in her closet, ordered Lucy to tell him she was indisposed, and could not see him.

Glanville, however, comforted himself for this disappointment by the hopes of seeing her at supper; and accordingly she came when the supper-bell rung, and, making a very cool compliment to her cousin, placed herself at table. The soft languor that appeared in her eyes, gave such an additional charm to one of the loveliest faces in the world, that Glanville, who sat opposite to her, could not help gazing on her with a very particular attention; he often spoke to her, and asked her trifling questions, for the sake of hearing the sound of her voice, which sorrow had made inchantingly sweet.

When supper was over, she would

have retired; but the marquis desired her to stay and entertain her cousin, while he went to look over some dispatches he had received from London.

Arabella blushed with anger at this command; but not daring to disobey, she kept her eyes fixed on the ground, as if she dreaded to hear something that would displease her.

'Well, cousin,' said Glanville, 'though you desire to have no empire over so unworthy a subject as myself, yet I hope you are not displeased at my returning, in obedience to your commands.'

'Since I am not allowed any will of my own,' said she, sighing, 'it matters not whether I am pleased or displeased; nor is it of any consequence to you to know.'

'Indeed but it is, Lady Bella,' interrupted he; 'for if I knew how to please you, I would never, if I could help it, offend: therefore, I beg you, tell me how I have disobliged you; for certainly you have treated me as harshly as if I had been guilty of some very terrible offence.'

'You had the boldness,' said she, 'to talk to me of love; and you well know that persons of my sex and quality are not permitted to listen to such discourses; and if for that offence I banished you my presence, I did no more than decency required of me, and which I would yet do, were I mistress of my own actions.'

'But is it possible, cousin,' said Glanville, 'that you can be angry with any one for loving you? Is that a crime of so high a nature as to merit an eternal banishment from your presence?'

'Without telling you,' said Arabella, blushing, 'whether I am angry at being loved, it is sufficient you know, that I will not pardon the man who shall have the presumption to tell me he loves me.'

'But, Madam,' interrupted Glanville, 'if the person who tells you he loves you, be of a rank not beneath you, I conceive you are not at all injured by the favourable sentiments he feels for you; and though you are not disposed to make any returns to his passion, yet you are certainly obliged to him for his good opinion.'

'Since love is not voluntary,' replied Arabella, 'I am not obliged to any

any person for loving me; for, questionless, if he could help it, he would.'

'If it is not a voluntary favour,' interrupted Glanville, 'it is not a voluntary offence; and if you do not think yourself obliged by the one, neither are you at liberty to be offended with the other.'

'The question,' said Arabella, 'is not whether I ought to be offended at being loved, but whether it is not an offence to be told I am so.'

'If there is nothing criminal in the passion itself, Madam,' resumed Glanville, 'certainly there can be no crime in declaring it.'

'However specious your arguments may appear,' interrupted Arabella, 'I am persuaded it is an unpardonable crime to tell a lady you love her; and though I had nothing else to plead, yet the authority of custom is sufficient to prove it.'

'Custom, Lady Bella,' said Glanville, smiling, 'is wholly on my side; for the ladies are so far from being displeased at the addresses of their lovers, that their chiefest care is to gain them, and their greatest triumph to hear them talk of their passion: so, Madam, I hope you'll allow that argument has no force.'

'I don't know,' answered Arabella, 'what sort of ladies they are who allow such unbecoming liberties; but I am certain, that Statira, Parisatis, Clelia, Mandana, and all the illustrious heroines of antiquity, whom it is a glory to resemble, would never admit of such discourses.'

'Ah! for Heaven's sake, cousin,' interrupted Glanville, endeavouring to stifle a laugh, 'do not suffer yourself to be governed by such antiquated maxims! The world is quite different to what it was in those days; and the ladies in this age would as soon follow the fashions of the Greek and Roman ladies, as mimic their manners; and, I believe, they would become one as ill as the other.'

'I am sure,' replied Arabella, 'the world is not more virtuous now than it was in their days, and there is good reason to believe it is not much wiser; and I don't see why the manners of this age are to be preferred to those of former ones, unless they are wiser and better; however, I cannot be

persuaded that things are as you say, but that when I am a little better acquainted with the world, I shall find as many persons who resemble Oroonides, Artaxerxes, and the illustrious lover of Clelia, as those who are like Tiribases, Artaxes, and the presuming and insolent Glanville.'

'By the epithets you give me, Madam,' said Glanville, 'I find you have placed me in very bad company: but pray, Madam, if the illustrious lover of Clelia had never discovered his passion, how would the world have come to the knowledge of it?'

'He did not discover his passion, Sir,' resumed Arabella, 'till, by the services he did the noble Clelius, and his incomparable daughter, he could plead some title to their esteem: he several times preserved the life of that renowned Roman; delivered the beautiful Clelia when she was a captive; and, in fine, conferred so many obligations upon them, and all their friends, as he might well expect to be pardoned by the divine Clelia for daring to love her. Nevertheless, she used him very harshly when he first declared his passion, and banished him also from her presence; and it was a long time before she could prevail upon herself to compassionate his sufferings.'

The marquis coming in, interrupted Arabella; upon which she took occasion to retire, leaving Glanville more captivated with her than ever.

He found her usage of him was grounded upon examples she thought it her duty to follow; and, strange as her notions of life appeared, yet they were supported with so much wit and delicacy, that he could not help admiring her, while he foresaw the oddity of her humour would throw innumerable difficulties in his way before he should be able to obtain her.

However, as he was really passionately in love with her, he resolved to accommodate himself, as much as possible, to her taste, and endeavour to gain her heart by a behaviour most agreeable to her: he therefore assumed an air of great distance and respect; never mentioned his affection, nor the intentions of her father in his favour; and the marquis, observing his daughter conversed with him with less reluctance than usual, leaving to time, and

and the merit of his nephew, to dis-
pose her to comply with his desires, re-
solved not to interpose his authority in
an affair upon which her own hap-
piness so much depended.

CHAP. XII.

IN WHICH THE READER WILL FIND
A SPECIMEN OF THE TRUE PA-
THETICK, IN A SPEECH OF O-
ROONDATES—THE ADVENTURE
OF THE BOOKS.

ARABELLA saw the change in
her cousin's behaviour with a
great deal of satisfaction; for she did
not doubt but his passion was as strong
as ever, but that he forebore, through
respect, from entertaining her with any
expressions of it: therefore she now
conversed with him with the greatest
sweetness and complaisance; she would
walk with him for several hours in the
garden, leaning upon his arm, and
charmed him to the last degree of ad-
miration by the agreeable sallies of her
wit, and her fine reasoning upon every
subject he proposed.

It was with the greatest difficulty
he restrained himself from telling her
a thousand times a day that he loved
her to excess, and conjuring her to
give her consent to her father's designs
in his favour: but, though he could
get over his fears of offending her,
yet it was impossible to express any
sentiments of this nature to her, with-
out having her women witnesses of his
discourse, for when he walked with
her in the garden, Lucy and another
attendant always followed her; if he
sat with her in her own chamber, her
women were always at one end of it;
and when they were both in the mar-
quis's apartment, where her women
did not follow her, poor Glanville
found himself embarrassed by his pre-
sence; for conceiving his nephew had
opportunities enough of talking to his
daughter in private, he always par-
took of their conversation.

He passed some weeks in this man-
ner, extremely chagrined at the little
progress he made; and was beginning
to be heartily weary of the constraint
he laid upon himself, when Arabella
one day furnished him, without de-
signing it, with an opportunity of

talking to her on the subject he wished
for.

'When I reflect,' said she, laugh-
ing, 'upon the difference there was
'between us some days ago, and the
'familiarity in which we live at pre-
'sent, I cannot imagine by what means
'you have arrived to a good fortune
'you had so little reason to expect;
'for, in fine, you have given me no
'signs of repentance for the fault you
'committed, which moved me to banish
'you; and I am not certain whether,
'in conversing with you in the manner
'I do, I give you not as much reason
'to find fault with my too great easi-
'ness, as you did me to be displeased
'with your presumption.'

'Since,' returned Glanville, 'I have
'not persisted in the commission of
'those faults which displeased you,
'what greater signs of repentance can
'you desire, than this reformation in
'my behaviour?'

'But repentance ought to precede re-
'formation,' replied Arabella, 'other-
'wise, there is great room to suspect
'it is only feigned; and a sincere re-
'pentance shews itself in such visible
'marks, that one can hardly be de-
'ceived in that which is genuine. I
'have read of many indiscreet lovers,
'who not succeeding in their addresses,
'have pretended to repent, and acted
'as you do; that is, without giving
'any signs of contrition for the fault
'they had committed, have eat and
'slept well, never lost their colour, or
'grew one bit thinner by their sor-
'row; but contented themselves with
'saying they repented, and, without
'changing their disposition to renew
'their fault, only concealed their in-
'tention for fear of losing any fa-
'vourable opportunity of committing
'it again: but true repentance, as I
'was saying, not only produces refor-
'mation, but the person who is pos-
'sessed of it voluntarily punishes him-
'self for the faults he has been guilty
'of. Thus, Mazares, deeply repent-
'ing of the crime his passion for the
'divine Mandana had forced him to
'commit; as a punishment, obliged
'himself to follow the fortune of his
'glorious rival, obey all his com-
'mands, and, fighting under his ban-
'ners, assist him to gain the possession
'of his adored mistress. Such a glo-
'rious instance of self-denial was, in-
'deed,

‘ deed, a sufficient proof of his repentance; and infinitely more convincing than the silence he imposed upon himself with respect to his passion.’

‘ Oroondates, to punish himself for his presumption, in daring to tell the admirable Statira that he loved her, resolved to die, to expiate his crime; and, doubtless, would have done so, if his fair mistress, at the intreaty of her brother, had not commanded him to live.’

‘ But pray, Lady Bella,’ interrupted Glanville, ‘ were not these gentlemen happy at last in the possession of their mistresses?’

‘ Doubtless they were, Sir,’ resumed she; ‘ but it was not till after numberless misfortunes, infinite services, and many dangerous adventures, in which their fidelity was put to the strongest trials imaginable.’

‘ I am glad, however,’ said Glanville, ‘ that the ladies were not insensible; for, since you do not disapprove of their compassion for their lovers, it is to be hoped you will not be always as inexorable as you are now.’

‘ When I shall be so fortunate,’ interrupted she, ‘ to meet with a lover who shall have as pure and perfect a passion for me as Oroondates had for Statira, and give me as many glorious proofs of his constancy and affection, doubtless I shall not be ungrateful; but, since I have not the merits of Statira, I ought not to pretend to her good fortune; and shall be very well contented if I escape the persecutions which persons of my sex, who are not frightfully ugly, are always exposed to, without hoping to inspire such a passion as that of Oroondates.’

‘ I should be glad to be better acquainted with the actions of this happy lover, Madam,’ said Glanville; ‘ that, forming myself upon his example, I may hope to please a lady as worthy of my regard as Statira was of his.’

‘ For Heaven’s sake, cousin,’ resumed Arabella, laughing, ‘ how have you spent your time; and to what studies have you devoted all your hours, that you could find none to spare for the perusal of books from which all useful knowledge may be

drawn; which give us the most shining examples of generosity, courage, virtue, and love; which regulate our actions, form our manners, and inspire us with a noble desire of emulating those great, heroick, and virtuous actions, which made those persons so glorious in their age, and so worthy imitation in ours? How ever, as it is never too late to improve, suffer me to recommend to you the reading of these books, which will soon make you discover the improprieties you have been guilty of; and will, probably, induce you to avoid them for the future.’

‘ I shall certainly read them, if you desire it,’ said Glanville; ‘ and I have so great an inclination to be agreeable to you, that I shall embrace every opportunity of becoming so; and will therefore take my instructions from these books, if you think proper, or from yourself, which, indeed, will be the quickest method of teaching me.’

Arabella having ordered one of her women to bring Cleopatra, Cassandra, Clelia, and the Grand Cyrus, from her library, Glanville no sooner saw the girl return, sinking under the weight of those voluminous romances, but he began to tremble at the apprehension of his cousin-laying her commands upon him to read them; and repented of his complaisance, which exposed him to the cruel necessity of performing what to him appeared an Herculean labour, or else incurring her anger by his refusal.

Arabella, making her women place the books upon a table before her, opened them, one after another, with eyes sparkling with delight; while Glanville sat wrapt in admiration at the sight of so many huge folios written, as he conceived, upon the most trifling subjects imaginable.

‘ I have chosen out these few,’ said Arabella, (not observing his consternation) ‘ from a great many others, which compose the most valuable part of my library; and by that time you have gone through these, I imagine you will be considerably improved.’

‘ Certainly, Madam,’ replied Glanville, turning over the leaves in great confusion, ‘ one may, as you say, be greatly improved; for these books

'contain a great deal:' and, looking over a page of *Cassandra*, without any design, read these words, which were part of *Oroondates's* soliloquy when he received a cruel sentence from *Statira*—

'Ah, cruel!' (says this miserable lover) 'and what have I done to merit it? Examine the nature of my offence, and you will see I am not so guilty, but that my death may free me from part of that severity: shall your hatred last longer than my life? and can you detest a soul that forsakes its body only to obey you? No, no, you are not so hard-hearted; that satisfaction will, doubtless, content you: and, when I shall cease to be, doubtless I shall cease to be odious to you.'

'Upon my soul,' said *Glanville*, stifling a laugh with great difficulty, 'I cannot help blaming the lady this sorrowful lover complains of, for her great cruelty; for here he gives one reason to suspect, that she will not even be contented with his dying in obedience to her commands, but will hate him after death; an impiety quite inexcusable in a christian!'

'You condemn this illustrious princess with very little reason,' interrupted *Arabella*, smiling at his mistake; 'for, besides that she was not a christian, and ignorant of those divine maxims of charity and forgiveness, which christians, by their profession, are obliged to practise, she was very far from desiring the death of *Oroondates*; for, if you will take the pains to read the succeeding passages, you will find that she expresses herself in the most obliging manner in the world; for when *Oroondates* tells her he would live, if she would consent he should, the princess most sweetly replies, "I not only consent, but also treat it; and, if I have any power, command it." However, lest you should fall into the other extreme, and blame this great princess for her easiness, (as you before condemned her for her cruelty) 'tis necessary you should know how she was induced to this favourable behaviour to her lover: therefore pray read the whole transaction. Stay! here it begins,' continued she; turning over a good many pages, and marking where he should begin to read,

Glanville, having no great stomach to the task, endeavoured to evade it, by intreating his cousin to relate the passages she desired he should be acquainted with: but she declining it, he was obliged to obey; and began to read where she directed him; and, to leave him at liberty to read with the greater attention, she left him, and went to a window at another end of the chamber.

Mr. Glanville, who was not willing to displease her, examined the task she had set him, resolving, if it was not a very hard one, to comply; but, counting the pages, he was quite terrified at the number, and could not prevail upon himself to read them: therefore glancing them over, he pretended to be deeply engaged in reading, when, in reality, he was contemplating the surprising effect these books had produced in the mind of his cousin; who, had she been untainted with the ridiculous whims they created in her imagination, was, in his opinion, one of the most accomplished ladies in the world.

When he had sat long enough to make her believe he had read what she had desired, he rose up, and joining her at the window, began to talk of the pleasantness of the evening, instead of the rigour of *Statira*.

Arabella coloured with vexation at his extreme indifference in a matter which was of such prodigious consequence, in her opinion; but disdaining to put him in mind of his rudeness, in quitting a subject they had not thoroughly discussed, and which she had taken so much pains to make him comprehend, she continued silent, and would not condescend to afford him an answer to any thing he said.

Glanville, by her silence and frowns, was made sensible of his fault; and, to repair it, began to talk of the inexorable *Statira*; though, indeed, he did not well know what to say.

Arabella, clearing up a little, did not disdain to answer him upon her favourite topic: 'I knew,' said she, 'you would be ready to blame this princess equally for her rigour and her kindness; but it must be remembered, that what she did in favour of *Oroondates* was wholly owing to the generosity of *Artaxerxes*.'

Here she stopped, expecting *Glanville* to give his opinion; who, strangely puzzled, replied at random, 'To be
sure

sure, Madam, he was a very generous rival.

'Rival!' cried Arabella; 'Artaxerxes the rival of Oroondates! why, certainly you have lost your wits: he was Statira's brother; and it was to his mediation that Oroondates, or Orontes, owed his happiness.'

'Certainly, Madam,' replied Glanville, 'it was very generous in Artaxerxes, as he was brother to Statira, to interpose in the behalf of an unfortunate lover; and both Oroondates and Orontes were extremely obliged to him.'

'Orontes,' replied Arabella, 'was more obliged to him than Oroondates; since the quality of Orontes was infinitely below that of Oroondates.'

'But, Madam,' interrupted Glanville, '(extremely pleased at his having so well got over the difficulty he had been in) 'which of these two lovers did Statira make happy?'

This unlucky question immediately informed Arabella, that she had been all this time the dupe of her cousin; who, if he had read a single page, would have known that Orontes and Oroondates was the same person; the name of Orontes being assumed by Oroondates to conceal his real name and quality.

The shame and rage she conceived at so glaring a proof of his disrespect, and the ridicule to which she had exposed herself, were so great, that she could not find words severe enough to express her resentment; but, protesting that no consideration whatever should oblige her to converse with him again, she ordered him instantly to quit her chamber; and assured him, if he ever attempted to approach her again, she would submit to the most terrible effects of her father's resentment, rather than be obliged to see a person who had, by his unworthy behaviour, made himself her scorn and aversion.

Glanville, who saw himself going to be discarded a second time, attempted, with great submission, to move her to recal her cruel sentence; but Arabella, bursting into tears, complained so pathetically of the cruelty of her destiny, in exposing her to the hated importunities of a man she despised, and whose presence was so insupportable, that Glanville, thinking it best to let her rage evaporate a little before he at-

tempted to pacify her, quitted her chamber; cursing Statira and Orontes a thousand times, and loading the authors of those books with all the imprecations his rage could suggest.

CHAP. XIII.

THE ADVENTURE OF THE BOOKS. CONTINUED.

IN this temper he went to the gardens to pass over the chagrin this unfortunate accident had given him; when, meeting the marquis, who insisted upon knowing the cause of that ill-humour so visible in his countenance, Glanville related all that had passed; but, in spite of his anger, it was impossible for him to repeat the circumstances of his disgrace without laughing, as well as the marquis; who thought the story so extremely diverting, that he would needs hear it over again.

'However, Charles,' said he, 'though I shall do what I can to gain your pardon from Bella, yet I shall not scruple to own you acted extremely wrong, in not reading what she desired you; for, besides losing an opportunity of obliging her, you drew yourself into a terrible dilemma; for how was it possible for you to evade a discovery of the cheat you put upon her; when she began to talk with you upon those passages she had desired you to read?'

'I acknowledge my error, my lord,' answered Glanville; 'but if you restore me to my cousin's favour again, I promise you to repair it by a different behaviour for the future.'

'I'll see what I can do for you,' said the marquis, leaving him, to go to Arabella's apartment, who had retired to her closet, extremely afflicted at this new insult she had received from her cousin: her grief was the more poignant, as she was beginning to imagine, by the alteration in his behaviour, that he would prove such a lover as she wished for; Mr. Glanville's person and qualifications had attracted her particular notice; and, to speak in the language of romance, she did not hate him; but, on the contrary, was very much disposed to wish him well; therefore it was no wonder she extremely resented the affront she had received from him.

The marquis not finding her in her chamber, proceeded to her closet, where her women informed him she was retired; and knocking gently at the door, was admitted by Arabella, whom he immediately discerned to have been weeping very much; for her fine eyes were red and swelled, and the traces of her tears might still be observed on her fair face, which at the sight of the marquis was overspread with a blush, as if she was conscious of her weakness in lamenting the crime her cousin had been guilty of.

The marquis drew a favourable omen for his nephew from her tears and confusion; but not willing to increase it by acknowledging he had observed it, he told her he was come, at Mr. Glanville's request, to make up the quarrel between them.

'Ah! my lord,' interrupted Arabella, 'speak no more to me of that unworthy man, who has so grossly abused my favour, and the privilege I allowed him: his baseness and ingratitude are but too manifest; and there is nothing I so much regret as my weakness in restoring him to part of my good opinion, after he had once forfeited it, by an insolence not to be paralleled.'

'Indeed, Bella,' said the marquis, smiling, 'you resent too deeply these slight matters: I can't think my nephew so guilty as you would have me believe he is; and you ought neither to be angry or surprized, that he preferred your conversation before reading in a foolish old-fashioned book that you put in his hands.'

'If your lordship had ever read these books,' replied Arabella, reddening with vexation, 'it is probable you would have another opinion of them; but, however that may be, my cousin is not to be excused for the contempt he shewed to my commands; and for daring, by the cheat he put on me, to expose me to the shame of seeing myself so ridiculously imposed upon.'

'However, you must forgive him,' said the marquis; 'and I insist upon it, before I quit your apartment, that you receive him into favour.'

'Pardon me, my lord,' replied Arabella; 'this is what I neither can, nor ought to do; and I hope you will

not wrong me so much as to continue to desire it.'

'Nay, Bella,' said he, 'this is carrying things too far, and making trifling disputes of too great consequence: I am surprized at your treatment of a man whom, after all, if ever you intend to obey me, you must consent to marry.'

'There is no question, my lord,' replied she, 'but it would be my glory to obey you in whatever is possible; but this you command me now to do, not being so, I conceive you will rather impute my refusal to necessity than choice.'

'How!' returned the marquis, 'will you endeavour to persuade me, that it is not possible Mr. Glanville should be your husband?'

'It is impossible he should be so with my consent,' resumed Arabella; 'and I cannot give it without wounding my own quiet in a most sensible manner.'

'Come, come, Bella,' said the marquis, (fretting at her extreme obstinacy) 'this is too much; I am to blame to indulge your foibles in this manner: your cousin is worthy of your affection, and you cannot refuse it to him without incurring my displeasure.'

'Since my affection is not in my own power to bestow,' said Arabella, weeping, 'I know not how to remove your displeasure; but, questionless, I know how to die, to avoid the effects of what would be to me the most terrible misfortune in the world.'

'Foolish girl!' interrupted the marquis, 'how strangely do you talk? Are the thoughts of death become so familiar to you, that you speak of dying with so little concern?'

'Since, my lord,' resumed she, in an exalted tone, 'I do not yield, either in virtue or courage, to many others of my sex, who, when persecuted like me, have fled to death for relief, I know not why I should be thought less capable of it than they; and if Artemisa, Candace, and the beautiful daughter of Cleopatra, could brave the terrors of death for the sake of the men they loved, there is no question but I also could imitate their courage, to avoid the man I have so much reason to hate.'

'The

'The girl is certainly distracted,' interrupted the marquis, excessively enraged at the strange speech she had uttered: 'these foolish books my nephew talks of have turned her brain! Where are they?' pursued he, going into her chamber: 'I'll burn all I can lay my hands upon.'

Arabella, trembling for the fate of her books, followed her father into the room; who seeing the books which had caused this woeful adventure lying upon the table, he ordered one of her women to carry them into his apartment, vowing he would commit them all to the flames.

Arabella not daring, in the fury he was in, to interpose, he went out of the room, leaving her to bewail the fate of

so many illustrious heroes and heroines, who, by an effect of a more cruel tyranny than any they had ever experienced before, were going to be cast into the merciless flames; which would, doubtless, pay very little regard to the divine beauties of the admirable Clelia, or the heroic valour of the brave Orontes; and the rest of those great princes and princesses, whose actions Arabella proposed for the model of hers.

Fortune, however, which never wholly forsook these illustrious personages, rescued them from so unworthy a fate, and brought Mr. Glanville into the marquis's chamber just as he was giving orders to have them destroyed.

END OF THE FIRST BOOK.



THE

FEMALE QUIXOTE.

BOOK II.

CHAP. I.

IN WHICH THE ADVENTURE OF THE BOOKS IS HAPPILY CONCLUDED.



HE marquis, as soon as he saw Mr. Glanville, told him he was resolved to cure Arabella of her whims, by burning the books that had put them into her head: 'I have seized upon some of them,' pursued he, smiling; 'and you may, if you please, wreak your spite upon these authors of your disgrace, by burning them yourself.'

'Though I have all the reason in the world to be enraged with that incendiary Statira,' said Glanville, laughing, 'for the mischief she has done me; yet I cannot consent to put such an affront upon my cousin, as to burn her favourite books: and now I think of it, my lord,' pursued he, 'I'll endeavour to make a merit with Lady Bella by saving them; therefore spare them, at my request, and let me carry them to her. I shall be quite unhappy till we are friends again.'

'You may do as you will,' said the marquis; 'but I think it is encouraging her in her follies to give them to her again.'

Glanville, without replying, eagerly took up the books, for fear the marquis should change his mind; and, highly delighted with the opportunity he had got of making his peace with Lady Bella, ran to her apartment, loaded

with these kind intercessors; and, making his way by Lucy, who would have opposed him, penetrated even into the closet of the melancholy fair-one, who was making bitter reflections on the cruelty of her destiny, and bewailing her loss with a deluge of tears.

As ridiculous as the occasion of these tears was, yet Glanville could not behold them without being affected: assuming, therefore, a countenance as sad as he was able, he laid the books before her; and told her, he hoped she would excuse his coming into her presence without her permission, since it was only to restore her those books, whose loss she seemed so greatly to lament; and added, that it was with much difficulty he prevailed upon the marquis not to burn them immediately; and his fears, that he might really do as he threatened, made him snatch them up, and bring them, with so little ceremony, into her closet.'

Arabella, whose countenance brightened into a smile of pleasing surprise at the sight of her recovered treasure, turned her bright eyes upon Glanville with a look of complacency that went to his heart.

'I well perceive,' said she, 'that in exaggerating the merit of this little service you have done me, you expect I should suffer it to cancel your past offences: I am not ungrateful enough to be insensible of any kindness that is shewn me; and, though I might be excused for suspecting it was rather policy than friendship, that induced you to seek my satisfaction,

'tion, by saving these innocent victims of my father's displeasure, nevertheless I pardon you upon the supposition, that you will, for the future, avoid all occasion of offending me.'

At these words she made a sign to him to be gone, fearing the extravagance of his joy would make him throw himself at her feet to thank her for the infinite favour she had conferred upon him; but finding he seemed disposed to stay longer, she called one of her women into the closet; and, by some very significant frowns, gave Glanville to understand his stay was displeasing; so that he left her, with a very low bow, highly pleased at her having repealed his banishment, and assured the marquis that nothing could have happened more fortunate for him, than his intended disposal of his daughter's books, since it had proved the means of restoring him to her favour.

CHAP. II.

WHICH CONTAINS A VERY NATURAL INCIDENT.

FROM this time Mr. Glanville, though he was far from coming up to Lady Bella's idea of a lover, yet, by the pains he apparently seemed to be at in obliging her, made every day some progress in her esteem. The marquis was extremely pleased at the harmony which subsisted between them; though he could have wished to have seen their marriage advance a little faster; but Glanville, who was better acquainted with Arabella's foible than the marquis, assured him, he would ruin all his hopes if he pressed her to marry; and intreated him to leave it entirely to him, to dispose her to consent to both their wishes.

The marquis was satisfied with his reasons, and resolving not to importune his daughter upon that subject any more, they lived for some months in a perfect tranquillity; to which an illness the marquis was seized with, and which was from the first thought to be dangerous, gave a sad interruption.

Arabella's extreme tenderness upon this occasion, her anxious solicitude, her pious cares, and never-ceasing attendance at the bedside of her sick father,

were so many new charms, that engaged the affection of Glanville more strongly. As the marquis's indisposition increased, so did her care and assiduity: she would not allow any one to give him any thing but herself; bore all the pettish humours of a sick man with a surprizing sweetness and patience; watched whole nights successively by his bedside; and when, at his importunity, she consented to take any rest, it was only upon a couch in his chamber, from whence no intreaties could make her remove. Mr. Glanville partook with her in these fatigues; and by his care of her father, and tenderness for her, confirmed her in the esteem she had entertained of him.

The marquis, who had struggled with the violence of his distemper for a fortnight, died on the fifteenth day in the arms of Arabella, who received his last looks; his eyes never removing themselves from her face, till they were closed by death. Her spirits, which the desire she had of being useful to him, had alone supported, now failed her at once; and she fell upon the bed, without sense or motion, as soon as she saw him expire.

Mr. Glanville, who was kneeling on the other side, and had been holding one of his uncle's hands, started up in the most terrible consternation, and, seeing the condition she was in, flew to her relief; her women, while he supported her, used all the endeavours they could think of to recover her; but she continued so long in her swoon, that they apprehended she was dead; and Glanville was resigning himself up to the most bitter sorrow, when she opened her eyes; but it was only to close them again. Her faintings continued the whole day; and the physicians declaring she was in great danger, from her extreme weakness, she was carried to bed in a condition that seemed to promise very little hopes of her life.

The care of the marquis's funeral devolving upon Mr. Glanville, he sent a messenger express for his father, who was appointed guardian to Lady Bella; the marquis having first asked her if she was willing it should be so. This gentleman arrived time enough to be witness of that sad ceremony, which

was

was performed with a magnificence suitable to the birth and fortune of the marquis.

Lady Bella kept her bed several days, and her life was thought to be in danger; but her youth, and the strength of her constitution, overcame her dis-ease; and, when she was so well recovered as to be able to admit of a visit from her uncle, Mr. Glanville sent for permission to introduce him: the afflicted Arabella granted his request; but, being then more indisposed than usual, she intreated they would defer their visit for an hour or two, which they complied with; and returning at the appointed time, were conducted into her dressing-room by Lucy, who informed them her lady was just fallen into a slumber.

Mr. Glanville, who had not seen her for some days, expected her waking with great impatience; and pleased himself with describing her, with a lover's fondness, to his father, when the sound of her voice in the next room interrupted him.

CHAP. III.

WHICH TREATS OF A CONSOLATORY VISIT, AND OTHER GRAVE MATTERS.

ARABELLA, being then awaked from her slumber, was indulging her grief by complaints, which her women were so used to hear, that they never offered to disturb her. 'Merciless fate!' said she, in the most moving tone imaginable, 'cruel destiny! that, not contented with having deprived my infancy of the soft cares, and tender indulgences, of a mother's fondness, has robbed me of the only parent I had left, and exposed me, at these early years, to the grief of losing him who was not only my father, but my friend, and protector of my youth!'

Then, pausing a moment, she renewed her complaints with a deep sigh: 'Dear relics of the best of fathers!' pursued she, 'why was it not permitted me to bathe you with my tears? Why were those sacred remains of him, from whom I drew my life, snatched from my eyes, ere they had poured their tribute of sorrow over

them?—Ah, pitiless women!' said she to her attendants, 'you prevented me from performing the last pious rites to my dear father! You, by your cruel care, hindered me from easing my sad heart, by paying him the last duties he could receive from me! Pardon, O dear and sacred shade of my loved father! pardon this unwilling neglect of thy afflicted child, who, to the last moment of her wretched life, will bewail thy loss!'

Here she ceased speaking; and Mr. Glanville, whom this soliloquy had much less confounded than his father, was preparing to go in, and comfort her; when the old gentleman stopping him with a look of great concern, 'My niece is certainly much worse than we apprehend,' said he. 'She is in a delirium. Our presence may, perhaps, discompose her too much.'

'No, Sir,' replied Glanville, extremely confused at this suspicion; 'my cousin is not so bad as you suppose: it is common enough for people in any great affliction to ease themselves by complaints.'

'But these,' replied the knight, 'are the strangest complaints I ever heard, and favour so much of phrenzy, that I am persuaded her head is not quite right.'

Glanville was going to reply, when Lucy, entering, told him her lady had ordered their admission: upon which they followed her into Arabella's chamber, who was lying negligently upon her bed.

Her deep mourning, and the black gauze, which covered part of her fair face, was so advantageous to her shape and complexion, that Sir Charles, who had not seen her since she grew up, was struck with an extreme surprize at her beauty, while his son was gazing on her so passionately, that he never thought of introducing his father to her, who contemplated her with as much admiration as his son, though with less passion.

Arabella, rising from her bed, saluted her uncle with a grace that wholly charmed him; and turning to receive Mr. Glanville, she burst into tears at the remembrance of his having assisted her in her last attendance upon her father. 'Alas, Sir!' said she, 'when we saw each other last, we were both engaged in a very melancholy office: had

‘ had it pleased Heaven to have spared my father, he would, doubtless, have been extremely sensible of your generous cares; nor shall you have any reason to accuse me of ingratitude, since I shall always acknowledge your kindness as I ought.’

‘ If you think you owe me any obligation,’ returned Glanville, ‘ pay me, dearest cousin, by moderating your sorrow: indeed, you suffer yourself to sink too much under an affliction which is impossible to be remedied.’

‘ Alas!’ answered Arabella, ‘ my grief is very slight, compared to that of many others upon the death of their relations. The great Syfigambis, who, questionless, wanted neither fortitude nor courage, upon the news of her grand-daughter’s death, wrapt herself up in her veil; and, resolving never more to behold the light, waited for death in that posture.’

‘ Menecrates, upon the loss of his wife, built a magnificent tomb for her; and, shutting himself up in it, resolved to pass away the remainder of his life with her ashes. These, indeed, were glorious effects of piety and affection, and unfeigned signs of an excessive sorrow: what are the few tears I shed, to such illustrious instances of grief and affection as these?’

Glanville, finding his cousin upon this strain, blushed extremely, and would have changed the subject; but the old gentleman, who had never heard of these two persons she mentioned, who expressed their sorrow for their losses in so strange a manner, was surprized at it; and was resolved to know more about them.

‘ Pray, niece,’ said he, ‘ were you acquainted with these people, who could not submit to the dispensation of Providence, but, as one may say, flew in the face of Heaven by their impatience?’

‘ I am very well acquainted with their history,’ resumed Arabella; ‘ and I can assure you, they were both very admirable persons.’

‘ Oh! Oh! their history!’ interrupted the knight. ‘ What, I warrant you, they are to be found in the Fairy Tales, and those sort of books! Well, I never could like such romances,

‘ not I; for they only spoil youth, and put strange notions into their heads.’

‘ I am sorry,’ resumed Arabella, blushing with anger, ‘ that we are like to differ in opinion upon so important a point.’

‘ Truly, niece,’ said Sir Charles, ‘ if we never differ in any thing else, I shall be very easy about this slight matter; though I think a young lady of your fine sense (for my son praises you to the skies for your *wit*) should not be so fond of such ridiculous nonsense as these story-books are filled with.’

‘ Upon my word, Sir,’ resumed Arabella, ‘ all the respect I owe you cannot hinder me from telling you, that I take it extremely ill you should, in my presence, rail at the finest productions in the world. I think we are infinitely obliged to these authors, who have, in so sublime a style, delivered down to posterity the heroick actions of the bravest men, and most virtuous of women. But for the inimitable pen of the famous Scudery, we had been ignorant of the lives of many great and illustrious persons: the warlike actions of Oroondates, Aronces, Juba, and the renowned Artaban, had, haply, never been talked of in our age; and those fair and chaste ladies, who were the objects of their pure and constant passions, had still been buried in obscurity; and neither their divine beauties, or singular virtue, been the subject of our admiration and praise. But for the famous Scudery, we had not known the true cause of that action of Clelia’s, for which the senate decreed her a statue; namely, her casting herself, with an unparalleled courage, into the Tyber, a deep and rapid river, as you must certainly know, and swimming to the other side. It was not, as the Roman historians falsely report, a stratagem to recover herself, and the other hostages, from the power of Porcena; it was to preserve her honour from violation by the impious Sextus, who was in the camp. But for Scudery, we had still thought the inimitable poetess Sappho to be a loose wanton, whose verses breathed nothing but unchaste and irregular fires: on the contrary, she was so remarkably chaste, that she

F would

‘ would never even consent to marry ;
 ‘ but, loving Phaon, only with a platonick passion, obliged him to restrain his desires within the compass of a brother’s affection. Numberless are the mistakes he has cleared up of this kind ; and I question, if any other historian but himself, knew that Cleopatra was really married to Julius Cæsar ; or that Cæsar, her son by this marriage, was not murdered, as was supposed, by the order of Augustus, but married the fair Queen of Ethiopia, in whose dominions he took refuge. The prodigious acts of valour, which he has recounted of those accomplished princes, have never been equalled by the heroes of either the Greek or Roman historians : how poor and insignificant are the actions of their warriors to Scudery’s, where one of those admirable heroes would put whole armies into terror, and with his single arm oppose a legion !’

‘ Indeed, niece,’ said Sir Charles, no longer able to forbear interrupting her, ‘ these are all very improbable tales. I remember, when I was a boy, I was very fond of reading the history of Jack the Giant Killer, and Tom Thumb ; and these stories so filled my head, that I really thought one of those little fellows killed men an hundred feet high ; and that the other, after a great many surprizing exploits, was swallowed up by a cow.’

‘ You was very young, Sir, you say,’ interrupted Arabella, tartly, ‘ when those stories gained your belief : however, your judgment was certainly younger, if you ever believed them at all ; for as credulous as you are pleased to think me, I should never, at any age, have been persuaded such things could have happened.’

‘ My father, Madam,’ said Glanville, who was strangely confused all this time, ‘ bore arms in his youth ; and soldiers, you know, never trouble themselves much with reading.’

‘ Has my uncle been a soldier,’ said Arabella, ‘ and does he hold in contempt the actions of the bravest soldiers in the world ?’

‘ The soldiers you speak of, niece,’ said Sir Charles, ‘ were, indeed, the bravest soldiers in the world ; for I

‘ don’t believe they ever had their equals.’

‘ And yet, Sir,’ said Arabella, ‘ there are a great number of such soldiers to be found in Scudery.’

‘ Indeed, my dear niece,’ interrupted Sir Charles, ‘ they are to be found nowhere else, except in your imagination, which, I am sorry to see, is filled with such whimsies.’

‘ If you mean this to affront me,’ Sir,’ resumed Arabella, hardly able to forbear tears, ‘ I know how far, as my uncle, I ought to bear with you : but methinks it is highly unkind to aggravate my sorrows by such cruel jests ; and since I am not in a humour to suffer them, don’t take it ill, if I intreat you to leave me to myself.’

Mr. Glanville, who knew nothing pleased his cousin so much as paying an exact obedience to her commands, rose up immediately ; and, bowing respectfully to her, asked his father if he should attend him into the gardens.

The baronet, who thought Arabella’s behaviour bordered a good deal upon rudeness, took his leave with some signs of displeasure upon his countenance ; and, notwithstanding all his son could say in excuse for her, he was extremely offended.

‘ What,’ said he to Mr. Glanville, ‘ does she so little understand the respect that is due to me as her uncle, that she so peremptorily desired me to leave her room ? My brother was to blame to take so little care of her education ; she is quite a rustick !’

‘ Ah ! don’t wrong your judgment so much, Sir,’ said Glanville ; ‘ my cousin has as little of the rustick as if she had passed all her life in a court : her fine sense, and the native elegance of her manners, give an inimitable grace to her behaviour ; and as much exceed the studied politeness of other ladies I have conversed with, as the beauties of her person do all I have ever seen.’

‘ She is very handsome, I confess,’ returned Sir Charles ; ‘ but I cannot think so well of her wit as you do ; for methinks she talks very oddly, and has the strangest conceits ! Who, but herself, would think it probable that one man could put a whole army to flight ; or commend a foolish fellow for living in a tomb, because his wife

'wife was buried in it? Fie! fie!—these are silly and extravagant notions, and will make her appear very ridiculous.'

Mr. Glanville was so sensible of the justness of this remark, that he could not help sighing; which his father observing, told him, that, since she was to be his wife, it was his business to produce a reformation in her; 'For,' added he, 'notwithstanding the immense fortune she will bring you, I should be sorry to have a daughter-in-law for whom I should blush as often as she opened her mouth.'

'I assure you, Sir,' said Mr. Glanville, 'I have but very little hopes that I shall be so happy as to have my cousin for a wife; for though it was my uncle's command I should make my addresses to her, she received me so ill, as a lover, that I have never dared to talk to her upon that subject since.'

'And pray,' resumed Sir Charles, 'upon what terms are you at present?'

'While I seem to pretend nothing to her as a lover,' replied Mr. Glanville, 'she is very obliging, and we live in great harmony together; but, I am persuaded, if I exceed the bounds of friendship in my professions, she will treat me extremely ill.'

'But,' interrupted Sir Charles, 'when she shall know that her father has bequeathed you one third of his estate, provided she don't marry you, 'tis probable her mind may change; and you may depend upon it, since your heart is so much set upon her, that, as I am her gurdian, I shall press her to perform the marquis's will.'

'Ah! Sir,' resumed Mr. Glanville, 'never attempt to lay any constraint upon my cousin in an affair of this nature: permit me to tell you, it would be an abuse of the marquis's generous confidence, and what I would never submit to.'

'Nay, nay,' said the old gentleman, 'you have no reason to fear any compulsion from me: though her father has left me her guardian, till she is of age, yet it is with such restriction, that my niece is quite her own mistress in that respect; for though she is directed to consult me in her choice of an husband, yet my consent is not absolutely necessary. The marquis

'has certainly had a great opinion of his daughter's prudence; and I hope she will prove herself worthy of it by her conduct.'

Mr. Glanville was so taken up with his reflections upon the state of his affairs, that he made but little reply; and, as soon as he had disengaged himself, retired to his chamber, to be at more liberty to indulge his meditations. As he could not flatter himself with having made any impression upon the heart of Arabella, he foresaw a thousand inconveniences from the death of the marquis; for, besides that he lost a powerful mediator with his cousin, he feared that, when she appeared in the world, her beauty and fortune would attract a crowd of admirers, among whom, it was probable, she would find some one more agreeable to her taste than himself. As he loved her with great tenderness, this thought made him extremely uneasy; and he would sometimes wish the marquis had laid a stronger injunction upon her in his will to marry him; and regretted the little power his father had over her: but he was too generous to dwell long upon these thoughts, and contented himself with resolving to do all that was honourable to obtain her, without seeking for any assistance from unjustifiable methods.

CHAP. IV.

WHICH CONTAINS SOME COMMON OCCURRENCES, BUT PLACED IN A NEW LIGHT.

ARABELLA, in a few days, leaving her chamber, had so many opportunities of charming her uncle by her conversation, which, when it did not turn upon any incident in her romances, was perfectly fine, easy, and entertaining, that he declared he should quit the castle with great regret; and endeavoured to persuade her to accompany him to town: but Arabella, who was determined to pass the year of her mourning in the retirement she had always lived in, absolutely refused, strong as her curiosity was to see London.

Mr. Glanville secretly rejoiced at this resolution, though he seemed desirous of making her change it; but she was

unalterable; and, therefore, the baronet did not think proper to press her any more.

Her father's will being read to her, she seemed extremely pleased with the article in favour of Mr. Glanville, wishing him joy of the estate that was bequeathed to him, with a most enchanting sweetness.

Mr. Glanville sighed, and cast his eyes on the ground, as he returned her compliment, with a very low bow; and Sir Charles, observing his confusion, told Arabella, that he thought it was a very bad omen for his son, to wish him joy of an estate which he could not come to the possession of but by a very great misfortune.

Arabella, understanding his meaning, blushed; and, willing to change the discourse, proceeded to consult her uncle upon the regulation of her house. Besides the legacies her father had bequeathed to his servants, those who were more immediately about his person she desired might have their salaries continued to them: she made no other alteration, than discharging these attendants, retaining all the others; and submitting to her uncle the management of her estates, receiving the allowance he thought proper to assign her, till she was of age, of which she wanted three years.

Every thing being settled, Sir Charles prepared to return to town. Mr. Glanville, who desired nothing so much as to stay some time longer with his cousin in her solitude, got his father to intreat that favour for him of Arabella: but she represented to her uncle the impropriety of a young gentleman's staying with her, in her house, now her father was dead, in a manner so genteel and convincing, that Sir Charles could press it no farther; and all that Mr. Glanville could obtain, was a permission to visit her some time after, provided he could prevail upon his sister, Miss Charlotte Glanville, to accompany him.

The day of their departure being come, Sir Charles took his leave of his charming niece, with many expressions of esteem and affection; and Mr. Glanville appeared so concerned, that Arabella could not help observing it, and bade him adieu with great sweetness.

When they were gone, she found her time hung heavy upon her hands; her

father was continually in her thoughts, and made her extremely melancholy: she recollected the many agreeable conversations she had had with Glanville, and wished it had been consistent with decency to have detained him. Her books being the only amusement she had left, she applied herself to reading with more eagerness than ever; but, notwithstanding the delight she took in this employment, she had so many hours of solitude and melancholy to indulge the remembrance of her father in, that she was very far from being happy.

As she wished for nothing more passionately than an agreeable companion of her own sex and rank, an accident threw a person in her way, who for some days afforded her a little amusement. Stepping one day out of her coach, to go into church, she saw a young lady enter, accompanied with a middle-aged woman, who seemed to be an attendant. As Arabella had never seen any one, above the rank of a gentleman-farmer's daughter, in this church, her attention was immediately engaged by the appearance of this stranger, who was very magnificently dressed. Though she did not seem to be more than eighteen years of age, her stature was above the ordinary size of women; and, being rather too plump to be delicate, her mien was so majestic, and such an air of grandeur was diffused over her whole person, joined to the charms of a very lovely face, that Arabella could hardly help thinking she saw the beautiful Candace before her, who, by Scudery's description, very much resembled this fair-one.

Arabella, having heedfully observed her looks, thought she saw a great appearance of melancholy in her eyes, which filled her with a generous concern for the misfortunes of so admirable a person; but the service beginning, she was not at liberty to indulge her reflections upon this occasion, as she never suffered any thoughts, but those of religion, to intrude upon her mind during these pious rites.

As she was going out of church, she observed the young lady, attended only with the woman who came with her, preparing to walk home, and therefore stepped forward, and saluting her with a grace peculiar to herself, intreated her to come into her coach, and give her the pleasure of setting her down at her

her own house. So obliging an offer, from a person of Arabella's rank, could not fail of being received with great respect by the young lady, who was not ignorant of all the forms of good-breeding, and, accepting her invitation, she stepped into the coach; Arabella obliging her woman to come in also, for whom, as she had that day only Lucy along with her, there was room enough.

As they were going home, Arabella, who longed to be better acquainted, intreated the fair stranger, as she called her, to go to the castle, and spend the day with her; and she consenting, they passed by the house where she lodged, and alighted at the castle, where Arabella welcomed her with the most obliging expressions of civility and respect. The young lady, though perfectly versed in the modes of town-breeding, and *nothing-meaning* ceremony, was at a loss how to make proper returns to the civilities of Arabella. The native elegance and simplicity of her manners were accompanied with so much real benevolence of heart, such insinuating tenderness, and graces so irresistible, that she was quite oppressed with them; and having spent most of her time between her toilet and quadrille, was so little qualified for partaking a conversation so refined as Arabella's, that her discourse appeared quite tedious to her, since it was neither upon fashions, assemblies, cards, or scandal.

Her silence, and that absence of mind which she betrayed, made Arabella conclude she was under some very great affliction; and to amuse her after dinner, led her into the gardens, supposing a person whose uneasiness, as she did not doubt, proceeded from love, would be pleased with the sight of groves and streams, and be tempted to disclose her misfortunes while they wandered in that agreeable privacy. In this, however, she was deceived; for though the young lady sighed several times, yet, when she did speak, it was only of indifferent things, and not at all in the manner of an afflicted heroine.

After observing upon a thousand trifles, she told Arabella at last, to whom she was desirous of making known her alliance to quality, that these gardens were extremely like those of her father's-in-law, the Duke of —, at —.

At this intimation, she expected Arabella would be extremely surprized; but that lady, whose thoughts were always familiarized to objects of grandeur, and would not have been astonished if she had understood her guest was the daughter of a king, appeared so little moved, that the lady was piqued by her indifference; and, after a few moment's silence, began to mention going away.

Arabella, who was desirous of retaining her a few days, intreated her so obligingly to favour her with her company for some time in her solitude, that the other could not refuse; and dispatching her woman to the house where she lodged, to inform them of her stay at the castle, would have dispensed with her coming again to attend her, had not Arabella insisted upon the contrary.

The reserve which the daughter-in-law of the Duke of — still continued to maintain, notwithstanding the repeated expressions of friendship Arabella used to her, increased her curiosity to know her adventures, which she was extremely surprized she had never offered to relate; but attributing her silence upon this head to her modesty, she was resolved, as was the custom in those cases, to oblige her woman, who, she presumed, was her confidante, to relate her lady's history to her; and sending for this person one day, when she was alone, to attend her in her closet, she gave orders to her women, if the fair stranger came to enquire for her, to say she was then busy, but would wait on her as soon as possible.

After this caution, she ordered Mrs. Morris to be admitted; and, obliging her to sit down, told her she sent for her in order to hear from her the history of her lady's life, which she was extremely desirous of knowing.

Mrs. Morris, who was a person of sense, and had seen the world, was extremely surprized at this request of Arabella, which was quite contrary to the laws of good-breeding, and, as she thought, betrayed a great deal of impertinent curiosity: she could not tell how to account for the free manner in which she desired her to give up her lady's secrets, which, indeed, were not of a nature to be told; and appeared so much confused, that Arabella took notice of it; and supposing it was her bashfulness which caused her embarrass-
rassinent,

rafinent, she endeavoured to re-assure her by the most affable behaviour imaginable.

Mrs. Morris, who was not capable of much fidelity for her lady, being but lately taken into her service, and not extremely fond of her, thought she had now a fine opportunity of recommending herself to Arabella, by telling her all she knew of Miss Groves, for that was her name; and therefore told her, since she was pleased to command it, she would give her what account she was able of her lady: but intreated her to be secret, because it was of great consequence to her, that her affairs should not be known.

‘I always imagined,’ said Arabella, ‘that your beautiful mistress had some particular reason for not making herself known, and for coming in this private manner into this part of the country: you may assure yourself, therefore, that I will protect her as far as I am able, and offer her all the assistance in my power to give her; therefore you may acquaint me with her adventures, without being apprehensive of a discovery that would be prejudicial to her.’

Mrs. Morris, who had been much better pleased with the assurances of a reward for the intelligence she was going to give her, looked a little foolish at these fine promises, in which she had no share; and Arabella, supposing she was endeavouring to recollect all the passages of her lady’s life, told her she need not give herself the trouble to acquaint her with any thing that passed during the infancy of her lady, but proceed to acquaint her with matters of greater importance: ‘And since,’ said she, ‘you have, no doubt, been most favoured with her confidence, you will do me a pleasure to describe to me, exactly, all the thoughts of her soul, as she has communicated them to you, that I may the better comprehend her history.’

CHAP. V.

THE HISTORY OF MISS GROVES, INTERSPERSED WITH SOME VERY CURIOUS OBSERVATIONS.

‘**T**HOUGH, Madam,’ said Mrs. Morris, ‘I have not been long in Miss Groves’s service, yet I know

‘a great many things by the means of her former woman, who told them to me, though my lady thinks I am ignorant of them; and I know that this is her second trip into the country.’

‘Pray,’ interrupted Arabella, ‘do me the favour to relate things methodically: of what use is it to me to know that this is your lady’s second trip, as you call it, into the country, if I know not the occasion of it?—Therefore begin with informing me, who were the parents of this admirable young person.’

‘Her father, Madam,’ said Mrs. Morris, ‘was a merchant; and at his death left her a large fortune, and so considerable a jointure to his wife, that the Duke of —, being then a widower, was tempted to make his addresses to her. Mrs. Groves was one of the proudest women in the world; and this offer flattering her ambition more than ever she had reason to expect, she married the duke after a very short courtship, and carried Miss Groves down with her to —, where the duke had a fine seat, and where she was received by his grace’s daughters, who were much about her own age, with great civility. Miss Groves, Madam, was then about twelve years old, and was educated with the duke’s daughters, who in a little time became quite disgusted with their new sister; for Miss Groves, who inherited her mother’s pride, though not her understanding, in all things affected an equality with those young ladies, who, conscious of the superiority of their birth, could but ill bear with her insolence and presumption. As they grew older, the difference of their inclinations caused perpetual quarrels amongst them; for his grace’s daughters were serious, reserved, and pious. Miss Groves affected noisy mirth, was a great romp, and delighted in masculine exercises.

‘The dutchess was often reflected on for suffering her daughter, without any other company than two or three servants, to spend great part of the day in riding about the country, leaping over hedges and ditches, exposing her fair face to the injuries of the sun and wind; and, by those coarse exercises, contracting a masculine and robust air not becoming her

‘her sex and tender years: yet she could not be prevailed upon to restrain her from this diversion, till it was reported, she had listened to the addresses of a young sportsman, who used to mix in her train, when she went upon those rambles, and procured frequent opportunities of conversing with her.’

‘There is a great difference,’ interrupted Arabella, ‘in suffering addresses, and being betrayed into an involuntary hearing of them, and this last, I conceive to have been the case of your lady; for it is not very probable she would so far forget what she owed to her own glory, as to be induced to listen quietly to discourses like those you mention.’

‘However, Madam,’ resumed Mrs. Morris, ‘the dutchess thought it necessary to keep her more at home; but even here she was not without meeting adventures, and found a lover in the person who taught her to write.’

‘That, indeed, was a very notable adventure,’ said Arabella; ‘but it is not strange that love should produce such metamorphoses; it is not very long ago that I heard of a man of quality who disguised himself in a poor habit, and worked in the gardens of a certain nobleman, whose daughter he was enamoured with: these things happen every day.’

‘The person I speak of, Madam,’ said Mrs. Morris, ‘was never discovered to be any thing better than a writing-master; and yet, for all that, Miss was smitten with his fine person, and was taking measures to run away with him, when the intrigue was discovered, the lover dismissed, and the young lady, whose faulty conduct had drawn upon her her mother’s dislike, was sent up to London, and allowed to be her own mistress at sixteen; to which unpardonable neglect of her mother she owes the misfortunes that have since befallen her.’

‘Whatever may be the common opinion of this matter,’ interrupted Arabella again, ‘I am persuaded the writing-master, as you call him, was some person of quality, who made use of that device to get access to his beautiful mistress. Love is ingenious in artifices; who would have

thought, that, under the name of Alcippus, a simple attendant of the fair Artemisa princess of Armenia, the gallant Alexander son of the great and unfortunate Antony, by Queen Cleopatra, was concealed, who took upon himself that mean condition for the sake of seeing his adored princess? Yet the contrivance of Orontes, Prince of the Massagettes, was far more ingenious, and even dangerous; for this valiant and young prince happening to see the picture of the beautiful Thalestris, daughter of the Queen of the Amazons, he fell passionately in love with her; and, knowing that the entrance into that country was forbid to men, he dressed himself in women’s apparel; and, finding means to be introduced to the queen, and her fair daughter, whose amity he gained by some very singular services in the wars, he lived several years undiscovered in their court; I see, therefore, no reason to the contrary, but that this writing-master might have been some illustrious person, whom love had disguised; and, I am persuaded, added she, smiling, ‘that I shall hear more of him anon, in a very different character.’

‘Indeed, Madam,’ said Mrs. Morris, ‘whom this speech of Arabella had extremely surprized, ‘I never heard any thing more about him, than what I have related; and, for what I know, he continues still to teach writing; for I don’t suppose the dutchess’s displeasure could affect him.’

‘How is it possible,’ said Arabella, ‘that you can suppose such an offence to probability? In my opinion it is much more likely, that this unfortunate lover is dead through despair; or, perhaps, wandering over the world in search of that fair-one who was snatched from his hopes.’

‘If it was his design to seek for her,’ Madam, resumed Mrs. Morris, ‘he need not have gone far, since she was only sent to London, whither he might easily have followed her.’

‘There is no accounting for these things,’ said Arabella; ‘perhaps he has been imposed upon, and made to believe, that it was she herself that banished him from her presence: it is probable, too, that he was jealous, and thought she preferred some one of

of his rivals to him. Jealousy is inseparable from true love; and the slightest matters imaginable will occasion it; and, what is still more wonderful, this passion creates the greatest disorders in the most sensible and delicate hearts. Never was there a more refined and faithful passion than that of the renowned Artamenes for Mandana; and yet this prince was driven almost to distraction by a smile, which he fancied he saw in the face of his divine mistress, at a time when she had some reason to believe he was dead; and he was so transported with grief and rage, that, though he was a prisoner in his enemy's camp, where the knowledge of his quality would have procured him certain death, yet he determined to hazard all things for the sake of presenting himself before Mandana, and upbraiding her with her infidelity; when, in reality, nothing was farther from the thoughts of that fair and virtuous princess, than the lightness he accused her of; so that, as I said before, it is not at all to be wondered at, if this disguised lover of your lady was driven to despair by suspicions as groundless, perhaps, as those of Artamenes, yet not the less cruel and tormenting.

Mrs. Morris, finding Arabella held her peace at these words, went on with her history in this manner—'Miss Groves, Madam, being directed by her woman in all things, took up her lodgings in her father's house, who was a broken tradesman, and obliged to keep himself concealed for fear of his creditors; here she formed her equipage, which consisted of a chair, one footman, a cook, and her woman: as she was indulged with the command of what money she pleased, her extravagance was boundless; she lavished away large sums at gaming, which was her favourite diversion; kept such a number of different animals for favourites, that their maintenance amounted to a considerable sum every year; her woman's whole family were supported at her expence; and, as she frequented all publick places, and surpassed ladies of the first quality in finery, her dress alone consumed great part of her income. I need not tell you, Madam, that my lady

was a celebrated beauty; you have yourself been pleased to say, that she is very handsome. When she first appeared at court, her beauty and the uncommon dignity of her person, at such early years, made her the object of general admiration. The king was particularly struck with her; and declared to those about him, that Miss Groves was the finest woman at court. The ladies, however, found means to explain away all that was flattering in this distinction; they said, Miss Groves was clumsy; and it was her resemblance to the *unwieldy German* ladies that made her so much admired by his majesty. Her pride, and the quality-airs she affected, were the subject of great ridicule to those that envied her charms; some censures were maliciously cast on her birth; for, as she was always stiled the Dutchess of —'s daughter, a custom she introduced herself, she seemed to disclaim all title to a legal father. Miss Groves, as universally admired as she was, yet made but very few particular conquests. Her fortune was known to be very considerable, and her mother's jointure was to descend to her after her death: yet there was no gentleman who would venture upon a wife of Miss Groves's taste for expence, as very few estates, *to which she could pretend*, would support her extravagance. The Honourable Mr. L—, brother to the Earl of —, was the only one, amidst a crowd of admirers, who made any particular address to her. This gentleman was tolerably handsome, and had the art of making himself agreeable to the ladies by a certain air of softness and tenderness which never failed to make some impression upon those he desired to deceive.

'Miss Groves was ravished with her conquest; and boasted of it so openly, that people who were acquainted with this gentleman's character, foreseeing her fate, could not help pitying her.

'A very few months courtship completed the ruin of poor Miss Groves: she fell a sacrifice to oaths which had been often prostituted for the same inhuman purposes; and became so fond of her betrayer, that it was with great

great difficulty he could persuade her not to give him, even in publick, the most ridiculous proofs of her *tendernefs*. Her woman pretends, that she was ignorant of this intrigue, till Miss Groves growing big with child, it could no longer be concealed; it was at length agreed, she should lie-in at her own lodgings, to prevent any suspicions from her retreating into the country; but that scheme was over-ruled by her woman's mother, who advised her to conceal herself in some village, not far from town, till the affair was over.

Miss Groves approved of this second proposal, but took advantage of her shape, which, being far from delicate, would not easily discover any growing bigness, to stay in town as long as she possibly could. When her removal was necessary, she went to the lodgings provided for her, a few miles distant from London: and, notwithstanding the excuses which were framed for this sudden absence; the true cause was more than suspected by some busy people, who industriously inquired into her affairs.

Mr. L—— saw her but seldom during her illness: the fear of being discovered was his pretence; but her friends easily saw through this disguise, and were persuaded Miss Groves was waning in his affections.

As she had a very strong constitution, she returned to town at the end of three weeks: the child was dead, and she looked handsomer than ever. Mr. L—— continued his visits; and the town to make remarks of them. All this time the dutchess never troubled herself about the conduct of this unfortunate young creature; and the people she was with had not the goodness to give her any hint of her misconduct, and the waste of her fortune: on the contrary, they almost turned her head with their flatteries, preyed upon her fortune, and winked at her irregularities.

She was now a second time with child; her character was pretty severely handled by her enemies; Mr. L—— began openly to slight her; and she was several thousand pounds in debt. The mother and sisters of her woman, in whose house she still was, were base enough to whisper the fault

she had been guilty of to all their acquaintances. Her story became generally known; she was shunned and neglected by every body; and even Mr. L——, who had been the cause of her ruin, entirely abandoned her, and boasted openly of the favours he had received from her.

Miss Groves protested to her friends, that he had promised her marriage; but Mr. L—— constantly denied it; and never scrupled to say, when he was questioned about it, that he found Miss Groves too easy a conquest to make any perjury necessary. Her *tendernefs*, however, for this base man, was so great, that she never could bear to hear him railled at in her presence; but would quarrel with the only friends she had left, if they said any thing to his disadvantage. As she was now pretty far advanced with child, she would have retired into the country; but the bad condition of her affairs made her removal impossible: in this extremity she had recourse to her uncle, a rich merchant in the city, who, having taken all the necessary precautions for his own security, paid Miss Groves's debts, carrying on, in her name, a law-suit with the dutchess, for some lands, which were to be put into her hands when she was of age, and which that great lady detained. Miss Groves, being reduced to live upon something less than an hundred a year, quitted London, and came into this part of the country, where she was received by Mrs. Barnet, one of her woman's sisters, who is married to a country-gentleman of some fortune; in her house she lay-in of a girl, which Mr. L—— sent to demand, and will not be persuaded to inform her how, or in what manner, he has disposed of the child.

Her former woman leaving her, I was received in her place, from whom I learnt all these particulars: and Miss Groves having gained the affections of Mr. Barnet's brother, her beauty, and the large fortune which she has in reversion, has induced him, notwithstanding the knowledge of her past unhappy conduct, to marry her. But their marriage is yet a secret, Miss Groves being apprehensive of her uncle's displeasure for not consulting him in her choice.

‘ Her husband is gone to London, with an intention to acquaint him with it; and, when he returns, their marriage will be publickly owned.’

CHAP. VI.

CONTAINING WHAT A JUDICIOUS READER WILL HARDLY APPROVE.

MRS. Morris ending her narration, Arabella, who had not been able to restrain her tears at some parts of it, thanked her for the trouble she had been at; and assured her of her secrecy: ‘ Your lady’s case,’ said she, ‘ is much to be lamented; and greatly resembles the unfortunate Cleopatra’s, whom Julius Cæsar privately marrying, with a promise to own her for his wife when he should be peaceable master of the Roman empire, left that great queen big with child; and, never intending to perform his promise, suffered her to be exposed to the censures the world has so freely cast upon her, and which she so little deserved.’

Mrs. Morris seeing the favourable light in which Arabella viewed the actions of her *lady*, did not think proper to say any thing to undeceive her; but went out of the closet, not a little mortified at her disappointment; for she saw she was likely to receive nothing for betraying her lady’s secrets, from Arabella; who seemed so little sensible of the pleasure of scandal, as to be wholly ignorant of it’s nature; and not to know it when it was told her.

Miss Groves, who was just come to Lady Bella’s chamber-door, to inquire for her, was surprized to see her woman come out of it; and who, upon meeting her, expressed great confusion. As she was going to ask her some questions concerning her business there, Arabella came out of the closet; and, seeing Miss Groves in her chamber, asked her pardon for staying so long from her.

‘ I have been listening to your history,’ said she with great frankness, ‘ which your woman has been relating; and I assure you I am extremely sensible of your misfortunes.’

Miss Groves, at these words, blushed

with extreme confusion; and Mrs. Morris turned pale with astonishment and fear. Arabella, not sensible that she had been guilty of any indiscretion, proceeded to make reflections upon some part of her story; which, though they were not at all disadvantageous to that young lady, she received as so many insults; and asked Lady Bella, if she was not ashamed to tamper with a servant to betray the secrets of her mistress.

Arabella, a little surprized at so rude a question, answered, however, with great sweetness; and protested to her, that she would make no ill use of what she had learned of her affairs: ‘ For, in fine, Madam,’ said she, ‘ do you think I am less fit to be trusted with your secrets, than the princess of the Leontines was with those of Clelia; between whom there was no greater amity and acquaintance, than with us? And you must certainly know, that the secrets which that admirable person entrusted with Lysimena, were of a nature to be more dangerous, if revealed, than yours. The happiness of Clelia depended upon Lysimena’s fidelity; and the liberty, nay, haply, the life of Aronces, would have been in danger, if she had betrayed them. Though I do not intend to arrogate to myself the possession of those admirable qualities which adorned the princess of the Leontines, yet I will not yield to her, or any one else, in generosity and fidelity; and if you will be pleased to repose as much confidence in me, as those illustrious lovers did in her, you shall be convinced I will labour as earnestly for your interest, as that fair princess did for those of Aronces and Clelia.’

Miss Groves was so busied in reflecting upon the baseness of her woman in exposing her, that she heard not a word of this fine harangue, (at which Mrs. Morris, notwithstanding the cause she had for uneasiness, could hardly help laughing;) but, assuming some of that haughtiness in her looks, for which she used to be remarkable, she told Lady Bella, that she imputed her impertinent curiosity to her country ignorance, and ill breeding; and she did not doubt but she would be served in her own *kind*, and meet with as bad fortune

fortune as she had done; and, perhaps, deserve it *worse* that she did; for there are more false men in the world besides Mr. L——; and she was no handsomer than other people.

Saying this, she flung out of the room, her woman following, leaving Arabella in such confusion at a behaviour of which she had never before had an idea, that for some moments she remained immovable.

Recollecting herself, at last, and conceiving that civility required she should endeavour to appease this incensed lady, she went down stairs after her; and, stopping her just as she was going out of the house, intreated her to be calm, and suffer her to vindicate herself from the imputation of being impertinently curious to know her affairs.

Miss Groves, quite transported with shame and anger, refused absolutely to stay.

‘At least, Madam,’ said Arabella; ‘stay till my coach can be got ready, and don’t think of walking home so slightly attended.’

‘This offer was as sullenly answered as the other; and Arabella, finding she was determined to venture home, with no other guard than her woman, who silently followed her, ordered two of her footmen to attend her at a small distance; and to defend her, if there should be occasion.

‘For who knows,’ says she to Lucy, ‘what accident may happen? Some one or other of her insolent lovers may take this opportunity to carry her away; and I should never forgive myself for being the cause of such a misfortune to her.’

Mrs. Morris having found it easy to reconcile herself to her lady, by assuring her, that Lady Bella was acquainted with great part of her story before; and that what she told her, tended only to justify her conduct, as she might have been convinced by what Lady Bella said; they both went home with a resolution to say nothing of what had passed, with relation to the cause of the disgust Miss Groves had received; but only said, in general, that Lady Bella was the most ridiculous creature in the world, and was so totally ignorant of good-breeding, that it was impossible to converse with her.

C H A P. VII.

WHICH TREATS OF THE OLYMPIC GAMES.

WHILE Arabella was ruminating on the unaccountable behaviour of her new acquaintance, she received a letter from her uncle, informing her (for she had expressly forbid Mr. Glanville to write to her) that his son and daughter intended to set out for her seat in a few days.

This news was received with great satisfaction by Arabella, who hoped to find an agreeable companion in her cousin; and was not so insensible of Mr. Glanville’s merit, as not to feel some kind of pleasure at the thought of seeing him again.

This letter was soon followed by the arrival of Mr. Glanville, and his sister; who, upon the sight of Arabella, discovered some appearance of astonishment and chagrin; for, notwithstanding all her brother had told her of her accomplishments, she could not conceive it possible for a young lady, bred up in the country, to be so perfectly elegant and genteel as she found her cousin.

As Miss Charlotte had a large share of coquetry in her composition, and was fond of beauty in none of her own sex but herself, she was sorry to see Lady Bella possessed of so great a share; and, being in hopes her brother had drawn a flattering figure of her cousin, she was extremely disappointed at finding the original so handsome.

Arabella, on the contrary, was highly pleased with Miss Glanville; and, finding her person very agreeable, did not fail to commend her beauty: a sort of complaisance mightily in use among the heroines, who knew not what envy or emulation meant.

Miss Glanville received her praises with great politeness, but could not find in her heart to return them: and, as soon as these compliments were over, Mr. Glanville told Lady Bella, how tedious he had found the short absence she had forced him to, and how great was his satisfaction at seeing her again.

‘I shall not dispute the truth of your last assertion,’ replied Arabella, smiling, ‘since I verily believe, you are
G 2 ‘mighty

'mighty well satisfied at present; but I know not how you will make it appear, that an absence, which you allow to be short, has seemed so tedious to you; for this is a manifest contradiction: however,' pursued she, preventing his reply, 'you look so well, and so much at ease, that I am apt to believe, absence has agreed very well with you.'

'And yet I assure you, Madam,' said Mr. Glanville, interrupting her, 'that I have suffered more uneasiness during this absence, than I fear you will permit me to tell you.'

'Since,' replied Arabella, 'that uneasiness has neither made you thinner, nor paler, I don't think you ought to be pitted: for, to say the truth, in these sort of matters, a person's bare testimony has but little weight.'

Mr. Glanville was going to make her some answer; when Miss Glanville, who, while they had been speaking, was adjusting her dress at the glass, came up to them, and made the conversation more general.

After dinner they adjourned to the gardens, where the gay Miss Glanville, running eagerly from one walk to another, gave her brother as many opportunities of talking to Lady Bella as he could wish: however, he stood in such awe of her, and dreaded so much another banishment, that he did not dare, otherwise than by distant hints, to mention his passion; and Arabella, well enough pleased with a respect that in some measure came up to her expectation, discovered no resentment at insinuations she was at liberty to dissemble the knowledge of; and if he could not, by her behaviour, flatter himself with any great hopes, yet he found as little reason, in Arabella's language, to despair.

Miss Glanville, at the end of a few weeks, was so tired of the magnificent solitude she lived in, that she heartily repented her journey; and insinuated to her brother, her inclination to return to town.

Mr. Glanville, knowing his stay was regulated by his sister's, intreated her not to expose him to the mortification of leaving Arabella so soon; and promised her he would contrive some amusements for her, which should

make her relish the country better than she had yet done.

Accordingly, he proposed to Arabella to go to the races, which were to be held at —, a few miles from the castle: she would have excused herself, upon account of her mourning; but Miss Glanville discovered so great an inclination to be present at this diversion, that Arabella could no longer refuse to accompany her.

'Since,' said she to Miss Glanville, 'you are fond of publick diversions, it happens very luckily, that these races are to be held at the time you are here: I never heard of them before, and I presume it is a good many years since they were last celebrated. — Pray, Sir,' pursued she, turning to Glanville, 'do not these races, in some degree, resemble the Olympick games? Do the candidates ride in chariots?'

'No, Madam,' replied Glanville; 'the jockeys are mounted upon the fleetest couriers they can procure; and he who first reaches the goal obtains the prize.'

'And who is the fair lady that is to bestow it?' resumed Arabella: 'I dare engage one of her lovers will enter the lists; she will, doubtless, be in no less anxiety than he; and the shame of being overcome will hardly affect him with more concern than herself; that is, provided he be so happy as to have gained her affections. I cannot help thinking the fair Elismonda was extremely happy in this particular: for she had the satisfaction to see her secret admirer victor in all the exercises at the Olympick games, and carry away the prize from many princes, and persons of rare quality, who were candidates with him; and he had also the glory to receive three crowns, in one day, from the hands of his adored princess; who, questionless, bestowed them upon him with an infinite deal of joy.'

'What sort of races were those, Madam?' said Miss Glanville; whose reading had been very confined.

'The Olympick games, Miss,' said Arabella, 'so called from Olympia, a city near which they were performed, in the plains of Elis, consisted of foot and chariot-races; combats with the Cestus; wrestling, and other sports.'

'They

'They were instituted in honour of the gods and heroes; and were therefore termed sacred, and were considered as a part of religion.'

'They were a kind of school, or military apprenticeship; in which the courage of the youth found constant employment: and the reason why victory in those games was attended with such extraordinary applause, was, that their minds might be quickened with great and noble prospects, when, in this image of war, they arrived to a pitch of glory, approaching, in some respects, to that of the most famous conquerors. They thought this sort of triumph one of the greatest parts of happiness of which human nature was capable: so that when Diagoras had seen his sons crowned in the Olympick games, one of his friends made him this compliment: "Now, Diagoras, you may die satisfied; since you can't be a god." It would tire you, perhaps, was I to describe all the exercises performed there: but you may form a general notion of them, from what you have doubtless read of jousts and tournaments.'

'Really,' said Miss Glanville, 'I never read about any such things.'

'No!' replied Arabella, surprised: 'Well, then, I must tell you, that they hold a middle place, between a diversion and a combat; but the Olympick games were attended with a much greater pomp and variety: and not only all Greece, but other neighbouring nations, were in a manner drained, to furnish out the appearance.'

'Well, for my part,' said Miss Glanville, 'I never before heard of these sort of races; those I have been at were quite different. I know the prizes and bets are sometimes very considerable.'

'And, doubtless,' interrupted Arabella, 'there are a great many heroes who signalize themselves at these races; not for the sake of the prize, which would be unworthy of great souls, but to satisfy that burning desire of glory, which spurs them on to every occasion of gaining it.'

'As for the heroes or jockeys,' said Miss Glanville, 'call them what you please, I believe they have very little

share, either of the profit or glory; for their masters have the one, and the horses the other.'

'Their masters!' interrupted Arabella: 'what, I suppose a great many foreign princes lend their favourites to combat, in their name? I remember to have read, that Alcibiades triumphed three times successively at the Olympick games, by means of one of his domesticks, who, in his master's name, entered the lists.'

Mr. Glanville, fearing his sister would make some absurd answer, and thereby disoblige his cousin, took up the discourse: and turning it upon the Grecian history, engrossed her conversation for two hours, wholly to himself; while Miss Glanville (to whom all they said was quite unintelligible) diverted herself with humming a tune, and tinkling her cousin's harpsichord; which proved no interruption to the more rational entertainment of her brother and Arabella.

CHAP. VIII.

WHICH CONCLUDES WITH AN EXCELLENT MORAL SENTENCE.

THE day being come on which they designed to be present at the races, (or, as Arabella called them, the games) Miss Glanville, having spent four long hours in dressing herself to the greatest advantage, in order, if possible, to eclipse her lovely cousin, whose mourning, being much deeper, was less capable of ornaments, came into her chamber; and, finding her still in her morning-dress, 'For Heaven's sake, Lady Bella,' said she, 'when do you purpose to be ready? Why it is almost time to be gone, my brother says, and here you are not a bit dressed!'

'Don't be uneasy,' said Arabella, smiling; and going to her toilet, 'I shan't make you wait long.'

Miss Glanville seating herself near the table, resolved to be present while her cousin was dressing, that she might have an opportunity to make some remarks to her disadvantage: but she was extremely mortified, to observe the haste and negligence she made her women use in this important employment; and

and that, notwithstanding her indifference, nothing could appear more lovely and genteel.

Miss Glanville, however, pleased herself with the certainty of seeing her cousin's dress extremely ridiculed, for the peculiar fashion of her gown; and the veil, which, as becoming as it was, would, by it's novelty, occasion great diversion among the ladies, helped to comfort her for the superiority of her charms; which, partial as she was to her own, she could not help secretly confessing.

Arabella being dressed in much less time than her cousin, Mr. Glanville was admitted, who led her down stairs to her coach. His sister, (secretly re- pinning at the advantage Arabella had over her, in having so respectful an adorer) followed; and, being placed in the coach, they set out with great appearance of good-humour on all sides.

They got to — but just time enough to see the beginning of the first course. Arabella, who fancied the jockeys were persons of great distinction, soon became interested in the fate of one of them, whose appearance pleased her more than the others. Accordingly, she made vows for his success, and appeared so extremely rejoiced at the advantage he had gained, that Miss Glanville maliciously told her, people would make remarks at the joy she expressed, and fancy she had a more than ordinary interest in that jockey who had first reached the goal.

Mr. Glanville, whom this impertinent insinuation of his sister had filled with confusion and spite, sat biting his lips, trembling for the effect it would produce in Arabella: but she, giving quite another turn to her cousin's words, 'I assure you,' said she, with a smile, 'I am not any farther interested in the fate of this person, who has hitherto been successful, than what the hand- someness of his garb, and the super- iority of his skill, may demand, from an unprejudiced spectator; and though I perceive you imagine he is some concealed lover of mine, yet I don't remember to have ever seen him; and I am confident it is not for my sake that he entered the lists; nor is it my presence which animates him.'

'Lord bless me, Madam!' replied

Miss Glanville, 'who would ever think of such strange things as these you talk of? Nobody will pretend to deny that you are very handsome, to be sure; but yet, thank Heaven, the sight of you is not so dangerous, but that such sort of people as these are may escape your chains.'

Arabella was so wholly taken up with the event of the races, that she gave but very little heed to this sarcastick answer of Miss Glanville; whose brother, taking advantage of an opportunity which Arabella gave him by putting her head quite out of the coach, chid her very severely for the liberty she took with her cousin. Arabella, by looking earnestly out of the window, had given so full a view of her fine person to a young baronet, who was not many paces from the coach, that, being struck with admiration at the sight of so lovely a creature, he was going up to some of her attendants to ask who she was, when he perceived Mr. Glanville, with whom he was intimately acquainted, in the coach with her: immediately he made himself known to his friend, being excessively rejoiced at having got an opportunity of beginning an acquaintance with a lady whose sight had so charmed him.

Mr. Glanville, who had observed the profound bow he made to Arabella, accompanied with a glance that shewed an extreme admiration of her, was very little pleased at this meeting; yet he dissembled his thoughts well enough in his reception of him. But Miss Glanville was quite overjoyed, hoping she would now have her turn of gallantry and compliment; therefore, accosting him in her free manner, 'Dear Sir George,' said she, 'you come in a lucky time to brighten up the conversation: relations are such dull company for one another, 'tis half a minute since we have exchanged a word.'

'My cousin,' said Arabella, smiling, 'has so strange a disposition for mirth, that she thinks all her moments are lost, in which she finds nothing to laugh at: for my part, I do so earnestly long to know to which of these pretenders fortune will give the victory, that I can suffer my cares for them to receive no interruption from my cousin's agreeable gaiety.'

Mr. Glanville, observing the baronet

ronet gazed upon Arabella earnestly while she was speaking those few words, resolved to hinder him from making any reply, by asking him several questions concerning the racers, their owners, and the bets which were laid; to which Arabella added, 'And pray, Sir,' said she, 'do me the favour to tell me, if you know who that gallant man is, who has already won the first course.'

'I don't know really, Madam,' said Sir George, 'what his name is!' extremely surprized at her manner of asking.

The jockey had now gained the goal a second time; and Arabella could not conceal her satisfaction. 'Questionless,' said she, 'he is a very extraordinary person; but I am afraid we shall not have the pleasure of knowing who he is; for if he has any reason for keeping himself concealed, he will evade any inquiries after him, by slipping out of the lists while this hurry and tumult lasts, as Hortensius did at the Olympick games; yet, notwithstanding all his care, he was discovered by being obliged to fight a single combat with one of the persons whom he had worsted at those games.'

Mr. Glanville, who saw his sister, by her little coquetries with Sir George, had prevented him from hearing great part of this odd speech, proposed returning to the castle, to which Arabella agreed; but conceiving civility obliged her to offer the convenience of a lodging to a stranger of Sir George's appearance, and who was an acquaintance of her cousins, 'You must permit me,' said she to Mr. Glanville, 'to intreat your noble friend will accompany us to the castle, where he will meet with better accommodations than at any inn he can find; for I conceive, that coming only to be a spectator of these games, he is wholly unprovided with a lodging.'

The baronet, surprized at so uncommon a civility, was at a loss what answer to make her at first; but, recollecting himself, he told her that he would, if she pleased, do himself the honour to attend her home; but as his house was at no great distance from —, he would be put to no incon-
venience for a lodging.

Miss Glanville, who was not willing to part so soon with the baronet, insisted, with her cousin's leave, upon his coming into the coach; which he accordingly did, giving his horse to the care of his servant; and they proceeded together to the castle; Arabella still continuing to talk of the games, as she called them, while poor Glanville, who was excessively confused, endeavoured to change the discourse, not without an apprehension, that every subject he could think of, would afford Arabella an occasion of shewing her foible; which, notwithstanding the pain it gave him, could not lessen his love.

Sir George, whose admiration of Lady Bella increased the longer he saw her, was extremely pleased with the opportunity she had given him of cultivating an acquaintance with her: he therefore lengthened out his visit, in hopes of being able to say some fine things to her before he went away; but Miss Glanville, who strove by all the little arts she was mistress of, to engage his conversation wholly to herself, put it absolutely out of his power; so that he was obliged to take his leave without having the satisfaction of even pressing the fair hand of Arabella; so closely was he observed by her cousin. Happy was it for him, that he was prevented by her vigilance from attempting a piece of gallantry, which would undoubtedly have procured him a banishment from her presence; but, ignorant how kind fortune was to him in baulking his designs, he was ungrateful enough to go away in a mighty ill-humour with this fickle goddess: so little capable are poor mortals of knowing what is best for them!

CHAP. IX.

CONTAINING SOME CURIOUS ANECDOTES.

LADY Bella, from the familiarity with which Miss Glanville treated this gay gentleman, concluding him her lover, and one who was apparently well received by her, had a strong curiosity to know her adventures; and as they were walking the next morning in
the

the garden, she told her, that she thought it was very strange they had hitherto observed such a reserve to each other, as to banish mutual trust and confidence from their conversation: 'Whence comes it, cousin,' added she, 'being so young and lovely as you are, that you, questionless, have been engaged in many adventures, you have never reposed trust enough in me to favour me with a recital of them?'

'Engaged in many adventures, Madam!' returned Miss Glanville, not liking the phrase: 'I believe I have been engaged in as few as your ladyship.'

'You are too obliging,' returned Arabella, who mistook what she said for a compliment; 'for, since you have more beauty than I, and have also had more opportunities of making yourself beloved, questionless you have a greater number of admirers.'

'As for admirers,' said Miss Charlotte, bridling, 'I fancy I have had my share! Thank God, I never found myself neglected; but, I assure you, Madam, I have had no adventures, as you call them, with any of them.'

'No, really,' interrupted Arabella, innocently.

'No really, Madam!' retorted Miss Glanville; 'and I am surprized you should think so.'

'Indeed, my dear,' said Arabella, 'you are very happy in this respect, and also very singular; for I believe there are few young ladies in the world, who have any pretensions to beauty, that have not given rise to a great many adventures; and some of them haply very fatal.'

'If you knew more of the world, Lady Bella,' said Miss Glanville, pertly, 'you would not be so apt to think, that young ladies engage themselves in troublesome adventures: truly, the ladies that are brought up in town are not so ready to run away with every man they see.'

'No, certainly,' interrupted Arabella; 'they do not give their consent to such proceedings; but, for all that, they are doubtless run away with many times; for truly there are some men, whose passions are so unbridled, that they will have recourse to the most violent methods to possess themselves of the objects they love. Pray

'do you remember how often Mandana was run away with?'

'Not I, indeed, Madam,' replied Miss Glanville; 'I know nothing about her: but I suppose she is a Jew, by her outlandish name.'

'She was no Jew,' said Arabella, 'though she favoured that people very much; for she obtained the liberty of great numbers of them from Cyrus, who had taken them captives, and could deny her nothing she asked.'

'Well,' said Miss Glanville, 'and I suppose she denied him nothing he asked; and so they were even.'

'Indeed but she did though,' resumed Arabella; 'for she refused to give him a glorious scarf which she wore, though he begged it on his knees.'

'And she was very much in the right,' said Miss Glanville; 'for I see no reason why a lover should expect a gift of any value from his mistress.'

'Doubtless,' said Arabella, 'such a gift was worth a million of services; and had he obtained it, it would have been a glorious distinction for him: however, Mandana refused it; and, severely virtuous as you are, I am persuaded you can't help thinking she was a little too rigorous in denying a favour to a lover like him.'

'Severely virtuous, Lady Bella!' said Miss Glanville, reddening with anger. 'Pray what do you mean by that? Have you any reason to imagine I would grant any favour to a lover?'

'Why, if I did, cousin,' said Arabella, 'would it derogate so much from your glory, think you, to bestow a favour upon a lover worthy your esteem, and from whom you had received a thousand marks of a most pure and faithful passion, and also a great number of very singular services?'

'I hope, Madam,' said Miss Glanville, 'it will never be my fate to be so much obliged to any lover, as to be under a necessity of granting him favours in requital.'

'I vow, cousin,' interrupted Arabella, 'you put me in mind of the fair and virtuous Antonia, who was so rigid and austere, that she thought all expressions of love were criminal; and

‘and was so far from granting any person permission to love her, that she thought it a mortal offence to be adored even in private.’

Miss Glanville, who could not imagine Arabella spoke this seriously, but that it was designed to sneer at her great eagerness to make conquests, and the liberties she allowed herself in, which had probably come to her knowledge, was so extremely vexed at the malicious jest, as she thought it, that, not being able to revenge herself, she burst into tears.

Arabella’s good-nature made her be greatly affected at this sight; and, asking her pardon for having undesignedly occasioned her so much uneasiness, begged her to be composed, and tell her in what she had offended her, that she might be able to justify herself in her apprehensions!

‘You have made no scruple to own, Madam,’ said she, ‘that you think me capable of granting favours to lovers; when, Heaven knows, I never granted a kiss without a great deal of confusion!’

‘And you had certainly much reason for confusion,’ said Arabella, excessively surprized at such a confession: ‘I assure you I never injured you so much in my thoughts, as to suppose you ever granted a favour of so criminal a nature.’

‘Look you there, now!’ said Miss Glanville, weeping more violently than before: ‘I knew what all your roundabout speeches would come to. All you have said in vindication of granting favours, was only to draw me in to a confession of what I have done: how ungenerous was that!’

‘The favours I spoke of, Madam,’ said Arabella, ‘were quite of another nature, than those it seems you have so liberally granted: such as giving a scarf, a bracelet, or some such thing, to a lover, who had haply sighed whole years in silence, and did not presume to declare his passion, till he had lost best part of his blood in defence of the fair-one he loved. It was when you maintained, that Mandana was in the right to refuse her magnificent scarf to the illustrious Cyrus, that I took upon me to oppose your rigidity; and so much mistaken was I in your temper, that I foolishly compared you to the fair

and wise Antonia, whose severity was so remarkable; but really, by what I understand from your own confession, your disposition resembles that of the inconsiderate Julia, who would receive a declaration of love without anger from any one; and was not over-shy, any more than yourself, of granting favours almost as considerable as that you have mentioned.’

While Arabella was speaking, Miss Glanville, having dried up her tears, sat silently swelling with rage, not knowing whether she should openly avow her resentment for the injurious language her cousin had used to her, by going away immediately, or, by making up the matter, appear still to be her friend, that she might have the more opportunities of revenging herself. The impetuosity of her temper made her most inclined to the former; but the knowledge that Sir George was to stay yet some months in the country, made her unwilling to leave a place, where she might often see a man whose fine person had made some impression upon her heart; and, not enduring to leave such a charming conquest to Arabella, she resolved to suppress her resentment for the present; and listened, without any appearance of discomposure, to a fine harangue of her cousin upon the necessity of reserve, and distant behaviour, to men who presumed to declare themselves lovers, enforcing her precepts with examples drawn from all the romances she had ever read; at the end of which she embraced her, and assured her, if she had said any thing harsh, it proceeded from her great regard to her glory, of which she ardently wished to see her as fond as herself.

Miss Glanville constrained herself to make a reply that might not appear disagreeable: and they were upon these terms when Mr. Glanville came up to them, and told Lady Bella Sir George had sent to intreat their company at his house that day: ‘But,’ added he, ‘as I presume you will not think proper to go, on account of your mourning, neither my sister nor I will accept the invitation.’

‘I dare say,’ interrupted Miss Glanville, hastily, ‘Lady Bella will not expect such a needless piece of ceremony from us; and if she don’t think proper to go, she won’t confine us.’

'By no means, cousin,' said Arabella, smiling; 'and being persuaded Sir George makes the entertainment purely for your sake, it would not be kind in me to deprive him of your company.'

Mr. Glanville being pleased to find his cousin discovered no inclination to go, would have persuaded his sister not to leave Lady Bella: but Miss Glanville looked so much displeased at his request, that he was obliged to insist upon it no more; and both retiring to dress, Lady Bella went up to her apartment, and betook herself to her books, which supplied the place of all company to her.

Miss Glanville, having taken more than ordinary pains in dressing herself, in order to appear charming in the eyes of Sir George, came in to pay her compliments to Lady Bella before she went, not doubting but she would be chagrined to see her look so well: but Lady Bella, on the contrary, praised the clearness of her complexion, and the sparkling of her eyes.

'I question not,' said she, 'but you will give fetters to more persons than one to-day; but remember, I charge you,' added she, smiling, 'while you are taking away the liberty of others, to have a special care of your own.'

Miss Glanville, who could not think it possible one woman could praise another with any sincerity, cast a glance at the glass, fearing it was rather because she looked but indifferently that her cousin was so lavish in her praises; and while she was settling her features in a mirror which every day represented a face infinitely more lovely than her own, Mr. Glanville came in, who, after having very respectfully taken leave of Lady Bella, led his sister to the coach.

Sir George, who was extremely mortified to find Lady Bella not in it, handed Miss Glanville out with an air so reserved, that she raillied him upon it; and gave her brother a very unpleasant emotion, by telling Sir George she hoped Lady Bella's not coming along with them would not make him bad company.

As he was too gallant to suffer an handsome young lady, who spread all her attractions for him, to believe he regretted the absence of another when she was present; he coquetted with her so much, that Mr. Glanville was in hopes

his sister would wholly engage him from Lady Bella.

CHAP. X.

IN WHICH OUR HEROINE IS ENGAGED IN A VERY PERILOUS ADVENTURE.

IN the mean time, that solitary fair-one was alarmed by a fear of a very unaccountable nature; for being in the evening in her closet, the windows of which had a prospect of the gardens, she saw her illustrious concealed lover, who went by the name of Edward, while he was in her father's service, talking with great emotion to her house-steward, who seemed earnestly to listen to some propositions he was making to him. Her surprize at this sight was so great, that she had not power to observe them any longer; but, seating herself in her chair, she had just spirits enough to call Lucy to her assistance; who, extremely frightened at the pale looks of her lady, gave her a smelling-bottle, and was preparing to cut her lace, when Arabella, preventing her, told her, in a low voice, that she feared she should be betrayed into the hands of an insolent lover, who was come to steal her away. 'Yes,' added she, with great emotion, 'I have seen this presumptuous man holding a conversation with one of my servants; and though I could not possibly, at this distance, hear their discourse yet the gestures they used in speaking explained it too well to me; and I have reason to expect, I shall suffer the same violence that many illustrious ladies have done before me; and be carried away by force from my own house, as they were.'

'Alas! Madam!' said Lucy, terrified at this discourse, 'who is it that intends to carry your ladyship away? Sure no robbers will attempt any mischief at such a time as this!'

'Yes, Lucy,' replied Arabella, with great gravity, 'the worst kind of robbers; robbers who do not prey upon gold and jewels; but, what is infinitely more precious, liberty and honour. Do you know, that person who called himself Edward, and worked in these gardens like a common gardener, is now in the house, corrupting

‘corrupting my servants; and, questionless, preparing to force open my chamber, and carry me away? And Heaven knows when I shall be delivered from his chains!’

‘God forbid,’ said Lucy, sobbing, ‘that ever such a lady should have such hard hap! What crime, I wonder, can you be guilty of, to deserve to be in chains?’

‘My crime,’ resumed Arabella, ‘is to have attractions which expose me to these inevitable misfortunes, which even the greatest princesses have not escaped. But, dear Lucy, can you not think of some methods by which I may avoid the evil which waits me? Who knows but that he may, within these few moments, force a passage into my apartment? These slight locks can make but a poor resistance to the violence he will be capable of using.’

‘Oh, dear Madam!’ cried Lucy, trembling, and pressing near her, ‘what shall we do?’

‘I asked your advice,’ said she; ‘but I perceive you are less able than myself to think of any thing to save me.—Ah! Glanville,’ pursued she, sighing, ‘would to Heaven thou wert here now!’

‘Yes, Madam,’ said Lucy, ‘Mr. Glanville, I am sure, would not suffer any one to hurt your ladyship.’

‘As thou valuest my friendship,’ said Arabella, with great earnestness, ‘never acquaint him with what has just now escaped my lips: true, I did call upon him in this perplexity; I did pronounce his name; and that, haply, with a sigh, which involuntarily forced it’s way; and, questionless, if he knew his good fortune, even amidst the danger of losing me for ever, he would resent some emotions of joy; but I should die with shame at having so indiscreetly contributed to his satisfaction; and, therefore, again I charge you, conceal, with the utmost care, what I have said.’

‘Indeed, Madam,’ said Lucy, ‘I shall tell him nothing but what your ladyship bids me; and I am so frightened, that I can think of nothing but that terrible man that wants to carry you away. Mercy on us!’ added she, starting, ‘I think I hear somebody on the stairs!’

‘Do not be alarmed,’ said Arabella, in a majestic tone; ‘it is I who have most reason to fear: nevertheless, I hope the grandeur of my courage will not sink under this accident. Hark, somebody knocks at the door of my antechamber—My own virtue shall support me—Go, Lucy, and ask who it is.’

‘Indeed I can’t, Madam,’ said she, clinging to her: ‘Pray, pardon me: indeed I am so afraid, I cannot stir.’

‘Weak-souled wench!’ said Arabella, ‘how unfit art thou for accidents like these! Ah, had Cylenia and Martesia been like thee, the fair Berenice, and the divine princess of Media, had not so eagerly intreated their ravishers to afford them their company in their captivity! but go, I order you, and ask who it is that is at the door of my apartment; they knock again; offer at no excuses, but do your duty.’

Lucy seeing her lady was really angry, went trembling out of the closet; but would go no farther than her bed-chamber, from whence she called out to know who was at the door.

‘I have some business with your lady,’ said the house-steward (for it was he that knocked): ‘can I speak with her at present?’

Lucy, a little reassured by his voice, made no answer; but, creeping softly to the door of the antechamber, double-locked it; and then cried out in a transport, ‘No, I will take care you shall not come to my lady.’

‘And why, pray, Mrs. Lucy?’ said the steward: ‘What have I done, that you are so much my enemy?’

‘You are a rogue,’ said Lucy, growing very courageous, because the door was locked between them.

‘A rogue!’ said he, ‘What reason have you for calling me a rogue? I assure you I will acquaint my lady with your insolence. I came to speak to her ladyship about Edward; who prayed me to intercede for him, that he may be taken again into her service; for he says my lady never believed any thing against him; and that was my business; but, when I see her, I’ll know whether you are allowed to abuse me in this manner.’

Arabella, by this time, was advanced as far as the bed-chamber, longing to know what sort of conference Lucy

was holding with her intended ravisher; when that faithful confidant, seeing her, came running to her, and whispered her, that the house-steward was at the door, and said he wanted to intercede for Edward.

'Ah, the traitor!' said Arabella, retiring again: 'Has he, then, really bargained with that disloyal man, to deliver up his mistress?—I am undone,' Lucy, said she, 'unless I can find a way to escape out of the house. They will, questionless, soon force the doors of my apartments.'

'Suppose,' said Lucy, 'your ladyship went down the stairs that lead from your dressing-room into the garden; and you may hide yourself in the gardener's house till Mr. Glanville come.'

'I approve,' said Arabella, 'of one part of your proposal; but I shall not trust myself in the gardener's house; who, questionless, is in the plot with the rest of my perfidious servants, since none of them have endeavoured to advertise me of my danger. If we can gain the gardens undiscovered, we may get out by that door at the foot of the terrace, which leads into the fields; for you know I always keep the key of that private door; so, Lucy, let us commend ourselves to the direction of Providence, and be gone immediately.'

'But what shall we do, Madam,' said Lucy, 'when we are got out?'

'Why,' said Arabella, 'you shall conduct me to your brother's; and, probably, we may meet with some generous cavalier by the way, who will protect us till we get thither: however, as I have as great a danger to fear within doors as without, I will venture to make my escape, though I should not be so fortunate as to meet with any knight who will undertake to protect me from the danger which I may apprehend in the fields.'

Saying this, she gave the key of the door to Lucy, whose heart beat violently with fear; and, covering herself with some black cypress, which she wore in the nature of a veil, went softly down the little stair-case to the terrace, followed by Lucy, (who looked eagerly about her every step that she went;) and, having gained the garden-door, hastily unlocked it, and fled

as fast as possible cross the fields, in order to procure a sanctuary at William's house; Arabella begging Heaven to throw some generous cavalier in her way, whose protection she might implore, and taking every tree at a distance for a horse and knight, hastened her steps to meet her approaching succour; which as soon as she came near, miserably balked her expectations.

Though William's farm was not more than two miles from the castle; yet Arabella, unused to such a rude way of travelling, began to be greatly fatigued: the fear she was in of being pursued by her apprehended ravisher, had so violent an effect upon her spirits, that she was hardly able to prosecute her flight; and, to compleat her misfortunes, happening to stumble over a stump of a tree that lay in her way, she strained her ankle, and the violent anguish she felt threw her into a swoon.

Lucy, upon whose arm she leaned, perceiving her fainting, screamed out aloud, not knowing what to do with her in that condition: she placed her upon the ground, and supporting her head against that fatal stump, began to rub her temples, weeping excessively all the time. Her swoon still continuing, the poor girl was in inconceivable terror: her brother's house was now but a little way off; but it being impossible for her to carry her lady thither without some help, she knew not what to resolve upon.

At length, thinking it better to leave her for a few moments to run for assistance, than to sit by her and see her perish for want of it, she left her, though not without extreme agony, and flew with the utmost eagerness to her brother's. She was lucky enough to meet him just coming out of his door; and telling him the condition in which she left her lady, he, without asking any questions about the occasion of so strange an accident, notwithstanding his amazement, ran with all speed to the place where Lucy had left her; but, to their astonishment and sorrow, she was not to be found; they walked a long time in search of her; and Lucy being almost distracted with fear, lest she had been carried away, made complaints that so puzzled her brother he knew not what to say to her: but finding their search fruitless, they agreed to go home to the castle, supposing,

supposing, with some appearance of reason, that they might hear of her there.

Here they found nothing but grief and confusion. Mr. Glanville and his sister were just returned, and had been at Lady Bella's apartment; but, not finding her there, they asked her women where she was, who, not knowing any thing of her flight, concluded she was in the garden with Lucy. Mr. Glanville, surprized at her being at that hour in the garden, ran eagerly to engage her to come in, being apprehensive she would take cold, by staying so late in the air; but not finding her in any of her usual walks, he ordered several of the servants to assist him in searching the whole garden, sending them to different places; but they all returned without success, which filled him with the utmost consternation.

He was returning excessively uneasy to the house, when he saw Lucy, who had been just told, in answer to her inquiries about her lady, that they were gone to look for her in the garden; and running up to Mr. Glanville, who hoped to hear news of Lady Bella from her, 'Oh, Sir!' said she, 'is my lady found?'

'What, Lucy!' said Mr. Glanville (more alarmed than before) 'do not you know where she is? I thought you had been with her.'

'Oh, dear!' cried Lucy, wringing her hands; 'for certain my poor lady was stolen away while she was in that fainting fit.—Sir,' said she to Glanville, 'I know who the person is that my lady said (and almost broke my heart) would keep her in chains: he was in the house not many hours ago.'

Mr. Glanville, suspecting this was some new whim of Arabella's, would not suffer Lucy to say any more before the servants, who stood gaping with astonishment at the strange things she uttered; but bid her follow him to his apartment, and he would hear what she could inform him concerning this accident. He would, if possible, have prevented his sister from being present at the story; but, not being able to form any excuse for not suffering her to hear every thing that related to her cousin, they all three went into his chamber; where he desired Lucy to tell him what she knew about her lady.

'You must know, Sir,' said Lucy,

fobbing, 'that there came a man here to take away my lady; a great man he is, though he worked in the gardens; for he was in love with her; and so he would not own who he was.'

'And pray,' interrupted Miss Glanville, 'who told you he was a great man, as you say?'

'My lady told me,' said Lucy: but, *howsoever*, he was turned away; for the gardener says he caught him stealing carp.'

'A very great man, indeed,' said Miss Glanville, 'that would steal carp!'

'You must know, Madam,' said she, 'that was only a pretence; for he went there, my lady says, to drown himself.'

'Bless me!' cried Miss Glanville, laughing; 'the girl's distracted, sure.'

'—Lord! brother, don't listen to her nonsensical tales; we shall never find my cousin by her.'

'Leave her to me,' said Mr. Glanville, whispering: 'perhaps I may discover something by her discourse, that will give us some light into this affair.'

'Nay, I'll stay, I am resolved,' answered she; 'for I long to know where my cousin is: though, do you think what this girl says is true, about a great man disguised in the gardens? Sure my cousin could never tell her such stuff: but, now I think of it,' added she, 'Lady Bella, when we were speaking about the jockey, talked something about a lover: I vow I believe it is as the girl says. Pray let's hear her out.'

Mr. Glanville was ready to die with vexation, at the charmer of his soul's being thus exposed: but there was no help for it.

'Pray,' said he to Lucy, 'tell us no more about this man: but, if you can guess where your lady is, let me know.'

'Indeed I can't, Sir,' said she; 'for my lady and I both stole out of the house, for fear Edward should break open the doors of her apartment; and we were running as fast as possible to my brother's house, (where she said she would hide herself till you came:) but my poor dear lady fell down, and hurt herself so much, that she fainted away: I tried what

I could

'I could to fetch her again; but she did not open her eyes: so I ran like lightning to my brother, to come and help me to carry her to the farm; but, when we came back, she was gone.'

'What do you say?', cried Mr. Glanville, with a distracted look: 'did you leave her in that condition in the fields? And was she not to be found when you came back?'

'No, indeed, Sir,' said Lucy, weeping, 'we could not find her, though we wandered about a long time.'

'Oh, Heavens!' said he, walking about the room in a violent emotion, 'where can she be? what is become of her?—Dear sister,' pursued he, 'order somebody to saddle my horse: I'll traverse the country all night in quest of her.'

'You had best enquire, Sir,' said Lucy, 'if Edward is in the house; he knows, may be, where my lady is.'

'Who is he?' cried Glanville.

'Why the great man, Sir,' said Lucy, 'whom we thought to be a gardener, who came to carry my lady away, which made her get out of the house as fast as she could.'

'This is the strangest story,' said Miss Glanville, 'that ever I heard: sure nobody would be so mad to attempt such an action; my cousin has the oddest whims——'

Mr. Glanville, not able to listen any longer, charged Lucy to say nothing of this matter to any one; and then ran eagerly out of the room, ordering two or three of the servants to go in search of their lady: he then mounted his horse in great anguish of mind, not knowing whither to direct his course.

CHAP. XI.

IN WHICH THE LADY IS WONDERFULLY DELIVERED.

BUT to return to Arabella, whom we left in a very melancholy situation. Lucy had not been gone long from her before she opened her eyes; and, beginning to come perfectly to herself, was surprized to find her woman not near her: the moon shining very bright, she looked round her, and called Lucy as loud as she was able; but not seeing her, or hearing any answer, her

fears became so powerful, that she had like to have relapsed into her swoon.

'Alas! unfortunate maid that I am!' cried she, weeping excessively, 'questionless I am betrayed by her on whose fidelity I relied, and who was acquainted with my most secret thoughts: she is now with my ravisher, directing his pursuit, and I have no means of escaping from his hands! Cruel and ungrateful wench, thy unparalleled treachery grieves me no less than all my other misfortunes: but why do I say, her treachery is unparalleled? Did not the wicked Arianta betray her mistress into the power of her insolent lover? Ah! Arabella, thou art not single in thy misery, since the divine Mandana was, like thyself, the dupe of a mercenary servant.'

Having given a moment or two to these sad reflections, she rose from the ground with an intention to walk on; but her ankle was so painful, that she could hardly move: her tears began now to flow with greater violence; she expected every moment to see Edward approach her; and was resigning herself up to despair, when a chaise, driven by a young gentleman, passed by her. Arabella, thanking Heaven for sending this relief, called out as loud as she could, conjuring him to stay.

The gentleman hearing a woman's voice, stopped immediately, and asked what she wanted.

'Generous stranger,' said Arabella, advancing as well as she was able, 'do not refuse your assistance to save me from a most terrible danger: I am pursued by a person whom, for very urgent reasons, I desire to avoid. I conjure you, therefore, in the name of her you love best, to protect me; and may you be crowned with the enjoyment of all your wishes, for so charitable an action!'

If the gentleman was surprized at this address, he was much more astonished at the beauty of her who made it: her stature, her shape, her inimitable complexion; the lustre of her fine eyes, and the thousand charms that adorned her whole person, kept him a minute silently gazing upon her, without having the power to make her an answer.

Arabella, finding he did not speak, was extremely disappointed. 'Ah, Sir!

'Sir!' said she, 'what do you deliberate upon? Is it possible you can deny so reasonable a request, to a lady in my circumstances?'

'For God's sake, Madam,' said the gentleman, alighting, and approaching her, 'let me know who you are, and how I can be of any service to you.'

'As for my quality,' said Arabella, 'be assured it is not mean; and let this knowledge suffice at present.' 'The service I desire of you, is, to convey me to some place where I may be in safety for this night: to-morrow I will intreat you to let some persons, whom I shall name to you, know where I am; to the end they may take proper measures to secure me from the attempts of an insolent man, who has driven me from my own house, by the designs he was going to execute.'

The gentleman saw there was some mystery in her case, which she did not chuse to explain; and, being extremely glad at having so beautiful a creature in his power, told her she might command him in all she pleased; and, helping her into the chaise, drove off as fast as he could; Arabella suffering no apprehensions from being alone with a stranger, since nothing was more common to heroines than such adventures; all her fears being of Edward, whom she fancied every moment she saw pursuing them; and, being extremely anxious to be in some place of safety, she urged her protector to drive as fast as possible: who, willing to have her at his own house, complied with her request; but was so unlucky in his haste, as to overturn the chaise. Though neither Arabella nor himself were hurt by the fall, yet the necessity there was to stay some time to put the chaise in a condition to carry them any farther, filled her with a thousand apprehensions, lest they should be overtaken.

In the mean time, the servants of Arabella, among whom Edward, not knowing how much he was concerned in her flight, was resolved to distinguish himself by his zeal in searching for her, had dispersed themselves about in different places: chance conducted Edward to the very spot where she was; when Arabella, perceiving him while he was two or three paces off, 'Oh, 'Sir!' cried she, 'behold my persecu-

tor! can you resolve to defend me against the violence he comes to offer me?'

The gentleman, looking up, and seeing a man in livery approaching them, asked her, if that was the person she complained of; and if he was her servant.

'If he is my servant, Sir,' replied she, blushing, 'he never had my permission to be so: and, indeed, no one else can boast of my having granted them such a liberty.'

'Do you know whose servant he is, then, Madam?' replied the gentleman, a little surprized at her answer; which he could not well understand.

'You throw me into a great embarrassment, Sir,' resumed Arabella, blushing more than before: 'questionless, he appears to be mine; but since, as I told you before, he never discovered himself to me, and I never permitted him to assume that title, his services, if ever I received any from him, were not at all considered by me as things for which I was obliged to him.'

The gentleman, still more amazed at answers so little to the purpose, was going to desire her to explain herself upon this strange affair; when Edward coming up close to Arabella, cried out in a transport, 'O Madam! thank God you are found.'

'Hold, impious man!' said Arabella, 'and do not give thanks for that which, haply, may prove thy punishment. If I am found, thou wilt be no better for it; and if thou continuest to persecute me, thou wilt probably meet with thy death where thou thinkest thou hast found thy happiness.'

The poor fellow, who understood not a word of this discourse, stared upon her like one that had lost his wits; when the protector of Arabella approaching him, asked him, with a stern look, what he had to say to that lady; and why he presumed to follow her.

As the man was going to answer him, Mr. Glanville came galloping up; and Edward seeing him, ran up to him; and informed him that he had met with Lady Bella, and a gentleman, who seemed to have been overturned in a chaise, which he was endeavouring to resist, and that her ladyship was offended with him for coming up to her; and

also,

also, that the gentleman had used some threatening language to him upon that account.

Mr. Glanville, excessively surprized at what he heard, stopped; and ordering a servant who came along with him to run back to the castle, and bring a chaise thither to carry Lady Bella home, he asked Edward several more questions relating to what she and the gentleman had said to him: and, notwithstanding his knowledge of her ridiculous humour, he could not help being alarmed by her behaviour, nor concluding that there was something very mysterious in the affair.

While he was thus conversing with Edward, Arabella, who had spied him almost as soon, was filled with apprehension to see him hold so quiet a parly with her ravisher: the more she reflected upon this accident, the more her suspicions increased; and persuading herself at last that Mr. Glanville was privy to his designs, this belief, however improbable, wrought so powerfully upon her imagination, that she could not restrain her tears.

'Doubtless,' said she, 'I am betrayed, and the perjured Glanville is no longer either my friend or lover: he is this moment concerting measures with my ravisher how to deliver me into his power; and, like Philidaspes, is glad of an opportunity, by this treachery, to berid of a woman whom his parents and hers had destined for his wife.'

Mr. Glanville having learned all he could from Edward, alighted; and giving him his horse to hold, came up to Arabella: and, after expressing his joy at meeting with her, begged her to let him know what accident had brought her, unattended, from the castle, at that time of night.

'If by this question,' said the incensed Arabella, 'you would persuade me you are ignorant of the cause of my flight, know, your dissimulation will not succeed; and that, having reason to believe you are equally guilty with him from whose intended violence I fled, I shall have recourse to the valour of this knight you see with me to defend me, as well against you as that ravisher, with whom I see you leaguéd.—Ah, unworthy cousin!' pursued she, 'what dost thou propose to thyself by so black a trea-

chery? What is to be the price of my liberty, which thou so freely disposest of? Has thy friend there,' said she, (pointing to Edward) 'a sister, or any relation, for whom thou barterest by delivering me up to him? But assure thyself, this stratagem shall be of no use to thee; for if thou art base enough to oppress my valiant deliverer with numbers, and thinkest by violence to get me into thy power, my cries shall arm Heaven and earth in my defence. Providence may, haply, send some generous cavaliers to my rescue; and, if Providence fails me, my own hand shall give me freedom: for that moment thou offerest to seize me, that moment shall be the last of my life.'

While Arabella was speaking, the young gentleman and Edward, who listened to her eagerly, thought her brain was disturbed: but Mr. Glanville was in a terrible confusion, and silently cursed his ill fate, to make him in love with a woman so ridiculous.

'For Heaven's sake, cousin,' said he, striving to repress some part of his disorder, 'do not give way to these extravagant notions! there is nobody intends to do you any wrong.'

'What!' interrupted she, 'would you persuade me that that impostor there,' pointing to Edward, 'has not a design to carry me away; which you, by supporting him, are not equally guilty of?'

'Who? I, Madam!' cried out Edward: 'sure your ladyship does not suspect me of such a strange design! God knows I never thought of such a thing!'

'Ah, dissembler!' interrupted Arabella, 'do not make use of that sacred name to mask thy impious falsehoods: confess with what intent you came into my father's service disguised?'

'I never came disguised, Madam,' returned Edward.

'No!' said Arabella. 'What means that dress in which I see you, then?'

'It is the marquis's livery, Madam,' said Edward, 'which he did not order to be taken from me when I left his service.'

'And with what purpose didst thou wear it?' said she. 'Do not your thoughts accuse you of your crime?'

'I always hoped, Madam—' said he. 'You hoped!' interrupted Arabella, frowning.

frowning. 'Did I ever give you reason to hope? I will not deny but I had compassion on you; but even that you was ignorant of.'

'I know, Madam, you had compassion on me,' said Edward; 'for your ladyship, I always thought, did not believe me guilty.'

'I was weak enough,' said she, 'to have compassion on you, though I did believe you guilty.'

'Indeed, Madam,' returned Edward, 'I always hoped, as I said before, (but your ladyship would not hear me out) that you did not believe any malicious reports; and therefore you had compassion on me.'

'I had no reports of you,' said she, 'but what my own observation gave me; and that was sufficient to convince me of your fault.'

'Why, Madam,' said Edward, 'did your ladyship see me steal the carp then, which was the fault unjustly laid to my charge?'

Mr. Glanville, as much cause as he had for uneasiness, could with great difficulty restrain laughter at this ludicrous circumstance; for he guessed what crime Arabella was accusing him of: as for the young gentleman, he could not conceive what she meant, and longed to hear what would be the end of such a strange conference. But poor Arabella was prodigiously confounded at his mentioning so low an affair; not being able to endure that Glanville and her protector should know a lover of hers could be suspected of so base a theft.

The shame she conceived at it, kept her silent for a moment: but recovering herself at last, 'No,' said she, 'I knew you better than to give any credit to such an idle report: persons of your condition do not commit such paltry crimes.'

'Upon my soul, Madam,' said the young gentleman, 'persons of his condition often do worse.'

'I don't deny it, Sir,' said Arabella; 'and the design he meditated of carrying me away was infinitely worse.'

'Really, Madam,' returned the gentleman, 'if you are such a person as I apprehend, I don't see how he durst make such an attempt.'

'It is very possible, Sir,' said she, 'that I might be carried away, though I was of greater quality than I am: were not Mandana, Candace, Clelia,

and many other ladies who underwent the same fate, of a quality more illustrious than mine?'

'Really, Madam,' said he, 'I know none of these ladies.'

'No, Sir!' said Arabella, extremely mortified.

'Let me intreat you, cousin,' interrupted Glanville, who feared this conversation would be very tedious, 'to expose yourself no longer to the air at this time of night: suffer me to conduct you home.'

It concerns my honour,' said she, 'that this generous stranger should not think I am the only one that was ever exposed to these insolent attempts.— You say, Sir,' pursued she, 'that you don't know any of these ladies I mentioned before: let me ask you, then, if you are acquainted with Parthenissa, or Cleopatra; who were both for some months in the hands of their ravishers?'

'As for Parthenissa, Madam,' said he, 'neither have I heard of her; nor do I remember to have heard of any more than one Cleopatra: but she was never ravished, I am certain, for she was too willing.'

'How, Sir!' said Arabella, 'was Cleopatra ever willing to run away with her ravisher?'

'Cleopatra was a whore, was she not Madam?' said he.

'Hold thy peace, unworthy man,' said Arabella, 'and profane not the memory of that fair and glorious queen by such injurious language: that queen, I say, whose courage was equal to her beauty; and her virtue surpassed by neither. Good Heavens! what a black defamer have I chosen for my protector!'

Mr. Glanville rejoicing to see Arabella in a disposition to be offended with her new acquaintance, resolved to soothe her a little, in hopes of prevailing upon her to return home. 'Sir,' said he to the gentleman, who could not conceive why the lady should so warmly defend Cleopatra, 'you were in the wrong to cast such reflections upon that great queen, (repeating what he had heard his cousin say before:) for all the world,' pursued he, 'knows she was married to Julius Cæsar.'

'Though I commend you,' said Arabella, 'for taking the part of a lady so basely vilified; yet let not your zeal for her honour induce you

‘to say more than is true for it’s justification; for thereby you weaken, instead of strengthening, what may be said in her defence. One falshood always supposes another, and renders all you can say suspected; whereas pure, unmixed truth, carries conviction along with it, and never fails to produce it’s desired effect.’

‘Suffer me, cousin,’ interrupted Glanville, ‘again to represent to you, the inconveniency you will certainly feel, by staying so late in the air; leave the justification of Cleopatra to some other opportunity, and take care of your own preservation.’

‘What is it you require of me?’ said Arabella.

‘Only,’ resumed Glanville, ‘that you would be pleased to return to the castle, where my sister, and all your servants, are inconsolable for your absence.’

‘But who can assure me,’ answered she, ‘that I shall not, by returning home, enter voluntarily into my prison? The same treachery which made the palace of Candace the place of her confinement, may turn the castle of Arabella into her gaol. For, to say the truth, I still more than suspect you abet the designs of this man; since I behold you in his party, and ready, no doubt, to draw your sword in his defence; how will you be able to clear yourself of this crime? Yet I will venture to return to my house, provided you will swear to me you will offer me no violence, with regard to your friend there; and also I insist, that he, from this moment, disclaim all intentions of persecuting me, and banish himself from my presence for ever. Upon this condition I pardon him, and will likewise pray to Heaven to pardon him also.—Speak, presumptuous unknown,’ said she to Edward, ‘wilt thou accept of my pardon upon the terms I offer it thee? And wilt thou take thyself to some place where I may never behold thee again?’

‘Since your ladyship,’ said Edward, ‘is resolved not to receive me into your service, I shan’t trouble you

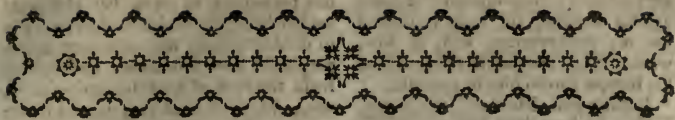
any more; but I think it hard to be punished for a crime I was not guilty of.’

‘It is better,’ said Arabella, turning from him, ‘that thou shouldest complain of my rigour, than the world tax me with lightness and indiscretion.—And now, Sir,’ said she to Glanville, ‘I must trust myself to your honour, which I confess I do a little suspect; but, however, it is possible you have repented, like the poor Prince Thrasybulus, when he submitted to the suggestions of a wicked friend, to carry away the fair Alcionida, whom he afterwards restored. Speak, Glanville,’ pursued she, ‘are you desirous of imitating that virtuous prince, or do you still retain your former sentiments?’

‘Upon my word, Madam,’ said Glanville, ‘you will make me quite mad, if you go on in this manner: pray let me see you safe home; and then, if you please, you may forbid my entrance into the castle, if you suspect me of any bad intentions towards you.’

‘It is enough,’ said she; ‘I will trust you.—As for you, Sir,’ speaking to the young gentleman, ‘you are so unworthy, in my apprehensions, by the calumnies you have uttered against a person of that sex which merits all your admiration and reverence, that I hold you very unfit to be a protector of any of it: therefore I dispense with your services upon this occasion; and think it better to trust myself to the conduct of a person, who, like Thrasybulus, by his repentance, has restored himself to my confidence, than to one, who, though indeed he has never betrayed me, yet seems very capable of doing so, if he had the power.’

Saying this, she gave her hand to Glanville, who helped her into the chaise that was come from the castle; and the servant who brought it, mounting his horse, Mr. Glanville drove her home, leaving the gentleman, who by this time had refitted his chaise, in the greatest astonishment imaginable at her unaccountable behaviour.



THE FEMALE QUIXOTE.

BOOK III.

CHAP. I.

TWO CONVERSATIONS, OUT OF
WHICH THE READER MAY PICK
UP A GREAT DEAL.



ARABELLA, continuing to ruminate upon her adventure during their little journey, appeared so low-spirited and reserved, that Mr. Glanville, though he ardently wished to know all the particulars of her flight, and meeting with that gentleman, whose company he found her in, was obliged to suppress his curiosity for the present, out of a fear of displeasing her. As soon as they alighted at the castle, her servants ran to receive her at the gates, expressing their joy to see her again, by a thousand confused exclamations.

Miss Glanville being at her toilet when she heard of her arrival, ran down to welcome her; in her hurry forgetting, that as her woman had been curling her hair, she had no cap on.

Arabella received her compliments with a little coolness; for, observing that her grief for her absence had not made her neglect any of her usual solicitude about her person, she could not conceive it had been very great; therefore, when she had made some slight answer to the hundred questions she asked in a breath, she went up to her apartment; and, calling Lucy, who was crying with joy for her return, she questioned her strictly concerning her

leaving her in the fields, acknowledging to her that she suspected her fidelity, though she wished at the same time she might be able to clear herself.

Lucy, in her justification, related, after her punctual way, all that had happened; by which Arabella was convinced, she had not betrayed her; and was also in some doubt, whether Mr. Glanville was guilty of any design against her.

'Since,' said she to Lucy, 'thou art restored to my good opinion, I will, as I have always done, unmask my thoughts to thee. I confess then, with shame and confusion, that I cannot think of Mr. Glanville's assisting the unknown to carry me away, without *resenting* a most poignant grief: questionless, my weakness will surprize thee; and could I conceal it from myself, I would from thee; but, alas! it is certain that I do not hate him; and I believe I never shall, guilty as he may be in my apprehensions.'

'Hate him! Madam,' said Lucy; 'God forbid you should ever hate Mr. Glanville; who, I am sure, loves your ladyship as well as he does his own sister!'

'You are very confident, Lucy,' said Arabella, blushing, 'to mention the word *love* to me; if I thought my cousin had bribed thee to it, I should be greatly incensed; however, though I forbid you to talk of his passion, yet I permit you to tell me the violence of his transports when I was missing; the threats he uttered against

'my ravishers; the complaints he made against fortune; the vows he offered for my preservation; and, in fine, whatever extravagances the excess of his sorrow forced him to commit.'

'I assure you, Madam,' said Lucy, 'I did not hear him say any of all this.'

'What!' interrupted Arabella: 'and didst thou not observe the tears trickle from his eyes, which, haply, he strove to conceal? Did he not strike his bosom with the vehemence of his grief; and cast his accusing and despairing eyes to Heaven, which had permitted such a misfortune to befall me?'

'Indeed, Madam, I did not,' resumed Lucy; 'but he seemed to be very sorry; and said, he would go and look for your ladyship.'

'Ah, the traitor!' interrupted Arabella, in a rage: 'fain would I have found out some excuse for him, and justified him in my apprehensions; but he is unworthy of these favourable thoughts. Speak of him no more, I command you; he is guilty of assisting my ravisher to carry me away, and therefore merits my eternal displeasure. But though I could find reasons to clear him even of that crime, yet he is guilty of indifference and insensibility for my loss, since he neither died with grief at the news of it; nor needed the interposition of his sister, or the desire of delivering me, to make him live.'

Arabella, when she had said this, was silent; but could not prevent some tears stealing down her fair face; therefore, to conceal her uneasiness, or to be more at liberty to indulge it, she ordered Lucy to make haste and undress her; and, going to bed, passed the small remainder of the night, not in rest, which she very much needed, but in reflections on all the passages of the preceding day: and finding, or imagining the found, new reasons for condemning Mr. Glanville, her mind was very far from being at ease.

In the morning, lying later than usual, she received a message from Mr. Glanville, inquiring after her health; to which she answered, that he was too little concerned in the preservation of it, to make it necessary to acquaint him.

Miss Glanville soon after sent to de-

fire permission to drink her chocolate by her bedside; which as she could not in civility refuse, she was very much perplexed how to hide her melancholy from the eyes of that discerning lady, who, she questioned not, would interpret it in favour of her brother.

Upon Miss Glanville's appearance, she forced herself to assume a chearful look, asking her pardon for receiving her in bed; and complaining of bad rest, which had occasioned her lying late.

Miss Glanville, after answering her compliments with almost equal politeness, proceeded to ask her an hundred questions concerning the cause of her absence from the castle: 'Your woman,' pursued she, laughing, 'told us a strange medley of stuff about a great man, who was a gardener, and wanted to carry you away; sure there was nothing in it! Was there?'

'You must excuse me, cousin,' said Arabella, 'if I do not answer your questions precisely now: 'tis sufficient that I tell you, certain reasons obliged me to act in the manner I did, for my own preservation; and that, another time, you shall know my history; which will explain many things you seem to be surprized at, at present.'

'Your history!' said Miss Glanville. 'Why, will you write your own history then?'

'I shall not write it,' said Arabella; 'though, questionless, it will be written after my death.'

'And must I wait till then for it?' resumed Miss Glanville, gaily.

'No, no,' interrupted Arabella: 'I mean to gratify your curiosity sooner; but it will not be yet a good time; and, haply, not till you have acquainted me with yours.'

'Mine!' said Miss Glanville: 'it would not be worth your hearing; for really I have nothing to tell, that would make an history.'

'You have, questionless,' returned Arabella, 'gained many victories over hearts; have occasioned many quarrels between your servants, by favouring some one more than the others; probably you have caused some bloodshed; and have not escaped being carried away once or twice: you have also, I suppose, undergone some persecution from those who have

‘ have the disposal of you, in favour of a lover whom you have an aversion to; and lastly, there is haply some one among your admirers, who is happy enough not to be hated by you.’

‘ I assure you,’ interrupted Miss Glanville, ‘ I hate none of my admirers; and I can’t help thinking you very unkind to use my brother as you do: I am sure, there is not one man in an hundred, that would take so much from your hands as he does.’

‘ Then there is not one man in an hundred,’ resumed Arabella, ‘ whom I should think worthy to serve me: but pray, Madam, what ill usage is it your brother complains of? I have treated him with much less severity than he had reason to expect; and, notwithstanding he had the presumption to talk to me of love, I have endured him in my sight; an indulgence for which I may haply be blamed in after-ages.’

‘ Why sure, Lady Bella,’ said Miss Glanville, ‘ it would be no such crime for my brother to love you!’

‘ But it was a mortal crime to tell me so,’ interrupted Arabella.

‘ And why was it such a mortal crime to tell you so?’ said Miss Glanville. ‘ Are you the first woman, by millions, that has been told so?’

‘ Doubtless,’ returned Arabella, ‘ I am the first woman of my quality, that ever was told so by any man, till after an infinite number of services, and secret sufferings: and truly, I am of the illustrious Mandana’s mind; for she said, that she should think it an unpardonable presumption, for the greatest king on earth to tell her he loved her, though after ten years of the most faithful services, and concealed torments.’

‘ Ten years!’ cried out Miss Glanville, in amazement: ‘ did she consider what alterations ten years would make in her face, and how much older she would be at the end of ten years, than she was before?’

‘ Truly,’ said Arabella, ‘ it is not usual to consider such little matters so nicely; one never has the idea of an heroine older than eighteen, though her history begins at that age; and the events which compose it, contain the space of twenty more.’

‘ But, dear cousin,’ resumed Miss Glanville, ‘ do you resolve to be ten years a courting? Or rather, will you be loved in silence ten years, and be courted the other ten; and so marry when you are an old woman?’

‘ Pardon me, cousin,’ resumed Arabella; ‘ I must really find fault with the coarseness of your language. Courting, and old woman! What strange terms! Let us, I beseech you, end this dispute: if you have any thing to say in justification of your brother, which, I suppose, was the chief intention of your visit, I shall not be rude enough to restrain you; though I could wish you would not lay me under the necessity of hearing what I cannot persuade myself to believe.’

‘ Since,’ returned Miss Glanville, ‘ I know of no crime my brother has been guilty of, I have nothing to say in his justification: I only know, that he is very much mortified at the message you sent him this morning; for I was with him when he received it. But pray, what has he done to offend you?’

‘ If Mr. Glanville,’ interrupted Arabella, ‘ hopes for my pardon, he must purchase it by his repentance, and a sincere confession of his fault; which you may much better understand from himself, than from me; and, for this purpose, I will condescend to grant him a private audience, at which I desire you would be present; and also, I should take it well, if you will let him know, that he owes this favour wholly to your interposition.’

Miss Glanville, who knew her brother was extremely desirous of seeing Arabella, was glad to accept of these strange terms; and left her chamber, in order to acquaint him with that lady’s intentions.

CHAP. II.

A SOLEMN INTERVIEW.

IN the mean time, that fair-one being risen, and negligently dressed, as was her custom, went into her closet, sending to give Miss Glanville notice that she was ready to see her. This message immediately brought both the brother

brother and sister to her apartment: and Miss Glanville, at her brother's request, staying in the chamber, where she busied herself in looking at her cousin's jewels, which lay upon the toilet, he came alone into the closet, in so much confusion at the thoughts of the ridiculous figure he made in complying with Arabella's fantastical humours, that his looks persuading her there was some great agitation in his mind, she expected to see him fall at her feet, and endeavour to deprecate her wrath by a deluge of tears.

Mr. Glanville, however, disappointed her in that respect; for, taking a seat near her, he began to intreat her, with a smiling countenance, to tell him in what he had offended her; protesting, that he was not conscious of doing or saying any thing to displease her.

Arabella was greatly confused at this question, which she thought she had no reason to expect; it not being possible for her to tell him she was offended, that he was not in absolute despair for her absence, without, at the same time, confessing she looked upon him in the light of a lover, whose expressions of a violent passion would not have displeased her: therefore, to disengage herself from the perplexity his question threw her into, she was obliged to offer some violence to her ingenuousness; and, contrary to her real belief, tax him again with a design of betraying her into the power of the unknown.

Mr. Glanville, though excessively vexed at her persisting in so ridiculous an error, could hardly help smiling at the stern manner in which she spoke; but knowing of what fatal consequence it would be to him, if he indulged any gaiety in so solemn a conference, he composed his looks to a gravity suitable to the occasion; and asked her, in a very submissive tone, what motive she was pleased to assign for so extraordinary a piece of villainy, as that she supposed him guilty of.

'Truly,' answered she, blushing, 'I do not pretend to account for the actions of wicked and ungenerous persons.'

'But, Madam,' resumed Glanville, 'if I must needs be suspected of a design to seize upon your person, me-

'thinks it would have been more reasonable to suppose, I would rather use that violence in favour of my own pretensions, than those of any other whatever; for, though you have expressly forbid me to tell you I love you, yet I hope, you still continue to think I do.'

'I assure you,' returned Arabella, assuming a severe look, 'I never gave myself the trouble to examine your behaviour with care enough to be sensible if you still were guilty of the weakness which displeased me; but, upon a supposition that you repented of your fault, I was willing to live with you upon terms of civility and friendship, as became persons in that degree of relationship in which we are: therefore, if you are wife, you will not renew the remembrance of those follies I have long since pardoned; nor seek occasions of offending me by new ones of the same kind, lest it produce a more severe sentence than that I formerly laid upon you.'

'However, Madam,' replied Glanville, 'you must suffer me to assure you, that my own interest, which was greatly concerned in your safety, and my principles of honour, would never allow me to engage in so villainous an enterprize, as that of abetting any person in stealing you away: nor can I conceive how you possibly could imagine a fellow who was your menial servant, could form so presumptuous and dangerous a design.'

'By your manner of speaking,' resumed Arabella, 'one would imagine you were really ignorant, both of the quality of that presumptuous man, as well as his designed offence: but yet, 'tis certain, I saw you in his company; and saw you ready to draw your sword in his defence, against my deliverer. Had I not the evidence of my own senses, for your guilt, I must confess I could not be persuaded of it by any other means: therefore, since appearances are certainly against you, it is not strange if I cannot consent to acquit you in my apprehensions, till I have more certain confirmation of your innocence, than your bare testimony only; which, at present, has not all the weight

weight with me it had some time ago.

'I protest, Madam,' said Mr. Glanville, who was strangely perplexed, 'I have reason to think my case extremely hard, since I have brought myself to be suspected by you, only through my eagerness to find you, and solicitude for your welfare.'

'Doubtless,' interrupted Arabella, 'if you are innocent, your case is extremely hard; yet it is not singular; and therefore you have less reason to complain: the valiant Coriolanus, who was the most passionate and faithful lover imaginable, having, by his admirable valour, assisted the ravishers of his adored Cleopatra, against those who came to rescue her, and by his arm alone, opposed to great numbers of their enemies, facilitated the execution of their design, had the mortification afterwards to know, that he had all that time been fighting against that divine princess, who loaded him with the most cruel reproaches for the injury he had done her: yet fortune was so kind as to give him the means of repairing his fault, and restoring him to some part of her good opinion; for, covered with wounds as he was, and fatigued with fighting, before; yet he undertook, in that condition, to prevent her ravishers from carrying her off; and, for several hours, continued fighting alone with near two hundred men, who were not able to overcome him, notwithstanding his extreme weariness, and the multitude of blows which they aimed at him; therefore, Glanville, considering you, as Cleopatra did that unfortunate prince, who was before suspected by her, as neither guilty nor innocent, I can only, like her, wish you may find some occasion of justifying yourself from the crime laid to your charge. Till then, I must be under a necessity of banishing you from my presence, with the same consolatory speech she used to that unfortunate prince—Go, therefore, Glanville, go, and endeavour your own justification; I desire you should effect it no less than you do yourself; and if my prayers, can obtain from Heaven this favour for you, I shall not scruple to offer some *in your behalf*.'

CHAP. III.

IN WHICH THE INTERVIEW IS ENDED, NOT MUCH TO THE LOVER'S SATISFACTION, BUT EXACTLY CONFORMABLE TO THE RULES OF ROMANCE.

ARABELLA, when she had pronounced these words, blushed excessively, thinking she had said too much: but, not seeing any signs of extreme joy in the face of Glanville, who was silently cursing Cleopatra, and the authors of those romances that had ruined so noble a minkl, and exposed him to perpetual vexations, by the unaccountable whims they had raised—

'Why are you not gone,' said she, 'while I am in an humour not to repent of the favour I have shewn you?'

'You must excuse me, cousin,' said Mr. Glanville, peevishly, 'If I do not think so highly as you do of the favour. Pray how am I obliged to you for depriving me of the pleasure of seeing you, and sending me on a wild-goose chase, after occasions to justify myself of a crime I am wholly innocent of, and would scorn to commit?'

'Though' resumed Arabella, with great calmness, 'I have reason to be dissatisfied with the cool and unthankful manner in which you receive my indulgence, yet I shall not change the favourable disposition I am in towards you, unless you provoke me to it by new acts of disobedience: therefore, in the language of Cleopatra, I shall tell you——'

'Upon my soul, Madam,' interrupted Glanville, 'I have no patience with that rigorous gipsy, whose example you follow so exactly, to my sorrow: speak in your own language, I beseech you; for I am sure neither hers, nor any one's upon earth, can excel it.'

'Yet,' said Arabella, striving to repress some inclination to smile at this sally, 'notwithstanding your unjust prohibitions, I shall make use of the language of that incomparable lady, to tell you my thoughts; which are, that it is possible you might be sufficiently justified in my apprehensions, by

‘ by the anxiety it now appears you
 ‘ had for my safety, by the probability
 ‘ which I find in your discourse, and
 ‘ the good opinion I have of you,
 ‘ were it not requisite to make your innocence
 ‘ apparent to the world, that
 ‘ so it might be lawful for Arabella to
 ‘ re-admit you, with honour, into her
 ‘ former esteem and friendship.’

Mr. Glanville, seeing it would be in vain to attempt to make her alter her fantastical determination at this time, went out of the closet without deigning to make any reply to his sentence, though delivered in the language of the admirable Cleopatra: but his ill-humour was so visible in his face, that Arabella, who mistook it for an excess of despair, could not help feeling some kind of pity for the rigour which the laws of honour and romance obliged her to use him with. And while she sat meditating upon the scene which had just passed, Mr. Glanville returned to his own room, glad that his sister, not being in Arabella's chamber, where he had left her, had no opportunity of observing his discontent, which she would not fail to enquire the cause of.

Here he sat, ruminating upon the follies of Arabella, which he found grew more glaring every day: every thing furnished matter for some new extravagance; her character was so ridiculous, that he could propose nothing to himself but eternal shame and disquiet, in the possession of a woman for whom he must always blush and be in pain. But her beauty had made a deep impression on his heart; he admired the strength of her understanding, her lively wit, the sweetness of her temper, and a thousand amiable qualities which distinguished her from the rest of her sex: her follies, when opposed to all those charms of mind and person, seemed inconsiderable and weak; and though they were capable of giving him great uneasiness, yet they could not lessen a passion which every sight of her so much the more confirmed.

As he feared it was impossible to help loving her, his happiness depended upon curing her of her romantick notions; and though he knew not how to effect such a change in her as was necessary to compleat it, yet he would not despair, but comforted himself

with hopes of what he had not courage to attempt. Sometimes he fancied company, and an acquaintance with the world, would produce the alteration he wished: yet he dreaded to see her exposed to ridicule by her fantastical behaviour, and become the jest of persons who were not possessed of half her understanding.

While he traversed his chamber, wholly engrossed by these reflections, Miss Glanville was entertaining Sir George, of whose coming she was informed while she was in Arabella's chamber.

CHAP. IV.

IN WHICH OUR HEROINE IS GREATLY DISAPPOINTED.

MISS Glanville, supposing her brother would be glad not to be interrupted in his conference with Lady Bella, did not allow any one to acquaint them with Sir George's visit; and telling the baronet her cousin was indisposed, had by these means all his conversation to herself.

Sir George, who ardently wished to see Lady Bella, protracted his visit, in hopes that he should have that satisfaction before he went away. And that fair lady, whose thoughts were a little discomposed by the despair she apprehended Mr. Glanville was in, and fearful of the consequences, when she had sat sometime after he left her, ruminating upon what had happened, quitted her closet, to go and enquire of Miss Glanville in what condition his mind seemed to be when he went away; for she never doubted but that he was gone, like Coriolanus, to seek out for some occasion to manifest his innocence.

Hearing, therefore, the voice of that lady, who was talking and laughing very loud in one of the summer-parlours, and being terrified with the apprehension that it was her brother with whom she was thus diverting herself, she opened the door of the room precipitately, and by her entrance filled Sir George with extreme pleasure; while her unexpected sight produced a quite contrary effect on Miss Glanville.

Arabella, eased of her fear that it was Mr. Glanville, who, instead of dying with despair, was giving occa-
 sion

tion for that noisy laugh of his sister, saluted the baronet with great civility; and, turning to Miss Glanville, 'I must needs chide you,' said she, 'for the insensibility with which it appears you have parted with your brother.'

'Bless me, Madam!' interrupted Miss Glanville, 'what do you mean? Whither is my brother gone?'

'That, indeed, I am quite ignorant of,' resumed Arabella; 'and I suppose he himself hardly knows what course he shall take: but he has been with you, doubtless, to take his leave.'

"Take his leave!" repeated Miss Glanville: 'has he left the castle so suddenly then, and gone away without me?'

'The enterprize upon which he is gone,' said Arabella, 'would not admit of a lady's company: and, since he has left so considerable an hostage with me as yourself, I expect he will not be long before he return, and, I hope, to the satisfaction of us both.'

Miss Glanville, who could not penetrate into the meaning of her cousin's words, began to be strangely alarmed: but presently, supposing she had a mind to divert herself with her fears, she recovered herself, and told her she would go up to her brother's chamber, and look for him.

Arabella did not offer to prevent her, being very desirous of knowing whether he had not left a letter for her upon his table, as was the custom in those cases: and, while she was gone, Sir George seized the opportunity of saying an hundred gallant things to her, which she received with great indifference; the most extravagant compliments being what she expected from all men: and provided they did not directly presume to tell her they loved her, no sort of flattery or adulation could displease her.

In the mean time, Miss Glanville having found her brother in his chamber, repeated to him what Lady Bella had said, as she supposed, to fright her.

Mr. Glanville hearing this, and that Sir George was with her, hastened to them as fast as possible, that he might interrupt the foolish stories he did not doubt she was telling.

Upon Miss Glanville's appearance

with her brother, Arabella was astonished.

'I apprehended, Sir,' said she, 'that you were some miles from the castle by this time: but your delay and indifference convince me you neither expect nor wish to find the means of being justified in my opinion.'

'Pray, cousin,' interrupted Glanville, speaking softly to her, 'let us leave this dispute to some other time.'

'No, Sir,' resumed she, aloud, 'my honour is concerned in your justification: nor is it fit I should submit to have the appearance of amity for a person who has not yet sufficiently cleared himself of a crime, with too much reason, laid to his charge. Did Coriolanus, think you, act in this manner? Ah! if he had, doubtless Cleopatra would never have pardoned him: nor will I any longer suffer you to give me repeated causes of discontent.'

Sir George, seeing confusion in Mr. Glanville's countenance, and rage in Arabella's, began to think that what he had at first took for a jest, was a serious quarrel between them, at which it was not proper he should be present; and was preparing to go, when Arabella, stopping him with a graceful action—

'If, noble stranger,' said she, 'you are so partial to the failings of a friend, that you will undertake to defend any unjustifiable action he may be guilty of, you are at liberty to depart: but if you will promise to be an unprejudiced hearer of the dispute between Mr. Glanville and myself, you shall know the adventure which has given rise to it; and will be judge of the reasonableness of the commands I have laid on him.'

'Though, Madam,' said Sir George, bowing very low to her, 'Mr. Glanville is my friend, yet there is no likelihood I shall espouse his interest against yours: and a very strong prepossession I feel in favour of you, already persuades me that I shall give sentence on your side, since you have honoured me so far as to constitute me judge of this difference.'

The solemn manner in which Sir George (who began to suspect Lady Bella's peculiar turn, spoke this, pleased her

her infinitely; while Mr. Glanville, vexed as he was, could hardly forbear laughing: when Arabella, after a look of approbation to Sir George, replied—

‘I find I have unwillingly engaged myself to more than I first intended: for, to enable you to judge clearly of the matter in dispute, it is necessary you should know my whole history.’

Mr. Glanville, at this word, not being able to constrain himself, uttered a groan of the same nature with those which are often heard in the pit at the representation of a new play. Sir George understood him perfectly well, yet seemed surprized; and Arabella, starting up—

‘Since,’ said she, ‘I have given you no new cause of complaint, pray from whence proceeds this increase of affliction?’

‘I assure you, cousin,’ answered he, ‘my affliction, if you please to term it so, increases every day, and I believe it will make me mad at last; for this unaccountable humour of yours is not to be borne.’

‘You do not seem,’ replied Arabella, ‘to be far from madness already; and if your friend here, upon hearing the passages between us, should pronounce you guilty, I shall be at a loss whether I ought to treat you as a madman, or a criminal.—Sir,’ added she, turning to Sir George, ‘you will excuse me, if, for certain reasons, I can neither give you my history myself, nor be present at the relation of it: one of my women, who is most in my confidence, shall acquaint you with all the particulars of my life; after which I expect Mr. Glanville will abide by your decision, as, I assure myself, I shall be contented to do.’

Saying this she went out of the parlour, in order to prepare Lucy for the recital she was to make.

Mr. Glanville, resolving not to be present at this new absurdity, ran out after her, and went into the garden, with a strong inclination to hate the lovely visionary who gave him such perpetual uneasiness; leaving his sister alone with the baronet, who diverted herself extremely with the thoughts of hearing her cousin’s history, assuring the baronet that he might expect something very curious in it, and find mat-

ter sufficient to laugh at; for she was the most whimsical woman in the world.

Sir George, who resolved to profit by the knowledge of her foible, made very little reply to Miss Glanville’s sneers; but waited patiently for the promised history, which was much longer coming than he imagined.

CHAP. V.

SOME CURIOUS INSTRUCTIONS FOR RELATING AN HISTORY.

ARABELLA, as soon as she left them, went up to her apartment; and calling Lucy into her closet, told her, that she had made choice of her, since she was best acquainted with her thoughts, to relate her history to her cousins, and a person of quality who was with them.

‘Sure your ladyship jests with me,’ said Lucy. ‘How can I make a history about your ladyship?’

‘There is no occasion,’ replied Arabella, ‘for you to make a history; there are accidents enough in my life to afford matter for a long one: all you have to do is to relate them as exactly as possible. You have lived with me from my childhood, and are instructed in all my adventures; so that you must be certainly very capable of executing the task I have honoured you with.’

‘Indeed,’ said Lucy, ‘I must beg your ladyship will excuse me: I never could tell how to repeat a story when I have read it; and I know it is not such simple girls as I can tell histories; it is only fit for clerks, and such sort of people, that are very learned.’

‘You are learned enough for that purpose,’ said Arabella; ‘and if you make so much difficulty in performing this part of your duty, pray how came you to imagine you were fit for my service, and the distinction I have favoured you with? Did you ever hear of any woman that refused to relate her lady’s story when desired? Therefore, if you hope to possess my favour and confidence any longer, acquit yourself handsomely of this task to which I have preferred you.’

Lucy, terrified at the displeasure she saw in her lady’s countenance, begged her to tell her what she must say.

‘Well!’

'Well!' exclaimed Arabella; 'I am certainly the most unfortunate woman in the world! Every thing happens to me in a contrary manner from any other person! Here, instead of my desiring you to soften those parts of my history where you have greatest room to flatter, and to conceal, if possible, some of those disorders my beauty has occasioned, you ask me to tell you what you must say, as if it was not necessary you should know as well as myself, and be able not only to recount all my words and actions, even the smallest and most inconsiderable, but also all my thoughts, however instantaneous; relate exactly every change of my countenance, number all my smiles, half-smiles, blushes, turnings pale, glances, pauses, full-stops, interruptions; the rise and falling of my voice, every motion of my eyes, and every gesture which I have used for these ten years past; nor omit the smallest circumstance that relates to me.'

'Lord bless me, Madam!' said Lucy, excessively astonished, 'I never, till this moment, it seems, knew the hundredth thousandth part of what was expected from me: I am sure, if I had, I would never have gone to service; for I might well know I was not fit for such slavery.'

'There is no such great slavery in doing all I have mentioned to you,' interrupted Arabella: 'it requires, indeed, a good memory, in which I never thought you deficient; for you are punctual to the greatest degree of exactness in recounting every thing one desires to hear from you.'

Lucy, whom this praise soothed into good-humour, and flattered with a belief that she was able, with a little instruction, to perform what her lady required, told her, if she pleased only to put her in a way how to tell her history, she would engage, after doing it once, to tell it again whenever she was desired.

Arabella being obliged to comply with this odd request, for which there was no precedent in all the romances her library was stuffed with, began to inform her in this manner—

'First,' said she, 'you must relate my birth, which you know is very illustrious; and because I am willing to spare you the trouble of repeating

things that are not absolutely necessary, you must apologize to your hearers for slipping over what passed in my infancy, and the first eight or ten years of my life; not failing, however, to remark, that, from some sprightly sallies of imagination, at those early years, those about me conceived marvellous hopes of my future understanding: from thence you must proceed to an accurate description of my person.'

'What, Madam!' interrupted Lucy, 'must I tell what sort of person you have, to people who have seen you but a moment ago?'

'Questionless you must,' replied Arabella; 'and herein you follow the examples of all the squires and maids who relate their masters and ladies' histories; for though it be to a brother, or near relation, who has seen them a thousand times, yet they never omit an exact account of their persons.'

'Very well, Madam,' said Lucy: 'I shall be sure not to forget that part of my story. I wish I was as perfect in all the rest.'

'Then, Lucy, you must repeat all the conversations I ever held with you upon the subjects of love and gallantry, that your audience may be so well acquainted with my humour, as to know exactly, before they are told, how I shall behave, in whatever adventures besal me.—After that, you may proceed to tell them how a noble unknown saw me at church: how prodigiously he was struck with my appearance; the tumultuous thoughts that this first view of me occasioned in his mind.'

'Indeed, Madam,' interrupted Lucy again, 'I can't pretend to tell his thoughts; for how should I know what they were? None but himself can tell that.'

'However that may be,' said Arabella, 'I expect that you should decypher all his thoughts, as plainly as he himself could do; otherwise my history will be very imperfect. Well, I suppose you are at no loss about that whole adventure, in which you yourself bore so great a share; so I need not give you any farther instructions concerning it: only you must be sure, as I said before, not to omit the least circumstance in my

'behaviour, but relate every thing I did, said, and thought, upon that occasion. The disguised gardener must appear next in your story: here you will of necessity be a little deficient, since you are not able to acquaint your hearers with his true name and quality; which, questionless, is very illustrious. However, above all, I must charge you not to mention that egregious mistake about the carp; for you know how—'

Here Miss Glanville's entrance put a stop to the instructions Lucy was receiving; for she told Arabella, that Sir George was gone.

'How!' returned she, 'is he gone? Truly I am not much obliged to him for the indifference he has shewed to hear my story.'

'Why really, Madam,' said Miss Glanville, 'neither of us expected you would be as good as your word, you were so long in sending your woman down; and my brother persuaded Sir George you were only in jest; and Sir George has carried him home to dinner.'

'And is it at Sir George's,' replied Arabella, 'that your brother hopes to meet with an occasion of clearing himself? He is either very insensible of my anger, or very conscious of his own innocence.'

Miss Glanville, having nothing to say in answer to an accusation she did not understand, changed the discourse; and the two ladies passed the rest of the day together, with tolerable good-humour on Miss Glanville's side; who was in great hopes of making a conquest of the baronet, before whom Arabella had made herself ridiculous enough: but that lady was far from being at ease; she had laid herself under a necessity of banishing Mr. Glanville, if he did not give her some convincing proof of his innocence; which, as matters stood, she thought would be very hard for him to procure; and, as she could not absolutely believe him guilty, she was concerned she had gone so far.

CHAP. VI.

A VERY HEROICK CHAPTER.

MR. Glanville, coming home in the evening, a little elevated with the wine, of which he had drank

too freely at Sir George's, being told the ladies were together, entered the room where they were sitting; and, beholding Arabella, whose pensiveness had given an enchanting softness to her face, with a look of extreme admiration—

'Upon my soul, cousin,' said he, 'if you continue to treat me so cruelly, you'll drive me mad. How I could adore you this moment,' added he, gazing passionately at her, 'if I might but hope you did not hate me!'

Arabella, who did not perceive the condition he was in, was better pleased with this address than any he had ever used; and, therefore, instead of chiding him, as she was wont, for the freedom of his expressions, she cast her bright eyes upon the ground with so charming a confusion, that Glanville, quite transported, threw himself on his knees before her; and, taking her hand, attempted to press it to his lips; but she, hastily withdrawing it—

'From whence is this new boldness?' said she, 'And what is it you would implore by that prostrate posture? I have told you already upon what conditions I will grant you my pardon. Clear yourself of being an accomplice with my designed ravisher, and I am ready to restore you to my esteem.'

'Let me perish, Madam,' returned Glanville, 'if I would not die to please you, this moment!'

'It is not your death that I require,' said she: 'and though you should never be able to justify yourself in my opinion, yet you might, haply, expiate your crime by a less punishment than death.'

'What shall I do, then, my angelick cousin?' resumed he.

'Truly,' said she, 'the sense of your offence ought so mortally to afflict you, that you should invent some strange kind of penance for yourself, severe enough to prove your penitence sincere.—You know, I suppose, what the unfortunate Orontes did, when he found he had wronged his adored Thalesiris by an injurious suspicion.'

'I wish he had hanged himself!' said Mr. Glanville, rising up in a passion, at seeing her again in her altitudes.

'And why, pray, Sir,' said Arabella, 'are you so severe upon that poor

‘poor prince; who was, haply, infinitely more innocent than yourself.’

‘Severe, Madam!’ said Glanville, fearing he had offended her. ‘Why, to be sure, he was a sad scoundrel to use his adored Thalestris as he did: and I think one cannot be too severe upon him.’

‘But,’ returned Arabella, ‘appearances were against her; and he had some shadow of reason for his jealousy and rage: then, you know, amidst all his transports, he could not be prevailed upon to draw his sword against her.’

‘What did that signify?’ said Glanville. ‘I suppose he scorned to draw his sword upon a woman: that would have been a shame indeed.’

‘That woman, Sir,’ resumed Arabella, ‘was not such a contemptible antagonist as you think her: and men as valiant, possibly, as Orontes (though, questionless, he was one of the most valiant men in the world) have been cut in pieces by the sword of that brave Amazon.’

‘Lord bless me!’ said Miss Glanville, ‘I should be afraid to look at such a terrible woman: I am sure she must be a very masculine sort of creature.’

‘You are much mistaken, Miss,’ said Arabella: ‘for Thalestris, though the most stout and courageous of her sex, was, nevertheless, a perfect beauty; and had as much harmony and softness in her looks and person, as she had courage in her heart, and strength in her blows.’

‘Indeed, Madam,’ resumed Miss Glanville, ‘you can never persuade me, that a woman who can fight, and cut people to pieces with their blows, can have any softness in her person: she must needs have very masculine hands, that could give such terrible blows; and I can have no notion of the harmony of a person’s looks, who, by what you say, must have the heart of a tyger. But, indeed, I don’t think there ever could be such a woman.’

‘What, Miss!’ interrupted Arabella: ‘do you pretend to doubt, that there ever was such a person as Thalestris, Queen of the Amazons? Does not all the world know the adventures of that illustrious princess; her

affection for the unjust Orontes, who accused her of having a scandalous intrigue with Alexander, whom she went to meet, with a very different design, upon the borders of her kingdom; the injurious letter he wrote her, upon this suspicion, made her resolve to seek for him all over the world, to give him that death he had merited, by her own hand: and it was in those rencounters that he had with her, while she was thus incensed, that he forebore to defend himself against her, though her sword was often pointed to his breast.’

‘But, Madam,’ interrupted Mr. Glanville, ‘pray what became of this queen of the Amazons? Was she not killed at the siege of Troy?’—‘She never was at the siege of Troy,’ returned Arabella: ‘but she assisted the princes who besieged Babylon, to recover the liberty of Statira and Parisates; and it was in the opposite party that she met with her faithless lover.’

‘If he was faithless, Madam,’ said Mr. Glanville, ‘he deserved to die; and I wish, with all my soul, she had cut him in pieces with that famous sword of hers that had done such wonders.’

‘Yet this faithless man,’ resumed Arabella, ‘whom you seem to have such an aversion to, gave so glorious a proof of his repentance and sorrow that the fair queen restored him to her favour, and held him in much dearer affection than ever: for, after he was convinced of her innocence, he was resolved to punish himself with a rigour equal to the fault he had been guilty of; and, retiring to the woods, abandoned for ever the society of men; dwelling in a cave, and living upon bitter herbs, passing the days and nights in continual tears and sorrow for his crime: and here he proposed to end his life, had not the fair Thalestris found him out in this solitude; and, struck with the sincerity of his repentance, pardoned him; and, as I have said before, restored him to her favour.’

‘And to shew you,’ said Glanville, ‘that I am capable of doing as much for you, I will, if you insist upon it, seek out for some cave, and do penance in it, like that Orontes, provided

‘provided you will come and fetch me out of it, as that same fair queen did him.’

‘I do not require so much of you,’ said Arabella; ‘for I told you before, that, haply, you are justified already in my opinion; but yet it is necessary, you should find out some method of convincing the world of your innocence; otherwise it is not fit I should live with you upon terms of friendship and civility.’

‘Well, well, Madam,’ said Glanville, ‘I’ll convince you of my innocence, by bringing that rascal’s head to you, whom you suspect I was inclined to assist in stealing you away.’

‘If you do that,’ resumed Arabella, ‘doubtless you will be justified in my opinion, and the world’s also; and I shall have no scruple to treat you with as much friendship as I did before.’

‘My brother is much obliged to you,’ Madam,’ interrupted Miss Glanville, ‘for putting him upon an action that would cost him his life!’

‘I have so good an opinion of your brother’s valour,’ said Arabella, ‘that I am persuaded he will find no difficulty in performing his promise; and I make no question but I shall see him covered with the spoils of that impostor, who would have betrayed me; and I flatter myself, he will be in a condition to bring me his head, as he bravely promises, without endangering his own life.’

‘Does your ladyship consider,’ said Miss Glanville, ‘that my brother can take away no person’s life whatever, without endangering his own?’

‘I consider, Madam,’ said Arabella, ‘your brother as a man possessed of virtue and courage enough to undertake to kill all my enemies and persecutors, though I had ever so many; and I presume he would be able to perform as many glorious actions for my service, as either Juba, Cæsario, Artamenes, or Artaban, who, though not a prince, was greater than any of them.’

‘If those persons you have named,’ said Miss Glanville, ‘were murderers, and made a practice of killing people, I hope my brother will be too wise to follow their examples: a strange kind of virtue and courage, indeed, to take away the lives of one’s fel-

low-creatures! How did such wretches escape the gallows, I wonder?’

‘I perceive,’ interrupted Arabella, ‘what kind of apprehensions you have; I suppose you think, if your brother was to kill my enemy, the law would punish him for it; but pray undeceive yourself, Miss: the law has no power over heroes; they may kill as many men as they please, without being called to any account for it; and the more lives they take away, the greater is their reputation for virtue and glory. The illustrious Artaban, from the condition of a private man, raised himself to the sublimest pitch of glory by his valour; for he not only would win half a dozen battles in a day; but, to shew that victory followed him wherever he went, he would change parties, and immediately the vanquished became conquerors; then, returning to the side he had quitted, changed the laurels of his former friends into chains. He made nothing of tumbling kings from their thrones, and giving away half a dozen crowns in a morning; for his generosity was equal to his courage; and to this height of power did he raise himself by his sword. Beginning at first with petty conquests, and not disdain- ing to oppose his glorious arm to sometimes less than a score of his enemies; so, by degrees, enuring himself to conquer inconsiderable numbers, he came at last to be the terror of whole armies, who would fly at the sight of his single sword.’

‘This is all very astonishing, indeed,’ said Miss Glanville: ‘however, I must intreat you not to insist upon my brother’s quarrelling and fighting with people, since it will be neither for your honour, nor his safety; for I am afraid, if he was to commit murder to please you, the laws would make him suffer for it; and the world would be very free with it’s censures on your ladyship’s reputation, for putting him upon such shocking crimes.’

‘By your discourse, Miss,’ replied Arabella, ‘one would imagine you knew as little in what the good reputation of a lady consists, as the safety of a man; for certainly the one depends entirely upon his sword, and the other upon the noise and bustle she makes in the world. The blood

‘ blood that is shed for a lady enhances the value of her charms; and the more men a hero kills, the greater his glory, and, by consequence, the more secure he is. If to be the cause of a great many deaths can make a lady infamous, certainly none were ever more so than Mândana, Cleopatra, and Statira, the most illustrious names in antiquity; for each of whom, haply, an hundred thousand men were killed; yet none were ever so unjust as to profane the virtue of those divine beauties, by casting any censures upon them for these glorious effects of their charms, and the heroick valour of their admirers.’

‘ I must confess,’ interrupted Miss Glanville, ‘ I should not be sorry to have a duel or two fought for me in Hyde Park; but then I would not have any blood shed for the world.’

Glanville here interrupting his sister with a laugh, Arabella also could not forbear smiling at the harmless kind of combats her cousin was fond of.

But to put an end to the conversation, and the dispute which gave rise to it, she obliged Mr. Glanville to promise to fight with the impostor Edward, whenever he found him; and either take away his life, or force him to confess, he had no part in the design he had meditated against her.

This being agreed upon, Arabella, conducting Miss Glanville to her chamber, retired to her own; and passed the night with much greater tranquillity, than she had done the preceding; being satisfied with the care she had taken of her own glory, and persuaded that Glanville was not unfaithful; a circumstance that was of more consequence to her happiness than she was yet aware of.

CHAP. VII.

IN WHICH OUR HEROINE IS SUSPECTED OF INSENSIBILITY.

WHILE these things passed at the castle, Sir George was meditating on the means he should use to acquire the esteem of Lady Bella, of whose person he was a little enamoured, but of her fortune a great deal more.

By the observations he had made on

her behaviour, he discovered her peculiar turn; he was well read in romances himself, and had actually employed himself some weeks in giving a new version of the Grand Cyrus; but the prodigious length of the task he had undertaken, terrified him so much that he gave it over: nevertheless, he was perfectly well acquainted with the chief characters in most of the French romances; could tell every thing that was borrowed from them in all the new novels that came out; and, being a very accurate critick, and a mortal hater of Dryden, ridiculed him for want of invention, as it appeared by his having recourse to these books for the most shining characters and incidents in his plays. Almanzor, he would say, was the copy of the famous Artaban in Cleopatra, whose exploits Arabella had expatiated upon to Miss Glanville and her brother: his admired character of Melantha in Marriage A-la-mode, was drawn from Berrisa in the Grand Cyrus; and the story of Osmyn and Bensayda, in his Conquest of Grenada, taken from Sefostris and Timerilla in that romance.

Fraught, therefore, with the knowledge of all the extravagances and peculiarities in those books, he resolved to make his addresses to Arabella in the form they prescribed; and, not having delicacy enough to be disgusted with the ridicule in her character, served himself with her foible to effect his designs.

It being necessary, in order to his better acquaintance with Arabella, to be upon very friendly terms with Miss Glanville and her brother, he said a thousand gallant things to the one, and seemed so little offended with the gloom he observed upon the countenance of the other, who positively assured him, that Arabella meant only to laugh at him, when she promised him her history, that he intreated him with the most obliging earnestness, to favour him with his company at his house, where he omitted no sort of civility, to confirm their friendship and intimacy; and persuaded him, by several little and seemingly unguarded expressions, that he was not so great an admirer of Lady Bella, as her agreeable cousin Miss Glanville.

Having thus secured a footing in the castle, he furnished his memory with

all the necessary rules of making love in Arabella's taste, and deferred her next visit no longer than till the following day; but Mr. Glanville being indisposed, and not able to see company, he knew it would be in vain to expect to see Arabella, since it was not to be imagined Miss Glanville could admit of a visit, her brother being ill; and Lady Bella must be also necessarily engaged with her.

Contenting himself, therefore, with having enquired after the health of the two ladies, he returned home, not a little vexed at his disappointment.

Mr. Glanville's indisposition increasing every day, grew at last dangerous enough to fill his sister with extreme apprehensions. Arabella, keeping up to her forms, sent regularly every day to enquire after his health; but did not offer to go into his chamber, though Miss Glanville was almost always there.

As she conceived his sickness to be occasioned by the violence of his passion for her, she expected some overture should be made her by his sister, to engage her to make him a visit; such a favour being never granted by any lady to a sick lover, till she was previously informed her presence was necessary to hinder the increase of his distemper.

Miss Glanville would not have failed to represent to her cousin the incivility and carelessness of her behaviour, in not deigning to come and see her brother in his indisposition, had not Mr. Glanville, imputing this neglect to the nicety of her notions, which he had upon other occasions experienced, absolutely forbid her to say any thing to her cousin upon this subject.

Miss Glanville being thus forced to silence, by the fear of giving her brother uneasiness, Arabella was extremely disappointed to find, that, in five days illness, no application had been made to her, either by the sick lover, or his sister, who she thought interested herself too little in his recovery; so that her glory obliging her to lay some constraint upon herself, she behaved with a coolness and insensibility, that increased Miss Glanville's aversion to her, while, in reality, she was extremely concerned for her cousin's illness; but not supposing it dangerous, since they had not recourse to the usual re-

medy of beseeching a visit from the person whose presence was alone able to work a cure, she resolved to wait patiently the event.

However, she never failed in her respect to Miss Glanville, whom she visited every morning before she went to her brother; and also constantly dined with her in her own apartment, enquiring always, with great sweetness, concerning her brother's health; when perceiving her in tears one day as she came in, as usual, to dine with her, she was extremely alarmed; and asked with great precipitation if Mr. Glanville was worse.

'He is so bad,' Madam, returned Miss Glanville, 'that I believe it will be necessary to send for my papa, for I fear he should die, and he not see him.'

'Die, Miss!' interrupted Arabella eagerly: 'No, he must not die; and I shall not, if the pity of Arabella is powerful enough to make him live. Let us go then, cousin,' said she, her eyes streaming with tears; 'let us go and visit this dear brother, whom you lament: haply my sight may repair the evils my rigour has caused him; and since, as I imagine, he has forborne, through the profound respect he has for me, to request the favour of a visit, I will voluntarily bestow it on him, as well for the affection I bear you, as because I do not wish his death.'

'You do not wish his death, Madam!' said Miss Glanville, excessively angry at a speech, in her opinion, extremely insolent. 'Is it such a mighty favour, pray, not to wish the death of my brother, who never injured you? I am sure your behaviour has been so extremely inhuman, that I have repented a thousand times we ever came to the castle.'

'Let us not waste the time in idle reproaches,' said Arabella: 'if my rigour has brought your brother into this condition, my compassion can draw him out of it; it is no more than what all do suffer, who are possessed of a violent passion; and few lovers ever arrive to the possession of their mistresses, without being several times brought almost to their graves, either by their severity, or some other cause; but nothing is more easy than to work a cure in these cases; for the very





very sight of the person beloved sometimes does it, as it happened to Artamenes, when the divine Mandana condescended to visit him: a few kind words spoken by the fair princess of Persia to Oroondates, recalled him from the gates of death; and one line from Parisatis's hand, which brought a command to Lysimachus to live, made him not only resolve, but even able, to obey her.

Miss Glanville, quite out of patience at this tedious harangue, without any regard to ceremony, flounced out of the room, and ran to her brother's chamber, followed by Arabella, who imputed her rude haste to a suspicion that her brother was worse.

CHAP. VIII.

BY WHICH WE HOPE THE READER
WILL BE DIFFERENTLY AFFECTED.

AT their entrance into the room, Miss Glanville enquired of the physician, just going out, how he found her brother; who replied, that his fever was increased since last night, and that it would not (seeing Arabella preparing to go to his bedside) be proper to disturb him.

Saying this, he bowed, and went out; and Miss Glanville repeating what the physician had said, begged her to defer speaking to him till another time.

'I know,' said she, 'that he apprehends the sight of me will cause so many tumultuous motions in the soul of his patient, as may prove prejudicial to him: nevertheless, since his disorder is, questionless, more in his mind than body, I may prove, haply, a better physician than he; since I am more likely than he, to cure an illness I have caused.'

Saying this, she walked up to Mr. Glanville's bed-side, who, seeing her, thanked her with a weak voice, for coming to see him; assuring her, he was very sensible of the favour she did him—

'You must not,' said she, blushing, 'thank me too much, lest I think the favour I have done you is really of more consequence than I imagined, since it merits so many acknowledgments. Your physician tells us,

'that your life is in danger; but I persuade myself you will value it so much from this moment, that you will not protract your cure any longer.'

'Are you mad, Madam,' whispered Miss Glanville, who stood behind her, 'to tell my brother that the physician says he is in danger? I suppose you really wish he may die, or you would not talk so.'

'If,' answered she, whispering again to Miss Glanville, 'you are not satisfied with what I have already done for your brother, I will go as far as modesty will permit me; and gently pulling open the curtains—

'Glanville,' said she, with a voice too much raised for a sick person's ear, 'I grant to your sister's solicitations, what the fair Statira did to an interest yet more powerful, since, as you know it was her own brother who pleaded in favour of the dying Orontes; therefore, considering you in a condition haply no less dangerous than that of that passionate prince, I condescend, like her, to tell you that I do not wish your death; that I entreat you to live; and, lastly, by all the power I have over you, I command you to recover.'

Ending these words, she closed the curtain, that her transported lover might not see her blushes and confusion, which were so great, that, to conceal them, even from Miss Glanville, she hurried out of the room, and retired to her own apartment, expecting, in a little time, to receive a billet, under the sick man's hand, importing, that in obedience to her commands, he was recovered, and ready to throw himself at her feet, to thank her for that life she had bestowed upon him, and to dedicate the remains of it to her service.

Miss Glanville, who staid behind her, in a strange surprize at her ridiculous behaviour, though she longed to know what her brother thought of it, finding he continued silent, would not disturb him. The shame he conceived at hearing so absurd a speech from a woman he passionately loved, and the desire he had not to hear his sister's sentiments upon it, made him counterfeit sleep to avoid any discourse with her upon so disagreeable a subject.

That day his fever increased; and the next, the physician pronouncing

him in great danger, a messenger was dispatched to town, to hasten the coming of Sir Charles; and poor Miss Glanville was quite inconsolable, under the apprehensions of losing him.

Arabella, not to derogate from her character, affected great firmness of mind upon this occasion; she used the most persuasive eloquence to moderate her cousin's affliction, and caused all imaginable care to be taken of Mr. Glanville; while any one was present, her looks discovered only a calm and decent sorrow; yet when she was alone, or had only her dear Lucy with her, she gave free vent to her tears; and discovered a grief for Mr. Glanville's illness, little different from that she had felt for her father's.

As she now visited him constantly every day, she took an opportunity, when she was alone by his bed-side, to chide him for his disobedience, in not recovering, as she had commanded him.

'Dear cousin,' answered he, faintly, 'Can you imagine health is not my choice? And do you think I would suffer these pains if I could possibly ease myself of them?'

'Those pains,' replied Arabella, mistaking his complaint, 'ought to have ceased when the cause of them did; and when I was no longer rigorous, you ought no longer to have suffered: but tell me, since you are, questionless, one of the strangest men in the world, and the hardest to be comforted; nay, and I may add, the most disobedient of all that ever wore the fetters of love; tell me, I say, what must I do to content you?'

'If I live, cousin,' said Glanville—

'Nay,' interrupted Arabella, 'since my empire over you is not so absolute as I thought; and since you think fit to reserve to yourself the liberty of dying, contrary to my desire; I think I had better resolve not to make any treaty with you: however, as I have gone thus far, I will do something more; and tell you, since I have commanded you to live, I will also permit you to love me, in order to make the life I have bestowed on you, worthy your acceptance. Make me no reply,' said she, putting her hand on his mouth; 'but begin from this moment to obey me.'

Saying this, she went out of the room—

A few hours after, his fever being come to a height, he grew delirious, and talked very wildly; but a favourable crisis ensuing, he fell into a sound and quiet sleep, and continued in it for several hours: upon his waking, the physician declared, his fever was greatly abated; and the next morning pronounced him out of danger—

Miss Glanville, transported with joy, ran to Lady Bella, and informed her of this good news; but as she did not make her the acknowledgments she expected, for being the cause of his recovery, she behaved with more reserve than Miss Glanville thought was necessary; which renewed her former disgusts; yet, dreading to displease her brother, she concealed it from the observation of her cousin.

Arabella, being desirous of completing her lover's cure by some more favourable expressions, went to his chamber, accompanied by Miss Glanville.

'I see,' said she, approaching to his bed-side, with an enchanting smile, 'that you know how to be obedient, when you please; and I begin to know, by the price you set upon your obedience, that small favours will not content you.'

'Indeed, my dearest cousin,' said Glanville, who had found her more interested in his recovery than he expected, 'you have been very obliging, and I will always most gratefully own it.'

'I am glad,' interrupted Arabella, 'that gratitude is not banished from all your family; and that that person in it, for whom I have the most sensibility, is not entirely divested of it.'

'I hope,' said Mr. Glanville, 'my sister has given you no cause to complain of her.'

'Indeed but she has,' replied Arabella; 'for, notwithstanding she is obliged to me for the life of a brother, whom questionless she loves very well, nevertheless, she did not deign to make me the least acknowledgment for what I have done in your favour: however, Glanville, provided you continue to observe that respect and fidelity towards me, which I have reason to hope for from you, your condition

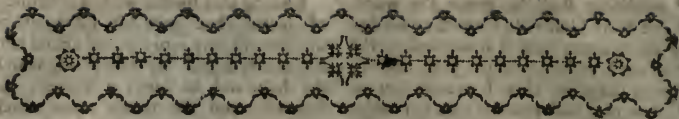
‘condition shall be never the worse for Miss Glanville’s unacknowledging temper; and I now confirm the grant I yesterday made you, and repeat it again; that I permit you to love me, and promise you not to be displeased at any testimonies you will give me of your passion, provided you serve me with an inviolable fidelity.’

‘But, Madam,’ returned Mr. Glanville, ‘to make my happiness complete, you must also promise to love me; or else what signifies the permission you give me to love you?’

‘You are almost as unacknowledging as your sister,’ resumed Arabella, blushing; ‘and if your health was perfectly re-established, questionless, I should chide you for your presumption; but since something must be allowed to sick persons, whose reason, one may suppose, is weakened by their indisposition, I will pardon your indiscretion at this time, and counsel you to wait patiently for what Heaven will determine in your favour: therefore endeavour to merit my affection by your respect, fidelity, and services; and hope from my justice whatever it ought to bestow.’

Ending this speech with a solemnity of accent that gave Mr. Glanville to understand, any reply would offend her, he silently kissed her fair hand, which she held out to him; a favour, his sickness, and the terms upon which they now were, gave him a right to expect—And, finishing her visit for that time, left him to his repose; being extremely pleased at the prospect of his recovery, and very well satisfied at having so gracefully got over so great a difficulty, as that of giving him permission to love her; for by the laws of romance, when a lady has once given her lover that permission, she may lawfully allow him to talk to her upon the subject of his passion, accept all his gallantries, and claim an absolute empire over all his actions; reserving to herself the right of fixing the time when she may own her affection: and when that important step is taken, and his constancy put to a few years more trial, when he has killed all his rivals, and rescued her from a thousand dangers; the at last condescends to reward him with her hand; and all her adventures are at an end for the future,

END OF THE THIRD BOOK.



THE FEMALE QUIXOTE.

BOOK IV.

CHAP. I.

IN WHICH OUR HEROINE DISCOVERS HER KNOWLEDGE IN ASTRONOMY.



SIR George, who had never missed a day, during Mr. Glanville's illness, in sending to the castle, now he was able to see company, visited him very frequently; and sometimes had the happiness to meet with Arabella in his chamber: but knowing the conditions of her father's will, and Mr. Glanville's pretensions, he was obliged to lay so much constraint upon himself, in the presence of Miss Glanville, and her brother, that he hardly durst trust his eyes, to express his admiration of her, for fear of alarming them with any suspicion of his designs: however, he did not fail to recommend himself to her esteem, by a behaviour to her full of the most perfect respect; and very often, ere he was aware, uttered some of the extravagant compliments that the gallants in the French romances use to their mistresses.

If he walked with her in the gardens, he would observe, that the flowers, which were before languishing and pale, bloomed with fresh beauty at her approach; that the sun shined out with double brightness, to exceed, if possible the lustre of her eyes; and that the wind, fond of kissing her celestial

countenance, played with her fair hair; and, by gentle murmurs, declared it's happiness.

If Miss Glanville happened to be present, when he talked to her in this strain, she would suppose he was ridiculing her cousin's fantastical turn; and when she had an opportunity of speaking to him alone, would chide him, with a great deal of good-humour, for giving her so much diversion at her cousin's expence.

Sir George, improving this hint, persuaded Miss Glanville by his answers, that he really laughed at Arabella; and, being now less fearful of giving any suspicion to the gay coquet, since she assisted him to deceive her, he applied himself, with more assiduity than ever, to insinuate himself into Arabella's favour.

However, the necessity he was under of being always of Arabella's opinion, sometimes drew him into little difficulties with Miss Glanville. Knowing that young lady was extremely fond of scandal, he told her, as a most agreeable piece of news, one afternoon when he was there, that he had seen Miss Groves, who, he supposed, had come into the country upon the same account as she had done a twelve-month before: her marriage being yet a secret, the complaisant baronet threw out an hint or two concerning the familiarity and correspondence there was between her and the gentleman to whom she was really secretly married.

Miss Glanville, making the most of this

this intelligence, said a thousand severe things against the unfortunate Miss Groves; which Arabella, always benevolent and kind, could not bear.

‘I persuade myself,’ said she to her cousin, ‘that you have been misinformed concerning this beauty, whose misfortunes you aggravate by your cruel censures; and whoever has given you the history of her life, has, haply, done it with great injustice.’

‘Why, Madam,’ interrupted Miss Glanville, ‘do you think you are better acquainted with her history, as you call it, who have never been in town, where her follies made her so remarkable, than persons who were eye-witnesses of all her ridiculous actions?’

‘I apprehend,’ said Arabella, ‘that I, who have had a relation made to me of all the passages of her life, and have been told all her most secret thoughts, may know as much, if not more, than persons who have lived in the same place with her, and have not had that advantage; and I think I know enough to vindicate her from many cruel aspersions.’

‘Pray, Madam,’ returned Miss Glanville, ‘will your ladyship pretend to defend her scandalous commerce with Mr. L——?’

‘I know not, Miss,’ said Arabella, ‘why you call her intercourse with that perjured man by so unjust an epithet. If Miss Groves be unchaste, so was the renowned Cleopatra, whose marriage with Julius Cæsar is controverted to this day?’

‘And what reasons, Madam,’ said Miss Glanville, ‘have you for supposing Miss Groves was married to Mr. L——, since all the world knows to the contrary?’

‘Very sufficient ones,’ said Arabella; ‘since it is hardly possible to suppose, a young lady of Miss Groves’s quality would stain the lustre of her descent by so shameful an intrigue; and also, since there are examples enough to be found of persons, who suffered under the same unhappy circumstances as herself, yet were perfectly innocent, as was that great queen I have mentioned—who questionless, you, Sir, are sufficiently convinced, was married to that illustrious conqueror; who, by betray-

ing so great and so fair a queen, in a great measure tarnished the glory of his laurels.’

‘Married, Madam!’ replied Sir George, ‘Who presumes to say, that fair queen was not married to that illustrious conqueror?’

‘Nay, you know, Sir,’ interrupted Arabella, ‘many people did say, even while she was living, that she was not married; and have branded her memory with infamous calumnies, upon account of the son she had by Cæsar, the brave Cæsario, who, under the name of Cleomedon, performed such miracles of valour in Ethiopia.’

‘I assure you, Madam,’ said Sir George, ‘I was always a great admirer of the famous Cleomedon, who was certainly the greatest hero in the world.’

‘Pardon me, Sir,’ said Arabella; ‘Cleomedon was, questionless, a very valiant man; but he, and all the heroes that ever were, must give place to the unequalled Prince of Mauritania; that illustrious, and for a long time unfortunate, lover of the divine Cleopatra, who was daughter, as you questionless know, of the great queen we have been speaking of.’

‘Dear heart!’ said Miss Glanville, ‘what is all this to the purpose? I would fain know, whether Sir George believes Miss Groves was ever married to Mr. L——.’

‘Doubtless, I do,’ said he; ‘for, as Lady Bella says, she is in the same unhappy circumstance with the great Cleopatra; and if Julius Cæsar could be guilty of denying his marriage with that queen, I see no reason to suppose, why Mr. L—— might not be guilty of the same kind of injustice.’

‘So then,’ interrupted Miss Glanville, reddening with spite, ‘you will really offer to maintain, that Miss Groves was married? Ridiculous! how such a report would be laughed at in London!’

‘I assure you,’ replied Arabella, ‘if ever I go to London, I shall not scruple to maintain that opinion to every one, who will mention that fair-one to me; and use all my endeavours to confirm them in it.’

‘Your ladyship would do well,’ said Miss Glanville, ‘to persuade people that

‘ that Miss Groves, at fifteen, did not want to run away with her writing-master.’

‘ As I am persuaded myself,’ said Arabella, ‘ that writing-master was some noble stranger in disguise, who was passionately in love with her, I shall not suffer any body in my hearing to propagate such an unlikely story; but since he was a person worthy of her affection, if she had run away with him, her fault was not without example, and even excuse.— You know what the fair Artemisa did for Alexander, Sir,’ pursued she, turning to Sir George. ‘ I would fain know your sentiments upon the action of that princess, which some have not scrupled to condemn.’

‘ Whoever they are, Madam,’ said Sir George, ‘ who condemn the fair Artemisa for what she did for Alexander, are misereants and slanderers; and though that beautiful princess has been dead more than two thousand years, I would draw my sword in defence of her character, against all who should presume, in my presence, to cast any censures upon it.’

‘ Since you are so courageous,’ said Miss Glanville, laughing excessively at this folly, which she thought was to ridicule her cousin, ‘ it is to be hoped you will defend a living lady’s character, who may thank you for it, and make the world believe that her correspondence with Mr. L—— was entirely innocent, and that she never had any design to run away with her writing-master.’

‘ Are you resolved, cousin,’ said Lady Bella, ‘ to persist in that ridiculous mistake, and take a nobleman for a writing-master only because his love put him upon such a stratagem to obtain his mistress?’

‘ Indeed, Lady Bella,’ said Miss Glanville, smiling, ‘ you may as well persuade me the moon is made of a cream-cheese, as that any nobleman turned himself into a writing-master to obtain Miss Groves.’

‘ Is it possible, Miss,’ said Arabella, ‘ that you can offer such an affront to my understanding, as to suppose I would argue upon such a ridiculous system, and compare the second glorious luminary of the Heavens to so unworthy a resemblance? I have taken some pains to contemplate the

‘ heavenly bodies; and by reading and observation, am able to comprehend some part of their excellence; therefore it is not proable I should descend to such trivial comparisons, and liken a planet, which haply is not much less than our earth, to a thing so inconsiderable as that you name.’

‘ Pardon me, dear cousin,’ interrupted Miss Glanville, laughing louder than before, ‘ if I divert myself a little with the extravagance of your notions. Really, I think you have no reason to be angry if I supposed you might make a comparison between the moon and a cream-cheese, since you say that same moon, which don’t appear broader than your gardener’s face, is not much less than the whole world. Why, certainly, I have more reason to trust my own eyes than such whimsical notions as these.’

Arabella, unwilling to expose her cousin’s ignorance by a longer dispute upon this subject, begged her to let it drop for the present; and, turning to Sir George, ‘ I am very glad,’ said she, ‘ that having always had some inclination to excuse, and even defend, the flight of Artemisa with Alexander, my opinion is warranted by that of a person so generous as yourself: indeed, when we consider that this princess forsook her brother’s dominions, and fled away with a lover whom she did not hate; questionless, her enemies accuse her, with some appearance of reason, of too great imbecility.’

‘ But, Madam,’ replied Sir George, ‘ her enemies will not take the pains to examine her reasons for this conduct.’

‘ True, Sir,’ resumed Arabella; ‘ for she was in danger of seeing a prince, who loved her, put to a cruel and infamous death upon a publick scaffold; and she did not resolve to fly with him, till all her tears and prayers were found ineffectual to move the king her brother to mercy.’

‘ Though,’ replied Sir George, ‘ I am extremely angry with the indiscreet Cepio, who discovered Alexander to the Armenian king; yet what does your ladyship think of that gallant action of his, when he saw him upon the scaffold, and the executioner ready to cut off his head? How brave it was of him to pass undauntedly through

‘through the prodigious number of
‘guards that invironed the scaffold;
‘and, with his drawn sword, run the
‘executioner through the body, in the
‘sight of them all! Then giving the
‘prince another sword, engage more
‘than two thousand men in his de-
‘fence!’

‘Questionless,’ replied Arabella, ‘it
‘was a glorious action; and when I
‘think how the king of Armenia was
‘enraged to see such a multitude of
‘soldiers fly from the swords of two
‘men, I cannot chuse but divert my-
‘self with the consternation he was in:
‘yet that was nothing to the horrible
‘despair which tormented him after-
‘wards, when he found that Alexan-
‘der, after being again taken and im-
‘prisoned, had broken his chains, and
‘carried away with him the princess
‘Artemisa his sister.’

CHAP. II.

IN WHICH A VERY PLEASING CON-
VERSATION IS LEFT UNFINISHED.

AS Arabella was in this part of her
discourse, a servant came to in-
form her that Sir Charles Glanville was
just alighted. Upon which Miss Glan-
ville flew to receive her father; and Ara-
bella, walking a little slower after her,
gave Sir George an opportunity of hold-
ing a little longer conversation with her.

‘I dare believe, Madam,’ said he,
‘when you read the story of the un-
‘fortunate Alexander, your fair eyes
‘did not refuse to shed some tears at
‘the barbarous and shameful death he
‘was going to suffer: yet I assure you,
‘melancholy as his situation was, it
‘was also very glorious for him, since
‘he had the sublime satisfaction of dy-
‘ing for the person he adored; and had
‘the ravishing pleasure to know, that
‘his fate would draw tears from that
‘lovely princess for whom he sacrificed
‘his life: such a condition, Madam,
‘ought to be envied rather than pitied;
‘for, next to the happiness of possessing
‘the person one adores, certainly the
‘glory of dying for her is most to be
‘coveted.’

Arabella, pleasingly surprized to hear
language so conformable to her own
ideas, looked for a moment upon the
baronet with a most enchanting com-
placency in her eyes.

‘It must be confessed, Sir,’ says she,
‘that you speak very rationally upon
‘these matters; and by the tenderness
‘and generosity of your sentiments,
‘you give me cause to believe that your
‘heart is prepossessed with some object
‘worthy of inspiring them.’

Sir George seeming as if he strug-
gled to suppress a sigh, ‘You are in
‘the right, Madam,’ said he, ‘to sup-
‘pose, that if my heart be prepossessed
‘with any object, it is with one who
‘is capable of inspiring a very sublime
‘passion; and I assure you, if ever it
‘submits to any fetters, they shall be
‘imposed on me by the fairest person
‘in the world.’

‘Since love is not voluntary,’ re-
plied Arabella, smiling, ‘it may hap-
‘pen that your heart may be surprized
‘by a meaner beauty than such a one
‘as you describe: however, as a lover
‘has always an extraordinary parti-
‘cality for the beloved object, it is pro-
‘bable what you say may come to
‘pass; and you may be in love with
‘the fairest person in the world, in
‘your own opinion.’

They were now so near the house,
that Sir George could reply no other
ways than by a very passionate glance,
which Arabella did not observe, being
in haste to pay her respects to her un-
cle, whom she met just going to Mr.
Glanville. Her looks were directed to
him. Sir Charles saluting her with
great affection, they all went into Mr.
Glanville’s chamber, who received his
father with the utmost respect and ten-
derness; extremely regretting the trou-
ble he had been at in taking a journey
to the castle upon his account; and
gently blaming his sister for her pre-
cipitancy in alarming him so soon.

Sir Charles, extremely overjoyed to
find him so well recovered, would not
allow him to blame Miss Glanville for
what she had done; but, addressing him-
self to his niece, he thanked her for
the care she had taken of Mr. Glan-
ville, in very obliging terms.

Arabella could not help blushing at
her uncle’s compliment, supposing he
thanked her for having restored her
cousin to his health.

‘I assure you, Sir,’ said she, ‘Mr.
‘Glanville is less obliged to my com-
‘mands, than to the goodness of his
‘constitution, for his recovery; and
‘herein he was not so obedient as many
‘persons I could name to him.’

Mr. Glanville, willing to prevent the company's observation upon this speech, began to acquaint his father with the rise and progress of his distemper: but though the old gentleman listened with great attention to his son while he was speaking, yet not having lost a word of what Arabella had said, as soon as he was done, he turned to his niece, and asked her how she could be so unjust to accuse his son of disobedience, because he did not recover when she commanded him. 'Why, Madam,' added he, 'you want to carry your power farther than ever any beauty did before you; since you pretend to make people sick and well whenever you please.'

'Really, Sir,' replied Arabella, 'I pretend to no more power than what I presume all others of my sex have upon the like occasions; and since nothing is more common than for a gentleman, though ever so sick, to recover in obedience to the commands of that person who has an absolute power over his life, I conceive I have a right to think myself injured, if Mr. Glanville, contrary to mine, had thought proper to die.'

'Since,' said the old gentleman, smiling, 'my son has so well obeyed your commands in recovering his health, I shall tremble, lest, in obedience to a contrary command of yours, he should die, and deprive me of an heir; a misfortune, which, if it should happen, I should place to your account.'

'I assure you, Sir,' said Arabella, very gravely, 'I have too great an esteem for Mr. Glanville to condemn him to so severe a punishment as death for light offences; and since it is not very probable that he will ever commit such crimes against me, as can be only expiated by his death, such as infidelity, disobedience, and the like, you have no reason to fear such a misfortune by my means.'

'Alas!' replied Sir George, 'you beauties make very nice distinctions in these cases; and think, if you do not directly command your lovers to die, you are no ways accountable for their death: and when a lover, as it often happens, dies through despair of ever being able to make himself beloved; or, being doomed to banishment or silence, falls into a fever,

from which nothing but kindness can recover him; and that being denied, he patiently expires: I say, when these things happen, as they certainly do every day, how can you hold yourselves guiltless of their deaths, which are apparently occasioned either by your scorn or insensibility.'

Sir Charles and Miss Glanville were extremely diverted at this speech of Sir George's; and Mr. Glanville, though he would have wished he had been railing any other person's follies than his cousin's, yet could not help smiling at the solemn accent in which he delivered himself.

Arabella, mightily pleased with his manner of talking, was resolved to furnish him with more occasions of diverting the company at her expence.

'I see,' answered she, 'you are one of those persons who call a just decorum, which all ladies, who love glory as they ought to do, are obliged to preserve, by the name of severity: but, pray, what would you have a lady do, whom an importunate lover presumes to declare his passion to?—You know it is not permitted us to listen to such discourses; and you know also, whoever is guilty of such an offence, merits a most rigorous punishment: moreover, you find, that when a sentence of banishment or silence is pronounced upon them, these unhappy criminals are so conscious of the justice of their doom, that they never murmur against their judge who condemns them; and therefore, whatever are their fates in consequence of that anger they have incurred, the ladies, thus offended, ought not to be charged with it as any cruel exertion of their power.'

'Such eloquence as yours, Madam,' replied Sir George, 'might defend things yet more unjustifiable: however, you must give me leave, as being interested in the safety of my sex, still to be of opinion, that no man ought to be hated because he adores a beautiful object, and consecrates all his moments to her service.'

'Questionless,' resumed Arabella, 'he will not be hated, while, out of the respect and reverence he bears her, he carefully conceals his passion from her knowledge; but as soon as ever he breaks through the bounds which that respect prescribes him, and

and lets her understand his true sentiments, he has reason to expect a most rigorous sentence, since he certainly, by that presumption, has greatly deserved it.

‘If the ladies,’ replied Sir George, ‘were more equitable, and would make some distinction between those who really love them in a passionate and respectful silence, and others who do not feel the power of their charms, they might spare themselves the trouble of hearing what so mortally offends them: but when a lady sees a man every day, who by his looks, sighs, and solicitude to please her, by his numberless services, and constant attendance of her, makes it evident that his soul is possessed with a violent passion for her; I say, when a lady sees, and yet will not see, all this, and persists in using a passionate adorer with all the indifference due to a man wholly insensible of the power of her charms; what must he do in such a mortifying situation, but make known his torments to her that occasions them, in order to prevail upon her to have some sense of what he does and feels hourly for her sake?’

‘But since he gains nothing by the discovery of his passion,’ resumed Arabella, ‘but, on the contrary, loses the advantages he was before possessed of, which were very great, since he might see and discourse with his mistresses every day, and haply have the honour to do her a great many petty services, and receive some of her commands; all these advantages he loses when he declares he loves: and, truly, I think a man who is so unwise as to hazard a certain happiness for a very improbable hope, deserves to be punished, as well for his folly as presumption; and, upon both these accounts, banishment is not too rigorous a sentence.’

CHAP. III.

DEFINITION OF LOVE AND BEAUTY
—THE NECESSARY QUALITIES
OF A HERO AND HEROINE.

‘**T**HOUGH,’ replied Mr. Glanville, ‘you are very severe in the treatment you think it necessary our sex should receive from yours;

yet I wish some of our town-beauties were, if not altogether of your opinion, yet sufficiently so as to make it not a slavery for a man to be in their company; for unless one talks of love to these fair coquets the whole time one is with them, they are quite displeased, and look upon a man who can think any thing, but themselves, worthy his thoughts or observation, with the utmost contempt.—How often have you and I, Sir George,’ pursued he, ‘pitied the condition of the few men of sense, who are sometimes among the crowd of beaux who attend the two celebrated beauties to all places of polite diversion in town? For those ladies think it a mortal injury done to their charms, if the men about them have eyes or ears for any object but their faces, or any sound but that of their voices: so that the connoisseurs in musick, who attend them to Ranelagh, must stop their ears, like Ulysses, when the syren Frasi sings; and the wits who gallant them to the side-box, must lay a much greater constraint upon themselves, in order to resist the soul-moving Garrick, and appear insensible while he is upon the stage.’

‘Upon my soul,’ added Sir George, (forgetting the character he assumed) ‘when I have seen some persons of my acquaintance talking to the eldest of these ladies, while one of Congreve’s comedies has been acting; his face quite turned from the stage, and hers overspread with an eternal smile; her fine eyes sometimes lifted up in a beautiful surprize, and a little enchanting giggle half-hid with her fan; in spite of their inattention, I have been ready to imagine, he was entertaining her with remarks upon the play, which she was judicious enough to understand; and yet I have afterwards been informed by himself, that nothing was less in their thoughts; and all that variety in her face, and that extreme seeming earnestness in his discourse, was occasioned by the most trifling subjects imaginable; he perhaps had been telling her, how the sight of her squirrel, which peeped out of her pocket, surprized some ladies she was visiting; and what they said upon her fondness for it, when she was gone; blaming them at the same time for their want of delicacy,

'delicacy, in not knowing how to set a right value upon such pleasing animals: hence proceeded her smiles, the lifting up of her eyes, the half-stifled laugh, and all the pretty gestures that appeared so wonderfully charming to all those who did not hear their discourse; and it is upon such trifles as these, or else on the inexhaustible subject of their charms, that all who are ambitious of being near these miracles, are under a necessity of talking.'

'And pray,' interrupted Arabella, 'what subjects afford matter for a more pleasing variety of conversation, than those of beauty and love? Can we speak of any object so capable of delighting as beauty, or of any passion of the mind more sublime and pleasing than love?'

'With submission, Madam,' said Glanville, 'I conceive, all that can be said either of beauty, or of love, may be comprized in a very few words; all who have eyes, and behold true beauty, will be ready to confess it is a very pleasing object; and all that can be said of it, may be said in a very few words; for when we have run over the catalogue of charms, and mentioned fine eyes, fine hair, delicate complexion, regular features, and an elegant shape, we can only add a few epithets more, such as lovely, dangerous, enchanting, irresistible, and the like; and every thing that can be said of beauty is exhausted: and so likewise it is with love; we know that admiration precedes it, that beauty kindles it, hope keeps it alive, and despair puts an end to it; and that subject may be as soon discussed as the other, by the judicious use of proper words; such as wounds, darts, fires, languishings, dyings, torture, rack, jealousy, and a few more of no signification, but upon this subject.'

'Certainly, Sir,' said Arabella, 'you have not well considered what you say, since you maintain, that love and beauty are subjects easily and quickly discussed: take the pains, I beseech you, to reflect a little upon those numerous and long conversations which the subjects have given rise to in Clelia, and the Grand Cyrus, where the most illustrious and greatest personages in the world ma-

nage the disputes; and the agreeable diversity of their sentiments on those heads affords a most pleasing and rational entertainment; you will therefore find, that the greatest conquerors, and heroes of invincible valour, reason with the most exact and scrupulous nicety upon love and beauty; the superiority of fair and brown hair controverted by warriors, with as much eagerness as they dispute for the victory in the field; and the different effects of that passion upon different hearts defined with the utmost accuracy and eloquence.'

'I must own,' interrupted Sir Charles, 'I should have but a mean opinion of those warriors, as you call them, who could busy themselves in talking of such trifles; and be apt to imagine such insignificant fellows, who could wrangle about the colour of their mistress's hair, would be the first to turn their backs upon the enemy in battle.'

'Is it possible, Sir,' resumed Arabella, glowing with indignation, 'that you can entertain such unworthy thoughts of heroes, who merit the admiration and praise of all ages for their inestimable valour, whom the spears of a whole army opposed to each of their single swords would not oblige to fly?—What think you, Sir,' pursued she, looking at Sir George, 'of the injurious words my uncle has uttered against those heroick princes, whose courage, I believe, you are as well acquainted with as myself? The great Oroondates, the invincible Artaban, the valiant and fortunate Artamenes, the irresistible Juba, the incomparable Cleomedon, and an hundred other heroes I could name, are all injured by this unjust assertion of my uncle; since certainly they were not more famous for their noble and wonderful actions in war, than for the sublimity and constancy of their affections in love.'

'Some of these heroes you have named,' replied Sir George, 'had the misfortune, even in their lives, to be very cruelly vilified. The great Oroondates was a long time accused of treachery to his divine princess; the valiant and unfortunate Artamenes was suspected of inconstancy; and the irresistible Juba reproached
'with

‘with infidelity and baseness, by both his mistress and friend.’

‘I never knew you was so well acquainted with these persons,’ interrupted Mr. Glanville; ‘and I fancy it is but very lately that you have given yourself the trouble to read romances.’

‘I am not of your opinion,’ said Arabella. ‘Sir George, questionless, has appropriated great part of his time to the perusal of those books, so capable of improving him in all useful knowledge; the sublimity of love, and the quintessence of valour; which two qualities, if possessed in a superlative degree, form a true and perfect hero, as the perfection of beauty, wit, and virtue, make a heroine worthy to be served by such an illustrious personage; and I dare say, Sir George has profited so much by the great examples of fidelity and courage he has placed before his eyes, that no consideration whatever could make him for one moment fail in his constancy to the divine beauty he adores; and, inspired by her charms, he would scorn to turn his back, as my uncle phrases it, upon an army of an hundred thousand men.’

‘I am extremely obliged to you, Madam,’ said Sir George, bowing his head to the ground, to hide a smile he could not possibly restrain, ‘for the good opinion you have of my courage and fidelity.’

‘As for Sir George’s courage, cousin,’ said Mr. Glanville, laughing, ‘I never disputed it; and though it be, indeed, a very extraordinary exertion of it, to fight singly against an army of an hundred thousand men; yet since you are pleased to think it probable, I am as willing to believe Sir George may do it as any other man; but, as for his fidelity in matters of love, I greatly suspect it, since he has been charged with some very flagrant crimes of that nature.’

‘How, Sir!’ resumed Arabella. ‘Have you ever been faithless, then? and, after having sworn, haply, to devote your whole life to the service of some beauty, have you ever violated your oaths, and been base enough to forsake her?’

‘I have too much complaisance, Madam,’ said Sir George, ‘to contradict Mr. Glanville, who has been

pleased positively to assert, that I have been faithless, as you most unkindly phrase it.’

‘Nay, Sir,’ replied Arabella, ‘this accusation is not of a nature to be neglected; and though a king should say it, I conceive, if you are innocent, you have a right to contradict him, and clear yourself: do you consider how deeply this assertion wounds your honour and happiness for the future? What lady, think you, will receive your services, loaded as you are with the terrible imputation of inconstancy?’

‘Oh! as for that, Madam,’ said Miss Glanville, ‘I believe no lady will think the worse of Sir George for being faithless: for my part, I declare nothing pleases me so much, as gaining a lover from another lady; which is a greater compliment to one’s beauty, than the addresses of a man that never was in love before.’

‘You may remember, cousin,’ replied Arabella, ‘that I said once before, your spirit and humour resembled a certain great princess very much; and I repeat it again, never was there a greater conformity in tempers and inclinations.’

‘My daughter,’ said Sir Charles, ‘is mightily obliged to you, Lady Bella, for comparing her to a great princess: undoubtedly you mean it as a compliment.’

‘If you think,’ said Arabella, ‘that barely comparing her to a princess be a compliment, I must take the liberty to differ from you: my cousin is not so many degrees below a princess, as that such a comparison should be thought extraordinary; for if her ancestors did not wear a crown, they might, haply, have deserved it; and her beauty may one day procure her a servant, whose sword, like that of the great Artaban, may win her a sceptre; who, with a noble confidence, told his princess, when the want of a crown was objected to him, “I wear a sword, Madam, that can perform things more difficult than what you require; and if a crown be all that I want to make me worthy of you, tell me what kingdom in the world you chuse to reign in, and I will lay it at your feet.”’

‘That was a promise,’ replied Sir George,

George, 'fit only for the great Artaban to make: but, Madam, if you will permit me to make any comparison between that renowned warrior and myself, I would venture to tell you, that even the great Artaban was not exempted from the character of inconstancy any more than myself; since, as you certainly know, he was in love with three great princesses successively.'

'I grant you,' replied Arabella, that Artaban did wear the chains of three princesses successively; but it must also be remembered in his justification, that the two first of these beauties refused his adorations, and treated him with contempt, because he was not a prince: therefore, recovering his liberty, by those disdain, they cast on him, he preserved that illustrious heart from despair, to tender it with more passionate fidelity to the divine princess of the Parthians; who, though greatly their superior in quality and beauty, did permit him to love her. However, I must confess, I find something like levity in the facility he found in breaking his fetters so often; and when I consider; that among all those great heroes; whose histories I have read, none but himself ever bore, without dying; the cruelties he experienced from those princesses, I am sometimes tempted to accuse him myself of inconstancy: but indeed every thing we read of that prodigy of valour is wholly miraculous; and since the performance of impossibilities was reserved for him, I conclude this miracle also, among many others, was possible to him, whom nothing was ever able to resist upon earth. However,' pursued she, rising, 'I shall not absolutely condemn you, till I have heard your adventures from your own mouth, at a convenient time, when I shall be able to judge how far you merit the odious appellation of inconstancy.'

Saying this, she saluted her uncle, who had for some time been conversing in a low voice with his son, with a grace wholly charming, and retired to her apartment. Miss Glanville following her a few moments after, (the compliment, extravagant as it was, which she had paid her, having procured her some good-will from the vain and interested Miss Glanville) they

conversed together with a great deal of good-humour till dinner-time, which, because Mr. Glanville was not absolutely recovered, was served in his chamber.

CHAP. IV.

IN WHICH OUR HEROINE IS ENGAGED IN A NEW ADVENTURE.

AS Mr. Glanville took a great deal of pains to turn the discourse upon subjects on which the charming Arabella could expatiate, without any mixture of that absurdity which mingled itself in a great many others, the rest of that day and several others, were passed very agreeably: at the end of which, Mr. Glanville being perfectly recovered, and able to go abroad, the baronet proposed to take the diversion of hunting; which Arabella, who was used to it, consented to partake of; but being informed, that Miss Glanville could not ride, and chose to stay at home, she would have kept her company, had not Sir Charles insisted upon the contrary.

As Sir George, and some other gentlemen, had invited themselves to be of the party, Arabella, on her coming down to mount her horse, found a great many young gallants, ready to offer her their assistance upon this occasion: accepting, therefore, with great politeness, this help from a stranger; who was nearest her, she mounted her horse, giving occasion to every one that was present, to admire the grace with which she sat and managed him. Her shape being as perfect as any shape could possibly be, her riding-habit discovered all it's beauties: her hat, and the white feather waving over part of her fine black hair, gave a peculiar charm to her lovely face; and she appeared with so many advantages in this dress and posture, that Mr. Glanville, forgetting all her absurdities, was wholly lost in the contemplation of so many charms, as her whole person was adorned with.

Sir George, though he really admired Arabella, was not so passionately in love as Mr. Glanville; and, being a keen sportsman, eagerly pursued the game, with the rest of the hunters; but Mr. Glanville minded nothing but his cousin, and kept close by her.

After having rode a long time, Arabella,

bella, conceiving it a piece of cruelty, not to give her lover an opportunity of talking to her, as, by his extreme solicitude, he seemed ardently to desire, coming to a delightful valley she stopped, and told Mr. Glanville, that, being weary of the chase, she should alight, and repose herself a little under the shade of those trees.

Mr. Glanville, extremely pleased at this proposition, dismounted; and, having helped her to alight, seated himself by her on the grass.

Arabella, expecting he would begin to talk to her of his passion, could not help blushing at the thoughts of having given him such an opportunity; and Mr. Glanville endeavouring to accommodate himself to her ideas of a lover, expressed himself in terms extravagant enough to have made a reasonable woman think he was making a jest of her: all which, however, Arabella was extremely pleased with; and she observed such a just decorum in her answers, that, as the writers of romance phrase it, if she did not give him any absolute hopes of being beloved, yet she said enough to make him conclude she did not hate him.

They had conversed in this manner near a quarter of an hour, when Arabella, perceiving a man at a little distance, walking very composedly, shrieked out aloud; and, rising with the utmost precipitation, flew from Mr. Glanville, and went to untie her horse; while his astonishment being so great at her behaviour, that he could not, for a moment or two, ask her the cause of her fear.

‘Do you not see,’ said she, out of breath with the violence of her apprehensions, ‘the person who is coming towards us? It is the same, who, some months ago, attempted to carry me away, when I was riding out with only two attendants; I escaped, for that time, the danger that threatened me; but, questionless, he comes now to renew his attempts; therefore can you wonder at my fear?’

‘If it should be as you say, Madam,’ interrupted Glanville, ‘what reason have you to fear? Do you not think I am able to defend you?’

‘Ah! without doubt, you are able to defend me,’ answered she: ‘and though, if you offer to resist the violence he comes to use against me, he

will, haply, call two or three dozen armed men to his assistance, who are, I suppose, concealed hereabouts, yet I am not apprehensive, that you will be worsted by them; but as it happened to the brave Juba, and Cleomedon, while they were fighting with some hundred men, who wanted to carry away their princesses before their faces, and were giving death at every blow, in order to preserve them, the commander of these ravishers seeing the two princesses sitting, as I was, under a tree, ordered them to be seized by two of his men, and carried away, while the two princes were losing best part of their blood in their defence; therefore, to prevent such an accident happening, while you are fighting for my rescue, I think it will be the safest way for me to get on horseback, that I may be in a condition to escape; and that you may not employ your valour to no purpose.’

Saying this, having, with Mr. Glanville’s assistance, loosed her horse from the tree, he helped her to mount, and then remounted his own.

‘Your antagonist,’ said Arabella, ‘is on foot; and therefore, though I prize your life extremely, yet I cannot dispense with myself from telling you, that it is against the laws of knighthood to take any advantage of that kind over your enemy; nor will I permit your concern for my safety to make you forget what you owe to your own reputation.’

Mr. Glanville, fretting excessively at her folly, begged her not to make herself uneasy about things that were never likely to happen.

‘The gentleman yonder,’ added he, ‘seems to have no designs to make any attempt against you; if he should, I shall know how to deal with him; but, since he neither offers to assault me, nor affront you, I think we ought not to give him any reason to imagine we suspect him, by gazing on him thus; and letting him understand by your manner, that he is the subject of our conversation; if you please, Madam, we will endeavour to join our company.’

Arabella, while he was speaking, kept her eyes fixed upon his face, with looks which expressed her thoughts were labouring upon some very important

portant point; and, after a pause of some moments, 'Is it possible,' said she, with a tone of extreme surprize, 'that I should be so mistaken in you? Do you really want courage enough to defend me against that ravisher?'

'Oh, Heavens! Madam,' interrupted Glanville, 'try not my temper thus: courage enough to defend you! Sdeath! you will make me mad! Who, in the name of wonder, is going to molest you?'

'He whom you see there,' replied Arabella, pointing to him with her finger: 'for know, cold and insensible as thou art to the danger which threatens me, yonder knight is thy rival, and a rival, haply, who deserves my esteem better than thou dost; since, if he has courage enough to get me by violence into his power, that same courage would make him defend me against any injuries I might be offered from another: and since nothing is so contemptible in the eyes of a woman, as a lover who wants spirit to die in her defence, know, I can sooner pardon him, whom thou wouldst cowardly fly from, for the violence which he meditates against me, than thyself for the pusillanimity thou hast betrayed in my fight.'

With these words she galloped away from her astonished lover; who, not daring to follow her, for fear of increasing her suspicions of his cowardice, flung himself off his horse in a violent rage; and, forgetting that the stranger was observing, and now within hearing, he fell a cursing and exclaiming against the books that had turned his cousin's brain, and railling at his own ill fate that condemned him to the punishment of loving her. Mr. Harvey (for it really was he whom an affair of consequence had brought again into the country) hearing some of Mr. Glanville's last words, and observing the gestures he used, concluded he had been treated like himself by Arabella, whom he knew again at a distance: therefore coming up to Mr. Glanville, laughing—

'Though I have not the honour of knowing you, Sir,' said he, 'I must beg the favour you will inform me, if you are not disturbed at the ridiculous folly of the lady I saw with you just now? She is the most fantastical

creature that ever lived, and, in my opinion, fit for a mad-house; pray, are you acquainted with her?'

Mr. Glanville, being in a very ill humour, could not brook the freedom of this language against his cousin, whose follies he could not bear any one should rail at but himself; and, being provoked at his sneers, and the interruption he had given to their conversation, he looked upon him with a disdainful frown, and told him in an haughty tone, that he was very impertinent to speak of a lady of her quality and merit so rudely.

'Oh! Sir, I beg your pardon,' replied Mr. Harvey, laughing more than before; 'what, I suppose you are the champion of this fair lady! But, I assure myself, if you intend to quarrel with every one that will laugh at her, you will have more business upon your hands than you can well manage.'

Mr. Glanville, transported with rage at this insolence, hit him such a blow with the butt-end of his whip, that it stunned him for a moment; but recovering himself, he drew his sword, and, mad with the affront he had received, made a push at Glanville; who, avoiding it with great dexterity, had recourse to his hanger for his defence.

Arabella, in the mean time, who had not rid far, concealing herself behind some trees, saw all the actions of her lover, and intended ravisher; and, being possessed with an opinion of her cousin's cowardice, was extremely rejoiced to see him fall upon his enemy first, and that with so much fury, that she had no longer any reason to doubt his courage; her suspicions therefore being removed, her tenderness for him returned; and when she saw them engaged with their swords (for, at that distance, she did not plainly perceive the difference of their weapons) her apprehensions for her cousin were so strong, that, though she did not doubt his valour, she could not bear to see him expose his life for her; and without making any reflections upon the singularity of her design, she was going to ride up to them, and endeavour to part them; when she saw several men come towards them, whom she took to be the assistants of her ravisher, though they were, in reality, haymakers; who, at a distance, having

having seen the beginning of their quarrel, had hastened to part them.

Terrified, therefore, at this reinforcement, which she thought would expose her cousin to great danger, she galloped with all speed after the hunters, being directed by the sound of the horn. Her anxiety for her cousin made her regardless of her own danger, so that she rode with a surprizing swiftness; and, overtaking the company, she would have spoken to tell them of her cousin's situation; when, her spirits failing her, she could only make a sign with her hand, and sunk down in a swoon, in the arms of Sir George, who eagerly galloped up to her; and, supporting her as well as he was able till some others came to her relief, they took her off her horse, and placed her upon the ground; when, by the help of some water they brought from a spring near them, in a little time she came to herself.

Sir Charles, who, seeing her come up to them without his son, and by her fainting concluded some misfortune had happened to him, the moment she opened her eyes, asked her eagerly, where he was.

'Your son,' said Arabella, sighing, 'with a valour equal to that of the brave Cleomedon, is this moment fighting in my defence against a crowd of enemies; and is, haply, shedding the last drop of his blood in my quarrel.'

'Shedding the last drop of his blood, haply!' repeated Sir Charles, excessively grieved; and not a little enraged at Arabella, supposing she had introduced him into some quarrel: 'it may be *happy* for you, Madam; but I am sure it will make me very miserable, if my son comes to any harm.'

'If it be the will of Heaven he should fall in this combat,' resumed Arabella, 'he can never have a more glorious destiny; and as that consideration will, doubtless, sweeten his last moments, so it ought to be your consolation: however, I beg you'll lose no time, but haste to his assistance; for since he has a considerable number of enemies to deal with, it is not improbable but he may be overpowered at last.'

'Where did you leave my son, Madam?' cried Sir Charles, eagerly.

'He is not far off,' replied Ara-

bella: 'and you will, doubtless, be directed to the place, by the sight of the blood of his enemies which he has spilt. Go that way,' pursued she, pointing with her finger towards the place where she had left her cousin; 'there you will meet with him, amidst a crowd of foes, which he is sacrificing to my safety, and his just resentment.'

Sir Charles not knowing what to think, galloped away, followed by most part of the company; Sir George telling Lady Bella, that he would stay to defend her against any attempts that might be made on her liberty, by any of her ravisher's servants, who were, probably, straggling about. Arabella, however, being perfectly recovered, insisted upon following her uncle.

'There is no question,' said she, 'but Mr. Glanville is victorious; I am only apprehensive for the dangerous wounds he may have received in the combat, which will require all our care and assistance.'

Sir George, who wanted to engross her company a little to himself, in vain represented to her, that, amidst the horrors of a fight so bloody as that must certainly be, in which Mr. Glanville and his friends would be now engaged, it would be dangerous for her to venture her person; yet she would not be persuaded; but, having mounted her horse, with his assistance, she rode as fast as she was able after the rest of the company.

CHAP. V.

BEING A CHAPTER OF MISTAKES.

SIR Charles, who, by this time, had got to the place she directed him to, but saw no appearance of fighting, and only a few haymakers in discourse together, enquired if there had been any quarrel between two gentlemen in that place.

One of them, at this question, advancing, told Sir Charles, that two gentlemen had quarrelled there, and were fighting with swords; but that they had parted them; and that one of them having an horse tied to a tree, mounted him and rode away: that the other, they believed, was not far off; and that there had been no blood shed, they

they having come time enough to prevent it.

Sir Charles, was extremely satisfied with this account; and giving the haymakers some money for the good office they did in parting the two combatants, rode up to meet Lady Bella, and informed her that his son was safe.

'I cannot imagine he is safe,' replied she, 'when I see some of his enemies (pointing to the haymakers) still alive; it is not customary, in those cases, to suffer any to escape; and, questionless, my cousin is either dead, or a prisoner, since all his adversaries are not vanquished.'

'Why, you dream, Madam,' replied Sir Charles; 'those fellows yonder are haymakers: what should make them enemies to my son? They were lucky enough to come in time to prevent him and another gentleman from doing each other a mischief. I cannot imagine for what reason my son quarrelled with that person they speak of; perhaps you can inform me?'

'Certainly, Sir,' said Arabella, 'I can inform you, since I was the cause of their quarrel. The story is too long to tell you now; and, besides, it is so connected with the other accidents of my life, that it is necessary you should be acquainted with my whole history, in order to comprehend it; but if those persons are what you say, and did really part my cousin and his antagonist, truly I believe they have done him a very ill office; for, I am persuaded, my cousin will never be at rest, till, by his rival's death, he has freed himself from one capable of the most daring enterprizes to get me into his power: and, since I cannot be in security while he lives, and persists in the resolution he has taken to persecute me, it had been better if he had suffered all the effects of my cousin's resentment at that time, than to give him the trouble to hunt him through the world, in order to sacrifice him to the interest of his love and vengeance.'

Sir Charles, no less astonished than alarmed at this discovery of his niece's sanguinary sentiments, told her, he was sorry to see a lady so far forget the gentleness of her sex, as to encourage and incite men to such extremities upon her account. 'And, for the future,'

added he, 'I must intreat you, niece, to spare me the affliction of seeing my son exposed to these dangerous quarrels; for, though his life is so little regarded by you, yet it is of the utmost consequence to me.'

Arabella, who found matter sufficient in the beginning of this speech, to be offended with her uncle, yet, mistaking the latter part of it for a pathetic complaint of her cruelty, replied very gravely, that her cousin's safety was not so indifferent to her as he imagined; and that she did not hate him so much, but that his death would affect her very sensibly.

Arabella, in speaking these words, blushed with shame, as thinking they were rather too tender; and Sir Charles, who coloured likewise, from a very different motive, was opening his mouth to tell her, that he did not think his son was much obliged to her for not hating him; when Arabella, supposing he designed to press her to a farther explanation of the favourable sentiments she felt for Mr. Glanville, stopped him with precipitation; 'Press me no more,' said she, 'upon this subject; and, as I have already spoken too much, haply, before so many witnesses, seek not to enhance my confusion, by prolonging a discourse that at present must needs be disagreeable to me.'

'I shall readily agree with you, Madam,' replied Sir Charles, 'that you have spoken too much; and if I had thought you capable of speaking in the manner you have done, I would have been more cautious in giving you an occasion for it.'

'I should imagine, Sir,' said Arabella, blushing with anger, as she before did with shame, 'that you would be the last person in the world who could think I had spoken too much upon this occasion: and, since you are pleased to tell me so, I think it fit to let you know, that I have not, in my opinion, transgressed the laws of decency and decorum, in what I have said in my cousin's favour; and I can produce many examples of greater freedom of speech, in princesses, and ladies of the highest quality; however, I shall learn such a lesson of moderation in this respect, from your reproof, that I promise you, neither yourself, or Mr. Glanville, shall have

‘ have any cause, for the future, to complain of my want of discretion.’

Sir Charles, who was very polite and good-natured, was half angry with himself, for having obliged his niece to such a submission, as he thought it; and, apologizing for the rudeness of his reprehension, assured her, that he was perfectly convinced of her discretion in all things; and did not doubt but her conduct would be always agreeable to him.

Arabella, who, from what her uncle had said, began to entertain suspicions that would never have entered any imagination but hers, looked earnestly upon him for half a moment, as if she wished to penetrate into the most secret recesses of his heart: but, fancying she saw something in his looks that confirmed her apprehensions, she removed her eyes from his face, and fastening them on the ground, remained for some moments in confusion.—Sir Charles, whom her apparent disturbance made very uneasy, proposed returning to the castle; telling Lady Bella he expected to find his son already there.

‘ It is more than probable,’ said she, turning to Sir George, ‘ that my cousin is gone in pursuit of my ravisher; and the interruption that has been given to his designed vengeance, making him more furious than before, it is not likely he will return till he has punished his insolence by that death he so justly merits.’

‘ Mr. Glanville is already so happy in your opinion,’ said Sir George, with a very profound sigh, ‘ that there is no need of his rendering you this small service to increase your esteem; but, if my prayers are heard, the punishment of your ravisher will be reserved for a person less fortunate, indeed, than Mr. Glanville, though not less devoted to your interest, and concerned in your preservation.’

Sir George counterfeiting a look of extreme confusion and fear, as he ended these words—

Arabella, who perfectly comprehended the meaning they were designed to convey, thought herself obliged to take no notice of them: and, therefore, without making any reply to the young baronet, who ventured slowly to lift his eyes to her face, in order to discover if there were any signs of anger

in it, she told Sir Charles she inclined to go home; and Sir George, with the rest of the company, attended them to the castle; where, as soon as they arrived, they took their leave.

Sir George, notwithstanding Arabella’s care to deprive him of an opportunity of speaking to her, told her, in a whisper, having eagerly alighted to help her off her horse—

‘ I am going, Madam, to find out that insolent man, who has dared to offer violence to the fairest person in the world: and, if I am so happy as to meet with him, he shall either take my life, or I will put him into a condition never to commit any more offences of that nature.’

Saying this, he made a low bow; and, being desirous to prevent her answer, remounted his horse, and went away with the rest of the company.

Arabella, who, upon this occasion, was to be all confusion, mixed with some little resentment, discovered so much emotion in her looks, while Sir George was whispering to her, that her uncle, as he was handing her into the house, asked her, if she was offended at any thing Sir George had said to her.

Arabella, construing this question as she had done some other things her uncle had said to her, replied, in a reserved manner, ‘ Since my looks, contrary to my intention, have betrayed my thoughts to you, I will not scruple to confess, that I have some cause to be offended with Sir George; and that, in two instances to-day, he has seemed to forget the respect he owes me.’

Sir Charles was fired at this account: ‘ Is it possible,’ said he, ‘ that Sir George has had the assurance to say any thing to offend you, and that before my face too? This affront is not to be borne.’

‘ I am sorry,’ replied Arabella, eyeing him heedfully, ‘ to see you so much concerned at it.’

‘ Don’t be uneasy,’ interrupted Sir Charles: ‘ there will be no bad consequences happen from it: but he shall hear of it,’ added he, raising his voice with passion; ‘ I’ll force him this night to explain himself.’

‘ You must pardon me, Sir,’ said Arabella, more and more confirmed in her notions, ‘ if I tell you, that I am extremely offended at your uncom-

‘mon zeal upon this occasion; and
 ‘also I must assure you, that a little
 ‘more calmness would be less liable to
 ‘suspicion.’

Miss Glanville coming to meet them, Sir Charles, who did not take much notice of what Arabella said, eagerly enquired for his son; and, hearing he was not come home, was apprehensive of his meeting again with the person he had quarrelled with: but his fears did not last long; for Mr. Glanville came in, having purposely avoided the company, to hide the uneasiness Lady Bella’s tormenting folly had given him.

CHAP. VI.

IN WHICH THE MISTAKES ARE CONTINUED.

AS soon as Mr. Glanville appeared, the two ladies retired; Miss Glanville asking Arabella a hundred questions concerning their diversion, the drift of which was, to know how Sir George behaved to her: but that fair lady, whose thoughts were wholly employed on the strange accidents which had happened to her that day, longed to be at liberty to indulge her reflections; and, complaining of extreme weariness, under pretence of reposing herself till dinner, got quit of Miss Glanville’s company, which, at that time, she thought very tedious.

As soon as she was left to herself, her imagination running over all that had happened, she could not help confessing, that few women ever met with such a variety of adventures in one day: in danger of being carried off by violence by one lover; delivered by another; insinuations of love from a third, who, she thought, was enamoured of her cousin; and, what was still more surprizing a discovery, that her uncle was not insensible of her charms, but was become the rival of his own son.

As extravagant as this notion was, Arabella found precedents in her romances of passions full as strange and unjustifiable; and confirmed herself in that opinion, by recollecting several examples of unlawful love. ‘Why should I not believe,’ said she, ‘that my charms can work as powerful effects as those of Olympia, Princess

of Thrace, whose brother was passionately enamoured of her?’

‘Did not the divine Clelia inspire Maheral with a violent passion for her, who, though discovered to be her brother, did not, nevertheless, cease to adore her? And, to bring an instance still nearer to my own case, was not the uncle of the fair Alcyone in love with her? And did he not endeavour to win her heart by all the methods in his power?’

‘Ah? then,’ pursued she, ‘let us doubt no more of our misfortune; and, since our fatal beauty has raised this impious flame, let us stifle it with our rigour, and not allow an ill-timed pity, or respect, to encourage a passion which may, one day, cast a blemish upon our glory.’

Arabella, having settled this point, proceeded to reflect on the conquest she had made of Sir George: she examined his words over and over, and found them so exactly conformable to the language of an Oroondates or Orontes, that she could not chuse but be pleased; but, recollecting that it behoved her, like all other heroines, to be extremely troubled and perplexed at an insinuation of love, she began to lament the cruel necessity of parting with an agreeable friend; who, if he persisted in making her acquainted with his thoughts, would expose himself to the treatment persons so indiscreet always meet with; nor was she less concerned, lest, if Mr. Glanville had not already dispatched her ravisher, Sir George, by wandering in search of him, and, haply, sacrificing him to his eager desire of serving her, should, by that means, lay her under an obligation to him, which, considering him as a lover, would be a great mortification.

Sir George, however, was gone home to his own house, with no thoughts of pursuing Arabella’s ravisher: and Mr. Glanville, being questioned by his father concerning his quarrel, invented some trifling excuse for it; which not agreeing with the account the baronet had received from Arabella, he told his son, that he had concealed the truth from him; and that there was more in that affair than he had owned. ‘You quarrelled,’ added he, ‘upon Arabella’s account; and she did not scruple to affirm it before all the company.’

Mr.

Mr. Glanville, who had vainly flattered himself with an hope that his cousin had not acquainted the company with her whimsical apprehensions, was extremely vexed when he found she had exposed herself to their ridicule, and that it was probable even he had not escaped: but willing to know from her own mouth how far she had carried her folly, he went up to her chamber; and, being immediately admitted, she began to congratulate him upon the conquest he had gained, as she supposed, over his enemy, and thanked him very solemnly for the security he had procured for her.

Mr. Glanville, after assuring her that she was in no danger of ever being carried away by that person whom she feared, proceeded to enquire into all that had passed between her and the company whom she had joined when she left him; and Arabella, relating every particular, gave him the mortification to know that her folly had been sufficiently exposed: but she touched upon her fears for him with so much delicacy, and mentioned her fainting in such a manner, as insinuated a much greater tenderness than he before had reason to hope for; and this knowledge destroying all his intentions to quarrel with her for what she had said, he appeared so easy and satisfied, that Arabella, reflecting upon the misfortune his father's new-born passion would probably be the occasion of to him, could not help sighing at the apprehension; looking on him, at the same time, with a kind of pitying complacency, which did not escape Mr. Glanville's notice.

'I must know the reason of that sigh, cousin,' said he, smiling, and taking her hand.

'If you are wise,' replied Arabella, gravely, 'you will be contented to remain in the pleasing ignorance you are at present; and not seek to know a thing which will, haply, afford you but little satisfaction.'

'You have increased my curiosity so much by this advice,' resumed he, accommodating his looks to Arabella's, 'that I shall not be at rest till I know what it is you conceal from me: and since I am so much concerned in it, even by your own confession, I have a right to press you to explain yourself.'

'Since you are so importunate,' replied Arabella, 'I must tell you that I will not do you so great a diskindness as to explain myself; nor will I be the first who shall acquaint you with your misfortune, since you will, haply, too soon arrive at the knowledge of it by other means.'

Glanville, who imagined this was some new whim that had got into her head, was but little perplexed at an insinuation, which, had he been ignorant of her foible, would have given him great uneasiness: but, being sensible that she expected he would press her to disclose herself, and appear extremely concerned at her refusing him that satisfaction, he counterfeited so well, that she was at a loss how to evade the arguments he used to make her unfold the terrible mystery; when the dinner-bell ringing, and relieving her for the present, Mr. Glanville led her down to the parlour, where Sir Charles and his daughter attended their coming.

CHAP. VII.

IN WHICH THE MISTAKES ARE NOT YET CLEARED UP.

THE baronet, who had been put into a bad humour by Arabella's insinuations that Sir George had affronted her, appeared reserved and uneasy; and, being resolved to question her about it, was willing first to know exactly what it was his niece had been offended at: but as he feared, if it came to his son's knowledge, it would produce a quarrel between the young gentlemen, that might have dangerous consequences, he was desirous of speaking to her alone; and, as soon as dinner was over, asked her to take a walk with him upon the terrace, telling her he had something to say to her in private. Arabella, whose fears had been considerably increased by the pensiveness which appeared in her uncle's looks during dinner, and supposing he wanted a private conversation only to explain himself more clearly to her than he had yet done, was excessively alarmed at this request; and casting her eyes down to the ground, blushed in such a manner as betrayed her confusion, and made Miss Glanville and her brother believe that she suspected her uncle had

a design to press her soon to give her hand to Mr. Glanville, which occasioned her apparent disorder.

Sir Charles, however, who had not so heedfully observed her behaviour, repeated his request; adding, with a smile, upon her giving him no answer, 'Sure, Lady Bella, you are not afraid to be alone with your uncle?'

'No, Sir,' replied Arabella, giving him a piercing look; 'I am not afraid of being alone with my uncle; and, as long as he pretends to be no more than my uncle, I shall not scruple to hear what he has to say to me.'

Sir Charles, a little vexed at an answer which insinuated, as he thought, a complaint of his having pretended to more authority over her than he ought, told her, he hoped she had no cause to believe he would displease her by any improper exertion of that power over her, with which her father had intrusted him: 'For I assure you,' added he, 'I would rather you should follow my advice as an uncle, than obey me as a guardian; and, since my affection for you is, perhaps, greater than what many people have for a niece, my solicitude ought to be imputed to that motive.'

'I have all the sense I ought to have of that affection you honour me with,' replied Arabella; 'and since I hope it will be always what it should be, without wishing for its increase, I am contented with those testimonies I have already received of it, and do not desire any other.'

Sir Charles, a little puzzled to understand the meaning of these words, which the grave looks of Arabella made yet more mysterious, rose from his seat with an air of discontent. 'I should have been glad to have spoken a word in private to you, niece,' said he; 'but since you think proper to make so much ceremony in such a trifle, I'll defer it till you are in a better humour.'

Miss Glanville seeing her father going out of the room, stepped before him; 'Nay, papa,' said she, 'if you want to speak with my cousin, my brother and I will go out, and leave you to yourselves.'

'You will do me a very great displeasure,' said Arabella; 'for I assure my uncle has not any thing of consequence to say to me: however,'

added she, seeing Miss Glanville go away, 'I am resolved I will not be left alone; and therefore, Mr. Glanville, since I can pretend to some power over you, I command you to stay.'

'You may remember, Madam,' said Mr. Glanville, with a smile, 'you refused to gratify my curiosity with regard to something you hinted to me some time ago; and to punish you,' added he, going out of the room, 'I am resolved you shall listen to what my father has to say to you; for, by your unwillingness to hear it, I imagine you suspect already what it is.'

Arabella, finding she had no way to avoid hearing what she dreaded so much, and observing her uncle had resumed his chair, prepared to give him audience; but, in order to deprive him of all hope that she would receive his discourse favourably, she assumed the severest look she was capable of; and, casting her eyes on the ground, with a mixture of anger and shame, waited with a kind of fear and impatience for what he had to say.

'I see, Madam,' said the baronet, observing her confusion, 'that you apprehend what I am going to say to you; but, I beseech you, do not fear I have any intentions but such as you'll approve.'

'You are certainly in the right, Sir,' said Arabella, 'in the interpretation you have put on my looks: I am really in pain about the purport of your discourse; and you would particularly oblige me, if you would dispense with me from hearing it.'

'I see,' replied Sir Charles, 'that, out of a mistaken fear, you are unwilling to hear me, in order to avoid coming to the explanation I desire: but I tell you, once again, you have nothing to apprehend.'

'I have every thing to apprehend, Sir,' resumed Arabella, tartly, 'while you persist in your design of disobliging me; and you cannot give me a greater proof of the badness of your intentions, than by thus forcing me to listen to discourses I ought to avoid.'

'Since my word has no weight with you,' replied Sir Charles, 'I'll condescend to assure you, by the most sacred oath, that I do not mean to come to any extremities with Sir George concerning what you already told me: all I desire to know is, if
' you

'you think you had any reason to be offended with him for any thing he said? And in that case I cannot dispute with myself from expostulating with him about it.'

'You would do me a favour, Sir,' resumed Arabella, 'if you would interest yourself a little less in what Sir George said to me: the offence was committed against me only; and none but myself has any right to resent it.'

'It is enough, niece,' said Sir Charles, rising. 'You acknowledge sufficient to make me resolve to oblige him to ask pardon for the affront you have received: however, I beg you may make yourself easy; no ill consequences will happen from this affair, provided my son does not know it; and I know you have too much discretion to acquaint him with it.'

Saying this, he went out of the room, leaving Arabella in great confusion at what he had said; which, in her opinion, had amounted almost to a plain declaration of his passion; and his design of putting an end to Sir George's pretensions, whom, it was probable, he looked upon as a more dangerous rival than his son, confirmed her in the opinion of his resolution to persecute her.

Full of the reflections this accident had occasioned, she went to walk in the garden, where Mr. Glanville, his sister having just left him, joined her.

As he imagined his father's design, in speaking to her alone, was to prevail upon her to consent to marry him before she left the country, which was what he most earnestly wished, he drew a bad omen from the discontent which appeared in her eyes.

'Is it with me, cousin,' said he, 'or with what my father has been saying to you, that you are angry?'

'With both,' replied Arabella, hastily; 'for if you had staid in the room, as I commanded you, I should not have been exposed to the pain of hearing things so disagreeable.'

'Since I knew what would be the purport of my father's discourse,' said Mr. Glanville, 'you ought not to be surprized I could not resolve to give any interruption to it, by my presence; and being so much interested in the success of his solicitations, I could

not chuse but give him an opportunity of speaking to you alone, as he desired.'

'It seems, then,' resumed Arabella, 'you know what was the subject of his conversation.'

'I believe I can guess,' interrupted Mr. Glanville, smiling.

'Is it possible,' cried Arabella, starting back in great surprize, 'that, knowing, as you say you do, your father's intentions, you would resolve to furnish him with an opportunity of disclosing them?'

'Can you blame me,' said Mr. Glanville, 'for suffering him to undertake what I durst not myself? I know your delicacy, or rather your severity, so well, that I am sensible, if I had taken the liberty to say what my father has said, you would have been extremely offended, and punished me, as you have often done, with a banishment from your presence: nay,' pursued he, seeing a astonishment and anger in her countenance, 'I perceive you are, at this moment, going to pronounce some terrible sentence against me.'

'You are deceived,' said Arabella, with a forced calmness; 'I am so far from being offended with you, that I am ready to acknowledge, you merit very extraordinary praises for the perfect resignation you shew to the will, and, for your credit, I will suppose, the commands of your father: but I would advise you to be contented with the reputation of being a dutiful son; and, for the future, never aspire to that of being a faithful lover.'

Speaking these words, which were wholly unintelligible to her amazed admirer, she left him, and went to her own apartment, strangely surprized at the indifference of Mr. Glanville; who, as she understood what he had said, was not only willing to resign her to his father, but also took upon him to mediate in his behalf.

As she was unwilling to acknowledge, even to herself, that the grief she felt at this discovery proceeded from any affection for her cousin, she imputed it to the shame of seeing herself so basely forsaken and neglected; and, not being able to find a precedent for such an indignity offered to the charms of

of any lady in her romances, the singularity of her fate, in this respect, seemed to demand all her uneasiness.

CHAP. VIII.

WHICH CONTAINS SOME NECESSARY CONSEQUENCES OF THE FOREGOING MISTAKES—A SOLILOQUY ON A LOVE-LETTER.

WHILE Arabella passed her time in her closet, in the most disagreeable reflections, Glanville was racking his brain to find out the meaning of those mysterious words she had uttered at leaving him; he examined them twenty times over, but could not possibly penetrate into their sense; but supposing, at last, that they really meant nothing at all, or were occasioned by some new flight of her imagination, he went to find out his father, in order to know what had passed between him and Arabella.

Sir Charles, however, was not to be found; he had ordered his horse to be made ready, under pretence of taking a little ride after dinner; and, passing by Sir George's house, alighted to pay him a visit.

The young baronet, being at home, received him with great politeness; and Sir Charles, whose peculiar disposition was to be nicely tenacious of every thing which he imagined had any relation to the honour of his family, took the first opportunity to question him concerning the confusion his whisper had occasioned in Lady Bella; adding, that she had confessed he had given her reason to take ill what he had said to her.

Sir George, who was by no means willing to quarrel with the uncle of Arabella, received the old gentleman's remonstrances with a great deal of calmness; and, finding Arabella had not discovered the purport of that whisper which had offended her, he told Sir Charles that the confusion he saw in her countenance was occasioned by his railing her upon the fright she had been in upon Mr. Glanville's account: he added some other particulars that entirely taking away all inclination in Sir Charles to pursue the matter any farther, they parted upon very good terms; Sir George promising,

very soon, to return his visit at the castle.

Mr. Glanville, upon his father's return, being impatient to know what he had said to Arabella, enquired with so much precipitation, concerning the conversation they had had together, that Sir Charles, unwilling to tell him the truth, and not having time to consider of an answer, evaded his question in such a manner, that Mr. Glanville could not help making some observation upon it; and, comparing this circumstance with what Arabella had said, though he could not comprehend the meaning that seemed to be concealed under their behaviour, he immediately concluded, there was some mystery which it concerned him to find out.

Possessed with this opinion, he longed for an opportunity to talk with Arabella alone; but he was not so happy to obtain one; for, though that fair-one presided at the tea-table, as usual, and also appeared at supper, yet she so industriously avoided all occasions of being alone with him, though but for a moment, and appeared so reserved and uneasy, that it was impossible for him to speak to her upon that subject.

As soon as it was time to retire, having resolved to request the favour of a few moments conversation with her, in her own apartment, and when he had, as was his custom, handed her up stairs, instead of wishing her a good night, at her chamber-door, he was going to desire permission to enter it with her; when Lucy, coming to meet her lady, whispered her in the ear; upon which Arabella, turning towards him, gave him a hasty salute, and hurried into her apartment.

Glanville, no less vexed at this disappointment, than perplexed at that whisper, which had caused such a visible emotion in Arabella, retired to his own room, tormented with a thousand uneasy suspicions, for which he could not exactly assign a cause; and wishing impatiently for the next day, in which he hoped to procure some explanation of what at present greatly perplexed him.

In the mean time, Arabella, who had been informed by Lucy, in that whisper, who was eager to let her know it, that a messenger had brought a letter from Sir George, and late as it was at night, waited for an answer, was debating

bating with herself, whether she should open this billet or not: she had a strong inclination to see what it contained; but, fearful of transgressing the laws of romance, by indulging a curiosity not justifiable by example, she resolved to return this letter unopened.

‘Here,’ said she to Lucy, ‘give this letter to the messenger that brought it, and tell him, I was excessively offended with you, for receiving it from his hands.’

Lucy, taking the letter, was going to obey her orders; when, recollecting herself, she bid her stay.

‘Since Sir George,’ said she to herself, ‘is no declared lover of mine, I may, without any offence to decorum, see what this letter contains: to refuse receiving it, will be to acknowledge, that his sentiments are not unknown to me; and, by consequence, to lay myself under a necessity of banishing him; nor is it fit that I should allow him to believe I am so ready to apprehend the meaning of every gallant speech, which is used to me; and to construe such insinuations, as he took the liberty to make me, into declarations of love.’

Allowing, therefore, the justice of these reasons, she took the letter out of Lucy’s hand; and, being upon the point of opening it, a sudden thought controuled her designs: she threw it suddenly upon her toilet; and, looking very earnestly upon it—

‘Presumptuous paper!’ said she, speaking with great emotion to the letter. ‘Bold repository of thy master’s daring thoughts! Shall I not be blamed by all who hereafter will hear or read my history, if, contrary to the apprehensions I have, that thou containest a confession that will displease me, I open thy seal, and become accessory to thy writer’s guilt, by deigning to make myself acquainted with it? And thou, too indiscreet and unwary friend, whose folds contain the acknowledgment of his crime! what will it advantage thee or him, if, torn by my resenting hand, I make thee suffer for the part thou bearest in thy master’s fault; and teach him, by thy fate, how little kindness he has to expect from me! Yet, to spare myself the trouble of reading what will, questionless,

‘greatly displease me, I will return thee, uninjured, into thy master’s hands; and, by that moderation, make him repent the presumption he has been guilty of!’

C H A P. IX.

CONTAINING A LOVE-LETTER IN THE HEROICK STILE; WITH SOME OCCASIONAL REASONINGS BY LUCY, FULL OF WIT AND SIMPLICITY.

OUR fair heroine having ended the foregoing soliloquy, took up the letter and gave it to Lucy, who had, all the time she was speaking, observed a profound silence, mixed with a most eager attention.

‘Here,’ pursued she, ‘carry it to the person who brought it, and bid him tell his master, that, lest I should find any thing in it which may offend me, I have chosen not to read it; and, if he is wise, he will profit by my concern for him, and take care how he hazards displeasing me a second time by an importunity of this kind, which I shall not so easily pardon him.’

Lucy, who had taken particular notice of this speech, in order to remember every word of it when she repeated it again, went conning her lesson to the place where she had desired the servant to wait her coming: but he was gone; such being indeed his master’s orders; for he was apprehensive that, following the custom of the ladies in romances, Arabella would return his letter; and therefore, to deprive her of an opportunity of sending it back that night, he ordered his man to say he waited for an answer; but, as soon as he conveniently could, to come away without one.

Lucy, in a great surprize at the servant’s going away, returned to her lady with the letter in her hand, telling her she must needs read it now, since the person who brought it was gone.

‘It must be confessed,’ said Arabella, taking the letter from her, with a smile, ‘he has fallen upon an ingenious device to make me keep it for this night; and since, haply, I may be mistaken in the contents, I have a mind to open it.’

Lucy

Lucy did not fail to confirm her lady in this design: and Arabella, making as if she yielded to the importunities of her confidante, opened the letter; which she found as follows—

‘THE UNFORTUNATE AND DESPAIRING BELLMOUR, TO THE DIVINE ARABELLA.

‘MADAM,
‘SINCE it is, doubtless, not only with your permission, but even by your commands, that your uncle, Sir Charles Glanville, comes to pronounce the sentence of my death, in the denunciation of your anger, I submit, Madam, without repining at the rigour of that doom you have inflicted on me. Yes, Madam, this criminal, who has dared to adore you with the most sublime and perfect passion that ever was, acknowledges the justice of his punishment; and, since it is impossible to cease loving you, or to live without telling you he does so, he is going voluntarily to run upon that death your severity makes him wish for, and the greatness of his crime demands. Let my death then, O divine Arabella, expiate the offence I have been guilty of! And let me hope those fair eyes, that have beheld me with scorn when alive, will not refuse to shed some tears upon my tomb! and that, when you remember my crime of loving you, you will also be pleased to remember that I died for that crime; and wish for no other comfort in death, but the hope of your not hating, when he is no more, the unhappy

‘BELLMOUR.’

Arabella, who had read this letter aloud, sighed gently at the conclusion of it; but poor Lucy, who was greatly affected at so dolorous an epistle, could not restrain her tears; but sobbed so often, and with so much violence, as at length recalled her lady from the reverie into which she was plunged.

‘What ails you?’ said she to her confidante, greatly surprized. ‘What is the cause of this unseemly sorrow?’

‘Oh! Madam!’ cried Lucy, her sobs making a frequent and unpleasant interruption in her words; ‘I shall

break my heart to be sure: never was such a sad mournful letter in the world; I could cry my eyes out for the poor gentleman. Pray excuse me, Madam; but, indeed, I can’t help saying you are the most hard-heartedest lady I ever knew in my born days. Why, to be sure, you don’t care if an hundred fine gentlemen should die for you, though their spirits were to haunt you every night! Well, I would not have what your ladyship has to answer for, for all the world!’

‘You are a foolish wench!’ replied Arabella, smiling at her simplicity. ‘Do you think I have any cause to accuse myself, though five thousand men were to die for me! It is very certain my beauty has produced very deplorable effects: the unhappy Hervey has expiated, by his death, the violence his too-desperate passion forced him to meditate against me: the no less guilty, the noble unknown Edward, is wandering about the world in a tormenting despair, and stands exposed to the vengeance of my cousin, who has vowed his death. My charms have made another person, whose character ought to be sacred to me, forget all the ties of consanguinity, and become the rival of his son, whose interest he once endeavoured to support: and lastly, the unfortunate Bellmour consumes away in an hopeless passion; and, conscious of his crime, dooms himself, haply, with more severity than I desire, to a voluntary death, in hopes thereby of procuring my pardon and compassion when he is no more. All these, Lucy, as I said before, are very deplorable effects of my beauty; but you must observe, that my will has no part in the miseries that unfortunate beauty occasions; and that, though I could even with myself less fair, in order to avoid giving so much unhappiness to others, yet these wishes would not avail; and since, by a fatal necessity, all these things will happen, whether I would or no, I must comfort myself under the uneasiness which the sensibility of my temper makes me feel, by the reflection that, with my own consent, I contribute nothing to the misfortune of those who love me.’

‘Will your ladyship, then, let poor Sir George die?’ said Lucy, who had listened

listened very attentively to this fine harangue without understanding what it meant.

‘ Questionless, he must die,’ replied Arabella, ‘ if he persists in his design of loving me.’

‘ But pray, Madam,’ resumed Lucy, ‘ cannot your ladyship command him to live as you did Mr. Hervey and Mr. Glanville, who both did as you bid them ?’

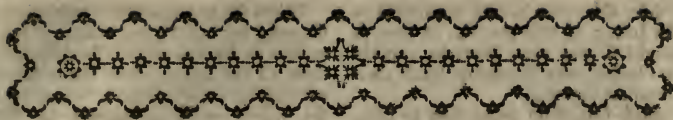
‘ I may command him to live,’ said Arabella; ‘ and there is no question but he would obey me, if I likewise permit him to love me; but this last not being fit for me to do, I see no way to prevent the sad resolution he has taken.’

‘ To be sure, Madam,’ returned Lucy, ‘ your ladyship knows what you ought to do better than I can advise your ladyship, being that you are more learned than me: but, for all that, I think it’s better to save life than to kill, as the Bible-book says;

‘ and since I am sure your ladyship is a good christian, if the gentleman dies for the want of a few kind words, or so, I am sure you will be troubled in mind about it.’

‘ It must be confessed,’ said Arabella, smiling, ‘ that though your solicitations are not very eloquent, they are very earnest and affecting; and I promise you I will think about it: and, if I can persuade myself I am doing no wrong thing by concerning myself about his preservation, I will dispatch you to-morrow morning with my orders to him to live, or at least to proceed no farther in his design of dying, till he has farther cause.’

Lucy being extremely glad she had gained her point, called in her lady’s other women, who, having assisted her to undress, left her in her closet, to which she always retired for an hour before she went to bed.



THE
FEMALE QUIXOTE.

VOLUME THE SECOND.

BOOK V.

CHAP. I.

A DISPUTE VERY LEARNEDLY
HANDLED BY TWO LADIES, IN
WHICH THE READER MAY TAKE
WHAT PART HE PLEASES.



M^R. Glanville, who was too much in love to pass the night with any great degree of tranquillity, under the apprehensions he felt, it being the nature of that passion to magnify the most inconsiderable trifles into things of the greatest importance, when they concern the beloved object, did not fail to torment himself with a thousand different fears, which the mysterious behaviour of his father, and the more mysterious words of his mistress, gave rise to.— Among many various conjectures, all equally unreasonable, he fixed upon one no way advantageous to Sir Charles; for, supposing that the folly of Arabella had really disgusted him, and made him desirous of breaking off the designed match between them, he was, as he thought, taking measures to bring this about, knowing, that if Lady Bella refused to fulfil her father's desire in this particular, a very considerable estate would descend to him.

Upon any other occasion, Mr. Glanville would not have suspected his fa-

ther of so ungenerous an action; but lovers think every thing possible which they fear; and being prepossessed with this opinion, he resolved the next morning to sound his father's inclinations, by intreating him to endeavour to prevail upon Lady Bella to marry him before her year of mourning for the marquis was expired.

Attending him, therefore, at breakfast, in his own chamber, he made his designed request, not without heedfully observing his countenance at the same time, and trembling lest he should make him an answer that might confirm his uneasy suspicion.

Sir Charles, however, agreeably surprized him, by promising to comply with his desire that day; 'For,' added he, 'though my niece has some odd ways, yet, upon the whole, she is a very accomplished woman; and when you are her husband, you may probably find the means of curing her of those little follies which at present are conspicuous enough; but being occasioned by a country education, and a perfect ignorance of the world, the instruction which then you will not scruple to give her, and which from a husband, without any offence to her delicacy, she may receive, may reform her conduct, and make her behaviour as compleat as, it must be confessed, both her person and mind now are.'

Mr. Glanville having acquiesced in the justice of this remark, as soon as breakfast was over, went to visit the two ladies, who generally drank their chocolate together.

Miss Glanville being then in Lady Bella's apartment, he was immediately admitted, where he found them engaged in a high dispute; and, much against his will, was obliged to be arbitrator in the affair, they having, upon his entrance, both appealed to him.

But, in order to place this momentous affair in a true light, it is necessary to go back a little, and acquaint the reader with what had passed in the apartment; and also, following the custom of the romance and novel-writers, in the heart of our heroine.

No sooner were her fair eyes open in the morning, than the unfortunate Sir George presenting himself to her imagination, her thoughts, to use Scudery's phrase, were at a cruel war with each other: she wished to prevent the death of this obsequious lover; but she could not resolve to preserve his life, by giving him that hope he required; and without which, she feared, it would be impossible for him to live.

After pondering a few hours upon the necessity of his case, and what a just regard to her own honour required of her, decorum prevailed so much over compassion, that she resolved to abandon the miserable Sir George to all the rigour of his destiny; when, happily for the disconsolate lover, the history of the fair Amalazontha coming into her mind, she remembered, that this haughty princess, having refused to marry the person her father recommended to her, because he had not a crown upon his head; nevertheless, when he was dying for love of her, condescended to visit him, and even to give him a little hope, in order to preserve his life: she conceived it could be no blemish to her character, if she followed the example of this most glorious princess, and suffered herself to relax a little in her severity, to prevent the effects of her lover's despair.

'Fear not, Arabella,' said she to herself; 'fear not to obey the dictates of thy compassion, since the glorious Amalazontha justifies, by her example, the means thou wilt use to preserve a noble life, which depends upon a few words thou shalt utter.'

When she had taken this resolution, she rung her bell for her women; and as soon as she was dressed, she dismissed them all but Lucy, whom she ordered to bring her paper and pens, telling her, she would write an answer to Sir George's letter.

Lucy obeyed with great joy; but by that time she had brought her lady all the materials for writing, her mind was changed; she having reflected, that Amalazontha, whose example, in order to avoid the censure of future ages, she was resolved exactly to follow, did not write to Ambioner, but paid him a visit, she resolved to do the like; and therefore bid Lucy take them away again, telling her she had thought better of it, and would not write to him.

Lucy, extremely concerned at this resolution, obeyed her very slowly, and with great seeming regret.

'I perceive,' said Arabella, 'you are afraid I shall abandon the unfortunate man you solicit for, to the violence of his despair; but though I do not intend to write to him, yet I'll make use of a method, perhaps as effectual; for, to speak truly, I mean to make him a visit; his fever I suppose being violent enough by this time to make him keep his bed.'

'And will you be so good, Madam,' said Lucy, 'to go and see the poor gentleman? I warrant you, he will be ready to die for joy when he sees you.'

'It is probable what you say may happen,' replied Arabella, 'but there must be proper precautions used to prevent those consequences which the sudden and unexpected sight of me may produce. Those about him, I suppose, will have discretion enough for that; therefore give orders for the coach to be made ready, and tell my women they must attend me; and be sure you give them directions, when I enter Sir George's chamber, to stay at a convenient distance, in order to leave me an opportunity of speaking to him, without being heard: as for you, you may approach the bed-side with me; since, being my confidant, you may hear all we have to say.'

Arabella, having thus settled the ceremonial of her visit, according to the rules prescribed by romances, sat down

down to her tea-table, having sent to know if Miss Glanville was up, and received for answer, that she would attend her at breakfast.

Arabella, who had at first determined to say nothing of this affair to her cousin, could not resist the desire she had of talking upon a subject so interesting; and, telling her with a smile, that she was about to make a very charitable visit that morning, asked her, if she was disposed to bear her company in it.

'I know you country ladies,' said Miss Glanville, 'are very fond of visiting your sick neighbours: for my part, I do not love such a grave kind of amusement; yet, for the sake of the airing, I shall be very willing to attend you.'

'I think,' said Arabella, with a more serious air than before, 'it behoves every generous person to compassionate the misfortunes of their acquaintance and friends, and to relieve them as far as lies in their power; but those miseries we ourselves occasion to others, demand, in a more particular manner, our pity; and, if consistent with honour, our relief.'

'And pray,' returned Miss Glanville, 'who is it you have done any mischief to, which you are to repair by this charitable visit, as you call it?'

'The mischief I have done,' replied Arabella, blushing, and casting down her eyes, 'was not voluntary, I assure you: yet I will not scruple to repair it, if I can; though, since my power is confined by certain unavoidable laws, my endeavours may not haply have all the success I could wish.'

'Well, but dear cousin,' interrupted Miss Glanville, 'tell me in plain English, what this mischief is, which you have done; and to what purpose you are going out this morning?'

'I am going to pay a visit to Sir George Bellmour,' replied Arabella; 'and I intreat you, fair cousin, to pardon me for robbing you of so accomplished a lover. I really always thought he was in love with you, till I was undeceived by some words he spoke yesterday, and a letter I received from him last night, in which he has been bold enough to declare his passion to me, and through the

'apprehension of my anger, is this moment dying with grief; and it is to reconcile him to life, that I have prevailed upon myself to make him a visit; in which charitable design, as I said before, I should be glad of your company.'

Miss Glanville, who believed not a word Lady Bella had said, burst out a laughing at a speech that appeared to her so extremely false and ridiculous.

'I see,' said Arabella, 'you are of a humour to divert yourself with the miseries of a despairing lover; and in this particular you greatly resemble the fair and witty Doralisa, who always jests at such maladies as are occasioned by love: however, this insensibility does not become you so well as her, since all her conduct was conformable to it, no man in the world being bold enough to talk to her of love; but you, cousin, are ready, even by your own confession, to listen to such discourses from any body; and therefore this behaviour in you may be with more justice termed levity, than indifference.'

'I perceive, cousin,' said Miss Glanville, 'I have always the worst of those comparisons you are pleased to make between me and other people; but, I assure you, as free and indifferent as you think me, I should very much scruple to visit a man, upon any occasion whatever.'

'I am quite astonished, Miss Glanville,' resumed Arabella, 'to hear you assume a character of so much severity; you who have granted favours of a kind in a very great degree criminal.'

'Favours!' interrupted Miss Glanville, 'criminal favours! pray explain yourself, Madam.'

'Yes, cousin,' said Arabella, 'I repeat it again; criminal favours, such as allowing persons to talk to you of love; not forbidding them to write to you; giving them opportunities of being alone with you for several moments together; and several other civilities of the like nature, which no man can possibly merit, under many years services, fidelity, and pains: all these are criminal favours, and highly blameable in a lady who has any regard for her reputation.'

'All these,' replied Miss Glanville, 'are nothing in comparison of making them

‘ them visits; and no woman, who has any reputation at all, will be guilty of taking such liberties.’

‘ What! Miss,’ replied Arabella, ‘ will you dare, by this insinuation, to cast any censures upon the virtue of the divine Mandana, the haughty Amalazontha, the fair Statira, the cold and rigid Parisatis, and many other illustrious ladies, who did not scruple to visit their lovers, when confined to their beds, either by the wounds they received in battle, or the more cruel and dangerous ones they suffered from their eyes? These chaste ladies, who never granted a kiss of their hand to a lover, till he was upon the point of being their husband, would nevertheless most charitably condescend to approach their bed-side, and speak some compassionate words to them, in order to promote their cure, and make them submit to live; nay, these divine beauties would not refuse to grant the same favour to persons whom they did not love, to prevent the fatal consequences of their despair.’

‘ Lord, Madam!’ interrupted Miss Glanville, ‘ I wonder you can talk so blasphemously, to call a parcel of confident creatures divine, and such terrible words.’

‘ Do you know, Miss,’ said Arabella, with a stern look, ‘ that it is of the greatest princesses that ever were, whom you speak in this irreverent manner! Is it possible that you can be ignorant of the sublime quality of Mandana, who was the heiress of two powerful kingdoms? Are you not sensible, that Amalazontha was queen of Turringia? and will you pretend to deny the glorious extraction of Statira and Parisatis, princesses of Persia?’

‘ I shall not trouble myself to deny any thing about them, Madam,’ said Miss Glanville; ‘ for I never heard of them before; and really I do not chuse to be always talking of queens and princesses, as if I thought none but such great people were worthy my notice: it looks so affected, I should imagine every one laughed at me that heard me.’

‘ Since you are so very scrupulous,’ returned Arabella, ‘ that you dare not imitate the sublimest among mortals, I can furnish you with many ex-

amples, from the conduct of persons, whose quality was not much superior to yours, which may reconcile you to an action, you at present, with so little reason, condemn: and, to name but one among some thousands, the fair Cleonice, the most rigid and austere beauty in all Sardis, paid several visits to the passionate Ligdamis, when his melancholy, at the ill success of his passion, threw him into a fever, that confined him to his bed.’

‘ And pray, Madam, who was that Cleonice?’ said Miss Glanville; ‘ and where did she live?’

‘ In Sardis, I tell you,’ said Arabella, ‘ in the kingdom of Lydia.’

‘ Oh! then it is not in our kingdom,’ said Miss Glanville: ‘ what signifies what foreigners do? I shall never form my conduct upon the example of outlandish people; what is common enough in their countries, would be very particular here; and you can never persuade me, that it is seemly for ladies to pay visits to men in their beds.’

‘ A lady,’ said Arabella, extremely angry at her cousin’s obstinacy, ‘ who will suffer men to press her hand, write to her, and talk to her of love, ought to be ashamed of such an affected niceness as that you pretend to.’

‘ I insist upon it, Madam,’ said Miss Glanville, ‘ that all those innocent liberties you rail at, may be taken by any woman without giving the world room to censure her: but, without being very bold and impudent, she cannot go to see men in their beds; a freedom that only becomes a sister, or near relation.’

‘ So then,’ replied Arabella, reddening with vexation, ‘ you will persist in affirming the divine Mandana was impudent?’

‘ If she made such indiscreet visits as those, she was,’ said Miss Glanville.

‘ Oh, Heavens!’ cried Arabella, ‘ have I lived to hear the most illustrious princess that ever was in the world, so shamefully reflected on?’

‘ Bless me, Madam!’ said Miss Glanville, ‘ what reason have you to defend the character of this princess so much? She will hardly thank you for your pains, I fancy.’

‘ Were you acquainted with the character

‘character of that most generous prince,’ said Arabella, ‘you would be convinced that she was sensible of the smallest benefits; but it is not with a view of acquiring her favour, that I defend her against your inhuman aspersions, since it is more than two thousand years since she died; yet common justice obliges me to vindicate a person so illustrious for her birth and virtue; and were you not my cousin, I should express my resentment in another manner, for the injury you do her.’

‘Truly,’ said Miss Glanville, ‘I am not much obliged to you, Madam, for not downright quarrelling with me for one that has been in her grave two thousand years: however, nothing shall make me change my opinion, and I am sure most people will be of my side of the argument.’

That moment Mr. Glanville sending for permission to wait upon Arabella, she ordered him to be admitted, telling Miss Glanville she would acquaint her brother with the dispute; to which she consented.

CHAP. II.

WHICH INCULCATES, BY A VERY GOOD EXAMPLE, THAT A PERSON OUGHT NOT TO BE TOO HASTY IN DECIDING A QUESTION HE DOES NOT PERFECTLY UNDERSTAND.

‘YOU are come very opportunely, Sir,’ said Arabella, when he entered the room, ‘to be judge of a great controversy between Miss Glanville and myself. I beseech you, therefore, let us have your opinion upon the matter.’

‘Miss Glanville maintains, that it is less criminal in a lady to hear persons talk to her of love, allow them to kiss her hand, and permit them to write to her, than to make a charitable visit to a man who is confined to his bed through the violence of his passion and despair; the intent of this visit being only to prevent the death of an unfortunate lover, and, if necessary, to lay her commands upon him to live.’

‘And this latter is your opinion, is it not, Madam?’ said Mr. Glanville.

‘Certainly, Sir,’ replied Arabella; and in this I am justified by all the heroines of antiquity.’

‘Then you must be in the right, Madam,’ returned Mr. Glanville, ‘both because your own judgment tells you so, and also the example of these heroines you mention.’

‘Well, Madam,’ interrupted Miss Glanville, hastily, ‘since my brother has given sentence on your side, I hope you will not delay your visit to Sir George any longer.’

‘How!’ said Mr. Glanville, surprised, ‘is Lady Bella going to visit Sir George?—Pray, Madam, may I presume to enquire the reason for your doing him this extraordinary favour?’

‘You are not very wise,’ said Arabella, looking gravely upon Miss Glanville, ‘to discover a thing which may haply create a quarrel between your brother and the unfortunate person you speak of: yet since this indiscretion cannot be recalled, we must endeavour to prevent the consequences of it.’

‘I assure you, Madam,’ interrupted Mr. Glanville, extremely impatient to know the meaning of these hints, ‘you have nothing to fear from me; therefore you need not think yourself under any necessity of concealing this affair from me.’

‘You are not, haply, so moderate as you pretend,’ said Arabella, (who would not have been displeased to have seen him in all the jealous transports of an enraged Orontes;) ‘but whatever ensues, I can no longer keep from your knowledge a truth your sister has begun to discover; but in telling you what you desire to know, I expect you will suppress all inclinations to revenge, and trust the care of your interest to my generosity.’

‘You are to know, then, that in the person of your friend Sir George, you have a rival, haply the more to be feared, as his passion is no less respectful than violent; I possibly tell you more than I ought,’ pursued she, blushing, and casting down her eyes, ‘when I confess, that for certain considerations, wherein perhaps you are concerned, I have received the first insinuation of this passion with disdain enough; and I assure myself that you are too generous to desire any

‘any revenge upon a miserable rival,
‘of whom death is going to free you.’

Then, taking Sir George’s letter out of her cabinet, she presented it to Mr. Glanville.

‘Read this,’ added she; ‘but read it without suffering yourself to be transported with any violent motions of anger; and as in fight I am persuaded you would not oppress a fallen and vanquished foe, so in love I may hope an unfortunate rival will merit your compassion.’

‘Never doubt it, Madam,’ replied Mr. Glanville, receiving the letter, which Miss Glanville, with a beating heart, earnestly desired to hear read. Her brother, after asking permission of Arabella, prepared to gratify her curiosity; but he no sooner read the first sentence, than, notwithstanding all his endeavours, a smile appeared in his face; and Miss Glanville, less able, and indeed less concerned to restrain her mirth at the uncommon stile, burst out a laughing, with so much violence, as obliged her brother to stop, and counterfeited a terrible fit of coughing, in order to avoid giving Arabella the like offence.

The astonishment of this lady, at the surprizing and unexpected effect her lover’s letter produced on Miss Glanville, kept her in a profound silence, her eyes wandering from the sister to the brother; who, continuing his cough, was not able, for some moments, to go on with his reading.

Arabella, during this interval, having recovered herself a little, asked Miss Glanville if she found any thing in a lover’s despair capable of diverting her so much as she seemed to be with that of the unfortunate Sir George.

‘My sister, Madam,’ said Mr. Glanville, preventing her reply, ‘knows so many of Sir George’s infidelities, that she cannot persuade herself he is really in such a dangerous way as he insinuates: therefore you ought not to be surprized, if she is rather disposed to laugh at this epistle, than to be moved with any concern for the writer, who, though he is my rival, I must say, appears to be in a deplorable condition.’

‘Pray, Sir,’ resumed Arabella, a little composed by those words, ‘finish the letter: your sister may possibly

find more cause for pity than contentment, in the latter part of it.’

Mr. Glanville, giving a look to his sister, sufficient to make her comprehend that he would have her restrain her mirth for the future, proceeded in his reading; but every line increasing his strong inclination to laugh, when he came to the pathetick wish, that her fair eyes might shed some tears upon his tomb, no longer able to keep his assumed gravity, he threw down the letter in a counterfeited rage.

‘Curse the stupid fellow!’ cried he, ‘is he mad, to call the finest black eyes in the universe fair.—Ah! cousin,’ said he to Arabella, ‘he must be little acquainted with the influence of your eyes, since he can so egregiously mistake their colour.’

‘And it is very plain,’ replied Arabella, ‘that you are little acquainted with the sublime language in which he writes, since you find fault with an epithet which marks the beauty, not the colour, of those eyes he praises; for, in fine, fair is indifferently applied, as well to black and brown eyes, as to light and blue ones, when they are either really lovely in themselves, or by the lover’s imagination created so: and therefore, since Sir George’s prepossession has made him see charms in my eyes, which, questionless, are not there, by calling them fair, he has very happily expressed himself, since therein he has the sanction of those great historians, who wrote the histories of lovers he seems to imitate, as well in his actions as stile.’

‘I find my rival is very happy in your opinion, Madam,’ said Mr. Glanville; ‘and I am apt to believe, I shall have more reason to envy than pity his situation.’

‘If you keep within the bounds I prescribe you,’ replied Arabella, ‘you shall have no reason to envy his situation; but, considering the condition to which his despair has by this time certainly reduced him, humanity requires that we should take some care of him; and, to shew you how great my opinion of your generosity is, I will even intreat you to accompany me in the visit I am going to make him.’

Mr. Glanville, being determined, if possible,

possible, to prevent her exposing herself, affected to be extremely moved at this request; and rising from his chair in great seeming agitation, traversed the room for some moments, without speaking a word: then suddenly stopping—

‘And can you, Madam,’ said he, looking upon Arabella, ‘suppose that I will consent to your visiting my rival; and that I will be mean enough to attend you myself to his house? Do you think that Orontes, you have often reproached me with, would act in such a manner?’

‘I don’t know how Orontes would have acted in this case,’ said Arabella, ‘because it never happened that such a proof of his submission was ever desired of him; but considering that he was of a very fiery and jealous disposition, it is probable he might act as you do.’

‘I always understood, Madam,’ said Mr. Glanville, ‘that Orontes was a favourite of yours, but it seems I was mistaken.’

‘You will be very unjust,’ said Arabella, ‘to draw any unfavourable conclusion from what I have said, to the prejudice of that valiant prince, for whom I confess I have a great esteem; and, truly, whoever reflects upon the great actions he did in the wars between the Amazons and the fierce Naobarzanes king of the Cilicians, must needs conceive a very high idea of his virtue; but if I cannot bring the example of Orontes to influence you in the present case, I can mention those of other persons, no less illustrious for their birth and courage, than him. Did not the brave Memnon, when his rival Oxyatres was sick, intreat the beautiful Bartsina to favour him with a visit? And the complaisant husband of the divine Parisatis was not contented with barely desiring her to visit Lysimachus, who was dying with despair at their marriage, but would many times bring her himself to the bed-side of this unfortunate lover, and, leaving her there, give him an opportunity of telling her what he suffered for her sake.’

‘I am afraid,’ Madam,’ said Mr. Glanville, ‘I shall never be capable

of imitating either the brave Memnon, nor the complaisant Lysimachus, in this case; and the humour of Orontes seems to me the most commendable.’

‘Nevertheless,’ said Arabella, ‘the humour of Orontes cost him an infinite number of pains; and it may happen, you will as near resemble him in his fortune as you do in his disposition: but pray let us end this dispute at present. If you are not generous enough to visit an unfortunate rival, you shall not put a stop to the charity of my intentions; and since Miss Glanville is all of a sudden become so severe, that she will not accompany me in this visit, I shall be contented with the attendance of my women.’

Saying this, she rose from her seat, calling Lucy, and ordered her to bid her companions attend.

Mr. Glanville, seeing her thus determined, was almost mad with vexation.

‘Upon my soul, Madam,’ said he, seizing her hand, ‘you must not go.’

‘How, Sir!’ said Arabella, sternly.

‘Not without seeing me die first,’ resumed he, in a languishing tone.

‘You must not die,’ replied Arabella, ‘gravely; nor must you pretend to hinder me from going.’

‘Nay, Madam,’ said Glanville, ‘one of these two things will certainly happen: either you must resolve not to visit Sir George, or else be contented to see me die at your feet.’

‘Was ever any lady in so cruel a dilemma?’ said Arabella, throwing herself into the chair in a languishing posture: ‘what can I do to prevent the fate of two persons, one of whom I infinitely pity, and the other, obstinate as he is, I cannot hate? Shall I resolve to let the miserable Bellmour die, rather than grant him a favour the most rigid virtue would not refuse him? or shall I, by opposing the impetuous humour of a lover, to whom I am somewhat obliged, make myself the author of his death? Fatal necessity! which obliges me either to be cruel or unjust; and, with a disposition to neither, makes me, in some degree, guilty of both.’

C H A P. III.

IN WHICH OUR HEROINE IS IN SOME
LITTLE CONFUSION.

WHILE Arabella was uttering this pathetick complaint, Mr. Glanville, with great difficulty, kept himself from smiling; and, by some supplicating looks to his sister, prevented her laughing out; yet she giggled in secret behind her fan; but Arabella was so lost in her melancholy reflections, that she kept her eyes immoveably fixed on the ground for some moments: at last, casting an upbraiding glance at Glanville—

‘Is it possible, cruel person that you are!’ said she to him, ‘that you can, without pity, see me suffer so much uneasiness; and, knowing the sensibility of my temper, can expose me to the grief of being accessary to the death of an unfortunate man, guilty indeed of a too violent passion, which merits a gentler punishment than that you doom him to?’

‘Don’t be uneasy, dear cousin,’ interrupted Miss Glanville; ‘I dare assure you Sir George won’t die.’

‘It is impossible to think that,’ said Arabella, ‘since he has not so much as received a command from me to live; but tell me truly,’ pursued she, ‘do you believe it probable, that he will obey me, and live?’

‘Indeed, Madam,’ said Miss Glanville, ‘I could swear for him that he will.’

‘Well,’ replied Arabella, ‘I will content myself with sending him my commands in writing; but it is to be feared they will not have so much efficacy upon his spirit.’

Mr. Glanville, extremely pleased that she had laid aside her design of visiting Sir George, did not oppose her writing to him, though he was plotting how to prevent the letter reaching his hands; and while she went into her closet to write, he conferred with his sister upon the means he should use, expressing, at the same time, great resentment against Sir George, for endeavouring to supplant him in his cousin’s affection.

‘What then,’ said Miss Glanville, ‘do you really imagine Sir George is in love with Lady Bella?’

‘He is either in love with her person or estate,’ replied Mr. Glanville, ‘or perhaps with both; for she is

‘handsome enough to gain a lover of his merit, though she had no fortune; and she has fortune enough to do it, though she had no beauty.’

‘My cousin is well enough, to be sure,’ said Miss Glanville; ‘but I never could think her a beauty.’

‘If,’ replied Mr. Glanville, ‘a most lovely complexion, regular features, a fine stature, an elegant shape, and an inexpressible grace in all her motions, can form a beauty, Lady Bella may pretend to that character, without any dispute.’

‘Though she was all that you say,’ returned Miss Glanville, ‘I am certain Sir George is not in love with her.’

‘I wish I was certain of that,’ replied Mr. Glanville; ‘for it is very probable you are mistaken.’

‘You may see by his letter,’ interrupted Miss Glanville, ‘what a jest he makes of her; and if you had heard how he talked to her the other day in the garden, you would have died with laughing; yet my poor cousin thought he was very serious, and was so foolishly pleased!’

‘I assure you, Charlotte,’ said Mr. Glanville, gravely, ‘I shall take it very ill, if you make so free with your cousin’s little foibles; and if Sir George presumes to make a jest of her, as you say, I shall teach him better manners.’

‘You are the strangest creature in the world!’ said Miss Glanville: ‘a minute or two ago, you was wishing to be sure he was not in love with her; and now you are angry, when I assure you he is only in jest.’

Arabella, that moment coming out of her closet, broke off their discourse. ‘I have written to Sir George,’ said she, addressing herself to Mr. Glanville; ‘and you are at liberty, if you please, to read my letter, which I propose to send away immediately.’

Mr. Glanville, taking the letter out of her hand, with a low bow, began to read it to himself; but Arabella, willing his sister should also be acquainted with the contents, obliged him, much against his will, to read it aloud. It was as follows—

‘ARABELLA, TO BELLMOUR.

‘WHATEVER offence your presumptuous declaration may have given me, yet my resentment will

' will be appeased with a less punishment than death : and that grief and submission you have testified in your letter, may haply have already procured you pardon for your fault, provided you do not forfeit it by disobedience.

' I therefore command you to live, and command you by all that power you have given me over you.

' Remember I require no more of you, than Parisates did of Lysimachus, in a more cruel and insupportable misfortune : imitate, then, the obedience and submission of that illustrious prince; and though you should be as unfortunate as he, let your courage also be equal to his; and, like him, be contented with the esteem that is offered you, since it is all that can be bestowed, by

' ARABELLA.

Mr. Glanville, finding by this epistle, that Arabella did not design to encourage the addresses of Sir George, would not have been against his receiving it, had he not feared the consequence of his having such a convincing proof of the peculiarity of her temper in his possession; and while he kept the letter in his hand, as if he wanted to consider it a little better, he meditated on the means to prevent it's ever being delivered; and had possibly fixed upon some successful contrivance, when a servant coming in, to inform the ladies that Sir George was come to wait on them, put an end to his schemes; and he immediately ran down to receive him, not being willing to increase, by his stay, the astonishment and confusion which appeared in the countenance of Arabella, at hearing a man, whom she had believed and represented to be dying, was come to pay her a visit.

CHAP. IV.

WHERE THE LADY EXTRICATES HERSELF OUT OF HER FORMER CONFUSION, TO THE GREAT ASTONISHMENT, WE WILL SUPPOSE, OF THE READER.

MISS Glanville, not having so much delicacy as her brother, could not help exulting a little upon this occasion.

' After the terrible fright you have been in, Madam,' said she, ' upon Sir George's account, I wonder you do not rather think it is his ghost than himself that is come to see us.'

' There is no question but it is himself that is come,' said Arabella, (who had already reconciled this visit to her first thoughts of him;) ' and it is, haply, to execute his fatal design in my presence, that has brought him here; and, like the unfortunate Agilmond, he means to convince me of his fidelity and love, by falling upon his sword before my eyes.'

' Bless me, Madam,' said Miss Glanville, ' what horrid things come into your head! I vow you terrify me out of my wits, to hear you.'

' There is no occasion for your fears,' interrupted Arabella; ' since we already suspect his designs, it will be very easy to prevent them: had the prince of the Sarmatians known the fatal intentions of her despairing lover, doubtless, she would have used some precautions to hinder him from executing them; for want of which, she saw the miserable Agilmond weltering in his blood at her feet; and with reason accused herself of being the cause of so deplorable a spectacle.'

The astonishment Miss Glanville was in, to hear her cousin talk in this manner, kept her from giving her any interruption, while she related several other terrible instances of despair.

In the mean time, Sir George, who was impatient to go up to Lady Bella's apartment, having flattered himself into a belief, that his letter was favourably received; and that he should be permitted to *hope* at least, made a short visit to Sir Charles in his own room; and, accompanied by Mr. Glanville, who was resolved to see in what manner Arabella received him, went to her apartment.

As he had taken care, at his entrance, to accommodate his looks to the character he had assumed of an humble despairing lover, Arabella no sooner saw him, but her countenance changed; and, making a sign to Mr. Glanville, who could not comprehend what she meant, to seize upon the guard of his sword, she hastily stepped forward to meet him.

' I am too well convinced,' said she to Sir George, ' that the intent of your

‘coming hither to-day is to commit some violence against yourself before my eyes: but listen not, I beseech you, to the dictates of your despair. Live; I command you, live; and since you say I have the absolute disposal of your life, do not deprive yourself of it, without the consent of her on whom you profess to have bestowed it.’

Sir George, who did not imagine Arabella would communicate his letter to her cousins, and only expected some distant hints from her concerning it, was so confounded at this reception before them, that he was not able to reply: he blushed, and turned pale alternately; and, not daring to look either upon Miss Glanville or her brother, or to meet the eyes of the fair visionary, who with great impatience expected his answer, he hung down his head in a very silly posture; and, by his silence, confirmed Arabella in her opinion.

As he did not want for wit and assurance, during that interval of silence and expectation from all parties, his imagination suggested to him the means of extricating himself out of the ridiculous perplexity he was in; and as it concerned him greatly to avoid any quarrel with the brother and sister, he determined to turn the whole matter into a jest; but, if possible, to manage it so that Arabella should not enter into his meaning.

Raising therefore his eyes, and looking upon Arabella with a melancholy air—

‘You are not deceived, Madam,’ said he: ‘this criminal with whom you are so justly offended, comes with an intention to die at your feet, and breathe out his miserable life, to expiate those crimes of which you accuse him: but since your severe compassion will oblige me to live, I obey, O most divine, but cruel Arabella! I obey your harsh commands; and, by endeavouring to live, give you a more convincing proof of that respect and submission I shall always have for your will.’

‘I expected no less from your courage and generosity,’ said Arabella, with a look of great complacency; ‘and since you so well know how to imitate the great Lysimachus in your obedience, I shall be no less acknow-

ledging than the fair Parisatis; but will have for you an esteem equal to that virtue I have observed in you.’

Sir George having received this gracious promise with a most profound bow, turned to Mr. Glanville with a kind of chastened smile upon his countenance.

‘And you, fortunate and deserving knight,’ said he, ‘happy in the affections of the fairest person in the world! grudge me not this small alleviation of my misfortunes; and envy me not that esteem which alone is able to make me suffer life, while you possess, in the heart of the divine Arabella, a felicity that might be envied by the greatest monarchs in the world.’

As diverting as this scene was, Mr. Glanville was extremely uneasy; for though Sir George’s stratagem took, and he believed he was only indulging the gaiety of his humour by carrying on this farce, yet he could not endure he should divert himself at Arabella’s expence. The solemn speech he had made him, did indeed force him to smile; but he soon assumed a graver look, and told Sir George, in a low voice, that when he had finished his visit he should be glad to take a turn with him in the garden.

Sir George promised to follow him, and Mr. Glanville left the room, and went into the gardens; where the baronet, having taken a respectful leave of Arabella, and by a sly glance convinced Miss Glanville he had sacrificed her cousin to her mirth, went to join her brother.

Mr. Glanville, as soon as he saw him, walked to meet him with a very reserved air; which Sir George observing, and being resolved to keep up his humour—

‘What, inhuman but too-happy lover,’ said he, ‘what am I to understand by that cloud upon your brow? Is it possible that thou canst envy me the small comfort I have received? And, not satisfied with the glorious advantages thou possessest, wilt thou still deny me that esteem which the divine Arabella has been pleased to bestow upon me?’

‘Pray, Sir George,’ said Mr. Glanville, ‘lay aside this pompous stile: I am not disposed to be merry at present, and have not all the relish for
this

‘this kind of wit that you seem to expect. I desired to see you here, that I might tell you, without witnesses, I take it extremely ill you should presume to make my cousin the object of your mirth. Lady Bella, Sir, is not a person with whom such liberties ought to be taken; nor will I, in the double character of her lover and relation, suffer it from any one whatever.’

‘Cruel fortune!’ said Sir George, stepping back a little, and lifting up his eyes, ‘shall I always be exposed to thy persecutions? And must I, without any apparent cause, behold an enemy in the person of my friend; who, though without murmuring, I resign to him the adorable Arabella, is yet resolved to dispute with me a satisfaction which does not deprive him of any part of that glorious fortune to which he is destined? Since it is so, unjust and cruel friend,’ pursued he, ‘strike this breast which carries the image of the divine Arabella; but think not that I will offer to defend myself, or lift my sword against a man beloved by her.’

‘This is all very fine,’ returned Mr. Glanville, hardly able to forbear laughing; ‘but it is impossible, with all your gaiety, to hinder me from being serious upon this business.’

‘Then be as serious as thou wilt, dear Charles,’ interrupted Sir George, ‘provided you will allow me to be gay; and not pretend to infect me with thy unbecoming gravity.’

‘I have but a few words to say to you, then, Sir,’ replied Mr. Glanville: ‘either behave with more respect to my cousin, or prepare to give me satisfaction for the insults you offer her.’

‘Oh! I understand you, Sir,’ said Sir George; ‘and because you have taken it into your head to be offended at a trifle of no consequence in the world, I must give you a fair chance to run me through the body! There is something very foolish, faith, in such an extravagant expectation: but since custom has made it necessary that a man must venture his soul and body upon these important occasions, because I will not be out of the fashion, you shall command me whenever you think fit; though I shall fight with

my school-fellow with a very ill will, I assure you.’

‘There is no necessity for fighting,’ said Mr. Glanville, blushing at the ludicrous light in which the gay baronet had placed his challenge; ‘the concession I have required is very small, and not worth the contesting for on your side. Lady Bella’s peculiarity, to which you contribute so much, can afford you at best but an ill-natured diversion, while it gives me a real pain; and sure you must acknowledge you are doing me a very great injury, when you endeavour to confirm a lady, who is to be my wife, in a behaviour that excites your mirth, and makes her a fit object for your ridicule and contempt.’

‘You do Lady Bella a much greater injury than I do,’ replied Sir George, ‘by supposing she can ever be an object of ridicule and contempt: I think very highly of her understanding; and though the bent of her studies has given her mind a romantick turn, yet the singularity of her manners is far less disagreeable than the lighter follies of most of her sex.’

‘But to be absolutely perfect,’ interrupted Mr. Glanville, ‘I must cure her of that singularity; and therefore I beg you will not persist in assuming a behaviour conformable to her romantick ideas; but rather help me to banish them from her imagination.’

‘Well,’ replied Sir George, ‘since you no longer threaten, I’ll do what I can to content you; but I must quit my heroicks by degrees, and sink with decency into my own character, otherwise she will never endure me in her presence.’

Arabella and Miss Glanville appearing in the walk, broke off the conversation. The baronet and Mr. Glanville walked forward to meet them; but Arabella, who did not desire company, struck into another walk, whither Mr. Glanville following, proposed to join her, when he saw his father, who had been taking a turn there alone, make up to Arabella; and supposing he would take that opportunity to talk to her concerning him, he went back to his sister and Sir George, whose conversation he interrupted, to the great regret of Miss Glanville.

CHAP. V.

IN WHICH WILL BE FOUND ONE OF THE FORMER MISTAKES PURSUED, AND ANOTHER CLEARED UP, TO THE GREAT SATISFACTION OF TWO PERSONS; AMONG WHOM THE READER, WE EXPECT, WILL MAKE A THIRD.

ARABELLA no sooner saw Sir Charles advancing towards her, when, sensible of the consequence of being alone with a person whom she did not doubt would make use of that advantage to talk to her of love, she endeavoured to avoid him, but in vain; for Sir Charles, guessing her intentions, walked hastily up to her; and, taking hold of her hand—

‘You must not go away, Lady Bella,’ said he; ‘I have something to say to you.’

Arabella, extremely discomposed at this behaviour, struggled to free her hand from her uncle; and giving him a look, on which disdain and fear were visibly painted—

‘Unhand me, Sir,’ said she, ‘and force me not to forget the respect I owe you as my uncle, by treating you with a severity such uncommon insolence demands.’

Sir Charles, letting go her hand in a great surprize at the word insolent, which she had used, asked her if she knew to whom she was speaking.

‘Questionless, I am speaking to my uncle,’ replied she; ‘and it is with great regret I see myself obliged to make use of expressions no way conformable to the respect I bear that sacred character.’

‘And pray, Madam,’ said Sir Charles, somewhat softened by this speech, ‘who is it that obliges you to lay aside that respect you seem to acknowledge is due to your uncle?’

‘You do, Sir,’ replied she; ‘and it is with infinite sorrow that I beheld you assuming a character unbecoming the brother of my father.’

‘This is pretty plain, indeed,’ interrupted Sir Charles; ‘but pray, Madam, inform me what it is you complain of?’

‘You, questionless, know much better than I can tell you,’ replied Arabella, blushing, ‘the offence I ac-

cuse you of; nor is it proper for me to mention what it would not become me to suffer.’

‘Zounds!’ cried Sir Charles, no longer able to suppress his growing anger, ‘this is enough to make a man mad.’

‘Ah! I beseech you, Sir,’ resumed Arabella, ‘suffer not an unfortunate and ill-judged passion to be the bane of all your happiness and virtue: recalc your wandering thoughts; reflect upon the dishonour you will bring upon yourself by persisting in such unjustifiable sentiments.’

‘I do not know how it is possible to avoid it,’ said Sir Charles; ‘and, notwithstanding all this fine reasoning, there are few people but would fly into greater extremities; but my affection for you makes me—’

‘Hold! hold! I conjure you, Sir!’ interrupted Arabella; ‘force me not to listen to such injurious language; carry that odious affection somewhere else, and do not persecute an unfortunate maid, who has contributed nothing to thy fault, and is only guilty of too much compassion for thy weakness.’

‘Good God!’ cried Sir Charles, starting back, and looking upon Arabella with astonishment; ‘how I pity my son! What would I not give if he did not love this girl!’

‘Think not,’ replied Arabella, ‘that the passion your son has for me makes your condition a bit the worse; for I would be such as I am with respect to you, were there no Mr. Glanville in the world.’

‘I never thought, niece,’ said Sir Charles, after a little pause, ‘that any part of my behaviour could give you the offence you complain of, or authorize that hatred and contempt you take the liberty to express for me; but since it is so, I promise you I will quit your house, and leave you to yourself: I have always been solicitous for your welfare; and, ungrateful as you are—’

‘Call me not ungrateful,’ interrupted Arabella again; ‘Heaven is my witness, that had you not forgot I was your niece, I would have always remembered you was my uncle; and not only have regarded you as such, but have looked upon you as another father, under whose direction Pro-

vidence

'vidence had placed me, since it had deprived me of my real father; and whose tenderness and care might have in some measure supplied the loss I had of him: but Heaven has decreed it otherwise; and since it is its will that I should be deprived of the comfort and assistance my orphan state requires, I must submit, without murmuring, to my destiny. Go then, unfortunate and lamented uncle,' pursued she, wiping some tears from her fine eyes; 'go, and endeavour by reason and abscence to recover thy repose; and be assured, whenever you can convince me you have triumphed over these sentiments which now cause both our unhappiness, you shall have no cause to complain of my conduct towards you.'

Finishing these words, she left him with so much speed, that it would have been impossible for him to have stopped her, though he had intended it: but indeed he was so lost in wonder and confusion at a behaviour for which he was not able to assign any other cause than madness, that he remained fixed in the same posture of surprize, in which she had left him; and from which he was first interrupted by the voice of his son, who, seeing Arabella flying towards the house in great seeming emotion, came to know the result of their conversation.

'Sir,' said Mr. Glanville, who had spoken to his father before, but had no answer, 'will you not inform me what success you have had with my cousin? How did she receive your proposal?'

'Speak of her no more,' said Sir Charles; 'she is a proud ungrateful girl, and unworthy the affection you have for her.'

Mr. Glanville, who trembled to hear so unfavourable an answer to his enquiries, was struck dumb with his surprize and grief; when Sir Charles taking notice of the alteration in his countenance—

'I am sorry,' said he, 'to find you have set your heart upon this fantastic girl; if ever she be your wife, which I very much doubt, she will make you very unhappy: but, Charles,' pursued he, 'I would advise you to think no more of her; content yourself with the estate you gain by her refusal of you; with that

addition to your own fortune, you may pretend to any lady whatever; and you will find many that are full as agreeable as your cousin, who will be proud of your addresses.'

'Indeed, Sir,' said Mr. Glanville, with a sigh, 'there is no woman upon earth whom I would chuse to marry, but Lady Bella; I flattered myself I had been happy enough to have made some progress in her affection; but it seems I was mistaken; however, I should be glad to know, if she gave you any reasons for refusing me.'

'Reasons,' said Sir Charles; 'there is no making her hear reason, or expecting reason from her; I never knew so strange a woman in my life; she would not allow me to speak what I intended concerning you; but interrupted me every moment, with some high-flown stuff or other.'

'Then I have not lost all hopes of her,' cried Mr. Glanville, eagerly; 'for since she did not hear what you had to say, she could not possibly deny you.'

'But she behaved in a very impertinent manner to me,' interrupted Sir Charles; 'complained of my harsh treatment of her; and said several other things, which, because of her uncommon stile, I could not perfectly understand; yet they seemed shocking; and, upon the whole, treated me so rudely, that I am determined to leave her to herself, and trouble my head no more about her.'

'For God's sake, dear Sir,' said Mr. Glanville, alarmed at this resolution, 'suspend your anger till I have seen my cousin: there is some mistake, I am persuaded, in all this. I know she has some very odd humours, which you are not so well acquainted with, as I am. I'll go to her, and prevail upon her to explain herself.'

'You may do so if you please,' replied Sir Charles; 'but I fear it will be to very little purpose; for I really suspect her head is a little turned: I do not know what to do with her; it is not fit she should have the management of herself; and yet it is impossible to live upon easy terms with her.'

Mr. Glanville, who did not doubt but Arabella had been guilty of some very ridiculous folly, offered nothing more

more in her justification; but, having attended his father to his own chamber, went to Arabella's apartment.

He found the pensive fair-one in a melancholly posture, her head reclined upon one of her fair hands; and though her eyes were fixed upon a book she held in the other, yet she did not seem to read, but rather to be wholly buried in contemplation.

Mr. Glanville having so happily found her alone, (for her women were not then in her chamber) seated himself near her; having first asked pardon for the interruption he had given to her studies; and Arabella, throwing aside her book, prepared to listen to his discourse; which by the agitation which appeared in his looks, she imagined would be upon some extraordinary subject.

'I left my father just now,' said he, 'in a great deal of uneasiness, on account of something you said to him, Lady Bella; he apprehends you are disobliged, and he would willingly know how.'

'Has your father then acquainted you with the subject of our conversation?' interrupted Arabella.

'I know what would have been the subject of your conversation,' replied Mr. Glanville, 'if you had been pleased to listen to what Sir Charles intended to say to you on my behalf.'

'On your behalf?' interrupted Arabella: 'Ah, poor deceived Glanville! how I pity thy blind sincerity! But it is not for me to undeceive thee: only thus much I may say to you, beware of committing your interests to a person who will be a much better advocate for another than for you.'

Mr. Glanville, rejoiced to find by these words, that her resentment against his father was occasioned by a suspicion so favourable for him, assured her, that Sir Charles wished for nothing more earnestly than that he might be able to merit her esteem; and that it was to dispose her to listen to his addresses, that he wanted to discourse with her that morning.

Mr. Glanville being obliged, through his knowledge of his cousin's temper, to speak to her in this distant manner, went on with his assurances of his father's candour in this respect; and Arabella, who would not declare her reasons for doubting it, only replied,

that she wished Sir Charles meant all that he had said to him; but that she could not persuade herself to believe him sincere, till his future actions had convinced her he was so.

Mr. Glanville, impatient to let his father know how greatly he had been mistaken in the cause of Arabella's behaviour, made his visit shorter than he would otherwise have done, in order to undeceive him.

'Is it possible,' said Sir Charles, when his son had repeated the conversation he had just had with Arabella, 'that she could be so foolish as to imagine I had a design to propose any one else to her but you? What reason have I ever given her, to think I would not be glad to have her for my daughter-in-law? Indeed, she has some odd ways that are very disagreeable; but she is one of the best matches in England for all that: poor girl!' pursued he, 'she had reason to be angry, if that was the case; and now I remember, she cried, when I told her I would leave the house; yet her spirit was so great, that she told me I might go. Well, I'll go and make it up with her; but who could have imagined she would have been so foolish?' Sir Charles, at the repetition of these words, hurried away to Arabella's apartment.

'Niece,' said he, at his entrance, 'I am come to ask your pardon, for having led you into a belief, that I meant—'

'It is enough, Sir,' interrupted Arabella, 'I grant you my pardon for what is past; and as it does not become me to receive submissions from my uncle, while he remembers he is so, I will dispense with your acknowledgments at present; only to convince me, that this sudden alteration is sincere, avoid, I beseech you, for the future, all occasions of displeasing me.'

'I protest,' cried Sir Charles, 'that I never intended—'

'I will not hear you say a word more of your past intentions,' interrupted Arabella again; 'I have forgot them all; and, while you continue to regard me as your niece, I will never remember them to your disadvantage.'

'Then I may hope——' said Sir Charles.

'Oh!

'Oh, Heavens!' cried Arabella, not suffering him to proceed; 'do you come to insult me thus, with a mock repentance? And has my easiness in being so ready to forget the injury you would have done me, made you presumptuous enough to cherish an insolent hope that I will ever change my resolution?'

'How vexatious is this!' replied Sir Charles, fretting to see her continually mistaking him. 'I swear to you, by all that is sacred, that it is my son, for whom I would solicit your consent!'

'How!' said Arabella, astonished, 'will you then be just at last? And can you resolve to plead for that son, whose interest, but a moment ago, you would have destroyed?'

'I see,' said Sir Charles, 'it is impossible to convince you.'

'No, no!' interrupted Arabella, hastily; 'it is not impossible but my own ardent wishes that it may be so, will help to convince me of the truth of what you say: for, in fine, do you think, I shall not be as glad as yourself, to find you capable of acting honourably by your son; and to see myself no longer the cause of the most unjustifiable conduct imaginable?'

Sir Charles was opening his mouth, to press her in favour of Mr. Glanville; whom, notwithstanding her strange behaviour, he was glad to find she loved; when Arabella preventing him—

'Seek not, I beseech you,' said she, 'to destroy that belief I am willing to give your words, by any more attempts at this time to persuade me; for truly, I shall interpret your solicitude no way in your favour; therefore, if you desire I should be convinced you are sincere, let the silence I require of you be one proof of it.'

Sir Charles, who looked excessively out of countenance at such a peremptory command from his niece, was going out of her chamber in a very ill humour, when the dinner-bell ringing, she gave him her hand with a very gracious air; and permitted him to lead her into the dining-room, where they found Mr. Glanville, his sister, and Sir George, who had been detained to dinner by Miss Glanville, expecting their coming.

CHAP. VI.

CONTAINING SOME ACCOUNT OF
THALESTRIS, QUEEN OF THE
AMAZONS, WITH OTHER CURI-
OUS ANECDOTES.

LADY Bella having recovered her usual cheerfulness, through the satisfaction she felt at her uncle's returning to reason, and the abatement she perceived in Sir George's extreme melancholy, mixed in the conversation with that wit and vivacity which was natural to her, and which so absolutely charmed the whole company, that not one of them remembered any of her former extravagancies.

Mr. Glanville gazed on her with a passionate tenderness, Sir George with admiration, and the old baronet with wonder and delight.

But Miss Glanville, who was inwardly vexed at the superiority her cousin's wit gave her over herself, wished for nothing more than an opportunity of interrupting a conversation in which she could have no share; and, willing to put them in mind of some of Arabella's strange notions, when she observed them disputing concerning some of the actions of the ancient Romans, she very innocently asked Sir George, whether in former times women went to the wars, and fought like men? 'For my cousin,' added she, 'talks of one Thaletris, a woman, that was as courageous as any soldier whatever.'

Mr. Glanville, horridly vexed at a question that was likely to engage Arabella in a discourse very different from that she had been so capable of pleasing in, frowned very intelligibly at his sister; and, to prevent any answer being given to her absurd demand, directed some other conversation to Arabella: but she, who saw a favourite subject started, took no notice of what Mr. Glanville was saying to her; but, directing her looks to Sir George—

'Though Miss Glanville,' said she, 'be a little mistaken in the name of that fair queen she has mentioned; yet I am persuaded you know whom she means; and that it is the renowned Thaletris, whose valour staggers
her

'her belief, and of whom she wants to be informed.'

'Aye, aye, Thalestris,' said Miss Glanville: 'it is such a strange name I could not remember it; but, pray, was there ever such a person?'

'Certainly, Madam, there was,' replied Sir George; 'she was queen of the Amazons, a warlike nation of women, who possessed great part of Cappadocia, and extended their conquests so far, that they became formidable to all their neighbours.'

'You find, Miss,' said Arabella, 'I did not attempt to impose upon you, when I told you of the admirable valour of that beautiful queen; which indeed was so great, that the united princes, in whose cause she fought, looked upon her assistance to be equal to that of a whole army; and they honoured her accordingly with the most distinguishing marks of their esteem and acknowledgment, and offered her the chief command of their forces.'

'O shameful!' cried Sir Charles; 'offer a woman the command of an army! Brave fellows indeed, that would be commanded by a woman! Sure you mistake, niece; there never was such a thing heard of in the world.'

'What, Sir,' said Arabella, 'will you contradict a fact attested by the greatest historians that ever were? You may as well pretend to say, there were never such persons as Oroondates or Juba, as dispute the existence of the famous Thalestris.'

'Why, pray, Madam,' said Sir Charles, 'who were those?'

'One of them,' replied Arabella, 'was the great king of Scythia; and the other, prince of the Two Mauritaniæ.'

'Ods-heart!' interrupted Sir Charles, 'I believe their kingdoms are in the moon; I never heard of Scythia, or the Two Mauritaniæ, before.'

'And yet, Sir,' replied Arabella, 'those kingdoms are doubtless as well known as France or England; and there is no question, but the descendants of the great Oroondates, and the valiant Juba, sway the sceptres of them to this day.'

'I must confess,' said Sir George, 'I have a very great admiration for

those two renowned princes, and have read their beautiful exploits with infinite pleasure; notwithstanding which, I am more inclined to esteem the great Artaban than either of them.'

'Though Artaban,' replied Arabella, 'is, without question, a warrior equal to either of them, and haply no person in the world possessed so sublime a courage as his was; yet, it may be, your partiality proceeds from another cause; and you having the honour to resemble him in some little infidelities he was accused of, with less justice than yourself perhaps, induces you to favour him more than any other.'

Arabella blushed when she ended these words: and Sir George replied, with a sigh—

'I have, indeed, the honour, Madam, to resemble the great Artaban, in having dared to raise my thoughts towards a divine person, who, with reason, condemns my adorations.'

'Hey-day!' cried Sir Charles, 'are you going to speak of divine things, after all the fables you have been talking of? Troth, I love to hear young men enter upon such subjects—but pray, niece, who told you Sir George was an infidel?'

'Mr. Glanville,' replied Arabella: 'and I am inclined to think he spoke truth; for Sir George has never pretended to deny it.'

'How!' interrupted Sir Charles; 'I am sorry to hear that. I hope you have never,' added he, looking at the young baronet, 'endeavoured to corrupt my son with any of your free-thinking principles: I am for every body having liberty of conscience; but I cannot endure to hear people of your stamp endeavouring to propagate your mischievous notions; and because you have no regard for your own future happiness, disturbing other people in the laudable pursuit of theirs.'

'We will not absolutely condemn Sir George,' said Arabella, 'till we have heard his history from his own mouth, which he promised some time ago to relate when I desired it.'

'I do not imagine his history is fit to be heard by ladies,' said Sir Charles; 'for your infidels live a strange kind of life.'

'However

‘ However that may be,’ replied Arabella, ‘ we must not dispense with Sir George from performing his promise; I dare say there are no ladies here who will think the worse of him for freely confessing his faults.’

‘ You may answer for yourself, if you please, Madam,’ said Sir Charles; ‘ but I hope my girl there will not say as much.’

‘ I dare say my cousin is not so rigid,’ said Arabella; ‘ she has too much the spirit of Julia in her to find fault with a little infidelity.’

‘ I am always obliged to you for your comparisons, cousin,’ said Miss Glanville; ‘ I suppose this is greatly to my advantage, too.’

‘ I assure you, Madam,’ said Sir George, ‘ Lady Bella has done you no injury by the comparison she has just now made; for Julia was one of the finest princesses in the world.’

‘ Yet she was not free from the suspicion of infidelity,’ replied Arabella; ‘ but though I do not pretend to tax my cousin with that fault, yet it is with a great deal of reason that I say she resembles her in her volatile humour.’

‘ I was never thought to be ill-humoured in my life, Madam,’ said Miss Glanville, colouring; ‘ and I cannot imagine what reason I have given you for saying I am.’

‘ Nay, cousin,’ said Arabella, ‘ I am not condemning your humour; for, to say the truth, there are a great many charms in a volatile disposition; and, notwithstanding the admirable beauty of Julia, it is possible she made as many slaves by her light and airy carriage, as she did by her eyes, though they were the fairest in the world, except the divine Cleopatra’s.’

‘ Cleopatra!’ cried Sir Charles; ‘ why she was a gypsy, was she not?’

‘ I never heard her called so,’ said Arabella, gravely; ‘ and I am apt to believe you are not at all acquainted with her: but pray,’ pursued she, ‘ let us wave this discourse at present, and prepare to listen to Sir George’s

relation of his life; which, I dare say, is full of very extraordinary events—however, Sir,’ added she, directing her speech to the young baronet, ‘ I am afraid your modesty will induce you to speak with less candour than you ought, of those great actions, which questionless you have performed; therefore we shall hear your history, with greater satisfaction, from the mouth of your faithful squire, who will not have the same reasons that you have, for suppressing what is most admirable in the adventures of your life.’

‘ Since it is your pleasure, Madam,’ replied Sir George, ‘ to hear my adventures, I will recount them as well as I am able myself, to the end that I may have an opportunity of obliging you by doing some violence to my natural modesty, which will not suffer me to relate things the world have been pleased to speak of to my advantage, without some little confusion.’

Then, casting down his eyes, he seemed to be recollecting the most material passages in his life. Mr. Glanville, though he could have wished he had not indulged Arabella in her ridiculous request, was not able to deny himself the diversion of hearing what kind of history he would invent; and therefore resolved to stay and listen to him.

Miss Glanville was also highly delighted with the proposal; but Sir Charles, who could not conceive there could be any thing worth listening to, in a young rake’s account of himself, got up with an intention to walk in the garden; when, perceiving it rained, he changed his resolution, and resuming his seat, prepared to listen, as every one else did, to the expected story.

When Sir George, after having paused a quarter of an hour longer, during which all the company observed a profound silence, began his relation in this manner, addressing himself to Arabella.



THE
FEMALE QUIXOTE.

BOOK VI.

CHAP. I.

CONTAINING THE BEGINNING OF
SIR GEORGE'S HISTORY; IN
WHICH THE INGENIOUS RELAT-
OR HAS EXACTLY COPIED THE
STILE OF ROMANCE.

‘T’HOUGH at present,
‘Madam, you behold me
‘in the quality of a pri-
‘vate gentleman, in the
‘possession only of a to-
‘lerable estate, yet my

‘birth is illustrious enough; my an-
‘cestors having formerly worn a crown;
‘which, as they won by their valour,
‘so they lost by their misfortune only.’

‘How,’ interrupted Sir Charles,
‘are you descended from kings? Why,
‘I never heard you say so before:
‘pray, Sir, how far are you removed
‘from royal blood? and which of
‘your forefathers was it that wore a
‘crown?’

‘Sir,’ replied Sir George, ‘it is
‘not much more than eight hundred
‘years since my ancestors, who were
‘Saxons, swayed the sceptre of Kent;
‘and from the first monarch of that
‘mighty kingdom am I lineally de-
‘scended.’

‘Pray, where may that kingdom of
‘Kent lie?’ said Sir Charles.

‘Sir,’ replied Sir George, ‘it is
‘bounded by Suffex on the south-west;
‘Surrey on the west; the English Chan-

‘nel on the south; Dover Straights on
‘the south-east; and the Downs on
‘the east; and it is divided from Mid-
‘dlesex and Essex on the north by the
‘Thames.’

‘A mighty kingdom, indeed!’ said
Sir Charles: ‘why, it makes but a
‘very small part of the kingdom of
‘Britain now: well, if your ancestors
‘were kings of that country, as it is
‘now called, it must be confessed their
‘dominions were very small.’

‘However that may be,’ said Ara-
bella, ‘it raises Sir George greatly in
‘my esteem, to hear he is descended
‘from kings; for, truly, a royal ex-
‘traction does infinitely set off noble
‘and valiant actions, and inspires only
‘lofty and generous sentiments—there-
‘fore, illustrious prince, (for in that
‘light I shall always consider you)
‘be assured, though fortune has de-
‘spoiled you of your dominions, yet
‘since she cannot deprive you of your
‘courage and virtue, Providence will
‘one day assist your noble endeavours
‘to recover your rights, and place you
‘upon the throne of your ancestors,
‘from whence you have been so in-
‘humanly driven: or, haply, to re-
‘pair that loss, your valour may pro-
‘cure you other kingdoms, no less
‘considerable than that to which you
‘was born.’

‘For Heaven’s sake, niece,’ said Sir
Charles, ‘how come such improbable
‘things into your head? Is it such an
‘easy matter, think you, to conquer
‘kingdoms,

‘kingdoms, that you can flatter a young man, who has neither fleets nor armies, with such strange hopes?’

‘The great Artaban, Sir,’ resumed Arabella, ‘had neither fleets nor armies, and was master only of a single sword; yet he soon saw himself greater than any king, disposing the destinies of monarchs by his will, and deciding the fates of empires by a single word: but pray let this dispute rest where it is, and permit Sir George to continue his relation.’

‘It is not necessary, Madam,’ resumed Sir George, ‘to acquaint you with the misfortunes of my family, or relate the several progressions it made towards the private condition in which it now is; for, besides that reciting the events of so many hundred years may haply, in some measure, try your patience, I should be glad if you would dispense with me from entering into a detail of accidents that would sensibly afflict me: it shall suffice, therefore, to inform you, that my father, being a peaceable man, fond of retirement and tranquillity, made no attempts to recover the sovereignty from which his ancestors had been unjustly expelled; but quietly beheld the kingdom of Kent in the possession of other masters, while he contented himself with the improvement of that small pittance of ground, which was all that the unhappy Prince Veridomer, my grandfather, was able to bequeath to him.’

‘Hey-day!’ cried Sir Charles, ‘will you new-christen your grandfather, when he has been in his grave these forty years? I knew honest Sir Edward Bellmour very well, though I was but a youth when he died; but I believe no person in Kent ever gave him the title of Prince Veridomer: Fie! fie! these are idle brags.’

Sir George, without taking notice of the old baronet’s heat, went on with his narration in this manner—

‘Things were in this state, Madam, when I was born. I will not trouble you with the relation of what I did in my infancy.’

‘No, pray skip over all that,’ interrupted Sir Charles; ‘I suppose your infancy was like other people’s; what can there be worth hearing in that?’

‘You are deceived, Sir,’ said Arabella; ‘the infancy of illustrious personages has always something very extraordinary in it; and from their childish words and actions there have been often presages drawn of their future greatness and glory.’

‘Not to disoblige Sir Charles, however,’ said the young Prince of Kent, ‘I will not repeat many things which I said and did in the first years of my life, that those about me thought very surprizing; and from them prognosticated that very strange accidents would befall me.’

‘I have been a witness of some very unfavourable prognosticks of you,’ said Sir Charles, smiling; ‘for you was the most unlucky bold spark that ever I knew in my life.’

‘It is very certain,’ pursued Sir George, ‘that the forwardness of my spirit gave great uneasiness to my father; who being, as I said before, inclinable to a peaceable and sedentary life, endeavoured as much as possible to repress that vivacity in my disposition, which he feared might involve me in dangerous enterprizes. The pains he took in my education, I recompensed by a more than ordinary docility; and, before I was thirteen, performed all my exercises with a marvellous grace, and, if I may dare say so, was, at those early years, the admiration and wonder of all that saw me.’

‘Lady Bella had some reason to fear your modesty, I find,’ said Sir Charles, smiling; ‘for, methinks you really speak too slightly of your excellences.’

‘However that may be,’ resumed Sir George; ‘my father saw these early instances of a towering genius in me, with a pleasure, chastened by his fears, that the grandeur of my courage would lead me to attempt something for the recovery of that kingdom, which was my due, and which might haply occasion his losing me.’

‘Possessed with these thoughts, he carefully avoided saying any thing to me concerning the glorious pretences to which my birth gave me a right; and often wished it had been possible for him to conceal from me, that I was the true and lawful heir of the kingdom of Kent; a circumstance he never chose to mention to any person,

‘son, and would have been glad if it had always remained a secret.’

‘And so it was a secret,’ interrupted Sir Charles; ‘for, till this day, I never heard of it; and it might still have been a secret if you had pleased; for nobody, I dare say, would suspect such a thing; and very few, I believe, will be inclined to think there is any thing in such an improbable tale.’

‘Notwithstanding all my father’s endeavours to the contrary, Madam,’ pursued Sir George, ‘I cherished those towering sentiments the knowledge of my birth inspired me with; and it was not without the utmost impatience that I brooked the private condition to which I found myself reduced.’

“Cruel fate!” would I sometimes cry; “was it not enough to deprive me of that kingdom, which is my due, and subject me to a mean and inglorious state; but to make that condition infinitely more grievous, must thou give me a soul towering above my abject fortune? A soul, that cannot but disdain the base submission I must pay to those who triumph in the spoils of my ruined house? A soul, which sees nothing above it’s hopes and expectations? And, in fine, a soul, that excites me daily to attempt things worthy of my birth, and those noble sentiments I inherit from my great forefathers? Ah!” pursued I, “unhappy Bellmour; what hinders thee from making thyself known and acknowledged for what thou art? What hinders thee from boldly asserting thy just and natural rights; and from defying the usurper, who detains them from thee? What hinders thee, I say?”

‘What?’ interrupted Sir Charles; ‘why the fear of a halter, I suppose: there is nothing more easy than to answer that question.’

‘Such, Madam,’ said Sir George, ‘were the thoughts which continually disturbed my imagination; and, doubtless, they had not failed to push me on to some hazardous enterprize, had not a fatal passion interposed; and by it’s sweet, but dangerous allurements, stifled for a while that flame which ambition, and the love of glory, kindled in my soul.’

Sir George here pausing, and fixing his eyes with a melancholy air on the ground, as if prest with a tender remembrance—

Mr. Glanville asked him, smiling, if the thoughts of poor Dolly disturbed him? ‘Pray,’ added he, ‘give us the history of your first love, without any mixture of fable; or shall I take the trouble off you? For you know, I am very well acquainted with your affair with the pretty milk-maid, and can tell it very succinctly.’

‘It is true, Sir,’ said Sir George, sighing, ‘I cannot recal the idea of Dorothea into my remembrance without some pain; that fair but unfaithful shepherdess, who first taught me to sigh, and repaid my tenderness with the blackest infidelity; yet I will endeavour to compose myself, and go on with my narration.’

‘Be pleased to know, then, Madam,’ pursued Sir George, ‘that having my thoughts, in this manner, wholly employed with the disasters of my family, I had arrived to my seventeenth year, without being sensible of the power of love; but the moment now arrived, which was to prove fatal to my liberty. Following the chace one day with my father, and some other gentlemen, I happened to lag a little behind them; and, being taken up with my ordinary reflections, I lost my way, and wandered a long time, without knowing or considering whither I was going. Chance at last conducted me to a pleasant valley, surrounded with trees; and, being tired with riding, I alighted, and tying my horse to a tree, walked forward, with an intention to repose myself a few moments under the shade of one of those trees that had attracted my observation: but while I was looking for the most convenient place, I spied, at the distance of some few yards from me, a woman lying asleep upon the grass. Curiosity tempted me to go nearer this person; and, advancing softly, that I might not disturb her, I got near enough to have a view of her person: but, ah! Heavens! what wonders did my eyes encounter in this view!—The age of this fair sleeper seemed not to exceed sixteen; her shape was formed with the exactest symmetry; one of her hands

‘ hands supported her head ; the other, as it lay carelessly stretched at her side, gave me an opportunity of admiring it’s admirable colour and proportion. The thin covering upon her neck discovered part of it’s inimitable beauty to my eyes ; but her face, her lovely face, fixed all my attention.

‘ Certain it is, Madam, that, out of this company, it would be hard to find any thing so perfect as what I now viewed. Her complexion was the purest white imaginable, heightened by the enchanting glow, which dyed her fair cheeks with a colour like that of a new-blown rose : her lips, formed with the greatest perfection, and of a deeper red, seemed to receive new beauties from the fragrance of that breath that parted from them. Her auburn hair fell in loose ringlets over her neck ; and some straggling curls, that played upon her fair forehead, set off by a charming contrast the whiteness of that skin it partly hid : her eyes indeed were closed ; and though I knew not whether their colour and beauty were equal to those other miracles in her face, yet their proportion seemed to be large ; and the snowy lids, which covered them, were admirably set off by those long and sable lashes that adorned them.

‘ For some moments I gazed upon this lovely sleeper, wholly lost in wonder and admiration.

“ Where,” whispered I, “ where has this miracle been concealed, that my eyes were never blessed with the sight of her before ? ” These words, though I uttered them softly, and with the utmost caution, yet by the murmuring noise they made, caused an emotion in the beautiful sleeper, that she started, and presently after opened her eyes : but what words shall I find to express the wonder, the astonishment, and rapture, which the sight of those bright stars inspired me with ? The flames which darted from those glorious orbs, cast such a dazzling splendor upon a sight too weak to bear a radiance so unusual, that stepping back a few paces, I contemplated at a distance that brightness which began already to kindle a consuming fire in my soul.

‘ Bless me ! ’ interrupted Sir Charles, confounded at so pompous a description ; ‘ who could this be ? ’

‘ The pretty milk-maid, Dolly Acorn,’ replied Mr. Glanville, gravely : ‘ did you never see her, Sir, when you was at your seat, at ——— ? She used often to bring cream to my lady.’

‘ Aye, aye,’ replied Sir Charles, ‘ I remember her ; she was a very pretty girl. And so it was from her eyes that all those splendors and flames came, that had like to have burnt you up, Sir George ? Well, well, I guess how the story will end : pray let us hear it out.’

‘ I have already told you, Madam,’ resumed Sir George, ‘ the marvellous effects the sight of those bright eyes produced upon my spirit : I remained fixed in a posture of astonishment and delight ; and all the faculties of my soul were so absorbed in the contemplation of the miracles before me, that I believe, had she still continued before my eyes, I should never have moved from the place where I then stood ; but the fair virgin, who had spied me at the small distance to which I was retired, turned hastily about, and flew away with extraordinary swiftness.

‘ When love, now lending me wings, whom admiration had before made motionless, I pursued her so eagerly, that at last I overtook her ; and, throwing myself upon my knees before her—

“ Stay, I conjure you,” cried I ; and if you be a divinity, as your celestial beauty makes me believe, do not refuse the adoration I offer you : but if, as I most ardently wish, you are a mortal, though sure the fairest that ever graced the earth ; stop a moment, to look upon a man, whose respects for you as a mortal fall little short of those adorations he offers you as a goddess.”

‘ I can’t but think,’ cried Sir Charles, laughing, ‘ how poor Dolly must be surprised at such a rhodomontade speech ! ’

‘ Oh, Sir ! ’ replied Mr. Glanville, ‘ you will find she will make as good a one.’

‘ Will she, by my troth ? ’ said Sir Charles : ‘ I don’t know how to believe it.’

‘ This

‘ This action,’ pursued Sir George, ‘ and the words I uttered, a little surprized that fair maid, and brought a blush into her lovely cheeks; but recovering herself, she replied with an admirable grace—

“ I am no divinity,” said she; “ and therefore your adorations are misplaced: but if, as you say, my countenance moves you to any respect for me, give me a proof of it, by not endeavouring to hold any farther discourse with me, which is not permitted me from one of your sex and appearance.”

‘ A very wise answer, indeed!’ interrupted Sir Charles again. ‘ Very few town-ladies would have disclaimed the title of goddesses, if their lovers had thought proper to bestow it upon them. I am mightily pleased with the girl for her ingenuity.’

‘ The discretion of so young a damsel,’ resumed Sir George, ‘ charmed me no less than her beauty; and I besought her, with the utmost earnestness, to permit me a longer conversation with her.

“ Fear not, lovely virgin,” said I, “ to listen to the vows of a man, who, till he saw you, never learnt to sigh: my heart, which defended its liberty against the charms of many admirable ladies, yields, without reluctance, to the pleasing violence your beauties lay upon me. Yes, too charming and dangerous stranger, I am no longer my own master; it is in your power to dispose of my destiny: consider therefore, I beseech you, whether you can consent to see me die? For I swear to you, by the most sacred oaths, unless you promise to have some compassion on me, I will no longer behold the light of day.”

‘ You may easily conceive, Madam, that, considering this lovely maid in the character of a shepherdess, in which she appeared, I made her a declaration of my passion, without thinking myself obliged to observe those respects, which, to a person of equal rank with myself, decorum would not have permitted me to forget.

‘ However, she repelled my boldness with so charming a modesty, that I began to believe she might be a person of illustrious birth, disguised

‘ under the mean habit she wore: but, having requested her to inform me who she was, she told me her name was Dorothea; and that she was daughter to a farmer that lived in the neighbouring valley. This knowledge increasing my confidence, I talked to her of my passion, without being the least afraid of offending her.’

‘ And therein you was greatly to blame,’ said Arabella: ‘ for, truly, though the fair Dorothea told you she was daughter to a farmer, yet, in all probability, she was of a much higher extraction, if the picture you have drawn of her be true.

‘ The fair Arsinoe, Princess of Armenia, was constrained for a while to conceal her true name and quality, and pass for a simple country-woman, under the name of Delia: yet the generous Philadelph, Prince of Cilicia, who saw and loved her under that disguise, treated her with all the respect he would have done, had he known she was the daughter of a king. In like manner, Prince Philoxipes, who fell in love with the beautiful Policrete, before he knew she was the daughter of the great Solon, and while he looked upon her as a poor stranger, born of mean parents; nevertheless, his love supplying the want of those advantages of birth and fortune, he wooed her with a passion as full of awe and delicacy, as if her extraction had been equal to his own. And therefore those admirable qualities the fair Dorothea possessed, might also have convinced you she was not what she seemed, but, haply, some great princess in disguise.’

‘ To tell you the truth, Madam,’ replied Sir George, ‘ notwithstanding the fair Dorothea informed me she was of a mean descent, I could not easily forego the opinion that she was of an illustrious birth; and the histories of those fair princesses you have mentioned, coming into my mind, I also thought it very possible, that this divine person might either be the daughter of a great king, or law-giver, like them; but, being wholly engrossed by the violence of my new-born affection, I listened to nothing but what most flattered my hopes; and, addressing my lovely shepherdess

shepherdes with all the freedom of a person who thinks his birth much superior to hers; she listened to my protestations, without any seeming reluctance, and condescended to assure me before we parted, that she did not hate me. So fair a beginning, seemed to promise me the most favourable fortune I could with reason expect. I parted from my fair shepherdes with a thousand vows of fidelity; exacting a promise from her, that she would meet me as often as she conveniently could, and have the goodness to listen to those assurances of inviolable tenderness my passion prompted me to offer her. When she left me, it seemed as if my soul had forsaken my body to go after her; my eyes pursued her steps as long as she was in sight; I envied the ground she prest as she went along, and the breezes that kissed that celestial countenance in their flight.

For some hours I stood in the same posture in which she had left me; contemplating the sudden change I had experienced in my heart, and the beauty of that divine image, which was now engraven in it. Night drawing on, I began to think of going home; and, untying my horse, I returned the way I had come; and at last struck into a road, which brought me to the place where I parted from the company; from whence I easily found my way home, so changed both in my looks and carriage, that my father, and all my friends, observed the alteration with some surprize.

CHAP. II.

IN WHICH SIR GEORGE, CONTINUING, HIS SURPRIZING HISTORY, RELATES A MOST STUPENDOUS INSTANCE OF A VALOUR ONLY TO BE PARALLELED BY THAT OF THE GREAT CROONDATES, CÆSAR, &c. &c. &c.

FOR some months, continued Sir George; I prosecuted my addresses to the admirable Dorothea; and I flattered myself with a hope that I had made some progress in her heart; but, alas! this deceitful fair one, who only laughed at the tor-

ments she made me endure at the time she vowed eternal constancy to me, gave her hand to a lover of her father's providing, and abandoned me, without remorse, to the most cruel despair.

I will not trouble you, Madam, with the repetition of those complaints which this perfidious action drew from me for a long time. At length, my courage enabling me to overcome the violence of my grief, I resolved to think of the ungrateful Dorothea no more; and the sight of another beauty compleating my cure; I no longer remembered the unfaithful shepherdes but with indifference.

Thus, Madam, have I faithfully related one of those infidelities where, with my enemies slander me; who can support their assertion with no better proof than that I did not die when Dorothea abandoned me; but I submit it to your candour, whether an unfaithful mistress, deserved such an instance of affection from a lover she had betrayed?

Why, really, replied Arabella, after a little pause, you had some excuse to plead for your failure in this point: and though you cannot be called the most perfect amongst lovers, seeing you neither died, nor was in danger of dying; yet neither ought you to be ranked among those who are most culpable. But pray proceed in your story; I shall be better able to form a right judgment of your merit as a lover, when I have heard all your adventures.

My passion for Dorothea, resumed Sir George, being cured by her treachery towards me, the love of glory began again to revive in my soul. I panted after some occasion to signalize my valour, which yet I had met with no opportunity of doing; but hearing that a mighty army was preparing to march upon a secret expedition, I privately quitted my father's seat; and attended only by my faithful squire, I took the same route the army had taken, and arrived the day before the terrible battle of ——— was fought, where, without making myself known, I performed such prodigies of valour as astonished all who beheld me. Without doubt I should have been highly rewarded by the com-

‘mander, who certainly would have given me the honour of a victory my sword alone had procured for him; but having unwittingly engaged myself too far in pursuit of the flying enemy, I found myself alone, encompassed with a party of about five hundred men, who, seeing they were pursued only by a single man, faced about, and prepared to kill or take me prisoner.’

‘Pray, Sir,’ interrupted Sir Charles, ‘when did all this happen? and how came it to pass that your friends have been ignorant to this moment of those prodigies of valour you performed at that battle? I never heard you was ever in a battle. Fame has done you great injustice by concealing the part you had in that famous victory.’

‘The great care I took to conceal myself,’ replied Sir George, ‘was one reason why my friends did not attribute to me the exploits which the knight in black armour, who was no other than myself, performed; and the accident I am going to relate prevented my being discovered, while the memory of those great exploits were yet fresh in the minds of those I had so greatly obliged.’

‘Be pleased to know, therefore, Madam, that seeing myself about to be encompassed by this party of the enemy, I disdained to fly; and, though I was alone, resolved to sustain their attack, and sell my life as dear as possible.’

‘Why, if you did so, you was a madman,’ cried Sir Charles, in a heat: ‘the bravest man that ever lived would not have presumed to fight with so great a number of enemies. What could you expect but to be cut in pieces? Pooh! pooh! don’t think any body will credit such a ridiculous tale; I never knew you was so addicted to—’

Lying, perhaps, the good knight would have said; but Sir George, who was concerned he was present at his legend, and could not blame him for doubting his veracity, prevented his utterance of a word he would be obliged to take ill, by abruptly going on with his story.

‘Placing my back therefore against a tree,’ pursued he, ‘to prevent my being assaulted behind, I presented my shield to the boldest of these as-

failants; who, having struck an impotent blow upon it, as he was lifting up his arm to renew his attack, I cut it off with one stroke of my sword, and the same instant plunged it to the hilt in the breast of another, and clove the skull of a third, who was making at me, in two parts.’

Sir Charles, at this relation, burst into a loud fit of laughter; and being more inclined to divert himself, than be offended at the folly and vanity of the young baronet, he permitted him to go on with his surprising story without giving him any other interruption.

‘These three executions, Madam,’ pursued Sir George, ‘were the effects only of so many blows, which raised such indignation in my enemies, that they prest forward in great numbers to destroy me; but having, as I before said, posted myself so advantageously, that I could only be assaulted before, not more than three or four could attack me at one time. The desire of lengthening out my life, till happily some succour might come to my relief, so invigorated my arm, and added to my ordinary strength an almost irresistible force, that I dealt death at every blow; and in less than a quarter of an hour, saw more than fifty of my enemies at my feet, whose bodies served for a bulwark against their fellows swords.’

‘The commander of this little body not having generosity enough to be moved with those prodigious effects of valour in my favour, was transported with rage at my resistance; and the sight of so many of his men slain before his face, served only to increase his fury; and that moment, seeing that, with two more blows, I had sent two of his most valiant soldiers to the shades, and that the rest, fearing to come within the length of my sword, had given me a few moments respite—

“Ah! cowards!” cried he, “are you afraid of a single man? And will you suffer *him* to escape from your vengeance, who has slain so many of your brave comrades before your eyes?”

‘These words inspiring them with a fierceness, such as he desired, they advanced towards me with more fury than before. By this time I had received several large wounds, and my blood

‘ blood ran down from many parts of
 ‘ my body; yet was I not sensible of
 ‘ any decay of strength, nor did the
 ‘ settled designs of my enemies to de-
 ‘ stroy me, daunt me in the least. I still
 ‘ relied upon the assistance I expected
 ‘ Providence would send to my relief,
 ‘ and determined, if possible, to pre-
 ‘ serve my life till it arrived.

‘ I fought, therefore, with a resolu-
 ‘ tion which astonished my enemies,
 ‘ but did not move them to any regard
 ‘ for my safety; and observing their
 ‘ brutal commander a few paces from
 ‘ me encouraging his men, both with
 ‘ his cries and gestures, indignation
 ‘ against this inhuman wretch so trans-
 ‘ ported me out of my discretion, that
 ‘ I quitted my post, in order to sacri-
 ‘ fice him to my revenge.

‘ Seeing me advance furiously to-
 ‘ wards him, he turned pale with fear,
 ‘ and endeavoured to shelter himself in
 ‘ the midst of his men, who, more va-
 ‘ liant than himself, opposed themselves
 ‘ to my rage to favour his retreat; but
 ‘ quickly clearing myself a way with
 ‘ my sword, I pressed towards the bar-
 ‘ barous coward, and, ere he could
 ‘ avoid the blow I aimed at him, it
 ‘ struck him senseless at my feet.

‘ My particular revenge thus satis-
 ‘ fied, I was sensible of the fault I had
 ‘ committed in quitting my post, by
 ‘ which I exposed myself to be sur-
 ‘ rounded by the enemy. I endeavoured
 ‘ to regain it, but in vain; I was
 ‘ beset on all sides, and now despaired
 ‘ of any safety; and therefore only
 ‘ fought to die courageously, and make
 ‘ as many of my enemies as I could
 ‘ attend my fall.

‘ Exasperated by the misfortunes of
 ‘ their commander, they pressed upon
 ‘ me with redoubled fury. Faint as I
 ‘ was with the loss of blood, and so
 ‘ fatigued with the past action, and
 ‘ the obstinate fight I had maintained
 ‘ so long with such a considerable num-
 ‘ ber, I could hardly any longer lift
 ‘ up my arm; and, to compleat my
 ‘ misfortune, having thrust my sword
 ‘ into the body of one of the forwardest
 ‘ of my enemies, in my endeavouring
 ‘ to regain it, it broke in pieces, and
 ‘ the hilt only remained in my hand.

‘ This accident compleated my de-
 ‘ feat; deprived of my sword, I was
 ‘ no longer capable of making any
 ‘ defence; several of them pressed up-

‘ on me, at once, and throwing me
 ‘ down, tied my hands together be-
 ‘ hind me. Shame and rage at this
 ‘ indignity worked so forcibly upon
 ‘ my spirits, weakened as I then was,
 ‘ that I fell into a swoon. What hap-
 ‘ pened till my recovery I am not able
 ‘ to tell; but at the return of my
 ‘ senses, I found myself laid on a bed
 ‘ in a tolerable chamber, and some
 ‘ persons with me, who kept a pro-
 ‘ found silence.’

C H A P. III.

A LOVE-ADVENTURE, AFTER THE
 ROMANTICK TASTE.

‘ **R**ECOLLECTING in a few
 ‘ moments all that happened to
 ‘ me, I could not chuse but be sur-
 ‘ prized at finding myself treated with
 ‘ so little severity, considering I was
 ‘ prisoner to persons who had been
 ‘ witnesses of the great quantity of
 ‘ blood I had shed in my own defence.
 ‘ My wounds had been dressed while
 ‘ I continued in my swoon; and the
 ‘ faces of those persons who were
 ‘ about me expressed nothing of un-
 ‘ kindness.

‘ After reflecting some time longer
 ‘ on my situation, I called to a young
 ‘ man, who sat near my bed-side, and
 ‘ intreated him to inform me where I
 ‘ was, and to whom I was a prisoner;
 ‘ but could get no other answer to
 ‘ those questions than a most civil in-
 ‘ treaty to compose myself, and not
 ‘ protract the cure of my wounds by
 ‘ talking, which the surgeons had de-
 ‘ clared would be of a bad conse-
 ‘ quence; and had therefore ordered
 ‘ me to be as little disturbed as pos-
 ‘ sible.

‘ Notwithstanding this remonstrance,
 ‘ I repeated my request, promising to
 ‘ be entirely governed by them for the
 ‘ future in what regarded my health,
 ‘ provided they would satisfy me in
 ‘ those particulars: but my attendant
 ‘ did not so much as reply to those im-
 ‘ portunities; but, to prevent the con-
 ‘ tinuance of them, rose from his seat,
 ‘ and retired to the other end of the
 ‘ chamber.

‘ I passed that day and several others
 ‘ without being able to learn the truth
 ‘ of my condition. All this time I

“ was diligently waited on by the two persons I had first seen, neither of whom I could prevail upon to inform me of what I desired to know; and judging by this obstinate reserve, and the manner of my treatment, that there was some mystery in the case, I forbore to ask them any more questions, conceiving they had particular orders not to answer them.

“ The care that was taken to forward my cure, in three weeks entirely restored me to health. I longed impatiently to know what was to be my destiny, and busied myself in conjecturing it in vain; when one morning an elderly lady entered my chamber, at whose appearance my two attendants retired.

“ After she had saluted me very civilly, and enquired after my health, she seated herself in a chair near my bed-side, and spoke to me in this manner—

“ I make no question, Sir, but you are surprized at the manner in which you have been treated, and the care there has been taken to prevent discovering to you the place where you now are; but you will doubtless be more surprized to hear you are in the fortress of —, and in the house of Prince Marcomire, whose party you fought against alone, and whom you so dangerously wounded before you was taken prisoner by his men.”

“ Is it possible, Madam,” said I, who from the first moment of her appearance had been in a strange perplexity, “ is it possible I am in the house of a man whose life I endeavoured so eagerly to destroy? And is it to him, who oppressed me so basely with numbers, that I am obliged for the succour I have received?”

“ It is not to him,” replied the lady, “ that you are obliged for the favourable treatment you have had; but listen to me patiently, and I will disclose the truth of your adventure.

“ Prince Marcomire, who was the person that headed that party against which you so valiantly defended yourself, after the loss of the battle, was hastening to throw himself into this place, where his sister, and many ladies of quality, had come for security: your indiscreet pursuit engaged you in the most unequal combat that ever was fought; and—”

“ Nay, Sir,” interrupted Arabella, “ though I do not refuse to give you all the praises your gallant defence of yourself against five hundred men deserves; yet I cannot agree with that lady, in saying, it was the most unequal combat that ever was fought: for, do but reflect, I beseech you, upon that which the brave prince of Mauritania sustained against twice that number of men, with no other arms than his sword; and, you having been in battle that day, was, as I conceive, completely armed. The young prince of Egypt, accompanied only by the valiant, but indiscreet, Cepio his friend, engaged all the king of Armenia’s guards, and put them all to flight. The courageous Ariobasanes scorned to turn his back upon a whole army; not to mention the invincible Artaban, whom a thousand armies together could not have made to turn.”

“ Be pleased to observe, Madam,” said Sir George, “ that to the end I may faithfully recount my history, I am under a necessity of repeating things, which, haply, may seem too advantageous for a man to say of himself: therefore I, indeed, greatly approve of the custom, which, no doubt, this inconveniency introduced, of a squire, who is thoroughly instructed with the secrets of his master’s heart, relating his adventures, and giving a proper eulogium of his rare valour, without being in danger of offending the modesty of the renowned knight; who, as you know, Madam, upon those occasions, commodiously slips away.

“ It being, however, this lady’s opinion, that no man ever undertook a more hazardous combat, or with greater odds, against him, she did not fail to express her admiration of it in very high terms.

“ The noise of this accident,” pursued she, “ was soon spread over the whole town; and the beautiful Sydiniris, Marcomire’s sister, hearing that her brother was wounded, as it was thought, to death, and that the person who killed him, was taken prisoner; she flew out to meet her wounded brother, distracted with grief, and vowing to have the severest tortures executed on him; who had thus barbarously murdered her brother.

“ brother. Those who bore that unhappy prince, having brought him into the house, his wounds were searched; and the surgeons declared they were very dangerous.

“ Sydimiris, hearing this, redoubled her complaints and vows of vengeance against you: her brother having then the chief authority in the place, she commanded, in his name, to have you brought hither, and to be most strictly guarded; determined, if her brother died, to sacrifice you to his ghost.

“ Full of these sanguinary resolutions, she left his chamber, having seen him laid in bed, and his wounds dressed; but passing along a gallery to her own apartment, she met the persons who were bringing you to the room that was to be your prison: you was not,” pursued the lady, yet recovered from your swoon, so that they carried you like one that was dead; they had taken off your helmet to give you air, by which means your face being quite uncovered, pale, languishing, and your eyes closed, as if in death, presented the most moving, and, at the same time, most pleasing object in the world.

“ Sydimiris, who stopt, and for a moment eagerly gazed upon you, lost all of a sudden the fierceness which before had animated her against you; and lifting up her eyes to view those men that carried you—

“ Are you sure,” said she to them, that this is the person who wounded my brother?”

“ Yes, Madam,” replied one of them; “ this must be he, since there was no other in his company; and he alone sustained the attack of five hundred men; and would probably not have left one of them alive, had not his sword, by breaking, put it into our power to take him prisoner.”

“ Carry him away,” said Sydimiris; but let his wounds be dressed, and let him be carefully looked to, that, if my brother dies, he may be punished as he deserves.”

“ Pronouncing these words in a low and faltering voice, she turned her eyes a second time upon you; then, hastily averting her looks, she hurried to her own chamber, and threw her-

self into a chair, with all the marks of a very great disturbance.

“ The affection I have for her, being the person who had brought her up, and most favoured with her confidence, made me behold her in this condition with great concern; and supposing it was her brother that disquieted her, I besought her not to give way to the violence of her grief, but to hope that Heaven would restore him to her prayers.

“ Alas! my dear Urinoe,” said she, “ I am more culpable than you can imagine; and I grieve less for the condition to which I see Marcomire reduced, than for that moderation wherewith I am constrained, spite of myself, to behold his enemy.

“ Yes, dear Urinoe,” pursued she, blushing, and casting down her eyes, the actions of this unknown appear to me in quite another light since I have seen him; and, instead of looking upon him as the murderer of my brother, I cannot help admiring that rare valour with which he defended himself against so great a number of enemies; and am even ready to condemn the furious Marcomire for oppressing so brave a man.”

“ As I had never approved of those violent transports of grief and rage, which she had expressed upon the first news of her brother’s misfortune; and as I looked upon your glorious defence with the utmost admiration; so, far from condemning the change of her thoughts, I confirmed her in the favourable opinion she began to entertain of you; and, continuing to make remarks upon all the particulars of the combat, which had come to our knowledge, we found nothing in your behaviour but what increased our admiration.

“ Sydimiris therefore, following the dictates of her own generosity, as well as my advice, placed two persons about you, whose fidelity we could rely on, and gave them orders to treat you with all imaginable care and respect, but not to inform you of the place in which you was, or to whom you was prisoner.

“ In the mean time, Marcomire, whose wounds had been again examined, was declared out of danger

“ by

“ by the surgeons; and he having understood the excess of his sister’s grief, and the revenge she had vowed against you, gave her thanks for those expressions of her tenderness; and also uttered some threats, which intimated a violent hatred against you, and a design of prosecuting his revenge upon you, as soon as he was in a condition to leave his chamber.

“ Sydimiris, who heard him, could with difficulty dissemble her concern.

“ Ah! Urinoc,” said she to me, when we were alone; “ it is now, that I more than ever repent of that excess of rage which transported me against the brave unknown. I have thereby put him entirely into my brother’s power, and shall be haply accessory to that death he is meditating for him, or else a perpetual imprisonment.”

“ This reflection gave her so much pain, that I could not chuse but pity her; and considering that the only way to preserve you, was for her to dissemble a rage equal to Marcomire’s against you, in order to prevent being suspected of any design in your favour, I persuaded her to join with him in every thing he said; while, in the mean time, we would endeavour to get you cured of your wounds, that you might at least be in a condition once more to defend yourself with that miraculous valour Heaven has bestowed on you.

“ Sydimiris perceiving her brother would soon be in a condition to execute his threats, resolved to hazard every thing, rather than to expose you to his rage: she therefore communicated to me her design of giving you liberty, and, by presenting a sufficient reward to your guard, inducing them to favour your escape.

“ I undertook to manage this business in her name, and have done it so effectually, that you will this night be at liberty, and may depart the town immediately, in which it will be dangerous to stay any time, for fear of being discovered.

“ Sydimiris forbade me to let you know the person to whom you would be obliged for your freedom; but I

“ could not endure that you should unjustly involve the sister of Marcomire in that resentment you will questionless always preserve against him; and to keep you from being innocently guilty of ingratitude, I resolved to acquaint you with the nature of those obligations you owe to her.”

CHAP. IV.

THE ADVENTURE CONTINUED.

“ A H, Madam!” said I, perceiving she had finished her discourse, “ doubt not but I shall most gratefully preserve the remembrance of what the generous Sydimiris has done for me; and shall always be ready to lose that life in her defence, which she has had the superlative goodness to take so much care of. But, Madam,” pursued I, with an earnest look, “ do not, I beseech you, refuse me one favour, without which I shall depart with inconceivable sorrow.”

“ Depend upon it, valiant Sir,” replied she, “ that if what you will require of me, be in my power, and fit for me to grant, I shall very willingly oblige you.”

“ It is then, resumed I,” trembling at the boldness of my request, “ that you would condescend to intreat the most generous Sydimiris to favour me with an interview, and give me an opportunity of throwing myself at her feet, to thank her for all those favours I have received from her compassion.”

“ I cannot promise you,” replied the lady, rising, “ to prevail upon Sydimiris to grant you an audience; but I assure you, that I will endeavour to dispose her to do you this favour; and it shall not be my fault if you are not satisfied.”

“ Saying this, she went out of my chamber, I having followed her to the door, with protestations that I would never forget her kindness upon this occasion.

“ I past the rest of that day in an anxious impatience for night, divided between fear and hope, and more taken up with the thoughts of seeing Sydimiris, than with my expected liberty.

‘ Night

“ Night came at last, and the door of my apartment opening, I saw the lady who had been with me in the morning, enter.

“ I have prevailed upon Sydimiris to see you,” said she; “ and she is willing, at my intreaty, to grant that favour to a person who, she with reason thinks, has been inhumanly treated by her brother.”

“ Then giving me her hand, she conducted me along a large gallery, to a stately apartment; and after traversing several rooms, she led me into one where Sydimiris herself was; who, as soon as she perceived me, rose from her seat, and received me with great civility.

“ In the transport I then was, I know not how I returned the graceful salute the incomparable Sydimiris gave me; for most certain it is, that I was so lost in wonder, at the sight of the many charms I beheld in her person, that I could not unlock my tongue, or remove my eyes from her enchanting face; but remained fixed in a posture which at once expressed my admiration and delight.

“ To give you a description of that beauty which I then contemplated, I must inform you, Madam, that Sydimiris is tall, of a handsome stature, and admirably proportioned; her hair was of the finest black in the world; her complexion marvellously fair; all the lineaments of her visage were perfectly beautiful; and her eyes, which were large and black, sparkled with so quick and piercing a fire, that no heart was able to resist their powerful glances: moreover, Sydimiris is admirably shaped; her port is high and noble; and her air so free, yet so commanding, that there are few persons in the world with whom she may not dispute the priority of beauty. In fine, Madam, Sydimiris appeared with so many advantages to a spirit prepossessed already with the most grateful sense of her favours, that I could not resist the sweet violence wherewith her charms took possession of my heart: I yielded therefore, without reluctance, to my destiny, and resigned myself, in an instant, to those fetters, which the sight of the divine Sydimiris prepared for me: recovering therefore a little from that admiration

which had so totally engrossed all my faculties, I threw myself at her feet with an action wholly composed of transport.

“ Divine Sydimiris!” said I, beholding her with eyes in which the letters of my new-born passion might very plainly be read, “ see at your feet a man devoted to your service by all ties of gratitude and respect. I come, Madam, to declare to you, that, from the first moment you gave me liberty, I had devoted that and my life to you; and at your feet I confirm the gift, protesting by all that is most dear and sacred to me, that since I hold my life from the divine Sydimiris, she alone shall have the absolute disposal of it for the future; and should she please again to demand it, either to appease her brother’s fury, or to sacrifice it to her own security, I will most faithfully perform her will, and shed the last drop of that blood at her command which I would with transport lose in her defence!”

“ A fine high-flown speech, indeed!” said Sir Charles, laughing. “ But I hope you did not intend to keep your word.”

“ Sure, Sir,” replied Arabella, “ you do not imagine that Sir George would have failed in executing all he had promised to the beautiful and generous Sydimiris: what could he possibly have said less? And indeed what less could she have expected from a man, whom, at the hazard of her own life and happiness, she had given freedom to?”

“ I accompanied these words, Madam,” pursued Sir George, “ with so passionate a look and accent, that the fair Sydimiris blushed, and for a moment cast down her eyes with a visible confusion. At last—

“ Sir,” replied she, “ I am too well satisfied with what I have done with respect to your safety, to require any proofs of your gratitude that might be dangerous to it; and shall remain extremely well satisfied, if the obligations you think you owe me may induce you to moderate your resentment against my brother, for the cruel treatment you received from him.”

“ Doubt not, Madam,” interrupted I, eagerly, “ but I shall, in the person
“ of

“ of Marcomire, regard the brother
“ of the divine Sydimiris; and that
“ consideration will be sufficient nor
“ only to make me forget all the vio-
“ lences he committed against me, but
“ even to defend his life, if need be,
“ with the hazard of my own.”

“ Excessively generous indeed !” said
Sir Charles: “ I never heard any thing
“ like it.”

“ Oh ! dear Sir,” replied, Arabella;
“ there are numberless instances of
“ equal and even superior generosity to
“ be met with in the lives of the heroes
“ of antiquity: you will there see a
“ lover, whose mistress has been taken
“ from him either by treachery or force,
“ venture his life in defence of the in-
“ jurious husband who possesses her;
“ and though all his felicity depends
“ upon his death, yet he will rescue
“ him from it at the expence of the
“ greater part of his blood.

“ Another, who after a long and
“ bloody war, has, by taking his ene-
“ my prisoner, an opportunity of ter-
“ minating it honourably; yet, through
“ an heroic principle of generosity,
“ he gives his captive liberty without
“ making any conditions, and has all
“ his work to do over again.

“ A third having contracted a vio-
“ lent friendship for the enemies of his
“ country, through the same generous
“ sentiments, draws his sword in their
“ defence, and makes no scruple to
“ fight against an army where the king
“ his father is in person.”

“ I must confess,” said Sir Charles,
“ that generosity seems to me very pec-
“ liar that will make a man fight for
“ his enemies against his own father.”

“ It is in that peculiarity, Sir,” said
Arabella, “ that his generosity consists;
“ for certainly there is nothing extra-
“ ordinary in fighting for one’s father
“ and one’s country; but when a man
“ has arrived to such a pitch of great-
“ ness of soul as to neglect those mean
“ and selfish considerations, and, lov-
“ ing virtue in the persons of his ene-
“ mies, can prefer their glory before
“ his own particular interest, he is then
“ a perfect hero indeed: such an one
“ was Orpoundates, Artaxerxes, and
“ many others I could name, who all
“ gave eminent proofs of their disin-
“ terestedness and greatness of soul up-
“ on the like occasions; therefore, not
“ to detract from Sir George’s merit,

“ I must still insist, that in the resolu-
“ tions he had taken to defend his ene-
“ my’s life at the expence of his own,
“ he did no more than what any man
“ of ordinary generosity ought to do,
“ and what he was particularly obliged
“ to, by what the amiable Sydimiris
“ had done for him.”

“ I was happy, however, Madam,”
continued Sir George, “ to find that
“ those expressions of my gratitude
“ wrought somewhat upon the heart of
“ the lovely Sydimiris in my favour:
“ her words discovered as much, and
“ her eyes spoke yet more intelligibly;
“ but our conversation was interrupted
“ by the discreet Urinoe, who, fearing
“ the consequence of so long a stay in
“ her chamber, represented to me that
“ it was time to take my leave.

“ I turned pale at this cruel sound;
“ and beholding Sydimiris with a lan-
“ guishing look—

“ Would to Heaven, Madam,” said
I, “ that, instead of giving me liber-
“ ty, you would keep me eternally
“ your prisoner; for though a dun-
“ geon was to be the place of my con-
“ finement, yet, if it was near you,
“ it would seem a palace to me; for
“ indeed I am no longer in a condition
“ to relish that freedom you bestow
“ upon me, since it must remove me
“ farther from you. But I beseech
“ you, Madam, to believe, that in de-
“ livering me from your brother’s fet-
“ ters, you have cast me into your
“ own, and that I am more a prisoner
“ than ever, but a prisoner to so lovely
“ a conqueror, that I do not wish to
“ break my chains, and prefer the
“ sweet and glorious captivity I am in
“ to all the crowns in the world.”

“ You are very bold,” said Sydi-
miris, blushing, “ to entertain me
“ with such discourse; yet I pardon
“ this offence, in consideration of what
“ you have suffered from my brother,
“ and on condition that you will de-
“ part immediately without speaking
“ another word.”

“ Sydimiris spoke this so earnestly,
“ that I durst not disobey her; and
“ kissing the hem of her robe with a
“ passionate air, I left her chamber,
“ conducted by Urinoe, who having
“ brought me to a private door, which
“ carried us into the street, I there
“ found a man waiting for me, whom
“ I knew to be the same that had at-
“ tended

‘ tended me during my stay in that house.

‘ Urinoe having recommended to him to see me safe out of the town, I took leave of her with the most grateful acknowledgments for her kindness, and followed my conductor so oppressed with grief at the thoughts of leaving the place where Sydimiris was, that I had hardly strength to walk.’

CHAP. V.

AN EXTRAORDINARY INSTANCE OF
GENEROSITY IN A LOVER, SOME-
WHAT RESEMBLING THAT OF
THE GREAT ARTAXERXES IN
CASSANDRA,

‘ THE farther I went,’ continued Sir George, ‘ the more my regret increased; and finding it would be impossible to live and quit the divine Sydimiris, I all at once took a resolution to remain in the town concealed; and, communicating my design to my guide, I engaged him to assist me in it by a present of a considerable sum, which he could not resist: accordingly, he left me in a remote part of the town, and went to find out a convenient lodging for me; which he soon procured, and also a suit of cloaths to disguise me, my own being very rich and magnificent.

‘ Having recommended me as a relation of his, who was newly arrived, I was received very civilly by the people with whom he placed me; and finding this young man to be very witty and discreet, and also very capable of serving me, I communicated to him my intentions by staying, which were only to be near the divine Sydimiris, and to have the happiness of sometimes seeing her when she went abroad.

‘ This man entering into my meaning, assured me he would faithfully keep my secret, and that he would not fail to bring me intelligence of all that passed in the palace of Marcomire.

‘ I could with difficulty keep myself from falling at his feet to express my sense of his kind and generous offers; but I contented myself with

‘ presenting him another sum of money larger than the first, and assured him of my future gratitude.

‘ He then took leave, and left me to my reflections, which were wholly upon the image of the divine Sydimiris, and the happiness of being so near the object I adored.

‘ My confidant came to me the next day, but brought me no other news than that my escape was not yet known to Marcomire. I enquired if he had seen Sydimiris; but he replied he had not, and that Urinoe had only asked him if he had conducted me safe out of town; to which he had answered as we had agreed, that I had got out safe and undiscovered.

‘ A day or two after he brought me news more pleasing; for he told me that Sydimiris had sent for him into her chamber, and asked him several questions concerning me; that she appeared very melancholy, and even blushed whenever she mentioned my name.

‘ This account gave sufficient matter for my thoughts to work upon for several days. I interpreted Sydimiris’s blush a thousand different ways; I reflected upon all the different causes to which it might be owing, and busied myself with all those innumerable conjectures, which, as you know, Madam, such an incident always gives rise to in a lover’s imagination. At length I explained it to my own advantage, and felt thereby a considerable increase of my affection.

‘ A whole week having elapsed without another sight of my confidant, I began to be greatly alarmed; when, on the eighth day of this cruel suspense, I saw him appear, but with so many marks of disturbance in his face, that I trembled to hear what he had to acquaint me with.

“ Oh! Sir,” said he, as soon as his concern suffered him to speak, “ Marcomire has discovered your escape, and the means by which it was procured. One of those in whom Urinoe confided, has betrayed it to him, and the beautiful Sydimiris is likely to feel the most terrible effects of his displeasure: he has confined her to her chamber, and vows to sacrifice her life to the honour of his family,

“ which he says she has stained; and
 “ he loads that admirable lady with so
 “ many reproaches, that it is thought
 “ her grief for such undeserved cal-
 “umnies will occasion her death.”

“ Scarce had he finished these cruel
 “ words, when I, who all the time he
 “ had been speaking beheld him with a
 “ dying eye, sunk down at his feet in
 “ a swoon, which continued so long,
 “ that he began to think me quite dead:
 “ however, I at last opened my eyes;
 “ but it was only to pour forth a river of
 “ tears, and to utter complaints which
 “ might have moved the most obdurate
 “ heart.

“ After having a long time torment-
 “ ed myself in weeping and complain-
 “ ing, I at last took a resolution which
 “ offered me some alleviation of my
 “ grief; and the faithful Toxares, see-
 “ ing me a little composed, left me to
 “ myself, with a promise to return soon,
 “ and acquaint me with what passed
 “ farther in the palace of Marcomire.

“ As soon as he was gone, I rose from
 “ my bed; and, dressing myself in those
 “ cloaths I wore when I was taken pri-
 “ soner, I went to the palace of Mar-
 “ comire, and, demanding to see him, I
 “ was told he was in the apartment of
 “ Sydimiris, and at my earnest desire
 “ they conducted me thither.

“ When I entered the room, I beheld
 “ that incomparable beauty stretched
 “ upon a couch dissolved in tears, and
 “ Urinot upon her knees before her,
 “ accompanying with her own those
 “ precious drops which fell from the
 “ bright eyes of her mistress.

“ Marcomire, who was walking fu-
 “ riously about the room, exclaiming
 “ with the utmost violence against that
 “ fair sufferer, did not observe my en-
 “ trance; so that I had an opportunity
 “ of going towards Sydimiris, who
 “ lifting up her eyes to look upon me,
 “ gave a loud shriek, and, by a look
 “ of extreme anguish, let me under-
 “ stand how great her apprehensions
 “ were upon my account.

“ I am come, Madam,” said I, “ to
 “ perform part of the promise I made
 “ you, and by dying, to prove your
 “ innocence; and, freeing you from
 “ the reproaches you suffer on my ac-
 “ count, I shall have the happiness to
 “ convince you that my life is infi-
 “ nitely less dear to me than your tran-
 “ quillity.” Sydimiris, who hearkened

“ to me with great emotion, was going
 “ to make some answer, when Marco-
 “ mire, alarmed by his sister’s shriek,
 “ came towards us, and, viewing me
 “ at first with astonishment, and then
 “ with a smile of cruelty and revenge—

“ Is it possible,” said he, “ that I
 “ behold my designed murderer again
 “ in my power?”

“ I am in thy power,” said I, “ be-
 “ cause I am willing to be so, and
 “ came voluntarily to put myself into
 “ your hands, to free that excellent
 “ lady from the imputation you have
 “ laid on her. Know, Marcomire,
 “ that it is to myself alone I owed my
 “ liberty, which I would still preserve
 “ against all the forces thou couldst
 “ bring to deprive me of it; and this
 “ sword, which left thee life enough
 “ to threaten mine, would haply once
 “ more put yours in danger, were I
 “ not restrained by a powerful con-
 “ sideration which leaves me not the
 “ liberty of even wishing you ill.”

“ Ah, dissembler!” said Marcomire,
 “ in a rage, “ think not to impose up-
 “ on me by thy counterfeited mildness:
 “ thou art my prisoner once more, and
 “ I shall take care to prevent your
 “ escaping a second time.”

“ I am not your prisoner,” replied I,
 “ while I possess this sword, which has
 “ already defended me against greater
 “ numbers than you have here to op-
 “ pose me. But,” continued I, throw-
 “ ing down my sword at Sydimiris’s
 “ feet, “ I resign my liberty to restore
 “ that lady to your good opinion, and
 “ to free her from those base aspersions
 “ thou hast unjustly loaded her with
 “ upon my account.”

“ It matters not,” said the brutal
 “ brother, taking up my sword, “ whe-
 “ ther thou hast resigned, or I have
 “ deprived thee of liberty; but since
 “ thou art in my power, thou shalt
 “ feel all the effects of my resentment.
 “ —Take him away,” pursued he, to
 “ some of his people; “ put him into
 “ the worst dungeon you can find;
 “ and let him be guarded carefully,
 “ upon pain of death if he again es-
 “ capes.”

“ With these words several men of-
 “ fered to lead me out of the room,
 “ but I repulsed them with disdain;
 “ and making a low reverence to Sydi-
 “ miris, whose countenance expressed
 “ the extremes of fear and anguish, I
 “ followed

‘ followed my conductors to the prison allotted for me, which, hideous as it was, I contemplated with a secret pleasure, since I had by that action which had brought me into it, given a testimony of my love for the adorable Sydimiris.’

C H A P. VI.

IN WHICH IT WILL BE SEEN, THAT
THE LADY IS AS GENEROUS AS
HER LOVER.

‘ I Passed some days in this confinement, melancholy enough: my ignorance of the destiny of Sydimiris gave me more pain than the sense of my own misfortunes; and one evening, when I was more than usually disquieted, one of my guard entered my prison, and giving me a letter, retired without speaking a word. I opened this letter with precipitation, and by the light of a lamp which was allowed me, I read the following words—

“ SYDIMIRIS, TO THE MOST GENEROUS BELLMOUR.

“ IT is not enough to tell you that the method you took to free me from my brother’s severity, has filled me with the utmost esteem and admiration. So generous an action merits a greater acknowledgment, and I will make no scruple to confess that my heart is most sensibly touched by it. Yes, Bellmour, I have received this glorious testimony of your affection with such a gratitude as you yourself could have wished to inspire me with; and it shall not be long before you will have a convincing proof of the effect it has had upon the spirit of

“ SYDIMIRIS.”

‘ This letter, Madam,’ pursued Sir George, ‘ being wholly calculated to make me hope that I was not hated by the divine Sydimiris, and that she meditated something in my favour, I resigned myself up to the most delightful expectations.

“ What!” cried I, transported with the excess of my joy, “ does the most

‘ admirable Sydimiris condescend to assure me that I have touched her heart? And does the promise me that I shall receive some convincing proof of her acknowledgment!

“ Ah! too happy and too fortunate Bellmour, to what a glorious destiny hast thou been reserved! And how oughtest thou to adore these fetters that have procured thee the esteem of the divine Sydimiris!”

‘ Such, Madam, were the apprehensions which the billet I had received, inspired me with. I continually flattered myself with the most pleasing hopes; and during three weeks longer, in which I heard no more from Sydimiris, my imagination was wholly filled with those sweet thoughts which her letter had made me entertain.

‘ At length, on the evening of a day which I had wholly spent in reading over Sydimiris’s letter, and interpreting the sense of it a thousand different ways, but all agreeable to my ardent wishes; I saw the sage Urinoe enter my prison, accompanied by Toxares, whom I had not seen during my last confinement. Wholly transported at the sight of these two friends, and not doubting but they had brought me the most agreeable news, I ran towards them; and throwing myself at Urinoe’s feet, I begged her, in an extasy of joy, to acquaint me with Sydimiris’s commands.

‘ Urinoe, in some confusion at this action, intreated me to rise. “ It is fit,” cried I, in a transport I could not master, “ that in this posture I should receive the knowledge of that felicity Sydimiris has had the goodness to promise me.” Urinoe sighed at these words; and beholding me with a look of compassion and tenderness—

“ Would to God,” said she, “ that all I have to say, were as agreeable as the first news I have to tell you; which is, that you are free, and at liberty to leave the town this moment! Sydimiris,” continued she, “ has bought your freedom, at the expence of her own; and, to deliver you from her brother’s chains, she has put on others, haply more cruel than those you have worn: in fine, she has married a man, whom she detested, to procure your liberty;”

"her brother having granted it to her upon that condition alone."

"Scarce had Urinœ finished these words, when I fell without sense or motion at her feet. Toxares and she, who had foreseen what might happen, having provided themselves with cordials necessary to restore me, brought me to myself with infinite trouble.

"Cruel!" said I to them, with a tone and look which witnessed the excess of my despair, "why have you hindered me from dying, at once to prevent the thousand deaths I shall suffer from my grief? Is this the confirmation of those glorious hopes Sydimiris had permitted me to entertain? Is this that proof of the acknowledgments I was to expect? And is it by throwing herself into the arms of my rival, that she repays those obligations she thinks she owes me?

"Ah, inhuman Sydimiris! was it to make my despair more poignant, that thou flatteredst me with such a prospect of happiness? And was it necessary to the grandeur of thy nuptials, that my life should be the sacrifice?

"But, how unjust am I," cried I, repenting in an instant of those injurious suspicions; "how unjust am I, to accuse the divine Sydimiris of inhumanity? Was it not to give me freedom, that she bestowed herself upon a man she hates? And has she not made herself miserable for ever, to procure me a false happiness?

"Ah! if it be so, what a wretch am I! I, who have been the only cause of that misery, to which she has doomed herself? Ah, liberty!" pursued I, "how I detest thee, since purchased by the misfortune of Sydimiris! And how far more sweet and glorious were those chains which I wore for her sake!"

"My sighs and tears leaving me no longer the power of speech, I sunk down on my bed, oppressed with a mortal grief.

"Urinœ and Toxares drew near to comfort me, and said all that sensible and discreet persons could think of to alleviate my despair.

"Though I have heard that Sydimiris is married," replied I, "without dying immediately; yet do not

"imagine that I will suffer this odious life to continue long. If sorrow do not quickly dispatch me, I will seek death by other means; for since Sydimiris is lost, I have no more business in the world."

"The charitable Urinœ and Toxares endeavoured in vain to divert me from this sad resolution, when Urinœ, finding all their reasonings ineffectual, drew a letter out of her pocket, and presenting it to me, "I had orders," said she, "not to let this letter be delivered to you, till you had left the town; but the despair, to which I see you reduced, does, I conceive, dispense with my rigorous observation of those directions."

"While Urinœ was speaking, I opened this letter, trembling, and found it as follows."

CHAP. VII.

CONTAINING AN INCIDENT FULL AS PROBABLE AS ANY IN SCUDERY'S ROMANCES.

"SYDIMIRIS, TO BELLMOUR.

"IF that proof of my gratitude, which I promised to give you, fall short of your expectations, blame not the defect of my will, but the rigour of my destiny; it was by this only way I could give you liberty; nor is it too dearly bought by the loss of all my happiness, if you receive it as you ought: had I been allowed to follow my own inclinations, there is no man in the world I would have preferred to yourself. I owe this confession to the remembrance of your affection, of which you gave me so generous an instance; and the use I expect you will make of it, is to console you under a misfortune, which is common to us both; though I haply have most reason to complain, since I could not be just to you, without being cruel at the same time, or confer a benefit, without loading you with a misfortune. If the sacrifice I have made of myself for your sake, gives me any claim to the continuance of your love, I command you, by the power it gives me over you, to live, and

“and not add to the miseries of my condition, the grief of being the cause of your death. Remember, I will look upon your disobedience, as an act of the most cruel ingratitude; and your compliance with this request shall ever be esteemed as the dearest mark you can give of that passion you have borne to the unfortunate

“SYDIMIRIS.”

“Ah, Sydimiris!” cried I, having read this letter, “more cruel in your kindness than severity! After having deprived me of yourself, do you forbid me to die; and expose me by so rigorous a command to ills infinitely more hard and painful than death?”

“Yes,” pursued I, after a little pause; “yes, Sydimiris, thou shalt be obeyed; we will not die, since thou hast commanded us to live; and, notwithstanding the tortures to which thou condemnest us, we will obey this command, and give thee a glorious proof of our present submission, by enduring that life which the loss of thee has rendered truly wretched.”

“Urinoe and Toxares, somewhat re-assured by the resolution I had taken, exhorted me by all the persuasions friendship could put in their mouths, to persevere in it; and, Urinoe bidding me farewell, I endeavoured to prevail upon her to procure me a sight of Sydimiris once more, or at least to bear a letter from me to her; but she refused both these requests so obstinately, telling me, Sydimiris would neither consent to the one nor the other, that I was obliged to be contented with the promise she made me, to represent my affliction in a true light to her mistress; and to assure her, that nothing but her absolute commands could have hindered me from dying. Then, taking leave of me with much tenderness, she went out of the prison, leaving Toxares with me, who assisted me to dress, and conducted me out of that miserable place, where I had passed so many sad, and also joyful hours. At a gate to which he brought me, I found a horse waiting; and, having embraced this faithful confidant, with many expressions of gra-

“titude, I bestowed a ring of some value upon him to remember me by; and, mounting my horse, with a breaking heart, I took the first road which presented itself to my eyes, and galloped away, without knowing whither I went. I rode the whole night, so totally engrossed by my despair, that I did not perceive my horse was so tired, it could hardly carry me a step farther: at last the poor beast fell down under me, so that I was obliged to dismount; and, looking about me, perceived I was in a forest, without seeing the least appearance of any habitation.

“The wildness and solitude of the place flattered my despair, and while my horse was feeding upon what grass he could find, I wandered about: the morning just breaking, gave me light enough to direct my steps. Chance at last conducted me to a cave, which seemed to have been the residence of some hermit, or unfortunate lover like myself. It was dug at the side of a rock, the entrance to it thick set with bushes, which hid it from view. I descended by a few steps cut rudely enough, and was convinced it had formerly served for a habitation for some religious or melancholy person; for there were seats of turf raised on each side of it, a kind of bed composed of dried leaves and rushes, and a hole made artificially at the top, to admit the light.

“While I considered this place attentively, I all at once took up a resolution, inspired by my despair, which was, to continue there, and indulge my melancholy in a retirement so fitted for my purpose.

“Giving my horse, therefore, liberty to go where he pleased, and hanging up my arms upon a tree near my cave, I took possession of this solitary mansion, with a gloomy kind of satisfaction, and devoted all my hours to the contemplation of my misfortunes.

“I lived in this manner, Madam, for ten months, without feeling the least desire to change my habitation; and, during all that time, no mortal approached my solitude; so that I lived perfectly secure and undiscovered.”

Sir George pausing here to take breath, the old baronet said what will be found in the following chapter.

C H A P. VIII.

A SINGLE COMBAT FOUGHT WITH
PRODIGIOUS VALOUR, AND DE-
SCRIBED WITH AMAZING ACCU-
RACY.

“GIVE me leave, Sir,” said Sir Charles, “to ask if you eat in all this time?”

“Alas, Sir,” replied Sir George, “sighs and tears were all my sustenance.”

Sir Charles, Mr. Glanville, and Miss, laughing at this answer, Arabella seemed greatly confused.

“It is not to be imagined,” said she, “that Sir George, or, to say better, Prince Viridomer, lived ten months without eating any thing to support nature; but such trifling circumstances are always left out in the relations of histories; and truly an audience must be very dull and unapprehensive, that cannot conceive, without being told, that a man must necessarily eat in the space of ten months.”

“But the food Sir George lived on,” replied the baronet, “was very substantial, and would not afford him much nourishment.”

“I suppose,” resumed Arabella, “he lived upon such provisions as the forest afforded him; such as wild fruits, herbs, bitter fallads, and the like; which, considering the melancholy that possessed him, would appear a voluptuous repast; and which the unfortunate Orontes, when he was in the same situation, thought infinitely too good for him.”

Sir Charles, finding Arabella took no notice of the historian’s hyperbole of living upon his sighs and tears, passed it over, for fear of offending her; and Sir George, who had been in some anxiety how to bring himself off, when he perceived Arabella was reasonable enough to suppose he must have eat during his abode in the forest, went on with his relation in this manner.

“I lived, as I before observed to you, Madam, in this cave for ten months; and truly I was so reconciled to that solitary way of life, and found so much sweetness in it, that I believe I should have remained there

“till this day, but for the adventure which I am going to recount.

“It being my custom to walk out every evening in the forest, returning to my cave, something later than usual, I heard the cries of a woman at some distance, who seemed to be in distress: I stopped to listen from what side those cries proceeded; and, perceiving they seemed to approach nearer to me, I took down my armour from the tree where I had hung it; and hastily arming myself, shaped my course towards the place from whence those complaints seemed to come, resolving to assist that unknown person with all the strength that was left me.

“Having gone some paces, I spied through the branches of the trees a man on horseback, with a lady, who struggled to get loose, and at times calling aloud for succour.

“This sight inflaming me with rage against that impious ravisher, I flew towards him; and when I came within hearing—

“Hold, wretch!” cried I, “and cease to offer violence to that lady, whom thou bearest away by force; or prepare to defend thyself against one who will die before he will suffer thee to prosecute thy unjust designs.”

“The man, without answering me, clapped spurs to his horse; and it would have been impossible to have overtaken him, had not my own horse, which had never quitted the forest, appeared in my view: I quickly mounted him, and followed the track the ravisher had taken, with such speed, that I came up with him in a moment.

“Caitiff!” said I, “release the lady, and defend thyself.” These words, which I accompanied with a thundering blow upon his head-piece, obliged him to set down the lady, who implored Heaven, with the utmost ardour, to grant me the victory; and, recoiling back a few paces, to take a view of me—

“I know not,” said he, “for what reason thou settest thyself to oppose my designs; but I well know, that thou shalt dearly repent of thy temerity.”

“Saying this, he advanced furiously towards me, and aimed so heavy a blow





blow at my head, that, had I not received it on my shield, I might haply have no longer been in a condition to defend the distressed lady: but having, with the greatest dexterity imaginable, avoided this blow, I made at him with so much fierceness, and directed my aims so well, that in a few moments I wounded him in several places; and his arms were all dyed with his blood.

This good success redoubled my vigour; and having, by a lucky stroke with my sword, cut the strings of his head-piece, it fell off; and his head being bare, I was going to let fall a dreadful blow upon it, which doubtless would have shivered it in a thousand pieces, when he cried out for quarter, and, letting fall his sword, by that action assured me my victory was entire.

"Live, wretch," cried I, "since thou art base enough to value life after being vanquished: but swear upon my sword, that thou wilt never more attempt the liberty of that lady."

While I was speaking, I perceived he was no longer able to sit his horse; but, staggering a moment, he fell off, and lay extended without motion upon the ground. Touched with compassion at this sight, I alighted, and supposing him to be in a swoon, was preparing to give him some assistance; but upon my nearer approach, I found he was quite dead.

Leaving therefore this mournful object, I turned about, with an intention to go and offer the distressed lady my farther help; but I perceived her already at my feet.

"Valiant knight," said she, with a tone of voice so bewitching, that all my faculties were suspended, as by enchantment, "suffer me, on my knees, to thank you for the deliverance you have procured me from that base man; since to your admirable valour I owe not only the preservation of my life, but, what is infinitely dearer to me, my honour."

The astonishment wherewith I beheld the miraculous beauty that appeared before me, kept me a moment in such an attentive gaze, that I forgot she was at my feet: recollecting myself, however, with some confusion at my neglect—

"Oh, rise, Madam!" cried I, helping her up with infinite respect, "and debase not such perfection to a posture, in which all the monarchs on the earth might glory to appear before it."

"That you may the better conceive the alteration which the sight of this fair unknown produced in my soul, I will endeavour to give you a description of her beauty, which was altogether miraculous."

CHAP. IX.

IN WHICH THE READER WILL FIND
A DESCRIPTION OF A BEAUTY,
IN A STYLE TRULY SUBLIME.

THE new fallen snow, pursued Sir George, 'was tanned, in comparison of the refined purity of that white which made up the ground of her complexion; and though fear had a little gathered the carnations of her cheeks, yet her joy at being delivered seemed to plant them there with such fresh advantages, that any eye might shrink at the brightness of that mingled lustre; her mouth, as well for shape as colour, might shame the imitation of the best pencils, and the liveliest tints; and though through some petty intervals of joy, it wanted the smiles which grief and terror sequestered, yet she never opened it, but, like the east, at the birth of a beautiful day, and then discovered treasures, whose excelling whiteness made the price inestimable: all the features of her face had so near a kindred to proportion and symmetry, as the several masters of Apelles's art might have called it his glory to have copied beauties from her, as the best of models; the circumference of her visage shewed the extremes of an imperfect circle, and almost formed it to a perfect oval; and this abridgment of marvels was tapered by a pair of the brightest stars that ever were lighted up by the hand of nature; as their colour was the same with the Heavens, there was a spherical harmony in their motion, and that mingled with a vivacity so penetrating, as neither the firmest eye, nor the strongest soul, could arm themselves with a resistance of proof against

against those pointed glories; her head was crowned with a prodigious quantity of fair long hair, which colour as fitly suited the beauty of her eyes, as imagination could make it: to these marvels of face were joined the rest of her neck, hands, and shape; and there seemed a contest between the form and whiteness of the two former, which had the largest commission from nature to work wonders.

‘ In fine, her beauty was miraculous, and could not fail of producing a sudden effect upon a heart like mine.

‘ Having passed in an instant from the extremest admiration to something yet more tender, I reiterated my offers of service to the fair unknown; who told me she feared her father had occasion for some assistance, her ravisher having left his men to engage him, and keep off his pursuit, while he rode off with his prize: hereupon I begged her to direct me to the place where she left her father, assuring her I would gladly venture my life a second time, to preserve his; and she desiring to go with me, I placed her before me on my horse, and had the exquisite pleasure of supporting with my arms the fairest and most admirable creature in the world.

‘ In less than half an hour, which had appeared to me but a moment, we got to the place where she had been torn from her father; whom we beheld with three of his servants, maintaining a fight against twice as many of their enemies.

‘ Having gently set down the beautiful unknown upon the grass, I flew to the relief of her father; and, throwing myself furiously among his assailants, dispatched two of them with so many blows: the others seeing so unexpected an assistance, gave back a little, and I took advantage of their consternation, to redouble my blows, and brought two more of them at my feet.

‘ There remained now but four to overcome; and my arrival having given new vigour to those whose part I had taken, they seconded me so well, that we soon had nothing more left to do; for the rest, seeing their comrades slain, sought their safety in flight: we were too generous to

pursue them, the blood of such wretches being unworthy to be shed by our swords.

‘ The fair unknown, seeing us conquerors, flew to embrace her father; who, holding her pressed between his arms, turned his eyes upon me; then quitting her, came towards me, and in the most obliging terms imaginable, returned me thanks for the assistance I had brought him; and being informed, by his daughter, of what I had done for her preservation, this old gentleman renewed his acknowledgments, calling me the preserver of his life, the valiant defender of his daughter’s honour, his tutelary angel, and the guardian of his house.

‘ In fine, he loaded me with so many thanks and praises, that I could not chuse but be in some confusion; and to put an end to them, I begged he would inform me by what means he came into that misfortune.

‘ He told me, that, residing in a castle at the extremity of this forest, the charms of his daughter had captivated a neighbouring lord, whose character and person being disagreeable both to her and himself, he had absolutely refused to give her to him: thereupon he had set upon them as they were going to visit a relation at some distance, and dragging Philonice out of the coach, put her before him on his horse, and carried her away, leaving eight of his men to engage him and his servants; who, being but four in number, must inevitably have perished, had I not come to his relief, and by my miraculous valour, vanquished all his enemies.

‘ Saying this, he desired me to go home with him to the castle; and having led his daughter to the coach, insisted upon my placing myself next her; and, getting in himself, ordered them to return home.

‘ This accident having altered his design of making the visit which had been the occasion of this journey—

‘ The baron, for that I found was his title, entertained me all the way with repeated expressions of acknowledgments and tenderness; and the incomparable Philonice condescended also to assure me of her gratitude for the service I had done her.

‘ At our arrival at the castle, I perceived

ceived it was very large and magnificent; the baron conducted me to one of the best apartments, and would stay in the room till my armour was taken off, that he might be assured I had received no hurts: having rendered him the like civility in his own chamber, and satisfied myself he was not wounded, we returned to the beautiful Philonice; and this second sight having finished my defeat, I remained so absolutely her slave, that neither Dorothea nor Sydimiris were more passionately beloved.

At the earnest entreaty of the baron, I staid some weeks in the castle; during which, the daily sight of Philonice so augmented my flames, that I was no longer in a condition to conceal them; but, fearing to displease that divine beauty by a confession of my passion, I languished in secret; and the constraint I laid upon myself, gave me such torments, that I fell into a profound melancholy, and looked so pale and dejected, that the baron was sensible of the alteration, and conjured me, in the most pressing terms, to acquaint him with the cause of my uneasiness: but though I continued obstinately silent with my tongue, yet my eyes spoke intelligibly enough; and the blushes which appeared in the fair cheeks of Philonice, whenever she spoke to me on the subject of my grief, convinced me she was not ignorant of my passion.

At length the agitation of my mind throwing me into a fever, the baron, who was firmly persuaded that my illness proceeded from some concealed vexation, pressed me continually to declare myself; and, finding all his entreaties ineffectual, he commanded his daughter to endeavour to find out the cause of that grief which had put me into such a condition.

For that purpose, therefore, having brought the fair Philonice into my chamber, he staid a few minutes; and leaving the room, under pretence of business, Philonice remained alone by my bed-side, her women, out of respect, staying at the other end of the chamber.

This divine person seeing herself alone with me, and remembering her father's command, blushed, and cast

down her eyes in such apparent confusion, that I could not help observing it: and interpreting it to the displeasure she took in being so near me—

“Whatever joy I take in the honour your visit does me, Madam,” said I, in a weak voice; “yet since nothing is so dear to me as your satisfaction, I would rather dispense with this mark of your goodness to an unfortunate wretch, than see you in the least constraint.”

“And why,” replied she, with a tone full of sweetness, “do you suppose that I am here by constraint, when it would be more just to believe, that in visiting the valiant defender of my honour, and the life of my father, I only follow my own inclinations?”

“Ah, Madam!” said I, transported with joy at so favourable a speech, “the little service I had the happiness to do you, does not merit so infinite a favour; and though I had lost the best part of my blood in your defence, I should have been well rewarded with your safety.”

“Since you do not repent of what you have done,” replied she, “I am willing to be obliged to you for another favour; and ask it with the greater hope of obtaining it, as I must acquaint you, it is by my father's command I take that liberty, who is much interested in my success.”

“There is no occasion, Madam,” returned I, “to make use of any interest but your own, to engage me to obey you, since that is, and ever will be, all-powerful with me: speak then, Madam, and let me know what it is you desire of me, that I may, once in my life, have the glory of obeying you.”

“It is,” said she, blushing still more than before, “that you will acquaint us with the cause of that melancholy, which has, as we imagine, occasioned your present illness.”

At these words I trembled, turned pale; and, not daring to discover the true cause of my affliction, I remained in a profound silence.

“I see,” said the beautiful Philonice, “that you have no inclination to obey me; and since my request has, as I perceive, given you some
T “disturbance,

"disturbance, I will prevail upon my father to press you no farther upon this subject."

"No, Madam," said I, eagerly; "the baron shall be satisfied, and you shall be obeyed; though, after the knowledge of my crime, you doom me to that death I so justly merit."

"Yes, Madam, this unfortunate man, who has had the glory to acquire your esteem by the little service he did you, has cancelled the merit of that service by daring to adore you."

"I love you, divine Philonice; and not being able either to repent, or cease to be guilty of loving you, I am resolved to die, and spare you the trouble of pronouncing my sentence. I beseech you therefore to believe, that I would have died in silence, but for your command to declare myself; and you should never have known the excess of my love and despair, had not my obedience to your will obliged me to confess it."

"I finished these words with so much fear and confusion, that I durst not lift my eyes up to the fair face of Philonice, to observe how she received this discourse: I waited therefore, trembling, for her answer; but finding that in several minutes she spoke not a word, I ventured at last to cast a languishing glance upon the visage I adored, and saw so many marks of disorder upon it, that I was almost dead with the apprehensions of having offended her beyond even the hope of procuring her pardon by my death."

CHAP. X.

WHEREIN SIR GEORGE CONCLUDES HIS HISTORY; WHICH PRODUCES AN UNEXPECTED EFFECT.

THE silence of Philonice, continued Sir George, 'pierced me to the heart; and when I saw her rise from her seat, and prepare to go away without speaking, grief took such possession of my spirits, that, uttering a cry, I fell into a swoon, which, as I afterwards was informed, greatly alarmed the beautiful Philonice; who, resuming her seat, had the goodness to assist her women

in bringing me to myself; and, when I opened my eyes, I had the satisfaction to behold her still by me, and all the signs of compassion in her face.

"This sight a little re-assuring me, I ask your pardon, Madam," said I, "for the condition in which I have appeared before you, and also for that I am not yet dead, as is doubtless your wish. But I will make haste," pursued I, sighing, "to fulfil your desires; and you shall soon be freed from the sight of a miserable wretch, who to his last moment will not cease to adore you."

"It is not your death that I desire," said the fair Philonice; "and, after having preserved both my father and me from death, it is not reasonable that we should suffer you to die if we can help it."

"Live, therefore, Bellmour," pursued she, blushing; "and live, if possible, without continuing in that weakness. I cannot chuse but condemn: yet, whatever are your thoughts for the future, remember that your death will be a fault I cannot resolve to pardon."

Speaking these words without giving me time to answer, she left my chamber; and I found something so sweet and favourable in them, that I resolved to obey her, and forward my cure as much as I was able: however, the agitation of spirits increased my fever so much, that my life was despaired of.

The baron hardly ever left my bedside. Philonice came every day to see me, and seemed extremely moved at the danger I was in. One day, when I was worse than usual, she came close to the bed-side, and, opening the curtain—

"What, Bellmour!" said she, "do you pay so little obedience to my commands that you resolve to die?"

"Heaven is my witness, Madam," said I, faintly, "that nothing is so dear and sacred to me as your commands! and since, out of your superlative goodness, you are pleased to have some care for my life, I would preserve it to obey you, were it in my power; but, alas! Madam, I strive in vain to repel the violence of my distemper."

"In a few days more I was reduced

to

to the last extremity: it was then that the fair Philonice discovered that she did not hate me; for she made no scruple to weep before me; and those tears she so liberally shed had so powerful an effect upon my mind, that the contentment I felt communicated itself to my body, and gave such a turn to my distemper, that my recovery was not only hoped, but expected.

The baron expressed his satisfaction at this alteration, by the most affectionate expressions; and though the fair Philonice said very little, yet I perceived by the joy that appeared in her fair eyes, that she was not less interested in my recovery than her father.

The physicians having declared me out of danger, the baron, who had taken his resolutions long before, came one day into my chamber, and ordering those who attended me to leave us alone—

“Prince,” said he, (for in recounting my history to him I had disclosed my true quality) “I am not ignorant of that affection you bear my daughter, and am sensible it has occasioned the extremity to which we have seen you reduced: had you been pleased to acquaint me with your sentiments, you would have avoided those displeasures you have suffered; for though your birth were not so illustrious as it is, yet, preferring virtue to all other advantages, I should have esteemed my daughter honoured by your love, and have freely bestowed her on you; but since to those rare qualities wherewith Heaven has so liberally endowed you, you add also that of a birth so noble, doubt not but I shall think myself highly favoured by your alliance. If, therefore, your thoughts of my daughter be not changed, and you esteem her worthy to be your bride, I here solemnly promise you, to bestow her upon you as soon as you are perfectly recovered.”

I leave you to guess, Madam, the joy which I felt at this discourse; it was so great, that it would not permit me to thank him, as I should have done, for the inestimable blessing he bestowed on me.

I saw Philonice a few minutes after; and, being commanded by her

father to give me her hand, she did so without any marks of reluctance; and, having respectfully kissed it, I vowed to be her slave for ever.

“Who would have imagined,” continued Sir George, with a profound sigh, “that fortune, while she thus seemed to flatter me, was preparing to make me suffer the severest torments? I began now to leave my bed, and was able to walk about my chamber. The baron was making great preparations for our nuptials; when one night I was alarmed with the cries of Philonice’s women, and a few moments after the baron came into my chamber with a distracted air.

“O son!” cried he, for so he always called me, “now Philonice is lost both to you and me: she is carried off by force, and I am preparing to follow and rescue her, if possible; but I fear my endeavours will be fruitless, since I know not which way her ravishers have taken.”

“Oh, Sir!” cried I, transported both with grief and rage, “you shall not go alone: her rescue belongs to me; and I will effect it, or perish in the attempt!”

The baron having earnestly conjured me not to expose myself to the danger of a relapse by so imprudent a resolution, was obliged to quit me, word being brought him that his horse was ready; and as soon as he was gone out of the room, in spite of all that could be said to prevent me, by my attendants, I made them put on my armour; and, mounting a horse I had caused to be made ready, sallied furiously out of the castle, breathing out vows of vengeance against the wretch who had robbed me of Philonice.

I rode the whole night without stopping. Day appeared, when I found myself near a small village. I entered it, and made strict enquiry after the ravisher of Philonice, describing that fair creature, and offering vast rewards to any who could bring me the least intelligence of her: but all was in vain; I could make no discovery.

After travelling several days, to no purpose, I returned to the castle, in order to know if the baron had been more successful in his pursuit than myself; but I found him op-

‘pressed with grief: he had heard no tidings of his daughter, and had suffered no small apprehensions upon my account. Having assured him I found myself very able to travel, I took an affectionate leave of him, promising him never to give over my search, till I had found the divine Philonice; but Heaven has not permitted me that happiness; and though I have spent several years in searching for her, I have never been able to discover where she is: time has not cured me of my grief for her loss; and, though by an effect of my destiny, another object possesses my soul, yet I do not cease to deplore her misfortune, and to offer up vows for her happiness.’

‘And is this all you have to say?’ said Arabella, whom the latter part of his history had extremely surprized; ‘or are we to expect a continuance of your adventures?’

‘I have faithfully related all my adventures, that are worthy your hearing, Madam,’ returned Sir George; ‘and I flatter myself, you will do me the justice to own, that I have been rather unfortunate than faithless; and that Mr. Glanville had little reason to tax me with inconstancy.’

‘In my opinion,’ resumed Arabella, ‘Mr. Glanville spoke too favourably of you, when he called you only inconstant; and if he had added the epithet of ungrateful and unjust, he would have marked your character better.’

‘For, in fine, Sir,’ pursued she, ‘you will never persuade any reasonable person, that your being able to lose the remembrance of the fair and generous Sydimiris, in your new passion for Philonice, was not an excess of levity; but your suffering so tamely the loss of this last beauty, and allowing her to remain in the hands of her ravisher, while you permit another affection to take possession of your soul, is such an outrage to all truth and constancy, that you deserve to be ranked among the falsest of mankind.’

‘Alas! Madam,’ replied Sir George, (who had not foreseen the inference Arabella would draw from this last adventure) ‘what would you have an unfortunate man, whose hopes have been so often, and so cruelly, disappointed, do? I have bewailed the

‘loss of Philonice, with a deluge of tears; I have taken infinite pains to find her, but to no purpose; and when Heaven, compassionating my sufferings, presented to my eyes an object to whom the whole world ought to pay adoration, how could I resist that powerful impulse, which forced me to love what appeared so worthy of my affection?’

‘Call not,’ interrupted Arabella, ‘that an irresistible impulse, which was only the effect of thy own changing humour: the same excuse might be pleaded for all the faults we see committed in the world; and men would no longer be answerable for their own crimes. Had you imitated the illustrious heroes of antiquity, as well in the constancy of their affections, as it must be confessed, you have done in their admirable valour, you would now be either fighting in your cave for the loss of the generous Sydimiris, or wandering through the world in search of the beautiful Philonice. Had you persevered in your affection, and continued your pursuit of that fair-one, you would, perhaps, ere this, have found her sleeping under the shade of a tree in some lone forest, as Philodaspes did his admirable Delia, or disguised in a slave’s habit, as Ariobaranes saw his divine Olympia; or bound haply in a chariot, and have had the glory of freeing her, as Ambriomer did the beautiful Agione; or in a ship in the hands of pirates, like the incomparable Eliza; or—

‘Enough, dear niece,’ interrupted Sir Charles; ‘you have quoted examples sufficient, if this inconstant man would have the grace to follow them.’

‘True, Sir,’ replied Arabella; ‘and I would recommend to his consideration the conduct of those illustrious persons I have named, to the end that, pursuing their steps, he may arrive at their glory and happiness, that is the reputation of being perfectly constant, and the possession of his mistress—and be assured, Sir,’ pursued Arabella, looking at Sir George, ‘that Heaven will never restore you the crown of your ancestors, and place you upon the throne to which you pretend, while you make yourself unworthy of it’s protection, by so shameful an inconstancy.’

‘I perhaps

'I perhaps speak with too much freedom to a great prince; whom though fortune has despoiled of his dominions, is entitled to a certain degree of respect: but, I conceive, it belongs to me, in a particular manner, to resent the baseness of that crime to which you are pleased to make me the excuse; and, looking upon myself as dishonoured by those often prostituted vows you have offered me, I am to tell you, that I am highly disobliged; and forbid you to appear in my presence again, till you have resumed those thoughts, which are worthy your noble extraction; and are capable of treating me with that respect which is my due.

Saying this, she rose from her seat, and walked very majestically out of the room, leaving Sir George overwhelmed with shame and vexation at having conducted the latter part of his narration so ill; and drawn upon himself a sentence which deprived him of all his hopes.

CHAP. XI.

CONTAINING ONLY A FEW INFERRENCES, DRAWN FROM THE FOREGOING CHAPTERS.

MR. Glanville, excessively delighted with this event, could not help laughing at the unfortunate baronet; who seemed, by his silence, and down-cast looks, to expect it.

'Who would have imagined,' said he, 'that so renowned a hero would have tarnished the glory of his laurels, as my cousin says, by so base an ingratitude? Indeed, prince,' pursued he, laughing, 'you must resolve to recover your reputation, either by retiring again to your cave, and living upon bitter herbs; for the generous Sydimiris; or else wander through the world in search of the divine Philonice.'

'Don't triumph, dear Charles,' replied Sir George, laughing in his turn; 'have a little compassion upon me, and confess, that nothing could be more unfortunate than that damn'd slip I made at the latter end of my history: but for that, my reputation for courage and constancy had been as high as the great Oroondates, or Juba.'

'Since you have so fertile an invention,' said Sir Charles, 'you may easily repair this mistake. Ods-heart! it is pity you are not poor enough to be an author; you would occupy a garret in Grub Street, with great fame to yourself, and diversion to the publick.'

'Oh! Sir,' cried Sir George, 'I have stock enough by me to set up for an author to-morrow, if I please. I have no less than five tragedies, some quite, others almost finished; three or four essays on virtue, happiness, &c. three thousand lines of an epick poem; half a dozen epitaphs; a few acrosticks; and a long string of puns, that would serve to embellish a daily paper, if I was disposed to write one.'

'Nay, then,' interrupted Mr. Glanville, 'you are qualified for a critick at the Bedford Coffee House; where, with the rest of your brothers, demiwits, you may sit in judgment upon the productions of a Young, a Richardson, or a Johnson; rail with premeditated malice at the Rambler; and, for the want of faults, turn even it's inimitable beauties into ridicule: the language, because it reaches to perfection, may be called stiff, labour'd, and pedantick; the criticisms, when they let in more light than your weak judgment can bear, superficial and ostentatious glitter; and because those papers contain the finest system of ethicks yet extant, damn the queer fellow, for over-propping virtue; an excellent new phrase! which those who can find no meaning in, may accommodate with one of their own; then give shrewd hints, that some persons, though they do not publish their performances, may have more merit than those that do.'

'Upon my soul, Charles,' said Sir George, 'thou art such an ill-natured fellow, that I am afraid thou wilt be sneering at me when I am gone; and wilt endeavour to persuade Lady Bella, that not a syllable of my story is true. Speak,' pursued he, 'wilt thou have the cruelty to deprive me of my lawful claim to the great kingdom of Kent; and rob me of the glory of fighting singly against five hundred men?'

'I do not know,' said Sir Charles, 'whether my niece be really impos'd upon,

‘ upon, by the gravity with which you told your surprizing history; but I protest, I thought you were in earnest at first, and that you meant to make us believe it all to be fact.’

‘ You are so fitly punished,’ said Mr. Glanville, ‘ for that ill-judged adventure you related last, by the bad opinion Lady Bella entertains of you, that I need not add to your misfortune: and, therefore, you shall be Prince Veridomer, if you please; since, under that character, you are obliged not to pretend to any lady, but the incomparable Philonice.’

Sir George, who understood his meaning, went home to think of some means by which he might draw himself out of the embarrassment he was in; and Mr. Glanville, as he had promised, did not endeavour to undeceive Lady Bella with regard to the history he had feigned, being very well satisfied with his having put it out of his power to make his addresses to her, since she now looked upon him as the lover of Philonice.

As for Sir Charles, he did not penetrate into the meaning of Sir George’s story; and only imagined, that, by relating such a heap of adventures, he had a design to entertain the company, and give a proof of the facility of his invention; and Miss Glanville, who supposed he had been ridiculing her cousin’s strange notions, was better pleased with him than ever.

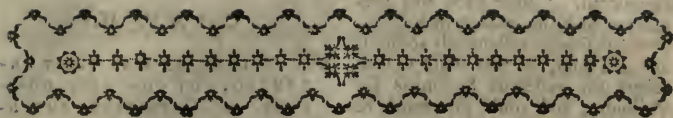
Arabella, however, was less satisfied than any of them; she could not endure to see so brave a knight, who drew his birth from a race of kings, tarnish

the glory of his gallant actions by so base a perfidy.

‘ Alas!’ said she to herself, ‘ how much reason has the beautiful Philonice to accuse me for all the anguish she suffers! since I am the cause that the ungrateful prince, on whom she bestows her affections, suffers her to remain quietly in the hands of her ravisher, without endeavouring to rescue her.—But, oh! too lovely and unfortunate fair-one,’ said she, as if she had been present, and listening to her, ‘ distinguish, I beseech you, between those faults which the will and those which necessity makes us commit. I am the cause, it is true, of thy lover’s infidelity; but I am the innocent cause, and would repair the evils my fatal beauty gives rise to, by any sacrifice in my power to make.’

While Arabella, by her romantick generosity, bewailed the imaginary afflictions of the full as imaginary Philonice, Mr. Glanville, who thought the solitude she lived in, confirmed her in her absurd and ridiculous notions, desired his father to press her to go to London.

Sir Charles complied with his request, and earnestly entreated her to leave the castle, and spend a few months in town. Her year of mourning being now expired, she consented to go; but Sir Charles, who did not think his son’s health absolutely confirmed, proposed to spend a few weeks at Bath; which was readily complied with by Arabella.



THE

FEMALE QUIXOTE.

BOOK VII.

CHAP. I.

FOR THE SHORTNESS OF WHICH
THE LENGTH OF THE NEXT SHALL
MAKE SOME AMENDS.



IR George, to gratify Arabella's humour, had not presumed to come to the castle for several days; but, hearing that they were preparing to leave the country, he wrote a short billet to her; and in the stile of romance most humbly intreated her to grant him a moment's audience.

Arabella being informed by Lucy, to whom Sir George's gentleman had addressed himself, that he had brought a letter from his master, she ordered her to bring him to her apartment, and as soon as he appeared—

'How comes it,' said she, 'that the prince your master, has had the presumption to importune me again, after my absolute commands to the contrary?'

'The prince my master, Madam!' said the man, excessively surprized.

'Aye!' said Arabella, 'are you not Sir George's squire? And does he not trust you with his most secret thoughts?'

'I belong to Sir George Bellmour, Madam,' replied the man, who did not understand what she meant. 'I have not the honour to be a squire.'

'No!' interrupted Arabella; 'it is strange then that he should have honoured you with his commission.—Pray, what is it you come to request for him?'

'My master, Madam,' said he, 'ordered me to get this letter delivered to your ladyship, and to stay for your commands.'

'You would persuade me,' said she, sternly, being provoked that he did not deliver the letter upon his knees, as was the custom in romances, 'that you are not acquainted with the purport of this audacious billet, since you express so little fear of my displeasure; but know, presumptuous, that I am mortally offended with your master, for his daring to suppose I would read this proof at once of his insolence and infidelity; and was you worth my resentment, I would haply make you suffer for your want of respect to me.'

The poor man, surprized and confounded at her anger, and puzzled extremely to understand what she meant, was opening his mouth to say something, it is probable, in his own defence, when Arabella preventing him—

'I know what thou wouldst say,' said she: 'thou wouldst abuse my patience by a false detail of thy master's sighs, tears, exclamations, and despair.'

'Indeed, Madam, I don't intend to say any such things,' replied the man.

'No!' repeated Arabella, a little disappointed.

disappointed. 'Bear back this presumptuous billet, then, which I suppose contains the melancholy account; and tell him; he that could so soon forget the generous Sydimiris for Philonice, and could afterwards be false to that incomparable beauty, is not a person worthy to adore Arabella.'

The man, who could not tell what to make of this message, and feared he should forget these two hard names, humbly intreated her to be pleased to acquaint his master by a line with her intentions. Arabella, supposing he meant to importune her still more, made a sign with her hand, very majestically, for him to be gone; but he, not able to comprehend her meaning, stood still with an air of perplexity, not daring to beg her to explain herself, supposing she, by that sign, required something of him.

'Why dost thou not obey my commands?' said Arabella, finding he did not go.

'I will, to be sure, Madam,' replied he; wishing at the same time secretly she would let him know what they were.

'And yet,' said she, hastily, 'thou art disobeying me this moment: did I not bid you get out of my presence, and to speak no more of your inconsistent master, whose crimes have rendered him the detestation of all generous persons whatever?'

Sir George's messenger, extremely surprized at so harsh a character of his master, and the rage with which the lady seemed to be actuated, made haste to get out of her apartment; and, at his return, informed his master, very exactly, of the reception he had met with, repeating all Lady Bella's words; which, notwithstanding the blunders he made in the names of Sydimiris and Philonice, Sir George understood well enough; and found new occasion of wondering at the excess of Arabella's extravagance, who he never imagined would have explained herself in that manner to his servant.

Without endeavouring, therefore, to see Arabella, he went to pay his compliments to Sir Charles, Mr. Glanville, and Miss Glanville; to the last of whom he said some soft things, that made her extremely regret his staying behind them in the country.

CHAP. II.

NOT SO LONG AS WAS FIRST INTENDED; BUT CONTAINS, HOWEVER, A SURPRIZING ADVENTURE ON THE ROAD.

THE day of their departure being come, they set out in a coach and six, attended by several servants on horseback. The first day's journey passed off without any accident worthy relating; but, towards the close of the second, they were alarmed by the appearance of three highwaymen, well mounted, at a small distance.

One of the servants, who had first spied them, immediately rode up to the coach; and, for fear of alarming the ladies, whispered Mr. Glanville in the ear.

Sir Charles, who was sitting next his son, and had heard it, cried out, with too little caution, 'How's this? Are we in any danger of being attacked, say you?'

Mr. Glanville, without replying, jumped out of the coach; at which Miss Glanville screamed out; and, lest her father should follow, sprung into her brother's seat, and held him fast by the coat.

Arabella, being in a strange consternation at all this, put her head out of the coach, to see what was the matter; and, observing three or four men of a genteel appearance, on horseback, who seemed to halt, and gaze on them, without offering to advance—

'Sir,' said she to her uncle, 'are yonder knights the persons whom you suppose will attack us?'

'Aye, aye,' said Sir Charles, 'they are knights of the road indeed; I suppose we shall have a bout with them; for it will be scandalous to deliver, since we have the odds of our side, and are more than a match for them.'

Arabella, interpreting these words in her own way, looked out again; and, seeing the robbers, who had by this time taken their resolution, galloping towards them, her cousin and the servants ranging themselves of each side of the coach, as if to defend them—

'Hold, hold, valiant men,' said she, as loud as she could speak, addressing herself to the highwaymen; 'do not, by

' by a mistaken generosity, hazard your lives in a combat, to which the laws of honour do not oblige you: we are not violently carried away, as you falsely suppose; we go willingly along with these persons, who are our friends and relations.'

' Hey-day !' cried Sir Charles, staring at her with great surprize; ' what's the meaning of all this? Do you think these fellows will mind your fine speeches, niece?'

' I hope they will, Sir,' said she: then, pulling her cousin—' Shew yourself, for Heaven's sake, Miss,' pursued she, ' and second my assurances, that we are not forced away: these generous men come to fight for our deliverance.'

The highwaymen, who were near enough to hear Arabella's voice, though they could not distinguish her words, gazed on her with great surprize; and, finding they would be very well received, thought fit to abandon their enterprize, and galloped away as fast as they were able. Some of the servants made a motion to pursue them; but Mr. Glanville forbade it; and, entering again into the coach, congratulated the ladies upon the escape they had had.

' Since these men,' said Arabella, ' did not come to deliver us, out of a mistaken notion, that we were carried away by force, it must necessarily follow, they had some bad design; and I protest I know not who to suspect is the author of it, unless the person you vanquished,' said she to Mr. Glanville, ' the other day in a single combat; for the disguised Edward, you assured me, was dead. But, perhaps,' continued she, ' it was some lover of Miss Glanville's who designed to make an attempt to carry her away: methinks he was too slenderly attended for such an hazardous undertaking.'

' I'll assure you, Madam,' said Miss Glanville, ' I have no lovers among highwaymen.'

' Highwaymen!' repeated Arabella.

' Why, aye, to be sure, Madam,' rejoined Sir Charles: ' what do you take them for?'

' For persons of quality, Sir,' resumed Arabella; ' and though they came, questionless, either upon a good or bad design, yet it cannot be doubted, but that their birth is illustrious;

' otherwise they would never pretend either to fight in our defence, or to carry us away.'

' I vow; niece,' said Sir Charles, ' I can't possibly understand you.'

' My cousin, Sir,' interrupted Mr. Glanville, ' has been mistaken in these persons; and has not yet, possibly, believed them to be highwaymen who came to rob us.'

' There is no question, Sir,' said Arabella, smiling, ' that if they did not come to defend us, they came to rob you: but it is hard to guess, which of us it was of whom they designed to deprive you; for it may very possibly be for my cousin's sake, as well as mine, that this enterprize was undertaken.'

' Pardon me, Madam,' said Mr. Glanville, who was willing to prevent his father from answering her absurdities; ' these men had no other design than to rob us of our money.'

' How!' said Arabella: ' were these cavaliers, who appeared to be in so handsome a garb, that I took them for persons of prime quality, were they robbers? I have been strangely mistaken, it seems: however, I apprehend there is no certainty that your suspicions are true; and it may still be as I say, that they either came to rescue or carry us away.'

Mr. Glanville, to avoid a longer dispute, changed the discourse; having observed with confusion, that Sir Charles, and his sister, seemed to look upon his beloved cousin as one that was out of her senses.

C H A P. III.

WHICH CONCLUDES WITH AN AUTHENTICK PIECE OF HISTORY.

ARABELLA, during the rest of this journey, was so wholly taken up in contemplating upon the last adventure, that she mixed but little in the conversation. Upon their drawing near Bath, the situation of that city afforded her the means of making a comparison between the valley in which it was placed, (with the amphitheatrical view of the hills around it) and the valley of Tempe.

' It was in such a place as this,' said she, pursuing her comparison,
U ' that

‘that the fair Andronice delivered the valiant Hortensius: and really I could wish our entrance into that city might be preceded by an act of equal humanity with that of that fair princess.’

‘For the gratification of that wish, Madam,’ said Mr. Glanville, ‘it is necessary some person should meet with a misfortune, out of which you might be able to relieve him; but I suppose the benevolence of your disposition may be equally satisfied with not finding any occasion, as of exercising it when it is found.’

‘Though it be not my fortune to meet with those occasions,’ replied Arabella, ‘there is no reason to doubt but others do, who possibly have less inclination to afford their assistance than myself: and it is possible, if any other than the princess of Messina had happened to pass by when Hortensius was in the hands of the Thesfalians, he would not have been rescued from the ignominious death he was destined to, merely for killing a stork.’

‘How!’ interrupted Sir Charles, ‘put a man to death for killing a stork! Ridiculous! Pray, in what part of the world did that happen? Among the Indians of America, I suppose.’

‘No, Sir,’ said Arabella, ‘in Thesfaly; the fairest part in all Macedonia, famous for the beautiful valley of Tempe, which excited the curiosity of all travellers whatever.’

‘No, not all, Madam,’ returned Sir Charles; ‘for I am acquainted with several travellers, who never saw it, nor even mentioned it; and if it is so famous as you say, I am surprized I never heard of it before.’

‘I don’t know,’ said Arabella, ‘what those travellers thought worthy of their notice; but I am certain, that if any chance should conduct me into Macedonia, I would not leave it till I saw the valley of Tempe, so celebrated by all the poets and historians.’

‘Dear cousin,’ cried Glanville, who could hardly forbear smiling, ‘what chance, in the name of wonder, should take you into Turkey, at so great a distance from your own country?’

‘And so,’ said Sir Charles, ‘this famous valley of Tempe is in Turkey.

—Why, you must be very fond of travelling, indeed, Lady Bella, if you would go into the Great Mogul’s country, where the people are all Pagans, they say, and worship the devil.’

‘The country my cousin speaks of,’ said Mr. Glanville, ‘is in the Grand Signor’s dominions: the Great Mogul, you know, Sir—’

‘Well,’ interrupted Sir Charles, ‘the Great Mogul, or the Grand Signior, I know not what you call him: but I hope my niece does not propose to go thither.’

‘Not unless I am forcibly carried thither,’ said Arabella; ‘but I do determine, if that misfortune should ever happen to me, that I would, if possible, visit the valley of Tempe, which is in that part of Greece they call Macedonia.’

‘Then I am persuaded,’ replied Sir Charles, ‘you’ll never see that famous vale you talk of; for it is not very likely you should be forcibly carried away into Turkey.’

‘And why do you think it unlikely that I should be carried thither?’ interrupted Arabella. ‘Do not the same things happen now, that did formerly? And is any thing more common, than ladies being carried, by their ravishers, into countries far distant from their own? May not the same accidents happen to me, that have happened to so many illustrious ladies before me? And may I not be carried into Macedonia by a similitude of destiny with that of a great many beautiful princesses, who, though born in the most distant quarters of the world, chanced to meet at one time in the city of Alexandria, and related their miraculous adventures to each other?’

‘And it was for that very purpose they met, Madam,’ said Mr. Glanville, smiling.

‘Why, truly,’ said Arabella, ‘it happened very luckily for each of them, that they were brought into a place where they found so many illustrious companions in misfortune, to whom they might freely communicate their adventures, which otherwise might, haply, have been concealed, or, at least, have been imperfectly delivered down to us: however,’ added she, smiling, ‘if I am carried into

'into Macedonia, and by that means have an opportunity of visiting the famous vale of Tempe, I shall take care not to draw the resentment of the Thessalians upon me, by an indiscretion like that of Hortensius.

'For be pleased to know, Sir,' said she, addressing herself to her uncle, 'that his killing a stork, however inconsiderable a matter it may appear to us, was yet looked upon as a crime of a very atrocious nature among the Thessalians; for they have a law, which forbids, upon pain of death, the killing of storks; the reason for which is, that Thessaly being subject to be infested with a prodigious multitude of serpents, which are a delightful food to these sort of fowls, they look upon them as sacred birds sent by the gods to deliver them from these serpents and vipers: and though Hortensius, being a stranger, was pardoned through the intercession of the princess Andronice, they made him promise to send another stork into Thessaly, to the end that he might be reputed innocent.'

CHAP. IV.

IN WHICH ONE OF OUR HEROINE'S WHIMS IS JUSTIFIED, BY SOME OTHERS FULL AS WHIMSICAL.

THIS piece of history, with Sir Charles's remarks upon it, brought them into Bath. Their lodgings being provided before-hand, the ladies retired to their different chambers, to repose themselves after the fatigue of their journey, and did not meet again till supper was on table; when Miss Glanville, who had eagerly enquired what company was then in the place, and heard there were a great many persons of fashion just arrived, prest Arabella to go to the Pump-room the next morning, assuring her she would find a very agreeable amusement.

Arabella accordingly consented to accompany her; and being told the ladies went in an undress of a morning, she accommodated herself to the custom, and went in a negligent dress; but instead of a capuchin, she wore something like a veil, of black gauze, which covered almost all her face, and

part of her waist, and gave her a very singular appearance.

Miss Glanville was too envious of her cousin's superiority in point of beauty, to inform her of any oddity in her dress, which she thought might expose her to the ridicule of those that saw her; and Mr. Glanville was too little a critick in ladies apparel, to be sensible that Arabella was not in the fashion; and since every thing she wore became her extremely, he could not chuse but think she dressed admirably well: he handed her, therefore, with a great deal of satisfaction, into the Pump-room, which happened to be greatly crowded that morning.

The attention of most part of the company was immediately engaged by the appearance Lady Bella made. Strangers are here most strictly criticised, and every new object affords a delicious feast of raillery and scandal.

The ladies, alarmed at the singularity of her dress, crowded together in parties; and the words, 'Who can she be? Strange creature! Ridiculous!' and other exclamations of the same kind, were whispered very intelligibly.

The men were struck with her figure, veiled as she was. Her fine stature, the beautiful turn of her person, the grace and elegance of her motion, attracted all their notice: the phenomena of the veil, however, gave them great disturbance. So lovely a person seemed to promise the owner had a face not unworthy of it; but that was totally hid from their view: for Arabella, at her entrance into the room, had pulled the gauze quite over her face, following therein the custom of the ladies in Clelia, and the Grand Cyrus, who, in mixed companies, always hid their faces with great care.

The wits and pretty fellows, railed at the envious covering, and compared her to the sun obscured by a cloud; while the beaux *dem'd* the horrid innovation, and expressed a fear, lest it should grow into a fashion.

Some of the wiser sort took her for a foreigner; others, of still more sagacity, supposed her a Scotch lady, covered with her plaid; and a third sort, infinitely wiser than either, concluded she was a Spanish nun, that had escaped from a convent, and had not yet quitted her veil.

Arabella, ignorant of the diversity

of opinions to which her appearance gave rise, was taken up in discoursing with Mr. Glanville upon the medicinal virtue of the springs, the œconomy of the baths, the nature of the diversions, and such other topicks as the objects around them furnished her with.

In the mean time, Miss Glanville was got amidst a crowd of her acquaintance, who had hardly paid the civilities of a first meeting, before they eagerly enquired, who that lady she brought with her was.

Miss Glanville informed them, that she was her cousin, and daughter to the deceased Marquis of —; adding, with a sneer, that she had been brought up in the country; knew nothing of the world; and had some very peculiar notions, ‘As you may see,’ said she, ‘by that odd kind of covering she wears.’

Her name and quality were presently whispered all over the room; the men, hearing she was a great heiress, found greater beauties to admire in her person; the ladies, awed by the sanction of quality, dropt their ridicule on her dress, and began to quote examples of whims full as inexcusable.

One remembered that Lady J— F— always wore her ruffles reversed; that the Countess of — went to court in a farthingale; that the Dutchess of — sat astride upon a horse; and a certain lady of great fortune, and nearly allied to quality, because she was not dignified with a title, invented a new one for herself; and directed her servants to say, in speaking to her, ‘*Your honouress*,’ which afterwards became a custom among all her acquaintance; who mortally offended her if they omitted that instance of respect.

CHAP. V.

CONTAINING SOME HISTORICAL ANECDOTES, THE TRUTH OF WHICH MAY POSSIBLY BE DOUBTED, AS THEY ARE NOT TO BE FOUND IN ANY OF THE HISTORIANS.

AFTER a short stay in the room, Arabella expressing a desire to return home, Mr. Glanville conducted her out. Two gentlemen of his ac-

quaintance attending Miss Glanville, Sir Charles detained them to breakfast; by which means they had an opportunity of satisfying their curiosity; and beheld Arabella, divested of that veil, which had, as they said, (and it is probable they said no more than they thought) concealed one of the finest faces in the world.

Miss Glanville had the mortification to see both the gentlemen so charmed with the sight of her cousin’s face, that for a long time she sat wholly neglected; but the seriousness of her behaviour giving some little disgust to the youngest of them, who was what the ladies call a pretty fellow, a dear creature, and the most diverting man in the world; he applied himself wholly to Miss Glanville, and soon engaged her in a particular conversation.

Mr. Selvin, so was the other gentleman called, was of a much graver cast; he affected to be thought deep-read in history, and never failed to take all opportunities of displaying his knowledge of antiquity, which was indeed but very superficial; but having some few anecdotes by heart, which he would take occasion to introduce as often as he could, he passed among many persons for one who, by application and study, had acquired an universal knowledge of ancient history.

Speaking of any particular circumstance, he would fix the time, by computing the year with the number of the Olympiads.

‘It happened,’ he would say, ‘in the 141st Olympiad.’

Such an amazing exactness had a suitable effect on his audience, and always procured him a great degree of attention.

This gentleman hitherto had no opportunity of displaying his knowledge of history, the discourse having wholly turned upon news, and other trifles; when Arabella, after some more enquiries concerning the place, remarked, that there was a very great difference between the medicinal waters at Bath, and the fine springs at the foot of the mountain Thermopylæ, in Greece, as well in their qualities, as manner of using them: ‘And I am of opinion,’ added she, ‘that Bath, famous as it is for restoring health, is less frequented by infirm persons, than the famous springs of Thermopylæ.’

* pylæ were by the beauties of Greece,
 * to whom those waters have the repu-
 * tation of giving new lustre.'

Mr. Selvin, who, with all his reading, had never met with any account of these celebrated Grecian springs, was extremely disconcerted at not being able to continue a conversation, which the silence of the rest of the company made him imagine was directed wholly to him.

The shame he conceived at seeing himself posed by a girl, in a matter which so immediately belonged to him, made him resolve to draw himself out of this dilemma at any rate; and, though he was far from being convinced that there were no such springs at Thermopylæ as Arabella mentioned, yet he resolutely maintained that she must be mistaken in their situation; for, to his certain knowledge, there were no medicinal waters at the foot of that mountain.

Arabella, who could not endure to be contradicted in what she took to be so incontestable a fact, reddened with vexation at his unexpected denial.

'It should seem,' said she, 'by your discourse, that you are unacquainted with many material passages that passed among very illustrious persons there; and if you knew any thing of Pisistratus the Athenian, you would know, that an adventure he had at those baths, laid the foundation of all those great designs, which he afterwards effected, to the total subversion of the Athenian government.'

Mr. Selvin, surprized that this piece of history had likewise escaped his observation, resolved, however, not to give up his point.

'I think, Madam,' replied he, with great self-sufficiency, 'that I am pretty well acquainted with every thing which relates to the affairs of the Athenian commonwealth; and know by what steps Pisistratus advanced himself to the sovereignty.—It was, indeed, a great stroke of policy in him,' said he, turning to Mr. Glanville, 'to wound himself, in order to get a guard assigned him.'

'You are mistaken, Sir,' said Arabella, 'if you believe there was any truth in the report of his having wounded himself; it was done either by his rival Lycurgus, or Theocrites;

who believing him still to be in love with the fair Cerinthe, whom he courted, took that way to get rid of him: neither is it true, that ambition alone inspired Pisistratus with a design of enslaving his country; those authors who say so, must know little of the springs and motives of his conduct. It was neither ambition nor revenge that made him act as he did; it was the violent affection he conceived for the beautiful Cleorante, whom he first saw at the famous baths of Thermopylæ, which put him upon those designs; for, seeing that Lycurgus, who was not his rival in ambition, but love, would certainly become the possessor of Cleorante, unless he made himself tyrant of Athens, he had recourse to that violent method, in order to preserve her for himself.'

'I protest, Madam,' said Mr. Selvin, casting down his eyes in great confusion at her superior knowledge in history, 'these particulars have all escaped my notice; and this is the first time I ever understood that Pisistratus was violently in love; and that it was not ambition which made him aspire to sovereignty.'

'I do not remember any mention of this in Plutarch,' continued he, rubbing his forehead, 'or any of the authors who have treated on the affairs of Greece.'

'Very likely, Sir,' replied Arabella; 'but you will see the whole story of Pisistratus's love for Cleorante, with the effects it produced, related at large in Scudery.'

'Scudery, Madam!' said the sage Mr. Selvin, 'I never read that historian.'

'No, Sir!' replied Arabella; 'then your reading has been very confined.'

'I know, Madam,' said he, 'that Herodotus, Thucydides, and Plutarch, have indeed quoted him frequently.'

'I am surprized, Sir,' said Mr. Glanville, who was excessively diverted at this discovery of his great ignorance and affectation, 'that you have not read that famous historian; especially as the writers you have mentioned quote him so often.'

'Why, to tell you the truth, Sir,' said he, 'though he was a Roman, yet

‘yet it is objected to him, that he wrote but indifferent Latin; with no purity or elegance; and—’

‘You are quite mistaken, Sir,’ interrupted Arabella; ‘the great Scudery was a Frenchman; and both his Clelia and Artamanes were written in French.’

‘A Frenchman was he?’ said Mr. Selvin, with a lofty air: ‘Oh! then, it is not surprizing that I have not read him; I read no authors but the ancients, Madam,’ added he, with a look of self-applause; ‘I cannot relish the moderns at all; I have no taste for their way of writing.’

‘But Scudery must needs be more ancient than Thucydides, and the rest of those Greek historians you mentioned,’ said Mr. Glanville: ‘how else could they quote him?’

Mr. Selvin was here so utterly at a loss, that he could not conceal his confusion; he held down his head, and continued silent; while the beau, who had listened to the latter part of their discourse, exerted his supposed talent of raillery against the unhappy admirer of the ancient authors; and increased his confusion by a thousand sarcasms, which gave more diversion to himself than any body else.

CHAP. VI.

WHICH CONTAINS SOME EXCELLENT RULES FOR RAILLERY.

MR. Glanville, who had too much politeness and good-nature to insist too long upon the ridicule in the character of his acquaintance, changed the discourse; and Arabella, who had observed, with some concern, the ill-judged raillery of the young beau, took occasion to decry that species of wit; and gave it as her opinion, that it was very dangerous and unpleasing.

‘For, truly,’ said she, ‘it is almost impossible to use it without being hated or feared; and whoever gets a habit of it, is in danger of wronging all the laws of friendship and humanity.’

‘Certainly,’ pursued she, looking at the beau, ‘it is extremely unjust to railly one’s friends and particular acquaintance: first, chuse them well, and be as nice as you please in the

choice; but when you have chosen them, by no means play upon them; it is cruel and malicious to divert one’s self at the expence of one’s friend.’

‘However, Madam,’ said Mr. Glanville, who was charmed to hear her talk so rationally, ‘you may give people leave to railly their enemies.’

‘Truly,’ resumed Arabella, ‘I cannot allow that, any more than upon friends; for raillery is the poorest kind of revenge that can be taken: methinks it is mean to railly persons who have a small share of merit; since, haply, their defects were born with them, and not of their own acquiring; and it is great injustice to descant upon one slight fault in men of parts, to the prejudice of a thousand good qualities.’

‘For aught I see, Madam,’ said the beau, ‘you will not allow one to railly anybody.’

‘I am of opinion, Sir,’ said Arabella, ‘that there are very few proper objects for raillery; and still fewer who can railly well: the talent of raillery ought to be born with a person; no art can infuse it; and those who endeavour to railly in spite of nature, will be so far from diverting others, that they will become the objects of ridicule themselves.’

‘Many other pleasing qualities of wit may be acquired by pains and study, but raillery must be the gift of nature: it is not enough to have many lively and agreeable thoughts; but there must be such an expression, as must convey their full force and meaning; the air, the aspect, the tone of the voice, and every part in general, must contribute to it’s perfection.’

‘There ought also to be a great distance between raillery and satire, so that one may never be mistaken for the other: raillery ought indeed to surprize, and sensibly touch, those to whom it is directed; but I would not have the wounds it makes either deep or lasting; let those who feel it, be hurt like persons who, gathering roses, are pricked by the thorns, and find a sweet smell to make amends.’

‘I would have raillery raise the fancy, and quicken the imagination; the fire of it’s wit should only enable

‘us to trace it’s original, and shine as the stars do, but not burn. Yet, after all, I cannot greatly approve of raillery, or cease to think it dangerous; and, to pursue my comparison,’ said she, with an enchanting smile, ‘persons who possess the true talent of raillery, are like comets; they are seldom seen, and are at once admired and feared.’

‘I protest, Lady Bella,’ said Sir Charles, who had listened to her with many signs of admiration, ‘you speak like an orator.’

‘One would not imagine,’ interrupted Mr. Glanville, who saw Arabella in some confusion at the coarse praise her uncle gave her, ‘that my cousin could speak so accurately of a quality she never practises: and it is easy to judge, by what she has said, that no body can railly finer than herself, if she pleases.’

Mr. Selvin, though he bore her a grudge for knowing more history than he did, yet assured her that she had given the best rules imaginable for railing well. But the beau, whom she had silenced by her reproof, was extremely angry; and, supposing it would mortify her to see him pay court to her cousin, he redoubled his assiduities to Miss Glanville, who was highly delighted at seeing Arabella less taken notice of by this gay gentleman than herself.

C H A P. VII.

IN WHICH THE AUTHOR CONDESCENDS TO BE VERY MINUTE IN THE DESCRIPTION OF OUR HEROINE’S DRESS.

THE indifference of Mr. Tinsel convincing Miss Glanville that Arabella was less to be dreaded than she imagined, she had no reluctance at seeing her prepare for her public appearance the next ball-night.

Having consulted her fancy in a rich silver stuff she had bought for that purpose, a person was sent for to make it; and Arabella, who followed no fashion but her own taste, which was formed on the manners of the heroines, ordered the woman to make her a robe after the same model as the princess Julia’s.

The mantua-maker, who thought it might do her great prejudice with her new customer to acknowledge she knew nothing of the princess Julia, or the fashion of her gown, replied at random, and with great pertness—

That that taste was quite out, and she would advise her ladyship to have her cloaths made in the present mode, which was far more becoming.

‘You can never persuade me,’ said Arabella, ‘that any fashion can be more becoming than that of the princess Julia’s, who was the most gallant princess upon earth, and knew better than any other how to set off her charms. It may indeed be a little obsolete now,’ pursued she; ‘for the fashion could not but alter a little in the compass of near two thousand years.’

‘Two thousand years, Madam!’ said the woman, in a great surprize; ‘Lord help us trades-people, if they did not alter a thousand times in as many days! I thought your ladyship was speaking of the last month’s taste, which, as I said before, is quite out now.’

‘Well,’ replied Arabella, ‘let the present mode be what it will, I insist upon having my cloaths made after the pattern of the beautiful daughter of Augustus; being convinced that none other can be half so becoming.’

‘What fashion was that, pray, Madam?’ said the woman. ‘I never saw it.’

‘How!’ replied Arabella, ‘have you already forgot the fashion of the princess Julia’s robe, which you said was wore but last month? Or, are you ignorant that the princess Julia and the daughter of Augustus is the same person?’

‘I protest, Madam,’ said the woman, extremely confused, ‘I had forgot that till you called it to my mind.’

‘Well,’ said Arabella, ‘make me a robe in the same taste.’

The mantua-maker was now wholly at a loss in what manner to behave; for, being conscious that she knew nothing of the princess Julia’s fashion, she could not undertake to make it without directions, and she was afraid of discovering her ignorance by asking for any; so that her silence and embarrassment persuading Arabella she knew nothing of the matter, she dismissed her
with

with a small present for the trouble she had given her, and had recourse to her usual expedient, which was to make one of her women, who understood a little of the mantua-making business, make a robe for her after her own directions.

Miss Glanville, who imagined she had sent for work-women in order to have cloaths made in the modern taste, was surprized, at her entrance into her chamber, to see her dressing for the ball in a habit singular to the last degree.

She wore no hoop, and the blue and silver stuff of her robe was only kept by it's own richness from hanging close about her. It was quite open round her breast, which was shaded with a rich border of lace; and, clasping close to her waist by small knots of diamonds, descended in a sweeping train on the ground.

The sleeves were short, wide, and flared, fastened in different places with diamonds, and her arms were partly hid by half a dozen falls of ruffles. Her hair, which fell in very easy ringlets on her neck, was placed with great care and exactness round her lovely face; and the jewels and ribbands, which were all her head-dress, disposed to the greatest advantage.

Upon the whole, nothing could be more singularly becoming than her dress; or set off with greater advantage the striking beauties of her person.

Miss Glanville, though she was not displeased to see her persist in her singularity of dress, yet could not behold her look so lovely in it, without feeling a secret uneasiness; but consoling herself with the hopes of the ridicule she would occasion, she assumed a cheerful air, approved her taste in the choice of her colours, and went with her at the usual hour to the rooms, attended by Mr. Glanville, Mr. Selvin, and the young beau we have formerly mentioned.

The surprize Arabella's unusual appearance gave to the whole company, was very visible to every one but herself.

The moment she entered the room, every one whispered the person next to them; and for some moments nothing was heard but the words, 'The Princess Julia;' which was echoed at every corner, and at last attracted her observation.

Mr. Glanville, and the rest of the company with her, were in some confusion at the universal exclamation, which they imagined was occasioned by the singularity of her habit; though they could not conceive why they gave her that title. Had they known the adventure of the mantua-maker, it would doubtless have easily occurred to them; for the woman had no sooner left Arabella, than she related the conference she had with a lady newly arrived, who had required her to make a robe in the manner of the princess Julia's, and dismissed her because she did not understand the fashions that prevailed two thousand years ago.

This story was quickly dispersed, and, for it's novelty, afforded a great deal of diversion; every one longed to see a fashion of such antiquity, and expected the appearance of the princess Julia with great impatience.

It is not to be doubted but much mirth was treasured up for her appearance; and the occasional humourist had already prepared his accustomed jest, when the sight of the devoted fair-one repelled his vivacity, and the designed ridicule of the whole assembly.

Scarce had the tumultuous whisper escaped the lips of each individual, when they found themselves awed to respect by that irresistible charm in the person of Arabella, which commanded reverence and love from all who beheld her.

Her noble air, the native dignity in her looks, the inexpressible grace which accompanied all her motions, and the consummate loveliness of her form, drew the admiration of the whole assembly.

A respectful silence succeeded; and the astonishment her beauty occasioned, left them no room to descant on the absurdity of her dress.

Miss Glanville, who felt a malicious joy at the sneers she expected would be cast on her cousin, was greatly disappointed at the deference which seemed to be paid her; and, to vent some part of her spleen, took occasion to mention her surprize at the behaviour of the company on their entrance, wondering what they could mean by whispering, 'The Princess Julia,' to one another.

'I assure you,' said Arabella, smiling, 'I am not less surprized than you at it; and since they directed
' their

'their looks to me at the same time; I fancy they either took me for some princess of the name of Julia, who is expected here to-night, or else flatter me with some resemblance to the beautiful daughter of Augustus.'

'The comparison, Madam,' said Mr. Selvin, who took all occasions to shew his reading, 'is too injurious to you; for I am of opinion you as much excel that licentious lady in the beauties of your person, as you do in the qualities of your mind.'

'I never heard licentiousness imputed to the daughter of Augustus Cæsar,' said Arabella; 'and the most her enemies can say of her, is, that she loved admiration, and would permit herself to be beloved, and to be told so, without shewing any signs of displeasure.'

'Bless me, Madam!' interrupted Mr. Selvin, 'how strangely do you mistake the character of Julia: though the daughter of an emperor, she was (pardon the expression) the most abandoned prostitute in Rome; many of her intrigues are recorded in history; but, to mention only one, was not her infamous commerce with Ovid the cause of his banishment?'

CHAP. VIII.

SOME REFLECTIONS VERY FIT, AND OTHERS VERY UNFIT, FOR AN ASSEMBLY-ROOM.

'YOU speak in strange terms,' replied Arabella, blushing, 'of a princess, who, if she was not the most reserved and severe person in the world, was yet, nevertheless, absolutely chaste.'

'I know there were people who represented her partiality for Ovid in a very unfavourable light; but that ingenious poet, when he related his history to the great Agrippa, told him in confidence all that had passed between him and the princess Julia, than which nothing could be more innocent, though a little indiscreet. For it is certain that she permitted him to love her, and did not condemn him to any rigorous punishment for daring to tell her so; yet, for all this, as I said before, though she was not altogether so austere as she ought

'to have been, yet she was, nevertheless, a most virtuous princess.'

Mr. Selvin, not daring to contradict a lady, whose extensive reading had furnished her with anecdotes unknown almost to any body else, by his silence confessed her superiority: but Mr. Glanville, who knew all these anecdotes were drawn from romances, which he found contradicted the known facts in history, and assigned the most ridiculous causes for things of the greatest importance, could not help smiling at the facility with which Mr. Selvin gave into those idle absurdities. For notwithstanding his affectation of great reading, his superficial knowledge of history made it extremely easy to deceive him; and as it was his custom to mark in his pocket-book all the scraps of history he heard introduced into conversation, and retail them again in other company, he did not doubt but he would make a figure with the curious circumstances Arabella had furnished him with.

Arabella observing Mr. Tinsel, by his familiar bows, significant smiles, and easy salutations, was acquainted with the greatest part of the assembly, told him, that she did not doubt but he knew the adventures of many persons whom they were viewing; and that he would do her a pleasure, if he would relate some of them.

Mr. Tinsel was charmed with a request which afforded him an opportunity of gratifying a favourite inclination; and seating himself near her immediately, was beginning to obey her injunctions, when she gracefully intreated him to stay a moment; and calling to Mr. Glanville, and his sister, who were talking to Mr. Selvin, asked them if they chused to partake of a more rational amusement than dancing, and listen to the adventures of some illustrious persons, which Mr. Tinsel had promised to relate.

'I assure you, Madam,' said Mr. Glanville, smiling, 'you will find that a less innocent amusement than dancing.'

'Why so, Sir,' replied Arabella, 'since it is not an indiscreet curiosity which prompts me to a desire of hearing the histories Mr. Tinsel has promised to entertain me with; but rather a hope of hearing something which may at once improve and de-

‘light me; something which may excite my admiration, engage my esteem, or influence my practice?’

‘It was, doubtless, with such motives as these, that we find princesses and ladies of the most illustrious rank, in Clelia and the Grand Cyrus, listening to the adventures of persons, in whom they were probably as little interested, as we are in these around us. Kings, princes, and commanders of armies, thought it was no waste of their time, in the midst of the hurry and clamour of a camp, to listen many hours to the relation of one single history, and not filled with any extraordinary events, but haply a simple recital of common occurrences: the great Cyrus, while he was busy in reducing all Asia to his yoke, heard, nevertheless, the histories of all the considerable persons in the camp, besides those of strangers, and even his enemies. If there was therefore any thing either criminal or mean in hearing the adventures of others, do you imagine so many great and illustrious persons would have given in to such an amusement?’

After this Arabella turned gravely about to Mr. Tinsel, and told him, he was at liberty to begin his recital.

The beau, a little disconcerted by the solemnity with which she requested his information, knew not how to begin with the formality that he saw was required of him; and therefore sat silent for a few moments; which Arabella supposed was to recal to his memory all the passages he proposed to relate.

His perplexity would probably have increased instead of lessening by the profound silence which she observed, had not Miss Glanville seated herself with a sprightly air on the other side of him, and directing his eyes to a tall handsome woman that had just entered, asked him pleasantly, to tell her history, if he knew it.

Mr. Tinsel, brought into his usual track by this question, answered, smiling, that the history of that lady was yet a secret, or known but to a very few; ‘But my intelligence,’ added he, ‘is generally the earliest, and may always be depended on.’

‘Perhaps,’ said Arabella, ‘the lady is one of your acquaintances, and favoured you with the recital of her adventures from her own mouth.’

‘No, really, Madam,’ answered Mr. Tinsel, surprized at the great simplicity of Arabella, for so he understood it; ‘the lady, I believe, is not so communicative: and to say the truth, I should not chuse to hear her adventures from herself, since she certainly would suppress the most material circumstances.’

‘In a word,’ said he, lowering his voice, ‘that lady was for many years the mistress of a young military nobleman, whom she was so complaisant to follow in all his campaigns, marches, sieges, and every inconvenience of war: he married her in Gibraltar, from whence he is lately arrived, and introduced his new lady to his noble brother, by whom she was not unfavourably received. It is worth remarking, that this same haughty peer thought fit to resent with implacable obstinacy the marriage of another of his brothers, with the widow of a brave officer, of considerable rank in the army. It is true, she was several years older than the young lord, and had no fortune; but the duke assigned other reasons for his displeasure: he complained loudly, that his brother had dishonoured the nobility of his birth by this alliance, and continued his resentment till the death of the young hero, who gave many remarkable proofs of his courage and fortitude upon several occasions, and died gloriously before the walls of Carthage; leaving his disconsolate lady a widow a second time, with the acquisition of a title indeed, but a very small addition to her fortune.’

‘Observe that gay, splendid lady, I beseech you, Madam,’ pursued he, turning to Arabella; ‘how affectingly she looks and talks, and throws her eyes around the room, with a haughty self-sufficiency in her aspect, and insolent contempt for every thing but herself. Her habit, her speech, her motions, are all French; nothing in England is able to please her; the people so dull, so awkwardly polite; the manners so gross; no delicacy, no elegance, no magnificence in their persons, houses, or diversions; every thing is so distasteful, there is no living in such a place. “One may crawl about, indeed,” she says, “and make a shift to breathe in the odious country, but one cannot be said to live;”

“live; and with all the requisites to render life delightful, here, one can only suffer, not enjoy it.”

“Would one not imagine,” pursued he, “this fine lady was a person of very exalted rank, who has the sanction of birth, riches, and grandeur, for her extraordinary pride? and yet she is no other than the daughter of an innkeeper at Spa, and had the exalted post assigned her of attending new lodgers to their apartments, acquainting them with all the conveniences of the place, answering an humble question or two concerning what company was in the town, what scandal was stirring, and the like.”

“One of our great sea-commanders going thither for his health, happened to lodge at this inn; and was so struck with her charms, that he married her in a few weeks, and soon after brought her to England.”

“Such was the origin of this fantastick lady; whose insupportable pride and ridiculous affectation draws contempt and aversion wherever she appears.”

“Did I not tell you, Madam,” interrupted Mr. Glanville, “that the amusement you had chose was not so innocent as dancing? What a deal of scandal has Mr. Tinsel uttered in the compass of a few minutes?”

“I assure you,” replied Arabella, “I know not what to make of the histories he has been relating. I think they do not deserve that name, and are rather detached pieces of satire on particular persons, than a serious relation of facts. I confess my expectations from this gentleman have not been answered.”

“I think, however, Madam,” said Mr. Glanville, “we may allow that there is a negative merit in the relations Mr. Tinsel has made; for, if he has not shewn us any thing to approve, he has at least shewn us what to condemn.”

“The ugliness of vice,” replied Arabella, “ought only to be represented to the vicious; to whom satire, like a magnifying glass, may aggravate every defect, in order to make it’s deformity appear more hideous; but since it’s end is only to reprove and amend, it should never be addressed to any but those who come within it’s correction, and may be the better for

it: a virtuous mind need not be shewn the deformity of vice, to make it be hated and avoided; the more pure and uncorrupted our ideas are, the less shall we be influenced by example. A natural propensity to virtue or vice often determines the choice: it is sufficient, therefore, to shew a good mind what it ought to pursue, though a bad one must be told what to avoid. In a word, one ought to be always incited, the other always restrained.”

“I vow, Lady Bella,” said Miss Glanville, “you’d make one think one came here to hear a sermon; you are so very grave, and talk upon such high-flown subjects. What harm was there in what Mr. Tinsel was telling us? It would be hard indeed, if one might not divert one’s self with other peoples faults.”

“I am afraid, Miss,” said Arabella, “those who can divert themselves with the faults of others, are not behind hand in affording diversion. And that very inclination,” added she, smilingly, “to hear other peoples faults, may, by those very people, be condemned as one, and afford them the same kind of ill-natured pleasure you are so desirous of.”

“Nay, Madam,” returned Miss Glanville, “your ladyship was the first who introduced the discourse you condemn so much. Did not you desire Mr. Tinsel to tell you histories about the company; and ask my brother and me, to come and hear them?”

“It is true,” replied Arabella, “that I did desire you to partake with me of a pleasing and rational amusement, for such I imagined Mr. Tinsel’s histories might afford; far from a detail of vices, follies, and irregularities, I expected to have heard the adventures of some illustrious personages related; between whose actions, and those of the heroes and heroines of antiquity, I might have found some resemblance.”

“For instance, I hoped to have heard imitated the sublime courage of a Clelia; who, to save her honour from the attempts of the impious Tarquin, leapt into the river Tyber, and swam to the other side; or the noble resolution of the incomparable Candace, who, to escape out of the hands of her ravisher, the pirate Zennadurus,

‘nadorus, set fire to his vessel with her own hands, and committed herself to the mercy of the waves: or, the constancy and affection of a Mandana, who, for the sake of a Cyrus, refused the richest crowns in the world, and braved the terrors of death to preserve herself for him.

‘As for the men, I hoped to have heard of some who might have almost equalled the great Oroondates, the invincible Artaban, the valiant Juba, the renowned Alcamenes, and many thousand heroes of antiquity; whose glorious exploits in war, and unshaken constancy in love, have given them immortal fame.’

While Arabella was uttering this long speech, with great emotion, Miss Glanville, with a sly look at the beau, gave him to understand, that was her cousin’s foible.

Mr. Tinsel, however, not able to comprehend the meaning of what she said, listened to her with many signs of perplexity and wonder.

Mr. Selvin in secret repined at her prodigious knowledge of history; and Mr. Glanville, with his eyes fixed on the ground, bit his lips almost through with madness.

In the mean time, several among the company, desirous of hearing what the strange lady was saying so loud, and with so much eagerness and emotion, gathered round them; which Mr. Glanville observing, and fearing Arabella would expose herself still farther, whispered his sister to get her away, if possible.

Miss Glanville, though very unwilling, obeyed his injunctions; and complaining of a sudden head-ache, Arabella immediately proposed retiring, which was joyfully complied with by Mr. Glanville, who with the other gentlemen attended them home.

C H A P. IX.

BEING A CHAPTER OF THE SATIRICAL KIND.

AT their return, Sir Charles told his niece, that she had now had a specimen of the world, and some of the fashionable amusements; and asked her, how she had been entertained.

‘Why, truly, Sir,’ replied she, smiling, ‘I have brought away no

‘great relish for a renewal of the amusement I have partaken of to-night. If the world, in which you seem to think I am but new initiated, affords only these kinds of pleasures, I shall very soon regret the solitude and books I have quitted.’

‘Why, pray?’ said Miss Glanville; ‘what kind of amusements did your ladyship expect to find in the world? And what was there disagreeable in your entertainment to-night? I am sure there is no place in England, except London, where there is so much good company to be met with as here. The assembly was very numerous and brilliant, and one can be at no loss for amusements: the pump-room in the morning, the parade, and the rooms, in the evening, with little occasional parties of pleasure, will find one sufficient employment, and leave none of one’s time to lie useless upon one’s hand.’

‘I am of opinion,’ replied Arabella, ‘that one’s time is far from being well employed in the manner you portion it out: and people who spend theirs in such trifling amusements, must certainly live to very little purpose.’

‘What room, I pray you, does a lady give for high and noble adventures, who consumes her days in dressing, dancing, listening to songs, and ranging the walks with people as thoughtless as herself? How mean and contemptible a figure must a life spent in such idle amusements make in history? Or rather, are not such persons always buried in oblivion; and can any pen be found who would condescend to record such inconceivable actions?’

‘Nor can I persuade myself,’ added she, ‘that any of those men whom I saw at the assembly, with figures so feminine, voices so soft, such tripping steps, and unmeaning gestures, have ever signalized either their courage or constancy; but might be overcome by their enemy in battle, or be false to their mistress in love.’

‘Laud cousin,’ replied Miss Glanville, ‘you are always talking of battles and fighting. Do you expect that persons of quality, and fine gentlemen, will go to the wars? What business have they to fight? That belongs to the officers.’

‘Then

'Then every fine gentleman is an officer,' said Arabella; 'and some other title ought to be found out for men who do nothing but dance and dress.'

'I could never have imagined,' interrupted Mr. Tinsel, surveying Arabella, 'that a lady so elegant and gay in her own appearance, should have an aversion to pleasure and magnificence.'

'I assure you, Sir,' replied Arabella, 'I have an aversion to neither: on the contrary, I am a great admirer of both. But my ideas of amusements and grandeur are probably different from yours.'

'I will allow the ladies to be solicitous about their habits, and dress with all the care and elegance they are capable of; but such trifles are below the consideration of a man, who ought not to owe the dignity of his appearance to the embroidery on his coat, but to his high and noble air, the grandeur of his courage, the elevation of his sentiments, and the many heroick actions he has performed.'

'Such a man will dress his person with a graceful simplicity, and lavish all his gold and embroidery upon his armour, to render him conspicuous in the day of battle. The plumes in his helmet will look more graceful in the field, than the feather in his hat at a ball; and jewels blaze with more propriety on his shield and cuirass in battle, than glittering on his finger in a dance.'

'Do not imagine, however,' pursued she, 'that I absolutely condemn dancing, and think it a diversion wholly unworthy of a hero.'

'History has recorded some very famous balls, at which the most illustrious persons in the world have appeared.'

'Cyrus the Great, we are informed, opened a ball with the divine Mandana at Sardis. The renowned King of Scythia danced with the Princess Cleopatra at Alexandria. The brave Cleomedon with the fair Candace at Ethiopia: but these diversions were taken but seldom, and considered indeed as an amusement, not as a part of the business of life.'

'How would so many glorious battles have been fought, cities taken,

ladies rescued, and other great and noble adventures been achieved, if the men, sunk in sloth and effeminacy, had continually followed the sound of a fiddle, sauntered in publick walks, or tattered over a tea-table?'

'I vow, cousin,' said Miss Glanville, 'you are infinitely more severe in your censures than Mr. Tinsel was at the assembly. You had little reason, methinks, to be angry with him.'

'All I have said,' replied Arabella, 'was the natural inference from your own account of the manner in which people live here. When actions are a censure upon themselves, the reciter will always be considered as a satirist.'

CHAP. X.

IN WHICH OUR HEROINE JUSTIFIES HER OWN NOTIONS BY SOME VERY ILLUSTRIOUS EXAMPLES.

MR. Selvin and Mr. Tinsel, who had listened attentively to this discourse of Arabella, took leave as soon as it was ended, and went away with very different opinions of her.

Mr. Tinsel declaring she was a fool, and had no knowledge of the world; and Mr. Selvin convinced she was a wit, and very learned in antiquity.

'Certainly,' said Mr. Selvin, in support of his opinion, 'the lady has great judgment; has been capable of prodigious application, as is apparent by her extensive reading: then her memory is quite miraculous. I protest, I am quite charmed with her; I never met with such a woman in all my life.'

'Her cousin, in my opinion,' replied Mr. Tinsel, 'is infinitely beyond her in every merit, but beauty. How sprightly and free her conversation? What a thorough knowledge of the world? So true a taste for polite amusements, and a fund of spirits that sets vapours and spleen at defiance.'

This speech bringing on a comparison between the ladies, the champions for each grew so warm in the dispute, that they had like to have quarrelled. However, by the interposition of some other gentlemen who were with them, they parted tolerable friends that night, and renewed their visits to Sir Charles in the morning.

They

They found only Miss Glanville with her father and brother. Arabella generally spent the mornings in her own chamber, where reading and the labours of the toilet employed her time till dinner: though it must be confessed, to her honour, that the latter engrossed but a very small part of it.

Miss Glanville, with whom the beau had a long conversation at one of the windows, in which he recounted his dispute with Mr. Selvin, and the danger he ran of being pinked in a duel, (that was his phrase) for her sake, at last proposed a walk; to which she consented, and engaged to prevail upon Arabella to accompany them.

That lady at first positively refused, alledging in excuse, that she was so extremely interested in the fate of the princess Melisinda, whose story she was reading, that she could not stir till she had finished it.

‘That poor princess,’ continued she, ‘is at present in a most terrible situation. She has just set fire to the palace, in order to avoid the embraces of a king who forced her to marry him. I am in pain to know how she escapes the flames.’

‘Pshaw,’ interrupted Miss Glanville, ‘let her perish there, if she will: don’t let her hinder our walk.’

‘Who is it you doom with so much cruelty to perish?’ said Arabella, closing the book, and looking steadfastly on her cousin. ‘Is it the beautiful Melisinda? That princess, whose fortitude and patience have justly rendered her the admiration of the whole world? That princess, descended from a race of heroes, whose heroick virtues all glowed in her own beauteous breast? That princess, who, when taken captive with the king her father, bore her imprisonment and chains with a marvellous constancy; and who, when she had enslaved her conqueror, and given fetters to the prince who held her father and herself in bonds, nobly refused the diadem he proffered her, and devoted herself to destruction, in order to punish the enemy of her house? I am not able to relate the rest of her history, seeing I have read no farther myself; but if you will be pleased to sit down and listen to me while I read what remains, I am persuaded you will find new cause

‘to love and admire this amiable princess.’

‘Pardon me, Madam,’ said Miss Glanville; ‘I have heard enough; and I could have been very well satisfied not to have heard so much. I think we waste a great deal of time talking about people we know nothing of. The morning will be quite lost, if we don’t make haste. Come,’ added she, ‘you must go; you have a new lover below, who waits to go with us; he’ll die if I don’t bring you.’

‘A new lover!’ returned Arabella, surprised.

‘Aye, aye,’ said Miss Glanville, ‘the learned Mr. Selvin; I assure you, he had almost quarrelled with Mr. Tinsel last night about your ladyship.’

Arabella, at this intelligence, casting down her eyes, discovered many signs of anger and confusion; and after a silence of some moments, during which Miss Glanville had been employed in adjusting her dress at the glass, addressing herself to her cousin with an accent somewhat less sweet than before—

‘Had any other than yourself, Miss,’ said she, ‘acquainted me with the presumption of that unfortunate person, I should haply have discovered my resentment in other terms: but, as it is, must inform you, that I take it extremely ill you should be accessory to giving me this offence.’

‘Hey-day!’ said Miss Glanville, turning about hastily, ‘how have I offended your ladyship, pray?’

‘I am willing to hope, cousin,’ replied Arabella, ‘that it was only to divert yourself with the trouble and confusion in which you see me, that you have indiscreetly told things which ought to have been buried in silence.’

‘And what is all this mighty trouble and confusion about, then, Madam?’ said Miss Glanville, smiling. ‘Is it because I told you Mr. Selvin was a lover of your ladyship?’

‘Certainly,’ said Arabella, ‘such an information is sufficient to give one a great deal of perplexity. Is it such a little matter, think you, to be told that a man has the presumption to love one?’

‘A mere trifle,’ replied Miss Glanville,

villè, laughing; 'a hundred lovers are not worth a moment's thought; when one's sure of them; for then the trouble is all over: and as for this unfortunate person, as your ladyship called him, let him die at his leisure, while we go to the parade.'

'Your levity, cousin,' said Arabella, 'forces me to smile, notwithstanding the cause I have to be incensed; however, I have charity enough to make me not desire the death of Mr. Selvin, who may repair the crime he has been guilty of by repentance and discontinuation.'

'Well, then,' said Miss Glanville, 'you are resolved to go to the parade: shall I reach you your odd kind of capuchin?'

'How,' said Arabella, 'can I with any propriety see a man who has discovered himself to have a passion for me? Will he not construe such a favour into a permission for him to hope?'

'Oh, no!' interrupted Miss Glanville, 'he does not imagine I have told your ladyship he loves you; for indeed he don't know that I am acquainted with his passion.'

'Then he is less culpable than I thought him,' replied Arabella; 'and if you think I am in no danger of hearing a confession of his fault from his own mouth, I'll comply with your request, and go with you to the parade. But,' added she, 'I must first engage you to promise not to leave me alone a moment, lest he should take advantage of such an opportunity, to give some hint of his passion, that would force me to treat him very rigorously.'

Miss Glanville answered, laughing, that she would be sure to mind her directions. 'However,' said she, 'your ladyship need not be apprehensive he will say any fine things to you; for I knew a young lady he was formerly in love with, and the odious creature visited her a twelve-month before he found courage enough to tell her she was handsome.'

'Doubtless,' replied Arabella, 'he was much to be commended for his respect. A lover should never have the presumption to declare his passion to his mistress, unless in certain circumstances, which may at the same time in part disarm her anger.

For instance, he must struggle with the violence of his passion, till it has cast him into a fever. His physicians must give him over, pronouncing his ditenper incurable, since the cause of it being in his mind, all their art is incapable of removing it. Thus he must suffer, rejoicing at the approach of death, which will free him from all his torments, without violating the respect he owes to the divine object of his flame. At length, when he has but a few hours to live, his mistress, with many signs of compassion, conjures him to tell her the cause of his despair. The lover, conscious of his crime, evades all her enquiries; but the lady laying at last a peremptory command upon him to disclose the secret, he dares not disobey her, and acknowledges his passion with the utmost contrition for having offended her; bidding her take the small remainder of his life to expiate his crime; and finishes his discourse by falling into a swoon.

The lady is touched at his condition, commands him to live, and, if necessary, permits him to hope.

This is the most common way in which such declarations are, and ought to be, brought about. However, there are others, which are as well calculated for sparing a lady's confusion, and deprecating her wrath.

The lover, for example, like the prince of the Massagetes, after having buried his passion in silence for many years, may chance to be walking with his confidant in a retired place; to whom, with a deluge of tears, he relates the excess of his passion and despair. And while he is thus unbosoming his griefs, not in the least suspecting he is overheard, his princess, who had been listening to him in much trouble and confusion, by some little rustling she makes, unawares discovers herself.

The surprized lover throws himself at her feet, begs pardon for his rashness, observes that he had never presumed to discover his passion to her; and implores her leave to die before her, as a punishment for his undesign'd offence.

The method which the great Artamenes took to let the princess of Media know he adored her, was not less respectful. This valiant prince, who

‘ who had long loved her, being to fight a great battle, in which he had some secret presages he should fall, which however deceived him, wrote a long letter to the divine Mandana, wherein he discovered his passion, and the resolution his respect had inspired him with, to consume in silence, and never presume to disclose his love while he lived; acquainted her, that he had ordered that letter not to be delivered to her, till it was certainly known that he was dead.

‘ Accordingly, he received several wounds in the fight, which brought him to the ground; and his body not being found, they concluded it was in the enemy’s possession.

‘ His faithful squire, who had received his instructions before the battle, hastens to the princess, who, with all the court, is mightily affected at his death.

‘ He presents her the letter, which she makes no scruple to receive, since the writer is no more. She reads it, and her whole soul is melted with compassion; she bewails his fate with the most tender and affectionate marks of grief.

‘ Her confidant asks why she is so much affected, since, in all probability, she would not have pardoned him for loving her; had he been alive?

‘ She acknowledges the truth of her observation, takes notice that his death having cancelled his crime, his respectful passion alone employs her thoughts; she is resolved to bewail, as innocent and worthy of compassion when dead, him whom living she would treat as a criminal; and insinuates, that her heart had entertained an affection for him.

‘ Her confidant treasures up this hint, and endeavours to console her, but in vain, till news is brought, that Artamenes, who had been carried for dead out of the field, and by a very surprizing adventure concealed all this time, is returned.

‘ The princess is covered with confusion; and, though glad he is alive, resolves to banish him for his crime.

‘ Her confidant pleads his cause so well, that she consents to see him; and, since he can no longer conceal his passion, he confirms the confession in his letter, humbly begging pardon for being still alive.

‘ The princess, who cannot plead ignorance of his passion, nor deny the sorrow she testified for his death, condescends to pardon him, and he is also permitted to hope. In like manner the great prince of Persia—’

‘ Does your ladyship consider how late it is?’ interrupted Miss Glanville, who had hitherto very impatiently listened to her. ‘ Don’t let us keep the gentlemen waiting any longer for us.’

‘ I must inform you how the prince of Persia declared his love for the incomparable Berenice,’ said Arabella.

‘ Another time, dear cousin,’ said Miss Glanville; ‘ methinks we have talked long enough upon this subject.’

‘ I am sorry the time has seemed so tedious to you,’ said Arabella, smiling; ‘ and therefore I’ll trespass no longer upon your patience.’ Then ordering Lucy to bring her hat and gloves, she went down stairs, followed by Miss Glanville, who was greatly disappointed at her not putting on her veil.

CHAP. XI.

IN WHICH OUR HEROINE BEING MISTAKEN HERSELF, GIVES OCCASION FOR A GREAT MANY OTHER MISTAKES.

AS soon as the ladies entered the room, Mr. Selvin, with more gaiety than usual, advanced towards Arabella, who put on so cold and severe a countenance at his approach, that the poor man, extremely confused, drew back, and remained in great perplexity, fearing he had offended her.

Mr. Tinsel, seeing Mr. Selvin’s reception, and awed by the becoming majesty in her person, notwithstanding all his assurance, accosted her with less confidence than was his custom; but Arabella softening her looks with the most engaging smiles, made an apology for detaining them so long from the parade, gave her hand to the beau, as being not a suspected person, and permitted him to lead her out, Mr. Glanville, to whom she always allowed the preference on those occasions, being a little indisposed, and not able to attend her,

Mr.

Mr. Tinsel, whose vanity was greatly flattered by the preference Arabella gave him to his companion, proceeded, according to his usual custom, to examine her looks and behaviour with more care; conceiving such a preference must proceed from a latent motive which was not unfavourable for him. His discernment on these occasions being very surprizing, he soon discovered in the bright eyes of Arabella a secret approbation of his person, which he endeavoured to increase by displaying it with all the address he was master of, and did not fail to talk her into an opinion of his wit, by ridiculing every body that passed them, and directing several studied compliments to herself.

Miss Glanville, who was not so agreeably entertained by the grave Mr. Selvin, saw these advances to a gallantry with her cousin with great disturbance: she was resolved to interrupt it, if possible; and being convinced Mr. Selvin preferred Arabella's conversation to hers, she plotted how to pair them together, and have the beau to herself.

As they walked a few paces behind her cousin and Mr. Tinsel, she was in no danger of being over-heard; and taking occasion to put Mr. Selvin in mind of Arabella's behaviour to him, when he accosted her, she asked him if he was conscious of having done any thing to offend her.

'I protest, Madam,' replied Mr. Selvin, 'I know not of any thing I have done to displease her. I never failed; to my knowledge, in my respects, towards her ladyship, for whom indeed I have a most profound veneration.'

'I know so much of her temper,' resumed Miss Glanville, 'as to be certain, if she has taken it into her head to be angry with you, she will be ten times more so at your indifference; and if you hope for her favour, you must ask her pardon with the most earliest submission imaginable.'

'If I knew I had offended her,' replied Mr. Selvin, 'I would very willingly ask her pardon; but really, since I have not been guilty of any fault towards her ladyship, I don't know how to acknowledge it.'

'Well,' said Miss Glanville, coldly, 'I only took the liberty to give you

some friendly advice, which you may follow, or not, as you please. I know my cousin is angry at something, and I wish you were friends again, that's all.'

'I am mightily obliged to you, Madam,' said Mr. Selvin; 'and since you assure me her ladyship is angry, I'll ask her pardon, though, really, as I said before, I don't know for what.'

'Well,' interrupted Miss Glanville, 'we'll join them at the end of the Parade; and to give you an opportunity of speaking to my cousin, I'll engage Mr. Tinsel myself.'

Mr. Selvin, who thought himself greatly obliged to Miss Glanville for her good intentions, though in reality she had a view of exposing of her cousin, as well as an inclination to engage Mr. Tinsel, took courage, as they turned, to get on the other side of Arabella, whom he had not dared before to approach; while Miss Glanville, addressing a whisper of no great importance to her cousin, parted her from the beau, and slackening her pace a little, fell into a particular discourse with him, which Arabella being too polite to interrupt, remained in a very perplexing situation, dreading every moment that Mr. Selvin would explain himself; alarmed at his silence, yet resolved to interrupt him if he began to speak, and afraid of beginning a conversation first, lest he should contrive it to his advantage.

Mr. Selvin being naturally timid in the company of ladies, the circumstance of disgrace which he was in with Arabella, her silence and reserve so added to his accustomed diffidence, that though he endeavoured several times to speak, he was not able to bring out any thing but a preluding hem; which he observed, to his extreme confusion, seemed always to increase Arabella's constraint.

Indeed, that lady, upon any suspicion that he was going to break his mysterious silence, always contracted her brow into a frown, cast down her eyes with an air of perplexity, endeavoured to hide her blushes with her fan; and to shew her inattention, directed her looks to the contrary side.

The lady and gentleman being in equal confusion, no advances were made on either side towards a conversation;

and they had reached almost the end of the Parade in an uninterrupted silence, when Mr. Selvin, fearing he should never again have so good an opportunity of making his peace, collected all his resolution, and with an accent trembling under the importance of the speech he was going to make, began—

‘Madam, since I have had the honour of walking with your ladyship, I have observed so many signs of constraint in your manner, that I hardly dare intreat you to grant me a moment’s hearing while I——’

‘Sir,’ interrupted Arabella, ‘before you go any farther, I must inform you, that what you are going to say will mortally offend me. Take heed then how you commit an indiscretion which will force me to treat you very rigorously.’

‘If your ladyship will not allow me to speak in my own justification,’ said Mr. Selvin, ‘yet I hope you will not refuse to tell me my offence, since I——’

‘You are very confident, indeed,’ interrupted Arabella again, ‘to suppose I will repeat what would be infinitely grievous for me to hear. Against my will,’ pursued she, ‘I must give you the satisfaction to know, that I am not ignorant of your crime, but I also assure you that I am highly incensed; and that not only with the thoughts you have dared to entertain of me, but likewise with your presumption in going about to disclose them.’

Mr. Selvin, whom the seeming contradictions in this speech astonished, yet imagined in general it hinted at the dispute between him and Mr. Tinsel; and supposing the story had been told to his disadvantage, which was the cause of her anger, replied in great emotion at the injustice done him—

‘Since somebody has been so officious to acquaint your ladyship with an affair which ought to have been kept from your knowledge; it is a pity they did not inform you, that Mr. Tinsel was the person that had the least respect for your ladyship, and is more worthy of your resentment.’

‘If Mr. Tinsel,’ replied Arabella, ‘is guilty of an offence like yours, yet since he has concealed it better, he is less culpable than you; and you have done that for him, which happily

‘he would never have had courage enough to do for himself as long as he lived.’

Poor Selvin, quite confounded at these intricate words, would have begged her to explain herself, had she not silenced him with a dreadful frown; and making a stop till Miss Glanville and Mr. Tinsel came up to them, she told her cousin with a peevish accent, that she had performed her promise very ill; and whispered her, that she was to blame for all the mortifications she had suffered.

Mr. Tinsel, supposing the alteration in Arabella’s humour proceeded from being so long deprived of his company, endeavoured to make her amends by a profusion of compliments; which she received with such an air of displeasure, that the beau, vexed at the ill success of his gallantry, told her, he was afraid Mr. Selvin’s gravity had infected her ladyship.

‘Say rather,’ replied Arabella, ‘that his indiscretion has offended me.’

Mr. Tinsel, charmed with this beginning confidence, which confirmed his hopes of having made some impression on her heart, conjured her very earnestly to tell him how Mr. Selvin had offended her.

‘It is sufficient,’ resumed she, ‘that I tell you he has offended me, without declaring the nature of his crime, since, doubtless, it has not escaped your observation, which, if I may believe him, is not wholly disinterested. To confess yet more, it is true that he hath told me something concerning you, which——’

‘Let me perish, Madam,’ interrupted the beau, ‘if one syllable he has said be true.’

‘How,’ said Arabella, a little disconcerted, ‘will you always persist in a denial, then?’

‘Deny it, Madam,’ returned Mr. Tinsel, ‘I’ll deny what he has said with my last breath; it is all a scandalous forgery; no man living is less likely to think of your ladyship in that manner. If you knew my thoughts, Madam, you would be convinced nothing is more impossible, and——’

‘Sir,’ interrupted Arabella, extremely mortified, ‘methinks you are very eager in your justification. I promise you, I do not think you
‘guilty

‘ guilty of the offence he charged you with; if I did, you would haply experience my resentment in such a manner as would make you repent of your presumption.’

Arabella, in finishing these words, interrupted Miss Glanville’s discourse with Mr. Selvin, to tell her she desired to return home; to which that young lady, who had not been at all pleased with the morning’s walk, consented.

CHAP. XII.

IN WHICH OUR HEROINE RECONCILES HERSELF TO A MORTIFYING INCIDENT, BY RECOLLECTING AN ADVENTURE IN A ROMANCE, SIMILAR TO HER OWN.

AS soon as the ladies were come to their lodgings, Arabella went up to her own apartment to meditate upon what had passed, and Miss Glanville retired to dress for dinner; while the two gentlemen, who thought they had great reason to be dissatisfied with each other, on account of Lady Bella’s behaviour, went to a coffee-house, in order to come to some explanation about it.

‘ Well, Sir,’ said the beau, with a farcastick air, ‘ I am greatly obliged to you for the endeavours you have used to ruin me in Lady Bella’s opinion. Rat me, if it is not the greatest misfortune in the world to give occasion for envy.’

‘ Envy, Sir!’ interrupted Mr. Selvin; ‘ I protest I do really admire your great skill in stratagems, but I do not envy you the possession of it. You have, indeed, very wittily contrived to put your own sentiments of that lady, which you delivered so freely the other night, into my mouth. It was a master-piece of cunning, indeed; and, as I said before, I admire your skill prodigiously.’

‘ I don’t know what you mean,’ replied Tinsel; ‘ you talk in riddles.—Did you not yourself acquaint Lady Bella with the preference I gave Miss Glanville to her? What would you propose by such a piece of treachery? You have ruined all my hopes by it: the lady resents it excessively; and it is no wonder, faith; it must certainly mortify her. Upon my soul, I can

never forgive thee for so *mal a propos* a discovery.’

‘ Forgive me, Sir!’ replied Selvin, in a rage, ‘ I don’t want your forgiveness. I have done nothing unbecoming a man of honour. The lady was so prejudiced by your insinuations, that she would not give me leave to speak; otherwise I would have fully informed her of her mistake, that she might have known how much she was obliged to you.’

‘ So she would not hear thee?’ interrupted Tinsel, laughing; ‘ dear soul! how very kind was that!—Faith, I don’t know how it is, but I am very lucky without deserving to be so.—Thou art a witness for me, Frank, I took no great pains to gain this fine creature’s heart; but it was damn’d malicious though to attempt to make discoveries. I see she is a little piqued; but I’ll set all to rights again with a *billet-doux*. I’ve an excellent hand, though I say it, at a *billet-doux*. I never knew one of mine fail in my life.’

‘ Harkee, Sir,’ said Selvin, whispering; ‘ any more attempts to shift your sentiments upon me, and you shall hear of it. In the mean time, be assured, I’ll clear myself, and put the saddle upon the right horse.’

‘ Demme, if thou art not a queer fellow,’ said Tinsel, endeavouring to hide his discomposure at this threat under a forced laugh.

Selvin, without making any reply, retired to write to Arabella; which Tinsel suspecting, resolved to be beforehand with him; and, without leaving the coffee-house, called for paper, and wrote a billet to her, which he dispatched away immediately.

The messenger had just got admittance to Lucy, when another arrived from Selvin.

They both presented their letters; but Lucy refused them, saying, her lady would turn her away if she received such sort of letters.

‘ Such sort of letters!’ returned Tinsel’s man. ‘ Why, do you know what they contain, then?’

‘ To be sure I do,’ replied Lucy; ‘ they are love-letters; and my lady has charged me never to receive any more.’

‘ Well,’ replied Selvin’s servant, ‘ you may take my letter; for my

'master desired me to tell you it was about business of consequence, which your lady must be acquainted with.'

'Since you assure me it is not a love-letter, I'll take it,' said Lucy.

'And pray take mine too,' said Tinsel's Mercury; 'for, I assure you, it is not a love-letter neither; it is only a *billet-doux*.'

'Are you sure of that?' replied Lucy: 'because I may venture to take it, I fancy, if it is what you say.'

'I'll swear it,' said the man, delivering it to her.—'Well,' said she, receiving it, 'I'll take them both up.—'

'But what did you call this?' pursued she. 'I must not forget it, or else my lady will think it a love-letter.'

'A *billet-doux*,' said the man.

Lucy, for fear she should forget it, repeated the words *billet-doux* several times as she went up stairs; but entering her lady's apartment, she perceiving the letters in her hand, asked her so sternly how she durst presume to bring them into her presence, that the poor girl in her fright forgot the lesson she had been conning; and endeavouring to recal it into her memory, took no notice of her lady's question, which she repeated several times, but to no purpose.

Arabella, surprized at her inattention, reiterated her commands in a tone somewhat louder than usual; asking her, at the same time, why she did not obey her immediately.

'Indeed, Madam,' replied Lucy, 'your ladyship would not order me to take back the letters, if you knew what they were: they are not love-letters; I was resolved to be sure of that before I took them.—This, Madam, is a letter about business of consequence; and the other—Oh dear! I can't think what the man called it: but it is not a love-letter, indeed, Madam.'

'You are a simple wench,' said Arabella, smiling. 'You may depend upon it, all letters directed to me must contain matters of love and gallantry; and those I am not permitted to receive. Take them away then immediately.—But stay,' pursued she, seeing she was about to obey her, 'one of them, you say, was delivered to you as a letter of consequence; perhaps it is so: indeed it may contain an advertisement of some design to

carry me away. How do I know but Mr. Selvin, incited by his love and despair, may intend to make such an attempt?—Give me that letter, Lucy; I am resolved to open it. As for the other—yet, who knows but the other may also bring me warning of the same danger from another quarter? The pains Mr. Tinsel took to conceal his passion, nay, almost, as I think, to deny it, amounts to a proof that he is meditating some way to make sure of me. 'Tis certainly so. Give me that letter, Lucy: I should be accessory to their intended violence, if I neglected this timely discovery.'

'Well,' cried she, taking one of the letters, 'this is exactly like what happened to the beautiful princess of Cappadocia, who, like me, in one and the same day, received advice that two of her lovers intended to carry her off.'

As she pronounced these words, Miss Glanville entered the room, to whom Arabella immediately recounted the adventure of the letters; telling her she did not doubt but they contained a discovery of some conspiracy to carry her away.

'And whom does your ladyship suspect of such a strange design, pray?' said Miss Glanville, smiling.

'At present,' replied Arabella, 'the two cavaliers who walked with us to-day, are the persons who seem the most likely to attempt that violence.'

'I dare answer for Mr. Tinsel,' replied Miss Glanville; 'he thinks of no such thing.'

'Well,' said Arabella, 'to convince you of your mistake, I must inform you that Mr. Selvin, having the presumption to begin a declaration of love to me on the Parade this morning, I reproved him severely for his want of respect, and threatened him with my displeasure. In the rage of his jealousy, at seeing me treat Mr. Tinsel well, he discovered to me that he also was as criminal as himself, in order to oblige me to a severer usage of him.'

'So he told you Mr. Tinsel was in love with you?' interrupted Miss Glanville.

'He told it me in other words,' replied Arabella; 'for he said Mr. Tinsel was guilty of that offence which I resented so severely to him.'

Miss

Miss Glanville beginning to comprehend the mystery, with great difficulty forbore laughing at her cousin's mistake; for she well knew the offence Mr. Selvin hinted at, and desirous of knowing what those letters contained, she begged her to delay opening them no longer.

Arabella, pleased at her solicitude, opened one of the letters; but glancing her eye to the bottom, and seeing the name of Selvin, she threw it hastily upon the table, and averting her eyes, 'What a mortification have I avoided!' said she; 'that letter is from Selvin, and, questionless, contains an avowal of his crime.'

'Nay, you must read it,' cried Miss Glanville, taking it up: 'since you have opened it, it is the same thing: You can never persuade him but you have seen it. However, to spare your nicety, I'll read it to you.' Which accordingly she did, and found it as follows—

'MADAM,

'I Know not what insinuations have been made use of to persuade you I was guilty of the offence which, with justice, occasioned your resentment this morning; but I assure you, nothing was ever more false. My thoughts of your ladyship are very different, and full of the profoundest respect and veneration. I have reason to suspect Mr. Tinsel is the person who has thus endeavoured to prejudice me with your ladyship; therefore I am excusable if I tell you, that those very sentiments, too disrespectful to be named, which he would persuade you are mine, he discovered himself. He then, Madam, is the person guilty of that offence he so falsely lays to the charge of him, who is, with the utmost respect and esteem, Madam, your ladyship's most obedient, and most humble servant,

'F. SELVIN.'

'How's this?' cried Miss Glanville. 'Why, Madam, you are certainly mistaken. You see Mr. Selvin utterly denies the crime of loving you. He has suffered very innocently in your opinion. Indeed, your ladyship was too hasty in condemning him.'

'If what he says be true,' replied

Arabella, 'who had been in extreme confusion while a letter so different from what she expected was reading, 'I have indeed unjustly condemned him. Nevertheless, I am still inclined to believe this is all artifice; and that he is really guilty of entertaining a passion for me.'

'But why should he take so much pains to deny it, Madam?' said Miss Glanville. 'Methinks that looks very odd.'

'Not at all,' interrupted Arabella; whose spirits were raised by recollecting an adventure in her romance similar to this; 'Mr. Selvin has fallen upon the same stratagem with Seramenes, who, being in love with the beautiful Cleobuline, princess of Corinth, took all imaginable pains to conceal his passion, in order to be near that fair princess, who would have banished him from her presence, had she known he was in love with her. Nay, he went so far in his dissimulation, as to pretend love to one of the ladies of her court, that his passion for the princess might be the less taken notice of. In these cases, therefore, the more resolutely a man denies his passion, the more pure and violent it is.'

'Then Mr. Selvin's passion is certainly very violent,' replied Miss Glanville, 'for he denies it very resolutely; and I believe none but your ladyship would have discovered his artifice. But shall we not open the other letter? I have a strong notion it comes from Tinsel.'

'For that very reason I would not be acquainted with the contents,' replied Arabella. 'You see Mr. Selvin accuses him of being guilty of that offence which he denies. I shall doubtless meet with a confirmation of his love in that letter.—Do not, I beseech you,' added she, seeing her cousin preparing to open the letter, 'expose me to the pain of hearing a presumptuous declaration of love.—

'Nay,' pursued she, rising in great emotion, 'if you are resolved to persecute me by reading it, I'll endeavour to get out of the hearing of it.'

'You shan't, I declare,' said Miss Glanville, laughing, and holding her; 'I'll oblige you to hear it.'

'I vow, cousin,' said Arabella, smiling, 'you use me just as the princess Cleopatra

'Cleopatra did the fair and wise Antonia. However, if by this you mean to do any kindness to the unfortunate person who wrote that billet, you are greatly mistaken; since, if you oblige me to listen to a declaration of his crime, you will lay me under a necessity to banish him. A sentence he would have avoided, while I remained ignorant of it.'

To this Miss Glanville made no other reply than by opening the billet, the contents of which may be found in the following chapter.

CHAP XIII.

IN WHICH OUR HEROINE'S EXTRAVAGANCE WILL BE THOUGHT, PERHAPS, TO BE CARRIED TO AN EXTRAVAGANT LENGTH.

'MADAM,

I Had the honour to assure you this morning on the Parade, that the insinuations Mr. Selvin made use of to rob me of the superlative happiness of your esteem, were entirely false and groundless. May the beams of your bright eyes never shine on me more, if there is any truth in what he said to prejudice me with your ladyship! If I am permitted to attend you to the Rooms this evening, I hope to convince you, that it was absolutely impossible I could have been capable of such a crime, who am, with the most profound respect, your ladyship's most devoted, &c.

'D. TINSEL.'

'Well, Madam,' said Miss Glanville, when she had read this epistle, 'I fancy you need not pronounce a sentence of banishment upon poor Mr. Tinsel; he seems to be quite innocent of the offence your ladyship suspects him of.'

'Why, really,' returned Arabella, blushing with extreme confusion at this second disappointment, 'I am greatly perplexed to know how I ought to act on this occasion; I am much in the same situation with the princess Serena. For you must know, this princess—' Here Lucy entering, informed the ladies dinner was served. — 'I shall defer till another opportunity,' said Arabella, upon this inter-

ruption, 'the relation of the princess Serena's adventures; which you will find,' added she, in a low voice, 'bears a very great resemblance to mine.'

Miss Glanville replied, she would hear it whenever she pleased; and then followed Arabella to the dining-room.

The cloth was scarce removed, when Mr. Selvin came in. Arabella blushed at his appearance, and discovered so much perplexity in her behaviour, that Mr. Selvin was apprehensive he had not yet sufficiently justified himself; and therefore took the first opportunity to approach her.

'I shall think myself very unhappy, Madam,' said he, bowing, 'if the letter I did myself the honour to write to you this morning—'

'Sir,' interrupted Arabella, 'I perceive you are going to forget the contents of that letter, and preparing again to offend me by a presumptuous declaration of love.'

'Who I, Madam!' replied he, in great astonishment and confusion, 'I—I-I protest—though I—I have a very great respect for your ladyship, yet—yet I never presumed to—to—to—'

'You have presumed too much,' replied Arabella; 'and I should forget what I owed to my own glory, if I furnished you with any more occasions of offending me.—Know then, I absolutely forbid you to appear before me again, at least, till I am convinced you have changed your sentiments.'

Saying this she rose from her seat, and making a sign to him not to follow her, which indeed he had no intention to do, she quitted the room, highly satisfied with her own conduct upon this occasion, which was exactly conformable to the laws of romance.

Mr. Tinsel, who had just alighted from his chair, having a glimpse of her, as she passed to her own apartment, resolved, if possible, to procure a private interview; for he did not doubt but his billet had done wonders in his favour.

For that purpose he ventured up to her anti-chamber, where he found Lucy in waiting, whom he desired to acquaint her lady, that he intreated a moment's speech with her.

Lucy, after hesitating a moment, and looking earnestly at him, replied, 'Sir, if

‘ if you’ll promise me faithfully you are not in love with my lady, I’ll go and deliver your message.’

‘ Deuce take me,’ said Tinsel, ‘ if that is not a very whimsical condition truly—Pray, my dear, how came it into thy little brain, to suspect I was in love with thy lady? but, suppose I should be in love with her, what then?’

‘ Why, then, it is likely you would die, that’s all,’ said Lucy; ‘ without my lady would be so kind to command you to live.’

‘ I vow thou hast pretty notions, child,’ said Tinsel, smiling: ‘ hast thou been reading any play-book lately? But pray, dost think thy lady would have compassion on me, if I was in love with her? Come, I know thou art in her confidence? Hast thou ever heard her talk of me? Does she not tell thee all her secrets?’

Here Arabella’s bell ringing, the beau slipped half a guinea into her hand, which Lucy not willing to refuse, went immediately to her lady; to whom, with a trembling accent, she repeated Mr. Tinsel’s request.

‘ Imprudent girl!’ cried Arabella, ‘ (for I am loth to suspect thee of disloyalty to thy mistress) dost thou know the nature and extent of the request thou hast delivered? Art thou ignorant that the presumptuous man whom thou solicittest this favour for, has mortally offended me?’

‘ Indeed, Madam,’ said Lucy, frightened out of her wits, ‘ I don’t solicit for him. I scorn to do any such thing. I would not offend your ladyship for the world; for, before I would deliver his message to your ladyship, I made him assure me, that he was not in love with your ladyship.’

‘ That was very wisely done, indeed,’ replied Arabella, smiling: ‘ and do you believe he spoke the truth?’

‘ Yes, indeed, I am sure of it,’ said Lucy, eagerly. ‘ If your ladyship will but be pleased to see him, he is only in the next room; I dare promise—’

‘ How!’ interrupted Arabella. ‘ What have you done? Have you brought him into my apartment, then? I protest this adventure is exactly like what befel the beautiful Statira, when, by a stratagem of the same kind, Oroondates was introduced into her presence. Lucy, thou art another

Barbina, I think; but I hope thy intentions are not less innocent than hers was.’

‘ Indeed, Madam,’ replied Lucy, almost weeping, ‘ I am very innocent. I am no Barbina, as your ladyship calls me.’

‘ I dare answer for thee,’ said Arabella, smiling at the turn she gave to her words, ‘ thou art no Barbina; and I should wrong thee very much to compare thee with that wise princess; for thou art certainly one of the most simple wenches in the world. But since thou hast gone so far, let me know what the unfortunate person desires of me; for, since I am neither more rigid, nor pretend to more virtue than Statira, I may do at least as much for him as that great queen did for Oroondates.’

‘ He desires, Madam,’ said Lucy, ‘ that your ladyship would be pleased to let him speak with you.’

‘ Or, in his words, I suppose,’ replied Arabella, ‘ he humbly implored a moment’s audience.’

‘ I told your ladyship his very words, indeed, Madam,’ said Lucy.

‘ I tell thee, girl, thou art mistaken,’ said Arabella; ‘ it is impossible he should sue for such a favour in terms like those: therefore, go back, and let him know that I consent to grant him a short audience upon these conditions.’

‘ First, Provided he does not abuse my indulgence by offending me with any protestations of his passion.’

‘ Secondly, That he engages to fulfil the injunctions I shall lay upon him, however cruel and terrible they may appear.’

‘ Lastly, That his despair must not prompt him to any act of desperation against himself.’

Lucy having received this message, quitted the room hastily, for fear she should forget it.

‘ Well, my pretty ambassadrefs,’ said Tinsel, when he saw her enter the anti-chamber, ‘ will your lady see me?’

‘ No, Sir,’ replied Lucy.

‘ No!’ interrupted Tinsel, ‘ that’s kind, faith, after waiting so long.’

‘ Pray, Sir,’ said Lucy, ‘ don’t put me out so; I shall forget what my lady ordered me to tell you.’

‘ Oh! I ask your pardon, child,’ said

said Tinsel; 'come, let me hear your message.'

'Sir,' said Lucy, adopting the solemnity of her lady's accent, 'my lady bade me say, that she will grant—' —No, that she consents to grant you a short diſſence.'

'Audience, you would say, child,' said Tinsel: 'but how came you to tell me before she would not see me?'

'I vow and protest, Sir,' said Lucy, 'you have put all my lady's words clean out of my head—I don't know what comes next.'

'Oh, no matter,' said Tinsel, 'you have told me enough: I'll wait upon her directly.'

Lucy, who saw him making towards the door, pressed between it and him; and having all her lady's whims in her head, supposed he was going to carry her away. Possessed with this thought, she screamed out, 'Help! help! for Heaven's sake! my lady will be carried away!'

Arabella hearing this exclamation of her woman's, echoed her screams, though with a voice infinitely more delicate; and seeing Tinsel, who, confounded to the last degree at the cries of both the lady and her woman, had got into her chamber he knew not how, she gave herself over for lost, and fell back in her chair in a swoon, or something she took for a swoon, for she was persuaded it could happen no otherwise, since all ladies in the same circumstances are terrified into a fainting fit, and seldom recover till they are conveniently carried away; and when they awake, find themselves many miles off in the power of their ravisher.

Arabella's other women, alarmed by her cries, came running into the room; and seeing Mr. Tinsel there, and their lady in a swoon, concluded some very extraordinary accident had happened.

'What is your business here?' cried they all at a time. 'Is it you that has frightened her ladyship?'

'Devil take me,' said Tinsel, amazed, 'if I can tell what all this means!'

By this time Sir Charles, Mr. Glanville, and his sister, came running astonished up stairs. Arabella still continued motionless in her chair, her eyes closed, and her head reclined upon Lucy, who, with her other women, was endeavouring to recover her.

Mr. Glanville eagerly ran to her assistance, while Sir Charles and his daughter as eagerly interrogated Mr. Tinsel, who stood motionless with surprise, concerning the cause of her disorder.

Arabella then first discovering some signs of life, half opened her eyes.

'Inhuman wretch!' cried she, with a faint voice, supposing herself in the hands of her ravisher, 'think not thy cruel violence shall procure thee what thy submissions could not obtain; and if when thou hadst only my indifference to surmount, thou didst find it so difficult to overcome my resolution, now that, by this unjust attempt, thou hast added aversion to that indifference, never hope for any thing but the most bitter reproaches from me.'

'Why, niece,' said Sir Charles, approaching her 'what is the matter?' 'Look up, I beseech you, nobody is attempting to do you any hurt; here's none but friends about you.'

Arabella, raising her head at the sound of her uncle's voice, and casting a confused look on the persons about her—

'May I believe my senses? Am I rescued, and in my own chamber? To whose valour is my deliverance owing? Without doubt, it is to my cousin's: but where is he? Let me assure him of my gratitude.'

Mr. Glanville, who had retired to a window in great confusion, as soon as he heard her call for him, came towards her, and in a whisper begged her to be composed; that she was in no danger.

'And pray, niece,' said Sir Charles, 'now you are a little recovered, be so good to inform us of the cause of your fright. What has happened to occasion all this confusion?'

'How, Sir!' said Arabella, 'don't you know then what has happened?—Pray, how was I brought again into my chamber, and by what means was I rescued?'

'I protest,' said Sir Charles, 'I don't know that you have been out of it.'

'Alas!' replied Arabella, 'I perceive you are quite ignorant of what has befallen me; nor am I able to give you any information: all I can tell you is, that, alarmed by my women's

'men's cries, and the sight of my ravisher, who came into my chamber, I fainted away, and so facilitated his enterprize; since, doubtless, it was very easy for him to carry me away while I remained in that senseless condition. How I was rescued, or by whom, one of my women can haply inform you; since, it is probable, one of them was also forced away with me—Oh, heavens!' cried she, seeing Tinsel, who all this while stood gazing like one distracted; 'what makes that impious man in my presence! What am I to think of this? Am I really delivered, or no?'

'What can this mean?' cried Sir Charles, turning to Tinsel.—'Have you, Sir, had any hand in frightening my niece?'

'I, Sir!' said Tinsel. 'Let me perish if ever I was so confounded in my life! the lady's brain is disordered, I believe.'

Mr. Glanville, who was convinced all this confusion was caused by some of Arabella's usual whims, dreaded lest an explanation would the more expose her; and therefore told his father that it would be best to retire, and leave his cousin to the care of his sister and her women; adding, that she was not yet quite recovered, and their presence did but discompose her.

Then addressing himself to Tinsel, told him he would wait upon him down stairs.

Arabella, seeing them going away together, and supposing they intended to dispute the possession of her with their swords, called out to them to stay.

Mr. Glanville, however, without minding her, pressed Mr. Tinsel to walk down.

'Nay, pray, Sir,' said the beau, 'let us go in again; she may grow outrageous if we disoblige her.'

'Outrageous, Sir!' said Glanville; 'do you suppose my cousin is mad?'

'Upon my soul, Sir,' replied Tinsel, 'if she is not mad, she is certainly a little out of her senses, or so.'

Arabella, having reiterated her commands for her lovers to return, and finding they did not obey her, ran to her chamber-door, where they were holding a furly sort of conference, especially on Glanville's side, who was horribly out of humour.

'I perceive by your looks,' said Arabella to her cousin, 'the design you are meditating; but know, that I absolutely forbid you, by all the power I have over you, not to engage in combat with my ravisher here.'

'Madam,' interrupted Glanville, 'I beseech you do not—'

'I know,' said she, 'you will object to me the examples of Artamenes, Aronces, and many others, who were so generous as to promise their rivals not to refuse them that satisfaction whenever they demanded it—but consider, you have not the same obligations to Mr. Tinsel that Artamenes had to the king of Assyria, or that Aronces had to—'

'For God's sake, cousin,' said Glanville, 'what's all this to the purpose? Curse on Aronces and the king of Assyria, I say!'

The astonishment of Arabella at this intemperate speech of her cousin, kept her for a moment immovable; when Sir Charles, who, during this discourse, had been collecting all the information he could from Lucy concerning this perplexed affair, came towards Tinsel, and giving him an angry look, told him he should take it well if he forbore visiting any of his family for the future.

'Oh! your most obedient servant, Sir,' said Tinsel: 'you expect, I suppose, I should be excessively chagrined at this prohibition; but upon my soul I am greatly obliged to you. Agad! I have no great mind to a halter: and since this lady is so apt to think people have a design to ravish her, the wisest thing a man can do, is to keep out of her way.'

'Sir,' replied Glanville, who had followed him to the door, 'I believe there has been some little mistake in what has happened to-day—However, I'll expect you'll take no unbecoming liberties with the character of Lady Bella.'

'Oh, Sir!' said Tinsel, 'I give you my honour I shall always speak of the lady with the most profound veneration. She is a most accomplished, incomprehensible lady: and the devil take me, if I think there is her fellow in the world—And so, Sir, I am your most obedient—'

'A word with you before you go,' said Glanville, stopping him. 'No

‘more of these sneers, as you value that smooth face of yours, or I’ll despoil it of a nose.’

‘Oh! your humble servant,’ said the beau, retiring in great confusion, with something betwixt a smile and a grin upon his countenance, which he took care, however, Mr. Glanville should not see; who, as soon as he quitted him, went again to Arabella’s apartment, in order to prevail upon his father and sister to leave her a little to herself; for he dreaded lest some more instances of her extravagance would put it into his father’s head that she was really out of her senses.

‘Well, Sir,’ said Arabella, upon his entrance, ‘you have, I suppose, given your rival his liberty. I assure you this generosity is highly agreeable to me—And herein you imitate the noble Artamenes, who, upon a like occasion, acted as you have done. For when fortune had put the ravisher of Mandana in his power, and he became the vanquisher of his rival, who endeavoured by violence to possess that divine princess, this truly generous hero relinquished the right he had of disposing of his prisoner, and, instead of sacrificing his life to his just and reasonable vengeance, he gave a proof of his admirable virtue and clemency by dismissing him in safety, as you have done.—However,’ added she, ‘I hope you have made him swear upon your sword that he will never make a second attempt upon my liberty.—I perceive,’ pursued she, seeing Mr. Glanville continued silent, with his eyes bent on the ground, for indeed he was ashamed to look up, ‘that you would willingly avoid the praise due to the heroic action you have just performed—Nay, I suppose you are resolved to keep it secret, if possible; yet I must tell you, that you will not escape the glory due to it. Glory is as necessarily the result of a virtuous action, as light is an effect of the sun which causeth it, and has no dependance on any other cause; since a virtuous action continues still the same, though it be done without testimony; and glory, which is, as one may say, born with it, constantly attends it, though the action be not known.’

‘I protest, niece,’ said Sir Charles, ‘that’s very prettily said.’

‘In my opinion, Sir,’ pursued Arabella, ‘if any thing can weaken the glory of a good action, it is the care a person takes to make it known; as if one did not do good for the sake of good, but for the praise that generally follows it. Those, then, that are governed by so interested a motive, ought to be considered as sordid rather than generous persons; who, making a kind of traffick between virtue and glory, barter just so much of the one for the other, and expect, like other merchants, to make advantage by the exchange.’

Mr. Glanville, who was charmed into an extasy at this sensible speech of Arabella’s, forgot in an instant all her absurdities. He did not fail to express his admiration of her understanding in terms that brought a blush into her fair face, and obliged her to lay her commands upon him to cease his excessive commendations. Then making a sign to them to leave her alone, Mr. Glanville, who understood her, took his father and sister down stairs, leaving Arabella with her faithful Lucy, whom she immediately commanded to give her a relation of what had happened to her from the time of her swooning till she recovered.

CH A P. XIV.

A DIALOGUE BETWEEN ARABELLA AND LUCY, IN WHICH THE LATTER SEEMS TO HAVE THE ADVANTAGE.

‘WHY, Madam,’ said Lucy, ‘all I can tell your ladyship is, that we were all excessively frightened, to be sure, when you fainted, especially myself; and that we did what we could to recover you—And so accordingly your ladyship did recover.’

‘What’s this to the purpose?’ said Arabella, perceiving she stopped here. ‘I know that I fainted; and it is also very plain that I recovered again—I ask you what happened to me in the intermediate time between my fainting and recovery? Give me a faithful relation of all the accidents to which by my fainting I am quite a stranger, and which, no doubt, are very considerable.’

‘Indeed, Madam,’ replied Lucy, ‘I have

'I have given your ladyship a faithful relation of all I can remember.'

'When!' resumed Arabella, surprised.

'This moment, Madam,' said Lucy.

'Why, sure thou dreamest, wench!' replied she. 'Hast thou told me how

'I was seized and carried off! How I was rescued again! And—'

'No, indeed, Madam,' interrupted Lucy, 'I don't dream; I never told your ladyship that you was carried off.'

'Well,' said Arabella, 'and why dost thou not satisfy my curiosity? Is it not fit I should be acquainted with such a momentous part of my history?'

'I can't, indeed, and please your ladyship,' said Lucy.

'What, can't thou not?' said Arabella, enraged at her stupidity.

'Why, Madam,' said Lucy, fobbing, 'I can't make a history of nothing!'

'Of nothing, wench!' resumed Arabella, in a greater rage than before. 'Dost thou call an adventure to which thou wast a witness, and borest haply so great a share in, nothing?—An adventure which hereafter will make a considerable figure in the relation of my life, dost thou look upon as trifling and of no consequence?'

'No, indeed I don't, Madam,' said Lucy.

'Why, then,' pursued Arabella, 'dost thou wilfully neglect to relate it? Suppose, as there is nothing more likely, thou wert commanded by some persons of considerable quality, or haply some great princes and princesses, to recount the adventures of my life, wouldest thou omit a circumstance of so much moment?'

'No, indeed, Madam!' said Lucy.

'I am glad to hear thou art so discreet,' said Arabella; 'and pray do me the favour to relate this adventure to me, as thou wouldest do to those princes and princesses, if thou wert commanded.'

Here Arabella, making a full stop, fixed her eyes upon her woman, expecting every moment she would begin the desired narrative; but finding she continued silent longer than she thought was necessary for recalling the several circumstances of the story into her mind—

'I find,' said she, 'it will be necessary to caution you against making your audience wait too long for your relation; it looks as if you was to make a studied speech, not a simple relation of facts, which ought to be free from all affectation of labour and art; and be told with that graceful negligence which is so becoming to truth.'

'This I thought proper to tell you,' added she, 'that you may not fall into that mistake when you are called upon to relate my adventures—Well, now if you please to begin.'

'What, pray, Madam?' said Lucy.

'What!' repeated Arabella. 'Why, the adventures which happened to me so lately. Relate to me every circumstance of my being carried away, and how my deliverance was effected by my cousin.'

'Indeed, Madam,' said Lucy, 'I know nothing about your ladyship's being carried away.'

'Be gone!' cried Arabella, losing all patience at her obstinacy; 'get out of my presence this moment.—Wretch! unworthy of my confidence and favour; thy treason is too manifest; thou art bribed by that presumptuous man to conceal all the circumstances of his attempt from my knowledge, to the end that I may not have a full conviction of his guilt.'

Lucy, who never saw her lady so much offended before, and knew not the occasion of it, burst into tears; which so affected the tender heart of Arabella, that, losing insensibly all her anger, she told her, with a voice softened to a tone of the utmost sweetness and condescension, that provided she would confess how far she had been prevailed upon by his rich presents to forget her duty, she would pardon and receive her again into favour—

'Speak,' added she, 'and be not afraid, after this promise, to let me know what Mr. Tinsel required of thee, and what were the gifts with which he purchased thy services: doubtless, he presented thee with jewels of a considerable value.'

'Since your ladyship,' said Lucy, fobbing, 'has promised not to be angry, I don't care if I do tell your ladyship what he gave me. He gave

‘ me this half-guinea, Madam, in deed he did; but, for all that, when he would come into your chamber, I struggled with him, and cried out, for fear he should carry your ladyship away.’

Arabella, lost in astonishment and shame at hearing of so inconsiderable a present made to her woman, the like of which not one of her romances could furnish her, ordered her immediately to

withdraw, not being willing she should observe the confusion this strange bribe had given her.

After she had been gone some time, she endeavoured to compose her looks, and went down to the dining-room, where Sir Charles and his son and daughter had been engaged in a conversation concerning her, the particulars of which may be found in the first chapter of the next book.

END OF THE SEVENTH BOOK.



THE

FEMALE QUIXOTE.

BOOK VIII.

CHAP. I.

CONTAINS THE CONVERSATION REFERRED TO IN THE LAST CHAPTER OF THE PRECEDING BOOK.



MISS Glanville, who with a malicious pleasure had secretly triumphed in the extravagances her beautiful cousin had been guilty of, was now sensibly disappointed to find they had had so little effect on her father and brother; for instead of reflecting upon the absurdities to which they had been a witness, Mr. Glanville artfully pursued the subject Arabella had just before been expatiating upon, taking notice frequently of some observations of hers, and by a well-contrived repetition of her words, obliged his father a second time to declare that his niece had spoken extremely well.

Mr. Glanville taking the word, hunched out into such praises of her wit, that Miss Glanville, no longer able to listen patiently, replied—

‘It was true Lady Bella sometimes said very sensible things; that it was a great pity she was not always in a reasonable way of thinking, or that her intervals were not longer.’

“Her intervals,” Miss! said Glanville; ‘pray what do you mean by that expression?’

‘Why, pray,’ said Miss Glanville, ‘don’t you think my cousin is sometimes a little wrong in the head?’

Mr. Glanville at these words starting from his chair, took a turn across the room in great discomposure; then stopping all of a sudden, and giving his sister a furious look—‘Charlotte,’ said he, ‘don’t give me cause to think you are envious of your cousin’s superior excellences.’

“Envious!” repeated Miss Glanville; ‘I envious of my cousin—I vow I should never have thought of that—Indeed, brother, you are much mistaken: my cousin’s superior excellences never gave me a moment’s disturbance—Though I must confess her unaccountable whims have often excited my pity.’

‘No more of this, Charlotte,’ interrupted Mr. Glanville, ‘as you value my friendship—No more of it.’

‘Why, really, son,’ said Sir Charles, ‘my niece has very strange whimsies sometimes. How it came into her head to think Mr. Tinsel would attempt to carry her away, I can’t imagine! For, after all, he only pressed rather too rudely into her chamber; for which, as you see, I have forbidden his visits.’

‘That was of a piece,’ said Miss Glanville, sneeringly to her brother, ‘with her asking you if you had made Mr. Tinsel swear upon your sword that he would never again attempt to carry her away; and applauding you for having given him his liberty, as the generous Afermens did on the same occasion.’

‘I would advise you, Charlotte,’ said Mr. Glanville, ‘not to aim at repeating

‘peating your cousin’s words, till you know how to pronounce them properly.’

‘Oh! that’s one of her superior excellences,’ said Miss Glanville.

‘Indeed, Miss,’ said Glanville, very provokingly, ‘she is superior to you in many things; and as much so in the goodness of her heart, as in the beauty of her person!’

‘Come, come, Charles,’ said the baronet, who observed his daughter swelling and biting her lip at this reproach, ‘personal reflections are better avoided. Your sister is very well, and not to be disparaged; though, to be sure, Lady Bella is the finest woman I ever saw in my life.’

Miss Glanville was, if possible, more disgusted at her father’s palliation than her brother’s reproaches; and, in order to give a loose to her passion, accused Mr. Glanville of a decrease in his affection for her, since he had been in love with her cousin; and having found this excuse for her tears, very freely gave vent to them.

Mr. Glanville being softened by this sight, sacrificed a few compliments to her vanity, which soon restored her to her usual tranquillity; then turning the discourse on his beloved Arabella, pronounced a panegyrick on her virtues and accomplishments of an hour long; which, if it did not absolutely persuade his sister to change her opinion, it certainly convinced his father that his niece was not only perfectly well in her understanding, but even better than most others of her sex.

Mr. Glanville had just finished her eulogium when Arabella appeared: joy danced in his eyes at her approach; he gazed upon her with a kind of conscious triumph in his looks; her consummate loveliness justifying his passion, and being in his opinion more than an excuse for all her extravagances.

CHAP. II.

IN WHICH OUR HEROINE, AS WE PRESUME, SHEWS HERSELF IN TWO VERY DIFFERENT LIGHTS.

ARABELLA, who at her entrance had perceived some traces of uneasiness upon Miss Glanville’s

countenance, tenderly asked her the cause; to which that young lady answering in a cold and reserved manner, Mr. Glanville, to divert her reflections on it, very freely accused himself of having given his sister some offence.—

‘To be sure, brother,’ said Miss Glanville, ‘you are very vehement in your temper, and are as violently carried away about things of little importance as of the greatest; and then, whatever you have a fancy for, you love so obstinately.’

‘I am obliged to you, Miss,’ interrupted Mr. Glanville, ‘for endeavouring to give Lady Bella so unfavourable an opinion of me.’

‘I assure you,’ said Arabella, ‘Miss Glanville has said nothing to your disadvantage: for, in my opinion, the temperament of great minds ought to be such as she represents yours to be. For there is nothing at so great a distance from true and heroic virtue, as that indifference which obliges some people to be pleased with all things or nothing: whence it comes to pass, that they neither entertain great desires of glory, nor fear of infamy; that they neither love nor hate; that they are wholly influenced by custom, and are sensible only of the afflictions of the body, their minds being in a manner insensible.’

‘To say the truth, I am inclined to conceive a greater hope of a man, who in the beginning of his life is hurried away by some evil habit, than one that fastens on nothing; the mind that cannot be brought to detest vice, will never be persuaded to love virtue; but one who is capable of loving or hating irreconcilably, by having, when young, his passions directed to proper objects, will remain fixed in his choice of what is good. But with him who is incapable of any violent attraction, and whose heart is chilled by a general indifference, precept or example will have no force—And philosophy itself, which boasts it hath remedies for all indispositions of the soul, never had any that can cure an indifferent mind—Nay,’ added she, ‘I am persuaded that indifference is generally the inseparable companion of a weak and imperfect judgment; for it is so natural to a person to be carried towards that which he believes to be good,

‘good, that if indifferent people were able to judge of things, they would fasten on something. But certain it is, that this lukewarmness of soul, which sends forth but feeble desires, sends also but feeble lights; so that those who are guilty of it, not knowing any thing clearly, cannot fasten on any thing with perseverance.’

Mr. Glanville, when Arabella had finished this speech, cast a triumphant glance at his sister, who had affected great inattention all the while she had been speaking. Sir Charles, in his way, expressed much admiration of her wit, telling her, if she had been a man, she would have made a great figure in parliament, and that her speeches might have come perhaps to be printed in time.

This compliment, odd as it was, gave great joy to Glanville; when the conversation was interrupted by the arrival of Mr. Selvin, who had slipped away unobserved at the time that Arabella’s indisposition had alarmed them, and now came to enquire after her health; and also, if an opportunity offered, to set her right with regard to the suspicions she had entertained of his designing to pay his addresses to her.

Arabella, as soon as he had sent in his name, appeared to be in great disturbance; and upon his entrance, offered immediately to withdraw, telling Mr. Glanville, who would have detained her, that she found no place was likely to secure her from the persecutions of that gentleman.

Glanville stared, and looked strangely perplexed at this speech; Miss Glanville smiled; and poor Selvin, with a very silly look, hemm’d two or three times, and then with a faltering accent said, ‘Madam, I am very much concerned to find your ladyship resolved to persist in——’

‘Sir,’ interrupted Arabella, ‘my resolutions are unalterable. I told you so before, and am surprized, after the knowledge of my intentions, you presume to appear in my presence again, from whence I had so positively banished you.’

‘Pray, niece,’ said Sir Charles, ‘what has Mr. Selvin done to disoblige you?’

‘Sir,’ replied Arabella, ‘Mr. Selvin’s offence can admit of no other reparation than that which I required

‘of him, which was a voluntary banishment from my presence; and in this,’ pursued she, ‘I am guilty of no more severity to you, than the princess Udofia was to the unfortunate Thrasimedes. For the passion of this prince having come to her knowledge, notwithstanding the pains he took to conceal it, this fair and wise princess thought it not enough to forbid his speaking to her, but also banished him from her presence; laying a peremptory command upon him, never to appear before her again till he was perfectly cured of that unhappy love he had entertained for her—Imitate, therefore, the meritorious obedience of this poor prince; and if that passion you profess for me—’

‘How, Sir,’ interrupted Sir Charles, ‘Do you make love to my niece, then?’

‘Sir,’ replied Mr. Selvin, who was strangely confounded at Arabella’s speech, ‘though I really admire the perfections this lady is possessed of, yet I assure you, upon my honour, I never had a thought of making any addresses to her; and I cannot imagine why her ladyship persists in accusing me of such presumption.’

So formal a denial, after what Arabella had said, extremely perplexed Sir Charles, and filled Mr. Glanville with inconceivable shame.

Miss Glanville enjoyed their disturbance; and, full of an ill-natured triumph, endeavoured to look Arabella into confusion; but that lady not being at all discomposed by this declaration of Mr. Selvin’s, having accounted for it already, replied with great calmness—

‘Sir, it is easy to see through the artifice of your disclaiming any passion for me—Upon any other occasion, questionless, you would rather sacrifice your life, than consent to disavow these sentiments which, unhappily for your peace, you have entertained. At present the desire of continuing near me, obliges you to lay this constraint upon yourself; however, you know Thrasimedes fell upon the same stratagem to no purpose. The rigid Udofia saw through the disguise, and would not dispense with herself from banishing him from Rome, as I do you from England.’

‘How,

'How, Madam!' interrupted Selvin, amazed—

'Yes, Sir,' replied Arabella hastily, 'nothing less can satisfy what I owe to the consideration of my own glory.'

'Upon my word, Madam,' said Selvin, half angry, and yet strongly inclined to laugh, 'I don't see the necessity of my quitting my native country, to satisfy what you owe to the consideration of your own glory. Pray, how does my staying in England affect your ladyship's glory?' 'To answer your question with another,' said Arabella, 'pray how did the stay of Thrasimedes in Rome affect the glory of the empress Udosia?'

Mr. Selvin was struck dumb with this speech, for he was not willing to be thought so deficient in the knowledge of history, as not to be acquainted with the reasons why Thrasimedes should not stay in Rome.

His silence therefore seeming to Arabella to be a tacit confession of the justice of her commands, a sentiment of compassion for this unfortunate lover intruded itself into her mind, and turning her bright eyes, full of a soft complacency, upon Selvin, who stared at her as if he had lost his wits—

'I will not,' said she, 'wrong the sublimity of your passion for me so much, as to doubt your being ready to sacrifice the repose of your own life to the satisfaction of mine: nor will I do so much injustice to your generosity, as to suppose the glory of obeying my commands, will not in some measure soften the rigour of your destiny—I know not whether it may be lawful for me to tell you, that your misfortune does really cause me some affliction; but I am willing to give you this consolation, and also to assure you, that to whatever part of the world your despair will carry you, the good wishes and compassion of Arabella shall follow you.'

Having said this, with one of her fair hands she covered her face, to hide the blushes which so compassionate a speech had caused—Holding the other extended with a careless air, supposing he would kneel to kiss it, and bathe it with his tears, as was the custom on such melancholy occasions, her head at the same time turned another way, as

if reluctantly and with confusion she granted this favour.—But after standing a moment in this posture, and finding her hand untouched, she concluded grief had deprived him of his senses, and that he would shortly fall into a swoon as Thrasimedes did; and to prevent being a witness of so doleful a sight, she hurried out of the room without once turning about; and having reached her own apartment, sunk into a chair, not a little affected with the deplorable condition in which she had left her supposed miserable lover.

CHAP. III.

THE CONTRAST CONTINUED.

THE company she had left behind her being all, except Mr. Glanville, to the last degree surprized at her strange words and actions, continued mute for several minutes after she was gone, staring upon one another, as if each wished to know the other's opinion of such an unaccountable behaviour. At last Miss Glanville, who observed her brother's back was towards her, told Mr. Selvin in a low voice, that she hoped he would call and take his leave of them before he set out for the place where his despair would carry him.

Mr. Selvin, in spite of his natural gravity, could not forbear laughing at this speech of Miss Glanville's, which shocked her brother; and not being able to stay where Arabella was ridiculed, nor entitled to resent it, which would have been a manifest injustice on that occasion, he retired to his own apartment to give vent to that spleen which in those moments made him out of humour with all the world.

Sir Charles, when he was gone, indulged himself in a little mirth on his niece's extravagance, protesting he did not know what to do with her. Upon which Miss Glanville observed, that it was a pity there were not such things as protestant nunneries; giving it as her opinion, that her cousin ought to be confined in one of those places, and never suffered to see any company, by which means she would avoid exposing herself in the manner she did now.

Mr. Selvin, who possibly thought this a reasonable scheme of Miss Glanville's,

ville's, seemed by his silence to assent to her opinion; but Sir Charles was greatly displeased with his daughter for expressing herself so freely; alledging that Arabella, when she was out of those whims, was a very sensible young lady, and sometimes talked as learnedly as a divine. To which Mr. Selvin also added, that she had a great knowledge of history, and had a most surprizing memory; and after some more discourse to the same purpose, he took his leave, earnestly entreating Sir Charles to believe that he never entertained any design of making his addresses to Lady Bella.

In the mean time, that lady, after having given near half an hour to those reflections which occur to heroines in the same situation with herself, called for Lucy, and ordered her to go to the dining-room, and see in what condition Mr. Selvin was, telling her she had certainly left him in a swoon, as also the occasion of it; and bid her give him all the consolation in her power.

Lucy, with tears in her eyes at this recital, went down as she was ordered; and entering the room without any ceremony, her thoughts being wholly fixed on the melancholy circumstance her lady had been telling her, she looked eagerly round the room without speaking a word, till Sir Charles and Miss Glanville, who thought she had been sent with some message from Arabella, asked her both at the same instant, what she wanted.

'I came, Sir,' said Lucy, repeating her lady's words, 'to see in what condition Mr. Selvin is in, and to give him all the solation in my power.'

Sir Charles, laughing heartily at this speech, asked her what she could do for Mr. Selvin? To which she replied, she did not know, but her lady had told her to give him all the solation in her power.

'Consolation thou would'st say, I suppose,' said Sir Charles.

'Yes, Sir,' said Lucy, curtsying. 'Well, child,' added he, 'go up and tell your lady, Mr. Selvin does not need any consolation.'

Lucy accordingly returned with this message, and was met at the chamber-door by Arabella, who hastily asked her if Mr. Selvin was recovered from his swoon: to which Lucy replied, that she did not know; but that Sir Charles

bid her tell her ladyship, Mr. Selvin did not need any consolation.

'Oh, heavens!' cried Arabella, throwing herself into a chair as pale as death—'He is dead, he has fallen upon his sword, and put an end to his life and miseries at once—Oh! how unhappy am I,' cried she, bursting into tears, 'to be the cause of so cruel an accident—Was ever any fate so terrible as mine—Was ever beauty so fatal—Was ever rigour so unfortunate—How will the quiet of my future days be disturbed by the sad remembrance of a man whose death was caused by my disdain—But why,' resumed she, after a little pause—'why do I thus afflict myself for what has happened by an unavoidable necessity? Nor am I singular in the misfortune which has befallen me—Did not the sad Perinthus die for the beautiful Panthea—Did not the rigour of Bassina bring the miserable Oxyatres to the grave—And the severity of Statura make Oroon dates fall upon his sword in her presence, though happily he escaped being killed by it—Let us, then, not afflict ourselves unreasonably at this sad accident—Let us lament as we ought the fatal effects of our charms—But let us comfort ourselves with the thought that we have only acted conformable to our duty.'

Arabella having pronounced these last words with a solemn and lofty accent, ordered Lucy, who listened to her with eyes drowned in tears, to go down and ask if the body was removed.—'For,' added she, 'all my constancy will not be sufficient to support me against that pitiful sight.'

Lucy accordingly delivered her message to Sir Charles and Miss Glanville, who were still together, discoursing on the fantastical turn of Arabella; when the knight, who could not possibly comprehend what she meant by asking if the body was removed, bid her tell her lady he desired to speak with her.

Arabella, upon receiving this summons, set herself to consider what could be the intent of it.—'If Mr. Selvin be dead,' said she, 'what good can my presence do among them? Surely it cannot be to upbraid me with my severity, that my uncle desires to see me—No, it would be unjust to sup-

pose it. Questionless, my unhappy lover is still struggling with the pangs of death, and, for a consolation in his last moments, implores the favour of resigning up his life in my sight.' Pausing a little at these words, she rose from her seat with a resolution to give the unhappy Selvin her pardon before he died. Meeting Mr. Glanville as he was returning from his chamber to the dining-room, she told him, she hoped the charity she was going to discover towards his rival, would not give him any uneasiness; and preventing his reply by going hastily into the room, he followed her, dreading some new extravagance, yet not able to prevent it, endeavoured to conceal his confusion from her observation. Arabella, after breathing a gentle sigh, told Sir Charles, that she was come to grant Mr. Selvin her pardon for the offence he had been guilty of, that he might depart in peace.

'Well, well,' said Sir Charles, 'he is departed in peace without it.'

'How, Sir!' interrupted Arabella, 'is he dead then already? Alas! why had he not the satisfaction of seeing me before he expired, that his soul might have departed in peace? He would have been assured not only of my pardon, but pity also; and that assurance would have made him happy in his last moments.'

'Why, niece,' interrupted Sir Charles, staring, 'you surprize me prodigiously: are you in earnest?'

'Questionless I am, Sir,' said she; 'nor ought you to be surprized at the concern I express for the fate of this unhappy man, nor at the pardon I proposed to have granted him; since herein I am justified by the example of many great and virtuous princesses, who have done as much, nay, haply more than I intended to have done, for persons whose offences were greater than Mr. Selvin's.'

'I am very sorry, Madam,' said Sir Charles, 'to hear you talk in this manner; it is really enough to make one suspect you are——'

'You do me great injustice, Sir,' interrupted Arabella, 'if you suspect me to be guilty of any unbecoming weakness for this man; if barely expressing my compassion for his misfortunes be esteemed so great a favour, what would you have thought

'if I had supported his head on my knees while he was dying, shed tears over him, and discovered all the tokens of a sincere affliction for him?'

'Good God!' said Sir Charles, lifting up his eyes, 'did any body ever hear of any thing like this?'

'What, Sir!' said Arabella, with as great an appearance of surprize in her countenance as his had discovered, 'do you say you never heard of any thing like this? Then you never heard of the princess of Media, I suppose?'

'No, not I, Madam,' said Sir Charles, peevishly.

'Then, Sir,' resumed Arabella, 'permit me to tell you, that this fair and virtuous princess condescended to do all I have mentioned for the fierce Labynet, prince of Assyria; who, though he had mortally offended her by stealing her away out of the court of the king her father, nevertheless, when he was wounded to death in her presence, and humbly implored her pardon before he died, she condescended, as I have said, to support him on her knees, and shed tears for his disaster. I could produce many more instances of the like compassion in ladies almost as highly born as herself, though, perhaps, their quality was not quite so illustrious, she being the heiress of two powerful kingdoms. Yet to mention only these——'

'Good heavens!' cried Mr. Glanville here, being quite out of patience, 'I shall go distracted!'

Arabella, surprized at this exclamation, looked earnestly at him for a moment, and then asked him, whether any thing she had said had given him uneasiness.

'Yes, upon my soul, Madam!' said Glanville, so vexed and confused that he hardly knew what he said.

'I am sorry for it,' replied Arabella, gravely; 'and also am greatly concerned to find that in generosity you are so much exceeded by the illustrious Cyrus; who was so far from taking umbrage at Mandana's behaviour to the dying prince, that he commended her for the compassion she had shewn him. So also did the brave and generous Oroondates, when the fair Statira——'

'By heavens!' cried Glanville, rising

rising in a passion, 'there's no hearing this.—Pardon me, Madam, but upon my soul, you'll make me hang myself!'

'Hang yourself!' repeated Arabella, 'sure you know not what you say! you meant, I suppose, that you'll fall upon your sword. What hero ever threatened to give himself so vulgar a death? But pray, let me know the cause of your despair, so sudden and so violent.'

Mr. Glanville, continuing in a sort of sullen silence, Arabella, raising her voice, went on—

'Though I do not conceive myself obliged to give you an account of my conduct, seeing that I have only permitted you yet to hope for my favour; yet I owe to myself, and my own honour, the justification I am going to make. Know then, that however suspicious my compassion for Mr. Selvin may appear to your mistaken judgment, yet it has its foundation only in the generosity of my disposition, which inclines me to pardon the fault when the unhappy criminal repents; and to afford him my pity when his circumstances require it. Let not, therefore, the charity I have discovered towards your rival, be the cause of your despair, since my sentiments for him, were he living, would be what they were before; that is, full of indifference, nay, haply, disdain. And suffer not yourself to be so carried away by a violent and unjust jealousy, as to threaten your own death, which, if you really had any ground for your suspicions, and truly loved me, would come unsought for, though not undesired—for, indeed, was your despair reasonable, death would necessarily follow it; for what lover can live under so desperate a misfortune? In that case you may meet death undauntedly when it comes, nay, embrace it with joy; but truly the killing one's self is but a false picture of true courage, proceeding rather from fear of a farther evil, than contempt of that you fly to: for if it were a contempt of pain, the same principle would make you resolve to bear patiently and fearlessly all kinds of pains; and hope being, of all other, the most contrary thing to fear, this being an

'utter banishment of hope, seems to have its ground in fear.'

CHAP. IV.

IN WHICH MR. GLANVILLE MAKES AN UNSUCCESSFUL ATTEMPT UPON ARABELLA.

ARABELLA, when she had finished these words, which banished in part Mr. Glanville's confusion, went to her own apartment, followed by Miss Glanville, to whom she had made a sign for that purpose; and throwing herself into a chair, burst into tears, which greatly surprizing Miss Glanville, she pressed her to tell her the cause.

'Alas!' replied Arabella, 'have I not cause to think myself extremely unhappy? The deplorable death of Mr. Selvin, the despair to which I see your brother reduced, with the fatal consequences which may attend it, fills me with a mortal uneasiness.'

'Well,' said Miss Glanville, 'your ladyship may make yourself quite easy as to both these matters; for Mr. Selvin is not dead, nor is my brother in despair, that I know of.'

'What do you say, Miss?' interrupted Arabella; 'is not Mr. Selvin dead? Was the wound he gave himself not mortal, then?'

'I know of no wound that he gave himself, not I,' said Miss Glanville: 'what makes your ladyship suppose he gave himself a wound? Lord bless me, what strange thoughts come into your head!'

'Truly I am rejoiced to hear it,' replied Arabella; 'and in order to prevent the effects of his despair, I'll instantly dispatch my commands to him to live.'

'I dare answer for his obedience,' Madam,' said Miss Glanville, smiling.

Arabella then gave orders for paper and pens to be brought her; and seeing Mr. Glanville enter the room, very formally acquainted him with her intention, telling him, that he ought to be satisfied with the banishment to which she had doomed his unhappy rival, and not require his death, since he had nothing to fear from his pretensions.

'I assure you, Madam,' said Mr. Glanville, 'I am perfectly easy upon that account: and in order to spare you the trouble of sending to Mr. Selvin, I may venture to assure you that he is in no danger of dying.'

'It is impossible, Sir,' replied Arabella, 'according to the nature of things, it is impossible but he must already be very near death—you know the rigour of my sentence, you know——'

'I know, Madam,' said Mr. Glanville, 'that Mr. Selvin does not think himself under a necessity of obeying your sentence; and has the impudence to question your authority for banishing him from his native country.'

'My authority, Sir,' said Arabella, 'strangely surprized, 'is founded upon the absolute power he has given me over him.'

'He denies that, Madam,' said Glanville, 'and says that he neither can give, nor you exercise, an absolute power over him; since you are both accountable to the king, whose subjects you are, and both restrained by the laws under whose sanction you live.'

Arabella's apparent confusion at these words giving Mr. Glanville hopes that he had fallen upon a proper method to cure her of some of her strange notions, he was going to pursue his arguments, when Arabella, looking a little sternly upon him—

'The empire of love,' said she, 'like the empire of honour, is governed by laws of it's own, which have no dependence upon, or relation to, any other.'

'Pardon me, Madam,' said Glanville, 'if I presume to differ from you. Our laws have fixed the boundaries of honour as well as those of love.'

'How is that possible,' replied Arabella, 'when they differ so widely, that a man may be justified by the one, and yet condemned by the other? For instance,' pursued she, 'you are not permitted by the laws of the land to take away the life of any person whatever; yet the laws of honour oblige you to hunt your enemy through the world, in order to sacrifice him to your vengeance. Since it is impossible then for the

'same actions to be at once just and unjust, it must necessarily follow, that the law which condemns it, and that which justifies it, is not the same, but directly opposite: and now,' added she, after a little pause, 'I hope I have entirely cleared up that point to you.'

'You have indeed, Madam,' replied Mr. Glanville, 'proved to a demonstration, that what is called honour is something distinct from justice, since they command things absolutely opposite to each other.'

Arabella, without reflecting on this inference, went on to prove the independent sovereignty of love, 'Which,' said she, 'may be collected from all the words and actions of those heroes who were inspired by this passion. We see it in them,' pursued she, 'triumphing not only over all natural and avowed allegiance, but superior even to friendship, duty, and honour itself. This the actions of Oroondates, Artaxerxes, Spitridates, and many other illustrious princes, sufficiently testify.'

'Love requires a more unlimited obedience from it's slaves, than any other monarch can expect from his subjects; an obedience which is circumscribed by no laws whatever, and dependent upon nothing but itself.'

"I shall live, Madam," says the renowned prince of Scythia to the divine Statira, "I shall live, since it is your command I should do so; and death can have no power over a life which you are pleased to take care off."

"Say only that you wish I should conquer," said the great Juba to the incomparable Cleopatra, "and my enemies will be already vanquished"—victory will come over to the side you favour—and an army of a hundred thousand men will not be able to overcome the man who has your commands to conquer."

'How mean and insignificant,' pursued she, 'are the titles bestowed on other monarchs compared with those which dignify the sovereigns of hearts, such as Divine Arbiters of my fate, Visible Divinity, Earthly Goddesses, and many others equally sublime.'

Mr. Glanville losing all patience at her obstinate folly, interrupted her here with a question quite foreign to the

the subject she was discussing; and soon after quitting her chamber, retired to his own, more than ever despairing of her recovery.

CHAP. V.

IN WHICH IS INTRODUCED A VERY SINGULAR CHARACTER.

MISS Glanville, whose envy and dislike of her lovely cousin was heightened by her suspicions that she disputed with her the possession of Sir George's heart, she having been long in reality a great admirer of that gay gentleman, was extremely delighted with the ridicule her absurd behaviour had drawn upon her at Bath, which she found by enquiry was through Mr. Tinsel's representation grown almost general.

In order, therefore, to be at liberty to go to the publick places unclipped by the superior beauty of Arabella, she acquainted her father and brother with part of what she had heard, which determined them to prevent that young lady's appearance in publick while they staid at Bath; this being no difficult matter to bring about, since Arabella only went to the rooms or Parade in compliance with the invitation of her cousins.

Miss Glanville being by these means rid of a rival too powerful even to contend with, went with more than usual gaiety to the assembly, where the extravagances of Arabella afforded a perpetual fund for diversion. Her more than passive behaviour upon this occasion, banishing all restraint among those she conversed with, the jest circulated very freely at Arabella's expence. Nor did Miss Glanville fail to give new poignancy to their sarcasms, by artfully deploring the bent of her cousin's studies, and enumerating the many absurdities they had made her guilty of.

Arabella's uncommon beauty had gained her so many enemies among the ladies that composed this assembly, that they seemed to contend with each other who should ridicule her most. The celebrated Countess of —, being then at Bath, approached a circle of these fair defamers, and listening a few moments to the contemptuous jests they

threw out against the absent beauty, declared herself in her favour; which in a moment (such was the force of her universally acknowledged merit, and the deference always paid to her opinion) silenced every pretty impertinent around her.

This lady, who among her own sex had no superior in wit, elegance, and ease, was inferior to very few of the other in sense, learning, and judgment. Her skill in poetry, painting, and music, though incontestably great, was numbered among the least of her accomplishments. Her candour, her sweetness, her modesty, and benevolence, while they secured her from the darts of envy, rendered her superior to praise, and made the one as unnecessary as the other ineffectual.

She had been a witness of the surprise Arabella's extraordinary appearance had occasioned; and struck with that as well as the uncommon charms of her person, had pressed near her with several others of the company, when she was discoursing in the manner we have related:

A person of the countess's nice discernment could not fail of observing the wit and spirit, which, though obscured, was not absolutely hid under the absurdity of her notions; and this discovery adding esteem to the compassion she felt for the fair visionary, she resolved to rescue her from the ill-natured raillery of her sex; praising therefore her understanding, and the beauty of her person, with a sweetness and generosity peculiar to herself, she accounted in the most delicate manner imaginable for the singularity of her notions, from her studies, her retirement, her ignorance of the world, and her lively imagination. And to abate the keenness of their sarcasms, acknowledged that she herself had, when very young, been deep read in romances; and but for an early acquaintance with the world, and being directed to other studies, was likely to have been as much a heroine as Lady Bella.

Miss Glanville, though she was secretly vexed at this defence of her cousin, was however under a necessity of seeming obliged to the countess for it; and that lady expressing a desire to be acquainted with Lady Bella, Miss Glanville respectfully offered to attend her cousin to her lodgings; which the countess

countess as respectfully declined, saying, as Lady Bella was a stranger, she would make her the first visit.

Miss Glanville, at her return, gave her brother an account of what had happened at the assembly, and filled him with an inconceivable joy at the countess's intention. He had always been a zealous admirer of that lady's character, and flattered himself that the conversation of so admirable a woman would be of the utmost use to Arabella.

That very night he mentioned her to his beloved cousin; and after enumerating all her fine qualities, declared that she had already conceived a friendship for her, and was solicitous of her acquaintance.

'I think myself extremely fortunate,' replied Arabella, 'in that I have (though questionless undeservedly) acquired the amity of this lovely person—and I beg you,' pursued she, to Miss Glanville, 'to tell her, that I long with impatience to embrace her, and to give her that share in my heart which her transcendent merit deserves.'

Miss Glanville only bowed her head in answer to this request, giving her brother at the same time a significant leer; who, though used to Arabella's particularities, could not help being a little confounded at the heroick speech she had made.

CHAP. VI.

CONTAINING SOMETHING WHICH
AT FIRST SIGHT MAY POSSIBLY
PUZZLE THE READER.

THE countess was as good as her word, and two days after sent a card to Arabella, importing her design to wait on her that afternoon.

Our heroine expected her with great impatience, and the moment she entered the room flew towards her with a graceful eagerness, and straining her in her arms, embraced her with all the fervour of a long-absent friend.

Sir Charles and Mr. Glanville were equally embarrassed at the familiarity of this address; but observing that the countess seemed not to be surprized at it, but rather to receive it with pleasure, they were soon composed.

'You cannot imagine, lovely stranger,' said Arabella to the countess, as soon as they were seated, 'with what impatience I have longed to behold you, since the knowledge I have received of your rare qualities, and the friendship you have been pleased to honour me with—And I may truly protest to you, that such is my admiration of your virtues, that I would have gone to the farthest part of the world to render you that which you with so much generosity have condescended to bestow upon me.'

Sir Charles stared at this extraordinary speech, and not being able to comprehend a word of it, was concerned to think how the lady to whom it was addressed would understand it.

Mr. Glanville looked down, and bit his nails in extreme confusion; but the countess, who had not forgot the language of romance, returned the compliment in a strain as heroick as hers.

'The favour I have received from fortune,' said she, 'in bringing me to the happiness of your acquaintance, charming Arabella, is so great, that I may rationally expect some terrible misfortune will befall me; seeing that in this life our pleasures are so constantly succeeded by pains, that we hardly ever enjoy the one without suffering the other soon after.'

Arabella was quite transported to hear the countess express herself in language so conformable to her own; but Mr. Glanville was greatly confounded, and began to suspect she was diverting herself with his cousin's singularities: and Sir Charles was within a little of thinking her as much out of the way as his niece.

'Misfortunes, Madam,' said Arabella, 'are too often the lot of excellent persons like yourself. The sublimest among mortals both for beauty and virtue have experienced the frowns of fate. The sufferings of the divine Statira or Cassandra, for she bore both names, the persecutions of the incomparable Cleopatra, the distresses of the beautiful Candace, and the afflictions of the fair and generous Mandana, are proofs that the most illustrious persons in the world have felt the rage of calamity.'

'It must be confessed,' said the countess,

countess, 'that all those fair princesses you have named, were for a while extremely unfortunate: yet in the catalogue of these lovely and afflicted persons, you have forgot one who might with justice dispute the priority of sufferings with them all—I mean the beautiful Elisa, princess of Parthia.'

'Pardon me, Madam,' replied Arabella, 'I cannot be of your opinion: The princess of Parthia may indeed justly be ranked among the number of unfortunate persons, but she can by no means dispute the melancholy precedence with the divine Cleopatra—For, in fine, Madam, what evils did the princess of Parthia suffer which the fair Cleopatra did not likewise endure, and some of them haply in a greater degree? If Elisa, by the tyrannical authority of the king her father, saw herself upon the point of becoming the wife of a prince she detested, was not the beautiful daughter of Antony, by the more unjustifiable tyranny of Augustus, likely to be forced into the arms of Tyberius, a proud and cruel prince, who was odious to the whole world as well as to her? If Elisa was for some time in the power of pirates, was not Cleopatra captive to an inhuman king, who presented his sword to the fair breast of that divine princess worthy the adoration of the whole earth? And in fine, if Elisa had the grief to see her dear Artaban imprisoned by the order of Augustus, Cleopatra beheld with mortal agonies her beloved Coriolanus inclosed amidst the guards of that enraged prince, and doomed to a cruel death.'

'It is certain, Madam,' replied the countess, 'that the misfortunes of both these princesses were very great, though, as you have shewed me, with some inequality: and when one reflects upon the dangerous adventures to which persons of their quality were exposed in those times, one cannot help rejoicing that we live in an age in which the customs, manners, habits, and inclinations, differ so widely from theirs, that it is impossible such adventures should even happen.'

'Such is the strange alteration of things, that some people, I dare say,

at present cannot be persuaded to believe there ever were princesses wandering through the world by land and sea in mean disguises, carried away violently out of their father's dominions by insolent lovers—Some discovered sleeping in forests, others shipwrecked on desolate islands, confined in castles, bound in chariots, and even struggling amidst the tempestuous waves of the sea, into which they had cast themselves to avoid the brutal force of their ravishers. Not one of these things having happened within the compass of several thousand years, people unlearned in antiquity would be apt to deem them idle tales, so improbable do they appear at present.'

Arabella, though greatly surprized at this discourse, did not think proper to express her thoughts of it. She was unwilling to appear absolutely ignorant of the present customs of the world before a lady, whose good opinion she was ardently desirous of improving. Her prepossessions in favour of the countess made her receive the new lights she held out to her with respect, though not without doubt and irresolution. Her blushes, her silence, and down-cast eyes, gave the countess to understand part of her thoughts; who, for fear of alarming her too much for that time, dropped the subject, and, turning the conversation on others more general, gave Arabella an opportunity of mingling in it with that wit and vivacity which was natural to her when romances were out of the question.

C H A P. VII.

IN WHICH, IF THE READER HAS NOT ANTICIPATED IT, HE WILL FIND AN EXPLANATION OF SOME SEEMING INCONSISTENCES IN THE FOREGOING CHAPTER.

THE countess, charmed with the wit and good sense of Arabella, could not conceal her admiration, but expressed it in terms the most obliging imaginable: and Arabella, who was excessively delighted with her, returned the compliments she made her with the most respectful tendernefs.

In the midst of these mutual civilities, Arabella, in the stile of romance, intreated

intreated the countess to favour her with the recital of her adventures.

At the mention of this request, that lady conveyed so much confusion into her countenance, that Arabella, extremely embarrassed by it, though she knew not why, thought it necessary to apologize for the disturbance she seemed to have occasioned in her.

'Pardon me, Madam,' replied the countess, recovering herself, 'if the uncommonness of your request made a moment's reflection necessary to convince me that a young lady of your sense and delicacy could mean no offence to decorum by making it. The word Adventures carries in it so free and licentious a sound in the apprehensions of people at this period of time, that it can hardly with propriety be applied to those few and natural incidents which compose the history of a woman of honour.—And when I tell you,' pursued she, with a smile, 'that I was born and christened, had a useful and proper education, received the addresses of my Lord —, through the recommendation of my parents, and married him with their consents and my own inclination, and that since we have lived in great harmony together, I have told you all the material passages of my life, which upon enquiry you will find differ very little from those of other women of the same rank, who have a moderate share of sense, prudence, and virtue.'

'Since you have already, Madam,' replied Arabella, blushing, 'excused me for the liberty I took with you, it will be unnecessary to tell you it was grounded upon the customs of ancient times, when ladies of the highest rank and sublimest virtue were often exposed to a variety of cruel adventures, which they imparted in confidence to each other when chance brought them together.'

'Custom,' said the countess, smiling, 'changes the very nature of things; and what was honourable a thousand years ago, may probably be looked upon as infamous now.—A lady in the heroick age you speak of, would not be thought to possess any great share of merit, if she had not been many times carried away by one or other of her insolent lovers: whereas a beauty in this could not

pass through the hands of several different ravishers, without bringing an imputation on her chastity.'

'The same actions which made a man a hero in those times, would constitute him a murderer in these.—And the same steps which led him to a throne then, would infallibly conduct him to a scaffold now.'

'But custom, Madam,' said Arabella, 'cannot possibly change the nature of virtue or vice: and since virtue is the chief characteristic of a hero, a hero in the last age will be a hero in this.'—'Though the natures of virtue or vice cannot be changed,' replied the countess, 'yet they may be mistaken; and different principles, customs, and education, may probably change their names, if not their natures.'

'Sure, Madam,' said Arabella, a little moved, 'you do not intend by this inference to prove Oroondates, Artaxerxes, Juba, Artaban, and the other heroes of antiquity, bad men?'

'Judging them by the rules of christianity, and our present notions of honour, justice, and humanity, they certainly are,' replied the countess.

'Did they not possess all the necessary qualifications of heroes, Madam,' said Arabella, 'and each in a superlative degree?—Was not their valour invincible, their generosity unbounded, and their fidelity inviolable?'

'It cannot be denied,' said the countess, 'but that their valour was invincible; and many thousand men less courageous than themselves, felt the fatal effects of that invincible valour, which was perpetually seeking after occasions to exert itself. Oroondates gave many extraordinary proofs of that unbounded generosity so natural to the heroes of his time. This prince being sent by the king his father, at the head of an army, to oppose the Persian monarch, who had unjustly invaded his dominions, and was destroying the lives and properties of his subjects, having taken the wives and daughters of his enemy prisoners, had by these means an opportunity to put a period to a war so destructive to his country; yet, out of a generosity truly heroick, he released them immediately without any

any conditions; and falling in love with one of those princesses, secretly quitted his father's court, resided several years in that of the enemy of his father and country, engaged himself to his daughter, and, when the war broke out again between the two kings, fought furiously against an army in which the king his father was in person, and shed the blood of his future subjects without remorse; though each of those subjects, we are told, would have sacrificed his life to save that of their prince, so much was he beloved. Such are the actions which immortalize the heroes of romance, and are by the authors of those books stiled glorious, god-like, and divine: yet, judging of them as Christians, we shall find them impious and base, and directly opposite to our present notions of moral and relative duties.

'It is certain, therefore, Madam,' added the countess, with a smile, 'that what was virtue in those days, is vice in ours: and to form a hero according to our notions of them at present, it is necessary to give him qualities very different from Oroondates.'

The secret charm in the countenance, voice, and manner of the countess, joined to the force of her reasoning, could not fail of making some impression on the mind of Arabella; but it was such an impression as came far short of conviction. She was surprized, embarrassed, perplexed, but not convinced. Heroism, romantick heroism, was deeply rooted in her heart; it was her habit of thinking, a principle imbibed from education. She could not separate her ideas of glory, virtue, courage, generosity, and honour, from the false representations of them in the actions of Oroondates, Juba, Artaxerxes, and the rest of the imaginary heroes. The countess's discourse had raised a kind of tumult in her thoughts, which gave an air of perplexity to her lovely face, and made that lady apprehensive she had gone too far, and lost that ground in her esteem, which she had endeavoured to acquire by a conformity to some of her notions and language. In this, however, she was mistaken; Arabella felt a tenderness for her that had already the force of a long-con-

tracted friendship, and an esteem little less than veneration.

When the countess took leave, the professions of Arabella, though delivered in the language of romance, were very sincere and affecting, and were returned with an equal degree of tenderness by the countess, who had conceived a more than ordinary affection for her.

Mr. Glanville, who could have almost worshipped the countess for the generous design he saw she had entertained, took an opportunity, as he handed her to her chair, to intreat, in a manner as earnestly as polite, that she would continue the happiness of her acquaintance to his cousin; which, with a smile of mingled dignity and sweetness, she assured him of.

CHAP. VIII.

WHICH CONCLUDES BOOK THE EIGHTH.

MR. Glanville, at his return to the dining-room, finding Arabella retired, told his father, in a rapture of joy, that the charming countess would certainly make a convert of Lady Bella.

'Methinks,' said the baronet, 'she has as strange whims in her head as my niece. Ad's-heart, what a deal of stuff did she talk about! A parcel of herues, as she calls them, with confounded hard names—In my mind, she is more likely to make Lady Bella worse than better.'

Mr. Glanville, a little vexed at his father's misapprehension, endeavoured, with as much delicacy as he could, to set him right with regard to the countess; so that he brought him at last to confess she managed the thing very well.

The countess, who had resolved to take Arabella openly into her protection, was thinking on means to engage her to appear at the assembly, whither she proposed to accompany her in a modern dress. But her good intentions towards our lovely heroine were suspended by the account she received of her mother's indisposition, which commanded her immediate attendance on her at her seat in —.

B b

Her

Her sudden departure gave Arabella an extreme uneasiness, and proved a cruel disappointment to Mr. Glanville, who had founded all his hopes of her recovery on the conversation of that lady.

Sir Charles having affairs that required his presence in London, proposed to his niece the leaving Bath in a few days, to which she consented; and accordingly they set out for London in Arabella's coach and six, attended by several servants on horseback, her women having been sent away before in the stage.

Nothing very remarkable happened during this journey; so we shall not

trouble our readers with several small mistakes of Arabella's, such as her supposing a neat country-girl, who was riding behind a man, to be some lady or princess in disguise, forced away by a lover she hated, and intreating Mr. Glanville to attempt her rescue; which occasioned some little debate between her and Sir Charles, who could not be persuaded to believe it was as she said, and forbid his son to meddle in other people's affairs. Several of these sort of mistakes, as we said before, we omit; and will therefore, if our reader pleases, bring our heroine, without farther delay, to London.

END OF THE EIGHTH BOOK.



THE FEMALE QUIXOTE.

BOOK IX.

CHAP. I.

IN WHICH IS RELATED AN ADMIRABLE ADVENTURE.



MISS Glanville, whose spirits were greatly exhilarated at their entrance into London, that seat of magnificence and pleasure, congratulated her cousin upon the entertainment she would receive from the new and surprizing objects which every day for a considerable time would furnish her with; and ran over the catalogue of diversions with such a volubility of tongue, as drew a gentle reprimand from her father, and made her keep a sullen silence till they were set down in St. James's Square, the place of their residence in town.

Sir Charles having ordered his late lady's apartment to be prepared for the accommodation of his niece, as soon as the first civilities were over, she retired to her chamber, where she employed herself in giving her women directions for placing her books, of which she had brought a moderate quantity to London, in her closet.

Miss Glanville, as soon as she had dispatched away some hundred cards to her acquaintance, to give them notice she was in town, attended Arabella in her own apartment; and as they sat at the tea, she began to regulate the diversions of the week, naming the Drawing Room, Park, Concert, Ranelagh, Lady ——'s Assembly, the

Dutchess of ——'s Rout, Vauxhall, and a long &c. of visits; at which Arabella, with an accent that expressed her surprize, asked her, if she supposed she intended to stay in town three or four years.

'Lau, cousin,' said Miss Glanville, 'all this is but the amusement of a few days.'

'Amusement, do you say?' replied Arabella; 'methinks it seems to be the sole employment of those days: and what you call the amusement, must of necessity be the business of life.'

'You are always so grave, cousin,' said Miss Glanville, 'one does not know what to say to you. However, I shan't press you to go to publick places against your inclination; yet you'll condescend to receive a few visits, I suppose?'

'Yes,' replied Arabella; 'and if, among the ladies whom I shall see, I find any like the amiable Countess of ——, I shall not scruple to enter into the most tender amity with them.'

'The Countess of —— is very well, to be sure,' said Miss Glanville; 'yet, I don't know how it is, she does not suit my taste—She is very particular in a great many things, and knows too much for a lady, as I heard my Lord Trifle say one day; then she is quite unfashionable; she hates cards, keeps no assembly, is seen but seldom at publick places; and, in my opinion, as well as in a great many others, is the dullest

company in the world. I'm sure I met her at a visit a little before I went down to your seat, and she had not been a quarter of an hour in the room, before she set a whole circle of ladies a yawning.

Arabella, though she had a sincere contempt for her cousin's manner of thinking, yet always politely concealed it; and, vexed as she was at her sneers upon the countess, she contented herself with gently defending her, telling her at the same time, that till she met with a lady who had more merit than the countess, she should always possess the first place in her esteem.

Arabella, who had from her youth adopted the repentments of her father, refused to make her appearance at court, which Sir Charles gently intimated to her; yet being not wholly divested of the curiosity natural to her sex, she condescended to go *incog.* to the gallery on a ball-night, accompanied by Mr. Glanville and his sister, in order to behold the splendor of the British court.

As her romances had long familiarized her thoughts to objects of grandeur and magnificence, she was not so much struck as might have been expected with those that now presented themselves to her view. Nor was she a little disappointed to find, that among the men she saw none whose appearance came up to her ideas of the air and port of an Artaban, Oroondates, or Juba; or any of the ladies, who did not, in her opinion, fall short of the perfections of Eliza, Mandana, Statura, &c. It was remarkable, too, that she never enquired how often the princesses had been carried away by love-captivated monarchs, or how many victories the king's sons had gained; but seemed the whole time she was there to have suspended all her romantic ideas of glory, beauty, gallantry, and love.

Mr. Glanville was highly pleased with her composed behaviour, and a day or two after intreated her to allow him the honour of shewing her what was remarkable and worthy of her observation in this great metropolis. To this she also consented, and, for the greater privacy, began their travels in a hired coach.

Part of several days was taken up in this employment; but Mr. Glanville had the mortification to find she

was full of allusions to her romances upon every occasion, such as her asking the person who shews the armoury at the Tower, the names of the knights to whom each suit belonged, and wondering there were no devices on the shields or plumes of feathers in the helmets; she observed that the lion Lyfimachus killed, was, according to the history of that prince, much larger than any of those she was shewed in the Tower, and also much fiercer: took notice that St. Paul's was less magnificent in the inside than the temple in which Cyrus, when he went to Mandana, heard her return thanks for his supposed death; enquired if it was not customary for the king and his whole court to sail in barges upon the Thames, as Augustus used to do upon the Tyber; whether they had not musick and collations in the Park; and where they celebrated the jults and tournaments.

The season for Vauxhall being not yet over, she was desirous of once seeing a place, which, by the description she had heard of it, greatly resembled the Gardens of Lucullus at Rome, in which the emperor, with all the princes and princesses of his court, were so nobly entertained, and where so many gallant conversations had passed among those admirable persons.

The singularity of her dress (for she was covered with her veil) drew a number of gazers after her, who pressed round her with so little respect, that she was greatly embarrassed, and had thoughts of quitting the place, delightful as she owned it, immediately, when her attention was wholly engrossed by an adventure in which she soon interested herself very deeply.

An officer of rank in the sea-service had brought his mistress, disguised in a suit of man's or rather boy's cloaths, and a hat and feather, into the gardens. The young creature being a little intoxicated with the wine she had taken too freely, was thrown so much off her guard as to give occasion to some of the company to suspect her sex; and a gay fellow, in order to give them some diversion at her expence, pretending to be affronted at something she said, drew his sword upon the disguised fair-one, which so alarmed her, that she shrieked out she was a woman, and ran for protection to her lover, who

who was so disordered with liquor, that he was not able to defend her.

Miss Glanville, ever curious and inquisitive, demanded the cause why the company ran in crowds to that particular spot; and received for answer, that a gentleman had drawn his sword upon a lady disguised in a man's habit.

'Oh, heavens!' cried Arabella, 'this must certainly be a very notable adventure. The lady has doubtless some extraordinary circumstances in her story, and haply, upon enquiry, her misfortunes will be found to resemble those which obliged the beautiful Aspasia to put on the same disguise, who was by that means murdered by the cruel Zenodorus in a fit of jealousy at the amity his wife expressed for her. But can I not see this unfortunate fair-one?' added she, pressing, in spite of Mr. Glanville's intreaties, through the crowd—'I may haply be able to afford her some consolation.'

Mr. Glanville finding his persuasions were not regarded, followed her with very little difficulty; for her veil falling back in her hurry, she did not mind to replace it, and the charms of her face, joined to the majesty of her person, and singularity of her dress, attracting every person's attention and respect, they made way for her to pass, not a little surprized at the extreme earnestness and solemnity that appeared in her countenance upon an event so diverting to every one else.

The disguised lady, whom she was endeavouring to approach, had thrown herself upon a bench in one of the boxes, trembling still with the apprehension of the sword, though her antagonist was kneeling at her feet, making love to her in mock-heroicks, for the diversion of the company.

Her hat and peruke had fallen off in her fright; and her hair, which had been turned up under it, hung now loosely about her neck, and gave such an appearance of woe to a face, which notwithstanding the paleness that terror had overspread it with, was really extremely pretty, that Arabella was equally struck with compassion and admiration of her.

'Lovely unknown,' said she to her, with an air of extreme tenderness, 'though I am a stranger both to your name and history, yet your aspect

'persuadeth me your quality is not mean, and the condition and disguise in which I behold you, shewing that you are unfortunate, permit me to offer you all the assistances in my power, seeing that I am moved thereby by my compassion for your distress, and that esteem which the sight of you most necessarily inspire.'

Mr. Glanville was struck dumb with confusion at this strange speech, and at the whispers and scoffs it occasioned among the spectators. He attempted to take hold of her hand, in order to lead her away, but she disengaged herself from him with a frown of displeasure; and taking no notice of Miss Glanville, who whispered with great emotion, 'Lord, cousin, how you expose yourself!' pressed nearer to the beautiful disguised, and again repeated her offers of service.

The girl being perfectly recovered from her intoxication by the fright she had been in, gazed upon Arabella with a look of extreme surprize: yet being moved to respect by the dignity of her appearance, and, strange as her words seemed, to be by the obliging purport of them, and the affecting earnestness with which they were delivered, she rose from her seat, and thanked her with an accent full of regard and submission.

'Fair maid,' said Arabella, taking her hand, 'let us quit this place, where your discovery may probably subject you to more dangers: if you will be pleased to put yourself into my protection, and acquaint me with the history of your misfortunes, I have interest enough with a valiant person who shall undertake to free you from your persecutions, and re-establish the repose of your life.'

The kneeling hero, who, as well as every one else that were present, had gazed with astonishment at Arabella during all this passage, perceiving she was about to rob him of the disguised fair, seized hold of the hand she had at liberty, and swore he would not part with her.

Mr. Glanville, almost mad with vexation, endeavoured to get Arabella away.

'Are you mad, Madam,' said he, in a whisper, 'to make all this rout about a prostitute? Do you see how every body stares at you? What will they

'they think—For Heaven's sake, let us be gone!'

'What, Sir!' replied Arabella, in a rage, 'are you base enough to leave this admirable creature in the power of that man, who is, questionless, her ravisher? And will you not draw your sword in her defence?'

'Hey-day!' cried the sea-officer, waked out of his stupid dose by the clamour about him; 'what's the matter here!—What are you doing?—Where's my Lucy?—Zoons, Sir!' said he to the young fellow who held her, 'what business have you with my Lucy?'—And, uttering a dreadful oath, drew out his sword, and staggered towards his gay rival, who observing the weakness of his antagonist, flourished with his sword to shew his courage and frighten the ladies, who all ran away screaming. Arabella, taking Miss Glanville under the arm, cried out to Mr. Glanville, as she left the place, to take care of the distressed lady, and, while the two combatants were disputing for her, to carry her away in safety.

But Mr. Glanville, without regarding this injunction, hastened after her; and to pacify her, told her the lady was rescued by her favourite lover, and carried off in triumph.

'But are you sure,' said Arabella, 'it was not some other of her ravishers who carried her away, and not the person whom she has haply favoured with her affection? May not the same thing have happened to her, as did to the beautiful Candace, queen of Ethiopia, who, while two of her ravishers were fighting for her, a third, whom she took for her deliverer, came and carried her away?'

'But she went away willingly, I assure you, Madam,' said Mr. Glanville. 'Pray, don't be in any concern about her.'

'If she went away willingly with him,' replied Arabella, 'it is probable it may not be another ravisher; and yet if this person that rescued her happened to be in armour, and the vizor of his helmet down, she might be mistaken as well as Queen Candace.'

'Well, well, he was not in armour, Madam,' said Glanville, almost beside himself with vexation at her folly.

'You seem to be disturbed, Sir,'

said Arabella, a little surprized at his pævish tone. 'Is there any thing in this adventure which concerns you? Nay, now I remember, you did not offer to defend the beautiful unknown. I am not willing to impute your inaction upon such an occasion to want of courage or generosity; perhaps you are acquainted with her history, and from this knowledge refused to engage in her defence.'

Mr. Glanville perceiving the company gather from all parts to the walk they were in, told her he would acquaint her with all he knew concerning the disguised lady when they were in the coach on their return home; and Arabella, impatient for the promised story, proposed to leave the Gardens immediately, which was gladly complied with by Mr. Glanville, who heartily repented his having carried her thither.

CHAP. II.

WHICH ENDS WITH A VERY UNFAVOURABLE PREDICTION FOR OUR HEROINE.

AS soon as they were seated in the coach, she did not fail to call upon him to perform his promise; but Mr. Glanville, excessively out of humour at her exposing herself in the Gardens, replied, without considering whether he should not offend her, that he knew no more of the disguised lady than any body else in the place.

'How, Sir!' replied Arabella, 'did you not promise to relate her adventures to me? And would you have me believe you knew no more of them than the rest of the cavaliers and ladies in the place?'

'Upon my soul, I don't, Madam!' said Glanville; 'yet what I know of her is sufficient to let me understand she was not worth the consideration you seemed to have for her.'

'She cannot, sure, be more indiscreet than the fair and unfortunate Hermione,' replied Arabella; 'who, like her, put on man's apparel, through despair at the ill success of her passion for Alexander—And certain it is, that though the beautiful Hermione was guilty of one great error which lost her the esteem of Alexander, yet she had a high and noble soul,

‘soul, as was manifest by her behaviour and words when she was murdered by the sword of Demetrius.—“Oh, Death!” cried she, as she was falling, “how sweet do I find thee, and how much and how earnestly have I desired thee!”

‘O Lord! O Lord!’ cried Mr. Glanville, hardly sensible of what he said. ‘Was there ever any thing so intolerable?’

‘You pity the unhappy Hermione, Sir?’ said Arabella, interpreting his exclamation her own way. ‘Indeed, she is well worthy of your compassion; and if the bare recital of the words she uttered at receiving her death’s wound, affects you so much, you may guess what would have been your agonies, had you been Demetrius that gave it her!’

Here Mr. Glanville groaning aloud through impatience at her absurdities—

‘This subject affects you deeply, I perceive,’ said Arabella. ‘There is no question but you would have acted in the same circumstance as Demetrius did: yet, let me tell you, the extravagancy of his rage and despair for what he had innocently committed, was imputed to him as a great imbecillity, as was also the violent passion he conceived soon after for the fair Deidamia. You know the accident which brought that fair prince’s into his way.’

‘Indeed I do not, Madam,’ said Glanville, peevishly.

‘Well, then, I’ll tell you,’ said Arabella; but, pausing a little—

‘The recital I have engaged myself to make,’ added she, ‘will necessarily take up some hours time, as, upon reflection I have found: so if you will dispense with my beginning it at present, I will satisfy your curiosity to-morrow, when I may be able to pursue it without interruption.’

To this Mr. Glanville made no other answer than a bow with his head; and the coach a few moments after arriving at their own house, he led her to her apartment, firmly resolved never to attend her to any more publick places while she continued in the same ridiculous folly.

Sir Charles, who had several times been in doubt whether Arabella was not really disordered in her senses, upon Miss Glanville’s account of her be-

haviour at the Gardens, concluded she was absolutely mad, and held a short debate with himself, whether he ought not to bring a commission of lunacy against her, rather than marry her to his son, who he was persuaded could never be happy with a wife so unaccountably absurd. Though he only hinted at this to Mr. Glanville, in a conversation he had with him while his dissatisfaction was at it’s height, concerning Arabella, yet the bare supposition that his father ever thought of such a thing threw the young gentleman into such agonies, that Sir Charles, to compose him, protested he would do nothing in relation to his niece that he would not approve of. Yet he expostulated with him on the absurdity of her behaviour, and the ridicule to which she exposed herself wherever she went; appealing to him, whether in a wife he could think those follies supportable, which in a mistress occasioned him so much confusion.

Mr. Glanville, as much in love as he was, felt all the force of this inference, and acknowledged to his father that he could not think of marrying Arabella, till the whims her romances had put into her head, were erased by a better knowledge of life and manners. But he added, with a sigh, that he knew not how this reformation would be effected; for she had such a strange facility in reconciling every incident to her own fantastick ideas, that every new object added strength to the fatal deception she laboured under.

CHAP. III.

IN WHICH ARABELLA MEETS WITH ANOTHER ADMIRABLE ADVENTURE.

OUR lovely heroine had not been above a fortnight in London, before the gross air of that smoaky town affected her health so much, that Sir Charles proposed to her to go for a few weeks to Richmond, where he hired a house elegantly furnished for her reception.

Miss Glanville had been too long out of that darling city to pay her the compliment of attending her constantly at Richmond; yet she promised to be

as often as possible with her: and Sir Charles, having affairs that could not dispense with his absence from town, placed his steward in her house, being a person whose prudence and fidelity he could rely upon; and he, with her women, and some other menial servants, made up her equipage.

As it was not consistent with decorum for Mr. Glanville to reside in her house, he contented himself with riding to Richmond generally every day; and as long as Arabella was pleased with that retirement, he resolved not to press her return to town till the Countess of — arrived, in whose conversation he grounded all his hopes of her cure.

At that season of the year, Richmond not being quite deserted by company, Arabella was visited by several ladies of fashion; who, charmed with her affability, politeness, and good sense, were strangely perplexed how to account for some peculiarities in her dress and manner of thinking.

Some of the younger sort, from whom Arabella's extraordinary beauty took away all pretensions to equality on that score, made themselves extremely merry with her oddnesses, as they called them, and gave broad intimations that her head was not right.

As for Arabella, whose taste was as delicate, sentiments as refined, and judgment as clear as any person's could be who believed the authenticity of Scudery's romances, she was strangely disappointed to find no lady with whom she could converse with any tolerable pleasure: and that instead of Clelias, Statiras, Mandanas, &c. she found only Miss Glanvilles among all she knew.

The comparison she drew between such as these and the charming Countess of —, whom she had just begun to be acquainted with at Bath, increased her regret for the interruption that was given to so agreeable a friendship: and it was with infinite pleasure Mr. Glanville heard her repeatedly wish for the arrival of that admirable lady (as she always called her) in town.

Not being able to relish the insipid conversation of the young ladies that visited her at Richmond, her chief amusement was to walk in the park there; which, because of its rural pri-

vacy, was extremely agreeable to her inclinations.

Here she indulged contemplation, leaning on the arm of her faithful Lucy, while her other women walked at some distance behind her, and two men-servants kept her always in sight.

One evening when she was returning from her usual walk, she heard the sound of a woman's voice, which seemed to proceed from a tuft of trees that hid her from her view; and stopping a moment, distinguished some plaintive accents, which increasing her curiosity, she advanced towards the place, telling Lucy she was resolved, if possible, to discover who the distressed lady was, and what was the subject of her affliction.

As she drew nearer with softly-treading steps, she could distinguish through the branches of the trees, now despoiled of great part of their leaves, two women seated on the ground, their backs towards her, and one of them, — her head gently reclined on the other's shoulder, seemed by her mournful action to be weeping; for she often put her handkerchief to her eyes, breathing every time a sigh, which, as Arabella phrased it, seemed to proceed from the deepest recesses of her heart.

This adventure, more worthy indeed to be styled an adventure than all our fair heroine had ever yet met with, and so conformable to what she had read in romances, filled her heart with eager expectation. She made a sign to Lucy to make no noise, and creeping still closer towards the place where this afflicted person sat, she heard her distinctly utter these words, which, however, were often interrupted with her sighs—

' Ah, Ariamenes! whom I, to my
' misfortune, have too much loved,
' and whom, to my misfortune, I fear
' I shall never sufficiently hate, since
' that Heaven, and thy cruel ingrati-
' tude, have ordained that thou shalt
' never be mine, and that so many
' sweet and dear hopes are for ever
' taken from me, return me at least;
' ungrateful man! return me those tes-
' timonies of my innocent affection,
' which were sometimes so dear and
' precious to thee. Return me those
' favours, which, all innocent as they
' were, are become criminal by thy
' crime.

'crime. Return me, cruel man, return me those relics of my heart which thou detainest in despite of me, and which, notwithstanding thy infidelity, I cannot recover.'

Here, her tears interrupting her speech, Arabella, being impatient to know the history of this afflicted person, came softly round to the other side, and shewing herself, occasioned some disturbance to the sad unknown; who, rising from her seat, with her face averted, as if ashamed of having so far disclosed her sorrows in a stranger's hearing, endeavoured to pass by her unnoticed.

Arabella, perceiving her design, stopped her with a very graceful action, and with a voice all composed of sweetness, earnestly conjured her to relate her history.

'Think not, lovely unknown,' said she, (for she was really very pretty) 'that my endeavours to detain you proceed from an indiscreet curiosity. It is true, some complaints which have fallen from your fair mouth, have raised in me a desire to be acquainted with your adventures; but this desire has its foundation in that compassion your complaints have filled me with: and if I wish to know your misfortunes, it is only with a view of affording you some consolation.'

'Pardon me, Madam,' said the fair afflicted, gazing on Arabella with many signs of admiration, 'if my confusion at being over-heard in a place I had chosen to bewail my misfortunes, made me be guilty of some appearance of rudeness, not seeing the admirable person I wanted to avoid. But,' pursued she, hesitating a little, 'those characters of beauty I behold in your face, and the gracefulness of your deportment, convincing me you can be of no ordinary rank, I will the less scruple to acquaint you with my adventures, and the cause of those complaints you have heard proceed from my mouth.'

Arabella assuring her, that whatever her misfortunes were, she might depend upon all the assistance in her power, seated herself near her at the foot of the tree where she had been sitting; and giving Lucy orders to join the rest of her women, and stay at a distance till she made a sign to them to advance,

she prepared to listen to the adventures of the fair unknown; who, after some little pause, began to relate them in this manner.

CHAP. IV.

IN WHICH IS RELATED THE HISTORY OF THE PRINCESS OF GAUL.

'MY name, Madam, is Cyne-
'cia; my birth illustrious
'enough, seeing that I am the daugh-
'ter of a sovereign prince, who pos-
'sesses a large and spacious territory
'in what is now called Ancient Gaul.'

'What, Madam!' interrupted Arabella, 'are you a princess, then?'

'Questionless I am, Madam,' replied the lady; 'and a princess happy
'and prosperous, till the felicity of
'my life was interrupted by the perfi-
'dious Ariamenes.'

'Pardon me, Madam,' interrupted Arabella again, 'that my ignorance of
'your quality made me be deficient in
'those respects which are due to your
'high birth, and which, notwith-
'standing those characters of greatness
'I might read in the lineaments of
'your visage, I yet neglected to
'pay.'

'Alas, Madam!' said the stranger, 'that little beauty which the Heavens
'bestowed on me only to make me
'wretched, as by the event it has
'proved, has long since taken its
'flight, and, together with my happi-
'ness, I have lost that which made me
'unhappy. And certain it is, grief
'has made such ravages among what
'might once have been thought tole-
'rable in my face, that I should not
'be surprized if my being no longer
'fair, should make you, with dissi-
'culty, believe I ever was so.'

Arabella, after a proper compliment in answer to this speech, intreated the princess to go on with her history; who, hesitating a little, complied with her request.

'Be pleased to know then, Madam,' said she, 'that being bred up with all
'imaginable tenderness in my father's
'court, I had no sooner arrived to
'my sixteenth year, than I saw myself
'surrounded with lovers; who, ne-
'vertheless, such was the severity with
'which

‘ which I behaved myself, concealed
 ‘ their passions under a respectful si-
 ‘ lence, well knowing banishment
 ‘ from my presence was the least pu-
 ‘ nishment they had to expect, if they
 ‘ presumed to declare their sentiments
 ‘ to me.

‘ I lived in this fashion, Madam,
 ‘ for two years longer, rejoicing in
 ‘ the insensibility of my own heart,
 ‘ and triumphing in the sufferings of
 ‘ others, when my tranquillity was all
 ‘ at once interrupted by an accident
 ‘ which I am going to relate to you.’

The princess stopped here to give
 vent to some sighs which a cruel re-
 membrance forced from her; and con-
 tinuing in a deep muse for five or six
 minutes, resumed her story in this
 manner—

‘ It being my custom to walk in a
 ‘ forest adjoining to one of my fa-
 ‘ ther’s summer residences, attended
 ‘ only by my women, one day when I
 ‘ was taking this amusement, I per-
 ‘ ceived at some distance a man lying
 ‘ on the ground; and impelled by a
 ‘ sudden curiosity, I advanced towards
 ‘ this person, whom, upon a nearer
 ‘ view, I perceived to have been
 ‘ wounded very much, and fainted
 ‘ away through loss of blood. His
 ‘ habit being very rich, I concluded
 ‘ by that he was of no mean quality:
 ‘ but when I had looked upon his
 ‘ countenance, pale and languishing
 ‘ as it was, methought there appeared
 ‘ so many marks of greatness, ac-
 ‘ companied with a sweetness so hap-
 ‘ pily blended, that my attention was
 ‘ engaged in an extraordinary manner,
 ‘ and interested me so powerfully in
 ‘ his safety, that I commanded some
 ‘ of my women to run immediately
 ‘ for proper assistance, and convey him
 ‘ to the castle, while I directed others
 ‘ to throw some water in his face, and
 ‘ to apply some linen to his wounds,
 ‘ to stop the bleeding.

‘ These charitable cares restored the
 ‘ wounded stranger to his senses; he
 ‘ opened his eyes, and turning them
 ‘ slowly to the objects around him,
 ‘ fixed at last their languishing looks
 ‘ on me: when moved, as it should
 ‘ seem, to some respect by what he saw
 ‘ in my countenance, he rose with
 ‘ some difficulty from the ground, and
 ‘ bowing almost down to it again, by

‘ that action seemed to pay me his ac-
 ‘ knowledgments for what he sup-
 ‘ posed I had done for his preservation.

‘ His extreme weakness having
 ‘ obliged him to creep towards a tree,
 ‘ against the back of which he sup-
 ‘ ported himself, I went nearer to him,
 ‘ and having told him the condition in
 ‘ which I found him, and the orders I
 ‘ had dispatched for assistance, request-
 ‘ ed him to acquaint me with his name
 ‘ and quality, and the adventure which
 ‘ had brought him into that condition.

“ My name, Madam,” answered he,
 “ is Ariamenes; my birth is noble
 “ enough; I have spent some years in
 “ my travels, and was returning to
 “ my native country; when passing
 “ through this forest I was seized with
 “ an inclination to sleep. I had tied
 “ my horse to a tree, and retiring some
 “ few paces off, stretched myself at the
 “ foot of a large oak, whose branches
 “ promised me an agreeable shade. I
 “ had not yet closed my eyes, when the
 “ slumber I invited was dissipated by
 “ the sound of some voices near me.

“ A curiosity, not natural to me,
 “ made me listen to the discourse of
 “ these persons, whom, by the tone of
 “ their voices, though I could not see
 “ them, I knew to be men.

“ In short, Madam, I was a wit-
 “ ness to a most horrible scheme which
 “ they concerted together; my weak-
 “ nesses will not permit me to enter into
 “ an exact detail of all I heard: the
 “ result of their conference was, to
 “ seize the princess of this country,
 “ and carry her off.”

‘ Here,’ pursued Cynecia, ‘ I in-
 ‘ terrupted the stranger with a loud
 ‘ cry, which giving him to understand
 ‘ who I was, he apologized in the most
 ‘ graceful manner imaginable for the
 ‘ little respect he had hitherto paid me.

‘ I then intreated him to tell me, if
 ‘ he had any opportunity of hearing
 ‘ the name of my designed ravisher;
 ‘ to which he replied, that he under-
 ‘ stood it to be Taxander.

‘ This man, Madam, was one of
 ‘ my father’s favourites, and had been
 ‘ long secretly in love with me.

‘ Ariamenes then informed me, that
 ‘ being enflamed with rage against
 ‘ these impious villains, he rose from
 ‘ the ground, re-mounted his horse,
 ‘ and defied the two traitors aloud,
 ‘ threatening

threatening them with death, unless they abandoned their impious design.

Taxander made no answer, but rushed furiously upon him, and had the baseness to suffer his wicked associate to assist him: but the valiant Ariamenes, though he spoke modestly of his victory, yet gave me to understand that he had made both the villains abandon their wicked enterprize, with their lives; and that dismounting, in order to see if they were quite dead, he found himself so faint with the wounds he had received from them both, that he had not strength to re-mount his horse; but crawling on, in hopes of meeting with some assistance, fainted away at last through weariness and loss of blood.

While he was giving me this account, the chariot I had sent for arrived, and having made him such acknowledgments as the obligation I had received from him demanded, I caused him to get into the chariot; and sending one with him to acquaint the prince, my father, with all that had happened, and the merit of the valiant stranger, I returned the same way I came with my women, my thoughts being wholly engrossed by this unknown.

The service he had done me filled me with a gratitude and esteem for him, which prepared my heart for those tender sentiments I afterwards entertained, to the ruin of my repose.

I will not tire your patience, Madam, with a minute detail of all the succeeding passages of my story; it shall suffice to tell you, that Ariamenes was received with extraordinary marks of esteem by my father; that his cure was soon compleated; and that having vowed himself to my service, and declared an unalterable passion for me, I permitted him to love me, and gave him that share in my heart, which, I fear, not all his infidelities will ever deprive him of.

His attachment to me was soon suspected by Taxander's relations, who having secretly vowed his ruin, endeavoured to discover if I had admitted his addresses; and having made themselves masters of our se-

crets, by means of the treachery of one of my women, procured information to be given to my father of our mutual passion.

Alas! what mischiefs did not this fatal discovery produce! my father, enraged to the last degree at this intelligence, confined me to my apartments, and ordered Ariamenes to leave his dominions within three days.

Spare me, Madam, the repetition of what passed at our last sad interview, which, by large bribes to my guards, he obtained.

His tears, his agonies, his vows of everlasting fidelity, so soothed my melancholy at parting with him, and persuaded me of his constancy, that I waited for several months, with perfect tranquillity, for the performance of the promise he made me, to do my father such considerable services in the war he was engaged in with one of his neighbours, as should oblige him to give me to him for his reward.

But, alas! two years rolled on, without bringing back the unfaithful Ariamenes. My father died, and my brother, who succeeded him, being about to force me to marry a prince whom I detested, I secretly quitted the court, and, attended only by this faithful confidant whom you behold with me, and some few of my trusty domesticks, I came hither in search of Ariamenes, he having told me this country was the place of his birth.

Polenor, the most prudent and faithful of my servants, undertook to find out the ungrateful Ariamenes, whom yet I was willing to find excuses for; but all his enquiries were to no effect; the name of Ariamenes was not known in this part of the world.

Tired out with unsuccessful enquiries, I resolved to seek out some obscure place, where I might in secret lament my misfortunes, and expect the end of them in death. My attendants found me out such a retreat as I wanted, in a neighbouring village, which they call Twickenham, I think; from whence I often make excursions to this park, attended only as you see, and here in-

‘dulge myself in complaints upon the cruelty of my destiny.’

The sorrowful Cynecia here ended her story, to which, in the course of her relation, she had given a great many interruptions through the violence of her grief: and Arabella, after having said every thing she could think on to alleviate her affliction, earnestly entreated her to accept of an asylum at her house; where she should be treated with all the respect due to her illustrious birth.

The afflicted lady, though she respectfully declined this offer, yet expressed a great desire of commencing a strict amity with our fair heroine, who, on her part, made her the most tender protestations of friendship.

The evening being almost closed, they parted with great reluctance on both sides; mutually promising to meet in the same place the next day.

Cynecia, having enjoined her new friend to absolute secrecy, Arabella was under a necessity of keeping this adventure to herself. And though she longed to tell Mr. Glanville, who came to visit her the next day, that the countess was extremely mistaken, when she maintained there were no more wandering princesses in the world, yet the engagement she had submitted to kept her silent.

CHAP. V.

A VERY MYSTERIOUS CHAPTER.

ARABELLA, who impatiently longed for the hour of meeting the fair princess, with whom she was extremely delighted, consulted her watch so often, and discovered so much restlessness and anxiety, that Mr. Glanville began to be surprized; and the more, as she peremptorily commanded him not to attend her in her evening walk. This prohibition, which, though he durst not dispute, he secretly resolved to disobey; and as soon as she set out for the park with her usual attendants, he slipped out by a back-door, and keeping her in his sight, himself-unseen, he ventured to watch her motions.

As he had expected to unravel some great mystery, he was agreeably dis-

appointed to find she continued her walk in the park with great composure; and though she was soon joined by the imaginary princess, yet conceiving her to be some young lady, with whom she had commenced an acquaintance at Richmond, his heart was at rest; and for fear of displeasing her, he took a contrary path from that she was in, that he might not meet her, yet resolved to stay till he thought she would be inclined to return, and then shew himself, and conduct her home. A solicitude for which he did not imagine she need be offended.

The two ladies being met, after reciprocal compliments, the princess intreated Arabella to relate her adventures; who not being willing to violate the laws of romance, which require an unbounded confidence upon these occasions, began very succinctly to recount the history of her life; which, as she managed it, contained events almost as romantick and incredible as any in her romances; winding them up with a confession that she did not hate Mr. Glanville, whom she acknowledged to be one of the most faithful and zealous of lovers.

Cynecia, with a sigh, congratulated her upon the fidelity of a lover, who, by her description, was worthy the place he possessed in her esteem; and expressing a wish, that she could see, unobserved by him, this gallant and generous person, Arabella, who that moment espied him at a distance, yet advancing towards them, told her, with a blush that overspread all her face, that her curiosity might be satisfied in the manner she wished, ‘For yonder,’ added she, ‘is the person we have been talking of.’

Cynecia, at these words, looking towards the place where her fair friend had directed, no sooner cast her eyes upon Mr. Glanville, than giving a loud cry, she sunk into the arms of Arabella, who, astonished and perplexed as she was, eagerly held them out to support her.

Finding her in a swoon, she dispatched Lucy, who was near her, to look for some water to throw in her face; but that lady, breathing a deep sigh, opened her languishing eyes, and fixing a melancholy look upon Arabella—

‘Ah! Madam,’ said she, ‘wonder not

'not at my affliction and surprize, since in the person of your lover I behold the ungrateful Ariamenes.'

'Oh, heavens! my fair princess,' replied Arabella, 'what is it you say? Is it possible Glanville can be Ariamenes?'

'He,' cried the afflicted princess, with a disordered accent, 'he whom I now behold, and whom you call Glanville, was once Ariamenes, the perjured, the ungrateful Ariamenes. Adieu, Madam, I cannot bear his sight; I will hide myself from the world for ever; nor need you fear a rival or an enemy in the unfortunate Cynecia, who, if possible, will cease to love the unfaithful Ariamenes, and will never hate the beautiful Arabella.'

Saying this, without giving her time to answer, she took hold of her confidant by the arm, and went away with so much swiftness, that she was out of sight before Arabella was enough recovered from her astonishment to be able to intreat her stay.

Our charming heroine, ignorant till now of the true state of her heart, was surprized to find it assaulted at once by all the passions which attend disappointed love. Grief, rage, jealousy, and despair, made so cruel a war in her gentle bosom, that, unable either to express or to conceal the strong emotions with which she was agitated, she gave way to a violent burst of tears, leaning her head upon Lucy's shoulder, who wept as heartily as her lady, though ignorant of the cause of her affliction.

Mr. Glanville, who was now near enough to take notice of her posture, came running with eager haste to see what was the matter; when Arabella, roused from her extasy of grief by the sound of his steps, lifted up her head, and seeing him approach—

'Lucy,' cried she, trembling with the violence of her resentment, 'tell that traitor to keep out of my sight. Tell him, I forbid him ever to appear before me again. And, tell him,' added she, with a sigh that shook her whole tender frame, 'all the blood in his body is too little to wash away his guilt, or to pacify my indignation.'

Then hastily turning away, she ran towards her other attendants, who

were at some distance; and joining her women, proceeded directly home.

Mr. Glanville, amazed at this action, was making after her as fast as he could, when Lucy crossing in his way, cried out to him to stop.

'My lady,' said she, 'bid me tell you, traitor——'

'Hey-day!' interrupted Glanville, 'what the devil does the girl mean?'

'Pray, Sir,' said she, 'let me deliver my message; I shall forget if you speak to me till I have said it all—Stay, let me see, what comes next?'

'No more traitor, I hope,' said Glanville.

'No, Sir,' said Lucy; 'but there was something about washing in blood, and you must keep out of her sight, and not appear before the nation—Oh, dear! I have forgot it half: my lady was in such a piteous taking, I forgot it, I believe, as soon as she said it. What shall I do?'

'No matter,' said Glanville, 'I'll overtake her, and ask——'

'No, no, Sir,' said Lucy, 'pray don't do that, Sir! my lady will be very angry; I'll venture to ask her to tell me over again, and come back and let you know it.'

'But tell me,' replied Glanville, 'was any thing the matter with your lady? She was in a piteous taking, you say?'

'Oh, dear! yes, Sir,' said Lucy; 'but I was not bid to say any thing about that. To be sure, my lady did cry sadly, and sighed as if her heart would break; but I don't know what was the matter with her.'

'Well,' said Glanville, excessively shocked at this intelligence, 'go to your lady; I am going home—You may bring me her message to my own apartment.'

Lucy did as she was desired; and Mr. Glanville, impatient as he was to unravel the mystery, yet dreading lest his presence should make Arabella be guilty of some extravagance before the servants who were with her, he followed slowly after her, resolving, if possible, to procure a private interview with the lovely visionary, for whose sorrow, though he suspected it was owing to some ridiculous cause, he could not help being affected.

CHAP. VI.

NOT MUCH PLAINER THAN THE FORMER.

ARABELLA, who had walked as fast as her legs would carry her, got home before Lucy could overtake her, and retiring to her chamber, gave way to a fresh burst of grief, and bewailed the infidelity of Glanville in terms befitting a Clelia or Mandana.

As soon as she saw Lucy enter, she started from her chair with great emotion—

‘Thou comest,’ said she, ‘I know, to intercede for that ungrateful man, whose infidelity I am weak enough to lament: but open not thy mouth, I charge thee, in his defence.’

‘No, indeed, Madam!’ said Lucy. ‘Nor bring me any account of his tears, his desperation, or his despair,’ said Arabella; ‘since, questionless, he will feign them all to deceive me.’

Here Glanville, who had watched Lucy’s coming, and had followed her into Arabella’s apartment, appeared at the door.

‘Oh, heavens!’ cried Arabella, lifting up her fine eyes, ‘can it be that this disloyal man, unawed by the discovery of his guilt, again presumes to approach me!’

‘Dearest cousin,’ said Glanville, ‘what is the meaning of all this?—How have I disobligeed you?—What is my offence? I beseech you, tell me.’

‘Ask * the inconstant Ariamenes,’ replied Arabella, ‘the offence of the ungrateful Glanville. The betrayer of Cynecia can best answer that question to the deceiver of Arabella; and the guilt of the one can only be compared to the crimes of the other.’

‘Good God!’ interrupted Mr. Glanville, fretting excessively, ‘what am I to understand by all this? On my soul, Madam, I don’t know the meaning of one word you say!’

‘Oh, dissembler!’ said Arabella, ‘is it thus that thou wouldest impose upon my incredulity? Does not the

name of Ariamenes make thee tremble, then? And canst thou hear that of Cynecia without confusion?’

‘Dear Lady Bella,’ said Glanville, smiling, ‘what are these names to me?’

‘False man,’ interrupted Arabella, ‘dost thou presume to sport with thy crimes, then? Are not the treacheries of Ariamenes the crimes of Glanville? Could Ariamenes be false to the princess of Gaul, and can Glanville be innocent towards Arabella?’

Mr. Glanville, who had never heard her in his opinion talk so ridiculously before, was so amazed at the incomprehensible stuff she uttered with so much emotion, that he began to fear her intellects were really touched. This thought gave him a concern that spread itself in a moment over his countenance. He gazed on her with a fixed attention, dreading, yet wishing she would speak again; equally divided between his hopes that her next speech would remove his suspicion, and his fears, that it might more confirm them.

Arabella taking notice of his pensive posture, turned away her head, lest, by beholding him, she should relent, and treat him with less severity than she had intended, making at the same time a sign to him to be gone.

‘Indeed, Lady Bella,’ said Glanville, who understood her perfectly well, ‘I cannot leave you in this temper. I must know how I have been so unfortunate as to offend you.’

Arabella, no longer able to contain herself, burst into tears at this question: with one hand she made repeated signs to him to be gone; with the other she held her handkerchief to her eyes, vexed and ashamed of her weakness.

But Mr. Glanville, excessively shocked at this sight, instead of leaving her, threw himself on his knees before her, and taking her hand, which he tenderly pressed to his lips—

‘Good God! my dearest cousin,’ said he, ‘how you distract me by this behaviour! Sure something extraordinary must be the matter. What can it be that thus afflicts you?—Am I the cause of these tears?—Can I have offended you so much?—Speak,

* This enigmatical way of speaking upon such occasions, is of great use in the voluminous French romances; since the doubt and confusion it is the cause of, both to the accused and accuser, gives rise to a great number of succeeding mistakes, and consequently adventures.

'dear Madam—Let me know my crime. Yet, may I perish if I am conscious of any towards you!'

'Disloyal man!' said Arabella, disengaging her hand from his, 'does then the crime of Ariamenes seem so light in thy apprehension, that thou canst hope to be thought innocent by Arabella? No, no, ungrateful man! the unfortunate Cynecia shall have no cause to say that I will triumph in her spoils. I myself will be the minister of her revenge; and Glanville shall suffer for the crime of Ariamenes.'

'Who the devil is this Ariamenes?' cried Glanville, rising in a passion; 'and why am I to suffer for his crime, pray? For Heaven's sake, dear cousin, don't let your imagination wander thus. Upon my soul, I don't believe there is any such person as Ariamenes in the world!'

'Vile equivocator!' said Arabella; 'Ariamenes, though dead to Cynecia, is alive to the deluded Arabella. The crimes of Ariamenes are the guilt of Glanville: and if the one has made himself unworthy of the princess of Gaul by his perfidy and ingratitude, the other, by his baseness and deceit, merits nothing but contempt and detestation from Arabella.'

'Frenzy, by my soul!' cried Glanville, mutteringly between his teeth: 'this is downright frenzy. What shall I do?'

'Hence, from my presence,' resumed Arabella, 'false and ungrateful man! Persecute me no more with the hateful offers of thy love. From this moment I banish thee from my thoughts for ever; and neither as Glanville, or as Ariamenes, will I ever behold thee more.'

'Stay, dear cousin,' said Glanville, holding her, (for she was endeavouring to rush by him, unwilling he should see the tears that had overspread her face as she pronounced those words) 'hear me, I beg you, but one word. Who is it you mean by Ariamenes?—Is it me?—Tell me, Madam, I beseech you—This is some horrid mistake—You have been imposed upon by some villainous artifice—Speak, dear Lady Bella—Is it me you mean by Ariamenes? For so your last words seemed to hint.'

Arabella, without regarding what he said, struggled violently to force her hand from his; and finding him still earnest to detain her, told him, with an enraged voice, that she would call for help, if he did not unhand her directly.

Poor Glanville, at this menace, submissively dropt her hand; and the moment she was free, she flew out of the room, and locking herself up in her closet, sent her commands to him by one of her women, whom she called to her, to leave her apartment immediately.

CHAP. VII.

CONTAINING INDEED NO GREAT MATTERS, BUT BEING A PRELUDE TO GREATER.

MR. Glanville, who stood fixed like a statue in the place where Arabella had left him, was roused by this message, which, though palliated a little by the girl that delivered it, who was not quite so punctual as Lucy, nevertheless filled him with extreme confusion. He obeyed however immediately, and retiring to his own apartment, endeavoured to recal to his memory all Lady Bella had said.

The ambiguity of her stile, which had led him into a suspicion he had never entertained before, her last words had partly explained, if, as he understood she did, she meant him by Ariamenes. Taking this for granted, he easily conceived some plot, grounded on her romantick notions, had been laid, to prepossess her against him.

Sir George's behaviour to her rushed that moment into his thoughts; he instantly recollected all his fooleries, his history, his letter, his conversation, all apparently copied from those books she was so fond of, and probably done with a view to some other design upon her.

These reflections, joined to his new-awaked suspicions that he was in love with her, convinced him he was the author of their present misunderstanding; and that he had imposed some new fallacy upon Arabella, in order to promote a quarrel between them.

Fired almost to madness at this thought, he stamped about his room, vowing

vowing revenge upon Sir George, execrating romances, and curling his own stupidity, for not discovering Sir George was his rival, and, knowing his plotting talent, not providing against his artifices.

His first resolutions were, to set out immediately for Sir George's seat, and force him to confess the part he had acted against him: but a moment's consideration convinced him, that was not the most probable place to find him in, since it was much more likely he was waiting the success of his schemes in London, or perhaps at Richmond.

Next to satiating his vengeance, the pleasure of detecting him in such a manner, that he could not possibly deny or palliate his guilt, was next his heart.

He resolved therefore to give it out, that he was gone to London, to make Lady Bella believe it was in obedience to her commands that he had left her, with a purpose not to return till he had cleared his innocence; but, in reality, to conceal himself in his own apartment, and see what effects his reputed absence would produce.

Having thus taken his resolution, he sent for Mr. Roberts, his father's steward, to whose care he had entrusted Lady Bella in her retirement, and acquainting him with part of his apprehensions with regard to Sir George's attempts upon his cousin, he imparted to him his design of staying concealed there, in order to discover more effectually those attempts, and to preserve Lady Bella from any consequence of them.

Mr. Roberts approved of his design; and assured him of his vigilance and care, both in concealing his stay, and also in giving him notice of every thing that passed.

Mr. Glanville then wrote a short billet to Arabella, expressing his grief for her displeasure, his departure in obedience to her orders, and his resolution not to appear in her presence, till he could give her convincing proofs of his innocence.

This letter he sent by Roberts, which Arabella condescended to read, but would return no answer.

Mr. Glanville then mounting his horse, which Roberts had ordered to be got ready, rode away, and leaving

him at a house he sometimes put up at, returned on foot, and was let in by Mr. Roberts at the garden-door, and conducted unseen to his chamber.

While he passed that night, and great part of the next day, meditating on the treachery of Sir George, and soothing his uneasiness with the hopes of revenge, Arabella, no less disquieted, mused on the infidelity of her lover, the despair of Cynecia, and the impossibility of her ever being happy. Then ransacking her memory for instances in her romances of ladies equally unfortunate with herself, she would sometimes compare herself to one lady, sometimes to another, adapting their sentiments, and making use of their language in her complaints.

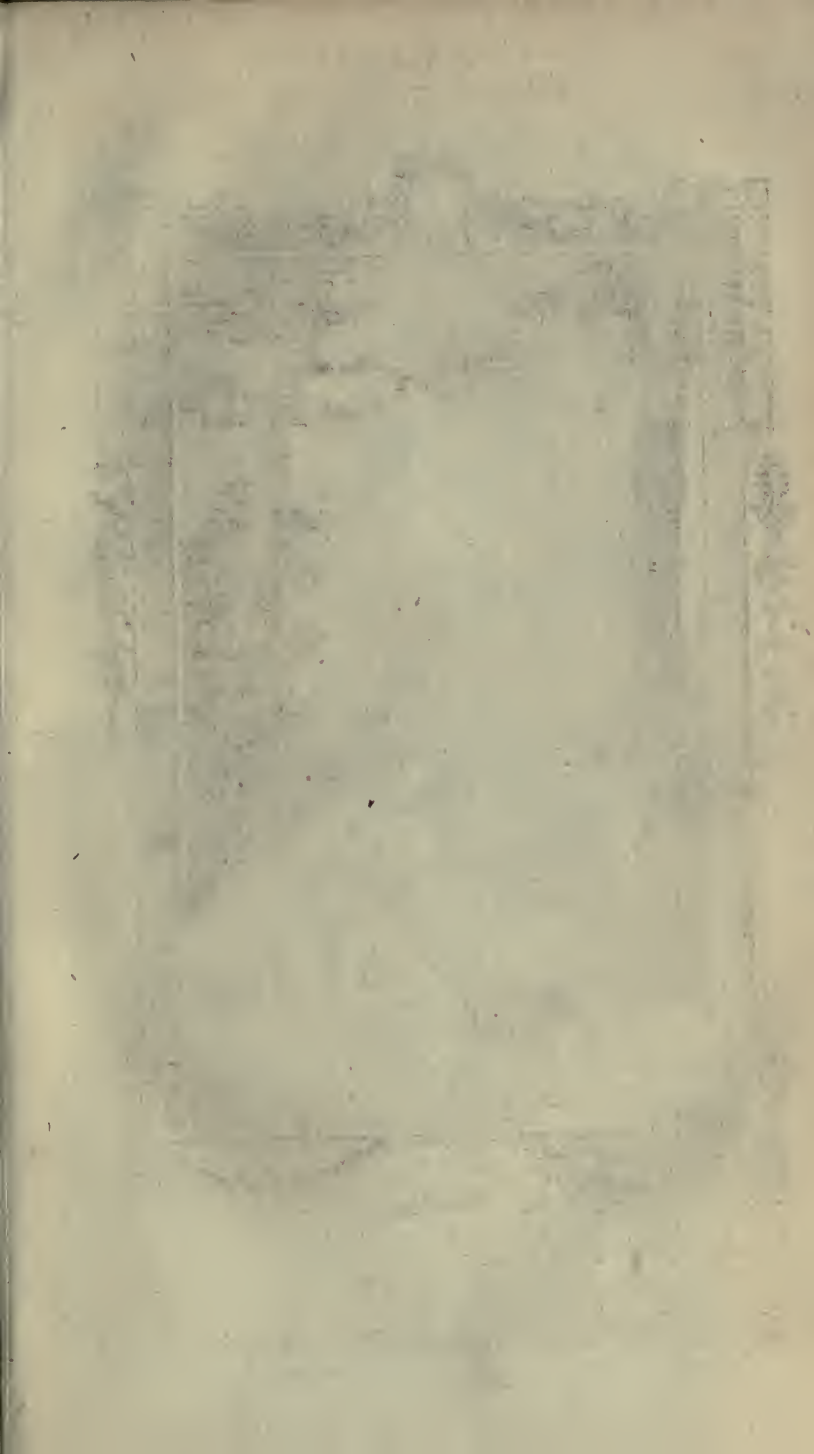
Great part of the day being spent in this manner, the uneasy restlessness of her mind made her wish to see Cynecia again. She longed to ask her a hundred questions about the unfaithful Ariamenes, which the suddenness of her departure, and her own astonishment, prevented her from doing, when she made that fatal discovery, which had cost her so much uneasiness.

Sometimes a faint hope would arise in her mind that Cynecia might be mistaken, through the great resemblance that possibly was between Ariamenes and Glanville.

She remembered that Mandana had been deceived by the likeness of Cyrus to Spitridates; and concluded that illustrious prince inconstant, because Spitridates, whom she took for Cyrus, saw her carried away, without offering to rescue her.

Dwelling with eagerness upon this thought, because it afforded her a temporary relief from others more tormenting, she resolved to go to the park, though she had but little hopes of finding Cynecia there; supposing it but too probable that the disturbance which the sight, or fancied sight of Ariamenes had given her, would confine her for some days to her chamber. Yet, however small the probability was of meeting with her, she could not resist the impatient desire she felt of going to seek her.

Dispensing, therefore, with the attendance of any other servant but Lucy, she left her apartment, with a design of resuming her usual walk, when she was met, at her stepping out of the door,





Stothard del.

Heath sculp.

door, by Lady L—'s three daughters, (who had visited her during her residence at Richmond) and another young lady.

These ladies, who, to vary the scene of their rural diversions, were going to cross over to Twickenham, and walk there, pressed Lady Bella to accompany them. Our melancholy heroine refused them at first, but upon their repeated importunity, recollecting that the princess of Gaul had informed her she resided there, she consented to go, in hopes some favourable chance might bring her in their way, or discover the place of her retreat, when she could easily find some excuse for leaving her companions, and going to her.

Mr. Roberts, who, according to his instructions, narrowly watched Arabella's motions, finding she did not command his attendance as usual, resolved however to be privately of this party. He had but just time to run up and acquaint Mr. Glanville, and then followed the ladies at a distance, who taking boat, passed over to Twickenham, which he also did as soon as he saw them landed.

CHAP. VIII.

WHICH ACQUAINTS THE READER
WITH TWO VERY EXTRAORDINARY
ACCIDENTS.

MR. Glanville, who did not doubt but Roberts would bring him some intelligence, sat waiting with anxious impatience for his return. The evening drew on apace, he numbered the hours, and began to grow uneasy at Arabella's long stay. His chamber-window looking into the garden, he thought he saw his cousin, covered with her veil as usual, hasten down one of the walks; his heart leaped at this transient view, he threw up the sash, and looking out, saw her very plainly strike into a cross-walk, and a moment after saw Sir George, who came out of a little summer-house, at her feet. Transported with rage at this sight, he snatched up his sword, flew down the stairs into the garden, and came running like a madman up the walk in which the lovers were. The lady observing him first, for Sir George's

back was towards him, shrieked aloud and not knowing what she did, ran towards the house, crying for help, and came back as fast, yet not time enough to prevent mischief: for Mr. Glanville, actuated by an irresistible fury, cried out to Sir George to defend himself, who had but just time to draw his sword, and make an ineffectual pass at Mr. Glanville, when he received his into his body, and fell to the ground.

Mr. Glanville losing his resentment, insensibly, at the sight of his rival's blood, threw down his sword, and endeavoured to support him; while the lady, who had lost her veil in her running, and to the great astonishment of Mr. Glanville, proved to be his sister, came up to them with tears and exclamations, blaming herself for all that had happened. Mr. Glanville, with a heart throbbing with remorse for what he had done, gazed on his sister with an accusing look, as she hung over the wounded baronet with streaming eyes, sometimes wringing her hands, then clasping them together in an agony of grief.

Sir George having strength enough left to observe her disorder, and the generous concern of Glanville, who holding him in his arms, intreated his sister to send for proper assistance, 'Dear Charles,' said he, 'you are too kind; I have used you very ill, I have deserved my death from your hand—You know not what I have been base enough to practise against you—If I can but live to clear your innocence to Lady Bella, and free you from the consequences of this action, I shall die satisfied.'

His strength failing him at these words, he fainted away in Mr. Glanville's arms; who, though now convinced of his treachery, was extremely shocked at the condition he saw him in.

Miss Glanville renewing her tears and exclamations at this sight, he was obliged to lay Sir George gently upon the ground, and ran to find out somebody to send for a surgeon, and to help him to convey him into the house.

In his way he was met by Mr. Roberts, who was coming to seek him; and with a look of terror and confusion told him, Lady Bella was brought home extremely ill—that her life had

been in danger, and that she was but just recovered from a terrible fainting fit.

Mr. Glanville, though greatly alarmed at this news, forgot not to take all possible care of Sir George; directing Roberts to get some person to carry him into the house, and giving him orders to procure proper assistance, flew to Lady Bella's apartment.

Her women had just put her to bed, raving as in a strong delirium. Mr. Glanville approached her, and finding she was in a violent fever, dispatched a man and horse immediately to town, to get physicians, and to acquaint his father with what had happened.

Mr. Roberts, upon the surgeon's report that Sir George was not mortally wounded, came to inform him of this good news; but he found him incapable of listening to him, and in agonies not to be expressed. It was with difficulty they forced him out of Arabella's chamber into his own; where, throwing himself upon his bed, he refused to see or speak to any body, till he was told Sir Charles and the physicians were arrived.

He then ran eagerly to hear their opinions of his beloved cousin, which he soon discovered, by their significant gestures and half-pronounced words, to be very bad. They comforted him, however, with hopes that she might recover, and insisting upon her being kept very quiet, obliged him to quit the room. While all the necessary methods were taken to abate the violence of the disease, Sir Charles, who had been informed by his steward of his son's duel with Sir George, was amazed to the last degree at two such terrible accidents.

Having seen his son to his chamber, and recommended him to be patient and composed, he went to visit the young baronet; and was not a little surprized to find his daughter sitting at his bed's head, with all the appearance of a violent affliction.

Indeed, Miss Glanville's cares were so wholly engrossed by Sir George, that she hardly ever thought of her cousin Arabella, and had just slept into her chamber while the surgeons were dressing Sir George's wound, and renewed her attendance upon him as soon as that was over.

Miss Glanville, however, thought

proper to make some trifling excuses to her father for her solicitude about Sir George. And the young baronet, on whom the fear of death produced its usual effects, and made him extremely concerned for the errors of his past life, and very desirous of atoning for them, if possible, assured Sir Charles, that if he lived he would offer himself to his acceptance for a son-in-law; declaring that he had basely trifled with the esteem of his daughter, but that she had wholly subdued him to herself by her forgiving tenderness.

Sir Charles was very desirous of knowing the occasion of his quarrel with his son; but Sir George was too weak to hold any farther conversation; upon which Sir Charles, after a short visit, retired, taking Miss Glanville along with him.

That the reader, whose imagination is no doubt upon the stretch to conceive the meaning of these two extraordinary incidents, may be left no longer in suspense, we think proper to explain them both in the following chapter, that we may in the next pursue our history without interruption.

CHAP. IX.

WHICH WILL BE FOUND TO CONTAIN INFORMATION ABSOLUTELY NECESSARY FOR THE RIGHT UNDERSTANDING OF THIS HISTORY.

OUR fair and afflicted heroine, accompanied by the ladies we have mentioned, having crossed the river, pursued their walk upon its winding banks, entertaining themselves with the usual topicks of conversation among young ladies, such as their winnings and losings at Brag, the prices of silks, the newest fashions, the best hair-cutter, the scandal at the last assembly, &c.

Arabella was so disgusted with this (as she thought) insipid discourse, which gave no relief to the anxiety of her mind, but added a kind of fretfulness and impatience to her grief, that she resolved to quit them, and with Lucy go in quest of the princess of Gaul's retreat.

The ladies, however, insisted upon her not leaving them; and her excuse that she was going in search of an unfortunate unknown, for whom she had vowed

vowed a friendship, made them all immediately resolve to accompany her, extremely diverted with the oddity of the design, and sacrificing her to their mirth by fly leers, whispers, stifled laughs, and a thousand little sprightly fallies, which the disconsolate Arabella took no notice of, so deeply were her thoughts engaged.

Though she knew not which way to direct her steps, yet, concluding the melancholy Cynecia would certainly chuse some very solitary place for her residence, she rambled about among the least frequented paths, followed by the young ladies, who ardently desired to see this unfortunate unknown; though, at Arabella's earnest request, they promised not to shew themselves to the lady, who, she informed them, for very urgent reasons, was obliged to keep herself concealed.

Fatiguing as this ramble was to the delicate spirits of Arabella's companions, they were enabled to support it by the diversion her behaviour afforded them.

Every peasant she met, she enquired if a beautiful lady, disguised, did not dwell somewhere thereabout.

To some she gave a description of her person, to others an account of the domesticks that were with her; not forgetting her dress, her melancholy, and the great care she took to keep herself concealed.

These strange enquiries, with the strange language in which they were made, not a little surprized the good people to whom she addressed herself; yet, moved to respect by the majestic loveliness of her person, they answered her in the negative, without any mixture of scoff and impertinence.

'How unfavourable is chance,' said Arabella, fretting at the disappointment, 'to persons who have any reliance upon it! This lady that I have been in search of so long without success, may probably be found by others who do not seek her, whose preference she may wish to avoid, yet not be able.'

The young ladies finding it grew late, expressed their apprehensions at being without any attendants, and desired Arabella to give over her search for that day. Arabella, at this hint of danger, enquired very earnestly if

they apprehended any attempts to carry them away; and, without staying for an answer, urged them to walk home as fast as possible, apologizing for the danger into which she had so indiscreetly drawn both them and herself; yet added her hopes, that, if any attempt should be made upon their liberty, some generous cavalier would pass by who would rescue them: a thing so common, that they had no reason to despair of it.

Arabella, construing the silence with which her companions heard these assurances into a doubt of their being so favoured by fortune, proceeded to inform them of several instances wherein ladies met with unexpected relief and deliverance from ravers.

She mentioned particularly the rescue of Statira by her own brother, whom she imagined for many years dead; that of the princess Berenice by an absolute stranger; and many others, whose names, characters, and adventures, she occasionally ran over; all which the young ladies heard with inconceivable astonishment: and the detail had such an effect upon Arabella's imagination, bewildered as it was in the follies of romances, that, espying three or four horsemen riding along the road towards them, she immediately concluded they would be all seized and carried off.

Possessed with this belief, she uttered a loud cry, and flew to the water-side; which alarming the ladies, who could not imagine what was the matter, they ran after her as fast as possible.

Arabella stopped when she came to the water-side, and looking round about, and not perceiving any boat to waft them over to Richmond, a thought suddenly darted into her mind, worthy those ingenious books which gave it birth.

Turning therefore to the ladies, who all at once were enquiring the cause of her fright—

'It is now, my fair companions,' said she, with a solemn accent, 'that the Destinies have furnished you with an opportunity of displaying, in a manner truly heroick, the sublimity of your virtue, and the grandeur of your courage, to the world.'

'The action we have it in our power to perform, will immortalize our fame,

and raise us to a pitch of glory equal to that of the renowned Clelia herself.

'Like her, we may expect statues erected to our honour; like her, be proposed as patterns to heroines in ensuing ages; and like her, perhaps, meet with sceptres and crowns for our reward.

'What that beauteous Roman lady performed to preserve herself from violation by the impious Sextus, let us imitate, to avoid the violence our intended ravishers yonder come to offer us.

'Fortune, which has thrown us into this exigence, presents us the means of gloriously escaping; and the admiration and esteem of all ages to come will be the recompence of our noble daring.

'Once more, my fair companions, if your honour be dear to you, if an immortal glory be worth your seeking, follow the example I shall set you, and equal, with me, the Roman Clelia.'

Saying this, she plunged into the Thames, intending to swim over it, as Clelia did the Tyber.

The young ladies, who had listened with silent astonishment at the long speech she had made them, the purport of which not one of them understood, screamed out aloud at this horrid spectacle, and wringing their hands, ran backwards and forwards, like distracted persons, crying for help. Lucy tore her hair, and was in the utmost agony of grief; when Mr. Roberts, who, as we have said before, kept them always in sight, having observed Arabella running towards the water-side, followed them as fast as he could, and came up time enough to see her frantick action. Jumping into the river immediately after her, he caught hold of her gown, and drew her after him to the shore. A boat that instant appearing, he put her into it, senseless, and to all appearance dead. He and Lucy supporting her, they were waisted over in a few moments to the other side: her house being near the river, Mr. Roberts carried her in his arms to it; and as soon as he saw her shew signs of returning life, left her to the care of the women, who made haste to put her into a warm bed, and ran to find out Mr. Glanville, as we have related.

There remains now only to account for Sir George and Miss Glanville's sudden appearance, which happened, gentle reader, exactly as follows.

Miss Glanville having set out pretty late in the afternoon, with a design of staying all night at Richmond, as her chaise drove up Kew Lane, saw one of her cousin's women, Deborah by name, talking to a gentleman, whom, notwithstanding the disguise of a horseman's coat, and a hat slouched over his face, she knew to be Sir George Bellmour.

This sight alarming her jealousy, and renewing all her former suspicions that her cousin's charms rivalled her's in his heart, as soon as she alighted, finding Arabella was not at home, she retired in great anguish of mind to her chamber, revolving in her mind every particular of Sir George's behaviour to her cousin in the country, and finding new cause for suspicion in every thing she recollected, and reflecting upon the disguise in which she saw him, and his conference with her woman, she concluded that herself had all along been the dupe of his artifice, and her cousin the real object of his love.

This thought throwing her into an extremity of rage, all her tenderest emotions were lost in the desire of revenge. She imagined to herself so much pleasure from exposing his treachery, and putting it out of his power to deny it, that she resolved, whatever it cost her, to have that satisfaction.

Supposing, therefore, Deborah was now returned, she rung her bell, and commanded her attendance on her in her chamber.

The stern brow with which she received her, frightened the girl, conscious of her guilt, into a disposition to confess all, even before she was taxed with any thing.

Miss Glanville saw her terror, and endeavoured to heighten it, by entering at once into complaints and exclamations against her, threatening to acquaint her father with her plots to betray her lady, and assuring her of a very severe punishment for her treachery.

The girl, terrified extremely at these menaces, begged Miss Glanville, with tears, to forgive her, and not to acquaint Sir Charles or her lady with her fault; adding, that she would confess all,

all, and never while she lived do such a thing again.

Miss Glanville would make her no promises, but urged her to confess: upon which Deborah, sobbing, owned, that for the sake of the present Sir George had made her, she consented to meet him privately, from time to time, and give him an account of every thing that passed with regard to her lady, not thinking there was any harm in it. That according to his desires, she had constantly acquainted him with all her lady's motions, when and where she went, how she and Mr. Glanville agreed, and a hundred other things which he enquired about. That that day in particular, he had intreated her to procure him the means of an interview with her lady, if possible; and understanding Mr. Glanville was not at Richmond, she had let him privately into the garden, where she hoped to prevail upon her lady to go.

'What!' said Miss Glanville, surprised, 'is Sir George waiting for my 'cousin in the garden, then?'

'Yes, indeed, Madam,' said Deborah; 'but I'll go and tell him to wait 'no longer; and never speak to him 'again, if your ladyship will but be 'pleased to forgive me.'

Miss Glanville having taken her resolution, not only promised Deborah her pardon, but also a reward, provided she would contrive it so, that she might meet Sir George instead of her cousin.

The girl, having the true chambermaid spirit of intrigue in her, immediately proposed her putting on one of her lady's veils; which, as it was now the close of the evening, would disguise her sufficiently: to which Miss Glanville, transported with the thoughts of thus having an opportunity of convincing Sir George of his perfidy, and reproaching him for it, consented, and bid her bring it without being observed into her chamber.

Deborah informing her that Sir George was concealed in the summer-house, as soon as she had equipped herself with Arabella's veil, she went into the walk that led to it; and Sir George, believing her to be that lady, hastened to throw himself at her feet, and had scarce got through half a speech he had studied for his present purpose, when Mr. Glanville gave a fatal interruption

to his heroicks, in the manner we have already related.

CHAP. X.

A SHORT CHAPTER INDEED, BUT FULL OF MATTER.

RICHMOND was now a scene of the utmost confusion and distress. Arabella's fever was risen to such a height, that she was given over by the physicians; and Sir George's wounds, though not judged mortal at first, yet, by the great effusion of blood, had left him in so weak a condition, that he was thought to be in great danger.

Sir Charles, almost distracted with the fears of the consequences of Sir George's death, intreated his son to quit the kingdom; but Mr. Glanville, protesting he would rather die than leave Arabella in that illness, he was obliged to give bail for his appearance, in case Sir George died; this affair, notwithstanding all endeavours to prevent it, having made a great noise.

Poor Sir Charles, oppressed as he was with the weight of all these calamities, was yet obliged to labour incessantly to keep up the spirits of his son and daughter. The settled despair of the one, and the silent swelling grief of the other, cut him to the heart. He omitted no arguments his paternal affection suggested to him, to moderate their affliction. Mr. Glanville often endeavoured to assume a composure he was very far from feeling, in order to satisfy his father. But Miss Glanville, looking upon herself to be the cause of Sir George's misfortune, declared she should be miserable all her life, if he died.

Arabella, in her lucid intervals, being sensible of her danger, prepared for death with great piety and constancy of mind, having solemnly assured Mr. Glanville of her forgiveness, who would not at that time enter into an explanation of the affair which had given her offence, for fear of perplexing her. She permitted his presence often in her chamber, and desired, with great earnestness, the assistance of some worthy divine in her preparations for death. The pious and learned Doc-

tor —, at Sir Charles's intimation of his niece's desire, came constantly twice a day to attend her. Her fever, by a favourable crisis, and the great skill of her physicians, left her in a fortnight; but this violent distemper had made such a ravage in her delicate constitution, and reduced her so low, that there seemed very little probability of her recovery. Doctor —, in whom her unfeigned piety, her uncommon firmness of mind, had created a great esteem and tenderness for her, took all opportunities of comforting, exhorting, and praying by her. The occasion of her illness being the subject of every body's conversation at Richmond, he gently hinted it to her, and urged her to explain her reasons for so extravagant an action.

In the divine frame Arabella was then in, this action appeared to her rash and vain-glorious, and she acknowledged it to be so to her pious monitor; yet she related the motives which induced her to it, the danger she was in of being carried away, the parity of her circumstances then with Clelia, and her emulous desire of doing as much to preserve her honour as that renowned Roman lady did for hers.

The good doctor was extremely surprized at this discourse: he was beginning to think her again delirious; but Arabella added to this account such sensible reasoning on the nature of that fondness for fame which prompted her to so rash an undertaking, that the doctor left her in strange embarrassment, not knowing how to account for a mind at once so enlightened, and so ridiculous.

Mr. Glanville meeting him as he came out of her chamber, the doctor took this opportunity to acknowledge the difficulties Arabella's inconsistent discourse had thrown him into. Mr. Glanville taking him into his own apartment, explained the nature of that seeming inconsistency, and expatiated at large upon the disorders romances had occasioned in her imagination; several instances of which he recounted, and filled the doctor with the greatest astonishment and concern. He lamented pathetically the ruin such a ridiculous study had brought on so noble a mind; and assured Mr. Glanville he would

spare no endeavours to rescue it from so shocking a delusion.

Mr. Glanville thanked him for his good design with a transport which his fears of his cousin's danger almost mingled with tears; and the doctor and he agreed to expect for some few days longer an alteration for the better in the health of her body, before he attempted the cure of her mind. Mr. Glanville's extreme anxiety had made him in appearance neglect the repentant Sir George, contenting himself with constantly sending twice a day to enquire after his health, but had not yet visited him.

No sooner had the physicians declared that Arabella was no longer in danger, than his mind being freed from that tormenting load of suspense under which it had laboured while her recovery was yet doubtful, he went to Sir George's chamber, who, by reason of his weakness, though he was also upon the recovery, still kept his bed.

Sir George, though he ardently wished to see him, yet, conscious of the injuries he had both done and designed him, could not receive his visit without extreme confusion: but entering into the cause of their quarrel, as soon as he was able to speak, he freely acknowledged his fault, and all the steps he had taken to supplant him in Arabella's affection.

Mr. Glanville understanding by this means that he had bribed a young actress to personate a princess, forsaken by him, and had taught her all that heap of absurdity with which she had imposed upon Arabella, as has been related, desired, only by way of reparation, that when his cousin was in a condition to be spoken to upon that subject, he would condescend to own the fraud to her; which Sir George faithfully promising, an act of oblivion passed on Mr. Glanville's side for all former injuries, and a solemn assurance from Sir George of inviolable friendship for the future. An assurance, however, which Mr. Glanville would willingly have dispensed with: for though not of a vindictive temper, it was one of his maxims, that a man who had once betrayed him, it would be an error in policy ever to trust again.

CHAP. XI.

BEING IN THE AUTHOR'S OPINION,
THE BEST CHAPTER IN THIS
HISTORY.

THE good divine, who had the cure of Arabella's mind greatly at heart, no sooner perceived that the health of her body was almost restored, and that he might talk to her without the fear of any inconvenience, than he introduced the subject of her throwing herself into the river, which he had before lightly touched upon, and still declared himself dissatisfied with.

Arabella, now more disposed to defend this point than when languishing under the pressure of pain and dejection of mind, endeavoured by arguments founded upon romantick heroism, to prove, that it was not only reasonable and just, but also great and glorious, and exactly conformable to the rules of heroick virtue.

The doctor listened to her with a mixed emotion, between pity, reverence, and amazement: and though in the performance of his office he had been accustomed to accommodate his notions to every understanding, and had therefore accumulated a great variety of topics and illustrations; yet he found himself now engaged in a controversy for which he was not so well prepared, as he imagined, and was at a loss for some leading principle, by which he might introduce his reasonings, and begin his confutation.

Though he saw much to praise in her discourse, he was afraid of confirming her obstinacy by commendation: and though he also found much to blame, he dreaded to give pain to a delicacy he revered.

Perceiving, however, that Arabella was silent, as if expecting his reply, he resolved not to bring upon himself the guilt of abandoning her to her mistake, and the necessity of speaking forced him to find something to say.

'Though it is not easy, Madam,' said he, 'for any one that has the honour of conversing with your ladyship, to preserve his attention free to any other idea, than such as your discourse tends immediately to impress, yet I have not been able, while you was speaking, to refrain from some very mortifying reflections on the im-

perfection of all human happiness, and the uncertain consequences of all those advantages which we think ourselves not only at liberty to desire, but obliged to cultivate.'

'Though I have known some dangers and distresses,' replied Arabella, gravely, 'yet I did not imagine myself such a mirror of calamity as could not be seen without concern. If my life has not been eminently fortunate, it has yet escaped the great evils of persecution, captivity, shipwrecks, and dangers, to which many ladies far more illustrious both by birth and merit than myself have been exposed. And, indeed, though I have sometimes raised envy, or possibly incurred hatred, yet I have no reason to believe I was ever beheld with pity before.'

The doctor saw he had not introduced his discourse in the most acceptable manner; but it was too late to repent.

'Let me not, Madam,' said he, 'be censured before I have fully explained my sentiments.'

'That you have been envied I can readily believe; for who that gives way to natural passions, has not reason to envy the Lady Arabella? But that you have been hated, I am indeed less willing to think, though I know how easily the greater part of mankind hate those by whom they are excelled.'

'If the misery of my condition,' replied Arabella, 'has been able to excite that melancholy your first words seemed to imply, flattery will contribute very little towards the improvement of it. Nor do I expect from the severity of the sacerdotal character, any of those praises, which I hear, perhaps with too much pleasure, from the rest of the world.'

'Having been so lately on the brink of that state, in which all distinctions but that of goodness are destroyed, I have not recovered so much levity, but that I would yet rather hear instructions than compliments.'

'If, therefore, you have observed in me any dangerous tenets, corrupt passions, or criminal desires, I conjure you to discover me to myself. Let no false civility restrain your admonitions. Let me know this evil which can strike a good man with horror,

'horror, and which I dread the more, as I do not feel it.

'I cannot suppose that a man of your order would be alarmed at any other misery than guilt: nor will I think so meanly of him whose direction I have intreated, as to imagine he can think virtue unhappy, however overwhelmed by disasters or oppression.

'Keep me therefore no longer in suspense: I expect you will exert the authority of your function, and I promise you, on my part, sincerity and submission.'

The good man was now completely embarrassed; he saw his meaning mistaken, but was afraid to explain it, lest he should seem to pay court by a cowardly retraction: he therefore paused a little, and Arabella supposed he was studying for such expressions as might convey censure without offence.

'Sir,' said she, 'if you are not yet satisfied of my willingness to hear your reproofs, let me evince my docility, by intreating you to consider yourself as dispensed from all ceremony upon this occasion.'

'Your imaginations, Madam,' replied the doctor, 'are too quick for language; you conjecture too soon, what you do not wait to hear; and reason upon suppositions which cannot be allowed you.'

'When I mentioned my reflections upon human misery, I was far from concluding your ladyship miserable, compared with the rest of mankind; and though contemplating the abstracted idea of possible felicity, I thought that even you might be produced as an instance that it is not attainable in this world, I did not impute the imperfection of your state to wickedness, but intended to observe, that though even virtue be added to external advantages, there will yet be something wanting to happiness.'

'Whoever sees you, Madam, will immediately say, that nothing can hinder you from being the happiest of mortals, but want of power to understand your own advantages. And whoever is admitted to your conversation, will be convinced that you enjoy all that intellectual excellence can confer; yet I see you harassed with innumerable terrors and perplexities, which never disturb the peace of poverty or ignorance.'

'I cannot discover,' said Arabella, 'how poverty or ignorance can be privileged from casualty or violence, from the ravisher, the robber, or the enemy. I should hope rather, that if wealth and knowledge can give nothing else, they at least confer judgment to foresee danger, and power to oppose it.'

'They are not, indeed,' returned the doctor, 'secured against real misfortunes, but they are happily defended from wild imaginations: they do not suspect what cannot happen, nor figure ravishers at a distance, and leap into rivers to escape them.'

'Do you suppose, then,' said Arabella, 'that I was frightened without cause.'

'It is certain, Madam,' replied he, 'that no injury was intended you.'

'Disingenuity, Sir,' said Arabella, 'does not become a clergyman—I think too well of your understanding to imagine your fallacy deceives yourself: why, then, should you hope that it will deceive me?

'The laws of conference require that the terms of the question and answer be the same.

'I ask, if I had not cause to be frightened? Why then am I answered that no injury was intended?

'Human beings cannot penetrate intentions, nor regulate their conduct but by exterior appearances. And surely there was sufficient appearance of intended injury, and that the greatest which my sex can suffer.'

'Why, Madam,' said the doctor, 'should you still persist in so wild an assertion?'

'A coarse epithet,' said Arabella, 'is no confutation. It rests upon you to shew, that in giving way to my fears, even supposing them groundless, I departed from the character of a reasonable person.'

'I am afraid,' replied the doctor, 'of a dispute with your ladyship; not because I think myself in danger of defeat, but because, being accustomed to speak to scholars with scholiastick ruggedness, I may perhaps depart, in the heat of argument, from that respect to which you have so great a right, and give offence to a person I am really afraid to displease.'

'But, if you will promise to excuse my ardour, I will endeavour to prove that

‘that you have been frightened without reason.’

‘I should be content,’ replied Arabella, ‘to obtain truth upon harder terms, and therefore intreat you to begin.’

‘The apprehension of any future evil, Madam,’ said the divine, ‘which is called terror, when the danger is from natural causes, and suspicion, when it proceeds from a moral agent, must always arise from comparison.’

‘We can judge of the future only by the past, and have therefore only reason to fear or suspect, when we see the same causes in motion which have formerly produced mischief, or the same measures taken as have before been preparatory to a crime.’

‘Thus, when the sailor in certain latitudes sees the clouds rise, experience bids him expect a storm. When any monarch levies armies, his neighbours prepare to repel an invasion.’

‘This power of prognostication may, by reading and conversation, be extended beyond our own knowledge: and the great use of books is, that of participating, without labour or hazard, the experience of others.’

‘But upon this principle how can you find any reason for your late fright?’

‘Has it ever been known, that a lady of your rank was attacked with such intentions in a place so publick, without any preparations made by the violator for defence or escape?’

‘Can it be imagined that any man would so rashly expose himself to infamy by failure, and to the gibbet by success?’

‘Does there in the records of the world appear a single instance of such hopeless villainy?’

‘It is now time, Sir,’ said Arabella, ‘to answer your questions, before they are too many to be remembered.’

‘The dignity of my birth can very little defend me against an insult to which the heiresses of great and powerful empires, the daughters of valiant princes, and the wives of renowned monarchs, have been a thousand times exposed.’

‘The danger which you think so great, would hardly repel a determined mind; for, in effect, who would

have attempted my rescue, seeing that no knight or valiant cavalier was within view?’

‘What then should have hindered him from placing me in a chariot, driving it into the pathless desert, and immuring me in a castle among woods and mountains? or hiding me perhaps in the caverns of a rock? or confining me in some island of an immense lake?’

‘From all this, Madam,’ interrupted the clergyman, ‘he is hindered by impossibility.’

‘He cannot carry you to any of these dreadful places, because there is no such castle, desert, cavern, or lake.’

‘You will pardon me, Sir,’ said Arabella, ‘if I recur to your own principles.’

‘You allow that experience may be gained by books; and certainly there is no part of knowledge in which we are obliged to trust them more than in descriptive geography.’

‘The most restless activity in the longest life, can survey but a small part of the habitable globe: and the rest can only be known from the report of others.’

‘Universal negatives are seldom safe, and are least to be allowed when the disputes are about objects of sense; where one position cannot be inferred from another.’

‘That there is a castle, any man who has seen it may safely affirm. But you cannot, with equal reason, maintain that there is no castle, because you have not seen it.’

‘Why should I imagine that the face of the earth is altered since the time of those heroines, who experienced so many changes of uncouth captivity?’

‘Castles, indeed, are the works of art; and are therefore subject to decay. But lakes, and caverns, and deserts, must always remain.’

‘And why, since you call for instances, should I not dread the misfortunes which happened to the divine Clelia, who was carried to one of the isles of the Thrasymenian lake?’

‘Or those which befel the beautiful Candace, Queen of Ethiopia, whom the pirate Zenedorus wandered with on the seas?’

‘Or the accidents which imbibtered

'the life of the incomparable Cleopatra?

'Or the persecutions which made that of the fair Eliza miserable?

'Or, in fine, the various distresses of many other fair and virtuous princesses; such as those which happened to Olympia, Bellamira, Parisatis, Berenice, Amalazantha, Agione, Albyfinda, Placidia, Arlinoe, Desdamia, and a thousand others I could mention.'

'To the names of many of these illustrious sufferers I am an absolute stranger,' replied the doctor.

'The rest I faintly remember some mention of in those contemptible volumes, with which children are sometimes injudiciously suffered to amuse their imaginations; but which I little expected to hear quoted by your ladyship in a serious discourse.'

'And though I am very far from catching occasions of resentment, yet I think myself at liberty to observe, that if I merited your censure for one indelicate epithet, we have engaged on very unequal terms, if I may not likewise complain of such contemptuous ridicule as you are pleased to exercise upon my opinions, by opposing them with the authority of scribblers, not only of fictions, but of senseless fictions; which at once vitiate the mind; and pervert the understanding; and which, if they are at any time read with safety, owe their innocency only to their absurdity.'

'From these books, Sir,' said Arabella, 'which you condemn with so much ardour, though you acknowledge yourself little acquainted with them, I have learnt not to recede from the conditions I have granted, and shall not therefore censure the license of your language, which glances from the books upon the readers.'

'These books, Sir, thus corrupt, thus absurd, thus dangerous alike to the intellect and morals, I have read; and that, I hope, without injury to my judgment, or my virtue.'

The doctor, whose vehemence had hindered him from discovering all the consequences of his position, now found himself entangled, and replied in a submissive tone—

'I confess, Madam, my words

'imply an accusation very remote from my intention.

'It has always been the rule of my life, not to justify any words or actions because they are mine.

'I am ashamed of my negligence; I am sorry for my warmth; and I treat your ladyship to pardon a fault which I hope never to repeat.'

'The reparation, Sir,' said Arabella, smiling, 'over-balances the offence, and by thus daring to own you have been in the wrong, you have raised in me a much higher esteem for you.'

'Yet I will not pardon you,' added she, 'without enjoining you a penance for the fault you own you have committed; and this penance shall be to prove—'

'First, That these histories you condemn, are fictions.

'Next, That they are absurd.

'And lastly, That they are criminal.'

The doctor was pleased to find a reconciliation offered upon so very easy terms, with a person whom he beheld at once with reverence and affection, and could not offend without extreme regret.

He therefore answered with a very cheerful composure—

'To prove those narratives to be fictions, Madam, is only difficult, because the position is almost too evident for proof.'

'Your ladyship knows, I suppose, to what authors these writings are ascribed?'

'To the French wits of the last century,' said Arabella.

'And at what distance, Madam, are the facts related in them from the age of the writer?'

'I was never exact in my computation,' replied Arabella; 'but I think most of the events happened about two thousand years ago.'

'How then, Madam,' resumed the doctor, 'could these events be so minutely known to writers so far remote from the time in which they happened?'

'By records, monuments, memoirs, and histories,' answered the lady.

'But by what accident, then,' said the doctor, smiling, 'did it happen these records and monuments were kept

kept universally secret to mankind till the last century?

‘What brought all the memoirs of the remotest nations and earliest ages only to France?’

‘Where were they hidden that none could consult them but a few obscure authors?’

‘And whither are they now vanished again, that they can be found no more?’

Arabella, having sat silent a while, told him, that she found his questions very difficult to be answered; and that, though perhaps the authors themselves could have told whence they borrowed their materials, she should not at present require any other evidence of the first assertion—

But allowed him to suppose them fictions, and required now that he should shew them to be absurd.

‘Your ladyship,’ returned he, ‘has, I find, too much understanding to struggle against demonstration, and too much veracity to deny your convictions; therefore some of the arguments by which I intended to shew the falshood of these narratives, may be now used to prove their absurdity.’

‘You grant them, Madam, to be fictions?’

‘Sir,’ interrupted Arabella, eagerly, ‘you are again infringing the laws of disputation.’

‘You are not to confound a supposition of which I allow you only the present use, with an unlimited and irrevocable concession.’

‘I am too well acquainted with my own weakness to conclude an opinion false, merely because I find myself unable to defend it.’

‘But I am in haste to hear the proof of the other positions, not only because they may perhaps supply what is deficient in your evidence of the first, but because I think it of more importance to detect corruption than fiction.’

‘Though, indeed, falshood is a species of corruption, and what falshood is more hateful than the falshood of history.’

‘Since you have drawn me back, Madam, to the first question,’ returned the doctor, ‘let me know what arguments your ladyship can produce for the veracity of these books.’

‘That there are many objections

against it, you yourself have allowed, and the highest moral evidence of falshood appears when there are many arguments against an assertion, and none for it.’

‘Sir,’ replied Arabella, ‘I shall never think that any narrative, which is not confuted by its own absurdity, is without one argument at least on its side; there is a love of truth in the human mind, if not naturally implanted, so easily obtained from reason and experience, that I should expect it universally to prevail where there is no strong temptation to deceit; we hate to be deceived; we therefore hate those that deceive us; we desire not to be hated, and therefore know that we are not to deceive. Shew me an equal motive to falshood, or confess that every relation has some right to credit.’

‘This may be allowed, Madam,’ said the doctor, ‘when we claim to be credited; but that seems not to be the hope or intention of these writers.’

‘Surely, Sir,’ replied Arabella, ‘you must mistake their design; he that writes without intention to be credited, must write to little purpose; for what pleasure or advantage can arise from facts that never happened? What examples can be afforded by the patience of those who never suffered, or the chastity of those who were never solicited? The great end of history is to shew how much human nature can endure or perform. When we hear a story in common life that raises our wonder or compassion, the first confutation stills our emotions, and however we were touched before, we then chase it from the memory with contempt as a trifle, or with indignation as an imposture. Prove, therefore, that the books which I have hitherto read as copies of life, and models of conduct, are empty fictions, and from this hour I deliver them to moths and mould; and from this time forward consider their authors as wretches who cheated me of those hours I ought to have dedicated to application and improvement, and betrayed me to a waste of those years in which I might have laid up knowledge for my future life.’

‘Shakespeare,’ said the doctor, ‘calls just resentment the child of integrity; and therefore I do not wonder, that

‘ what vehemence the gentleness of your ladyship’s temper allows, should be exerted upon this occasion. Yet though I cannot forgive these authors for having destroyed so much valuable time, yet I cannot think them intentionally culpable, because I cannot believe they expected to be credited. Truth is not always injured by fiction. An admirable writer * of our own time, has found the way to convey the most solid instructions, the noblest sentiments, and the most exalted piety, in the pleasing dress of a novel †, and, to use the words of the greatest genius ‡ in the present age, “Has taught the passions to move at the command of virtue.” The fables of Æsop, though never I suppose believed, yet have been long considered as lectures of moral and domestick wisdom, so well adapted to the faculties of man, that they have been received by all civilized nations; and the Arabs themselves have honoured his translator with the appellation of Locman the Wise.’

‘ The fables of Æsop,’ said Arabella, ‘ are among those of which the absurdity discovers itself, and the truth is comprized in the application; but what can be said of those tales which are told with the solemn air of historical truth, and, if false, convey no instruction?’

‘ That they cannot be defended, Madam,’ said the doctor, ‘ it is my purpose to prove; and if to evince their falshood be sufficient to procure their banishment from your ladyship’s closet, their day of grace is near an end. How is any oral, or written testimony, confuted or confirmed?’

‘ By comparing it,’ says the lady, ‘ with the testimony of others, or with the natural effects and standing evidence of the facts related, and sometimes by comparing it with itself.’

‘ If then your ladyship will abide by this last,’ returned he, ‘ and compare these books with ancient histories, you will not only find innumerable names, of which no mention was ever made before, but persons who lived in different ages, engaged

as the friends or rivals of each other. You will perceive that your authors have parcelled out the world at discretion, erected palaces, and established monarchies wherever the convenience of their narrative required them, and set kings and queens over imaginary nations. Nor have they considered themselves as invested with less authority over the works of nature, than the institutions of men; for they have distributed mountains and desarts, gulphs and rocks, wherever they wanted them; and whenever the course of their story required an expedient, raised a gloomy forest, or overslowed the regions with a rapid stream.’

‘ I suppose,’ said Arabella, ‘ you have no intention to deceive me; and since, if what you have asserted be true, the cause is undefensable, I shall trouble you no longer to argue on this topick, but desire now to hear why, supposing them fictions, and intended to be received as fictions, you censure them as absurd?’

‘ The only excellence of falshood,’ answered he, ‘ is it’s resemblance to truth; as therefore any narrative is more liable to be confuted by it’s inconsistency with known facts, it is at a greater distance from the perfection of fiction; for there can be no difficulty in framing a tale, if we are left at liberty to invert all history and nature for our own convenience. When a crime is to be concealed, it is easy to cover it with an imaginary wood. When Virtue is to be rewarded, a nation with a new name may, without any expence of invention, raise her to the throne. When Ariosto was told of the magnificence of his palaces, he answered, that the cost of poetical architecture was very little; and still less is the cost of building without art, than without materials. But their historical fail-ures may be easily passed over, when we consider their physical or philosophical absurdities; to bring men together from different countries does not shock with every inherent or demonstrable absurdity, and therefore when we read only for amusement,

* Richardson.

† Clarissa.

‡ The Author of the Rambler.

such improprieties may be borne: but who can forbear to throw away the story that gives to one man the strength of thousands; that puts life or death in a smile or a frown; that recounts labours and sufferings to which the powers of humanity are utterly unequal; that disfigures the whole appearance of the world, and represents every thing in a form different from that which experience has shewn? It is the fault of the best fictions, that they teach young minds to expect strange adventures and sudden vicissitudes, and therefore encourage them often to trust to chance. A long life may be passed without a single occurrence that can cause much surprize, or produce any unexpected consequence of great importance; the order of the world is so established, that all human affairs proceed in a regular method, and very little opportunity is left for fallies or hazards, for assault or rescue; but the brave and the coward, the sprightly and the dull, suffer themselves to be carried alike down the stream of custom.

Arabella, who had for some time listened with a wish to interrupt him, now took advantage of a short pause. 'I cannot imagine, Sir,' said she, 'that you intend to deceive me, and therefore I am inclined to believe that you are yourself mistaken, and that your application to learning has hindered you from that acquaintance with the world, in which these authors excelled. I have not long conversed in public, yet I have found that life is subject to many accidents. Do you count my late escape for nothing? Is it to be numbered among daily and cursory transactions, that a woman flies from a ravisher into a rapid stream?'

'You must not, Madam,' said the doctor, 'urge as an argument the fact which is at present the subject of dispute.'

Arabella, blushing at the absurdity she had been guilty of, and not attempting any subterfuge or excuse, the doctor found himself at liberty to proceed.

'You must not imagine, Madam,' continued he, 'that I intend to arrogate any superiority, when I observe that your ladyship must suffer me to

decide, in some measure authoritatively, whether life is truly described in those books; the likeness of a picture can only be determined by a knowledge of the original. You have yet had little opportunity of knowing the ways of mankind, which cannot be learned but from experience, and of which the highest understanding, and the lowest, must enter the world in equal ignorance. I have lived long in a public character, and have thought it my duty to study those whom I have undertaken to admonish or instruct. I have never been so rich as to affright men into disguise and concealment, nor so poor as to be kept at a distance too great for accurate observation. I therefore presume to tell your ladyship, with great confidence, that your writers have instituted a world of their own, and that nothing is more different from a human being, than heroes or heroines.'

'I am afraid, Sir,' said Arabella, 'that the difference is not in favour of the present world.'

'That, Madam,' answered he, 'your own penetration will enable you to judge when it shall have made you equally acquainted with both: I have no desire to determine a question, the solution of which will give so little pleasure to purity and benevolence.'

'The silence of a man who loves to praise is a censure sufficiently severe,' said the lady. 'May it never happen that you should be unwilling to mention the name of Arabella! I hope wherever corruption prevails in the world, to live in it with virtue; or, if I find myself too much endangered, to retire from it with innocence. But if you can say so little in commendation of mankind, how will you prove these histories to be vicious, which, if they do not describe real life, gives us an idea of a better race of beings than now inhabit the world.'

'It is of little importance, Madam,' replied the doctor, 'to decide whether in the real or fictitious life most wickedness is to be found. Books ought to supply an antidote to example; and if we retire to a contemplation of crimes, and continue in our closets to inflame our passions, at what time must we rectify our words,

words, or purify our hearts? The immediate tendency of these books, which your ladyship must allow me to mention with some severity, is to give new fire to the passions of revenge and love; two passions which, even without such powerful auxiliaries, it is one of the severest labours of reason and piety to suppress, and which yet must be suppressed if we hope to be approved in the sight of the only Being whose approbation can make us happy. I am afraid your ladyship will think me too serious.'—'I have already learned too much from you,' said Arabella, 'to presume to instruct you; yet suffer me to caution you never to dishonour your sacred office by the lowliness of apologies.'—'Then let me again observe,' resumed he, 'that these books soften the heart to love, and harden it to murder. That they teach women to exact vengeance, and men to execute it; teach women to expect not only worship, but the dreadful worship of human sacrifices. Every page of these volumes is filled with such extravagance of praise, and expressions of obedience, as one human being ought not to hear from another; or with accounts of battles, in which thousands are slaughtered for no other purpose than to gain a smile from the haughty beauty, who sits a calm spectatress of the ruin and desolation, bloodshed and misery, incited by herself.

'It is impossible to read these tales without lessening part of that humility, which, by preserving in us a sense of our alliance with all human nature, keeps us awake to tenderness and sympathy, or without impairing that compassion which is implanted in us as an incentive to acts of kindness. If there be any preserved by natural softness, or early education, from learning pride and cruelty, they are yet in danger of being betrayed to the vanity of beauty, and taught the arts of intrigue.

'Love, Madam, is, you know, the business, the sole business of ladies in romances.' Arabella's blushes now hindered him from proceeding as he had intended. 'I perceive,' continued he, 'that my arguments begin to be less agreeable to your lady-

ship's delicacy; I shall therefore insist no longer upon false tenderness of sentiment, but proceed to those outrages of the violent passions, which, though not more dangerous, are more generally hateful.'

'It is not necessary, Sir,' interrupted Arabella, 'that you strengthen by any new proof a position which, when calmly considered, cannot be denied; my heart yields to the force of truth, and I now wonder how the blaze of enthusiastick bravery could hinder me from remarking, with abhorrence, the crime of deliberate unnecessary bloodshed.

'I begin to perceive that I have hitherto at least trifled away my time, and fear that I have already made some approaches to the crime of encouraging violence and revenge.'—'I hope, Madam,' said the good man, with horror in his looks, 'that no life was ever lost by your incitement!' Arabella, seeing him thus moved, burst into tears, and could not immediately answer. 'Is it possible,' cried the doctor, 'that such gentleness and elegance should be stained with blood?'—'Be not too hasty in your censure,' said Arabella, recovering herself; 'I tremble, indeed, to think how nearly I have approached the brink of murder, when I thought myself only consulting my own glory; but, whatever I suffer, I will never more demand or instigate vengeance, nor consider my punctilios as important enough to be balanced against life.'

The doctor confirmed her in her new resolutions, and thinking solitude was necessary to compose her spirits, after the fatigue of so long a conversation, he retired, to acquaint Mr. Glanville with his success; who, in the transpost of his joy, was almost ready to throw himself at his feet, to thank him for the miracle, as he called it, that he had performed.

CHAP. XII.

IN WHICH THE HISTORY IS CONCLUDED.

MR. Glanville, who fancied to himself the most ravishing delight from conversing with his lovely cousin, now recovered to the free use

of all her noble powers of reason, would have paid her a visit that afternoon, had not a moment's reflection convinced him that now was the time, when her mind was labouring under the force of conviction, to introduce the repentant Sir George to her; who, by confessing the ridiculous farce he had invented to deceive her, might restore him to her good opinion, and add to the doctor's solid arguments, the poignant sting of ridicule which she would then perceive she had incurred.

Sir George being now able to leave his chamber, and Arabella well enough recovered to admit a visit in hers, Mr. Glanville intreated his father to wait on her, and get permission for Sir George to attend her upon a business of some consequence. Sir Charles no sooner mentioned this request, than Arabella, after a little hesitation, complied with it. As she had been kept a stranger to all the particulars of Mr. Glanville's quarrels with the young baronet, her thoughts were a little perplexed concerning the occasion of this visit, and her embarrassment was considerably increased by the confusion which she perceived in the countenance of Sir George. It was not without some tokens of a painfully-suppressed reluctance, that Sir George consented to perform his promise, when Mr. Glanville claimed it; but the disadvantages that would attend his breach of it, dejected and humbled as he now was, presenting themselves in a forcible manner to his imagination, confirmed his wavering resolutions. And since he found himself obliged to be his own accuser, he endeavoured to do it with the best grace he could. Acknowledging, therefore, to Lady Bella all the artifices her deception by romances had given him encouragement to use upon her, and explaining, very explicitly, the last with relation to the pretended princess of Gaul, he submissively asked her pardon for the offence it would now give her, as well as for the trouble it had formerly,

Arabella, struck with inconceivable confusion, having only bowed her head to his apology, desired to be left

alone, and continued, for near two hours afterwards, wholly absorbed in the most disagreeable reflections on the absurdity of her past behaviour, and the contempt and ridicule to which she now saw plainly she had exposed herself. The violence of these first emotions having at length subsided, she sent for Sir Charles, and Mr. Glanville; and having, with a noble ingenuity, expatiated upon the follies her vitiated judgment had led her into, she apologized to the first, for the frequent causes she had given him of uneasiness; and, turning to Mr. Glanville, whom she beheld with a look of mingled tenderness and modesty, 'To give you ' myself,' said she, 'with all my remaining imperfections, is making ' you but a poor present in return for ' the obligations your generous affection has laid me under to you; yet, ' since I am so happy as to be desired ' for a partner for life by a man of ' your sense and honour, I will endeavour to make myself as worthy ' as I am able of such a favourable ' distinction.'

Mr. Glanville kissed the hand she gave him with an emphatick silence; while Sir Charles, in the most obliging manner imaginable, thanked her for the honour she conferred both on himself and son by this alliance.

Sir George, entangled in his own artifices, saw himself under a necessity of confirming the promises he had made to Miss Glanville, during his fit of penitence; and was accordingly married to that young lady, at the same time that Mr. Glanville and Arabella were united.

We chuse, reader, to express this circumstance, though the same, in different words, as well to avoid repetition, as to intimate that the first-mentioned pair were indeed only married in the common acceptation of the word; that is, they were privileged to join fortunes, equipages, titles, and expence; while Mr. Glanville and Arabella were united, as well in these, as in every virtue, and laudable affection of the mind.

the first of these is the fact that the disease is not confined to the lungs, but may involve the whole of the respiratory system. The second is that the disease is not confined to the lungs, but may involve the whole of the respiratory system. The third is that the disease is not confined to the lungs, but may involve the whole of the respiratory system.

The fourth is that the disease is not confined to the lungs, but may involve the whole of the respiratory system. The fifth is that the disease is not confined to the lungs, but may involve the whole of the respiratory system. The sixth is that the disease is not confined to the lungs, but may involve the whole of the respiratory system.

The seventh is that the disease is not confined to the lungs, but may involve the whole of the respiratory system. The eighth is that the disease is not confined to the lungs, but may involve the whole of the respiratory system. The ninth is that the disease is not confined to the lungs, but may involve the whole of the respiratory system.

The tenth is that the disease is not confined to the lungs, but may involve the whole of the respiratory system. The eleventh is that the disease is not confined to the lungs, but may involve the whole of the respiratory system. The twelfth is that the disease is not confined to the lungs, but may involve the whole of the respiratory system.

The thirteenth is that the disease is not confined to the lungs, but may involve the whole of the respiratory system. The fourteenth is that the disease is not confined to the lungs, but may involve the whole of the respiratory system. The fifteenth is that the disease is not confined to the lungs, but may involve the whole of the respiratory system.

The sixteenth is that the disease is not confined to the lungs, but may involve the whole of the respiratory system. The seventeenth is that the disease is not confined to the lungs, but may involve the whole of the respiratory system. The eighteenth is that the disease is not confined to the lungs, but may involve the whole of the respiratory system.

The nineteenth is that the disease is not confined to the lungs, but may involve the whole of the respiratory system. The twentieth is that the disease is not confined to the lungs, but may involve the whole of the respiratory system. The twenty-first is that the disease is not confined to the lungs, but may involve the whole of the respiratory system.

The twenty-second is that the disease is not confined to the lungs, but may involve the whole of the respiratory system. The twenty-third is that the disease is not confined to the lungs, but may involve the whole of the respiratory system. The twenty-fourth is that the disease is not confined to the lungs, but may involve the whole of the respiratory system.

A
J O U R N E Y
FROM
THIS WORLD
TO
THE NEXT.

BY HENRY FIELDING, ESQ.



L O N D O N :

Printed for HARRISON and Co. No. 12, Paternoster-Row.
MDCCLXXXIII.

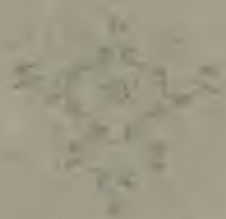
FOR THE

1885

THE WORLD

THE BEST

AND MOST



THE

THE NEW YORK PUBLIC LIBRARY, ASTOR LENOX AND TILDEN FOUNDATIONS

INTRODUCTION.

WHETHER the ensuing pages were really the dream or vision of some very pious and holy person; or whether they were really written in the other world and sent back to this, which is the opinion of many, (though I think too much inclining to superstition;) or, lastly, whether, as infinitely the greatest part imagine, they were really the production of some choice inhabitant of New Bethlehem, is not necessary nor easy to determine. It will be abundantly sufficient, if I give the reader an account by what means they came into my possession.

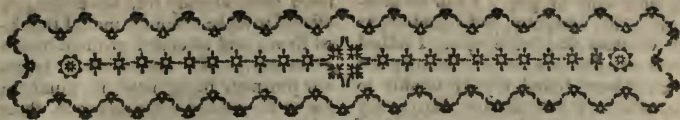
Mr. Robert Powney, stationer, who dwells opposite to Catharine Street in the Strand, a very honest man, and of great gravity of countenance; who, among other excellent stationary commodities, is particularly eminent for his pens, which I am abundantly bound to acknowledge, as I owe to their peculiar goodness that my manuscripts have by any means been legible: this gentleman, I say, furnished me some time since with a bundle of those pens, wrapt up, with great care and caution, in a very large sheet of paper full of characters, written as it seemed in a very bad hand. Now, I have a surprizing curiosity to read every thing which is almost illegible; partly, perhaps, from the sweet remembrance of the dear *scrawls*, *skrawls*, or *skrales*, (for the word is variously spelt) which I have in my youth received from that lovely part of the creation for which I have the tenderest regard; and partly from that temper of mind which makes men set an immense value on old manuscripts so effaced, bustos so maimed, and pictures so black, that no one can tell what to make of them. I therefore perused this sheet with wonderful application, and in about a day's time discovered that I could not understand it. I immediately repaired to Mr. Powney, and inquired very eagerly, whether he had not more of the same manuscript. He produced about one hundred pages, acquainting me that he had saved no more: but that the book, which was originally a huge folio, had been left in his garret by a gentleman who lodged there, and who had left him no other satisfaction for nine months lodging. He proceeded to inform me, that the manuscript had been hawked about (as he phrased it) among all the booksellers, who refused to meddle; some alledged that they could not read, others that they could not understand it. Some would have it to be an atheistical book, and some that it was a libel on the government; for one or other of which reasons, they all refused to print it. That it had been likewise shewn to the R—— Society, but they shook their heads, saying, there was nothing in it wonderful enough for them. That hearing the gentleman was gone to the West Indies, and believing it to be good for nothing else, he had used it as waste paper. He said, I was welcome to what remained, and he was heartily sorry for what was missing, as I seemed to set some value on it.

I desired him much to name a price: but he would receive no consideration farther than the payment of a small bill I owed him, which at that time he said he looked on as so much money given him.

I presently communicated this manuscript to my friend Parson Abraham Adams; who, after a long and careful perusal, returned it me, with his opinion, that there was more in it than at first appeared; that the author seemed not entirely unacquainted with the writings of Plato; but he wished he had quoted him sometimes in his margin, 'That I might be sure,' said he 'he had read him in the original: 'for nothing,' continued the parson, 'is commoner, than for men, 'now-a-days, to pretend to have read Greek authors, who have met 'with them only in translations, and cannot conjugate a verb in 'mi.'

To deliver my own sentiments on the occasion, I think the author discovers a philosophical turn of thinking, with some little knowledge of the world, and no very inadequate value of it. There are some, indeed, who, from the vivacity of their temper and the happiness of their station, are willing to consider it's blessings as more substantial, and the whole to be a scene of more consequence than it is here represented: but without controverting their opinions at present, the number of wise and good men, who have thought with our author, are sufficient to keep him in countenance; nor can this be attended with any ill inference, since he every where teaches this moral, That the greatest and truest happiness which this world affords, is to be found only in the possession of goodness and virtue; a doctrine which, as it is undoubtedly true, so hath it so noble and practical a tendency, that it can never be too often or too strongly inculcated on the minds of men.

A JOURNEY



A
J O U R N E Y

FROM
THIS WORLD TO THE NEXT.

BOOK I.

CHAP. I.

THE AUTHOR DIES, MEETS WITH
MERCURY, AND IS BY HIM CON-
DUCTED TO THE STAGE WHICH
SETS OUT FOR THE OTHER
WORLD.



IN the first of December
1741*, I departed this
life, at my lodgings in
Cheapside. My body had
been some time dead be-
fore I was at liberty to
quit it, lest it should by any accident
return to life; this is an injunction
imposed on all souls by the eternal law
of fate, to prevent the inconveniences
which would follow. As soon as the
destined period was expired, (being no
longer than till the body is become
perfectly cold and stiff) I began to
move; but found myself under a diffi-
culty of making my escape, for the
mouth, or door, was shut; so that it

was impossible for me to go out at it;
and the windows, vulgarly called the
eyes, were so closely pulled down by
the fingers of a nurse, that I could by
no means open them. At last, I per-
ceived a beam of light glimmering at
the top of the house, (for such I may
call the body I had been inclosed in)
whither ascending, I gently let myself
down through a kind of chimney, and
issued out at the nostrils.

No prisoner discharged from a long
confinement ever tasted the sweets of
liberty with a more exquisite relish,
than I enjoyed in this delivery from a
dungeon wherein I had been detained
upwards of forty years, and with much
the same kind of regard I cast my
eyes backwards upon it†.

My friends and relations had all
quitted the room, being all (as I
plainly overheard) very loudly quar-
relling below stairs about my will,
there was only an old woman left above,
to guard the body, as I apprehend.
She was in a fast sleep, occasioned, as

* Some doubt whether this should not be rather 1641, which is a date more agreeable to the account given of it in the Introduction; but then there are some passages which seem to relate to transactions infinitely later, even within this year or two.—To say the truth, there are difficulties attend either conjecture; so the reader may take which he pleases.

† Eyes are not perhaps so properly adapted to a spiritual substance; but we are here, as in many other places, obliged to use corporeal terms, to make ourselves the better understood.

from her favour it seemed, by a comfortable dose of gin. I had no pleasure in this company, and therefore, as the window was wide open, I sallied forth into the open air; but to my great astonishment found myself unable to fly, which I had always during my habitation in the body conceived of spirits; however, I came so lightly to the ground, that I did not hurt myself; and though I had not the gift of flying, (owing probably to my having neither feathers nor wings) I was capable of hopping such a prodigious way at once, that it served my turn almost as well.

I had not hopped far, before I perceived a tall young gentleman in a silk waistcoat, with a wing on his left-heel, a garland on his head, and a caduceus in his right-hand*. I thought I had seen this person before, but had not time to recollect where, when he called out to me, and asked me how long I had been departed. I answered, I was just come forth. 'You must not stay here,' replied he, 'unless you had been murdered; in which case, indeed, you might have been suffered to walk some time; but if you died a natural death, you must set out for the other world immediately.' I desired to know the way. 'O,' cried the gentleman, 'I will shew you to the inn whence the stage proceeds; for I am the porter. Perhaps you never heard of me, my name is Mercury.'—'Sure, Sir,' said I, 'I have seen you at the play-house.' Upon which he smiled; and, without satisfying me as to that point, walked directly forward, bidding me hop after him. I obeyed him, and soon found myself in Warwick Lane; where Mercury making a full stop, pointed at a particular house, where he bade me enquire for the stage; and wishing me a good journey, took his leave, saying, he must go seek after other customers.

I arrived just as the coach was setting out, and found I had no occasion for enquiry, for every person seemed to know my business the moment I appeared at the door; the coachman told me his horses were to, but that he

had no place left; however, though there were already six, the passengers offered to make room for me. I thanked them, and ascended without much ceremony. We immediately began our journey, being seven in number; for as the women wore no hoops, three of them were but equal to two men.

Perhaps, reader, thou mayest be pleased with an account of this whole equipage, as peradventure thou wilt not, while alive, see any such. The coach was made by an eminent toyman, who is well known to deal in immaterial substance, that being the matter of which it was compounded. The work was so extremely fine, that it was entirely invisible to the human eye. The horses which drew this extraordinary vehicle were all spiritual, as well as the passengers. They had, indeed, all died in the service of a certain post-master; and as for the coachman, who was a very thin piece of immaterial substance, he had the honour, while alive, of driving the Great Peter, or Peter the Great, in whose service his soul, as well as body, was almost starved to death.

Such was the vehicle in which I set out: and now those who are not willing to travel on with me, may, if they please, stop here; those who are, must proceed to the subsequent chapters, in which this journey is continued.

CHAP. II.

IN WHICH THE AUTHOR FIRST REFUTES SOME IDLE OPINIONS CONCERNING SPIRITS, AND THEN THE PASSENGERS RELATE THEIR SEVERAL DEATHS.

IT is the common opinion, that spirits, like owls, can see in the dark; nay, and can then most easily be perceived by others. For which reason, many persons of good understanding, to prevent being terrified with such objects, usually keep a candle burning by them, that the light may prevent their seeing. Mr. Locke, in direct opposition to this, hath not doubted to assert,

* This is the dress in which the god appears to mortals at the theatres. One of the offices attributed to this god by the ancients, was to collect the ghosts as a shepherd doth a flock of sheep, and drive them with his wand into the other world.

that you may see a spirit in open daylight full as well as in the darkest night.

It was very dark when we set out from the inn, nor could we see any more than if every soul of us had been alive. We had travelled a good way, before any one offered to open his mouth; indeed, most of the company were fast asleep*; but as I could not close my own eyes, and perceived the spirit, who sat opposite me, to be likewise awake, I began to make overtures of conversation, by complaining *how dark it was*. 'And extremely cold,' too,' answered my fellow-traveller; 'though, I thank God, as I have no body, I feel no inconvenience from it: but you will believe, Sir, that this frosty air must seem very sharp to one just issued forth out of an oven; for such was the inflamed habitation I am lately departed from.'—'How did you come to your end, Sir?' said I. 'I was murdered,' Sir,' answered the gentleman. 'I am surprized, then,' replied I, 'that you did not divert yourself by walking up and down, and playing some merry tricks with the murderer.'—'Oh, Sir!' returned he, 'I had not that privilege, I was lawfully put to death. In short, a physician set me on fire, by giving me medicines to throw out my distemper. I died of a hot regimen, as they call it, in the small-pox.'

One of the spirits at that word started up, and cried out, 'The small-pox! Bless me! I hope I am not in company with that distemper, which I have all my life with such caution avoided, and have so happily escaped hitherto!' This fright set all the passengers who were awake into a loud laughter; and the gentleman recollecting himself, with some confusion, and not without blushing, asked pardon, crying, 'I protest I dreamt that I was alive.'—'Perhaps, Sir,' said I, 'you died of that distemper, which therefore made so strong an impression on you.'—'No, Sir,' answered he, 'I never had it in my life; but the continual and dreadful apprehension it kept me so long under, cannot, I see, be so immediately eradicated.' You must know, Sir, I avoided coming

to London for thirty years together, for fear of the small-pox, till the most urgent business brought me thither about five days ago. I was so dreadfully afraid of this disease, that I refused the second night of my arrival to sup with a friend, whose wife had recovered of it several months before, and the same evening got a surfeit by eating too many mufcles, which brought me into this good company.'

'I will lay a wager,' cried the spirit who sat next him, 'there is not one in the coach able to guess my distemper.'—I desired the favour of him to acquaint us with it, if it was so uncommon. 'Why, Sir,' said he, 'I died of honour.'—'Of honour, Sir!' repeated I, with some surprize.—'Yes, Sir,' answered the spirit, 'of honour! for I was killed in a duel.'

'For my part,' said a fair spirit, 'I was inoculated last summer, and had the good fortune to escape with a very few marks in my face. I esteemed myself now perfectly happy, as I imagined I had no restraint to a full enjoyment of the diversions of the town; but within a few days after my coming up, I caught cold by over-dancing myself at a ball, and last night died of a violent fever.'

After a short silence, which now ensued, the fair spirit who spoke last, it being now day-light, addressed herself to a female who sat next her, and asked her to what chance they owed the happiness of her company. She answered, she apprehended to a consumption; but the physicians were not agreed concerning her distemper, for she left two of them in a very hot dispute about it when she came out of her body. 'And pray, Madam,' said the same spirit to the sixth passenger, 'how came you to leave the other world?' But that female spirit, screwing up her mouth, answered, she wondered at the curiosity of some people; that, perhaps, persons had already heard some reports of her death, which were far from being true: that, whatever was the occasion of it, she was glad at being delivered from a world in which she had no pleasure, and where there was nothing but nonsense and impertinence; particularly

* Those who have read of the gods sleeping in Homer, will not be surprized at this happening to spirits.

among her own sex, whose loose conduct she had long been entirely ashamed of.

The beauteous spirit perceiving her question gave offence, pursued it no farther. She had indeed all the sweetness and good-humour, which are so extremely amiable (when found) in that sex, which tenderness most exquisitely becomes. Her countenance displayed all the cheerfulness, the good-nature, and the modesty, which diffuse such brightness round the beauty of Seraphina*, awing every beholder with respect, and at the same time ravishing him with admiration. Had it not been, indeed, for our conversation on the small-pox, I should have imagined we had been honoured with her identical presence. This opinion might have been heightened by the good sense she uttered whenever she spoke, by the delicacy of her sentiments, and the complacency of her behaviour; together with a certain dignity which attended every look, word, and gesture: qualities which could not fail making an impression on a heart so capable of receiving it as mine†; nor was she long in raising in me a very violent degree of seraphick love. I do not intend by this that sort of love which men are very properly said to *make* to women in the lower world, and which seldom lasts any longer than while it is *making*. I mean, by seraphick love, an extreme delicacy and tenderness of friendship; of which, my worthy reader, if thou hast no conception, as it is probable thou mayest not, my endeavour to instruct thee would be as fruitless, as it would be to explain the most difficult problems of Sir Isaac Newton to one ignorant of vulgar arithmetick.

To return, therefore, to matters comprehensible by all understandings: the discourse now turned on the vanity, folly, and misery of the lower world, from which every passenger in the coach expressed the highest satisfaction in being delivered; though it was very remarkable, that, notwithstanding the joy we declared at our death, there was not one of us who did not mention the

accident which occasioned it as a thing we would have avoided if we could. Nay, the very grave lady herself, who was the forwardest in testifying her delight, confessed, inadvertently, that she left a physician by her bed-side; and the gentleman, who died of honour, very liberally cursed both his folly and his fencing. While we were entertaining ourselves with these matters, on a sudden a most offensive smell began to invade our nostrils. This very much resembled the savour which travellers, in summer, perceive at their approach to that beautiful village of the Hague, arising from those delicious canals, which, as they consist of standing water, do at that time emit odours greatly agreeable to a Dutch taste, but not so pleasant to any other. Those perfumes, with the assistance of a fair wind, begin to affect persons of quick olfactory nerves at a league's distance, and increase gradually as you approach: In the same manner did the smell I have just mentioned more and more invade us, till one of the spirits looking out of the coach-window, declared we were just arrived at a very large city; and indeed he had scarce said so, before we found ourselves in the suburbs; and at the same time the coachman, being asked by another, informed us that the name of this place was *the City of Diseases*. The road to it was extremely smooth, and, excepting the above-mentioned savour, delightfully pleasant. The streets of the suburbs were lined with bagnios, taverns, and cooks-shops: in the first we saw several beautiful women, but in tawdry dresses, looking out at the windows; and in the latter were visibly exposed all kinds of the richest dainties; but, on our entering the city, we found, contrary to all we had seen in the other world, that the suburbs were infinitely pleasanter than the city itself. It was, indeed, a very dull, dark, and melancholy place. Few people appeared in the streets, and these, for the most part, were old women, and here and there a formal grave gentleman, who seemed to be thinking, with large tie-wigs on,

* A particular lady of quality is meant here; but every lady of quality, or no quality, are welcome to apply the character to themselves.

† We have before made an apology for this language, which we here repeat for the last time; though the heart may, we hope, be metaphorically used here with more propriety than when we apply those passions to the body which belong to the soul.

and amber-headed canes in their hands. We were all in hopes that our vehicle would not stop here; but, to our sorrow, the coach soon drove into an inn, and we were obliged to alight.

CHAP. III.

THE ADVENTURES WE MET WITH IN THE CITY OF DISEASES.

WE had not been long arrived in our inn, where it seems we were to spend the remainder of the day, before our host acquainted us that it was customary for all spirits, in their passage through that city, to pay their respects to that Lady Disease to whose assistance they had owed their deliverance from the lower world. We answered, we should not fail in any complaisance which was usual to others; upon which our host replied, he would immediately send porters to conduct us. He had not long quitted the room, before we were attended by some of those grave persons, whom I have before described, in large tie-wigs, with amber-headed canes. These gentlemen are the ticket-porters in this city, and their canes are the *insignia*, or tickets denoting their office. We informed them of the several ladies to whom we were obliged, and were preparing to follow them, when on a sudden they all stared at one another, and left us in a hurry, with a frown on every countenance. We were surprised at this behaviour, and presently summoned the host, who was no sooner acquainted with it, than he burst into a hearty laugh, and told us the reason was, because we did not see the gentlemen the moment they came in, according to the custom of the place. We answered, with some confusion, we had brought nothing with us from the other world, which we had been all our lives informed was not lawful to do.—‘No, no, master!’ replied the host, ‘I am apprized of that, and indeed it was my fault. I should have first sent you to my Lord Scrape* ; who would have supplied you with what you want.’—‘My Lord Scrape supply us!’ said I, with astonishment.

‘Sure you must know we cannot give him security; and I am convinced he never lent a shilling without it in his life.’—‘No, Sir!’ answered the host; ‘and for that reason he is obliged to do it here, where he is sentenced to keep a bank; and to distribute money *gratis* to all passengers. This bank originally consisted of just that sum which he had miserably hoarded up in the other world, and he is to perceive it decrease visibly one shilling a day, till it is totally exhausted; after which he is to return to the other world, and perform the part of a miser for seventy years; then being purified in the body of a hog, he is to enter the human species again, and take a second trial.’—‘Sir,’ said I, ‘you tell me wonders; but, if his bank be to decrease only a shilling a day, how can he furnish all passengers?’—‘The rest,’ answered the host, ‘is supplied again; but in a manner which I cannot easily explain to you.’—‘I apprehend,’ said I, ‘this distribution of his money is inflicted on him as a punishment; but I do not see how it can answer that end, when he knows it is to be restored him again. Would it not serve the purpose as well, if he parted only with the single shilling, which it seems is all he is really to lose?’—‘Sir,’ cries the host, ‘when you observe the agonies with which he parts with every guinea, you will be of another opinion. No prisoner condemned to death ever begged so heartily for transportation, as he, when he received his sentence, did to go to hell, provided he might carry his money with him. But you will know more of these things when you arrive at the upper world; and now, if you please, I will attend you to my lord’s, who is obliged to supply you with whatever you desire.’

We found his lordship sitting at the upper end of a table, on which was an immense sum of money, disposed in several heaps, every one of which would have purchased the honour of some patriots, and the chastity of some prudes. The moment he saw us, he turned pale, and sighed, as well apprehending our business. Mine host accosted

* That we may mention it once for all, in the panegyrical part of this work, some particular person is always meant; but in the satyrical, no body.

him with a familiar air, which at first surprized me, who so well remembered the respect I had formerly seen paid this lord, by men infinitely superior in quality to the person who now saluted him in the following manner—

‘Here you, lord, and be dam—d to your little sneaking soul, tell out your money, and supply your betters with what they want. Be quick; sirrah, or I’ll fetch the beadle to you. Don’t fancy yourself in the lower world again, with your privilege at your a—.’ He then shook a cane at his lordship, who immediately began to tell out his money with the same miserable air and face, which the miser on our stage wears, while he delivers his bank-bills. This affected some of us so much, that we had certainly returned with no more than what would have been sufficient to fee the porters, had not our host, perceiving our compassion, begged us not to spare a fellow who, in the midst of immense wealth, had always refused the least contribution to charity. Our hearts were hardened with this reflection, and we all filled our pockets with his money. I remarked a poetical spirit in particular, who swore he would have a hearty gripe at him: ‘For,’ says he, ‘the rascal not only refused to subscribe to my works, but sent back my letter unanswered, though I am a better gentleman than himself.’

We now returned from this miserable object, greatly admiring the propriety, as well as justice of his punishment, which consisted, as our host informed us, merely in the delivering forth his money; and he observed we could not wonder at the pain this gave him, since it was as reasonable that the bare parting with money should make him miserable, as that the bare having money without using it should have made him happy.

Other tie-wig porters, (for those we had summoned before refused to visit us again) now attended us; and we having feed them the instant they entered the room, according to the instructions of our host, they bowed and smiled, and offered to introduce us to whatever disease we pleased.

We set out several ways, as we were all to pay our respects to different ladies. I directed my porter to shew me to the Fever on the Spirits, being the

disease which had delivered me from the flesh. My guide and I traversed many streets, and knocked at several doors, but to no purpose. At one we were told, lived the Consumption; at another the Maladie Alamoide, a French lady; at the third, the Dropsy; at the fourth, the Rheumatism; at the fifth, Intemperance; at the sixth, Misfortune. I was tired, and had exhausted my patience, and almost my purse; for I gave my porter a new fee at every blunder he made: when my guide, with a solemn countenance, told me, *he could do no more*; and marched off without any farther ceremony.

He was no sooner gone, than I met another gentleman with a ticket, *i. e.* an amber-headed cane in his hand. I first feed him, and then acquainted him with the name of the disease. He cast himself for two or three minutes into a thoughtful posture, then pulled a piece of paper out of his pocket, on which he writ something in one of the Oriental languages, I believe, for I could not read a syllable: he bade me carry it to such a particular shop, and telling me *it would do my business*, he took his leave.

Secure as I now thought myself of my direction, I went to the shop, which very much resembled an apothecary’s. The person who officiated, having read the paper, took down about twenty different jars, and pouring something out of every one of them, made a mixture, which he delivered to me in a bottle, having first tied a paper round the neck of it, on which were written three or four words, the last containing eleven syllables. I mentioned the name of the disease I wanted to find out; but received no other answer, than that he had done as he was ordered, and the drugs were excellent.

I began now to be enraged, and quitting the shop with some anger in my countenance, I intended to find out my inn; but meeting in the way a porter, whose countenance had in it something more pleasing than ordinary, I resolved to try once more, and clapt a fee into his hand. As soon as I mentioned the disease to him, he laughed heartily, and told me I had been imposed on; for, in reality, no such disease was to be found in that city. He then enquired into the particulars of my case, and was no sooner acquainted with

with them, than he informed me that the Maladie Alarnode was the lady to whom I was obliged. I thanked him, and immediately went to pay my respects to her.

The house, or rather palace, of this lady, was one of the most beautiful and magnificent in the city. The avenue to it was planted with sycamore trees, with beds of flowers on each side; it was extremely pleasant, but short. I was conducted through a magnificent hall, adorned with several statues and bustoes, most of them maimed; whence I concluded them all to be true antiques; but was informed they were the figures of several modern heroes, who had died martyrs to her ladyship's cause. I next mounted through a large painted stair-case, where several persons were depicted in caracatura; and, upon enquiry, was told they were the portraits of those who had distinguished themselves against the lady in the lower world. I suppose I should have known the faces of many physicians and surgeons, had they not been so violently distorted by the painter. Indeed, he had exerted so much malice in his work, that I believe he had himself received some particular favours from the lady of this mansion: it is difficult to conceive a groupe of stranger figures. I then entered a long room hung round with the pictures of women of such exact shapes and features, that I should have thought myself in a gallery of beauties, had not a certain fallow paleness in their complexions given me a more distasteful idea. Through this I proceeded to a second apartment, adorned, if I may so call it, with the figures of old ladies. Upon my seeming to admire at this furniture, the servant told me with a smile, that these had been very good friends of his lady, and had done her eminent service in the lower world. I immediately recollected the faces of one or two of my acquaintance, who had formerly kept bagnios; but was very much surprized to see the resemblance of a lady of great distinction in such company. The servant, upon my mentioning this, made no other answer than that his lady had pictures of all degrees.

I was now introduced into the pre-

* These ladies, I believe, by their names, presided over the leprosy, king's evil, and scurvy.

sence of the lady herself. She was a thin, or rather meagre person, very wan in the countenance, had no nose, and many pimples in her face. She offered to rise at my entrance, but could not stand. After many compliments, much congratulation on her side, and the most fervent expressions of gratitude on mine, she asked me many questions concerning the situation of her affairs in the lower world; most of which I answered to her entire satisfaction. At last, with a kind of forced smile, she said, 'I suppose the Pill and Drop go on swimmingly.' I told her they were reported to have done great cures. She replied, she could apprehend no danger from any person, who was not of regular practice; 'For however simple mankind are,' said she, 'or however afraid they are of death, they prefer dying in a regular manner to being cured by a nostrum.' She then expressed great pleasure at the account I gave her of the beau-monde. She said she had herself removed the hundreds of Drury, to the hundreds of Charing Cross, and was very much delighted to find they had spread into St. James's; that she imputed this chiefly to several of her dear and worthy friends, who had lately published their excellent works, endeavouring to extirpate all notions of religion and virtue; and particularly to the deserving author of the Bachelor's Estimate; 'To whom,' said she, 'if I had not reason to think he was a surgeon, and had therefore written from mercenary views, I could never sufficiently own my obligations.' She spoke likewise greatly in approbation of the method so generally used by parents, of marrying children very young, and without the least affection between the parties; and concluded by saying, that if these fashions continued to spread, she doubted not but she should shortly be the only disease who would ever receive a visit from any person of considerable rank.

While we were discoursing, her three daughters entered the room. They were all called by *hard names*, the eldest was named Lepra, the second Chceras, and the third Scorbutia*. They were all genteel, but ugly. I could not

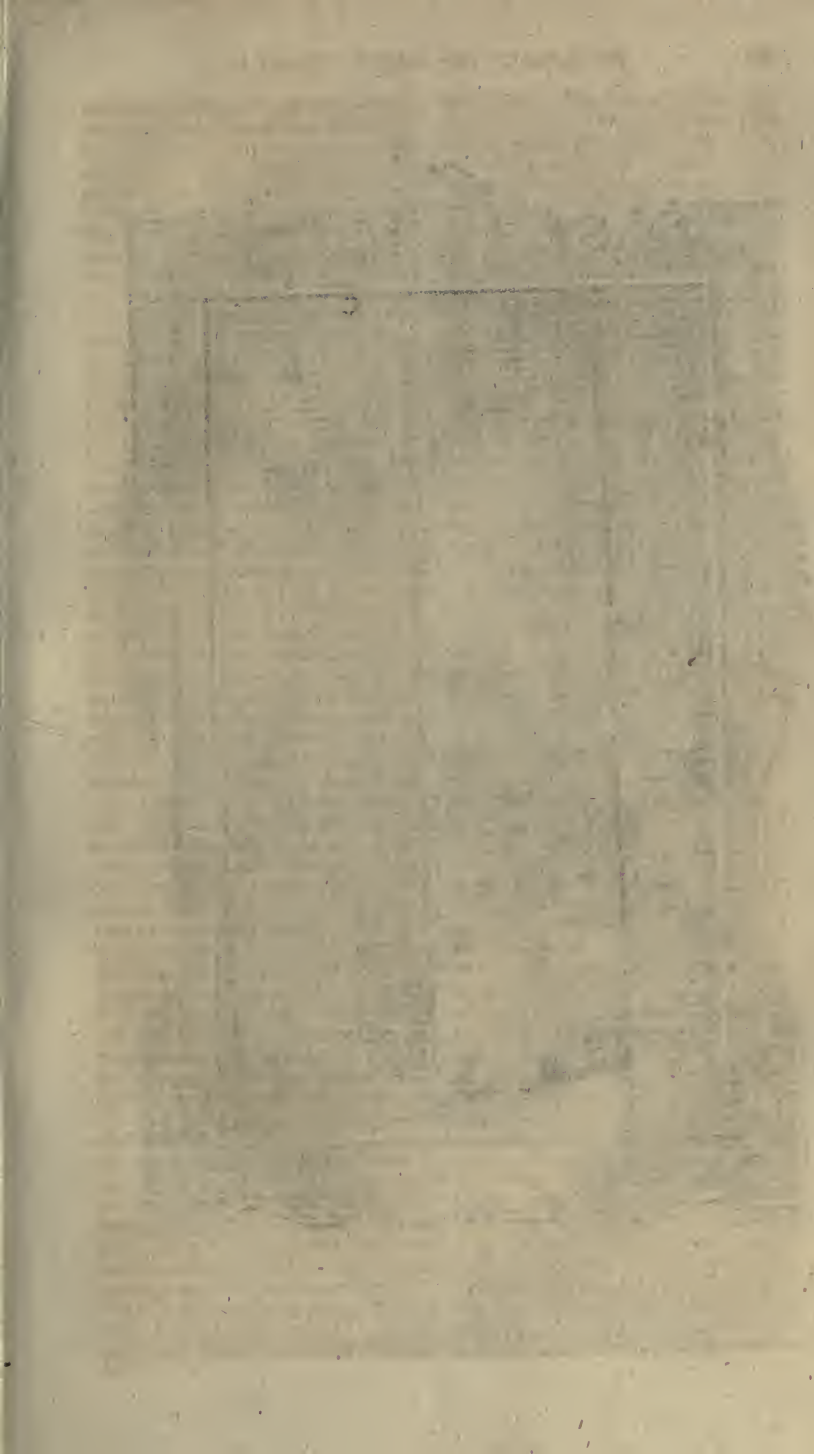
help observing the little respect they paid their parent; which the old lady remarking in my countenance as soon as they quitted the room, which soon happened, acquainted me with her unhappiness in her offspring, every one of which had the confidence to deny themselves to be her children, though she said she had been a very indulgent mother, and had plentifully provided for them all. As family complaints generally as much tire the hearer as they relieve him who makes them, when I found her lauching farther into this subject, I resolved to put an end to my visit; and taking my leave, with many thanks for the favour she had done me, I returned to the inn, where I found my fellow-travellers just mounting into their vehicle. I shook hands with my host, and accompanied them into the coach, which immediately after proceeded on it's journey.

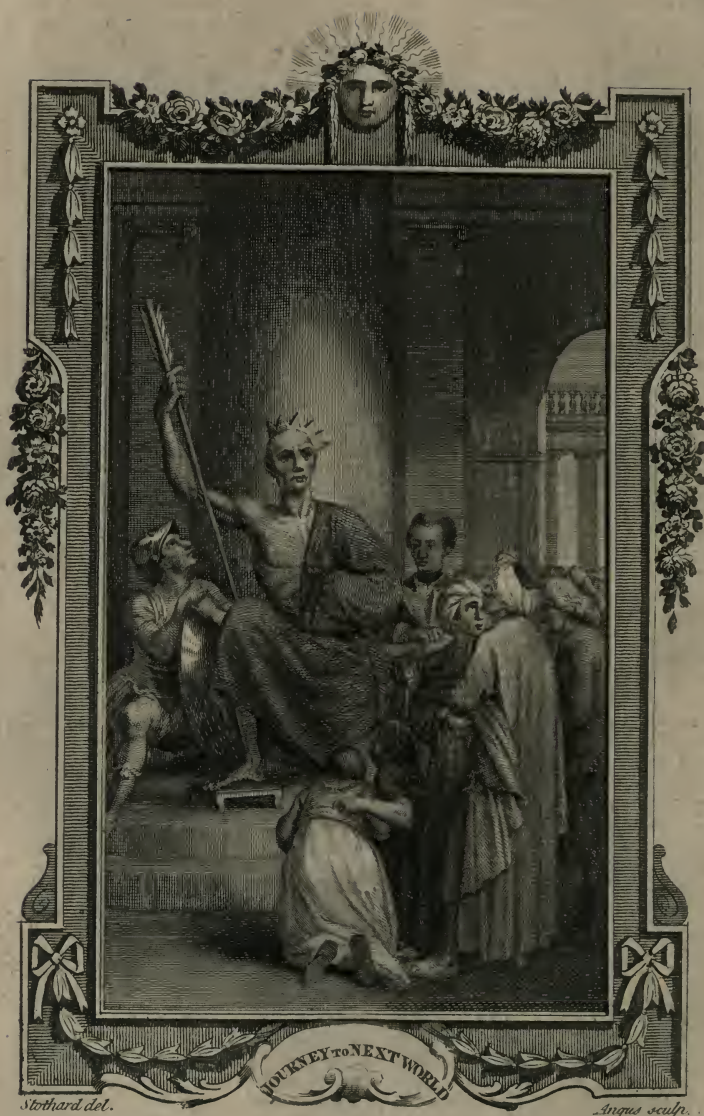
CHAP. IV.

DISCOURSES ON THE ROAD, AND A DESCRIPTION OF THE PALACE OF DEATH.

WE were all silent for some minutes, till being well shaken into our several seats, I opened my mouth first, and related what had happened to me after our separation in the city we had just left. The rest of the company, except the grave female spirit, whom our reader may remember to have refused giving an account of the distemper which occasioned her dissolution, did the same. It might be tedious to relate these at large; we shall therefore only mention a very remarkable inveteracy which the Surfeit declared to all the other diseases, especially to the Fever, who, she said, by the roguery of the porters, received acknowledgments from numberless passengers, which were due to herself. 'Indeed,' says she, 'those *care-head-ed* fellows,' (for so she called them, alluding, I suppose, to their ticket) 'are constantly making such mistakes; there is no gratitude in those fellows; for I am sure they have greater obligations to me, than to any other disease, except the Vapours.' These relations were no sooner over, than one of the company informed us, we were

approaching to the most noble building he had ever beheld, and which we learned from our coachman, was the Palace of Death. It's outside, indeed, appeared extremely magnificent; it's structure was of the gothick order; vast beyond imagination, the whole pile consisting of black marble. Rows of immense yews form an amphitheatre round it of such height and thickness, that no ray of the sun ever perforates this grove; where black eternal darkness would reign, was it not excluded by innumerable lamps, which are placed in pyramids round the grove; so that the distant reflection they cast on the palace, which is plentifully gilt with gold on the outside, is inconceivably solemn. To this I may add, the hollow murmur of winds constantly heard from the grove, and the very remote sound of roaring waters. Indeed, every circumstance seems to conspire to fill the mind with horror and consternation as we approach to this palace; which we had scarce time to admire, before our vehicle stopped at the gate, and we were desired to alight in order to pay our respects to his most mortal majesty, (this being the title which it seems he assumes.) The outward court was all full of soldiers; and, indeed, the whole very much resembled the state of an earthly monarch, only more magnificent. We passed through several courts, into a vast hall, which led to a spacious staircase, at the bottom of which stood two pages with very grave countenances, whom I recollected afterwards to have formerly been very eminent undertakers, and were in reality the only dismal faces I saw here; for this palace, so awful and tremendous without, is all gay and sprightly within, so that we soon lost all those dismal and gloomy ideas we had contracted in approaching it. Indeed the still silence, maintained among the guards and attendants, resembled rather the stately pomp of eastern courts; but there was on every face such symptoms of content and happiness, that diffused an air of cheerfulness all round. We ascended the staircase, and passed through many noble apartments, whose walls were adorned with various battle-pieces in tapestry, and which we spent some time in observing. These brought to my mind those beautiful ones I had in my lifetime





Stothard del.

Angus sculp.

time seen at Blenheim; nor could I prevent my curiosity from enquiring where the Duke of Marlborough's victories were placed; (for I think they were almost the only battles of any eminence I had read of, which I did not meet with) when the skeleton of a beef-eater, shaking his head, told me, a certain gentleman, one Lewis the XIVth, who had great interest with his most mortal majesty, had prevented any such from being hung up there; 'Besides,' says he, 'his majesty hath no great respect for that duke, for he never sent him a subject he could keep from him, nor did he ever get a single subject by his means, but he lost a thousand others for him.' We found the presence-chamber, at our entrance, very full, and a buzz ran through it, as in all assemblies, before the principal figure enters; for his majesty was not yet come out. At the bottom of the room were two persons in close conference, one with a square black cap on his head, and the other with a robe embroidered with flames of fire: these, I was informed, were a judge long since dead, and an inquisitor-general. I overheard them disputing with great eagerness, whether the one had hanged, or the other burnt, the most. While I was listening to this dispute, which seemed to be in no likelihood of a speedy decision, the emperor entered the room, and placed himself between two figures, one of which was remarkable for the roughness, and the other for the beauty of his appearance. These were, it seems, Charles the XIIth of Sweden, and Alexander of Macedon. I was at too great a distance to hear any of the conversation, so could only satisfy my curiosity by contemplating the several personages present, of whose names I informed myself by a page, who looked as pale and meagre as any court-page in the other world, but was somewhat more modest. He shewed me here two or three Turkish emperors, to whom his most mortal majesty seemed to express much civility. Here were likewise several of the Roman emperors, among whom none seemed so much caressed as Caligula, on account, as the page told me, of his *pious* wish, that he could send all the Romans hither at one blow. The reader may be perhaps surprized that I saw no physicians

here; as, indeed, I was myself, till informed that they were all departed to the city of Diseases, where they were busy in an experiment to purge away the immortality of the soul.

It would be tedious to recollect the many individuals I saw here; but I cannot omit a fat figure well dressed in the French fashion, who was received with extraordinary complaisance by the emperor, and whom I imagined to be Lewis the XIVth himself; but the page acquainted me he was a celebrated French cook.

We were at length introduced to the royal presence, and had the honour to kiss hands. His majesty asked us a few questions, not very material to relate, and soon after retired.

When we returned into the yard, we found our caravan ready to set out, at which we all declared ourselves well pleased; for we were sufficiently tired with the formality of a court, notwithstanding its outward splendor and magnificence.

CHAP. V.

THE TRAVELLERS PROCEED ON THEIR JOURNEY, AND MEET SEVERAL SPIRITS WHO ARE COMING INTO THE FLESH.

WE now came to the banks of the great river Cocytus, where we quitted our vehicle, and passed the water in a boat, after which we were obliged to travel on foot the rest of our journey; and now we met, for the first time, several passengers travelling to the world we had left, who informed us they were souls going into the flesh. The two first we met were walking arm in arm in very close and friendly conference; they informed us, that one of them was intended for a duke, and the other for a hackney-coachman. As we had not yet arrived at the place where we were to deposit our passions, we were all surprized at the familiarity which subsisted between persons of such different degrees; nor could the grave lady help expressing her astonishment at it. The future coachman then replied with a laugh, that they had exchanged lots; for that the duke had, with his dukedom, drawn a throw of a wife, and the coachman only a single state.

As we proceeded on our journey, we met a solemn spirit walking alone with great gravity in his countenance; our curiosity invited us, notwithstanding his reserve, to ask what lot he had drawn: he answered, with a smile, he was to have the reputation of a wise man, with 100,000*l.* in his pocket, and that he was practising the solemnity which he was to act in the other world.

A little farther we met a company of very merry spirits, whom we imagined, by their mirth, to have drawn some mighty lot; but, on enquiry, they informed us they were to be beggars.

The farther we advanced, the greater numbers we met, and now we discovered two large roads leading different ways, and of very different appearance; the one all craggy with rocks, full as it seemed of boggy grounds, and every where beset with briars, so that it was impossible to pass through it without the utmost danger and difficulty; the other, the most delightful imaginable, leading through the most verdant meadows, painted and perfumed with all kinds of beautiful flowers; in short, the most wanton imagination could imagine nothing more lovely. Notwithstanding which, we were surprized to see great numbers crowding into the former, and only one or two solitary spirits chusing the latter. On enquiry, we were acquainted that the bad road was the way to Greatness, and the other to Goodness. When we expressed our surprize at the preference given to the former, we were acquainted that it was chosen for the sake of the musick of drums and trumpets, and the perpetual acclamations of the mob; with which those who travelled this way were constantly saluted. We were told likewise, that there were several noble palaces to be seen, and lodged in on this road; by those who had passed through the difficulties of it, (which, indeed, many were not able to surmount) and great quantities of all sorts of treasure to be found in it; whereas the other had little inviting more than the beauty of the way, scarce a handsome building, save one greatly resembling a certain house by the Bath, to be seen during that whole journey; and lastly, that it was thought very scandalous and mean-spirited to

travel through this, and as highly honourable and noble to pass by the other.

We now heard a violent noise, when casting our eyes forwards, we perceived a vast number of spirits advancing in pursuit of one whom they mocked and insulted with all kinds of scorn. I cannot give my reader a more adequate idea of this scene, than by comparing it to an English mob conducting a pick-pocket to the water; or by supposing that an incensed audience at a play-house had, unhappily, possessed themselves of the miserable damned poet. Some laughed, some hissed, some squalled, some groaned, some bawled, some spit at him, some threw dirt at him. It was impossible not to ask who or what the wretched spirit was whom they treated in this barbarous manner; when, to our great surprize, we were informed that it was a king: we were likewise told, that this manner of behaviour was usual among the spirits, to those who drew the lots of emperors, kings, and other great men, not from envy or anger, but mere derision and contempt of earthly grandeur: that nothing was more common, than for those who had drawn these great prizes, (as to us they seemed) to exchange them with taylor and coblers; and that Alexander the Great, and Diogenes, had formerly done so; he that was afterwards Diogenes having originally fallen on the lot of Alexander.

And now, on a sudden, the mockery ceased; and the king-spirit having obtained a hearing, began to speak as follows; for we were now near enough to hear him distinctly.

‘Gentlemen, I am justly surprized at your treating me in this manner; since whatever lot I have drawn, I did not chuse; if, therefore, it be worthy of derision, you should compassionate me; for it might have fallen to any of your shares. I know in how low a light the station to which Fate hath assigned me is considered here, and that, when ambition doth not support it, it becomes generally so intolerable, that there is scarce any other condition for which it is not gladly exchanged: for what portion in the world to which we are going, is so miserable as that of care? Should I therefore consider myself as become by this lot essential-
‘ally

ally your superior, and of a higher order of being than the rest of my fellow-creatures; should I foolishly imagine myself without wisdom superior to the wise, without knowledge to the learned, without courage to the brave, and without goodness and virtue to the good and virtuous; surely so preposterous, so absurd a pride, would justly render me the object of ridicule. But far be it from me to entertain it. And yet, gentlemen, I prize the lot I have drawn; nor would I exchange it with any of yours, seeing it is in my eye so much greater than the rest. Ambition, which I own myself possessed of, teaches me this. Ambition, which makes me covet praise, assures me that I shall enjoy a much larger proportion of it than can fall within your power either to deserve or obtain. I am then superior to you all, when I am able to do more good, and when I execute that power. What the father is to the son, the guardian to the orphan, or the patron to his client, that am I to you. You are my children, to whom I will be a father, a guardian, and a patron. Not one evening in my long reign, (for so it is to be) will I repose myself to rest, without the glorious, the heart-warming consideration, that thousands that night owe their sweetest rest to me. What a delicious fortune is it to him, whose strongest appetite is doing good, to have every day the opportunity and the power of satisfying it! If such a man hath ambition, how happy is it for him to be seated so on high, that every act blazes abroad, and attracts to him praises tainted with neither sarcasm nor adulation; but such as the nicest and most delicate mind may relish? Thus, therefore, while you derive your good from me, I am your superior. If to my strict distribution of justice you owe the safety of your property from domestick enemies; if by my vigilance and valour you are protected from foreign foes; if by my encouragement of genuine industry, every science, every art which can embellish or sweeten life, is produced and flourishes among you; will any of you be so insensible or ungrateful as to deny praise and respect to him by whose care and conduct you enjoy these blessings? I wonder not

at the censure which so frequently falls on those in my station; but I wonder that those in my station so frequently deserve it. What strange perverseness of nature! What wanton delight in mischief must taint his composition, who prefers danger, difficulty, and disgrace, by doing evil, to safety, ease, and honour, by doing good? who refuses happiness in the other world, and Heaven in this, for misery there, and hell here? But, be assured, my intentions are different. I shall always endeavour the ease, the happiness, and the glory of my people, being confident that by so doing, I take the most certain method of procuring them all to myself.—He then struck directly into the road of Goodness, and received such a shout of applause as I never remember to have heard equalled.

He was gone a little way, when a spirit limped after him, swearing he would fetch him back. This spirit, I was presently informed, was one who had drawn the lot of his prime-minister.

CHAP. VI.

AN ACCOUNT OF THE WHEEL OF FORTUNE, WITH A METHOD OF PREPARING A SPIRIT FOR THIS WORLD.

WE now proceeded on our journey, without staying to see whether he fulfilled his word or no; and, without encountering any thing worth mentioning, came to the place where the spirits on their passage to the other world were obliged to decide by lot the station in which every one was to act there. Here was a monstrous wheel, infinitely larger than those in which I had formerly seen lottery-tickets deposited. This was called the WHEEL OF FORTUNE. The goddess herself was present. She was one of the most deformed females I ever beheld; nor could I help observing the frown she expressed when any beautiful spirit of her own sex passed by her, nor the affability which smiled in her countenance on the approach of any handsome male spirits. Hence I accounted for the truth of an observation I had often made on earth, that nothing is more fortunate

fortunate than handsome men, nor more unfortunate than handsome women.—The reader may be, perhaps, pleased with an account of the whole method of equipping a spirit for his entrance into the flesh.

First, then, he receives from a very sage person, whose look much resembled that of an apothecary, (his warehouse likewise bearing an affinity to an apothecary's shop) a small phial, inscribed, *THE PATHETICK POTION, to be taken just before you are born.* This potion is a mixture of all the passions, but in no exact proportion, so that sometimes one predominates and sometimes another; nay, often in the hurry of making up, one particular ingredient is, as we were informed, left out. The spirit receiveth at the same time another medicine, called the *NOUSPHORICK DECOCTION*, of which he is to drink *ad libitum*. This decoction is an extract from the faculties of the mind, sometimes extremely strong and spirituous, and sometimes altogether as weak; for very little care is taken in the preparation. This decoction is so extremely bitter and unpleasant, that, notwithstanding its wholesomeness, several spirits will not be persuaded to swallow a drop of it, but throw it away, or give it to any other who will receive it; by which means some who were not disgusted by the nauseousness, drank double and treble portions. I observed a beautiful young female, who, tasting it immediately from curiosity, screwed up her face, and cast it from her with great disdain, whence advancing presently to the wheel, she drew a coronet, which she clapped up so eagerly, that I could not distinguish the degree; and, indeed, I observed several of the same sex, after a very small sip, throw the bottles away.

As soon as the spirit is dismissed by the operator, or apothecary, he is at liberty to approach the wheel, where he hath a right to extract a single lot; but those whom Fortune favours, she permits sometimes secretly to draw three or four. I observed a comical kind of figure who drew forth a handful, which when he opened, were a bishop, a general, a privy-counsellor, a player, and a poet-laureate, and returning the three first, he walked off smiling with the two last.

Every single lot contained two or more articles, which were generally disposed so as to render the lots as equal as possible to each other.

On one was written *Earl,*
Riches,
Health,
Disquietude.

On another, *Cobler,*
Sickness,
Good-humour.

On a third, *Poet,*
Contempt,
Self-satisfaction.

On a fourth, *General,*
Honour,
Discontent.

On a fifth, *Cottage,*
Happy love.

On a sixth, *Coach and six,*
Impetent jealous husband.

On a seventh, *Prime-minister,*
Disgrace.

On an eighth, *Patriot,*
Glory.

On a ninth, *Philosopher,*
Poverty,
Ease.

On a tenth, *Merchant,*
Riches,
Care.

And, indeed, the whole seemed to contain such a mixture of good and evil, that it would have puzzled me which to chuse. I must not omit here, that in every lot was directed, whether the drawer should marry or remain in celibacy, the married lots being all marked with a large pair of horns.

We were obliged, before we quitted this place, to take each of us an emetic from the apothecary, which immediately purged us of all our earthly passions, and presently the cloud forsook our eyes, as it doth those of *Æneas* in *Virgil* when removed by *Venus*, and we discerned things in a much clearer light than before. We began to compassionate those spirits who were making their entry into the flesh, whom we had, till then, secretly envied, and to long eagerly for those delightful plains which now opened themselves to our eyes, and to which we now hastened with the utmost eagerness. On our way, we met with several

veral spirits with very dejected countenances; but our expedition would not suffer us to ask any questions.

At length, we arrived at the gate of Elysium. Here was a prodigious crowd of spirits waiting for admittance, some of whom were admitted and some were rejected; for all were strictly examined by the porter, whom I soon discovered to be the celebrated Judge Minos.

CHAP. VII.

THE PROCEEDINGS OF JUDGE MINOS, AT THE GATE OF ELYSIUM.

I Now got near enough to the gate, to hear the several claims of those who endeavoured to pass. The first, among other pretensions, set forth, that he had been very liberal to an hospital; but Minos answered, 'Ostentation!' and repulsed him. The second exhibited, that he had constantly frequented his church, being a rigid observer of fast-days. He likewise represented the great animosity he had shewn to vice in others, which never escaped his severest censure; and as to his own behaviour, he had never been once guilty of whoring, drinking, gluttony, or any other excess. He said, he had disinherited his son for getting a bastard. 'Have you so?' said Minos; 'then pray return into the other world and beget another; for such an unnatural rascal shall never pass this gate.' A dozen others, who had advanced with very confident countenances, seeing him rejected, turned about of their own accord, declaring, if he could not pass, they had no expectation, and accordingly they followed him back to earth; which was the fate of all who were repulsed, they being obliged to take a farther purification, unless those who were guilty of some very heinous crimes, who were hustled in at a little back-gate, whence they tumbled immediately into the bottomless-pit.

The next spirit that came up, declared he had done neither good nor evil in the world; for that since his arrival at man's estate, he had spent his whole time in search of curiosities; and particularly in the study of but-

terflies, of which he had collected an immense number: Minos made him no answer, but, with great scorn, pushed him back.

There now advanced a very beautiful spirit indeed. She began to ogle Minos the moment she saw him. She said, she hoped there was some merit in refusing a great number of lovers and dying a maid, though she had had the choice of a hundred. Minos told her she had not refused enough yet, and turned her back.

She was succeeded by a spirit, who told the judge he believed his works would speak for him. 'What works?' answered Minos. 'My dramatick works,' replied the other; 'which have done so much good in recommending virtue, and punishing vice.' — 'Very well,' said the judge, 'if you please to stand by; the first person who passes the gate by your means shall carry you in with him: but if you will take my advice, I think, for expedition-sake, you had better return and live another life upon earth.' The bard grumbled at this, and replied, that besides his poetical works, he had done some other good things; for that he had once lent the whole profits of a benefit-night to a friend, and by that means had saved him and his family from destruction: upon this, the gate flew open, and Minos desired him to walk in, telling him, if he had mentioned this at first, he might have spared the remembrance of his plays. The poet answered, he believed if Minos had read his works he would set a higher value on them. He was then beginning to repeat, but Minos pushed him forward, and turning his back to him, applied himself to the next passenger, a very genteel spirit, who made a very low bow to Minos, and then threw himself into an erect attitude, and imitated the motion of taking snuff with his right-hand. Minos asked him what he had to say for himself. He answered, he would dance a minuet with any spirit in Elysium: that he could likewise perform all his other exercises very well, and hoped he had in his life deserved the character of a perfect *fine gentleman*. Minos replied, it would be great pity to rob the world of so *fine a gentleman*, and therefore desired him to take the other trip. The beau bowed, thanked

the judge, and said he desired no better. Several spirits expressed much astonishment at this his satisfaction; but we were afterwards informed, he had not taken the emetick above-mentioned.

A miserable old spirit now crawled forwards, whose face I thought I had formerly seen near Westminster Abbey. He entertained Minos with a long harangue of what he had done *when in the House*; and then proceeded to inform him how much he was worth, without attempting to produce a single instance of any one good action. Minos stopped the career of his discourse, and acquainted him, he must take a trip back again. 'What to *S—— House?*' said the spirit, in an extasy. But the judge, without making him any answer, turned to another, who, with a very solemn air and great dignity, acquainted him he was a duke. 'To the right about, *Mr. Duke!*' cried Minos; 'you are infinitely too great a man for *Elysium*;' and then giving him a kick on the b—ch, he addressed himself to a spirit, who, with fear and trembling, begged he might not go to the bottomless pit. He said, he hoped Minos would consider, that though he had gone astray, he had suffered for it; that it was necessity which drove him to the robbery of eighteen pence, which he had committed, and for which he was hanged: that he had done some good actions in his life, that he had supported an aged parent with his labour, that he had been a very tender husband and a kind father, and that he had ruined himself by being bail for his friend. At which words the gate opened, and Minos bid him enter, giving him a slap on the back as he passed by him.

A great number of spirits now came forwards, who all declared they had the same claim, and that the captain should speak for them. He acquainted the judge that they had been all slain in the service of their country. Minos was going to admit them, but had the curiosity to ask who had been the invader, in order, as he said, to prepare the back-gate for him. The captain answered, they had been the invaders themselves; that they had entered the enemy's country, and burnt and plundered several cities. 'And for what reason?' said Minos. 'By the

'command of him who paid us,' said the captain; 'that is the reason of a soldier. We are to execute whatever we are commanded, or we should be a disgrace to the army, and very little deserve our pay.'—'You are brave fellows, indeed,' said Minos; 'but be pleased to face about, and obey my command for once, in re—turning back to the other world; for what should such fellows as you do, where there are no cities to be burnt, nor people to be destroyed? But let me advise you to have a stricter regard to truth for the future, and not call the depopulating other countries the service of your own.' The captain answered, in a rage, 'D—n me! do you give me the lye?' and was going to take Minos by the nose, had not his guards prevented him, and immediately turned him and all his followers back the same road they came.

Four spirits informed the judge that they had been starved to death through poverty; being the father, mother, and two children. That they had been honest, and as industrious as possible, till sickness had prevented the man from labour. 'All that is very true,' cried a grave spirit who stood by, 'I know the fact; for these poor people were under my cure.'—'You was, I suppose, the parson of the parish,' cries Minos; 'I hope you had a good living, Sir.'—'That was but a small one,' replied the spirit; 'but I had another a little better.'—'Very well,' said Minos, 'let the poor people pass.' At which the parson was stepping forwards with a stately gait before them; but Minos caught hold of him, and pulled him back, saying, 'Not so fast, doctor; you must take one step more into the other world first; for no man enters that gate without charity.'

A very stately figure now presented himself, and informing Minos he was a patriot, began a very florid harangue on publick virtue, and the liberties of his country: upon which, Minos shewed him the utmost respect, and ordered the gate to be opened. The patriot was not contented with this applause; he said he had behaved as well in place as he had done in the opposition; and that, though he was now obliged to embrace the court-measures, yet he had behaved very honestly to his friends, and brought as many in as was possible,

ble. 'Hold a moment,' says Minos; 'on second consideration, Mr. Patriot, I think a man of your great virtue and abilities will be so much missed by your country, that, if I might advise you, you should take a journey back again. I am sure you will not decline it, for I am certain you will with great readiness sacrifice your own happiness to the public good.' The patriot smiled, and told Minos he believed he was in jest; and was offering to enter the gate, but the judge laid fast hold of him, and insisted on his return, which the patriot still declining, he at last ordered his guards to seize him, and conduct him back.

A spirit now advanced, and the gate was immediately thrown open to him, before he had spoken a word. I heard some whisper—'*That is our last lord-mayor.*'

It now came to our company's turn. The fair spirit, which I mentioned with so much applause in the beginning of my journey, passed through very easily; but the grave lady was rejected on her first appearance, Minos declaring there was not a single prude in Elysium.

The judge then addressed himself to me, who little expected to pass this fiery trial. I confessed I had indulged myself very freely with wine and women in my youth, but had never done an injury to any man living, nor avoided an opportunity of doing good; that I pretended to very little virtue more than general philanthropy and private friendship.—I was proceeding, when Minos bid me enter the gate, and not indulge myself with trumpeting forth my virtues. I accordingly passed forward with my lovely companion, and embracing her with vast eagerness, but spiritual innocence, she returned my embrace in the same manner, and we both congratulated ourselves on our arrival in this happy region, whose beauty no painting of the imagination can describe.

CHAP. VIII.

THE ADVENTURES WHICH THE AUTHOR MET ON HIS FIRST ENTRANCE INTO ELYSIUM.

WE pursued our way through a delicious grove of orange-trees, where I saw infinite numbers of spirits,

every one of whom I knew, and was known by them; (for spirits here know one another by intuition.) I presently met a little daughter, whom I had lost several years before. Good Gods! what words can describe the raptures, the melting, passionate tenderness, with which we kissed each other, continuing in our embrace, with the most extatic joy; a space which, if time had been measured here as on earth, could not be less than half a year.

The first spirit, with whom I entered into discourse, was the famous Leonidas of Sparta. I acquainted him with the honours which had been done him by a celebrated poet of our nation; to which he answered, he was very much obliged to him.

We were presently afterwards entertained with the most delicious voice I had ever heard, accompanied by a violin, equal to Signior Piantanida. I presently discovered the musician and songster to be Orpheus and Sappho.

Old Homer was present at this concert, (if I may so call it) and Madam Dacier sat in his lap. He asked much after Mr. Pope, and said he was very desirous of seeing him; for that he had read his *Iliad* in his translation with almost as much delight as he believed he had given others in the original. I had the curiosity to enquire whether he had really writ that poem in detached pieces, and sung it about as ballads all over Greece, according to the report which went of him. He smiled at my question, and asked me whether there appeared any connection in the poem; for, if there did, he thought I might answer myself. I then importuned him to acquaint me in which of the cities, which contended for the honour of his birth, he was really born. To which he answered—'Upon my soul I cannot tell!'

Virgil then came up to me, with Mr. Addison under his arm. 'Well, Sir,' said he, 'how many translations have these few last years produced of my *Æneid*?' I told him, I believed several, but I could not possibly remember; for that I had never read any but Dr. Trapp's,—'Aye!' said he, 'that is a curious piece indeed!' I then acquainted him with the discovery made by Mr. Warburton of the Eleusinian mysteries couched in his sixth book.—'What mysteries?' said Mr. Addison.

—‘The Eleusinian,’ answered Virgil, ‘which I have disclosed in my sixth book.’—‘How!’ replied Addison, ‘you never mentioned a word of any such mysteries to me in all our acquaintance.’—‘I thought it was unnecessary,’ cried the other, ‘to a man of your infinite learning; besides, you always told me, you perfectly understood my meaning.’—Upon this I thought the critick looked a little out of countenance, and turned aside to a very merry spirit, one Dick Steele, who embraced him, and told him, he had been the greatest man upon earth; that he readily resigned up all the merit of his own works to him. Upon which Addison gave him a gracious smile, and, clapping him on the back with much solemnity, cried out—‘*Well said, Dick!*’

I then observed Shakespeare standing between Betterton and Booth, and deciding a difference between those two great actors concerning the placing an accent in one of his lines: this was disputed on both sides with a warmth which surprized me in Elysium, till I discovered, by intuition, that every soul retained it’s principal characteristic, being, indeed, it’s very essence. The line was that celebrated one in Othello—

‘Put out the light, and then put out the light,’

according to Betterton. Mr. Booth contended to have it thus—

‘Put out the light, and then put out *the* light.’

I could not help offering my conjecture on this occasion, and suggested it might perhaps be—

‘Put out the light, and then put out *thy* light.’

Another hinted a reading very *sophisticated*, in my opinion—

‘Put out the light, and then put out *thee*,
‘light;’

making light to be the vocative case. Another would have altered the last word, and read—

‘Put out thy light, and then put out thy sight.’

But Betterton said, if the text was to be *disturbed*, he saw no reason why a word might not be changed as well as a letter; and instead of *put out thy light*, you might read *put out thy eyes*. At

last it was agreed on all sides to refer the matter to the decision of Shakespeare himself, who delivered his sentiments as follows.—‘Faith, gentlemen, it is so long since I wrote the line, I have forgot my meaning. This I know, could I have dreamt so much nonsense would have been talked and writ about it, I would have blotted it out of my works; for I am sure, if any of these be my meaning, it doth me very little honour.’

He was then interrogated concerning some other ambiguous passages in his works; but he declined any satisfactory answer, saying, if Mr. Theobald had not *writ about it* sufficiently, there were three or four more new editions of his plays coming out, which he hoped would satisfy every one: concluding, ‘I marvel nothing so much as that men will gird themselves at discovering obscure beauties in an author. Certes the greatest and most pregnant beauties are ever the plainest and most evidently striking; and when two meanings of a passage can in the least balance our judgments which to prefer, I hold it matter of unquestionable certainty that neither of them are worth a farthing.’

From his works our conversation turned on his monument; upon which Shakespeare, shaking his sides, and addressing himself to Milton, cried out, ‘On my word, brother Milton, they have brought a noble set of poets together; they would have been hanged ereft have convened such a company at their tables when alive.’—‘True, brother,’ answered Milton, ‘unless we had been as incapable of eating then as we are now.’

CHAP. IX.

MORE ADVENTURES IN ELYSIUM.

A Croud of spirits now joined us, whom I soon perceived to be the heroes, who here frequently pay their respects to the several bards, the recorders of their actions. I now saw Achilles and Ulysses addressing themselves to Homer, and Æneas and Julius Cæsar to Virgil. Adam went up to Milton, upon which I whispered Mr. Dryden, that I thought the Devil should have paid his compliments there, according

cording to his opinion. Dryden only answered, 'I believe the Devil was in me when I said so.' Several applied themselves to Shakespeare, amongst whom Henry V. made a very distinguishing appearance. While my eyes were fixed on that monarch, a very small spirit came up to me, shook me heartily by the hand, and told me his name was THOMAS THUMB. I expressed great satisfaction in seeing him; nor could I help speaking my resentment against the historian who had done such injustice to the stature of this great little man, which he represented to be no bigger than a span; whereas I plainly perceived, at first sight, he was a full foot and a half, (and the thirty-seventh part of an inch more, as he himself informed me) being indeed little shorter than some considerable beaux of the present age.

I asked this little hero concerning the truth of those stories related of him, viz. of the pudding, and the cow's belly. As to the former, he said, it was a ridiculous legend, worthy to be laughed at; but as to the latter, he could not help owning there was some truth in it: nor had he any reason to be ashamed of it, as he was swallowed by surprize; adding, with great fierceness, that if he had had any weapon in his hand, the cow should have as soon swallowed the Devil.

He spoke the last word with so much fury, and seemed so confounded, that, perceiving the effect it had on him, I immediately waved the story, and, passing to other matters, we had much conversation touching giants. He said, so far from killing any, he had never seen one alive; that he believed those actions were by mistake recorded of him, instead of Jack the Giant-killer, whom he knew very well, and who had, he fancied, extirpated the race. I assured him to the contrary, and told him I had myself seen a huge tame giant, who very complacently staid in London a whole winter, at the special request of several gentlemen and ladies, though the affairs of his family called him home to Sweden.

I now beheld a stern-looking spirit leaning on the shoulder of another spirit, and presently discerned the former to be Oliver Cromwell, and the latter Charles Martel. I own I was a little surprized at seeing Cromwell here; for

I had been taught by my grandmother that he was carried away by the Devil himself in a tempest: but he assured me, on his honour, there was not the least truth in that story. However, he confessed he had narrowly escaped the bottomless pit; and, if the former part of his conduct had not been more to his honour than the latter, he had been certainly foused into it. He was, nevertheless, sent back to the upper world with this lot—

Army.—Cavalier.—Distress.

He was born, for the second time, the day of Charles II.'s Restoration, into a family which had lost a very considerable fortune in the service of that prince and his father, for which they received the reward very often conferred by princes on real merit, viz. —oool. At sixteen, his father bought a small commission for him in the army, in which he served without any promotion all the reigns of Charles II. and of his brother. At the Revolution he quitted his regiment, and followed the fortunes of his former master, and was in his service dangerously wounded at the famous battle of the Boyne, where he fought in the capacity of a private soldier. He recovered of this wound, and retired after the unfortunate king to Paris; where he was reduced to support a wife and seven children (for his lot had horns in it) by cleaning shoes, and snuffing candles at the opera: in which situation, after he had spent a few miserable years, he died half-starved and broken-hearted. He then revisited Minos, who, compassionating his sufferings by means of that family, to whom he had been in his former capacity so bitter an enemy, suffered him to enter here.

My curiosity could not refrain asking him one question, i. e. whether in reality he had any desire to obtain the crown. He smiled, and said, 'No more than an ecclesiastick hath to the mitre, when he cries *nolo episcopari*.' Indeed, he seemed to express some contempt at the question, and presently turned away.

A venerable spirit appeared next, whom I found to be the great historian Livy. Alexander the Great, who was just arrived from the palace of Death, past by him with a frown. The historian observing it, said, 'Aye, you may

' may frown; but those troops which conquered the base Asiatick slaves, would have made no figure against the Romans.' We then privately lamented the loss of the most valuable part of his history, after which he took occasion to commend the judicious collection made by Mr. Hooke, which he said was infinitely preferable to all others; and at my mentioning Echard's, he gave a bounce, not unlike the going off of a squib, and was departing from me, when I begged him to satisfy my curiosity in one point, whether he was really superstitious or no; for I had always believed he was, till Mr. Leibnitz had assured me to the contrary. He answered sullenly—' Doth Mr. Leibnitz know my mind better than myself?' and then walked away.

CHAP. X.

THE AUTHOR IS SURPRIZED AT MEETING JULIAN THE APOSTATE IN ELYSIUM; BUT IS SATISFIED BY HIM, BY WHAT MEANS HE PROCURED HIS ENTRANCE THERE. JULIAN RELATES HIS ADVENTURES IN THE CHARACTER OF A SLAVE.

AS he was departing, I heard him salute a spirit by the name of Mr. Julian the apostate. This exceedingly amazed me; for I had concluded, that no man ever had a better title to the bottomless-pit than he. But I soon found, that this same Julian the apostate was also the very individual archbishop Latimer. He told me, that several lies had been raised on him in his former capacity, nor was he so bad a man as he had been represented. However, he had been denied admittance, and forced to undergo several subsequent pilgrimages on earth, and to act in the different characters of a slave, a Jew, a general, an heir, a carpenter, a beau, a monk, a fiddler, a wife man, a king, a fool, a beggar, a prince, a statesman, a soldier, a tailor, an alderman, a poet, a knight, a dancing-master, and three times a bishop before his martyrdom, together with his other behaviour in this last character, satisfied the judge, and procured him a passage to the blessed regions.

I told him, such various characters must have produced incidents extremely entertaining; and if he remembered all, as I suppose he did, and had leisure, I should be obliged to him for the recital. He answered, he perfectly recollected every circumstance; and as to leisure, the only business of that happy place was to contribute to the happiness of each other. He therefore thanked me for increasing his, in proposing to him a method of pleasing mine. I then took my little darling in one hand, and my favourite fellow-traveller in the other, and going with him to a sunny bank of flowers, we all sat down, and he began as follows—

' I suppose you are sufficiently acquainted with my story, during the time I acted the part of the Emperor Julian; though, I assure you, all which hath been related of me is not true, particularly with regard to the many prodigies forerunning my death. However, they are now very little worth disputing; and if they can serve any purpose of the historian, they are extremely at his service.

' My next entrance into the world, was at Laodicea in Syria, in a Roman family of no great note; and being of a roving disposition, I came at the age of seventeen to Constantinople, where after about a year's stay, I set out for Thrace at the time when the emperor Valens admitted the Goths into that country. I was there so captivated with the beauty of a Gothick lady, the wife of one Rodoric, a captain, whose name, out of the most delicate tenderness for her lovely sex, I shall even at this distance conceal; since her behaviour to me was more consistent with good nature, than with that virtue which women are obliged to preserve against every assailable. In order to procure an intimacy with this woman, I sold myself a slave to her husband, who being of a nation not over-inclined to jealousy, presented me to his wife, for those very reasons which would have induced one of a jealous complexion to have withheld me from her, namely, for that I was young and handsome.

' Matters succeeded so far according to my wish, and the sequel answered those hopes which this beginning had raised. I soon perceived my service

' was

‘ was very acceptable to her, I often
 ‘ met her eyes, nor did she withdraw
 ‘ them without a confusion which is
 ‘ scarce consistent with entire purity
 ‘ of heart. Indeed, she gave me every
 ‘ day fresh encouragement; but the
 ‘ unhappy distance which circumstances
 ‘ had placed between us, deterred me
 ‘ long from making any direct attack;
 ‘ and she was too strict an observer of
 ‘ decorum, to violate the severe rules
 ‘ of modesty by advancing first; but
 ‘ passion, at last, got the better of my
 ‘ respect, and I resolved to make one
 ‘ bold attempt, whatever was the con-
 ‘ sequence. Accordingly, laying hold
 ‘ of the first kind opportunity, when
 ‘ she was alone, and my master abroad,
 ‘ I stoutly assailed the citadel, and
 ‘ carried it by storm. Well may I
 ‘ say by storm; for the resistance I met
 ‘ was extremely resolute, and indeed,
 ‘ as much as the most perfect decency
 ‘ would require. She swore often she
 ‘ would cry out for help; but I an-
 ‘ swered, it was in vain, seeing there
 ‘ was no person near to assist her; and
 ‘ probably she believed me, for she did
 ‘ not once actually cry out; which if
 ‘ she had, I might very likely have
 ‘ been prevented.

‘ When she found her virtue thus
 ‘ subdued against her will, she pa-
 ‘ tiently submitted to her fate, and
 ‘ quietly suffered me a long time to
 ‘ enjoy the most delicious fruits of my
 ‘ victory; but envious fortune resolved
 ‘ to make me pay a dear price for my
 ‘ pleasure. One day, in the midst of
 ‘ our happiness, we were suddenly
 ‘ surprized by the unexpected return
 ‘ of her husband, who coming direct-
 ‘ ly into his wife’s apartment, just al-
 ‘ lowed me time to creep under the
 ‘ bed. The disorder in which he
 ‘ found his wife, might have surprized
 ‘ a jealous temper; but his was so far
 ‘ otherwise, that possibly no mischief
 ‘ might have happened, had he not by
 ‘ a cross accident discovered my legs,
 ‘ which were not well hid. He im-
 ‘ mediately drew me out by them, and
 ‘ then turning to his wife with a stern
 ‘ countenance, began to handle a
 ‘ weapon he wore by his side, with
 ‘ which I am persuaded he would have
 ‘ instantly dispatched her, had I not
 ‘ very gallantly and with many im-
 ‘ precations asserted her innocence and
 ‘ my own guilt; which, however, I

‘ protested had hitherto gone no farther
 ‘ than design. She so well seconded
 ‘ my plea, (for she was a woman of
 ‘ wonderful art) that he was at length
 ‘ imposed upon; and now all his rage
 ‘ was directed against me, threatening
 ‘ all manner of tortures which the poor
 ‘ lady was in too great a fright and
 ‘ confusion to dissuade him from exe-
 ‘ cuting; and perhaps, if her con-
 ‘ cern for me had made her attempt it,
 ‘ it would have raised a jealousy in
 ‘ him not afterwards to be removed.

‘ After some hesitation, Rodoric
 ‘ cried out, he had luckily hit on the
 ‘ most proper punishment for me in
 ‘ the world, by a method which would
 ‘ at once do severe justice on me for
 ‘ my criminal intention, and, at the
 ‘ same time, prevent me from any
 ‘ danger of executing my wicked pur-
 ‘ pose hereafter. This cruel resolu-
 ‘ tion was immediately executed, and
 ‘ I was no longer worthy the name of
 ‘ a man.

‘ Having thus disqualified me from
 ‘ doing him any future injury, he still
 ‘ retained me in his family; but the
 ‘ lady, very probably repenting of what
 ‘ she had done, and looking on me as
 ‘ the author of her guilt, would never,
 ‘ for the future, give me either a kind
 ‘ word or look; and shortly after, a
 ‘ great exchange being made between
 ‘ the Romans and the Goths, of dogs
 ‘ for men, my lady exchanged me with
 ‘ a Roman widow for a small lap-dog,
 ‘ giving a considerable sum of money
 ‘ to boot.

‘ In this widow’s service I remained
 ‘ seven years, during all which time
 ‘ I was very barbarously treated. I
 ‘ was worked without the least mercy,
 ‘ and often severely beat by a swin-
 ‘ ging maid-servant, who never called
 ‘ me by any other names than those of
 ‘ *the thing*, and *the animal*. Though
 ‘ I used my utmost industry to please,
 ‘ it never was in my power. Neither
 ‘ the lady nor her woman would eat
 ‘ any thing I touched, saying, they
 ‘ did not believe me wholesome. It
 ‘ is unnecessary to repeat particulars;
 ‘ in a word, you can imagine no kind
 ‘ of ill usage which I did not suffer in
 ‘ this family.

‘ At last, a Heathen priest, an ac-
 ‘ quaintance of my lady’s, obtained
 ‘ me of her for a present. The scene
 ‘ was now totally changed, and I had

‘ as much reason to be satisfied with my present situation, as I had to lament my former. I was so absolutely my master’s favourite, that the rest of the slaves paid me almost as much regard as they shewed to him, well knowing, that it was entirely in my power to command and treat them as I pleased. I was intrusted with all my master’s secrets, and used to assist him in privately conveying away by night the sacrifices from the altars, which the people believed the deities themselves devoured. Upon these we feasted very elegantly, nor could invention suggest a rarity which we did not pamper ourselves with. Perhaps you may admire at the close union between this priest and his slave; but we lived in an intimacy which the Christians thought criminal: but my master, who knew the will of the gods, with whom he told me he often conversed, assured me it was perfectly innocent.

‘ This happy life continued about four years, when my master’s death, occasioned by a surfeit got by overfeeding on several exquisite dainties, put an end to it.

‘ I now fell into the hands of one of a very different disposition, and this was no other than the celebrated St. Chrysostome, who dieted me with sermons instead of sacrifices, and filled my ears with good things, but not my belly. Instead of high food to fatten and pamper my flesh, I had receipts to mortify and reduce it. With these I edified so well, that within a few months I became a skeleton. However, as he had converted me to his faith, I was well enough satisfied with this new manner of living, by which he taught me I might insure myself an eternal reward in a future state. The saint was a good-natured man, and never gave me an ill word but once, which was occasioned by my neglecting to place Aristophanes, which was his constant bed-fellow, on his pillow. He was, indeed, extremely fond of that Greek poet, and frequently made me read his comedies to him: when I came to any of the loose passages, he would smile, and say, it was pity his matter was not as pure as his style; of which latter he was so immoderately fond, that notwith-

standing the detestation he expressed for obscenity, he hath made me repeat those passages ten times over. The character of this good man hath been very unjustly attacked by his Heathen contemporaries, particularly with regard to women; but his severe invectives against that sex, are his sufficient justification.

‘ From the service of this saint, from whom I received manumission, I entered into the family of Timasius, a leader of great eminence in the Imperial army, into whose favour I so far insinuated myself, that he preferred me to a good command, and soon made me partaker of both his company and his secrets. I soon grew intoxicated with this preferment, and the more he loaded me with benefits, the more he raised my opinion of my own merit; which still outstripping the rewards he conferred on me, inspired me rather with dissatisfaction than gratitude. And thus, by preferring me beyond my merit or first expectation, he made me an envious aspiring enemy, whom, perhaps, a more moderate bounty would have preserved a dutiful servant.

‘ I fell now acquainted with one Lucilius, a creature of the prime-minister Eutropius, who had by his favour been raised to the post of a tribune; a man of low morals, and eminent only in that meanest of all qualities, cunning. This gentleman imagining me a fit tool for the minister’s purpose, having often sounded my principles of honour and honesty; both which he declared to me were words without meaning: and finding my ready concurrence in his sentiments, recommended me to Eutropius, as very proper to execute some wicked purposes he had contrived against my friend Timasius. The minister embraced this recommendation, and I was accordingly acquainted by Lucilius, after some previous accounts of the great esteem Eutropius entertained of me, from the testimony he had borne of my parts) that he would introduce me to him; adding, that he was a great encourager of merit, and that I might depend upon his favour.

‘ I was with little difficulty prevailed on to accept this invitation. A late

late hour therefore the next evening being appointed, I attended my friend Lucilius to the minister's house. He received me with the utmost civility and cheerfulness, and affected so much regard to me, that I, who who knew nothing of these high scenes of life, concluded I had in him a most disinterested friend, owing to the favourable report which Lucilius had made of me. I was, however, soon cured of this opinion; for immediately after supper, our discourse turned on the injustice which the generality of the world were guilty of in their conduct to great men, expecting that they should reward their private merit, without ever endeavouring to apply it to their use. "What avail," said Eutropius, "the learning, wit, courage, or any virtue which a man may be possessed of, to me, unless I receive some benefit from them? Hath he not more merit to me, who doth my business, and obeys my commands, without any of these qualities?" I gave such entire satisfaction in my answers on this head, that both the minister and his creature grew bolder, and after some preface, began to accuse Timasius. At last, finding I did not attempt to defend him, Lucilius swore a great oath, that he was not fit to live, and that he would destroy him. Eutropius answered, that it would be too dangerous a task: "Indeed," says he, "his crimes are of so black a dye, and so well known to the emperor, that his death must be a very acceptable service, and could not fail meeting a proper reward; but I question whether you are capable of executing it."—"If he is not," cried I, "I am; and, surely, no man can have greater motives to destroy him than myself: for, besides his disloyalty to my prince, for whom I have so perfect a duty, I have private disobligations to him. I have had fellows put over my head, to the great scandal of the service in general, and to my own prejudice and dis-appointment in particular."—I will not repeat you my whole speech; but, to be as concise as possible, when we parted that evening, the minister squeezed me heartily by the hand, and with great commendation of my

honesty, and assurances of his favour, he appointed me, the next evening, to come to him alone; when finding me, after a little more scrutiny, ready for his purpose, he proposed to me, to accuse Timasius of high-treason; promising me the highest rewards, if I would undertake it. The consequence to him, I suppose you know, was ruin: but what was it to me? Why, truly, when I waited on Eutropius, for the fulfilling his promises, he received me with great distance and coldness; and on my dropping some hints of my expectations from him, he affected not to understand me; saying, he thought impudently was the utmost I could hope for, on discovering my accomplice, whose offence was only greater than mine; as he was in a higher station; and telling me, he had great difficulty to obtain a pardon for me from the emperor, which he said he had struggled very hardly for, as he had worked the discovery out of me, he turned away, and addressed himself to another person.

I was so incensed at this treatment, that I resolved revenge, and should certainly have pursued it, had he not cautiously prevented me, by taking effectual means to dispatch me soon after out of the world.

You will, I believe, now think I had a second good chance for the bottomless-pit, and indeed Minos seemed inclined to tumble me in, till he was informed of the revenge taken on me by Roderic, and my seven years subsequent servitude to the widow; which he said he thought sufficient to make atonement for all the crimes a single life could admit of; and so sent me back to try my fortune a third time.

CHAP. XI.

IN WHICH JULIAN RELATES HIS ADVENTURES IN THE CHARACTER OF AN AVARICIOUS JEW.

THE next character in which I was destined to appear in the flesh, was that of an avaricious Jew. I was born in Alexandria in Egypt. My name was Balthazar. Nothing very remarkable happened to me, till

‘ the year of the memorable tumult, in which the Jews of that city are reported in history to have massacred more Christians than at that time dwelt in it. Indeed, the truth is, they did maul the dogs pretty handsomely; but I myself was not present: for as all our people were ordered to be armed, I took that opportunity of selling two swords, which probably I might otherwise never have disposed of, they being extremely old and rusty; so that having no weapon left, I did not care to venture abroad. Besides, though I really thought it an act meriting salvation to murder the Nazarenes, as the fact was to be committed at midnight, at which time, to avoid suspicion, we were all to sally from our own houses; I could not persuade myself to consume so much oil in sitting up till that hour: for these reasons, therefore, I remained at home that evening.

‘ I was at this time greatly enamoured with one Hypatia, the daughter of a philosopher, a young lady of the greatest beauty and merit; indeed, she had every imaginable ornament both of mind and body. She seemed not to dislike my person; but there were two obstructions to our marriage, viz. my religion and her poverty; both which might probably have been got over, had not those dogs the Christians murdered her; and, what is worse, afterwards burnt her body: worse, I say, because I lost by that means a jewel of some value, which I had presented to her, designing, if our nuptials did not take place, to demand it of her back again.

‘ Being thus disappointed in my love, I soon after left Alexandria, and went to the Imperial city, where I apprehended I should find a good market for jewels on the approaching marriage of the emperor with Athenais. I disguised myself as a beggar on this journey, for these reasons: first, as I imagined I should thus carry my jewels with greater safety; and, secondly, to lessen my expences; which latter expedient succeeded so well, that I begged two oboli on my way more than my travelling cost me, my diet being chiefly roots, and my drink water.

‘ But, perhaps, it had been better for me if I had been more lavish, and more expeditious; for the ceremony was over before I reached Constantinople; so that I lost that glorious opportunity of disposing of my jewels, with which many of our people were greatly enriched.

‘ The life of a miser is very little worth relating, as it is one constant scheme of getting or saving money. I shall therefore repeat to you some few only of my adventures, without regard to any order.

‘ A Roman Jew, who was a great lover of Falernian wine, and who indulged himself very freely with it, came to dine at my house; when knowing he should meet with little wine, and that of the cheaper sort, he sent me in half a dozen jars of Falernian. Can you believe I would not give this man his own wine? Sir, I adulterated it so, that I made six jars of them; three of which he and his friend drank; the other three I afterwards sold to the very person who originally sent them me, knowing he would give a better price than any other.

‘ A noble Roman came one day to my house in the country, which I had purchased, for half the value, of a distressed person. My neighbours paid him the compliment of some mufick; on which account, when he departed, he left a piece of gold with me, to be distributed among them. I pocketed this money, and ordered them a small vessel of four wine, which I could not have sold for above two drachmas, and afterwards made them pay in work three times the value of it.

‘ As I was not entirely void of religion, though I pretended to infinitely more than I had, so I endeavoured to reconcile my transactions to my conscience as well as possible. Thus I never invited any one to eat with me, but those on whose pockets I had some design. After our collation, it was constantly my method to set down in a book I kept for that purpose, what I thought they owed me for their meal. Indeed, this was generally a hundred times as much as they could have dined elsewhere for: but, however, it was *quid pro quo*, if not *ad valorem*. Now, when-

‘ ever

‘ever the opportunity offered of imposing on them, I considered it only as paying myself what they owed me: indeed, I did not always confine myself strictly to what I had set down, however extravagant that was; but I reconciled taking the overplus to myself as usance.

‘But I was not only too cunning for others, I sometimes over-reached myself. I have contracted distempers for want of food and warmth, which have put me to the expence of a physician: nay, I once very narrowly escaped death by taking bad drugs, only to save one seven eighths per cent. in the price.

‘By these and such like means, in the midst of poverty and every kind of distress, I saw myself master of an immense fortune; the casting up and ruminating on which was my daily and only pleasure. This was however obstructed and embittered by two considerations, which, against my will, often invaded my thoughts. One would have been intolerable, (but that indeed seldom troubled me) was, that I must one day leave my darling treasure. The other haunted me continually, viz. that my riches were no greater. However, I comforted myself against this reflection, by an assurance that they would increase daily: on which head, my hopes were so extensive, that I may say with Virgil—

“*His ego nec metas rerum nec tempora pono.*”

‘Indeed, I am convinced, that had I possessed the whole globe of earth, I save one single drachma, which I had been certain never to be master of; I am convinced, I say, that single drachma, would have given me more uneasiness than all the rest could afford me pleasure.

‘To say the truth, between my solicitude in contriving schemes to procure money, and my extreme anxiety in preserving it, I never had one moment of ease while awake, nor of quiet when in my sleep. In all the characters through which I have passed, I have never undergone half the misery I suffered in this, and indeed Minos seemed to be of the same opinion: for while I stood trembling and shaking in expectation of my

‘sentence, he bid me go back about my business; for that nobody was to be d—ned in more worlds than one. And, indeed, I have since learnt that the devil will not receive a miser.’

CHAP. XII.

WHAT HAPPENED TO JULIAN IN THE CHARACTERS OF A GENERAL, AN HEIR, A CARPENTER, AND A BEAU.

‘THE next step I took into the world, was at Apollonia in Thrace; where I was born of a beautiful Greek slave, who was the mistress of Eutyches, a great favourite of the Emperor Zeno. That prince, at his restoration, gave me the command of a cohort, I being then but fifteen years of age; and a little afterwards, before I had ever seen an army, preferred me over the heads of all the old officers, to be a tribune.

‘As I found an easy access to the emperor, by means of my father’s intimacy with him, he being a very good courtier, or, in other words, a most prostitute flatterer; so I soon ingratiated myself with Zeno, and so well imitated my father in flattering him, that he would never part with me from about his person. So that the first armed force I ever beheld, was that with which Martian surrounded the palace, where I was then shut up with the rest of the court.

‘I was afterwards put at the head of a legion, and ordered to march into Syria, with Theodorick the Goth: that is, I mean, my legion was so ordered; for as to myself, I remained at court, with the name and pay of a general, without the labour or the danger.

‘As nothing could be more gay, i. e. debauched, than Zeno’s court, so the ladies of gay disposition had great sway in it; particularly one, whose name was Fausta, who, though not extremely handsome, was by her wit and sprightliness very agreeable to the emperor. With her I lived in good correspondence, and we together disposed of all kinds of commissions in the army, not to those who had most merit, but who would

‘ purchase at the highest rate. My
 ‘ levee was now prodigiously thronged
 ‘ by officers, who returned from the
 ‘ campaigns; who, though they might
 ‘ have been convinced, by daily exam-
 ‘ ple, how ineffectual a recommenda-
 ‘ tion their services were, still con-
 ‘ tinued indefatigable in attendance,
 ‘ and behaved to me with as much ob-
 ‘ servance and respect, as I should
 ‘ have been entitled to for making
 ‘ their fortunes, while I suffered them
 ‘ and their families to starve.

‘ Several poets, likewise, addressed
 ‘ verses to me, in which they cele-
 ‘ brated my military achievements;
 ‘ and what, perhaps, may seem strange
 ‘ to us at present, I received all this
 ‘ incense with most greedy vanity,
 ‘ without once reflecting, that as I
 ‘ did not deserve these compliments,
 ‘ they should rather put me in mind of
 ‘ my defects.

‘ My father was now dead, and I
 ‘ became so absolute in the emperor’s
 ‘ grace, that one unacquainted with
 ‘ courts would scarce believe the ser-
 ‘ vility with which all kinds of per-
 ‘ sons, who entered the walls of the
 ‘ palace, behaved towards me. A
 ‘ bow, a smile, a nod from me, as I
 ‘ past through cringing crouds, were
 ‘ esteemed as signal favours, but a
 ‘ gracious word made any one happy;
 ‘ and, indeed, had this real benefit
 ‘ attending it, that it drew on the per-
 ‘ son, on whom it was bestowed, a
 ‘ very great degree of respect from all
 ‘ others; for these are of current value
 ‘ in courts, and, like notes in trading
 ‘ communities, are assignable from one
 ‘ to the other. The smile of a court-
 ‘ favourite immediately raises the per-
 ‘ son who receives it, and gives a
 ‘ value to his smile when conferred on
 ‘ an inferior; thus the smile is trans-
 ‘ ferred from one to the other, and the
 ‘ great man at last is the person to dis-
 ‘ count it. For instance, a very low
 ‘ fellow hath a desire for a place. To
 ‘ whom is he to apply? Not to the
 ‘ great man; for to him he hath no
 ‘ access. He therefore applies to A,
 ‘ who is the creature of B, who is the
 ‘ tool of C, who is the flatterer of D,
 ‘ who is the catamite of E, who is the
 ‘ pimp of F, who is the bully of G,
 ‘ who is the buffoon of I, who is the
 ‘ husband of K, who is the whore of

‘ L, who is the bastard of M, who is
 ‘ the instrument of the great man.
 ‘ Thus the smile descending regularly
 ‘ from the great man to A, is dis-
 ‘ counted back again, and at last paid
 ‘ by the great man.

‘ It is manifest, that a court would
 ‘ subsist as difficultly without this kind
 ‘ of coin, as a trading city without
 ‘ paper credit. Indeed, they differ in
 ‘ this, that their value is not quite so
 ‘ certain, and a favourite may protest
 ‘ his smile without the danger of bank-
 ‘ ruptcy.

‘ In the midst of all this glory, the
 ‘ emperor died, and Anastasius was
 ‘ preferred to the crown. As it was
 ‘ yet uncertain whether I should not
 ‘ continue in favour, I was received
 ‘ as usual at my entrance into the pa-
 ‘ lace, to pay my respects to the new
 ‘ emperor; but I was no sooner rump-
 ‘ ed by him, than I received the same
 ‘ compliment from all the rest; the
 ‘ whole room, like a regiment of sol-
 ‘ diers, turning their backs to me all
 ‘ at once, my smile now was become
 ‘ of equal value with the note of a
 ‘ broken banker, and every one was
 ‘ as cautious not to receive it.

‘ I made as much haste as possible
 ‘ from the court, and shortly after
 ‘ from the city, retreating to the place
 ‘ of my nativity, where I spent the re-
 ‘ mainder of my days in a retired life
 ‘ in husbandry, the only amusement
 ‘ for which I was qualified, having
 ‘ neither learning nor virtue.

‘ When I came to the gate, Minos
 ‘ again seemed at first doubtful, but
 ‘ at length dismissed me; saying,
 ‘ though I had been guilty of many
 ‘ heinous crimes, in as much as I had,
 ‘ though a general, never been con-
 ‘ cerned in spilling human blood, I
 ‘ might return again to earth.

‘ I was now again born in Alexan-
 ‘ dria, and, by great accident, enter-
 ‘ ing into the womb of my daughter-
 ‘ in-law, came forth my own grand-
 ‘ son, inheriting that fortune which I
 ‘ had before amassed.

‘ Extravagance was now as noto-
 ‘ riously my vice, as avarice had been
 ‘ formerly; and I spent, in a very
 ‘ short life, what had cost me the la-
 ‘ bour of a very long one to rake to-
 ‘ gether. Perhaps you will think my
 ‘ present condition was more to be en-
 ‘ vied

‘vied than my former; but upon my word it was very little so; for by possessing every thing almost before I desired it, I could hardly ever say, I enjoyed my wish; I scarce ever knew the delight of satisfying a craving appetite. Besides, as I never once thought, my mind was useless to me, and I was an absolute stranger to all the pleasures arising from it. Nor, indeed, did my education qualify me for any delicacy in other enjoyments; so that in the midst of plenty I loathed every thing. Taste for elegance, I had none; and the greatest of corporeal blisses I felt no more from, than the lowest animal. In a word, as while a miser I had plenty without daring to use it, so now I had it without appetite.

‘But if I was not very happy in the height of my enjoyment, so I afterward became perfectly miserable; being soon overtaken by disease, and reduced to distress, till at length, with a broken constitution, and broken heart, I ended my wretched days in a gaol; nor can I think the sentence of Minos too mild, who condemned me, after having taken a large dose of avarice, to wander three years on the banks of Cocytus, with the knowledge of having spent the fortune in the person of the grandson, which I had raised in that of the grandfather.

‘The place of my birth, on my return to the world, was Constantinople, where my father was a carpenter. The first thing I remembered was, the triumph of Belisarius; which was, indeed, a most noble shew; but nothing pleased me so much as the figure of Gelimer, king of the African Vandals, who being led captive on this occasion, reflecting with disdain on the mutation of his own fortune, and on the ridiculous empty pomp of the conqueror, cried out, “VANITY, VANITY! ALL IS MERE VANITY!”

‘I was bred up to my father’s trade, and you may easily believe so low a sphere could produce no adventures worth your notice. However, I married a woman I liked, and who proved a very tolerable wife. My days were past in hard labour; but this procured me health, and I en-

‘joyed a homely supper at night with my wife, with more pleasure than I apprehend greater persons find at their luxurious meals. My life had scarce any variety in it, and at my death, I advanced to Minos with great confidence of entering the gate; but I was unhappily obliged to discover some frauds I had been guilty of in the measure of my work, when I worked by the foot, as well as my laziness when I was employed by the day. On which account, when I attempted to pass, the angry judge laid hold on me by the shoulders, and turned me back so violently, that had I had a neck of flesh and bone, I believe he would have broke it.’

CHAP. XIII.

JULIAN PASSES INTO A FOP.

‘MY next scene of action was Rome; I was born into a noble family, and heir to a considerable fortune; on which my parents, thinking I should not want any talents, resolved very kindly and wisely to throw none away upon me. The only instructors of my youth were therefore one Saltator, who taught me several motions for my legs; and one Ficus, whose business was to shew me the cleanest way (as he called it) of cutting off a man’s head. When I was well accomplished in these sciences, I thought nothing more wanting, but what was to be furnished by the several mechanicks in Rome, who dealt in dressing and adorning the Pope. Being therefore well equipped with all which their art could produce, I became, at the age of twenty, a compleat finished beau. And now, during forty-five years, I dressed, I sung and danced, and danced and sung, I bowed and ogled, and ogled and bowed, till, in the sixty-sixth year of my age, I got cold by over-heating myself with dancing, and died.

‘Minos told me, as I was unworthy of Elysium, so I was too insignificant to be damned, and therefore bade me walk back again.’

CHAP. XIV.

ADVENTURES IN THE PERSON OF A
MONK.

FORTUNE now placed me in the character of a younger brother of a good house, and I was in my youth sent to school; but learning was now at so low an ebb, that my master himself could hardly construe a sentence of Latin; and as for Greek, he could not read it. With very little knowledge, therefore, and with altogether as little virtue, I was set apart for the church, and at the proper age commenced monk. I lived many years retired in a cell, a life very agreeable to the gloominess of my temper, which was much inclined to despise the world; that is, in other words, to envy all men of superior fortune and qualifications, and in general, to hate and detest the human species. Notwithstanding which, I could, on proper occasions, submit to flatter the vilest fellow in nature, which I did one Stephen an eunuch, a favourite of the Emperor Justinian II. one of the wickedest wretches whom perhaps the world ever saw. I not only wrote a panegyrick on this man, but I commended him as a pattern to all others in my sermons, by which means I so greatly ingratiated myself with him, that he introduced me to the emperor's presence, where I prevailed so far by the same methods, that I was shortly taken from my cell, and preferred to a place at court. I was no sooner established in the favour of Justinian, than I prompted him to all kind of cruelty. As I was of a sour morose temper, and hated nothing more than the symptoms of happiness appearing in any countenance, I represented all kind of diversion and amusement as the most horrid sins. I inveighed against cheerfulness as levity, and encouraged nothing but gravity, or, to confess the truth to you, hypocrisy. The unhappy emperor followed my advice, and incensed the people by such repeated barbarities, that he was at last deposed by them and banished.

I now retired again to my cell,

(for historians mistake in saying I was put to death) where I remained safe from the danger of the irritated mob, whom I cursed in my own heart, as much as they could curse me.

Justinian, after three years of his banishment, returned to Constantinople in disguise, and paid me a visit. I at first affected not to know him, and without the least compunction of gratitude for his former favours, intended not to receive him, till a thought immediately suggesting itself to me, how I might convert him to my advantage, I pretended to recollect him; and blaming the shortness of my memory, and badness of my eyes, I sprang forward and embraced him with great affection.

My design was to betray him to Apsimar, who, I doubted not, would generously reward such a service. I therefore very earnestly requested him to spend the whole evening with me; to which he consented. I formed an excuse for leaving him a few minutes, and ran away to the palace to acquaint Apsimar with the guest whom I then had in my cell. He presently ordered a guard to go with me and seize him; but whether the length of my stay gave him any suspicion, or whether he changed his purpose after my departure, I know not; for at my return, we found he had given us the slip; nor could we with the most diligent search discover him.

Apsimar, being disappointed of his prey, now raged at me; at first denouncing the most dreadful vengeance, if I did not produce the deposed monarch: however, by soothing his passion when at the highest, and afterwards by canting and flattery, I made a shift to escape his fury.

When Justinian was restored, I very confidently went to wish him joy of his restoration; but it seems he had unfortunately heard of my treachery, so that he at first received me coldly, and afterwards upbraided me openly with what I had done. I persevered stoutly in denying it, as I knew no evidence could be produced against me; till finding him irreconcilable, I betook myself to reviling him in my sermons, and on every

every other occasion, as an enemy to the church and good men, and as an infidel, an heretick, an atheist, a heathen, and an Arian. This I did immediately on his return, and before he gave those flagrant proofs of his inhumanity, which afterwards sufficiently verified all I had said.

Luckily I died on the same day when a great number of those forces which Justinian had sent against the Thracian Bosphorus, and who had executed such unheard of cruelties there, perished. As every one of these was cast into the bottomless-pit, Minos was so tired with condemnation, that he proclaimed that all present, who had not been concerned in that bloody expedition, might, if they pleased, return to the other world. I took him at his word, and presently turning about, began my journey.

CHAP. XV.

JULIAN PASSES INTO THE CHARACTER OF A FIDDLER.

ROME was now the seat of my nativity. My mother was an African, a woman of no great beauty, but a favourite, I suppose from her piety, to Pope Gregory II. Who was my father I know not; but I believe a very considerable man; for after the death of that Pope, who was, out of his religion, a very good friend of my mother, we fell into great distress, and were at length reduced to walk the streets of Rome; nor had either of us any other support but a fiddle, on which I played with pretty tolerable skill: for as my genius turned naturally to musick, so I had been in my youth very early instructed at the expence of the good Pope. This afforded us but a very poor livelihood; for though I had often a numerous crowd of hearers, few ever thought themselves obliged to contribute the smallest pittance to the poor starving wretch who had given them pleasure. Nay; some of the graver sort, after an hour's attention to my musick, have gone away shaking their heads, and crying, it was a shame such vaga-

bonds were suffered to stay in the city.

To say the truth, I am confident the fiddle would not have kept us alive, had we entirely depended on the generosity of my hearers. My mother, therefore, was forced to use her own industry; and while I was soothing the ears of the crowd, she applied to their pockets, and that generally with such good success, that we now began to enjoy a very comfortable subsistence; and, indeed, had we had the least prudence or forecast, might have soon acquired enough to enable us to quit this dangerous and dishonourable way of life: but I know not what is the reason, that money got with labour and safety is constantly preserved, while the produce of danger and ease is commonly spent as easily, and often as wickedly, as acquired. Thus we proportioned our expences rather by what we had, than what we wanted, or even desired; and on obtaining a considerable booty, we have even forced nature into the most profligate extravagance, and have been wicked without inclination.

We carried on this method of thievery for a long time without detection; but as fortune generally leaves persons of extraordinary ingenuity in the lurch at last, so did she us; for my poor mother was taken in the fact, and, together with myself, as her accomplice, hurried before a magistrate.

Luckily for us, the person who was to be our judge was the greatest lover of musick in the whole city, and had often sent for me to play to him, for which, as he had given me very small rewards, perhaps his gratitude now moved him: but, whatever was his motive, he brow-beat the informers against us, and treated their evidence with so little favour, that their mouths were soon stopped, and we dismissed with honour; acquitted, I should rather have said, for we were not suffered to depart, till I had given the judge several tunes on the fiddle.

We escaped the better on this occasion, because the person robbed happened to be a poet, which gave the judge, who was a facetious person,

son,

son, many opportunities of jesting: He said, poets and musicians should agree together, seeing they had married sisters, which he afterwards explained to be the sister arts. And when the piece of gold was produced, he burst into a loud laugh, and said it must be the golden age when poets had gold in their pockets, and in that age there could be no robbers. He made many more jests of the same kind, but a small taste will suffice.

It is a common saying, that men should take warning by any signal delivery, but I cannot approve the justice of it; for to me it seems that the acquittal of a guilty person should rather inspire him with confidence, and it had this effect on us; for we now laughed at the law, and despised it's punishments, which we found were to be escaped even against positive evidence. We imagined the late example was rather a warning to the accuser than the criminal, and accordingly proceeded in the most impudent and flagitious manner.

Among other robberies, one night, being admitted by the servants into the house of an opulent priest, my mother took an opportunity, whilst the servants were dancing to my tunes, to convey away a silver vessel; this she did without the least sacrilegious intention: but it seems the cup, which was a pretty large one, was dedicated to holy uses, and only borrowed by the priest on an entertainment which he made for some of his brethren. We were immediately pursued upon this robbery, (the cup being taken in our possession) and carried before the same magistrate who had before behaved to us with so much gentleness: but his countenance was now changed; for the moment the priest appeared against us, his severity was as remarkable as his candour had been before, and we were both ordered to be stripped and whipped through the streets.

This sentence was executed with great severity, the priest himself attending, and encouraging the executioner, which he said he did for the good of our souls: but though our backs were both lashed, neither my

mother's torments nor my own afflicted me so much as the indignity offered to my poor fiddle, which was carried in triumph before me, and treated with a contempt by the multitude, intimating a great scorn for the science I had the honour to profess; which, as it is one of the noblest inventions of men, and as I had been always in the highest degree proud of my excellence in it, I suffered so much from the ill-treatment my fiddle received, that I would have given all my remainder of skin to have preserved it from this affront.

My mother survived the whipping a very short time, and I was now reduced to great distress and misery; till a young Roman of considerable rank took a fancy to me, received me into his family, and conversed with me in the utmost familiarity. He had a violent attachment to musick, and would learn to play on the fiddle; but through want of genius for the science, he never made any considerable progress: however, I flattered his performance, and he grew extravagantly fond of me for so doing. Had I continued this behaviour, I might possibly have reaped the greatest advantages from his kindness; but I had raised his own opinion of his musical abilities so high, that he now began to prefer his skill to mine, a presumption I could not bear. One day, as we were playing in concert, he was horribly out; nor was it possible, as he destroyed the harmony, to avoid telling him of it. Instead of receiving my correction, he answered, it was my blunder, and not his, and that I had mistaken the key. Such an affront from my own scholar was beyond human patience; I flew into a violent passion; I flung down my instrument in a rage, and swore I was not to be taught musick at my age. He answered with as much warmth, nor was he to be instructed by a strolling fiddler. The dispute ended in a challenge to play a prize before judges: this wager was determined in my favour; but the purchase was a dear one, for I lost my friend by it, who now twitting me with all his kindness, with my former ignominious punishment, and

the

the destitute condition from which I had been by his bounty relieved, discarded me for ever.

While I lived with this gentleman, I became known, among others, to Sabina, a lady of distinction, and who valued herself much on her taste for musick. She no sooner heard of my being discarded, than she took me into her house, where I was extremely well clothed and fed. Notwithstanding which, my situation was far from agreeable; for I was obliged to submit to her constant reprehensions before company, which gave me the greater uneasiness because they were always wrong; nor am I certain that she did not by these provocations contribute to my death: for as experience had taught me to give up my resentment to my bread, so my passions, for want of outward vent, preyed inwardly on my vitals, and, perhaps, occasioned the distemper of which I sickened.

The lady who, amidst all the faults she found, was very fond of me, nay, probably was the fonder of me the more faults she found, immediately called in the aid of three celebrated physicians. The doctors (being well feed) made me seven visits in three days; and two of them were at the door to visit me the eighth time, when being acquainted that I was just dead, they shook their heads, and departed.

When I came to Minos, he asked me with a smile, whether I had brought my fiddle with me; and receiving an answer in the negative, he bid me get about my business, saying, it was well for me that the devil was no lover of musick.

CHAP. XVI.

THE HISTORY OF THE WISE MAN.

I Now returned to Rome, but in a very different character. Fortune had now allotted me a serious part to act. I had even in my infancy a grave disposition, nor was I ever seen to smile; which infused an opinion into all about me, that I was a child of great solidity: some foreseeing that I should be a judge, and

others a bishop. At two years old my father presented me with a rattle, which I broke to pieces with great indignation. This the good parent, being extremely wise, regarded as an eminent symptom of my wisdom, and cried out in a kind of extasy, "Well said, boy! I warrant thou makest a great man."

At school, I could never be persuaded to play with my mates; not that I spent my hours in learning, to which I was not in the least addicted, nor indeed had I any talents for it. However, the solemnity of my carriage won so much on my master, who was a most sagacious person, that I was his chief favourite, and my example on all occasions was recommended to the other boys, which filled them with envy, and me with pleasure; but though they envied me, they all paid me that involuntary respect, which it is the curse attending this passion to bear towards its object.

I had now obtained universally the character of a very wise young man, which I did not altogether purchase without pains; for the restraint I laid on myself in abstaining from the several diversions adapted to my years, cost me many a yearning: but the pride which I inwardly enjoyed in the fancied dignity of my character, made me some amends.

Thus I passed on, without any thing very memorable happening to me, till I arrived at the age of twenty-three; when, unfortunately, I fell acquainted with a young Neapolitan lady, whose name was Ariadne. Her beauty was so exquisite, that her first sight made a violent impression on me; this was again improved by her behaviour, which was most genteel, easy, and affable: lastly, her conversation compleated the conquest. In this she discovered a strong and lively understanding, with the sweetest and most benign temper. This lovely creature was about eighteen when I first unhappily beheld her at Rome, in a visit to a relation, with whom I had great intimacy. As our interviews at first were extremely frequent, my passions were captivated before I apprehended the least danger; and the sooner, probably, as the young lady herself, to whom I

consulted every method of recommendation, was not displeased with my being her admirer.

Ariadne having spent three months at Rome, now returned to Naples, bearing my heart with her; on the other hand, I had all the assurances, consistent with the constraint under which the most perfect modesty lays a young woman, that her own heart was not entirely unaffected. I soon found her absence gave me an uneasiness not easy to be borne, or to remove. I now first applied to diversions, (of the graver sort, particularly to musick) but in vain; they rather raised my desires, and heightened my anguish. My passion at length grew so violent, that I began to think of satisfying it. As the first step to this, I cautiously enquired into the circumstances of Ariadne's parents, with which I was hitherto unacquainted; though, indeed, I did not apprehend they were extremely great, notwithstanding the handsome appearance of their daughter at Rome. Upon examination, her fortune exceeded my expectation; but was not sufficient to justify my marriage with her in the opinion of the wise and prudent. I had now a violent struggle between Wisdom and Happiness; in which, after several grievous pangs, Wisdom got the better. I could by no means prevail with myself to sacrifice that character of profound wisdom, which I had with such uniform conduct obtained, and with such caution hitherto preserved. I therefore resolved to conquer my affection, whatever it cost me; and, indeed, it did not cost me a little.

While I was engaged in this conflict, (for it lasted a long time) Ariadne returned to Rome: her presence was a terrible enemy to my wisdom, which even in her absence had with great difficulty stood its ground. It seems (as she hath since told me in Elysium, with much merriment) I had made the same impressions on her which she had made on me. Indeed, I believe my wisdom would have been totally subdued by this surprize, had it not cunningly suggested to me a method of satisfying my passion without doing any injury to my reputation. This was by engaging her privately as a mistress, which was at

that time reputable enough at Rome, provided the affair was managed with an air of slyness and gravity, though the secret was known to the whole city.

I immediately set about this project, and employed every art and engine to effect it. I had particularly bribed her priest, and an old female acquaintance and distant relation of hers, into my interest: but all was in vain; her virtue opposed the passion in her breast as strongly as wisdom had opposed it in mine. She received my proposals with the utmost disdain, and presently refused to see or hear from me any more.

She returned again to Naples, and left me in a worse condition than before. My days I now passed with the most irksome uneasiness, and my nights were restless and sleepless. The story of our amour was now pretty publick, and the ladies talked of our match as certain; but my acquaintance denied their assent, saying, "No, no; he is too wise to marry so imprudently." This, their opinion, gave me, I own, very great pleasure; but, to say the truth, scarce compensated the pangs I suffered to preserve it.

One day, while I was balancing with myself, and had almost resolved to enjoy my happiness at the price of my character, a friend brought me word that Ariadne was married. This news struck me to the soul; and, though I had resolution enough to maintain my gravity before him, (for which I suffered not a little the more) the moment I was alone, I threw myself into the most violent fit of despair, and would willingly have parted with wisdom, fortune, and every thing else, to have retrieved her; but that was impossible, and I had now nothing but time to hope a cure from. This was very tedious in performing, and the longer as Ariadne had married a Roman cavalier, was now become my near neighbour, and I had the mortification of seeing her make the best of wives, and of having the happiness, which I had lost, every day before my eyes.

If I suffered so much on account of my wisdom in having refused Ariadne, I was not much more obliged to

to it for procuring me a rich widow, who was recommended to me by an old friend, as a very prudent match; and, indeed, so it was, her fortune being superior to mine, in the same proportion as that of Ariadne had been inferior. I therefore embraced this proposal, and my character of wisdom soon pleaded so effectually for me with the widow, who was herself a woman of great gravity and discretion, that I soon succeeded; and as soon as decency would permit, (of which this lady was the strictest observer) we were married, being the second day of the second week, of the second year, after her husband's death; for she said she thought some period of time above the year had a great air of decorum.

But, prudent as this lady was, she made me miserable. Her person was far from being lovely; but her temper was intolerable. During fifteen years habitation, I never passed a single day without heartily cursing her, and the hour in which we came together. The only comfort I received in the midst of the highest torments, was from continually hearing the prudence of my match commended by all my acquaintance.

Thus, you see, in the affairs of love, I bought the reputation of wisdom pretty dear. In other matters I had it somewhat cheaper; not that hypocrisy, which was the price I gave for it, gives one no pain. I have refused myself a thousand little amusements with a feigned contempt, while I have really had an inclination to them. I have often almost choked myself to refrain from laughing at a jest, and (which was, perhaps, to myself the least hurtful of all my hypocrisy) have heartily enjoyed a book in my closet, which I have spoke with detestation of in publick. To sum up my history in short, as I had few adventures worth remembering, my whole life was one constant lye; and happy would it have been for me, if I could as thoroughly have imposed on myself as I did on others; for reflection, at every turn, would often remind me I was not so wise as people thought me; and this considerably embittered the pleasure I received from the publick commendation of my wisdom. This self-ad-

monition, like a *memento mori*, or *mortalis es*, must be, in my opinion, a very dangerous enemy to flattery: indeed, a weight sufficient to counterbalance all the false praise of the world. But whether it be that the generality of wise men do not reflect at all, or whether they have, from a constant imposition on others, contracted such a habit of deceit as to deceive themselves, I will not determine: it is, I believe, most certain, that very few wise men know themselves what fools they are, more than the world doth. Good Gods! could one but see what passes in the closet of Wisdom! how ridiculous a sight must it be to behold the wise man, who despises gratifying his palate, devouring custard; the sober wife man with his dram-bottle; or the anti-carnalist (if I may be allowed the expression) chuckling over a b—y-book or picture, and, perhaps, caressing his house-maid!

But to conclude a character, in which I apprehend I made as absurd a figure as in any in which I trod the stage of earth, my wisdom at last put an end to itself; that is, occasioned my dissolution.

A relation of mine, in the eastern part of the empire, disinherited his son, and left me his heir. This happened in the depth of winter, when I was in my grand climacterick, and had just recovered of a dangerous disease. As I had all the reason imaginable to apprehend the family of the deceased would conspire against me, and embezzle as much as they could, I advised with a grave and wise friend, what was proper to be done; whether I should go myself, or employ a notary on this occasion, and defer my journey to the spring. To say the truth, I was most inclined to the latter; the rather, as my circumstances were extremely flourishing, as I was advanced in years, and had not one person in the world to whom I should with pleasure bequeath any fortune at my death.

My friend told me, he thought my question admitted no manner of doubt or debate; that common prudence absolutely required my immediate departure; adding, that if the same good luck had happened to him, he would have been already on his jour-

“ney; “For,” continued he, “a man
“who knows the world so well as
“you, would be inexcusable to give
“persons such an opportunity of cheat-
“ing you, who, you must be assured,
“will be too well inclined; and as for
“employing a notary, remember that
“excellent maxim, *Ne facias per ali-*
“*um, quod fieri potest per te.* I own
“the badness of the season, and your
“very late recovery, are unlucky cir-
“cumstances; but a wise man must
“get over difficulties, when necessity
“obliges him to encounter them.”

“I was immediately determined by
“this opinion. The duty of a wise
“man made an irresistible impression,
“and I took the necessity for granted,
“without examination. I accordingly
“set forward the next morning; very
“tempestuous weather soon overtook
“me; I had not travelled three days
“before I relapsed into my fever, and
“died.

“I was now as cruelly disappointed
“by Minos, as I had formerly been
“happily so. I advanced with the ut-
“most confidence to the gate, and
“really imagined I should have been
“admitted by the wisdom of my counte-
“nance, even without any questions
“asked: but this was not my case;
“and, to my great surprize, Minos,
“with a menacing voice, called out to
“me—“You, Mr. there, with the
“grave countenance, whither so fast,
“pray? Will you please, before you
“move any farther forwards, to give
“me a short account of your transac-
“tions below?”—I then began, and
“recounted to him my whole history,
“still expecting, at the end of every
“period, that the gate would be or-
“dered to fly open: but I was obliged
“to go quite through with it, and then
“Minos, after some little consideration,
“spoke to me as follows—

“You, Mr. Wise-man, stand forth,
“if you please. Believe me, Sir, a
“trip back again to earth will be one
“of the wisest steps you ever took,
“and really more to the honour of
“your wisdom than any you have
“hitherto taken. On the other side,
“nothing could be simpler than to en-
“deavour at Elysium; for who, but
“a fool, would carry a commodity
“which is of such infinite value in
“one place, into another where it is
“of none. But, without attempting

“to offend your gravity with a jest,
“you must return to the place from
“whence you came; for Elysium was
“never designed for those who are too
“wise to be happy.”

“This sentence confounded me
“greatly, especially as it seemed to
“threaten me with carrying my wis-
“dom back again to earth. I told the
“judge, though he would not admit
“me at the gate, I hoped I had com-
“mitted no crime, while alive, which
“merited my being wise any longer.
“He answered me, I must take my
“chance as to that matter; and imme-
“diately we turned our backs to each
“other.”

CHAP. XVII.

JULIAN ENTERS INTO THE PERSON OF A KING.

“I Was now born at Oviedo in Spain;
“my father’s name was Vere-
“mond, and I was adopted by my
“uncle, King Alphonso the Chaste.
“I don’t recollect in all the pilgri-
“mages I have made on earth, that I
“ever passed a more miserable infancy
“than now, being under the utmost
“confinement and restraint, and sur-
“rounded with physicians, who were
“ever dosing me, and tutors, who
“were continually plaguing me with
“their instructions; even those hours
“of leisure, which my inclination
“would have spent in play, were al-
“lotted to tedious pomp and ceremo-
“ny, which at an age wherein I had
“no ambition to enjoy the servility of
“courtiers, enslaved me more than it
“could the meanest of them. How-
“ever, as I advanced towards man-
“hood, my condition made me some
“amends; for the most beautiful wo-
“men of their own accord threw out
“lures for me, and I had the happi-
“ness, which no man in an inferior
“degree can arrive at, of enjoying the
“most delicious creatures, without the
“previous and tiresome ceremonies of
“of courtship, unless with the most
“simple, young, and unexperienced.
“As for the court-ladies, they regarded
“me rather as men do the most lovely
“of the other sex; and though they
“outwardly retained some appearance
“of modesty, they in reality rather
“considered

considered themselves as receiving than conferring favours.

Another happiness I enjoyed was, in conferring favours of another sort; for as I was extremely good-natured and generous, so I had daily opportunities of satisfying those passions. Besides my own princely allowance, which was very bountiful, and with which I did many liberal and good actions, I recommended numberless persons of merit in distress, to the king's notice, most of whom were provided for.

Indeed, had I sufficiently known my blessed situation at this time, I should have grieved at nothing more than the death of Alphonso, by which the burden of government devolved upon me: but so blindly fond was ambition, and such charms doth it fancy in the power, and pomp, and splendor of a crown, that though I vehemently loved that king, and had the greatest obligations to him, the thoughts of succeeding him obliterated my regret at his loss, and the wish for my approaching coronation dried my eyes at his funeral.

But my fondness for the name of king, did not make me forgetful of those over whom I was to reign. I considered them in the light in which a tender father regards his children, as persons whose well-being God had intrusted to my care; and again, in that in which a prudent lord respects his tenants, as those on whose wealth and grandeur he is to build his own. Both these considerations inspired me with the greatest care for their welfare, and their good was my first and ultimate concern.

The usurper Mauregas had impiously obliged himself, and his successors, to pay to the Moors every year an infamous tribute of a hundred young virgins: from this cruel and scandalous imposition, I resolved to relieve my country. Accordingly, when their Emperor Abderames the Second, had the audaciousness to make this demand of me, instead of complying with it, I ordered his ambassadors to be driven away with all imaginable ignominy, and would have condemned them to death, could I have done it without a manifest violation of the law of nations.

I now raised an immense army;

at the levying of which I made a speech from my throne, acquainting my subjects with the necessity and the reasons of the war in which I was going to engage; which I convinced them I had undertaken for their ease and safety, and not for satisfying any wanton ambition, or revenging any private pique of my own. They all declared unanimously, that they would venture their lives, and every thing dear to them, in my defence, and in the support of the honour of my crown. Accordingly my levies were instantly compleat, sufficient numbers being only left to till the land; churchmen, even bishops themselves, enlisting themselves under my banners. The armies met at Alvelda, where we were discomfited with immense loss, and nothing but the lucky intervention of the night could have saved our whole army.

I retreated to the summit of a hill, where I abandoned myself to the highest agonies of grief, not so much for the danger in which I then saw my crown, as for the loss of those miserable wretches who had exposed their lives at my command. I could not then avoid this reflection, that if the deaths of these people in a war, undertaken absolutely for their protection, could give me such concern; what horror must I have felt, if, like princes greedy of dominion, I had sacrificed such numbers to my own pride, vanity, and ridiculous lust of power.

After having vented my sorrows for some time in this manner, I began to consider by what means I might possibly endeavour to retrieve this misfortune; when reflecting on the great number of priests I had in my army, and on the prodigious force of superstition, a thought luckily suggested itself to me, to counterfeit that St. James had appeared to me in a vision, and had promised me the victory. While I was ruminating on this, the Bishop of Najara came opportunely to me. As I did not intend to communicate the secret to him, I took another method, and instead of answering any thing the bishop said to me, I pretended to talk to St. James, as if he had been really present; till at length, after

‘ after having spoke those things, which I thought sufficient, and thanked the saint aloud for his promise of the victory, I turned about to the bishop, and embracing him with a pleased countenance, protested I did not know he was present; and then informing him of this supposed vision, I asked him, if he had not himself seen the saint. He answered me, he had; and afterwards proceeded to assure me, that this appearance of St. James was entirely owing to his prayers; for that he was his tutelar saint. He added, he had a vision of him a few hours before, when he promised him a victory over the Infidels, and acquainted him at the same time of the vacancy of the see of Toledo. Now this news being really true, though it had happened so lately that I had not heard of it, (nor, indeed, was it well possible I should, considering the great distance of the way) when I was afterwards acquainted with it, a little staggered me, though far from being superstitious; till being informed that the bishop had lost three horses on a late expedition, I was satisfied.

‘ The next morning, the bishop, at my desire, mounted the rostrum, and trumpeted forth this vision so effectually, which he said he had that evening twice seen with his own eyes, that a spirit began to be infused through the whole army, which rendered them superior to almost any force: the bishop insisted, that the least doubt of success was giving the lie to the saint, and a damnable sin; and he took upon him in his name to promise them victory.

‘ The army being drawn out, I soon experienced the effect of enthusiasm, for having contrived another * stratagem to strengthen what the bishop had said, the soldiers fought more like furies than men. My stratagem was this: I had about me a dextrous fellow, who had been formerly a pimp in my amours; him I dressed up in a strange antick dress, with a pair of white colours in his right hand, a red cross in his left, and having disguised him so, that no one could know him, I placed him on a

‘ white horse, and ordered him to ride to the head of the army, and cry out, “ Follow St. James ! ” These words were reiterated by all the troops, who attacked the enemy with such intrepidity, that, notwithstanding our inferiority of numbers, we soon obtained a compleat victory.

‘ The bishop was come up by the time that the enemy was routed, and acquainting us, that he had met St. James by the way, and that he had informed him of what had passed; he added, that he had express orders from the saint to receive a considerable sum for his use, and that a certain tax on corn and wine should be settled on his church for ever; and lastly, that a horseman’s pay should be allowed for the future to the saint himself, of which he and his successors were appointed receivers. The army received these demands with such acclamations, that I was obliged to comply with them, as I could by no means discover the imposition; nor do I believe I should have gained any credit if I had.

‘ I had now done with the saint, but the bishop had not; for about a week afterwards, lights were seen in a wood near where the battle was fought; and in a short time afterwards, they discovered his tomb at the same place. Upon this, the bishop made me a visit, and forced me to go thither to build a church to him, and largely endow it. In a word, the good man so plagued me with miracle after miracle, that I was forced to make interest with the Pope to convey him to Toledo, to get rid of him.

‘ But to proceed to other matters.— There was an inferior officer, who had behaved very bravely in the battle against the Moors, and had received several wounds, who solicited me for preferment; which I was about to confer on him, when one of my ministers came to me in a fright, and told me, that he had promised the post I designed for this man to the son of Count Alderedo; and that the count, who was a powerful person, would be greatly disoblinded at the refusal, as he had sent for his

* This silly story is told as a solemn truth, (i.e. that St. James really appeared in the manner this fellow is described) by Mariana, L. 7. § 78.

son from school to take possession of it. I was obliged to agree with my minister's reasons, and at the same time recommended the wounded soldier to be preferred by him, which he faithfully promised he would: but I met the poor wretch since in Elysium, who informed me he was afterwards starved to death.

None, who hath not been himself a prince, nor any prince, till his death, can conceive the impositions daily put on them by their favourites and ministers; so that princes are often blamed for the faults of others. The Count of Saldagne had been long confined in prison, when his son D. Bernard del Carpio, who had performed the greatest actions against the Moors, entreated me, as a reward for his service, to grant him his father's liberty. The old man's punishment had been so tedious, and the services of the young one so singularly eminent, that I was very inclinable to grant the request; but my ministers strongly opposed it. They told me, my glory demanded revenge for the dishonour offered to my family; that so positive a demand carried with it rather the air of menace than entreaty; that the vain detail of his services, and the recompence due to them, was an injurious reproach; that to grant what had been so haughtily demanded, would argue in the monarch both weakness and timidity; in a word, that to remit the punishment inflicted by my predecessors, would be to condemn their judgment. Lastly, one told me in a whisper, "His whole family are enemies to your house." By these means the ministers prevailed. The young lord took the refusal so ill, that he retired from court, and abandoned himself to despair, whilst the old one languished in prison. By which means, as I have since discovered, I lost the use of two of my best subjects.

To confess the truth, I had by means of my ministers conceived a very unjust opinion of my whole people, whom I fancied to be daily conspiring against me, and to entertain the most disloyal thoughts; when in reality (as I have known since my death) they held me in universal respect and esteem. This is a trick, I believe; too often played with so-

vereigns, who by such means are prevented from that open intercourse with their subjects, which as it would greatly endear the person of the prince to the people, so might it often prove dangerous to a minister, who was consulting his own interest only at the expence of both. I believe I have now recounted to you the most material passages of my life; for I assure you, there are some incidents in the lives of kings not extremely worth relating. Every thing which passes in their minds and families, is not attended with the splendor which surrounds their throne: indeed, there are some hours wherein the naked king and the naked cobbler can scarce be distinguished from each other.

Had it not been, however, for my ingratitude to Bernard del Carpio, I believe this would have been my last pilgrimage on earth; for as to the story of St. James, I thought Minos would have burst his sides at it: but he was so displeased with me on the other account, that with a frown, he cried out, "Get thee back again, king!" Nor would he suffer me to say another word.

C H A P. XVIII.

JULIAN PASSES INTO A FOOL.

THE next visit I made to the world, was performed in France, where I was born in the court of Lewis III. and had afterwards the honour to be preferred to be fool to the prince, who was surnamed Charles the Simple. But in reality, I know not whether I might so properly be said to have acted the fool in his court, as to have made fools of all others in it. Certain it is, I was very far from being what is generally understood by that word, being a most cunning, designing, arch knave. I knew very well the folly of my master and of many others, and how to make my advantage of this knowledge. I was as dear to Charles the Simple, as the player Paris was to Domitian, and, like him, bestowed all manner of offices and honours on whom I pleased. This drew me a great number of fol-

lowers

lowers among the courtiers, who really mistook me for a fool, and yet flattered my understanding. There was, particularly, in the court a fellow, who had neither honour, honesty, sense, wit, courage, beauty, nor indeed any one good quality, either of mind or body, to recommend him; but was at the same time, perhaps, as cunning a monster as ever lived. This gentleman took it into his head to lift under my banner, and pursued me so very assiduously with flattery, constantly reminding me of my good sense, that I grew immoderately fond of him; for though flattery is not most judiciously applied to qualities which the persons flattered possess, yet, as notwithstanding my being well assured of my own parts, I past in the whole court for a fool, this flattery was a very sweet morsel to me. I therefore got this fellow preferred to a bishoprick; but I lost my flatterer by it, for he never afterwards said a civil thing to me.

I never balked my imagination for the grossness of the reflection on the character of the greatest noble, nay, even the king himself; of which I will give you a very bold instance. One day, his simple majesty told me, he believed I had so much power, that his people looked on me as the king, and himself as my fool. At this I pretended to be angry as with an affront. "Why, how now," says the king; "are you ashamed of being a king?"—"No, Sir," says I, "but I am devilishly ashamed of my fool."

Hebert, Earl of Vermandois, had by my means been restored to the favour of the Simple, (for so I used always to call Charles.) He afterwards prevailed with the king to take the city of Arras from Earl Baldwin, by which means Hebert, in exchange for this city, had Peronne restored to him by Count Altmar. Baldwin came to court, in order to procure the restoration of his city; but, either through pride or ignorance, neglected to apply to me. As I met him at court during his solicitation, I told him he did not apply the right way; he answered roughly, he should not ask a fool's advice. I replied, I did not wonder

at his prejudice, since he had miscarried already by following a fool's advice; but I told him, there were fools who had more interest than that he had brought with him to court. He answered me surlily, he had no fool with him, for that he travelled alone.—"Aye, my lord," says I, "I often travel alone, and yet they will have it I always carry a fool with me." This raised a laugh among the bye-standers, on which he gave me a blow. I immediately complained of this usage to the Simple, who dismissed the earl from court with very hard words, instead of granting him the favour he solicited.

I give you these rather as a specimen of my interest and impudence than of my wit; indeed, my jests were commonly more admired than they ought to be; for perhaps I was not in reality much more a wit than a fool. But with the latitude of unbounded scurrility, it is easy enough to attain the character of wit, especially in a court, where, as all persons hate and envy one another heartily, and are at the same time obliged by the constrained behaviour of civility to profess the greatest liking, so it is, and must be, wonderfully pleasant to them to see the follies of their acquaintance exposed by a third person. Besides, the opinion of the court is as uniform as the fashion, and is always guided by the will of the prince or of the favourite. I doubt not that Caligula's horse was universally held in his court to be a good and able consul. In the same manner was I universally acknowledged to be the wittiest fool in the world. Every word I said raised laughter, and was held to be a jest, especially by the ladies; who sometimes laughed before I had discovered my sentiment, and often repeated that as a jest which I did not even intend as one.

I was as severe on the ladies as on the men, and with the same impunity; but this at last cost me dear; for once having joked the beauty of a lady, whose name was Adelaide, a favourite of the Simple's, she pretended to smile and be pleased at my wit, with the rest of the company; but, in reality, she highly resented it, and

and endeavoured to undermine me with the king; in which she so greatly succeeded, (for what cannot a favourite woman do with one who deserves the surname of Simple?) that the king grew every day more reserved to me, and when I attempted any freedom, gave me such marks of his displeasure, that the courtiers (who have all hawk's eyes at a flight from the sovereign) soon discerned it; and, indeed, had I been blind enough not to have discovered that I had lost ground in the Simple's favour, by his own change in his carriage towards me, I must have found it, nay even felt it, in the behaviour of the courtiers; for as my company was two days before solicited with the utmost eagerness, it was now rejected with as much scorn. I was now the jest of the ushers and pages; and an officer of the guards, on whom I was a little jocose, gave me a box on the ear, bidding me make free with my equals. This very fellow had been my butt for many years, without daring to lift his hand against me.

But though I visibly perceived the alteration in the Simple, I was utterly unable to make any guess at the occasion. I had not the least suspicion of Adelaide; for besides her being a very good-humoured woman, I had often made severe jests on her reputation, which I had all the reason imaginable to believe had given her no offence. But I soon perceived, that a woman will bear the most bitter censures on her morals, easier than the smallest reflection on her beauty; for she now declared publicly, that I ought to be dismissed from court, as the stupidest of fools, and one in whom there was no diversion; and that she wondered how any person could have so little taste, as to imagine I had any wit. This speech was echoed through the drawing-room, and agreed to by all present. Every one now put on an unusual gravity on their countenance whenever I spoke; and it was as much out of my power to raise a laugh, as formerly it had been for me to open my mouth without one.

While my affairs were in this posture, I went one day into the cir-

cle, without my fool's dress. The Simple, who would still speak to me, cried out, "So, fool, what's the matter now?"—"Sir," answered I, "fools are like to be so common a commodity at court, that I am weary of my coat."—"How dost thou mean?" answered the Simple; "What can make them commoner now than usual?"—"O Sir," said I, "there are ladies here make your majesty a fool every day of their lives." The Simple took no notice of my jest, and several present said my bones ought to be broke for my impudence; but it pleased the queen, who knowing Adelaide, whom she hated, to be the cause of my disgrace, obtained me of the king, and took me into her service; so that I was henceforth called the queen's fool, and in her court received the same honour, and had as much wit as I had formerly had in the king's. But as the queen had really no power unless over her own domesticks, I was not treated in general with that complaisance, nor did I receive those bribes and presents; which had once fallen to my share.

Nor did this confined respect continue long; for the queen, who had in fact no taste for humour, soon grew sick of my foolery, and forgetting the cause for which she had taken me, neglected me so much, that her court grew intolerable to my temper, and I broke my heart, and died.

Minos laughed heartily at several things in my story; and then telling me, no one played the fool in Elysium, bid me go back again.

C H A P. XIX.

JULIAN APPEARS IN THE CHARACTER OF A BEGGAR.

I Now returned to Rome, and was born into a very poor and numerous family, which, to be honest with you, procured it's livelihood by begging. This, if you was never yourself of the calling, you do not know, I suppose, to be as regular a trade as any other; to have it's several rules and secrets, or mysteries, which

‘ which to learn, require perhaps as tedious an apprenticeship as those of any craft whatever.

‘ The first thing we are taught, is the *countenance miserable*. This indeed nature makes much easier to some than others; but there are none who cannot accomplish it, if they begin early enough in youth, and before the muscles are grown too stubborn.

‘ The second thing is, the *voice lamentable*. In this qualification, too, nature must have her share in producing the most consummate excellence; however, art will here, as in every other instance, go a great way with industry and application, even without the assistance of genius; especially if the student begins young.

‘ There are many other instructions; but these are the most considerable. The women are taught one practice more than the men; for they are instructed in the art of crying, that is, to have their tears ready on all occasions; but this is attained very easily by most. Some, indeed, arrive at the utmost perfection in this art with incredible facility.

‘ No profession requires a deeper insight into human nature, than the beggar’s. Their knowledge of the passions of men is so extensive, that I have often thought, it would be of no little service to a politician to have his education among them. Nay, there is a much greater analogy between these two characters than is imagined; for both concur in their first and grand principle, it being equally their business to delude and impose on mankind. It must be confessed, that they differ widely in the degree of advantage which they make by their deceit; for, whereas the beggar is contented with a little, the politician leaves but a little behind.

‘ A very great English philosopher hath remarked our policy in taking care never to address any one with a title inferior to what he really claims. My father was of the same opinion; for I remember when I was a boy, the Pope happening to pass by, I attended him with—“ Pray, Sir! for God’s sake, Sir! for the Lord’s sake, Sir!”—To which he answered, gravely, “ Sirrah, sirrah! you ought

“ to be whipt, for taking the Lord’s name in vain.” And in vain it was, indeed; for he gave me nothing. My father over-hearing this, took his advice, and whipped me very severely. While I was under correction, I promised often never to take the Lord’s name in vain any more. My father then said—“ Child, I do not whip you for taking his name in vain; I whip you for not calling the Pope *His Holiness*.”

‘ If all men were so wise and good to follow the clergy’s example, the nuisance of beggars would soon be removed. I do not remember to have been above twice relieved by them during my whole state of beggary. Once was by a very well-looking man, who gave me a small piece of silver, and declared he had given me more than he had left himself; the other was by a spruce young fellow, who had that very day first put on his robes, whom I attended with—“ Pray, reverend Sir; good reverend Sir, consider your cloth!”—He answered, “ I do, child, consider my office; and I hope all of our cloth do the same.” He then threw down some money, and strutted off with great dignity.

‘ With the women I had one general formulary—“ Sweet pretty lady! God bless your ladyship! God bless your handsome face!” This generally succeeded; but I observed, the uglier the woman was, the surer I was of success.

‘ It was a constant maxim among us, that the greater retinue any one travelled with, the less expectation we might promise ourselves from them; but whenever we saw a vehicle with a single or no servant, we imagined our booty sure, and were seldom deceived.

‘ We observed great difference introduced by time and circumstance in the same person: for instance, a losing gamester is sometimes generous; but from a winner you will as easily obtain his soul, as a single groat. A lawyer travelling from his country-seat to his clients at Rome, and a physician going to visit a patient, were always worth asking; but the same on their return were (according to our cant phrase) *unteachable*.

‘ The

‘ The most general, and indeed, the truest maxim among us, was, that those who possessed the least were always the readiest to give. The chief art of a beggarman is therefore to discern the rich from the poor, which, though it be only distinguishing substance from shadow, is by no means attainable without a pretty good capacity, and a vast degree of attention; for these two are eternally industrious in endeavouring to counterfeit each other. In this deceit, the poor man is more heartily in earnest to deceive you than the rich; who amidst all the emblems of poverty which he puts on, still permits some mark of his wealth to strike the eye. Thus, while his apparel is not worth a groat, his finger wears a ring of value, or his pocket a gold watch: in a word, he seems rather to affect poverty to insult, than impose on you. Now the poor man, on the contrary, is very sincere in his desire of passing for rich; but the eagerness of this desire hurries him to over-act his part, and he betrays himself, as one who is drunk by his over-acted sobriety. Thus, instead of being attended by one servant well mounted, he will have two; and not being able to purchase or maintain a second horse of value, one of his servants at least is mounted on a hired rascalion. He is not contented to go plain and neat in his cloaths; he therefore claps on some tawdry ornament, and what he adds to the fineness of his vestment he detracts from the fineness of his linen. Without descending into more minute particulars, I believe I may assert it is an axiom of indubitable truth, that whoever shews you he is either in himself, or his equipage, as gaudy as he can, convinces you he is more so than he can afford. Now whenever a man’s expence exceeds his income he is indifferent in the degree; we had therefore nothing more to do with such, than to flatter them with their wealth and splendor, and were always certain of success.

‘ There is, indeed, one kind of rich man, who is commonly more liberal, namely, where riches surprize him, as it were, in the midst of poverty and distress; the consequence of which is, I own, sometimes excessive

‘ avarice, but oftener extreme prodigality. I remember one of these, who having received a pretty large sum of money, gave me, when I begged an obolus, a whole talent; on which his friend having reproved him, he answered, with an oath, “Why not? have I not fifty left?”

‘ The life of a beggar, if men estimated things by their real essence, and not by their outward false appearance, would be, perhaps, a more desirable situation than any of those which ambition persuades us with such difficulty, danger, and often villainy, to aspire to. The wants of a beggar are commonly as chimerical as the abundance of a nobleman; for besides vanity, which a judicious beggar will always apply to with wonderful efficacy, there are in reality very few natures so hardened as not to compassionate poverty, and distresses when the predominancy of some other passion doth not prevent them.

‘ There is one happiness which attends money got with ease, namely, that it is never hoarded; otherwise, as we have frequent opportunities of growing rich, that canker care might prey on our quiet, as it doth on others: but our money-stock we spend as fast as we acquire it; usually at least, for I speak not without exception; thus it gives us mirth only, and no trouble. Indeed, the luxury of our lives might introduce diseases; did not our daily exercise prevent them: this gives us appetite and relish for our dainties, and at the same time an antidote against the evil effects which sloth, united with luxury, induces on the habit of a human body. Our women we enjoy with extasies, at least equal to what the greatest men feel in their embraces. I can, I am assured, say of myself, that no mortal could reap more perfect happiness from the tender passion than my fortune had decreed me. I married a charming young woman for love; she was the daughter of a neighbouring beggar, who, with an improvidence too often seen, spent a very large income, which he procured by his profession, so that he was able to give her no fortune down; however, at his death, he left her a very well-accustomed begging-

‘hut, situated on the side of a steep hill, where travellers could not immediately escape from us, and a garden adjoining, being the twenty-eighth part of an acre, well planted. She made the best of wives, bore me nineteen children, and never failed, unless on her lying-in, which generally lasted three days, to get my supper ready against my return home in an evening; this being my favourite meal, and at which I, as well as my whole family, greatly enjoyed ourselves; the principal subject of our discourse being generally the boons we had that day obtained, on which occasions laughing at the folly of the donors made no inconsiderable part of the entertainment; for whatever might be their motive for giving, we constantly imputed our success to our having flattered their vanity, or over-reached their understanding.

‘But, perhaps, I have dwelt too long on this character; I shall conclude, therefore, with telling you, that after a life of a hundred and two years continuance, during all which I had never known any sickness or infirmity but that which old age necessarily induced, I at last, without the least pain, went out like the snuff of a candle.

‘Minos, having heard my history, bid me compute, if I could, how many lyes I had told in my life. As we are here, by a certain fated necessity, obliged to confine ourselves to truth, I answered, I believed about fifty million; he then replied, with a frown, “Can such a wretch conceive any hopes of entering Elysium?” I immediately turned about; and, upon the whole, was rejoiced at his not calling me back.’

CHAP. XX.

JULIAN PERFORMS THE PART OF
A STATESMAN.

‘IT was now my fortune to be born of a German princess; but a man-midwife pulling my head off in delivering my mother, put a speedy end to my princely life.

‘Spirits, who end their lives before they are at the age of five years, are

‘immediately ordered into other bodies; and it was now my fortune to perform several infancies, before I could again entitle myself to an examination of Minos.

‘At length I was destined once more to play a considerable part on the stage. I was born in England, in the reign of Etheldred II. My father’s name was Ulnoth. He was Earl or Thane of Suffex: I was afterwards known by the name of Earl Goodwin, and began to make a considerable figure in the world in the time of Harold Harefoot, whom I procured to be made king of Wessex, or the West Saxons, in prejudice of Hardicanute, whose mother, Emma, endeavoured afterwards to set another of her sons on the throne; but I circumvented her, and communicating her design to the king, at the same time acquainted him with a project which I had formed for the murder of these two young princes. Emma had sent for these her sons from Normandy, with the king’s leave, whom she had deceived by her religious behaviour and pretended neglect of all worldly affairs; but I prevailed with Harold to invite these princes to his court and put them to death. The prudent mother sent only Alfred, retaining Edward to herself, as she suspected my ill designs, and thought I should not venture to execute them on one of her sons while she secured the other; but she was deceived, for I had no sooner Alfred in my possession than I caused him to be conducted to Ely, where I ordered his eyes to be put out, and afterwards to be confined in a monastery.

‘This was one of those cruel expedients which great men satisfy themselves well in executing, by concluding them to be necessary to the service of their prince, who is the support of their ambition.

‘Edward, the other son of Emma, escaped again to Normandy; whence, after the death of Harold and Hardicanute, he made no scruple of applying to my protection and favour, though he had before prosecuted me with all the vengeance he was able for the murder of his brother: but in all great affairs, private relation must yield to publick interest. Hav-
ing

ing, therefore, concluded very advantageous terms for myself with him; I made no scruple of patronizing his cause, and soon placed him on the throne: nor did I conceive the least apprehension from his resentment; as I knew my power was too great for him to encounter.

Among other stipulated conditions, one was to marry my daughter Editha. This Edward consented to with great reluctance, and I had afterwards no reason to be pleased with it; for it raised her, who had been my favourite child, to such an opinion of greatness, that instead of paying me the usual respect, she frequently threw in my teeth, (as often at least as I gave her any admonition) that she was now a queen, and that the character and title of father merged in that of subject. This behaviour, however, did not cure me of my affection towards her, nor lessen the uneasiness which I afterwards bore on Edward's dismissing her from his bed.

One thing, which principally induced me to labour the promotion of Edward, was the simplicity or weakness of that prince under whom I promised myself absolute dominion, under another name. Nor did this opinion deceive me; for during his whole reign, my administration was in the highest degree despotick; I had every thing of royalty but the outward ensigns, no man ever applying for a place, or any kind of preferment, but to me only; a circumstance, which as it greatly enriched my coffers, so it no less pampered my ambition, and satisfied my vanity with a numerous attendance; and I had the pleasure of seeing those who only bowed to the king, prostrating themselves before me.

Edward the Confessor, or St. Edward, as some have called him in derision, I suppose, being a very silly fellow, had all the faults incident, and almost inseparable, to fools. He married my daughter Editha, from his fear of disabling me; and afterwards, out of hatred to me, refused even to consummate his marriage, though she was one of the most beautiful women of her age: he was likewise guilty of the basest ingratitude to his mother; (a vice to which

fools are chiefly, if not only, liable) and, in return for her endeavours to procure him a throne in his youth, confined her in a loathsome prison in her old age. This, it is true, he did by my advice; but as to her walking over nine plough-shares red hot, and giving nine manors, when she had not one in her possession, there is not a syllable of veracity in it.

The first great perplexity I fell into, was on the account of my son Swane, who had deflowered the abbess of Leon, since called Leominster in Herefordshire. After this fact he retired into Denmark, whence he sent to me to obtain his pardon. The king at first refused it, being moved thereto, as I afterwards found, by some churchmen, particularly by one of his chaplains, whom I had prevented from obtaining a bishoprick. Upon this, my son Swane invaded the coasts with several ships, and committed many outrageous cruelties, which, indeed, did his business, as they served me to apply to the fear of this king, which I had long since discovered to be his predominant passion. And at last, he who had refused pardon to his first offence, submitted to give it him, after he had committed many other more monstrous crimes, by which his pardon lost all grace to the offended, and received double censure from all others.

The king was greatly inclined to the Normans, had created a Norman archbishop of Canterbury, and had heaped extraordinary favours on him. I had no other objection to this man than that he rose without my assistance; a cause of dislike, which in the reign of great and powerful favourites, hath often proved fatal to the persons who have given it, as the persons thus raised inspire us constantly with jealousies and apprehensions: for when we promote any one ourselves, we take effectual care to preserve such an ascendant over him, that we can at any time reduce him to his former degree, should he dare to act in opposition to our wills; for which reason we never suffer any to come near the prince but such as we are assured it is impossible should be capable of engaging or improving his affection; no prime-minister, as I apprehend, esteeming himself to be

‘ safe while any other shares the ear of
 ‘ his prince, of whom we are as jea-
 ‘ lous as the fondest husband can be
 ‘ of his wife. Whoever, therefore,
 ‘ can approach him by any other chan-
 ‘ nel than that of ourselves, is in our
 ‘ opinion a declared enemy, and one
 ‘ whom the first principles of policy
 ‘ oblige us to demolish with the utmost
 ‘ expedition; for the affection of kings
 ‘ is as precarious as that of women,
 ‘ and the only way to secure either to
 ‘ ourselves is to keep all others from
 ‘ them.

‘ But the archbishop did not let mat-
 ‘ ters rest on suspicion; he soon gave
 ‘ open proofs of his interest with the
 ‘ confessor, in procuring an office of
 ‘ some importance for one Rollo, a
 ‘ Roman of mean extraction and very
 ‘ despicable parts. When I represent-
 ‘ ed to the king the indecency of con-
 ‘ ferring such an honour on such a
 ‘ fellow, he answered me, that he was
 ‘ the archbishop’s relation. “ Then,
 ‘ Sir,” replied I, “ he is related to
 ‘ your enemy.” Nothing more pas-
 ‘ sed at that time; but I soon per-
 ‘ ceived by the archbishop’s behaviour
 ‘ that the king had acquainted him
 ‘ with our private discourse, a suffi-
 ‘ cient assurance of his confidence in
 ‘ him, and neglect of me.

‘ The favour of princes, when once
 ‘ lost, is recoverable only by the gain-
 ‘ ing a situation which may make you
 ‘ terrible to them. As I had no doubt
 ‘ of having lost all credit with this
 ‘ king, which, indeed, had been origi-
 ‘ nally founded and constantly sup-
 ‘ ported by his fear, so I took the
 ‘ method of terror to regain it.

‘ The Earl of Boulogne coming over
 ‘ to visit the king, gave me an oppor-
 ‘ tunity of breaking out into open op-
 ‘ position; for as the earl was on his
 ‘ return to France, one of his servants,
 ‘ who was sent before to procure lodg-
 ‘ ings at Dover, and insisted on having
 ‘ them in the house of a private man
 ‘ in spite of the owner’s teeth, was, in
 ‘ a fray which ensued, killed on the
 ‘ spot; and the earl himself arriving
 ‘ there soon after, very narrowly escap-
 ‘ ed with his life. The earl, enraged
 ‘ at this affront, returned to the king
 ‘ at Gloucester, with loud complaints
 ‘ and demands of satisfaction. Ed-
 ‘ ward consented to his demands, and
 ‘ ordered me to chastise the rioters, who

‘ were under my government as Earl
 ‘ of Kent; but, instead of obeying
 ‘ these orders, I answered, with some
 ‘ warmth, that the English were not
 ‘ used to punish people unheard; nor
 ‘ ought their rights and privileges to
 ‘ be violated: that the accused should
 ‘ be first summoned; if guilty, should
 ‘ make satisfaction both with body
 ‘ and estate; but if innocent, should
 ‘ be discharged; adding, with great
 ‘ ferocity, that, as Earl of Kent, it
 ‘ was my duty to protect those under
 ‘ my government against the insults of
 ‘ foreigners.

‘ This accident was extremely lucky,
 ‘ as it gave my quarrel with the king
 ‘ a popular colour; and so ingratiated
 ‘ me with the people, that when I set
 ‘ up my standard, which I soon after
 ‘ did, they readily and cheerfully listed
 ‘ under my banners, and embraced
 ‘ my cause, which I persuaded them
 ‘ was their own; for that it was to
 ‘ protect them against foreigners that
 ‘ I had drawn my sword. The word
 ‘ foreigners, with an Englishman, hath
 ‘ a kind of magical effect, they having
 ‘ the utmost hatred and aversion to
 ‘ them, arising from the cruelties they
 ‘ suffered from the Danes and some
 ‘ other foreign nations. No wonder,
 ‘ therefore, they espoused my cause
 ‘ in a quarrel which had such a be-
 ‘ ginning.

‘ But what may be somewhat more
 ‘ remarkable, is, that when I after-
 ‘ wards returned to England from
 ‘ banishment, and was at the head of
 ‘ an army of the Flemish, who were
 ‘ preparing to plunder the city of Lon-
 ‘ don, I still persisted that I was come
 ‘ to defend the English from the dan-
 ‘ ger of foreigners, and gained their
 ‘ credit. Indeed, there is no lye so
 ‘ gross but it may be imposed on the
 ‘ people by those whom they esteem
 ‘ their patrons and defenders.

‘ The king saved his city by being
 ‘ reconciled to me, and taking again
 ‘ my daughter whom he had put away
 ‘ from him; and thus, having frighten-
 ‘ ed the king into what concessions I
 ‘ thought proper, I dismissed my army
 ‘ and fleet, with which I intended,
 ‘ could I not have succeeded otherwise,
 ‘ to have sacked the city of London,
 ‘ and ravaged the whole country.

‘ I was no sooner re-established in the
 ‘ king’s favour, or, what was as well
 ‘ for

for me, the appearance of it, than I fell violently on the archbishop. He had of himself retired to his monastery in Normandy; but that did not content me; I had him formally banished, the see declared vacant, and then filled up by another.

I enjoyed my grandeur a very short time after my restoration to it; for the king hating and fearing me to a very great degree, and finding no means of openly destroying me, at last effected his purpose by poison, and then spread abroad a ridiculous story of my wishing the next morsel might choak me, if I had had any hand in the death of Alfred; and accordingly that the next morsel, by a divine judgment, stuck in my throat, and performed that office.

This of a statesman was one of my worst stages in the other world. It is a post subjected daily to the greatest danger and inquietude, and attended with little pleasure, and less ease. In a word, it is a pill, which, was it not gilded over by ambition, would appear nauseous and detestable in the eye of every one; and perhaps that is one reason why Minos so greatly compassionates the case of those who swallow it; for that just judge told me, he always acquitted a prime-minister who could produce one single good action in his whole life, let him have committed ever so many crimes. Indeed, I understood him a little too largely, and was stepping towards the gate; but he pulled me by the sleeve, and, telling me no prime-minister ever entered there, bid me go back again; saying, he thought I had sufficient reason to rejoice in escaping the bottomless-pit, which half my crimes committed in any other capacity would have entitled me to.

C H A P. XXI.

JULIAN'S ADVENTURES IN THE POST OF A SOLDIER.

I Was born at Caen in Normandy; my mother's name was Matilda; as for my father, I am not so certain; for the good woman, on her death-bed, assured me she herself could bring her guests to no greater

certainly than to five of Duke William's captains. When I was no more than thirteen, (being, indeed, a surprizing stout boy of my age) I enlisted into the army of Duke William, afterwards known by the name of William the Conqueror; landed with him at Pemesey, or Pemsley, in Suffex, and was present at the famous battle of Hastings.

At the first onset it was impossible to describe my consternation, which was heightened by the fall of two soldiers who stood by me; but this soon abated, and by degrees, as my blood grew warm, I thought no more of my own safety, but fell on the enemy with great fury, and did a good deal of execution; till, unhappily, I received a wound in my thigh, which rendered me unable to stand any longer, so that I now lay among the dead, and was constantly exposed to the danger of being trampled to death, as well by my fellow-soldiers as by the enemy. However, I had the fortune to escape it, and continued the remaining part of the day, and the night following, on the ground.

The next morning, the duke sending out parties to bring off the wounded, I was found almost expiring with loss of blood; notwithstanding which, as immediate care was taken to dress my wounds, youth and a robust constitution stood my friends, and I recovered, after a long and tedious indisposition, and was again able to use my limbs, and do my duty.

As soon as Dover was taken, I was conveyed thither with all the rest of the sick and wounded. Here I recovered of my wound; but fell afterwards into a violent flux, which, when it departed, left me so weak, that it was long before I could regain my strength: and what most afflicted me was, that, during my whole illness, when I languished under want as well as sickness, I had daily the mortification to see and hear the riots and excesses of my fellow-soldiers, who had happily escaped safe from the battle.

I was no sooner well, than I was ordered into garrison at Dover castle. The officers here fared very indifferently; but the private men much worse.

‘ worse. We had great scarcity of provisions, and, what was yet more intolerable, were so closely confined for want of room, (four of us being obliged to lie on the same bundle of straw) that many died, and most sickened.

‘ Here I had remained about four months, when one night we were alarmed with the arrival of the Earl of Boulogne, who had come over privily from France, and endeavoured to surprize the castle. The design proved ineffectual; for the garrison making a brisk sally, most of his men were tumbled down the precipice, and he returned with a very few back to France. In this action, however, I had the misfortune to come off with a broken arm; it was so shattered, that, besides a great deal of pain and misery which I endured in my cure, I was disabled for upwards of three months.

‘ Soon after my recovery, I had contracted an amour with a young woman, whose parents lived near the garrison, and were in much better circumstances than I had reason to expect should give their consent to the match. However, as she was extremely fond of me, (as I was, indeed, distractedly enamoured of her) they were prevailed on to comply with her desires, and the day was fixed for our marriage.

‘ On the evening preceding, while I was exulting with the eager expectation of the happiness I was the next day to enjoy, we received orders to march early in the morning towards Windsor, where a large army was to be formed, at the head of which the king intended to march into the West. Any person who hath ever been in love, may easily imagine what I felt in my mind on receiving those orders; and what still heightened my torments, was, that the commanding officer would not permit any one to go out of the garrison that evening; so that I had not even an opportunity of taking leave of my beloved.

‘ The morning came which was to have put me in the possession of my wishes; but, alas! the scene was now changed, and all the hopes which I had raised, were now so many

‘ ghosts to haunt and furies to torment me.

‘ It was now the midst of winter, and very severe weather for the season, when we were obliged to make very long and fatiguing marches, in which we suffered all the inconveniences of cold and hunger. The night in which I expected to riot in the arms of my beloved mistress, I was obliged to take up with a lodging on the ground, exposed to the inclemences of a rigid frost: nor could I obtain the least comfort of sleep, which shunned me as it’s enemy. In short, the horrors of that night are not to be described, or perhaps imagined. They made such an impression on my soul, that I was forced to be dipped three times in the river Lethe, to prevent my remembering it in the characters which I afterwards performed in the flesh.’

Here I interrupted Julian for the first time, and told him no such dipping had happened to me in my voyage from one world to the other; but he satisfied me by saying, that this only happened to those spirits which returned into the flesh, in order to prevent that reminiscence which Plato mentions, and which would otherwise cause great confusion in the other world.

He then proceeded as follows—‘ We continued a very laborious march to Exeter, which we were ordered to besiege. The town soon surrendered, and his majesty built a castle there, which he garrisoned with his Normans, and, unhappily, I had the misfortune to be one of the number.

‘ Here we were confined closer than I had been at Dover; for as the citizens were extremely disaffected, we were never suffered to go without the walls of the castle; nor indeed could we, unless in large bodies, without the utmost danger. We were likewise kept to continual duty; nor could any solicitations prevail with the commanding officer to give me a month’s absence to visit my love, from whom I had no opportunity of hearing in all my long absence.

‘ However, in the spring, the people being more quiet, and another officer, of a gentler temper, succeeding to the principal command, I obtained leave to go to Dover; but, alas!

‘ what

‘ what comfort did my long journey bring me? I found the parents of my darling in the utmost misery at her loss; for she had died about a week before my arrival of a consumption, which they imputed to her pining at my sudden departure.

‘ I now fell into the most violent and almost raving fit of despair. I cursed myself, the king, and the whole world, which no longer seemed to have any delight for me. I threw myself on the grave of my deceased love, and lay there, without any kind of sustenance, for two whole days. At last hunger, together with the persuasions of some people who took pity on me, prevailed with me to quit that situation, and refresh myself with food. They then persuaded me to return to my post, and abandon a place where almost every object I saw recalled ideas to my mind, which, as they said, I should endeavour with my utmost force to expel from it. This advice at length succeeded; the rather, as the father and mother of my beloved refused to see me, looking on me as the innocent but certain cause of the death of their only child.

‘ The loss of one we tenderly love, as it is one of the most bitter and biting evils which attends human life, so it wants the lenitive which palliates and softens every other calamity; I mean, that great reliever, Hope. No man can be so totally undone, but that he may still cherish expectation: but this deprives us of all such comfort; nor can any thing but time alone lessen it. This however, in most minds, is sure to work a slow but effectual remedy; so did it in mine; for within a twelve-month I was entirely reconciled to my fortune, and soon after absolutely forgot the object of a passion from which I had promised myself such extreme happiness, and in the disappointment of which I had experienced such inconceivable misery.

‘ At the expiration of the month, I returned to my garrison at Exeter; where I was no sooner arrived, than I was ordered to march into the north, to oppose a force there levied by the Earls of Chester and Northumberland. We came to York, where his majesty pardoned the heads of

‘ the rebels, and very severely punished some who were less guilty. It was particularly my lot to be ordered to seize a poor man, who had never been out of his house, and convey him to prison. I detested this barbarity, yet was obliged to execute it; nay, though no reward would have bribed me in a private capacity to have acted such a part, yet so much sanctity is there in the commands of a monarch, or general to a soldier, that I performed it without reluctance; nor had the tears of his wife and family any prevalence with me.

‘ But this, which was a very small piece of mischief in comparison with many of my barbarities afterwards, was, however, the only one which ever gave me any uneasiness; for when the king led us afterward into Northumberland to revenge those people’s having joined with Osborn the Dane in his invasion, and orders were given us to commit what ravages we could, I was forward in fulfilling them; and, among some lesser cruelties, (I remember it yet with sorrow) I ravished a woman, murdered a little infant playing in her lap, and then burnt her house. In short, (for I have no pleasure in this part of my relation) I had my share in all the cruelties exercised on those poor wretches; which were so grievous, that for sixty miles together, between York and Durham, not a single house, church, or any other publick or private edifice was left standing.

‘ We had pretty well devoured the country, when we were ordered to march to the Isle of Ely, to oppose Hereward, a bold and stout soldier, who had under him a very large body of rebels, who had the impudence to rise against their king and conqueror (I talk now in the same style I did then) in defence of their liberties, as they called them. These were soon subdued: but as I happened (more to my glory than my comfort) to be posted in that part through which Hereward cut his way, I received a dreadful cut on the forehead, a second on the shoulder, and was run through the body with a pike.

‘ I languished a long time with these

‘wounds, which made me incapable of attending the king into Scotland. However, I was able to go over with him afterwards into Normandy, in his expedition against Philip, who had taken the opportunity of the troubles in England, to invade that province. Those few Normans who had survived their wounds, and had remained in the Isle of Ely, were all of our nation who went, the rest of his army being all composed of English. In a skirmish near the town of Mans, my leg was broke, and so shattered that it was forced to be cut off.

‘I was now disabled for serving longer in the army, and accordingly being discharged from the service, I retired to the place of my nativity, where in extreme poverty, and frequent bad health from the many wounds I had received, I dragged on a miserable life to the age of sixty-three; my only pleasure being to recount the feats of my youth, in which narratives I generally exceeded the truth.

‘It would be tedious and unpleasant to recount to you the several miseries I suffered after my return to Caen; let it suffice, they were so terrible, that they induced Minos to compassionate me, and, notwithstanding the barbarities I had been guilty of in Northumberland, to suffer me to go once more back to earth.’

CHAP. XXII.

WHAT HAPPENED TO JULIAN IN THE PERSON OF A TAYLOR.

‘**F**ORTUNE now stationed me in a character, which the ingratitude of mankind hath put them on ridiculing, though they owe to it not only a relief from the inclemencies of cold, to which they would otherwise be exposed, but likewise a considerable satisfaction of their vanity. The character I mean, was that of a taylor; which, if we consider it with due attention, must be confessed to have in it great dignity and importance. For, in reality, who constitutes the different degrees between men but the taylor? The prince, indeed, gives the title, but *it is the taylor who makes the man.* To

his labours are owing the respect of crowds, and the awe which great men inspire into their beholders, though these are too often unjustly attributed to other motives. Lastly, the admiration of the fair is most commonly to be placed to his account.

‘I was just set up in my trade, when I made three suits of fine cloaths for King Stephen’s coronation. I questioned whether the person who wears the rich coat, hath so much pleasure and vanity in being admired in it, as we taylor’s have from that admiration; and perhaps a philosopher would say, he is not so well entitled to it. I busied on the day of the ceremony through the crowd, and it was with incredible delight, I heard several say, as my cloaths walked by, “Bless me, was ever any thing so fine as the Earl of Devonshire! Sure he and Sir Hugh Bigot are the two best dressed men I ever saw.” Now both those suits were of my making.

‘There would, indeed, be infinite pleasure in working for the courtiers, as they are generally genteel men, and shew one’s cloaths to the best advantage, was it not for one small discouragement; this is, that they never pay. I solemnly protest, though I lost almost as much by the court in my life as I got by the city, I never carried a suit into the latter with half the satisfaction which I have done to the former; though from that I was certain of ready-money, and from this almost as certain of no money at all.

‘Courtiers may, however, be divided into two sorts, very essentially different from each other; into those who never intend to pay for their cloaths; and those who do intend to pay for them, but never happen to be able. Of the latter sort, are many of those young gentlemen whom we equip out for the army, and who are, unhappily for us, cut off before they arrive at preferment. This is the reason that taylor’s in time of war are mistaken for politicians, by their inquisitiveness into the event of battles, one campaign very often proving the ruin of half a dozen of us. I am sure I had frequent reason to curse that fatal battle of Cardigan, where the Welch defeated some

‘ of

of King Stephen's best troops, and where many a good suit of mine, unpaid for, fell to the ground.

The gentlemen of this honourable calling have fared much better in later ages than when I was of it; for now it seems the fashion is, when they apprehend their customer is not in the best circumstances, if they are not paid as soon as they carry home the suit, they charge him in their book as much again as it is worth, and then send a gentleman with a small scrip of parchment to demand the money. If this be not immediately paid, the gentleman takes the beau with him to his house, where he locks him up till the taylor is contented: but in my time, these scrips of parchment were not in use; and if the beau disliked paying for his cloaths, as very often happened, we had no method of compelling him.

In several of, the characters which I have related to you, I apprehend I have sometimes forgot myself, and considered myself as really interested, as I was when I personated them on earth. I have just now caught myself in the fact; for I have complained to you as bitterly of my customers as I formerly used to do when I was the taylor: but, in reality, though there were some few persons of very great quality, and some others, who never paid their debts, yet those were but a few, and I had a method of repairing this loss. My customers I divided under three heads; those who paid ready-money, those who paid slow, and those who never paid at all. The first of these I considered apart by themselves, as persons by whom I got a certain but small profit; the two last I lumped together, making those who paid slow, contribute to repair my losses by those who did not pay at all. Thus, upon the whole, I was a very inconsiderable loser, and might have left a fortune to my family, had I not launched forth into expences which swallowed up all my gains. I had a wife and two children: these, indeed, I kept frugally enough, for I half-starved them; but I kept a mistress in a finer way, for whom I had a country-house, pleasantly situated on the Thames, elegantly fit-

ted up, and neatly furnished. This woman might, very properly, be called my mistress, for she was most absolutely so; and though her tenure was no higher than by my will, she domineered as tyrannically as if my chains had been rivetted in the strongest manner. To all this I submitted, not through any adoration of her beauty, which was, indeed, but indifferent. Her charms consisted in little wantonesses, which she knew admirably well to use in hours of dalliance, and which, I believe, are, of all things, the most delightful to a lover.

She was so profusely extravagant, that it seemed as if she had an actual intent to ruin me. This I am sure of, if such had been her real intention, she could have taken no proper way to accomplish it; nay, I myself might appear to have had the same view; for, besides this extravagant mistress, and my country-house, I kept likewise a brace of hunters, rather for that it was fashionable so to do, than for any great delight I took in the sport, which I very little attended; not for want of leisure, for few noblemen had so much: all the work I ever did was taking measure, and that only of my greatest and best customers. I scarce ever cut a piece of cloth in my life, nor was, indeed, much more able to fashion a coat than any gentleman in the kingdom: this made a skilful servant too necessary to me; he knew I must submit to any terms with, or any treatment from him; he knew it was easier for him to find another such a taylor as me, than for me to procure such another workman as him; for this reason, he exerted the most notorious and cruel tyranny, seldom giving me a civil word; nor could the utmost condescension on my side, though attended with continual presents and rewards, and raising his wages, content or please him. In a word, he was as absolutely my master, as was ever an ambitious, industrious prime minister over an indolent and voluptuous king: all my other journeymen paid more respect to him than to me; for they considered my favour as a necessary consequence of obtaining his.

These were the most remarkable

‘ occurrences while I acted this part.
 ‘ Minos hesitated a few moments, and
 ‘ then bid me get back again, without
 ‘ assigning any reason.’

C H A P. XXIII.

THE LIFE OF ALDERMAN JULIAN.

‘ I Now revisited England, and was
 ‘ born at London; my father
 ‘ was one of the magistrates of that
 ‘ city: he had eleven children, of
 ‘ whom I was the eldest. He had
 ‘ great success in trade, and grew ex-
 ‘ tremely rich; but the largeness of
 ‘ his family rendered it impossible for
 ‘ him to leave me a fortune sufficient
 ‘ to live well on, independent of busi-
 ‘ ness. I was accordingly brought up
 ‘ to be a fishmonger; in which capacity
 ‘ I myself afterwards acquired very
 ‘ considerable wealth.

‘ The same disposition of mind, which
 ‘ in princes is called ambition, is in
 ‘ subjects named faction. To this tem-
 ‘ per I was greatly addicted from my
 ‘ youth. I was, while a boy, a great
 ‘ partizan of Prince John’s against his
 ‘ brother Richard, during the latter’s
 ‘ absence in the Holy War, and in his
 ‘ captivity. I was no more than one
 ‘ and twenty when I first began to make
 ‘ political speeches in publick, and to
 ‘ endeavour to foment disquietude and
 ‘ discontent in the city. As I was
 ‘ pretty well qualified for this office by
 ‘ a great fluency of words, an harmo-
 ‘ nious accent, a graceful delivery, and,
 ‘ above all, an invincible assurance, I
 ‘ had soon acquired some reputation
 ‘ among the younger citizens, and
 ‘ some of the weaker and more incon-
 ‘ siderate of a riper age. This co-
 ‘ operating with my own natural vani-
 ‘ ty, made me extravagantly proud
 ‘ and supercilious; I soon began to
 ‘ esteem myself a man of some conse-
 ‘ quence, and to overlook persons every
 ‘ way my superiors.

‘ The famous Robin Hood, and his
 ‘ companion Little John, at this time
 ‘ made a considerable figure in York-
 ‘ shire. I took upon me to write a
 ‘ letter to the former, in the name of
 ‘ the city, inviting him to come to
 ‘ London, where I assured him of very
 ‘ good reception, signifying to him my
 ‘ own great weight and consequence,

‘ and how much I had disposed the
 ‘ citizens in his favour. Whether he
 ‘ received this letter or no, I am not
 ‘ certain; but he never gave me any
 ‘ answer to it.

‘ A little afterwards, one William
 ‘ Fitz-Osborn, or, as he was nick-
 ‘ named, William Long-Beard, began
 ‘ to make a figure in the city. He was
 ‘ a bold and an impudent fellow, and
 ‘ had raised himself to great popularity
 ‘ with the rabble, by pretending to es-
 ‘ pouse their cause against the rich. I
 ‘ took this man’s part, and made a
 ‘ publick oration in his favour, setting
 ‘ him forth as a patriot, and one who
 ‘ had embarked in the cause of liberty;
 ‘ for which service he did not receive
 ‘ me with the acknowledgments I ex-
 ‘ pected. However, as I thought I
 ‘ should easily gain the ascendant over
 ‘ this fellow, I continued still firm on
 ‘ his side, till the Archbishop of Can-
 ‘ terbury, with an armed force, put
 ‘ an end to his progress; for he was
 ‘ seized in Bow church, where he had
 ‘ taken refuge, and, with nine of his
 ‘ accomplices, hanged in chains.

‘ I escaped narrowly myself; for I
 ‘ was seized in the same church with
 ‘ the rest, and as I had been very con-
 ‘ siderably engaged in the enterprize,
 ‘ the archbishop was inclined to make
 ‘ me an example; but my father’s
 ‘ merit, who had advanced a considera-
 ‘ ble sum to Queen Eleanor towards
 ‘ the king’s ransom, preserved me.

‘ The confinement my danger had
 ‘ occasioned, kept me some time quiet,
 ‘ and I applied myself very assiduously
 ‘ to my trade. I invented all manner
 ‘ of methods to enhance the price of
 ‘ fish, and made use of my utmost en-
 ‘ deavours to engross as much of the
 ‘ business as possible in my own hands.
 ‘ By these means I acquired a sub-
 ‘ stance, which raised me to some little
 ‘ consequence in the city; but, far
 ‘ from elevating me to that degree
 ‘ which I had formerly flattered my-
 ‘ self with possessing, at a time when
 ‘ I was totally insignificant; for in a
 ‘ trading society, money must at least
 ‘ lay the foundation of all power and
 ‘ interest.

‘ But, as it hath been remarked, that
 ‘ the same ambition which sent Alexan-
 ‘ der into Asia, brings the wrestler on
 ‘ the Green; and as this same ambition
 ‘ is as incapable as quicksilver of lying
 ‘ still,

‘ still, so I, who was possessed, perhaps, of a share equal to what hath fired the blood of any of the heroes of antiquity, was no less restless, and discontented with ease and quiet. My first endeavours were to make myself head of my company, which Richard I. had just established, and soon afterwards I procured myself to be chosen alderman.

‘ Opposition is the only state which can give a subject an opportunity of exerting the disposition I was possessed of. Accordingly, King John was no sooner seated on his throne, than I began to oppose his measures, whether right or wrong. It is true, that monarch had faults enough. He was so abandoned to lust and luxury; that he addicted himself to the most extravagant excesses in both, while he indolently suffered the King of France to rob him of almost all his foreign dominions: my opposition, therefore, was justifiable enough; and if my motive from within had been as good as the occasion from without, I should have had little to excuse; but, in truth, I sought nothing but my own preferment, by making myself formidable to the king, and then selling to him the interest of that party by whose means I had become so. Indeed, had the publick good been my care, however zealously I might have opposed the beginning of his reign, I should not have scrupled to lend him my utmost assistance in the struggle between him and Pope Innocent the Third, in which he was so manifestly in the right; nor have suffered the insolence of that Pope, and the power of the King of France, to have compelled him, in the issue, basely to resign his crown into the hands of the former, and receive it again as a vassal; by means of which acknowledgment the Pope afterwards claimed this kingdom as a tributary fief to be held of the Papal chair; a claim which occasioned great uneasiness to many subsequent princes, and brought numberless calamities on the nation.

‘ As the king had, among other concessions, stipulated to pay an immediate sum of money to Pandulph, which he had great difficulty to raise, it was absolutely necessary for him to apply to the city, where my interest

‘ and popularity were so high, that he had no hopes without any assistance. As I knew this, I took care to sell myself and country as high as possible. The terms I demanded, therefore, were a place, a pension, and a knighthood. All those were immediately consented to. I was forthwith knighted, and promised the other two.

‘ I now mounted the hustings, and, without any regard to decency or modesty, made as emphatical a speech in favour of the king as before I had done against him. In this speech I justified all those measures which I had before condemned, and pleaded as earnestly with my fellow-citizens to open their purses, as I had formerly done to prevail with them to keep them shut. But, alas! my rhetoric had not the effect I proposed. The consequence of my arguments was only contempt to myself. The people at first stared on one another, and afterwards began unanimously to express their dislike. An impudent fellow among them, reflecting on my trade, cried out—“*Stinking fish!*” which was immediately reiterated through the whole crowd. I was then forced to slink away home; but I was not able to accomplish my retreat without being attended by the mob, who huzzaed me along the street with the repeated cries of, “*Stinking fish!*”

‘ I now proceeded to court, to inform his majesty of my faithful service, and how much I had suffered in his cause. I found, by my first reception, he had already heard of my success. Instead of thanking me for my speech, he said the city should repent of their obstinacy, for that he would shew them who he was; and, so saying, he immediately turned that part to me to which the toe of man hath so wonderful an affection, that it is very difficult, whenever it presents itself conveniently, to keep our toes from the most violent and ardent salutation of it.

‘ I was a little nettled at this behaviour, and with some earnestness claimed the king’s fulfilling his promise; but he retired without answering me. I then applied to some of the courtiers, who had lately professed great friendship to me, had eat

‘ at my house, and invited me to theirs; but not one would return me any answer, all running away from me, as if I had been seized with some contagious distemper. I now found by experience, that, as none can be so civil, so none can be ruder, than a courtier.

‘ A few moments after the king’s retiring, I was left alone in the room to consider what I should do, or whether I should turn myself. My reception in the city promised itself to be equal at least with what I found at court. However, there was my home, and thither it was necessary I should retreat for the present.

‘ But, indeed, bad as I apprehended my treatment in the city would be, it exceeded my expectation. I rode home on an ambling pad through crowds, who expressed every kind of disregard and contempt; pelting me not only with the most abusive language, but with dirt. However, with much difficulty, I arrived at last at my own house, with my bones whole, but covered over with filth.

‘ When I was got within my doors, and had shut them against the mob, who had pretty well vented their spleen, and seemed now contented to retire, my wife, whom I found crying over her children, and from whom I hoped some comfort in my afflictions, fell upon me in the most outrageous manner: she asked me why I would venture on such a step, without consulting her; she said her advice might have been civilly asked, if I was resolved not to have been guided by it; that whatever opinion I might have conceived of her understanding, the rest of the world thought better of it; that I had never failed when I had asked her counsel, nor ever succeeded without it; with much more of the same kind, too tedious to mention: concluding, that it was a monstrous behaviour to desert my party and come over to the court. An abuse which I took worse than all the rest, as she had been constantly for several years assiduous in railing at the Opposition, in siding with the court-party, and begging me to come over to it; and especially after my mentioning the offer of knighthood to her, since which time she had continually in-

‘ terrupted my repose, with dinning in my ears the folly of refusing honours, and of adhering to a party and to principles, by which I was certain of procuring no advantage to myself and my family.

‘ I had now entirely lost my trade, so that I had not the least temptation to stay longer in a city where I was certain of receiving daily affronts and rebukes: I therefore made up my affairs with the utmost expedition, and scraping together all I could, retired into the country, where I spent the remainder of my days in universal contempt, being shunned by every body, perpetually abused by my wife, and not much respected by my children.

‘ Minos told me, though I had been a very vile fellow, he thought my sufferings made some atonement, and so bid me take the other trial.’

C H A P. XXIV.

JULIAN RECOUNTS WHAT HAPPENED TO HIM WHILE HE WAS A POET.

‘ **R**OME was now the seat of my nativity, where I was born of a family more remarkable for honour than riches. I was intended for the church, and had a pretty good education: but my father dying while I was young, and leaving me nothing, (for he had wasted his whole patrimony) I was forced to enter myself in the order of mendicants.

‘ When I was at school I had a knack of rhiming, which I unpardonably mistook for genius, and indulged to my cost; for my verses drew on me only ridicule, and I was in contempt called *The poet*.

‘ This humour pursued me through my life. My first composition after I left school, was a panegyrick on Pope Alexander IV. who then pretended a project of dethroning the King of Sicily. On this subject I composed a poem of about fifteen thousand lines, which, with much difficulty, I got to be presented to his holiness, of whom I expected great preferment as my reward; but I was cruelly disappointed; for when I had waited a year without hearing
‘ any

any of the commendations I had flattered myself with receiving, and being now able to contain no longer, I applied to a Jesuit who was my relation, and had the Pope's ear, to know what his holiness's opinion was of my work, he coldly answered me, that he was at that time busied in concerns of too much importance to attend the reading of poems.

However dissatisfied I might be, and really was, with this reception, and however angry I was with the Pope, for whose understanding I entertained an immoderate contempt, I was not yet discouraged from a second attempt: accordingly, I soon after produced another work, intitled, The Trojan Horse. This was an allegorical work, in which the church was introduced into the world, in the same manner as that machine had been into Troy. The priests were the soldiers in it's belly, and the Heathen superstition the city to be destroyed by them. This poem was written in Latin. I remember some of the lines.

*Mædanos scandit fatalis machina muros,
Farta sacerdotum turmis: exinde per al-*
"rum

Visi exire omnes, magno cum murmure
"olentes.

Nosq' aliter quam cum humanis furibundus
"ab antris

It sonus, S. nares simul aura invadit bi-
"antes.

Mille scatent et mille alii; trepidare ti-
"more

Etbnica gens cœpit: falsi per inane vo-
"lantes

Effugere dei—desertaque templa relin-
"quunt.

Jam magnum crepitavit equus, mox orbis
"et alti

Ingemuere poli: tunc tu pater, ultimus
"omnium

Maxime Alexander, ventrem maturus
"equinum

Deseris, beu proles meliori digne parente."

I believe Julian, had I not stopped him, would have gone through the whole poem; (for, as I observed, in most of the characters he related the affections he had enjoyed while he personated them on earth, still made some impression on him) but I begged him to omit the sequel of the poem, and proceed with his history. He then re-

collected himself, and smiling at the observation, which by intuition he perceived I had made, continued his narration as follows.

"I confess to you," says he, "that the delight in repeating our own works is so predominant in a poet, that I find nothing can totally root it out of the soul. Happy would it be for those persons, if their hearers could be delighted in the same manner? but, alas! hence that *ingens solitudo* complained of by Horace; for the vanity of mankind is so much greedier and more general than their avarice, that no beggar is so ill received by them as he who solicits their praise.

"This I sufficiently experienced in the character of a poet; for my company was shunned (I believe on this account chiefly) by my whole house; nay, there were few who would submit to hearing me read my poetry, even at the price of sharing in my provisions. The only person who gave me audience was a brother poet; he, indeed, fed me with commendation very liberally: but as I was forced to hear and commend in my turn, I perhaps bought his attention dear enough.

"Well, Sir, if my expectations of the reward I hoped from my first poem had balked me, I had now still greater reason to complain; for, instead of being preferred or commended for the second, I was enjoined a very severe penance by my superior, for ludicrously comparing the Pope to a fart. My poetry was now the jest of every company, except some few, who spoke of it with detestation; and I found that, instead of recommending me to preferment, it had effectually barred me from all probability of attaining it.

"These discouragements had now induced me to lay down my pen and write no more. But, as Juvenal says—

"—— Si discedas, laqueo tenet ambitiosi
"Confectudo mali."

"I was an example of the truth of this assertion; for I soon betook myself again to my muse: indeed, a poet hath the same happiness with a man who is dotingly fond of an
ugly

‘ugly woman; the one enjoys his
‘muse, and the other his mistress, with
‘a pleasure very little abated by the
‘esteem of the world, and only under-
‘values their taste for not correspond-
‘ing with his own.

‘It is unnecessary to mention any
‘more of my poems, they had all the
‘same fate; and though in reality
‘some of my latter pieces deserved (I
‘may now speak it without the impu-
‘tation of vanity) a better success,
‘as I had the character of a bad writ-
‘ter, I found it impossible ever to ob-
‘tain the reputation of a good one.
‘Had I possessed the merit of Homer,
‘I could have hoped for no applause,
‘since it must have been a profound
‘secret; for no one would now read a
‘syllable of my writings.

‘The poets of my age were, as I
‘believe you know, not very famous;
‘however, there was one in some cre-
‘dit at that time, though I have the
‘consolation to know his works are all
‘perished long ago. The malice, en-
‘vy, and hatred, I bore this man, are
‘inconceivable to any but an author,
‘and an unsuccessful one; I never
‘could bear to hear him well spoken
‘of, and writ anonymous satires
‘against him, though I had received
‘obligations from him; indeed, I be-
‘lieve it would have been an absolute
‘impossibility for him at any rate to
‘have made me sincerely his friend.

‘I have heard an observation which
‘was made by some one of later days,
‘that there are no worse men than bad
‘authors. A remark of the same
‘kind hath been made on ugly wo-
‘men, and the truth of both stands
‘on one and the same reason, viz. that
‘they are both tainted with that cursed
‘and detestable vice of envy; which,
‘as it is the greatest torment to the
‘mind it inhabits, so is it capable of
‘introducing into it a total corruption,
‘and of inspiring it to the commission
‘of the most horrid crimes imagi-
‘nable.

‘My life was but short; for I soon
‘pined myself to death with the vice I
‘just now mentioned. Minos told
‘me I was infinitely too bad for Ely-
‘sium; and as for the other place, the
‘devil had sworn he would never en-
‘ertain a poet for Orpheus’s sake: so
‘I was forced to return again to the
‘place from whence I came.’

CHAP. XXV.

JULIAN PERFORMS THE PARTS OF
A KNIGHT AND A DANCING-MA-
STER.

‘I Now mounted the stage in Sicily,
‘and became a knight-templar;
‘but as my adventures differ so little
‘from those I have recounted you in
‘the character of a common soldier, I
‘shall not tire you with repetition.
‘The soldier and the captain differ in
‘reality so little from one another,
‘that it requires an accurate judgment
‘to distinguish them; the latter wears
‘finer cloaths, and in time of success
‘lives somewhat more delicately; but,
‘as to every thing else, they very nearly
‘resemble one another.

‘My next step was into France,
‘where fortune assigned me the part
‘of a dancing-master. I was so ex-
‘pert in my profession, that I was
‘brought to court in my youth, and
‘had the heels of Philip de Valois,
‘who afterwards succeeded Charles
‘the Fair, committed to my direc-
‘tion.

‘I do not remember, that in any of
‘the characters in which I appeared
‘on earth, I ever assumed to myself a
‘greater dignity, or thought myself
‘of more real importance than now.
‘I looked on dancing as the greatest
‘excellence of human nature, and on
‘myself as the greatest proficient in it;
‘and, indeed, this seemed to be the
‘general opinion of the whole court;
‘for I was the chief instructor of the
‘youth of both sexes, whose merit
‘was almost entirely defined by the
‘advances they made in that science
‘which I had the honour to profess.
‘As to myself, I was so fully per-
‘suaded of this truth, that I not only
‘sighted and despised those who were
‘ignorant of dancing, but I thought
‘the highest character I could give of
‘any man, was, that he made a grace-
‘ful bow; for want of which accom-
‘plishment, I had a sovereign con-
‘tempt for many persons of learning;
‘nay, for some officers of the army,
‘and a few even of the courtiers them-
‘selves.

‘Though so little of my youth had
‘been thrown away in what they call
‘literature; that I could hardly write
‘and





Stothard del.

Walker sculp.

‘ and read, yet I composed a Treatise
 ‘ on Education; the first rudiments of
 ‘ which, as I taught, were to instruct
 ‘ a child in the science of coming hand-
 ‘ somely into a room. In this I cor-
 ‘ rected many faults of my predecessors,
 ‘ particularly that of being too much
 ‘ in a hurry, and instituting a child in
 ‘ the sublimer parts of dancing before
 ‘ they are capable of *making their ho-*
 ‘ *nours.*

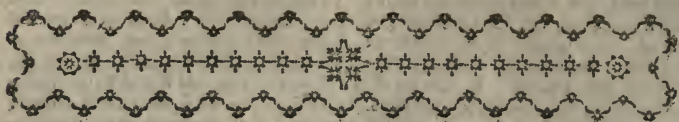
‘ But as I have not now the same
 ‘ high opinion of my profession, which
 ‘ I had then, I shall not entertain you
 ‘ with a long history of a life which

‘ consisted of *borées* and *coupées*. Let
 ‘ it suffice, that I lived to a very old
 ‘ age, and followed my business as
 ‘ long as I could crawl. At length
 ‘ I revisited my old friend Minos, who
 ‘ treated me with very little respect,
 ‘ and bade me dance back again to
 ‘ earth.

‘ I did so, and was now once more
 ‘ born an Englishman, bred up to the
 ‘ church, and at length arrived at the
 ‘ station of a bishop.

‘ Nothing was so remarkable in this
 ‘ character, as my always voting —*.’

* Here part of the Manuscript is lost, and that a very considerable one, as appears by the number of the next book and chapter, which contains, I find, the history of Anna Boleyn; but as to the manner in which it was introduced, or to whom the narrative is told, we are totally left in the dark. I have only to remark, that this chapter is in the original writ in a woman's hand; and though the observations in it are, I think, as excellent as any in the whole volume, there seems to be a difference in style between this and the preceding chapters; and as it is the character of a woman which is related, I am inclined to fancy it was really written by one of that sex.



A

J O U R N E Y

FROM

THIS WORLD TO THE NEXT.

BOOK XIX.

CHAP. VII.

WHEREIN ANNA BOLEYN RELATES
THE HISTORY OF HER LIFE.



Am going now truly to
recount a life, which,
from the time of it's
ceasing, has been, in the
other world, the con-
tinual subject of the
cavils of contending parties; the one
making me as black as hell, the other
as pure and innocent as the inhabi-
tants of this blessed place; the mist
of prejudice blinding their eyes, and
zeal for what they themselves profess
making every thing appear in that
light which they think most conduces
to it's honour.

My infancy was spent in my fa-
ther's house, in those childish plays
which are most suitable to that state,
and I think this was one of the hap-
piest parts of my life; for my parents
were not among the number of those
who look upon their children as so
many objects of a tyrannick power;
but I was regarded as the dear pledge
of a virtuous love, and all my little
pleasures were thought, from their
indulgence, their greatest delight.

At seven years old, I was carried
into France with the king's sister,
who was married to the French king;
where I lived with a person of quality,
who was an acquaintance of my fa-
ther's. I spent my time in learning
those things necessary to give young
persons of fashion a polite education,
and did neither good nor evil, but day
passed after day in the same easy way,
till I was fourteen; then began my
anxiety, my vanity grew strong, and
my heart fluttered with joy at every
compliment paid to my beauty; and
as the lady with whom I lived was
of a gay chearful disposition, she
kept a great deal of company, and
my youth and charms made me the
continual object of their admiration.
I passed some little time in those ex-
ulting raptures which are felt by
every woman perfectly satisfied with
herself, and with the behaviour of
others towards her: I was, when
very young, promoted to be maid of
honour to her majesty. The court
was frequented by a young noble-
man, whose beauty was the chief
subject of conversation in all assem-
blies of ladies. The delicacy of his
person, added to a great softness in
his manner, gave every thing he said
and did such an air of tenderness,
that

that every woman he spoke to flattered herself with being the object of his love. I was one of those who was vain enough of my own charms to hope to make a conquest of him whom the whole court sighed for; I now thought every other object below my notice: yet the only pleasure I proposed to myself in this design, was the triumphing over that heart which I plainly saw all the ladies of the highest quality and the greatest beauty would have been proud of possessing. I was yet too young to be very artful, but nature, without any assistance, soon discovers to a man, who is used to gallantry, a woman's desire to be liked by him, whether that desire arises from any particular choice she makes of him, or only from vanity. He soon perceived my thoughts, and gratified my utmost wishes, by constantly preferring me before all other women, and exerting his utmost gallantry and address to engage my affections. This sudden happiness, which I then thought the greatest I could have had, appeared visible in all my actions; I grew so gay, and so full of vivacity, that it made my person appear still to a better advantage; all my acquaintance pretended to be fonder of me than ever, though, young as I was, I plainly saw it was but pretence, for through all their endeavours to the contrary, envy would often break forth in sly insinuations and malicious sneers, which gave me fresh matter of triumph, and frequent opportunities of insulting them, which I never let slip, for now first my female heart grew sensible of the spiteful pleasure of seeing another languish for what I enjoyed. Whilst I was in the height of my happiness, her majesty fell ill of a languishing distemper, which obliged her to go into the country for the change of air; my place made it necessary for me to attend her, and which way he brought it about I cannot imagine, but my young hero found means to be one of that small train that waited on my royal mistress, although she went as privately as possible. Hitherto all the interviews I had ever had with him were in publick, and I only looked on him as the fitter object to feed that

pride which had no other view but to shew it's power; but now the scene was quite changed: my rivals were all at a distance; the place we went to was as charming as the most agreeable natural situation, assisted by the greatest art, could make it; the pleasant solitary walks, the singing of birds, the thousand pretty romantic scenes this delightful place afforded, gave a sudden turn to my mind, my whole soul was melted into softness, and all my vanity was fled. My spark was too much used to affairs of this nature, not to perceive this change; at first the profuse transports of his joy made me believe him wholly mine, and this belief gave me such happiness, that no language affords words to express it; and can be only known to those who have felt it: but this was of a very short duration, for I soon found I had to do with one of those men whose only end in the pursuit of a woman is to make her fall a victim to an insatiable desire to be admired. His designs had succeeded, and now he every day grew colder, and, as if by insatiation, my passion every day increased; and notwithstanding all my resolutions and endeavours to the contrary, my rage at the disappointment at once both of my love and pride, and at the finding a passion fixed in my breast I knew not how to conquer, broke out into that inconsistent behaviour which must always be the consequence of violent passions: one moment I reproached him, the next I grew to tenderness, and blamed myself, and thought I fancied what was not true; he saw my struggle, and triumphed in it; but as he had not witnesses enough there of his victory, to give him the full enjoyment of it, he grew weary of the country, and returned to Paris, and left me in a condition it is utterly impossible to describe. My mind was like a city up in arms, all confusion; and every new thought was a fresh disturber of my peace. Sleep quite forsook me, and the anxiety I suffered threw me into a fever, which had like to have cost me my life. With great care I recovered; but the violence of the distemper left such a weakness on my body, that the disturbance of my

mind was greatly assuaged; and now I began to comfort myself in the reflection, that this gentleman's being a finished coquet, was very likely the only thing could have preserved me; for he was the only man from whom I was ever in any danger. By that time I was got tolerable well, we returned to Paris; and, I confess, I both wished and feared to see this cause of all my pain; however, I hoped, by the help of my resentment, to be able to meet him with indifference. This employed my thoughts till our arrival. The next day, there was a very full court to congratulate the queen on her recovery; and amongst the rest, my love appeared dressed and adorned, as if he designed some new conquest. Instead of seeing a woman he despised and slighted, he approached me with that assured air which is common to successful coxcombs. At the same time, I perceived I was surrounded by all those ladies who were on his account my greatest enemies; and in revenge, wished for nothing more than to see me make a ridiculous figure. This situation so perplexed my thoughts, that when he came near enough to speak to me, I fainted away in his arms. (Had I studied which way I could gratify him most, it was impossible to have done anything to have pleased him more.) Some that stood by, brought smelling bottles, and used means for my recovery; and I was welcomed to returning life, by all those ill natured repartees, which women, enraged by envy, are capable of venting. One cried, "Well, I never thought my lord had any thing so frightful in his person, or so fierce in his manner, as to strike a young lady dead at the sight of him."—"No, no," says another, "some ladies senses are more apt to be hurried by agreeable, than disagreeable objects." With many more such sort of speeches, which shewed more malice than wit. This not being able to bear, trembling, and with but just strength enough to move, I crawled to my coach, and hurried home. When I was alone, and thought on what had happened to me in a publick court, I was at first driven to the utmost despair; but afterwards, when I came

to reflect, I believe this accident contributed more to my being cured of my passion, than any other could have done. I began to think the only method to pique the man, who had used me so barbarously, and to be revenged on my spiteful rivals, was to recover that beauty, which was then languid, and had lost it's lustre; to let them see I had still charms enough to engage as many lovers as I could desire, and that I could yet rival them, who had thus cruelly insulted me. These pleasing hopes revived my sinking spirits, and worked a more effectual cure on me, than all the philosophy and advice of the wisest men could have done. I now employed all my time and care in adorning my person, and studying the surest means of engaging the affections of others, while I myself continued quite indifferent; for I resolved for the future, if ever one soft thought made it's way to my heart, to fly the object of it, and by new lovers to drive the image from my breast. I consulted my glass every morning, and got such a command of my countenance, that I could suit it to the different tastes of variety of lovers; and though I was young, for I was not yet above seventeen, yet my publick way of life gave me such continual opportunities of conversing with men, and the strong desire I now had of pleasing them, led me to make such constant observations on every thing they said or did, that I soon found out the different methods of dealing with them. I observed that most men generally liked in women what was most opposite to their own characters; therefore to the grave solid man of sense, I endeavoured to appear sprightly, and full of spirit; to the witty and gay, soft and languishing; to the amorous (for they want no increase of their passions) cold and reserved; to the fearful and backward, warm and full of fire, and so of all the rest. As to beaux, and all those sort of men, whose desires are centred in the satisfaction of their vanity, I had learned, by sad experience, the only way to deal with them was to laugh at them, and let their own good opinion of themselves be the only support of their hopes. I knew, while I could get

• other

other followers, I was sure of them; for the only sign of modesty they ever give, is that of not depending on their own judgments, but following the opinions of the greatest number. Thus furnished with maxims, and grown wise by past errors, I in a manner begun the world again: I appeared in all publick places handsomer and more lively than ever, to the amazement of every one who saw me, and had heard of the affair between me and my lord. He himself was much surprized, and vexed at this sudden change, nor could he account how it was possible for me so soon to shake off those chains he thought he had fixed on me for life, nor was he willing to lose his conquest in this manner. He endeavoured by all means possible to talk to me again of love, but I stood fixed to my resolution, (in which I was greatly assisted by the crowd of admirers that daily surrounded me) never to let him explain himself: for, notwithstanding all my pride, I found the first impression the heart receives of love is so strong, that it requires the most vigilant care to prevent a relapse. Now I lived three years in a constant round of diversions, and was made the perfect idol of all the men that came to court of all ages, and all characters. I had several good matches offered me, but I thought none of them equal to my merit; and one of my greatest pleasures was to see those women, who had pretended to rival me, often glad to marry those whom I had refused. Yet notwithstanding this great success of my schemes, I cannot say I was perfectly happy; for every woman that was taken the least notice of, and every man that was insensible of this manner of life, when my father returning from his embassy in France, took me home with him, and carried me to a little pleasant country-house, where there was nothing grand or superfluous, but every thing neat and agreeable; there I led a life perfectly solitary. At first,

the time hung very heavy on my hands, and I wanted all kind of employment, and I had very like to have fallen into the height of the vapours, from no other reason but from want of knowing what to do with myself. But when I had lived here a little time, I found such a calmness in my mind, and such a difference between this and the restless anxieties I had experienced in a court, that I began to share the tranquillity that visibly appeared in every thing around me. I set myself to do works of fancy, and to raise little flower gardens, with many such innocent rural amusements; which, although they are not capable of affording any great pleasure, yet they give that serene turn to the mind, which I think much preferable to any thing else human nature is made susceptible of. I now resolved to spend the rest of my days here, and that nothing should allure me from this sweet retirement, to be again tossed about with tempestuous passions of any kind. Whilst I was in this situation, my Lord Peircy, the Earl of Northumberland's eldest son, by an accident of losing his way after a fox-chace, was met by my father, about a mile from our house; he came home with him, only with a design of dining with us, but was so taken with me, that he staid three days. I had too much experience in all affairs of this kind, not to see presently the influence I had on him; but I was at that time so entirely free from all ambition, that even the prospect of being a countess had no effect on me; and I then thought nothing in the world could have bribed me to have changed my way of life. This young lord, who was just in his bloom, found his passion so strong, he could not endure a long absence, but returned again in a week, and endeavoured by all the means he could think of, to engage me to return his affection. He addressed me with that tenderness and respect, which women on earth think can flow from nothing but real love; and very often told me, that unless he could be so happy, as by his assiduity and care to make himself agreeable to me, although he knew my father would eagerly embrace any proposal from him, yet he would

suffer

suffer that last of miseries, of never seeing me more, rather than owe his own happiness to any thing that might be the least contradiction to my inclinations. This manner of proceeding had something in it so noble and generous, that by degrees it raised a sensation in me, which I know not how to describe, nor by what name to call it; it was nothing like my former passion, for there was no turbulence, no uneasy waking nights attended it, but all I could with honour grant to oblige him, appeared to me to be justly due to his truth and love, and more the effect of gratitude, than of any desire of my own. The character I had heard of him from my father, at my first returning to England, in discouraging of the young nobility, convinced me, that if I was his wife, I should have the perpetual satisfaction of knowing every action of his must be approved by all the sensible part of mankind; so that very soon I began to have no scruple left, but that of leaving my little scene of quietness, and venturing again into the world. But this by his continual application, and submissive behaviour, by degrees entirely vanished, and I agreed he should take his own time to break it to my father, whose consent he was not long in obtaining; for such a match was by no means to be refused. There remained nothing now to be done, but to prevail with the Earl of Northumberland to comply with what his son so ardently desired; for which purpose, he set out immediately for London, and begged it as the greatest favour, that I would accompany my father, who was also to go thither the week following. I could not refuse his request, and as soon as we arrived in town, he flew to me with the greatest raptures, to inform me his father was so good, that, finding his happiness depended on his answer, he had given him free leave to act in this affair as would best please himself, and that he had now no obstacle to prevent his wishes. It was then the beginning of the winter, and the time for our marriage was fixed for the latter end of March; the consent of all parties made his access to me very easy, and we conversed to-

gether both with innocence and pleasure. As his fondness was so great, that he contrived all the methods possible to keep me continually in his sight, he told me one morning, he was commanded by his father to attend him to court that evening, and begged I would be so good as to meet him there. I was now so used to act as he would have me, that I made no difficulty of complying with his desire. Two days after this, I was very much surprized at perceiving such a melancholy in his countenance, and alteration in his behaviour, as I could no way account for; but by importunity, at last, I got from him, that Cardinal Wolsey, for what reason he knew not, had peremptorily forbid him to think any more of me; and when he urged that his father was not displeased with it, the cardinal in his imperious manner answered him, he should give his father such convincing reasons, why it would be attended with great inconveniences, that he was sure he could bring him to be of his opinion. On which he turned from him, and gave him no opportunity of replying. I could not imagine what design the cardinal could have in intermeddling in this match, and I was still more perplexed to find that my father treated my Lord Peircy with much more coldness than usual; he too saw it, and we both wondered what could possibly be the cause of all this. But it was not long before the mystery was all made clear by my father, who sending for me one day into his chamber, let me into a secret which was as little wished for as expected. He began with the surprizing effects of youth and beauty, and the madness of letting go those advantages they might procure us, till it was too late, when we might wish in vain to bring them back again. I stood amazed at this beginning; he saw my confusion, and bid me sit down and attend to what he was going to tell me, which was of the greatest consequence; and he hoped I would be wise enough to take his advice, and act as he should think best for my future welfare. He then asked me, if I should not be much pleased to be a queen? I answered with the greatest earnestness, that so far from it,

it, I would not live in a court again
 to be the greatest queen in the world;
 that I had a lover who was both de-
 sirable and able to raise my station,
 even beyond my wishes. I found
 this discourse was very displeasing;
 my father frowned, and called me a
 romantick fool, and said, if I would
 hearken to him he could make me a
 queen; for the cardinal had told him,
 that the king, from the time he saw
 me at court the other night, liked me;
 and intended to get a divorce from his
 wife, and to put me in her place, and
 ordered him to find some method to
 make me a maid of honour to her pre-
 sent majesty, that in the mean time he
 might have an opportunity of seeing
 me. It is impossible to express the asto-
 nishment these words threw me into;
 and notwithstanding that the moment
 before, when it appeared at so great
 a distance, I was very sincere in my
 declaration, how much it was against
 my will to be raised so high; yet now
 the prospect came nearer, I confess
 my heart fluttered, and my eyes were
 dazzled with the view of being seated
 on a throne. My imagination pre-
 sented before me all the pomp, power,
 and greatness that attend a crown;
 and I was so perplexed, I knew not
 what to answer, but remained as
 silent, as if I had lost the use of my
 speech. My father, who guessed
 what it was that made me in this con-
 dition, proceeded to bring all the ar-
 guments he thought most likely to
 bend me to his will; at last I reco-
 vered from this dream of grandeur,
 and begged him by all the most en-
 dearing names I could think of, not
 to urge me dishonourably to forsake
 the man, whom I was convinced
 would raise me to an empire, if in
 his power, and who had enough in
 his power to give me all I desired.
 But he was deaf to all I could say,
 and insisted that by next week I
 should prepare myself to go to court;
 he bid me consider of it, and not pre-
 fer a ridiculous notion of honour to
 the real interest of my whole family,
 but above all things not to disclose
 what he had trusted me with. On
 which, he left me to my own thoughts.
 When I was alone, I reflected how
 little real tenderness this behaviour
 shewed to me, whose happiness he
 did not at all consult; but only

looked on me as a ladder, on which
 he could climb to the height of his
 own ambitious desires: and when I
 thought on his fondness for me in
 my infancy, I could impute it to no-
 thing but either the liking me as a
 plaything, or the gratification of his
 vanity in my beauty. But I was
 too much divided between a crown
 and my engagement to Lord Peircy,
 to spend much time in thinking of
 any thing else; and although my fa-
 ther had positively forbid me, yet
 when he came next, I could not help ac-
 quainting him with all that had passed,
 with the reserve only of the struggle
 in my own mind on the first mention
 of being a queen. I expected he
 would have received the news with
 the greatest agonies; but he shewed
 no vast emotion: however, he could
 not help turning pale; and taking
 me by the hand, looked at me with
 an air of tenderness, and said, "If
 being a queen will make you happy,
 and it's in your power to be so, I
 would not for the world prevent it,
 let me suffer what I will." This
 amazing greatness of mind had on
 me quite the contrary effect from
 what it ought to have had; for in-
 stead of increasing my love for him,
 it almost put an end to it; and I be-
 gan to think if he could part with me
 the matter was not much: and I am
 convinced, when any man gives up
 the possession of a woman, whose
 consent he has once obtained, let his
 motive be ever so generous, he will
 disoblige her. I could not help
 shewing my dissatisfaction, and told
 him, I was very glad this affair sat
 so easily on him. He had not
 power to answer, but was so sud-
 denly struck with this unexpected
 ill-natured turn I gave his behaviour,
 that he stood amazed for some time,
 and then bowed and left me. Now
 I was again left to my own reflec-
 tions; but to make any thing intel-
 ligible out of them is quite impossi-
 ble; I wished to be a queen, and
 wished I might not be one; I would
 have my Lord Peircy happy without
 me; and yet I would not have the
 power of my charms be so weak that
 he could bear the thought of life
 after being disappointed in my love.
 But the result of all these confused
 thoughts was a resolution to obey

my

' my father. I am afraid there was
 ' not much duty in the case, though
 ' at that time I was glad to take hold
 ' of that small shadow, to save me
 ' from looking on my own actions in
 ' the true light. When my lover
 ' came again, I looked on him with
 ' that coldness that he could not bear,
 ' on purpose to rid myself of all im-
 ' portunity; for, since I had resolved
 ' to use him ill, I regarded him as the
 ' monument of my shame, and his
 ' every look appeared to me to upbraid
 ' me. My father soon carried me to
 ' court; there I had no very hard part
 ' to act, for with the experience I had
 ' had of mankind, I could find no
 ' great difficulty in managing a man
 ' who liked me, and for whom I not
 ' only did not care, but had an utter
 ' aversion to: but this aversion he be-
 ' lieved to be virtue; for how credu-
 ' lous is a man who has an inclination
 ' to believe! And I took care some-
 ' times to drop words of cottages and
 ' love, and how happy the woman was
 ' who fixed her affections on a man in
 ' such a station of life, that she might
 ' shew her love, without being sus-
 ' pected of hypocrisy or mercenary
 ' views! All this was swallowed very
 ' easily by the amorous king, who
 ' pushed on the divorce with the ut-
 ' most impetuosity, although the af-
 ' fair lasted a good while, and I re-
 ' mained most part of the time behind
 ' the curtain. Whenever the king
 ' mentioned it to me, I used such ar-
 ' guments against it as I thought the
 ' most likely to make him the more
 ' eager for it; begging, that unless
 ' his conscience was really touched, he
 ' would not, on my account, give any
 ' grief to his virtuous queen; for in
 ' being her handmaid, I thought my-
 ' self highly honoured; and that I
 ' would not only forego a crown, but
 ' even give up the pleasure of ever see-
 ' ing him more, rather than wrong my
 ' royal mistress. This way of talk-
 ' ing, joined to his eager desire to pos-
 ' sess my person, convinced the king so
 ' strongly of my exalted merit, that he
 ' thought it a meritorious act to dis-
 ' place the woman, (whom he could
 ' not have so good an opinion of, be-
 ' cause he was tired of her) and to
 ' put me in her place. After about a
 ' year's stay at court, as the king's
 ' love to me began to be talked of, it

' was thought proper to remove me,
 ' that there might be no umbrage given
 ' to the queen's party; I was forced
 ' to comply with this, though greatly
 ' against my will; for I was very jea-
 ' lous that absence might change the
 ' king's mind. I retired again with
 ' my father to his country-seat; but it
 ' had no longer those charms for me
 ' which I once enjoyed there, for my
 ' mind was now too much taken up
 ' with ambition to make room for any
 ' other thoughts. During my stay
 ' here, my royal lover often sent gentle-
 ' men to me with messages and letters,
 ' which I always answered in the man-
 ' ner I thought would best bring about
 ' my designs, which were to come
 ' back again to court. In all the let-
 ' ters that passed between us, there
 ' was something so kingly and com-
 ' manding in his, and so deceitful and
 ' submissive in mine, that I sometimes
 ' could not help reflecting on the dif-
 ' ference betwixt this correspondence,
 ' and that with Lord Peirce; yet I was
 ' so pressed forward by the desire of a
 ' crown, I could not think of turning
 ' back. In all I wrote, I continually
 ' praised his resolution of letting me be
 ' at a distance from him, since at this time
 ' it conduced indeed to my honour; but
 ' what was of ten times more weight
 ' with me, I thought it was necessary
 ' for his; and I would sooner suffer
 ' any thing in the world than be any
 ' means of hurt to him, either in his
 ' interest, or reputation. I always
 ' gave some hints of ill health, with
 ' some reflections how necessary the
 ' peace of the mind was to that of the
 ' body. By these means, I brought
 ' him to recal me again by the most
 ' absolute command, which I for a lit-
 ' tle time artfully delayed, (for I knew
 ' the impatience of his temper would
 ' not bear any contradiction;) till he
 ' made my father in a manner force
 ' me to what I most wished, with the
 ' utmost appearance of reluctance on
 ' my side. When I had gained this
 ' point, I began to think which way I
 ' could separate the king from the
 ' queen, for hitherto they lived in the
 ' same house. The Lady Mary, the
 ' queen's daughter, being then about
 ' sixteen, I sought for emissaries of
 ' her own age, that I could confide in,
 ' to instil into her mind disrespectful
 ' thoughts of her father, and make a

' jest of the tenderness of his conscience
 ' about the divorce. I knew she had
 ' naturally strong passions, and that
 ' young people of that age are apt to
 ' think those that pretend to be their
 ' friends are really so, and only speak
 ' their minds freely; I afterwards con-
 ' trived to have every word she spoke
 ' of him carried to the king; who took
 ' it all as I could wish, and fancied
 ' those things did not come at first
 ' from the young lady, but from her
 ' mother. He would often talk of it
 ' to me, and I agreed with him in his
 ' sentiments; but then, as a great proof
 ' of my goodness, I always endea-
 ' voured to excuse her, by saying, a
 ' lady so long time used to be a royal
 ' queen, might naturally be a little
 ' exasperated with those she fancied
 ' would throw her from that station
 ' she so justly deserved. By these sort
 ' of plots, I found the way to make
 ' the king angry with the queen; for
 ' nothing is easier than to make a man
 ' angry with a woman he wants to be
 ' rid of, and who stands in the way
 ' between him and his pleasures: so
 ' that now the king, on the pretence
 ' of the queen's obstinacy, in a point
 ' where his conscience was so tenderly
 ' concerned, parted with her. Every
 ' thing was now plain before me; I
 ' had nothing farther to do but to let
 ' the king alone to his own desires;
 ' and I had no reason to fear, since
 ' they had carried him so far, but that
 ' they would urge him on to do every
 ' thing I aimed at. I was created
 ' Marchioness of Pembroke. This
 ' dignity sat very easy on me; for the
 ' thoughts of a much higher title took
 ' from me all feeling of this; and I
 ' looked upon being a marchioness as
 ' a trifle, not that I saw the bauble in
 ' its true light, but because it fell
 ' short of what I had figured to myself
 ' I should soon obtain. The king's
 ' desires grew very impatient, and it
 ' was not long before I was privately
 ' married to him. I was no sooner
 ' his wife, than I found all the queen
 ' come upon me; I felt myself con-
 ' scious of royalty, and even the faces
 ' of my most intimate acquaintance
 ' seemed to me to be quite strange. I
 ' hardly knew them, height had turned
 ' my head, and I was like a man
 ' placed on a monument, to whose
 ' sight all creatures at a great distance

' below him, appear like so many little
 ' pigmies crawling about on the earth;
 ' and the prospect so greatly delighted
 ' me, that I did not presently consider,
 ' that, in both cases, descending a few
 ' steps erected by human hands would
 ' place us in the number of those very
 ' pigmies who appeared so despicable.
 ' Our marriage was kept private for
 ' some time; for it was not thought
 ' proper to make it publick (the affair
 ' of the divorce not being finished) till
 ' the birth of my daughter Elizabeth
 ' made it necessary. But all who saw
 ' me knew it; for my manner of speak-
 ' ing and acting was so much changed
 ' with my station, that all around me
 ' plainly perceived I was sure I was a
 ' queen. While it was a secret, I had
 ' yet something to wish for; I could
 ' not be perfectly satisfied till all the
 ' world was acquainted with my for-
 ' tune; but when my coronation was
 ' over, and I was raised to the height
 ' of my ambition, instead of finding
 ' myself happy, I was in reality more
 ' miserable than ever; for, besides that,
 ' the aversion I had naturally to the
 ' king was much more difficult to
 ' dissemble after marriage than be-
 ' fore, and grew into a perfect detesta-
 ' tion; my imagination, which had
 ' thus warmly pursued a crown, grew
 ' cool when I was in the possession
 ' of it, and gave me time to reflect
 ' what mighty matter I had gained
 ' by all this bustle; and I often used
 ' to think myself in the case of the
 ' fox-hunter, who, when he has toiled
 ' and sweated all day in the chace, as
 ' if some unheard-of blessing was to
 ' crown his success, finds, at last, all
 ' he has got by his labour is a stinking,
 ' nauseous animal. But my condition
 ' was yet worse than his; for he leaves
 ' the loathsome wretch to be torn by
 ' his hounds, whilst I was obliged to
 ' fondle mine, and meanly pretend him
 ' to be the object of my love: for the
 ' whole time I was in this envied, this
 ' exalted state, I led a continual life
 ' of hypocrisy, which I now know
 ' nothing on earth can compensate.
 ' I had no companion but the man I
 ' hated. I dared not disclose my senti-
 ' ments to any person about me; nor
 ' did any one presume to enter into
 ' any freedom of conversation with
 ' me; but all who spoke to me, talked
 ' to the queen, and not to me; for they

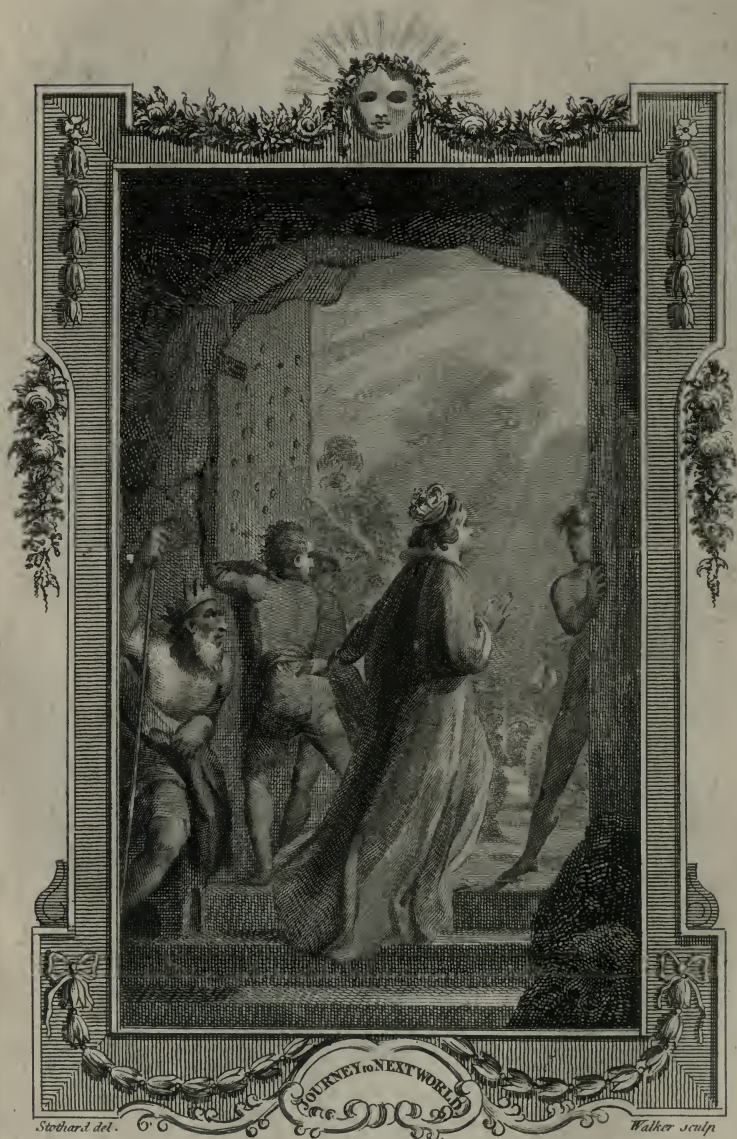
I would

would have said just the same things to a dressed-up puppet, if the king had taken a fancy to call it his wife; and as I knew every woman in the court was my enemy, from thinking she had much more right than I had to the place I filled, I thought myself as unhappy as if I had been placed in a wild wood, where there was no human creature for me to speak to, in a continual fear of leaving any traces of my footsteps, lest I should be found by some dreadful monster, or stung by snakes and adders; for such are spiteful women to the objects of their envy. In this worst of all situations, I was obliged to hide my melancholy, and appear cheerful. This threw me into an error the other way, and I sometimes fell into a levity in my behaviour that was afterwards made use of to my disadvantage. I had a son dead-born, which I perceived abated something of the king's ardour; for his temper could not brook the least disappointment. This gave me no uneasiness; for, not considering the consequences, I could not help being best pleased when I had least of his company. Afterwards, I found he had cast his eyes on one of my maids of honour; and whether it was owing to any arts of hers, or only to the king's violent passions, I was in the end used even worse than my former mistress had been by my means. The decay of the king's affection was presently seen by all those court-sycophants, who continually watch the motions of royal eyes; and, the moment they found they could be heard against me, they turned my most innocent actions and words, nay, even my very looks, into proofs of the blackest crimes. The king, who was impatient to enjoy his new love, lent a willing ear to all my accusers, who found ways of making him jealous that I was false to his bed. He would not so easily have believed any thing against me before; but he was now glad to flatter himself that he had found a reason to do just what he had resolved upon without a reason; and on some slight pretences, and hear-say evidence, I was sent to the Tower, where the lady, who was my greatest enemy, was appointed to watch me,

and lie in the same chamber with me. This was really as bad a punishment as my death; for she insulted me with those keen reproaches, and spiteful witticisms, which threw me into such vapours and violent fits, that I knew not what I uttered in this condition. She pretended I had confessed talking ridiculous stuff with a set of low fellows, whom I had hardly ever taken notice of, as could have imposed on none but such as were resolved to believe. I was brought to my trial, and, to blacken me the more, accused of conversing criminally with my own brother, whom, indeed, I loved extremely well, but never looked on him in any other light than as my friend. However, I was condemned to be beheaded, or burnt, as the king pleased; and he was graciously pleased, from the great remains of his love, to chuse the mildest sentence. I was much less shocked at this manner of ending my life than I should have been in any other station; but I had had so little enjoyment from the time I had been a queen, that death was the less dreadful to me. The chief things that lay on my conscience, were the arts I made use of to induce the king to part with the queen, my ill usage of Lady Mary, and my jilting Lord Peircy. However, I endeavoured to calm my mind as well as I could, and hoped these crimes would be forgiven me; for in other respects I had led a very innocent life, and always did all the good-natured actions I found any opportunity of doing. From the time I had it in my power, I gave a great deal of money amongst the poor, I prayed very devoutly, and went to my execution very composedly. Thus I lost my life at the age of twenty-nine, in which short time, I believe, I went through more variety of scenes than many people who live to be very old. I had lived in a court, where I spent my time in coquetry and gaiety; I had experienced what it was to have one of those violent passions which makes the mind all turbulence and anxiety. I had had a lover whom I esteemed and valued; and at the latter part of my life I was raised to a station as high as the vainest woman could wish;

but,





Stothard del.

Walker sculp

‘ but, in all these various changes, I
‘ never enjoyed any real satisfaction,
‘ unless in the little time I lived re-
‘ tired in the country free from all
‘ noise and hurry; and while I was
‘ conscious I was the object of the
‘ love and esteem of a man of sense
‘ and honour.’

On the conclusion of this history,

Minos paused for a small time, and then ordered the gate to be thrown open for Anne Bullen’s admittance; on the consideration, that whoever had suffered being a queen for four years, and been sensible during all that time of the real misery which attends that exalted station, ought to be forgiven whatever she had done to obtain it*.

* Here ends this curious manuscript; the rest being destroyed in rolling up pens, tobacco, &c. It is to be hoped heedless people will henceforth be more cautious what they burn or use to other vile purposes, especially when they consider the fate which had likely to have befallen the divine Milton; and that the works of Homer were probably discovered in some chandler’s shop in Greece.

F I N I S

THE
LIFE AND ADVENTURES
OF
JOE THOMPSON.

A NARRATIVE FOUNDED ON FACT.

BY MR. KIMBER.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

TO WAKE THE SOUL, BY TENDER STROKES OF ART;
TO RAISE THE GENIUS, AND TO MEND THE HEART;
TO MAKE MANKIND IN CONSCIOUS VIRTUE BOLD,
LIVE O'ER EACH SCENE, AND BE WHAT THEY BEHOLD;
FOR THIS ———

POPE.



L O N D O N :

Printed for HARRISON and Co. No. 18, Paternoster-Row.

M DCC LXXXIII.



The Editor's Preface.

IT may, perhaps, be expected by the reader, that some account should be prefixed to this work, more than he will find in the work itself, of the motives for publishing it, and such other matters as custom has made the subject of a preface; and in order to comply with the natural curiosity of this country, which is still exploring farther and farther into the reasons of things, and is hardly ever to be satisfied, till it has sifted an affair to the very bottom, I am going to acquaint him, that, though Mr. Thompson has been some years in England, the eager desire his numerous friends and acquaintance still expressed to hear him relate his adventures, grew quite troublesome to him; and, in his own defence, he yielded to my pressing solicitations to digest the various and uncommon accidents that have chequered his life, into a narrative that should at once ease him of that trouble of answering such numbers of questions, as were every day put to him; and, at the same time I made use of the aforesaid reason to induce him to write, I urged the benefit it might be of to mankind, to behold a picture of human nature, as it really is, struggling amidst the war of the passions, that inspire the breast, and, at length, through a series of temptations, getting the better of vice, and adding to the triumphs of virtue and the virtuous. Indeed, he began, upon this discourse, to think it his duty to publish his adventures, for which he has well given his other reasons in the beginning of his history. Was my author known as much to the publick in general, as he is by his particular friends, the veracity of all he has related of himself would never fall into doubt. Perhaps the kingdom cannot boast a man of more worth or more honour; and he lives a blessing to the world, and the joy and comfort of his relations and friends: but need I enlarge on his character here, when he has so well portrayed himself in the book before me, and has given us a thorough representation of an honest, upright heart? I know his father, and have the greatest veneration for the son, who is a gentleman of excellent endowments; and has joined, to a finished education, all the experience that falls to a man's lot, who has seen the world, and inspected it's principles of action on so many various occasions. I promised him to revise and publish his performance; and he insisted I should model it as I thought proper; but, I must own, I found it far superior to correction, and exceeding all my most sanguine expectations; and I ventured only upon two alterations: he had wrote it as one continued narrative; but for the reader's greater pleasure, and the benefit of his memory, I have divided it into chapters, and added contents to each; which, I think, though a modern way, is a manner that is useful and pleasing; and, as a celebrated author says, is like erecting so many baiting-places, or inns, for the traveller's refreshment in his peregrinations through our work. The other liberty

liberty I took was this; that though he had made use of real names, I, knowing most of the persons mentioned, thought it was not so eligible to suffer it to come abroad in that manner, and have changed many of the most remarkable, or best known names, into fictitious ones, that are as expressive, as any I could pitch upon, of the characters of the persons they represent; and I have used the same freedom with the names of places in England, willing, as much as possible, to prevent any bad effects that might arise from the openness and sincerity of my author; and I have had the pleasure to receive a letter of thanks from him for my prudent caution. Names signify nothing, they are facts that my reader requires; and the reflections that naturally arise from certain combinations of accidents of good and bad fortune, by which instruction and improvement is conveyed to the mind. And now I am naturally led to say somewhat of the construction and moral of the piece before me. The Life and Adventures of Joe Thompson is a delineation of the condition of unhappy mortals, who are subject to misfortune, and the assaults of vice; and, to attain any desirable end, must wade through a sea of troubles from without, and of struggles and combats from within; and my author, not content with relating things simply, has deduced them from first principles; and has endeavoured to make it appear, that man is not born with any natural turpitude inherent in him; and that it requires a long habit of vice and bad company entirely to root out those ideas of religion and virtue he is supplied with by nature, and a good and careful education; nor, that once done, can an ingenuous mind thus, for ever, be debased, but will rise again from the rubbish that surrounds it on every side, again become sound and reasonable. The several episodes that are interspersed, here and there, as the adventures of Mrs. Goodwill, Mr. Prim, Mr. Saris, &c. have all of them so visible a good tendency, that the moral need not be pointed out; and the whole work may be said to exhibit the triumphs of virtue, all benign, serene, and amiable; and the defeats of vice baneful, obnoxious, and ruinous to mankind, both in soul and body. I must look upon my author a little in another light also, with regard to the reflections, maxims, and instructive lessons, scattered through every page of his adventures. And here I must own his manner and spirit charms me; and gives me so high an opinion of his sagacity and good sense, that, though I ever had the greatest affection for him, yet, methinks, whenever I read those breathings, let me call them, of a generous and noble soul, my affection is heightened, to a prodigious degree, more than ever; and I believe our reader will admit, with me, that they make the work a system of ethicks and morality, as much as it is an history or series of adventures.

The French, who are noted for their numerous lives and memoirs, have introduced the most trifling and *jejune* circumstances, that happen to a man, therein, by which they have made that kind of writing the subject of ridicule and satire; but, sure, if, with proper dignity and decorum, the transactions of a busy life are given to the world, it may be said to become as useful, or more so than the most shining examples exhibited in person, as it makes a greater impression upon the heart, and sinks more deeply into the mind: and I must say this for our countrymen, that they have given the world works of this nature, that far surpass the productions of our neighbours, and have

in them all the easy flow and politeness of the French, together with the nervous strength and fire of the English. And I believe it will be admitted, without dispute, that this brave nation display, in their *histories* and *biography*, a manner and sentiment peculiar to a free people, which can never be imitated by the slaves of *despotic* governments.

The language of my author is beautiful, and applicable to the subject he treats of; common events are related in familiar words, but, when it is required, no one can rise into more apt and proper strains; and in those you discover the man, and the genuine cast and disposition of his soul. You have no uncouth and unnatural flights of the false sublime; no distorted images are introduced; nor is the fancy bewildered with far-fetched figures and crude ideas, which never existed any where but in the brain of the writer. The whole production is one even *champaign* country; and the verdant hills and leafy thickets, that are here and there interpersed, are so many beauties that add to the delightful prospect of the fruitful plain, without tiring or sickening the sight. The very subject of love is treated of with a delicacy that must please and charm; and, though all the justice due to the delightful sex is done them, yet, in the most warm and passionate flights, nothing is said or implied that can shock the nicest ear, or kindle a blush, even in the face of innocence herself.

In a word, I look upon it as a book of the utmost merit, and, I will say, importance, particularly to the youth of both sexes, as inculcating just notions of things, wiping the prejudices of education from the mind, inspiring generous and worthy sentiments, encouraging benevolence, love to mankind, and all the social virtues and duties that ought to reside in the bosom of rational creatures: I might say also, in the words of my motto, it serves—

To wake the soul by tender strokes of art;
To raise the genius, and to mend the heart;

History and *biography* have been agreed, on all hands, and by the consent of all ages, to be of the greatest value to the world, if they relate the actions of the writer or hero with fidelity and impartiality. *History* may be said to be the general fountain, *biography* a stream that runs from it. As the fountain is not so accessible to the generality of the world, it cannot be of such universal use as the stream which every one can come to, to slake his thirst at after knowledge; and there, in that transparent mirror, may behold himself, and learn how to form his future behaviour in life; besides, *history* usually treats of the actions of such beings as are beyond the common ken, the great and the exalted; who, as they seldom act by rule themselves, are very improper patterns for other people beneath them.

The life of a man, faithfully related, if crowded, like that of Mr. Thompson, with a variety of interesting events, by the entertainment it must of course afford, captivates the mind, and carries one on to read, whether one will or no. It is drawn by these captivating strains that we pursue the thread of the most crabbed truths with pleasure; and the most sublime dictates, which had else, perhaps, never employed our thoughts, become taking and familiar. Virtue, as represented by certain four *philosophers* and *divines*, wears so many dis-

couraging airs about her, that the soul, young and pliant to the baits of pleasure, looks on her with aversion, and denies harbour to the troublesome guest, who seems to frown upon him with too much austerity. Thence arose the ancient method of instructing by fable, from which it would be no hard matter to prove that every other is derived, though I own it to be a bold assertion. Wise men and tutors to the rising generation began to see their error in telling home truths, and forcing dogmatical maxims on the young mind; they therefore gilt the pill, and, under these little tales, brought by degrees, to perfection, what too much precipitancy and severity would have rendered for ever distasteful.

Works of the biographical sort, as they have employed the pains of the authors, so have they gained the applause of all countries; and, from a view of the usefulness of them and the emolument arising from thence, some *Genii* have endeavoured to improve upon the matter, and have published great numbers of fictitious *lives* and *histories* of persons that never have existed; and a swarm of *romances* have overspread and deluged the world; some of them execrably planned, rather to corrupt unwary youth, by representing all sober and regular behaviour as ridiculous, and prostituting the most sacred characters to reproach. We have bad men of all ranks, no doubt; but there are some orders of men, that, in a peculiar manner, ought rather to have their vices concealed, than exposed, as the ignorant are apt to make very odd constructions, and to recur from the person, and charge that on his profession, which ought only to be charged upon the man; others, to excite mirth; and entertain the reader's vicious taste, have represented such strange and ludicrous characters, as sure never existed; but in imagination; uncouth as the characters of the famed Rabelais, which no one can liken to any thing but those shadowy, fantastick representations of the *baseless fabrick of a vision*, that sport in our fancies, when laid in the arms of sleep. Others there are, who, indeed, may boast of great beauties, and their authors of great merit; in which virtue is inculcated in a most amiable manner, and the heart is, step by step, led on to generous and noble sentiments; but still, whilst they have the characters of *romances*, people will not give themselves the needful trouble to inspect the moral; or, if they do, imagining it the product of mere imagination, it passes off as a fine fangled tale, and makes no deep or lasting impression. In a real life founded on facts, like this, of a person now in being, where every thing may be depended upon, and goes upon the standard of truth; where it wears those indelible marks of fidelity that distinguish it from all fiction and invention; where one fact or circumstance naturally flows from another, and you see nothing either impossible or improbable in the narration; real service is done to mankind; and we cannot forbear comparing the character of the author with our own, and endeavouring to imitate the bright and shining parts of his conduct and behaviour, and to eschew those parts which appear to us absurd, immoral, and ridiculous: and I think, where the life, so written, proceeds from the pen of the hero himself, things are so intimately described, and the motions of the heart are so anatomized and dissected, and he relates what he feels, or has felt, so sensibly, that it adds fresh force and vigour to every thing the writer would inculcate; and we alternately, with him, feel the starts of joy, and the move-

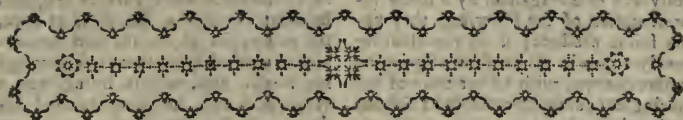
ments

ments and bursts of sorrow, upon every reviving or mortifying occurrence that happens.

My author, I think, is all over new, and has followed the track of no former writer; his style and manner is peculiar to himself; nor has he borrowed any thing from others, save here and there a beautiful passage his memory suggested to him, from our best and finest poets: this our reader will rather account, I dare say, a perfection than a blemish, and thank him for it, as they are not brought in incongruously and improperly.

Thus I commend Joe Thompson to the perusal of all ranks of people. The fair of this happy land will rise improved from their reading, as well as the generous youth, who pants after instruction. In *families* it should become a kind of Monitor, and in *schools* a Vade Mecum; and that it may be as much admired by others, as it is by me, and may be of universal service to mankind, is the sincere and hearty prayer of

THE EDITOR.



THE
LIFE AND ADVENTURES
OF
JOE THOMPSON.

VOLUME THE FIRST.

CHAP. I.

THE AUTHOR'S MOTIVES FOR
WRITING HIS ADVENTURES—
HIS BIRTH—ACCOUNT OF HIS
PARENTS—MANAGEMENT OF
HIM TILL HE ARRIVES TO AN
AGE SUFFICIENT FOR SCHOOL
—IS PUT UNDER THE TUITION
OF MR. PROSODY.

WHEN a man's life has
been one continued scene
of misfortunes and dis-
tress, and when these ills
have been brought upon
him principally by his
own bad conduct, his prevailing vices,
and repeated crimes, he cannot possibly
be suspected to be actuated by vanity,
or a lust of applause, to relate his
adventures: such a relation must then
be dictated by other and better motives,
for it would be absurd to suppose that
the writer could reap any self-satisfac-
tion, by making the humbling and
mortifying discovery of such actions as
must incur the censure, and be despised
by the bulk of mankind, and can never
engage their approbation.

The recapitulation of a life, even of
the most shining events, should propose

some superior gratification to the mind
than the desire of praise, or an inclina-
tion to perpetuate a name; these are
mean and low spurs to such an at-
tempt; and believe me, gentle reader,
was I not thoroughly convinced from
reason, as well as an higher authority,
that every aim, every action of our
lives, should as well be directed to the
good of our fellow-creatures as to our
own purposes, and that I am silently
accused by my own conscience for not
having been of so much use, by setting
a proper example; which is the great
work of life, as I am assured is the
design of Providence, that every indi-
vidual should do, but have perverted
the ends of my existence in the grossest
manner, in the former part of my
time, I should have had no inclination
to have submitted this history to thy
inspection. It is as much as lies in
my power to atone for my former neg-
lect, which sits heavily upon my soul,
that I venture to appear thus upon the
stage, and to act over again those scenes
which plunged me into the most tor-
turing miseries. If my pains answer
the end I sincerely propose; if, whilst
the entertaining and the amusing capti-
vates the reader, I may be the means
to caution the giddy and thoughtless
part of the world from the pursuit of
folly

folly and extravagance, by a lively representation of the sufferings they never fail to produce; if by representing lovely virtue in all her flow of genuine native charms, with all her train of inspiring encouraging rewards, I subdue and melt the heart to a love and veneration for her precepts; if by displaying vice, all baneful and odious, stripped of those artful ensnaring disguises that so bewitch our depraved appetites, I make some of her votaries sicken at the nauseous sight, and abandon her guilty triumphs over the reason and over the good sense of our race; great will be my reward, and I shall applaud myself for my labour.

A pleasant and well situated village in the West Riding of Yorkshire was the place of my nativity; my father was a clergyman, and descended from a family of considerable repute in that country; he enjoyed the vicarage where I was born, of which he had been the incumbent for near ten years before: from a fond and tender affection he married my mother, without the least consideration of adding to his fortune; but, though they had been wedded for five years, they had had no child, to their great concern and disquiet; so that I was received with the utmost festivity and rejoicing, as a boon from Providence, like the Child of the Promise. Our neighbourhood was surrounded by gentlemen's seats, and the parish in general had a most high esteem for my father: he was then in the full vigour of his age. An education of the most generous and liberal cast had humanized his mind, without giving him that uncouth stiffness, that unsociable behaviour, very often the disagreeable attendants of learning and study. To a perfect knowledge of books, in almost every language, he had joined a knowledge of mankind, and a politeness of address; which, without taking from the dignity of his function, discovered, in every thing he said or did, the fine gentleman. Though he was a thorough son of the Church of England, he never, either in his sermons or common discourse, betrayed the least animosity or prejudice against the many sects and parties into which religion is divided; but prayed for, and wished well to, every honest upright man, let his manner of thinking,

as to the speculative part of religion, be what it would. He was, at once, the pastor, the physician, and the umpire of every dispute that arose amongst his flock: and, as his living was a very good one, he never exacted his dues with severity, but exercised, on every occasion, the most diffusive benevolence, charity, and hospitality. He had married my mother whilst he was at the university, and had ever preserved the tenderest regard and affection for her, the sole and only object of his fondest wishes. Nature seemed in her to have formed a recompence for so much virtue and goodness as existed in my father: her person was agreeable; but such a mind shone through that person as wonderfully dignified every action of her life. The little levities and frailties of the sex she was an utter stranger to; her very love to her husband was conducted with an air of so much real good sense and discretion, that every body was charmed that approached her. He had furnished her soul with every useful knowledge that renders a woman amiable and useful; which rather was improved by the œconomy and domestick management of her family affairs, in which she took great delight, and where a regularity and decorum is so much the ornament of a good woman. They lived together in a real harmony and friendship which trifles never had the power to disturb; and then were so happy as to have had very few considerable disquiets.

Such was the pair to whom I had the happiness to be born; and I the more particularly have described them to let the world know that I had no excuse to plead for my subsequent follies, from the bad qualities or examples of my parents, which have generally so visible an effect on the actions of their children.

When I arrived at about three years of age, my father, who doated upon me, took me under the shadow of his own wings, and began to teach me the use of my letters; his maxim being, that even that infantile branch of education should be conducted with propriety, and not trusted to old women, who can scarcely see the letters they pretend to teach. Under his endearing care, at five I read every thing with

with a proper emphasis; and had imbibed from him such precepts of morality as suited with my years. At six I could write a tolerable good hand, and was esteemed a very sharp and promising child: my proficiency surprised every body; and the quick progress I made, induced the country-women to say, that it was impossible I should live, I was so sharp and so witty.

My father, who very much approved of the way of education in publick schools, in my ninth year, by which time I had made some progress in the Latin tongue, determin'd to send me from home, for my farther instruction in the languages. He us'd to say, that a number of youths together generally spurred and excited each other to an emulation in their pursuit of learning, and laid the foundation of a knowledge of the world, and of friendships with one another of the utmost use in the future course of life.

As I had been so tenderly treated at home, the thoughts of being sent from my parents gave me some childish concern, which was soon dissipated when I was informed how many sports I should partake of with my school-fellows; for I had yet had no other companions than my father's family, he himself having condescended to divert himself with joining in my most puerile amusements.

After some difficulty, my father fixed upon a gentleman of his own order, near a town about twenty miles from us, who kept a boarding-school, whom he knew to be a man of considerable learning, and who had also the reputation of treating his scholars with humanity and kindness: accordingly, after every thing was provided, my father and mother set out with me for the house of Mr. Profody, for that was the name of my intended tutor.

At our arrival we were received by this gentleman with great civility. Every thing settled, and dinner over, they took their leaves of me, whilst I could not refrain from tears, which I shed in abundance at this first separation from them; my mother not forgetting to leave me a token of her love in my pocket, which was of great importance to gain the good-will of my school-fellows:

CHAP. II.

DIGRESSION ON SCHOOLMASTERS

—CHARACTER OF MR. PROFODY AND HIS WIFE, AND THEIR DAUGHTER URSULA—MISERABLE TEMPER OF HIS MASTER AND MISTRESS—AVARICE THOUGHT TO BE CONSTITUTIONAL—MISS URSULA IN LOVE, WHICH IS OPPOSED BY HER FATHER—HE MAKES GREAT PROGRESS IN HIS LEARNING—ALMOST STARVED—ROBS ORCHARDS—IS SEVERELY PUNISHED.

SINCE I have been capable of reflection, I have often been puzzled to find a reason, not only why parents were so mistaken in providing proper instructors for their children, but also how so many improper persons were to be found in so very interesting a profession as that of the education of youth. The solution of the first difficulty is pretty hard, and various reasons, I think, may be assigned; but I believe the principal ones are want of attention, and that the generality of parents fondly view the desired end, but are not so anxious, nor take so much pains, about the means to procure it. This, indeed, is the misfortune of most of us in every thing we undertake; and mankind, in the gross, may be said to pursue laudable views, but are woefully deficient in the means to attain them; and thus, for want of a proper forethought, and sagacious deliberation, what should redound to our great benefit often proves the reverse. That we have so many queer and improper tutors is not so hard to account for; many men are destined to learning whose souls never were formed to *taste* the Pierian spring; and after wasting a number of years in acquiring a knowledge of the dead languages, without any thing else to recommend them, they launch into the world; but their small abilities not affording opportunities to rise, having little other knowledge to recommend them, they, per force, retreat for shelter from want to the business of a school-master, where alone they can be important, and retaliate

talliate the bad conduct of their parents on the morals and breeches of our children.

I soon discerned the difference between being under the tender eyes of my parents and the harsh and crabbed documents of my master, and subject to the humours of his family. Mr. Profody was now in the down-hill part of his life, the ascent of which had been turmoiled with care and anxiety, partly flowing from the hardships he had undergone in a pitiful curacy, and partly from his own want of genius, and the forlidd disposition of his heart, which influenced, and still continued to influence, all his motions. He had thus contracted such an habitual moroseness of countenance, that, whenever you looked at him, you must conceive the most unfavourable idea of a mind that could so uncouthly paint a visage with lines of ill nature and sourness. He was, indeed, a good, classical scholar; and, in saying that, you exhausted the whole scope of praise that was justly due to him. To his family and pupils he was a complete tyrant; and, in the exercise of the birchin discipline, Bulby of old was but a mere type of him. He had the most profound regard to orthodoxy in opinion, and did not scruple to damn all those that differed from him in sentiment, either as to religion or politics; and his neighbours in general stigmatized him with the name of a Jacobite; and, indeed, he really was a concealed Nonjuror: however, the complaisance of the world agreed to look upon him as a good pedagogue, and in that capacity he had existed all the latter days of his life, and had raised a pretty considerable sum of money in that employment. His wife, Mrs. Deborah Profody, was as odd a figure as can possibly be imagined; she was somewhat protuberant behind, which has robbed her of her fulness before; and her face was a most disagreeable assortment of forbidding features; small light-coloured eyes she had, but so buried in their sockets, that they could be compared only to those of an owl; and the motion of her eye-lids resembled somewhat that of the nictating membrane of birds; her mouth was screwed up, and betrayed her deficiency of teeth; and the

pointed extremities of her chin and nose were in such approximation with each other, that the former generally plentifully bedewed the latter with it's trickling distillations; her skin appeared like a parchment that has been shrivelled up by the heat of the fire; and this worthy personage had been very assiduous to assist her husband's accumulating temper, by pinching the guts of the boys in equal proportion to the food he bestowed upon their brains. Her avarice was unbounded, and she betrayed her disposition in every action she performed; she used to harangue plentifully on the salutiferous and grateful nature of soups, and the excellent properties of mutton-dripping, which was, from it's healing and balsamick qualities, given to us in lieu of butter; and, as to water, she had discovered more virtues in the use of it than ever Hancock did. Her stature was low; and a constant habit of fretfulness kept her as lean as the picture of Famine could be supposed to be. I cannot help observing, by the bye, that avarice generally lurks under such appearances; and I question if that vice is not in some measure constitutional; for where nature has denied that flow of generous juices that warm and invigorate the human frame, and has bestowed them in a spare and niggard manner, the heart distends not to generous and kind sentiments, feels not the warmth of benevolence and charity; but, being buried and confined in an adust or frigid breast, dies away into the starveling ideas of jealousy, suspicion, and covetousness; most of the subjects of their sordid reign being of this meagre frame and habit of body.

Miss Ursula, the daughter and heiress of this mighty pedagogue, was turned of thirty, and had been a slave to the humours of her parents from her cradle; whose authority love had now made her demur to, she having conceived an affection for Mr. Job Hatrow, the son of a neighbouring farmer, who first taught her to own the sway of that powerful deity. She was not disagreeable in her person, which was, however, of the largest size, and her features were regular; and, had Miss not been a little too much given to pride, she would have been a tolerable companion for life, for him or any other farmer

farmer in Yorkshire. Young Harrow was as arch a *tike* as any in the county, and was more enamoured, it was supposed, with the old man's bags than with his daughter; but Old Surly was absolutely against his Ursula's disposing of herself; and the reason was, that he knew he must lug out his purse upon the occasion; and that was a reflection that included too much horror for him to indulge. He used to declaim then greatly against children's leaving their parents for an husband, and insisted upon it as a duty incumbent on them to close their eyes before they entered into wedlock. Ursula, however, little relished this doctrine, and was over head and ears in love, which occasioned much bickering between her and her father and mother.

As I had made some proficiency at home, I was immediately put into the third form, where they were reading Virgil; and, in about a year's time, I was foremost of the second class, and began to relish the elegance of the politest and best Roman authors; but, whilst I thus improved in my learning, I grew in condition as sleek and thin as a running-horse, from the short-comings that were generally my portion. We had about thirty boarders; and our mistress so managed matters, that what would scarcely have kept life and soul together in half that number, sufficed us all.

She had an excellent talent of making a great deal out of a little; and a small quantity of meat generally relished a tremendous vase of soup or broth, which had little other relish than that of the ingredients of the root or herb kind; and as to our bread and our cheese, she contrived to have them so stale and hard, that our jaws were tired before we could satisfy our hunger. My case, indeed, was better than that of most of my comrades, as my father seldom let me want money; and I had presents frequently sent me by other relations; but which, as I was swayed by great generosity of temper, I was pretty free in diffusing the benefits of to my particular favourites. No wonder if we laid the orchards and gardens of the vicinity, under frequent contributions, as our boyish love of fruit was thus stimulated by hunger; and, indeed, our depredations were so notorious, that we were frequently found

out, and our smarting posteriors commonly paid for the devastations we made. The severity this discipline was practised with by our master, raised a down-right hatred and contempt in most of us towards him; but we made a point of it never to complain to our parents, being ashamed of such a poverty of spirit and weakness, enduring the smart, without much fear or compunction, by a long course of habit. I, for my part, being naturally of a high mettle, and given much to unluckiness and waggery of all sorts, soon became chief and leader of the rest in all our pranks, and generally came off with the greatest share of punishment, which I bore with the resolution of a martyr; and had so often gone through a course of flogging, that my breech was become perfectly hardened and callous. My ambition, however, which exceeded all the rest of my passions, made me very assiduous at my book; so that, at the end of three years, I became the admiration of my master himself, and the envy of my school-mates.

CHAP. III.

HE ROBS HIS MASTER'S FAVOURITE
PEAR-TREE—IS DISCOVERED,
AND SEVERELY SCOURGED—
SOOTHED BY HIS MASTER AND
MISTRESS—RESOLVES TO BE
REVENGED—CATASTROPHE OF
AN EXTRAVAGANT GENTLEMAN,
WHOSE GHOST HAUNTS HIS MA-
STER'S HOUSE—HE TERRIFIES
HIS MASTER AND THE FAMILY—
ACCOUNT OF THE CONFUSION
THEY ARE IN.

HITHERTO our ravages had been carried on at some distance from home; but our master having a very fine pear-tree in a garden which was kept under lock and key, I proposed to two or three of those boys who formed our council, that we should make an attack upon those tempting cates. I urged the absurdity of keeping us from the enjoyment of such a banquet; saying, as we were part of his family, we ought to have an unlimited licence to rove at large in that garden as well as any other part of his house; intimating, besides, that it was

very hard that Mrs. Profody should make money of those pears, which she really did, when our parents were told, when we first came, that all the fruit about the place was intended for our use and refreshment. My arguments prevailed, and we set immediately to execute our scheme. This tree, which bore several bushels of fruit, stood so close to the wall, that several of its branches projected over it; therefore I proposed they should hoist me up on their shoulders, and wait below, whilst I gathered the pears, and flung them into their hats. No sooner said, but done, and over I went; and was very busy in my occupation, when I perceived, at some distance, my master weeding a flower-pot. As the whole spot was thick set with trees, he could not possibly discover me, though, by the elevation of my situation, I had a full view of him. Being tempted by such a lucky opportunity to gratify a little of that resentment his whippings had inspired, I took full aim at him with a pear; and happened to hit him just upon the corner of his hat, which immediately, with his wig, fell off; and I was going to second my blow, but, unfortunately for poor Pill-Garlick, the spring I gave myself snapped the branch I stood upon, and down I came on the inside of the wall, bringing along with me, and the ruins, whole loads of this forbidden fruit. The noise roused the old gentleman from the contemplation of what had just happened, and he came upon me, before I could disentangle myself, and seized me, with the utmost fury painted in his face. In the first motions of his rage he felled me with one blow at his feet; and when I recovered, which was not for some minutes, he dragged me by the collar in the school-room, where binding me to his desk, I underwent a more severe flogging than ever was exercised upon a wretch at the cart's-tail. His passion was too violent to admit him to utter any expressions, and when he unbound me, which he did not till he was quite out of breath, he left me, furiously crying, 'There, I believe this will make you remember me!' wallowing in the blood that plentifully flowed from me upon the floor. It was near two hours before I was able to stand, and then I crept up to bed in the utmost agony and torture; where I

had not been long before his wife came up, and, pretending to caution me against such tricks for the future, administered some unguent or other, which eased the smart of my back, which was before almost intolerable. After some reflections upon my roguery, she soothed me, (for, indeed, the old man had imagined he had carried matters too far, and sent her up for that purpose) and told me she would intercede with my master to forgive me. Accordingly, in an hour afterwards, Profody himself came into my room; and, after some very severe expostulations, told me he should pass by any farther correction for this offence, and once more try if I would leave off such vicious practices; and, so saying, put a small piece of money into my hand, and bid me lie in bed till next day, where I had great care taken of me. This was an unparalleled piece of generosity, considering his temper; but did not in the least extinguish my desire and thorough resolution to revenge myself upon him the very first opportunity.

Mr. Profody's house, which was an antique Gothick structure, very large; and, by the thickness and strength of its walls, an instance of that regard our ancestors shewed to posterity even in their buildings, had many years, according to the report of the country, been haunted by the ghost of a young gentleman, whose mansion-house it had been, and who, after running out his estate, had ended his life and extravagances together by shooting himself through the head. A murder generally, in these parts, is the forerunner of an apparition, and there were not wanting many witnesses to his having been seen, over and over, walking through the garden at the mid of night without his head; so far the credulous country-people had imposed upon themselves by their superstition; nay, a certain old dame, who lived at two or three fields distance, frequently saw gleaming lights through the windows, which, with very great state, progressively went from room to room, and then disappeared all on a sudden. Squire Such-an-one, they would tell you, very gravely, who lived in the house at such a time, was obliged to remove, after having with his family been scared out of his wits by uncommon knockings and unboltings of the windows.

dows and doors, so that they could get no rest or quiet: sometimes, to be sure, large flames of fire were seen to issue from chimnies, which had conveyed no smoke through them for many years; and such dreadful apprehensions these stories had raised, that none of the country-folks thereabout would come within a furlong or two of the house after dark; Farmer Barley having had his horse frightened so much, that he flung him over his head; and Gammer Willon had been, by some *unseen person*, thrown into a ditch, and hardly knew if she got home on her head or her feet. Our master, who was a great enthusiast, did not pretend to disbelieve these relations; but the low rent, and the commodiousness of the house for his business, had induced him to defy Satan and all his black guard, and to become the tenant, though, many a time and often, he and his wife and family had heard very strange builing in the room where the gentleman murdered himself, which, therefore, with three or four more of the most obnoxious, were constantly locked and bolted, and no one suffered to go into them. Whether the apparition was pleased with this civility or no, I cannot tell; but of late the family had not been much disturbed, which raised a great opinion of the pedant's sanctity in all the adjacent villages. As to my part, my knowledge acquired from my father, and the method and manner of my bringing up, together with my natural temper, defended me from fear; but the rest of my school-fellows were under terrible notions of this spirit or spirits which had committed such havoc. With the assistance of this apparition, I was resolved to retaliate my late punishment on the head of old Profody; and, after having communicated my scheme to my two principal cronies, both about the same age with myself, resolutely set about the execution of it.

We procured two cats of the boar kind, and, having provided a quantity of old red cloth, we sewed up a couple of very antick dresses for them; and then, cutting off their claws, put walnut shells, filled with pitch, upon their feet: all this we had opportunity to perform unobserved in a garret which nobody ever entered, situated at the farthest part of the house, and where

we kept our familiars confined till the moment they were to come to action. It was on a Sunday in the evening, when the whole family were congregated in a large hall, and our master was reading and expounding the Scriptures, that we, on various pretences, left the room, and went up into our consultation-chamber, where, having fixed our instruments, and opened all the chamber-doors we could come at, one of us discharged a small pocket-pistol, at which signal the cats were set loose in all their grotesque attire, with a sufficient quantity of pepper rubbed under their tails; and then we all ran down in a seeming hurry and precipitation, acquainting our tyrant that there were certainly strange doings above stairs, for that we could hear violent stampings to and fro in every room in the house. They were sufficiently alarmed before at the report of the pistol, and presently heard a violent stamping and clattering in the story over our heads and the entry. In short, the cats, unused to such confinement, frightened with the noise of their own feet, and at the same time irritated with the fire in their tails, made a most hellish uproar, and, flying from place to place with lamentable cries and squallings, one would have imagined the whole militia of hell had broken loose. The old woman fell upon her knees, Miss Ursula fainted away, and the pedant, after pronouncing, with great emotion and emphasis, 'Lord have mercy upon us!' followed the example of his wife. The terrible screams of the boys, the barking of two or three dogs, and a quantity of brimstone which I had sily thrown into the fire, whilst in the confusion my comrades had beat out the candles, presented such a scene of terror and uproar as can scarcely be described; but how was it increased when the two spectres flew into the kitchen, and, after overturning a whole tier of pewter, and demolishing a shelf of crockery-ware, entered with wild screams into the hall and, one of them settling for some time on the back of our master, he just gave one hideous groan, and fell prostrate, without sense, on the floor. Our satisfaction was compleat, when, by the unfavoury smell that issued from all parties, we could gather the violent convulsions fear had put

them into; and, taking advantage of the present moment, we pinched old Surly with pins, and tweaked him by the ears; so that he roared out in a most lamentable manner, ever and anon, crying, 'Avant, Satan! In the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, what art!' All this while we pretended also to be in the utmost agony, and exclaimed louder than all the rest together; not forgetting, however, to seize our feline accomplices in time, which we did unperceived of any one, and stripping them of their habits, turned them out of doors, flinging, at the same time, a quantity of large crackers sily into the fire, which made a loud explosion, and shook the whole room.

CHAP. IV.

MISS URSULA RUNS AWAY WITH HER SWEETHEART—THEY EXAMINE THE HOUSE—THE DAUGHTER RETURNS—SHE DISCOVERS THE PRANK, AND THE AUTHORS OF IT—THEY ARE SEIZED AND CONFINED—MAKE THEIR ESCAPE—HE GETS TO HIS FATHER'S WITH HIS COMRADES.

YOUNG Farmer Harrow, whose friendship we had gained, by carrying letters and serving him in his amour, having been informed of our device, had furnished us with what materials we were deficient in; and, as the old man had prohibited him the sight of his daughter for some time, he thought this a good opportunity to get her away from him, and therefore was waiting at some distance to see the event. It was a long time before any one dared hold up his head; but at length I cried out, with great trepidation of voice, 'I believe—they are gone!' upon which the pedagogue, raising his head up, and seeing the coast clear, with a great many exclamations of—'Lord have mercy upon me! what dreadful appearances are these!'—went to the assistance of his wife, who, with some difficulty, was persuaded to arise. As to Miss Ursula, as soon as she recovered, she run out of doors with the utmost expedition, and was immediately accosted by her paramour, to whom she fled for succour; who, after endeavouring to abate her apprehensions, persuaded her to

take shelter at his father's, and not return to a spot which the Devil, or some of his imps, had rendered so dreadful: she was soon persuaded to this, and so, mounting behind him, he rode off with her, not without her shewing the utmost horror at the sight of every bush and tree she passed in the way. Various were the judgments of all parties upon the late adventure. Mrs. Prossody, who, by the way, never had looked up, was certain she saw several very horrid shapes, belching flames out of their mouths and nostrils; one of the boys had seen a thing as tall as the room was long, all over covered with brimstone and fire; as to our master, he not in the least doubted that they were imported from the infernal regions; and, to strengthen his opinion, remarked the sulphureous scent they had left behind them. It was a long time before they were somewhat composed, and then we went in procession, each striving to be last, to inspect the rooms over head; and divers comments were made upon every thing there, particularly at the doors being all flung wide open, which, Mr. Prossody well observed, was not very necessary to such aerial beings, seeing the key-hole might as well have served for their passage: he complained greatly at their personal ill usage of him, and his imagination had magnified the pricking of pins into the fixing claws and talons into all parts of his body. His daughter's absence, who could not be found high nor low, gave him great apprehensions, and he was fearful, as he had not observed when she withdrew, that they had taken her away when they had vanished; which he conjectured must be, when the dreadful peal of thunder, as he called it, growled in his ears. He concluded his discourse with repeating, in a mournful tone, accompanied with a profound sigh, those lines of Milton—

'Spirits, in whatsoever shape they chuse,
'Dilated or condensed, bright or obscure,
'Can execute their airy purposes,
'And works of love or enmity produce!'

He gave all, moreover, a strict charge not to divulge the occurrence to any of the neighbours; fearing, mayhap, that it might be prejudicial to his interest with the parents of his boarders.

As to myself and my fellow-conspirators,

spirators, we got apart, as soon as we could, and then gave vent to our mirth, and applauded each other for the conduct we had shewn in the execution of our project, and bound one another by solemn promises to the keeping of the secret.

The next morning my master was released from one part of his anxiety by the arrival of old Mr. Harrow, who came to let him know that his daughter was married to his son, and to make the matter easy, which he found less difficult, as the father was much mortified and crest-fallen at what had happened the night before, and the new married couple were introduced and pardoned immediately; but, as the bridegroom had very injudiciously trusted the secret to his wife the night before, she, like a true woman, was too big with it, and too much mortified to see her father and mother, with herself, so much duped by three stripplings, to conceal it long, and that very evening betrayed the whole affair. Words cannot express the rage of the old pedagogue; like a furious mastiff, who, in the midst of an hungry fit, has been robbed of his favourite bone by some puny whiffing cur, and seizes him by the neck, and worries and tears him without mercy, deaf to all the yelpings and moans he makes; so, seizing us all, three, he hauled us in the utmost consternation, into the school-room, where he locked us in, telling us, with great fierceness, he would return to us soon, when he had thought of a punishment severe enough for our demerits. As soon as we had recovered ourselves a little from our surprise and dismay, we began to consult how we should avoid the impending storm that threatened us; and, at last, came all to a resolution to endeavour an escape, and return to our fathers, and let them honestly into the whole of the affair, and trust to their mercy, as we had numberless allegations against our master and mistrefs, which would counterbalance their accusations. We had all exhausted the measure of instruction and learning he had the capacity to bestow on us; and as we apprehended we had not thrown away their money, or our time, it gave us the utmost confidence of getting well over the matter.

The school-room was one story high, and underneath one of the back windows was an out-house, that served for a brew-house, which was quite close to the wall, and but a small descent from the window: this we pitched upon as the readiest way to get from durance, as we could drop from the window upon the tiling, and from thence, for lads of our agility, it was but a moderate jump to the ground. The names of my two fellow-sufferers were Jack Sharpley and Tom Archer, both pretty near my own age; and the former was the first to try the experiment, which we could not delay a moment, for already an hour and an half had been spent in the foregoing deliberations. He made his essay, and got down very successfully, and so did Tom Archer; but I, not practising the same sleight, or being heavier, broke the tiling, and fell through the rafters into the brew-house. I was almost stunned by the fall; but recovered myself in a few minutes, and examining the door, found it, to my great terror, locked fast, so that I was fairly caught in Lob's pound. I could see no way to deliver myself from this unexpected prison; and, whilst I was ruminating, heard the key turn in the door, on which I hid myself behind a large back, trembling and shaking with apprehension from head to foot. As soon as the door opened, I saw it was my master that entered; who, perceiving the damage done over-head, for he had not heard the noise I made in my fall, immediately guessed at the case, and cried to himself: 'O ho! my gentlemen were making their escape, I find; but I dare say one of them has fallen into this trap, if not all the three.' And then, calling to his wife, he bid her send one of the boys with a light, for the farther part of the place was very dark. I cannot say I ever was in a more doleful situation in my life, and was so confused with dread and fear, that not one scheme presented itself for my deliverance, and I thought I must infallibly fall a prey to this fierce enemy. The candle came, and he bid the boy place a stool, on which he got up, first to inspect a large copper, which was almost underneath the fracture I had made in the cieling, but which luckily

I had

I had escaped falling into: as he was somewhat purblind, he stooped over, that he might have the more commodious view, and to reach farther stood on one leg; 'Now,' says I to myself, 'is the time to escape, or never;' and, running swiftly from my hiding-place, took hold of his supporting leg, and at one heaving tossed him head foremost into the copper, which, by the report of his fall, seemed not to be quite void of water; then at one bound sprung through the door-way, and without one reverted look, swift as a frightened hare before the pursuing greedy hounds, I gained the bottom of the garden, and soon measured the adjacent meadow, where I found my two associates, who were trembling and apprehensive for my safety. They could scarce believe their eyes; but it was no time to talk, and, hallooing to them to follow me, we neither stopped nor paused till we got near two miles from the territories of our persecutor: we then abated our speed, and heartily congratulated one another, that we had thus saved our bacon, and disappointed the vengeance of this cruel pedagogue. Upon examining our stock of money, we found three or four shillings amongst us all, which was more than sufficient to defray our expences to my father's, where, through my persuasions, my companions agreed to accompany me, before they went to their respective homes, as their parents both lived within five or six miles of our house, and I had promised to engage him to become the mediator with them for their pardon. We arrived at about six o'clock in the following evening in our village; but I did not chuse to enter my father's abruptly, and therefore got Mr. Solfa, the clerk, to go first to him, with an account of our arrival, and to beg leave we might wait upon him, with a relation of the reasons for our elopement. He readily undertook the task, having been always very fond of me; and, my father not being at home, imparted the news to my mother, who eagerly ordered us to come to her; which accordingly we performed, and I was received with the utmost tenderness and affection, and my companions with great civility, and were ordered to be refreshed before she would hear our story. ✕

C H A P. V.

HIS RECEPTION AT HOME WITH HIS COMRADES—THEY ARE REPROVED BY HIS FATHER—SEVERAL EXCELLENT OBSERVATIONS;—HIS FATHER, WITH THOSE OF HIS COMPANIONS, PAY A VISIT TO MR. PROSODY—HIS BEHAVIOUR THEREON.

A Galley slave that has been long chained to the oar, and subjected to the remorseless rage and cruel stripes of his overseer, could not more rejoice at being restored to freedom, than we did at our deliverance from the brutality of our incensed master; and my mother, who indulged the utmost fondness at my unexpected arrival, not having seen me above once since I first went to school, undertook to break the matter to my father, and to make my peace, when she understood in what a manner we had been used, at which she expressed the utmost indignation. He had been to pay a visit to a neighbouring gentleman, and did not return till pretty late, when my mother let him into the story, which very much surprised him, and he desired her to call us to him. I ran to him, as soon as I saw him, and he very affectionately embraced me: 'So, Joey!—So young gentlemen!—I find you have fled from punishment; let me have a sincere and true account of what has happened, and by that I shall be able to judge whether I shall entertain you, or send you back to your master.' I was spokesman, and therefore related to him, which he never had any idea of before, the tyrannical behaviour, the terrible scourgings of Mr. Prosody, and the hardships we had undergone from the miserable and covetous temper of him and his wife; the story of the pear-tree, the adventure of the cats, and every thing else, without disguise; concluding, that, as I had attained to every thing that he was capable to teach me, and had been far from neglecting my book, I hoped he would not so far mortify me, as to send me there again; but would either undertake the farther care of me himself, or procure me another master, and intercede with the parents of my friends,

friends, to take them also into favour. He was greatly incensed at the treatment we had met with, and could scarcely keep the gravity of his countenance, whilst I related the little pranks we had played our tutor; but restraining himself as much as possible, he gave us the following lecture—

‘I am charmed, my dear, that you have not mispent your school-hours; but have made such a proficiency in the languages, which indeed I have heard before from your master himself—who was also tempted, young gentlemen, to give me the same account of you too, the last time I was at his house; which I communicated to your fathers, and which gave them great satisfaction. We had intended to take you away from thence, at the expiration of the next quarter, but you have anticipated our design. I blame myself for not having more minutely enquired into matters of such importance, as the temper and disposition of a person whom I entrusted with the government of you, at such a critical part of life; the right management of such young minds, at that time, laying the foundation of every future good, or, on the contrary, every future error and misfortune: I own, I was deceived in the account I received; both of him and his family, so falsely tender persons are of giving a true character of a man in such an employment. From my knowledge of your natural temper, I must imagine you would never have been guilty of some things you have mentioned, had not the contemptible behaviour of your master, and the little care he took to form your minds, which, by the bye, is one principal business of a schoolmaster, laid you open to such puerile temptations as lay in your way. If I forgive you; and receive you into favour, it is on this condition, that you are sorry for any disregard, though ever so trifling, you have paid to other people’s property, and the low and base principles of revenge; (which, indeed, your master set you an example of) that you have indulged; though now they may be imputed to boyish inattention and folly, if not checked, they may grow too strong for all the good sense you may ever be masters of

to eradicate.—You, Sir, for the future part of your education, shall be indebted to my care; I begin to see the folly of publick schools, merely because we can never be sure of the good qualities of those we confide in to.—As to you, young gentlemen, you’ll stay with Joe, till I have seen your fathers, and reconciled them to my way of thinking.’ When he had thus finished this reasonable and tender speech, he took me in his arms, and embraced me with great emotion; and also saluted my school-fellows; and then proceeded to examine us in the several authors we had read, and applauded us greatly for the ready knowledge we shewed in them, and the taste we seemed to have for their elegances. I was now in my fourteenth year; and, without vanity, may say, that nature had stamped on my soul the most virtuous and generous affections; no wonder, then, if the kind reception I met with at home, and the reasonable and prudent manner of my treatment, gave me the highest sentiments of respect and veneration for this good father; a contrary treatment, and sending me back again, would have had the worst effects upon such a temper, which argument and persuasion will work upon, with proper force; but sourness, ill-nature, and harshness, drive to the last extremities: the more boys are used like rational, thinking creatures, the more they are applied to by gentle methods, the better they behave; and the contrary maxims, I am persuaded, are the causes of much of that degeneracy we every day have such melancholy proofs of in the rising generation. By being thus treated, they learn a habit of reasoning, and so strongly imbibe it, that they practise it all their lives after; and let the fallies of their boiling passions carry them to ever such extravagant lengths, you fix a monitor in their breasts, which sooner or later draws them off from and corrects their wild pursuits.

My father waited, the next day, on Mr. Sharpley and Mr. Archer; who, as they were both men of good sense, easily came into his notions, and agreed to take their sons away from Profoddy, determining to send them to another school at York; but, as my father recollected there were no proper companions,

nions for me in his neighbourhood, he generously told them he would undertake the farther care of them, together with me, at which they were highly delighted, and returned him many acknowledgments; and, as they were all somewhat in arrear with Prosody, they agreed to ride over together to his house, and finally discharge their obligations to him.

When they arrived there, the old pedant, not knowing we had been before-hand with him, told so many falsehoods of us, and inveighed against us with so much apparent malice and resentment, that if they had not been prepossessed against him before, it would have given them the same ideas we had laboured to inspire them with. They made little reply to what he said, and when he came to understand their errand, and that we had got home, he was quite thunder-struck, and began to soften his manner of expression, laying the tricks we had been guilty of upon levity and puerility, which before he had ascribed to a natural turpitude and wickedness of heart: but his attempts to reclaim us were all in vain, and they parted with him, leaving him in the highest disgust and ill-humour, which was sensibly increased by a very grave lecture which was read him by my father, upon the right conduct of the office of a schoolmaster, and the baseness of avarice and revenge. A servant that attended them brought us our books, and what wearing-apparel we had left behind us in our precipitate retreat.

CHAP. VI.

HIS FATHER'S MANNER OF EDUCATION—SHARPLEY IS SENT TO SEA, AND ARCHER TO PORTO—PROPER REFLECTIONS—TAKES GREAT DELIGHT IN HUNTING, AND GAINS THE FRIENDSHIP OF SIR WALTER RICH, BY A GENEROUS ACTION—HIS FATHER DETERMINES TO SEND HIM TO LONDON.

AFTER we had been indulged some days in such amusements as were suitable to our years, my father applied himself to the farther cultivation of our understandings. We had

all made pretty near the same progress, and were, at so green an age, tolerable masters of Greek and Latin: and, as we were intended for the world, he endeavoured to give us the most strong ideas of religion and morality; which, being conveyed in the most captivating manner to our minds, sunk deep into our souls, and were the more strengthened by the excellent pattern we saw daily before us in my father and mother, who used my companions as well as myself, like their own children. We soon became proficient in the most useful branches of the mathematicks, and natural philosophy was rendered so entertaining to us, and discovered such a field of wonders, that we forgot all our trifling sports, and that alone constituted the employment of our leisure hours. He taught us the French language, which is so generally spoken all over the world; and, my mother talking it very well, we conversed hardly in any other tongue. To preserve our healths we were permitted to have a fencing-master twice a week, who also was directed to form us to a polite address, without making dancing so important a part of education, as it generally seems to be reckoned. We had the happiness to make great improvement in every thing we were put to; and my father, forsaking almost all other company, became our constant companion; and his honied precepts met with such eager attention, that we became the wonder, and, at the same time, the delight of the adjacent country. Happy period of life, when the boiling passions, the attendants of human nature, are kept under the restraints of reason and authority! when care and anxiety is never tasted, and the genuine cheerfulness of the heart is undepressed by the hurrying toils and torturing vicissitudes of life! With what regret I look back and survey the engaging scenes which riches and splendor can never recompense the loss of! Ye hours of golden instruction! ye moments of pure content, and untainted pleasure! how dearly ought we to prize you! and how little are we acquainted with your true value and estimation! Hurrying into the tempestuous ocean of busy advancing years, we soon are lost to your ineffable sweets; the mind grows foul and muddy with crosses and vexations, and

over-

over-bearing folly, and growing vices, turmoil the rest of our mortal pilgrimage. Well has Providence allotted a few years of youth and innocence to our share: had we been doomed to survive and feel at once the load of ills we are born to, without this blissful pause of misfortune and anguish, who could support the shocking state of existence? And yet, how wisely does Providence stimulate and excite us to launch out into maturer action, and all the fancied joys and real sorrows, that at every advancing step surround us; but by the instability and vanity of the former, and the constant attendance of the latter, spur us still to explore new regions of extatic calm and eternal content, which it has reserved for those who worthily attain to the period of their race, the goal of their pursuits.

We had passed near two years in this situation at my father's, when Mr. Sharpley, who had other children, and but a small estate, determined to send his son to sea, under a brother who commanded a man of war, and accordingly procured him the king's letter; and, to rob me of both my dear companions, Mr. Archer, about the same time, sent his son to Oporto, to a distant relation, who was a considerable merchant there, to be placed in his counting-house. As we had lived in the greatest harmony, we could not part without the highest tokens of sorrow, and took our leave of each other, after protestations of eternal friendship, and resolutions of renewing our familiarity whenever it should be in our power. My father and mother were affected with the loss of them, and he could not be prevailed on to accept of the least consideration for the agreeable pains he had bestowed upon them; the fruits of which were very visible in their conversation and behaviour, and gave the utmost satisfaction to their parents. To shew their gratitude, they begged my father to let me spend some months at their house, which they desired so pressing, that he could not refuse them; and accordingly I went home with them, both living in the same part of the country, between five and six miles from our house. I was now in my sixteenth year, and was flattered with the appellation of a polite and intelligent young gentleman; my stature was superior to

most of my age, and nature had bestowed on me a great share of health and spirits, and a very agreeable person; so that my company was very much prized by the fathers of my friends, and I made one in all their parties of hunting, of which they were both very fond, and became a very keen sportsman, despising every danger and difficulty in the chase; by which I acquired the applause of a baronet, whose seat was in that neighbourhood, who had the highest regard for talents of that sort, and thought no man worth a rush that could not surmount every obstacle in pursuit of the fox or the hare. He had a very large estate, which, as he was a widower, and shewed no inclination to a second marriage, must, of course, descend to an only daughter, then in the thirteenth year of her age; so that Miss Louisa Rich was reckoned the richest heiress in all those parts. Sir Walter was one of those Roman Catholick gentry, who are contented to receive their opinions because their fathers had possessed them before, but was far from indulging a persecuting spirit, or maxims destructive of the constitution; and was, in general, much esteemed by his neighbours, and loved by his tenants of every persuasion.

This gentleman was never easy when I was not with him, and expressed, on every occasion, the greatest regard for me; introduced me to his daughter, and to a nephew who lived with him, about my own age, and who was said, by most people, to be intended as an husband for Miss by her father. If I was charmed with the conversation of this innocent young lady, who already discovered the beauties of an angelick mind in a lovely person, I was no less disgusted with the surly brutal behaviour of her cousin, who was a mere country booby. I enjoyed my time in this friendly excursion, very deliciously; and every now and then went over and paid a visit at home, the tenderness of my mother scarce brooking such an absence from her without it.

We were pretty late engaged in a conversation one evening at Mr. Archer's, when a servant came in with the melancholy tidings, that Sir Walter's house was on fire, which alarmed the company, and immediately put an end to our argument; and we ran

with great haste, to see if our assistance might be of any service in such a dreadful calamity. The lower part of the building was enveloped in flames, which were ascending very swiftly, and spreading with dreadful fury; Sir Walter was lying on the ground, having sprained his foot by jumping from his chamber-window; and the distracted domesticks were busy in removing such goods as their surprize would permit them to take away at the first alarm: but the most shocking sight of all was, the young lady calling out of the window of her apartment for assistance, in the utmost distraction, having only a loose gown cast over her. Her father was unable to move: the clodpoles about him were too fearful, or stupid, to adventure to her relief; and the nephew had secured himself in an adjoining alehouse, where he was drinking with some country folks, and telling them with what difficulty he escaped the flames. In this confusion the poor young lady would, no doubt, have undergone the fate of the building, had not Mr. Archer and myself, thought of a long ladder, which stood at a farmer's hard by, which, with some assistance, we reared against the side of the house: this no sooner was done, than I mounted valiantly up it, having totally forgot my own safety in the contemplation of Miss's danger. After being somewhat scorched in my ascent, I gained the window, and directly jumped in, when immediately taking her in my arms, and charging her to hold fast, I resolutely descended the way I came up, and delivered her into the hands of her father, where she immediately fainted away; and the hurry of my spirits, and the fright I had undergone, so weakened me, that I also fell down senseless at his feet. I soon recovered myself, and, after drinking a cordial, which was brought me, enquired how my charge did; and was answered, that she was carried away very ill, to Mr. Sharpley's. The baronet took me into his arms, called me his preserver and saviour, and vowed he would never forget my bravery the longest day he had to live: in short, I received such a profusion of compliments on every side, that I could not conceal my blushes. I went afterwards to pay a visit to Miss, and found

her better; and though my heart was too young ever to have known or felt the soft impressions of love, I perceived a wondrous satisfaction in her thanks, and thought myself happy in having thus rendered her this trifling service. The house was reduced to ashes; and we understood the fire had been occasioned by the carelessness of a drunken cook, who went to sleep with a candle burning upon the dresser, which unhappily having caught hold of some linen, had spread the flames before the family had been alarmed, or any help could be procured. After this accident, the attachment of Sir Walter to me, and the civilities I received from his daughter, were unbounded; he studied, on every occasion, to shew me the utmost respect, and was scarce ever a minute easy, unless I made one of his company; directing Miss, in token of gratitude, to insist upon my accepting a diamond ring, which she took off her own finger to place upon mine. I could not refuse so genteel and so valuable a present, which, in an involuntary rapture, which I then was far from understanding the motives of, I solemnly vowed never to part with.

In two months after this incident, I received orders from my father to return home; and he told me in the letter, that he had determined to send me to London, if it was not contrary to my inclinations; and wanted to talk with me about it. I took leave of all my friends, after returning thanks for the great honours and civilities I had received; and was accompanied by Mr. Archer to my father's.

CHAP. VII.

EXCELLENT DISCOURSE OF HIS FATHER TO HIM—HE RECEIVES LETTERS FROM SHARPLEY AND ARCHER—SETS OUT WITH HIS FATHER AND MOTHER FOR LONDON—ARRIVES THERE—REFLECTIONS ON THE FIRST VIEWS OF THAT PLACE—HE IS BOUND APPRENTICE TO MR. DIAPER, A WHOLESALE LINEN-DRAPER.

WHEN our kind visitor was gone, and the first two or three days after my arrival were passed, my

my father took me with him into the garden, and then unbosomed himself to me in the following manner. 'I sent for you, my dear son, to hear a scheme I have to propose for your welfare, as you are now arrived at an age in which we should begin to consider of some profession or employment that may make you happy, and a benefit to the community. You may perceive, by my not having sent you to the university, that I did not intend you for the church: no, my dear, believe me, the discouragements that attend the sacred order, and the general contempt, which many of them have given too much ground for, that they labour under, are a sufficient bar to any such design. Your disposition might induce me to prefer the army to any other designation; but without friends in power, or an independent fortune, the greatest merit makes a very poor figure in scarlet, and affords very little happiness to a family if ever a man's softer moments should render marriage desirable. The law I cannot approve, as it is now circumstanced, and as the generality of the practitioners carry it on; and as to physick, I think it labours under the same, or greater disadvantages, than either. As you know me to be a great friend to my country, and willing, as much as I can, that you should become as useful as possible to it, you will not be surprized that I have the utmost veneration for merchants and traders, who diffuse the blessings of commerce and traffick to every individual, and are the upholders and supports of the interest and independency of this nation. In all the other callings I have mentioned, there is a degree of servility and meanness, necessary to a man who would be eminent, that I, by no means, would make necessary to you. By trade, you will preserve a generous independency, if you act wisely and prudently; and will become a useful and valuable member of the common-wealth, and an advantage to your friends and relations; you will be enabled to provide for your family with honour, and in a manner suitable to that laudable ambition and tenderness that

ought to inspire the bosom of a husband and a father. I am not going to propose a branch of trade that shall disgrace your endowments, but one wherein you may preserve the gentleman in the man of business. You know your mother has a distant relation in London, Mr. Diaper, the wholesale linen-draper, who is a man of great honour, strict integrity, and a large fortune, which he has principally raised by industry and diligence in his business. It is to him, if you are not averse, for I would never force your inclinations, fancy what you will, that I would put you apprentice; and therefore consider by to-morrow, that I may write him word of my resolution; for he was here some days since, on his return from a journey into Scotland, and I made him the offer of you, at which he was very well pleased.' I returned him my most grateful thanks, told him I had a hint of it before from my mother, and that, as well from the view of the advantages of such a destination, as from a knowledge that it was agreeable to his sentiments, I very readily obeyed him, in giving my assent to go to Mr. Diaper. He was entirely satisfied to find me so ready to close with him in it; and wrote to that gentleman, that he would set out with me in a fortnight's time. Mr. Sharpley paid me a visit the next day, and brought me two letters, one from his son, and another from young Mr. Archer, which came each in a packet to their father's. Sharpley's was to this effect.

'LOO, OFF CAPE HENRY, VIRGINIA, JULY 7, 1712.

'MY DEAR FRIEND,

I Should be inexcusable, if, whilst I was writing to England, I did not think of testifying thus, that you are ever in my mind, and that the friendship we so early contracted is rather stronger now, than when I had the pleasure to be so near you. All the difficulties and dangers of a long and tedious voyage; nor a variety of new objects, have been able to banish my regret at our separation. I hope you are in health, and my worthy tutor, and your, I was going

D 2

'to

'to say mine, dear mother. Pray,
'my dear Joey, let me hear from you
'every opportunity, and believe me to
'be *your most affectionate and sincere*
'friend,

'JOHN SHARPLEY.'

The other was to this purport.

'OPORTO, AUGUST 20, 1712.

'DEAREST JOE,

I 'Take the first opportunity I have
'to convince you that I am still
'as much actuated by friendship, as
'ever I was, and that I shall ever re-
'tain the most lively respect and value
'for a person, who, for my life, I
'can look upon in no other light than
'that of a brother. I hope you have
'heard before now from Sharpley,
'who I understood was bound to Vir-
'ginia, where he is likely to have a
'long station. My duty attends your
'dear father and mother; pray let
'them know I have not forgot, nor
'ever shall, their goodness and bene-
'volence to me. I am well, and can
'already express myself in the Portu-
'guese language, well enough to be
'understood in common matters. I
'am immersed in a great deal of busi-
'ness, but shall always, I hope, find
'time to prove myself, *dear Joe, your*
'*affectionate and faithful friend,*

'THOMAS ARCHER.'

Words will too faintly express the warmth and zeal of friendship that these letters inspired; for, indeed, my affection was rather increased, than diminished, by our separation; and as they were to send a packet to London, to be forwarded both to Virginia and Portugal, the next day, I immediately wrote answers to them.

The fortnight was expired, when my father and mother determined to go to London with me; and accordingly, after I had taken my leave of all my friends and acquaintance, particularly of Sir Walter and his amiable daughter, who both expressed great concern at losing my company, we set out, and arrived at that great metropolis, after a very easy and pleasant journey, which, as my father called on several friends in the road, and endeavoured to make the travelling as agreeable as possible to my mother and

me, by shewing us every thing remarkable in our way, took us up near a fortnight.

If I was surprized at the great number of carriages of all sorts, and the multitude of travellers and passengers that crowded the roads, as we approached near London, how was I astonished at the prodigious concourse of people I discovered at my entrance into town? All the ideas I had formed from my knowledge of York, and other places in the country, came far short of what I beheld. My wonder increased in proportion as I advanced into the heart of the city, and surveyed the busy herds that thronged continually through every street and avenue, all with the marks of business and attention painted in their faces. The sight gave me a strong notion of the laudable importance of trade, which thus directs and obliges every one in his station to be ever vigilant, ever studious to employ his time, in somewhat or other, tending to the service of individuals, and consequently beneficial to the community in general. I could see no such absent, unmeaning visages, as the country is filled with, and began to entertain a very contemptible opinion of a life of idleness, sports and pleasures, where self is the object that engrosses all our cares and all our solitudes: not so the industrious citizen, whose endeavours to benefit himself necessarily produce employment for, and conduce to the emolument of artificers in every branch of work, and he may be said to be one of those who contribute to the support of millions. Such reflections as these still encouraged me in the resolutions I had taken of becoming one of this useful body of people.

Mr. Diaper, being a distant relation of my mother's, had insisted on their making use of the convenience of his house, during their stay in town; so that this was the place we went first to, where himself and his whole family vied with each other in the civility of our reception.

My father, before the business he came upon was concluded, carried us to all the publick places, and shewed us every thing remarkable in and about London; for he told me, he could not bear to leave the edge of my curiosity too keen, lest I might fall into improper company, in pursuit of my gratifying

fyng myself with the sight of these novelties, after his departure, and thereby neglect my business.

Every thing being agreed upon between my parents and my master, as I must now begin to call him, I was bound apprentice at ——— Hall, of which Company he was a liveryman, my father paying him a consideration of three hundred pounds with me; and soon after, as he had now been absent five weeks from home, resolved to return; but first agreed with a friend of his to remit to him thirty pounds every year for my use, which I was to consider as pocket-money, that, as my dear father and mother said, I might be above temptation to any mean or dishonest action; to this friend he also recommended me very strongly for his advice and instructions in any thing that might occur, during my apprenticeship; and, after bestowing upon me a number of excellent rules and lessons for my better conduct in this ticklish part of life, and giving me their cordial blessing, they set out for Yorkshire, leaving me in a tenderly mournful situation; which, as it was the first, so it was one of the sincerest griefs I ever felt in my life.

CHAP. VIII.

CHARACTER OF MR. DIAPER, HIS WIFE, AND SON—VERY ASSIDUOUS IN HIS BUSINESS—CONTRACTS A FRIENDSHIP WITH YOUNG DIAPER—GAINS THE ESTEEM OF HIS MASTER—MANNER OF SPENDING THEIR VACANT HOURS—REFLECTIONS ON TRADE AND COMMERCE.

AS soon as I was initiated into the method of our business, I was resolved not to be an unprofitable servant, and applied myself with the utmost attention to make myself master of what I imagined must be my future dependence; and I found all the kind instruction from Mr. Diaper, that I was taught to expect. He was turned of forty years of age, and having been in trade all his life, succeeding his father in the same set of customers, he had, by a thorough indefatigability, application, and industry, got, as it is expressed by the citizens, *the fore-horse*

by the head; and not only so, but, exclusive of his business and ready-money, was possessed of a pretty estate in right of his wife. His table was plentifully, not luxuriously or extravagantly supplied, and a friend was sure of always finding a welcome there. His economy in the expences of his family was remarkable; but bordered not in the least on that species of parsimony, which, however praise-worthy, is never agreeable to servants. His temper was mild and sociable, and his understanding clear and strong; to his superiors he behaved with a respectful regard; to his equals with a generous and manly freedom; to his inferiors and servants with humanity, consideration, and good-nature: his uprightness, integrity, and honour in his dealings, gained him the confidence of every body he dealt with, and the good sense and knowledge he was endowed with, rendered him a desirable and improving companion. Mrs. Diaper was a woman of virtue, prudence, and capacity, and the utmost harmony was visible in their behaviour to each other; nor was his value lessened, but rather increased, by a bad and declining state of health, which obliged her to be pretty much at their country-house, where himself generally spent half the week. They had only one child, who had now served three years of his apprenticeship to his father, and on whom, as he was a sober, faithful, and careful youth, the weight of the business was devolved, though at the early age of nineteen. Notwithstanding this young gentleman had been early familiarized to the management of such important concerns, he had made a very pretty advance in letters; and, having read and digested some of the best authors, he surpassed, in the faculties of his mind, most of his age. Though he had none of the irregular flights and sallies of youth, and his whole soul seemed to be bent to the exercise of the necessary duties of his business, in which he was very expert; yet he was quite polite and agreeable in his conversation, nor did the orderly management of his conduct take off from the taste of innocent and laudable amusements, which he was a great friend to. His honest, undesigning, and generous heart, was capable of a warm and disinterested friendship,

and

and his behaviour and address made him the desire and delight of every company. My education and manner of thinking made this worthy family very pleasing to me, and I had all the reason in the world to be satisfied with my situation. My master treated me like another son, and the young gentleman and myself becoming bed-fellows, entered into strict friendship, which was increased daily by a conformity of sentiments and actions—

- 'Twas sympathy of honest minds :
- Like strings wound up in music,
- Where, at one touch, both utter the same
 ‘harmony.’

In our business we went hand in hand; he ever studied therein to make his superiority easy to me, and I to make my respect and diligence agreeable to him. In our diversions, we were constant associates; and, in short, a more suitable pair were never directed to set out in life together.

Our dealings, which were very extensive, were carried on in a truly mercantile manner, and, Mr. Diaper having a very faithful journeyman, his son and myself were principally employed in the computing-house. However, as my whole study was to please my master, I pretended to no exemption from any pains or labour in the other parts of his affairs, being thoroughly sensible that every thing that tended to the promotion of his interest or advantage, ought to be considered by me as my duty, in the station I was at present placed in. Therefore I never waited to receive orders or instructions, when any thing was on the carpet that required my assistance; but studied, in every thing, to be beforehand with either his desires or expectations. By this method of acting, and preserving an obliging and even deportment to every body in the family, I procured so much the esteem and confidence of my master, that he was extraordinarily ready to impart to me every secret of his traffick and concerns; to push me forward in the acquirement of my occupation, and, in any point of indulgence, even prevented my wishes. When the hurry of the day was over, we spent the evening at home, in conversation or reading, and now and then had a select company of

friends with us; or else we sought out some amusement abroad, that would at the same time divert and improve us; and in all things young Mr. Diaper and myself were inseparable.

At the close of the week, we generally rode down to my master's house in the country, and staid till Monday morning, where Mrs. Diaper made no manner of distinction between us, and on every occasion expressed her liking to me, and her approbation of the strict union between myself and her son. My master kept a coach and pair, and a brace of geldings, one of which was always at my service; so that I experienced very little difference between my happy servitude and the indulgences I had been used to receive from my father and mother at home.

Our various correspondences and large dealings still opened more clearly the importance and dignity of trade to me, which not only bound together, and so mutually united the interests of mankind, as to individuals, but became the cement between country and country, and introduced a dependence upon the principles of honour, justice, uprightness, and punctuality, all over the world; those principles being the very foundation of such an intercourse, and without which no man can possibly carry on a correspondence in any kind of traffick. All wise princes, who have had the good of their subjects at heart, have constantly nourished and given the greatest encouragement to the arts of commerce; they have not only considered them, as they were sure means to increase the riches of their subjects and their own revenues, but as they made their people wiser and better, and consequently more worthy of and faithful to their governors. An idle and debauched people will ever be the aversion and the plague of a discerning, and generous, and good prince.

I passed in this manner the first two years of my time with much satisfaction and improvement to myself, and engaged the kindness and applause of my master, (who took opportunities to give my father and mother great pleasure in the knowledge of my behaviour) the love of my friend, and the respect of my fellow-servants. Happy should I have been, if the succeeding years of my life had all been passed over with

the same innocence, virtue, and prudence, which would have secured me from the miseries and distresses I afterwards suffered.

CHAP. IX.

HE IS SURPRIZED BY THE CARRIAGE OF A MAID-SERVANT—HER EXTRAORDINARY ASSIDUITY TO OBLIGE HIM—SHE BETRAYS HER LOVE FOR HIM—HIS EFFORTS TO CURE HER—HE IS SEDUCED BY HER—HIS UNEASINESS THEREON—SHE BECOMES TROUBLESOME TO HIM, AND JEALOUS—CAUTIONS TO YOUTH—HE GROWS COLD TO HIS FRIEND—SEEKS COMPANY—BECOMES ACQUAINTED WITH PRIM THE MERCER, AND PRIG THE ATTORNEY.

THUS happily I spent my time, practising all the excellent precepts of my father, and never deviating from the principles of virtue and honour; easy and contented, caressed and esteemed by every body. I generally wrote once a month to my father or mother, and had with great pleasure kept up a correspondence with my two old friends, Sharpley and Archer, the former of whom, I understood by the last letter I received, had been rated already as a midshipman by his uncle.

At our town-house, Mr. Diaper kept two maid-servants, one of whom was a young girl, the daughter of a farmer in Cambridgeshire, who was an agreeable creature, and possessed a good share of spirit and vivacity. The light I was considered in by the family, made the servants very assiduous in doing every thing they imagined would oblige me; but I had perceived, for a considerable time, that this young woman was more studious than ordinary, in doing such little matters for me as were necessary to one in my station: I had therefore been very generous to her on several occasions, to reward her for her obliging temper, not apprehending it to be from any other motive than that of her natural inclination; and from a sense of the goodness nature I always shewed to the inferior servants; but I was soon forced to change my way of thinking. I had

frequently caught her gazing at me with more than ordinary earnestness, and, if I happened to look suddenly that way, she would cast her eyes downward, blush, and I heard a sigh now and then escape her; if I went into my chamber on any occasion, I generally found her sitting there, whence she would retire on my approach, dropping a low curtsy; I thought I now and then could perceive tears in her eyes, and the whole family took notice her temper was very much altered, from that briskness usual to her, into a settled heaviness and melancholy. As I had conversed hitherto very little with the sex, I was not at all apprehensive of the true motives of this change, and therefore out of compassion, as imagining she had heard of some misfortunes from home, endeavoured by pleasantries and good-humour to set her to rights again; and, as she was a favourite of Mrs. Diaper's, her young master took the same pains, and often raillied her upon the little absence of mind she was guilty of. One day, in particular, having caught her all tears in our chamber, where I accidentally went for something or other, I asked her seriously, if any ill had happened to her, or, in short, if I could any ways be of service to her: 'Perhaps,' says I, jocosely, 'you have received some bad news of your sweetheart; but pr'ythee, Nanny, don't fret thyself to death about it; what, I suppose he is false, is not he?' She immediately got up; and, casting a tender look at me, passed suddenly out at the door, saying, 'Ah! Mr. Thompson, if I have any sweetheart, he is not far from this spot, so much the worse luck for me.' I was immediately struck with the true state of the case; and, though very artless and stupid in such matters, perceived that I had been the cause of all this sudden alteration. In the first emotions of my heart, I felt some pleasure in the thought of this conquest, I must freely own; the girl was young and handsome, and that was a dangerous temptation to a young fellow of my sanguine and warm constitution; but soon the checks of reason and morality got the better in my mind, and I was resolved to behave to her in a more distant and cautious manner; for as it was impossible, and contrary to the ambition of my temper,

and

and the maxims of prudence and duty, to indulge a fancy for her in a laudable way, the exposing myself to disgrace, and her to ruin, was a thought too horrid to harbour in a soul that had been nurtured in a detestation of the sordid and base gratifications of the passions. I seldom went into the house but at meal-times, after this, or when my young master accompanied me; and forbore either to speak to, or look upon her, hoping that this might induce her to come to a proper way of thinking; but I soon found this was a distemper that was not to be cured so suddenly: in proportion as I retreated, she grew more and more inflamed, and put herself in my way wherever I went; would make twenty excuses in a day to ask for somewhat, or some question in the shop or counting-house; and, as an example of the dangerous and fascinating wiles of women, I myself grew uneasy, was restless, new and unusual desires agitated my breast, I began to burn for I knew not what, and it was with the utmost force I restrained myself, when an unlucky opportunity soon betrayed all my resolves. The other maid was one day ordered with a message in the country, and unfortunately my friend was engaged to dine abroad, which he seldom did; so that I was forced to eat by myself, and nobody was there to wait on me but Mrs. Anne: the journeyman was also at my master's country-house, where he had been invited to spend a day or two. When I went up to dinner, I perceived at once that she was dressed with more than ordinary care, and she behaved with so much ready obligingness, that it was impossible for me not to fall into some discourse with her; in short, temptation and opportunity were such forceable batteries against my better resolutions, that a thousand wanton ideas rushed into my brain, and spread their baneful influence over my whole frame. She perceived my situation, and improved it by all the arts she was mistress of: nature, too weak to assist my reason, she triumphed in the spoils of my innocence; and, emboldened by the first trespass, the guilty bliss was too often repeated, before I could persuade myself to re-

tire. When I got by myself, I soon was tempted to deplore my change of condition; I accused myself of what I had been guilty of, with the utmost shame and confusion; I now found myself ruffled, uneasy, and restless; before, the goodness and the untaintedness of my heart shewed itself in all my actions, now I could scarce bear the pain of reflection, and dreaded to look even my virtuous friend in the face; the crime itself, the apprehension of the consequences, the fear of my own reputation, the injury I had done to an innocent creature, as I thought her, by thus being seduced to indulge her weakness, all together, made my bosom a perfect hell; I began to form schemes of concealing the fatal intercourse, and found, alas! for the first time, that I must learn to be a hypocrite, to pretend that innocence, which was now no more: the thought of thus *living a lye**, gave me still more inexpressible torture. I resolved to renew the guilt no more, and then immediately forfeited my resolution. Nor was my anxiety confined to my own reflections; I met with reproaches from her, and bewailings of what would become of her. I was obliged to truckle to her temper, to keep things easy: she perceives herself with child, renews her complaints, I promise fidelity; she grows jealous, watches my actions, upbraids me, weeps, swoons away; I gratify her with money, soothe her, and, in short, become a very wretch and mere slave.

Ye youths, beware how ye yield to the first attacks of vice! How cautious ought you to be to guard against the first allurements, the beginning witchcraft! Let it attack you in what shape it will, it is equally destructive, equally perverse of your future good, equally conducive to extirpate the relish of virtue from your minds! But, above all, beware of it, when it approaches you under the soft, the too enchanting, too captivating charms, of female delusive arts! It is then ye ought to *put forth your utmost strength, work every nerve*, to resist the subtle invader! Peace and serenity of mind once destroyed, the consequence is dreadful; seldom we have the power to retreat, but hurry on to bury, in a wild of folly and in-

* Woollaston.

temperance, the little reflection, and the woeful regrets, that will still continue to haunt our souls.

The relish I used to have for the company of young Mr. Diaper was palled; I had a secret kind of envy of his superior virtue: he perceived my alteration; but I ascribed it to the head-ache, lowness of spirits, and other causes: business languished with me, home was uneasy to me, where I met with nothing but reproaches from myself, and upbraidings from the authors of my misery. The delicate and fine sentiments I had imbibed, and the turn of my mind, which was of a genuine pure cast, now gave me repeated vexations, never-ending reproaches. I sought to bury my disquiets in company: the minute the hours of business were over, I was no more to be seen; but, associating myself with some of the neighbouring apprentices of my own age, whose company I before had despised, endeavoured by wine and mirth to drown and silence my regrets. The two whom I was most frequently engaged with were Will Prim, a mercer's apprentice, who had served half his time, and Dick Prig, an attorney's clerk, whose servitude was just expired: as these young fellows were of a lively, gay, thoughtless disposition, and their conversation was full of humour, I suffered myself to spend whole evenings in their company, in a sort of club or society, which met at those times to unbend themselves after the fatigues of the day.

CH A P. X.

ACCOUNT OF HIS NEW ASSOCIATES
—HE IS DISGUSTED WITH THEIR
MANNERS AND BEHAVIOUR—BECOMES
ACQUAINTED WITH MR. SPECULIST—HE
IMBIBES HIS PRINCIPLES—TURNS RAKE—REMOVES
HIS MISTRESS TO READY-FURNISHED
LODGINGS, WHERE SHE IS BROUGHT TO BED.

MR. Prim was a young man of a good share of natural sense, which he had woefully perverted, and a tolerable education, by practising all the reigning follies; but he retained an unusual flow of expression, which was very engaging. Prig was of a

more reserved disposition, and had preserved hitherto the appearance of virtue by the deepest hypocrisy and dissimulation; he had been bred up to learning, in which he had made considerable improvement, and manifested his talents at disputation and controversy with great applause.

The rest of our company consisted of journeymen and apprentices, all in the same neighbourhood, whose characters and capacities were as various as their professions. Nothing could better evidence the beginning depravity of my mind than the pleasure I took in these meetings; and what I at first had recourse to, to chase away disagreeable reflections on my late miscarriage, was almost become so habitual, that I longed till business was finished, that I might fly to my new companions. The conversation, however, soon grew distasteful to me, generally rolling upon the secrets of their masters, the tricks practised in trade, sarcasms upon the behaviour of the persons they lived with, and descriptions of scenes of madness and debauchery; and, when the discourse grew dull, it was the custom to sing a song round. I had never been used to any but such converse as improved and left a pleasing relish upon the mind; and I was not yet so lost to myself, as not to perceive the gross folly of spending time in so empty and frothy a manner; besides, I perceived by the run of the discourse, that most of my companions were the worst of men, and that they were not ashamed to boast and vaunt of such actions as I could not, even now, reflect on without horror. I became, consequently, very dull and melancholy, which was soon perceived, and the cause guessed at by Prig, who often proposed to advance some serious topic of discourse; and blamed the rest for employing their time, and the time of the company, so much in talking of trifles, or wickedness, which he said was worse. I was too good a bait to be lost so soon; I had money enough, and was very generous, and my two new friends had supplied their wants two or three times at my expence, which they did with the most careless and janty air imaginable, always promising an immediate return; which, however, was never again thought of. I was just in the humour of leaving

E them

them one night for ever, when a young gentleman came into the room, at whose appearance they all expressed the utmost satisfaction, and saluted him familiarly by the name of Harry Speculift: his deportment spoke somewhat so modest and so genteel, that I constrained myself, and sat down again in my place. After the usual salutations, I was presented to him as a gentleman deserving his acquaintance; and I could over-hear Prig telling him that I was a clever young fellow, a scholar, and a man of sense. The conversation then became general, till the new-comer reproved one of the company for swearing, which gave me a great deal of pleasure: he then harangued upon the odious, unprofitable, and vulgar nature of that useless vice in so pretty and so polite a manner, that I was quite enamoured with him, and parted that evening, after we had mutually requested the pleasure of each other's company the next night; when, according to agreement, we met, and happened to be near half an hour together before the rest came. After some cursory compliments, he told me that he observed last night that I did not seem much pleased with the company: 'And really,' says he, 'I must agree with you, that the conversation amongst them is much beneath the dignity of a man of sense and reflection, or a rational creature: I have absented myself frequently on that account; but, as I know my company is esteemed by them, my benevolence to my fellow-creatures will not suffer me to abstain from my visits altogether; and I the rather come now and then, as perhaps I may be lucky enough to drop something or other that may benefit them, and engage them to forsake some follies that I fear they are not a little guilty of.' I commended his disposition, which appeared to me perfectly amiable; and we were entering into a very entertaining conversation, when Mr. Prig and two or three more entered the room. The conversation then became general, and at length produced a dispute between Mr. Speculift and Prig, upon the moral fitness of things; in which I discovered either of them was far from being an advocate for Revealed Religion. However, what Speculift said was modest, and

spoke with candour and a shew of impartiality. I soon became very intimate with this person, who seemed to be have irreproachably, and understood he had been designed for the church; but a fortune of 200l. per annum coming to him by the death of an uncle, he chose to live unincumbered by the duties of any particular profession. In proportion as this intimacy increased, I discovered new matter for respect in my new acquaintance, who now engrossed rather too much of my time; he had a large share of knowledge, and the most taking manner of expression and address that I ever met with; but it would have been happy for me, had I never known him: his principles were detestable; and though he covered his failings with great art, yet I found, in some time, that he was much addicted to very coarse gratifications of his senses, and that his devotion to women was excessive. In short, the unsettled and anxious state of my already-tainted mind gave me up a prey to his maxims and principles, and I soon began to see difficulties in the sacred writings, and absurdities, as I foolishly imagined, that tottered my faith to the very foundation. I began to think our passions were given us to be gratified, and so long as scandal could be avoided, which was the whole that constituted the crime, I might indulge in the most guilty excesses: actions, we agreed mutually, were no otherwise good or bad than as they promoted or interfered with the happiness of the community, and that all ceremonies or modes of worship were empty and ridiculous; and thus, in a few months, I was involved in guilty courses, and a few fallacious arguments, that too much flattered my present temper, overturned what the wisdom and goodness of my father had been erecting in my soul for years. This, however, is certain, that I had been secure from all the arts of Speculift, whose arguments, in my more sober moments, appeared very cobwebs to me, had I not been previously guilty of a crime that had unhinged and unsettled my temper, and untuned my mind for the practice of any good precepts.

By this time Nanny began to shew her pregnancy; and, as she had preserved a tolerable appearance of respect
for

for some time past, I agreed to a request she made me to provide her a lodging, and give her some support, for the farther gratification of my unlawful appetites: accordingly, pretending she had received a letter that her father was very bad, and requested her to come into the country, she obtained her discharge from our good mistress, who parted with her, as did all the rest of the family, without the least apparent suspicion of what had happened; and I saw her to an apartment I had provided in the skirts of the town, supplying her with what money was necessary in her present condition. I generally visited her every evening, and renewed now, without much compunction, that intercourse that had brought me thus into so dismal a situation. At the distance of three months after her removal, she was delivered of a son, which happily died in the month: and now I more than ever herded with Prim and his companions, often staying out late, and frequently not returning home all night, which induced great expences; and, together with those of my mistress, reduced me to very great straits. Young Mr. Diaper, though he carried a face of more gravity and concern than ordinary, took no manner of notice of the difference of my conduct; but in every thing had hitherto behaved with his usual friendship and kindness, which I was far from deserving, being become a most notorious rake and debauchee.

C H A P. XI.

HIS EXTRAVAGANCY PERCEIVED BY HIS FATHER'S FRIEND, TO WHOM HE WAS INTRUSTED—HE ADVISES HIM—HE GROWS QUITE NEGLECTFUL OF HIS BUSINESS—TENDER DISCOURSE BETWEEN HIM AND YOUNG DIAPER—EXTRAVAGANCY OF HIS MISS—QUARRELS WITH HER—DISCOVERS HER INFIDELITY—PARTS WITH HER—RECEIVES A LETTER FROM HIS FATHER.

MY frequent demands upon Mr. Deacon, the gentleman to whom my father had recommended me, and intrusted with the payment of my allow-

ance, and who had behaved with the greatest respect and consideration imaginable, ever since his departure, made him very suspicious that my conduct was not so right as it had been formerly; for, in the first two years of my time, I had not drawn above a third of what he was desir'd to supply me with; and now, all on a sudden, as it were, taking the remainder out of his hands, and pressing for more every now and then with great earnestness, it was very natural for him, to think oddly of the matter. He spoke to my master and his son about it, and enquired privately into my behaviour; but, as to my master, he knew nothing to the contrary but that I behaved as well as usual; and, as to his son, he had too much affection for me to betray his sentiments, or the knowledge he had of the alterations that he had observed in me; therefore he imagined that I might have fallen upon some scheme to employ the money in some way or other to my advantage, as he had observed in me before a great disposition to œconomy and frugality: however, this did not hinder him from giving all the proper advice that he thought necessary in my ungarded time of life. He laid open the vices and follies of the town with becoming indignation; and pointed out to me those rocks and quicksands on which so many unhappy young men had been lost. As I had a great regard and respect for him, I always attended to what he said with abundance of patience; for I had not yet learned to despise instruction, or to be disobligh'd with reproof; and gave him such answers, as, for the present, allayed his fears; and accordingly he had not wrote about them to my father.

My friendly young master all this time was very uneasy on my account; he was sensible, that, if I was engaged in any laudable pursuit, I should, with my former freedom, have imparted it to him, and asked his advice, as usual, till lately; and therefore feared, considering also the constant embarrassment of my behaviour and countenance, that somewhat very extraordinary had happened to me; but my staying out of nights convinced him that I was detained for no good. I could often perceive him sigh; and as his love for me was very great, and, indeed, met with

a most affectionate return, and an unreserved confidence, till I was thus hurried from myself by this breach in my morals, he could no longer conceal his concern; and one evening, when I was going to my usual rendezvous, he begged the favour of my company, a request I could not possibly help complying with.

We spent the fore part of the evening in our usual manner, conversing on several useful topics, and reading alternately; and, to render my detention the more acceptable to me, he provided a supper, and the glass was circulated with more freedom than ordinary. He accidentally, at length, took up the Fair Penitent, which lay on the table; and, turning it over, asked my opinion of the tender scene between Altamont and his friend Horatio, after he had discovered the falshood of Calista. I freely confessed I thought the poet had worked it up with a great deal of judgment; and that, considering the provocation Altamont had given his friend before, it was a masterpiece to introduce Lavinia, without whose interposition it would have been very improbable to effect such a reconciliation. Thence our discourse rolled on the nature of friendship, about which our sentiments were quite conformable: 'And now, dear Joe,' says he, 'may I not reproach you for want of friendship to me? I have observed an unusual, unlooked for alteration in your behaviour, for many months: I am sensible your coldness towards me has not been caused by any thing I have said or done to offend you; I have too great a regard for you ever even to think of any thing likely to give you pain or uneasiness; what, then, is the reason I am become distasteful to you? You shun me, and fly my company, as if it was disagreeable to you. As a sincere friend is one of the greatest blessings in life, to be disappointed in such an enjoyment is one of the greatest mortifications imaginable; and our friendship was of such a nature, having *severest virtue for its basis*, as the poet says, that nothing but a deviation from it's divine principles, I think, could destroy our union. My affection to you, is, perhaps, more strongly rooted than you can well imagine; how then can

I perceive the cloud you wear upon your countenance, and that visible alteration in you; you, who was a pattern of regularity and sobriety, without feeling the most pungent sorrow? For God's sake, Joey, unbosom yourself to me; whatever has happened, I am ready to comfort and assist you, not only by words, but will relinquish every thing in my power to restore your quiet. I am sensible of your late familiarity with Prim, and, take my word for it, he is a very wretch; and, though you never asked me my opinion of Mr. Speculist, I will plainly tell you, that, if it be no impeachment to your good sense to keep him company, yet, in time, it will be very destructive of your morality; there is scarce a more vicious fellow breathing, and he is a companion the more dangerous, as he gilds over his vices with the appearance of reason and philosophy. What would our fathers say! what would they think of you, if you were known to like his fellowship and conversation!' So home a charge gave me the utmost pain; I blushed and was confounded, and sincerely hated myself, for abusing so much goodness and generosity: in that transient moment I took a silent resolution to leave off my follies; I was relieved by the thought; I resumed a free air, and, without much constraint, told the dear youth that I was sensible my conduct had been very reproachable. 'Not so,' says he; 'I don't reproach you; I desire to know nothing you are not willing I should know, only return to the warm friendship you have always seemed to be inspired with, and save me from the pain of thinking that you are pursuing a course that will make you compleatly wretched.' These last words were accompanied with a tear or two, which excited the same emotions of grief in me. I promised the dear friend, that I would soon disclose my whole soul to him; and, in the mean time, begged him to suffer me to drop the discourse, which became too tender for me to support; he consented, we entered upon indifferent matters, and I seemed to be that night robbed of all my disquiets, by the resolution I had taken. I perceived, by some part of his discourse, that he guessed a little at my situation; the

Idea gave me torture inexpressible; I resolved, over and over, to forsake my silly and vicious companions, and to return again to the happy state I had lost almost the relish for. Alas! how frail are all our resolutions? I think I was bewitched, and the next night destroyed the force of every thing that passed the night before: my mind, used to idleness and folly, was not so soon to be restored to itself, and made capable of sober reflection; the glass was circulated, the jests flew about the table; Speculist harangued, and I forgot myself and my friend. How hard is it to recover the mind, when too much pleasure has softened and enervated it? The returns of vice, like those of an intermitting fever on the body, are not to be resisted; it bears all before it, and destroys every sober and reasonable suggestion.

My neglects grew quite notorious at home; whole days, as well as nights, were spent with my new companions, or my girl, in all the abandoned looseness imaginable: Mr. Deacon, in vain, advised me, and threatened to write to my father; I was lost to all sense of my duty, and reputation itself; when an accident, that befel me, rather conduced to confirm me in my bad courses, than to shew me the folly of them, by dictating to my unhinged and perverted imagination, that all the pretences that were made in the world to religion and virtue were hypocrisy and dissimulation.

The false pleasures I received in my amours, which were not solely confined to Nanny, if I had not been lost indeed to all sentiments of happiness, were mingled with so many disagreeable circumstances, that I should not have long thought them engaging. As to her, I began to receive the most cutting affronts from her; she had lost all her softness and complaisance, and domineered and flounced about, in a manner that surprized me; her rapaciousness and extravagancy made me perpetually uneasy; she had even prevailed on me to write to my father for an increase of his most generous allowance, and I had been such a dupe as to comply. Our meetings were generally ushered in, and concluded, with a quarrel, in which we mutually accused each other for being the cause of our present unhappiness; in short, I grew

jaded and tired; seldom came near her; and, if fear of her violent temper had not deterred me, should have parted with her with great satisfaction. I thought I perceived of late a self-interestedness and cunning reserve, that I had never noticed before. I had stayed away from her one whole week, when I took a resolution to call upon her, to leave her some money, having just received some from Mr. Deacon, which, indeed, upon my importunity, he had advanced before it was due. When I came to the door, the woman of the house told me, with a half smile, that Mrs. Jenkins's cousin was with her, for that was the name we went by there, myself passing for her husband, who was a tide-waiter, and employed chiefly in business upon the river, which made my visits so uncertain. The word *cousin* startled me, for I had really some little affection for her; and, upon enquiry, the woman told me she thought I had known of his visits, for he was there every day. I said no more, but softly stole up stairs into the bed-chamber, where, from a closet, I could over-hear every thing that passed in Madam's dining-room; and had not been placed long, but, to my great surprize, I heard the voice of Mr. Packer, our journeyman. The reader may easily guess my astonishment, and the conjectures that distracted my brain, when I was relieved from my doubts of the reason of his being there, by the following dialogue, frequently interrupted with kisses: 'So,' says he, 'the young puppy has not been here this week, you say; upon my word, Nancy, you should act a little more politically; if you use him so roughly, you will lose your spark, and you know we cannot do without him.'—'That's true,' says she, 'but, as at first I gave myself to him to screen our correspondence, you must be sensible that I can have no regard for him, but the utmost aversion, which, in short, I begin to be unable to conceal; I wonder you will put me to so difficult a task.'—'If it was not for his money,' replied he, 'he might be d—d; but it is impossible for me, in my present situation, to keep you myself; and, therefore, as we reap such a benefit from him, you should behave so as to secure him till we can do better.' This speech

was succeeded by an embrace, which I could perceive was carried on to the last crisis. My surprize and astonishment at this exceeded description; I trembled with rage and fury, my knees tottered under me, and I was ready to fall on the floor; but, recollecting myself, I made shift to find my way down stairs; and, going to a neighbouring publick-house, wrote the following letter, and left it with the woman to deliver to her, together with two guineas; and, paying the arrears of rent due, told her I discharged myself of any farther care about paying for the lodgings, and then departed, pleased with myself for having exercised so much temper and prudence.

‘MADAM,

‘THE proofs I have just received of your ill treatment of me, from first to last, by the discourse I have over-heard between you and your paramour, have determined me to be your dupe no longer. I don’t pretend to upbraid you, but only reflect upon my own folly and stupidity, for suffering myself to be made the tool and property of a base, designing woman, so evidently to my hurt and detriment. I have discharged what was due for your lodging, and have left two guineas in your landlady’s hand for your present use; for you may assure yourself you will no more hear from

‘JOSEPH THOMPSON.

‘P. S. If your acquaintance behaves prudently, it shall not be my fault if any thing of his conduct transpires.’

Had any indifferent person been the accomplice of this woman, I believe I should immediately have grown sick and tired of vice, which wears so many thorns about it; but Packer was reckoned a prodigy of sobriety, and had made shift to behave so cautiously, that he was the favourite of our whole family, and had been particularly obliging to me: he was a constant church-goer, and put on such an appearance of religion and sanctity, that he was the last person I could have suspected of any criminal action; but now, discovering the blackness of his

behaviour, I concluded, all in a hurry, that there was no real goodness in the world, and strengthened myself with a maxim of Rochefoucault’s, that *Speculists* had ever in his mouth, *that all mankind are knaves or fools, and only differ from one another as they are more or less so.* Thus I argued, or seemed to argue, myself into a belief, that hypocrisy and dissimulation, rather than any real virtue or piety, was the source of the orderly behaviour of those that passed for the best people. I rejoiced at my delivery from the slavery and expence I was involved in, and swore that no particular object should bias me again to so much folly. These resolves were more strengthened by the conversation I had the same evening with *Speculist*; and I still increased them by the mirth that was inspired by wine, and the company of my old associates.

When I returned home, Mr. Deacon, I found, had left a letter, which he received inclosed in one to him from my father, which hastily breaking open, I found to the following effect.

‘DEAR SON,

‘I Can’t help telling you, that your desiring an augmentation of the sum I allow you for your expences, has very greatly surprized me; and I can’t at present imagine how you could even dispose of what you have had already. If I was apt to suspect your conduct, I have but too much reason to do so; as I have, to my great concern, found you slack and remiss in paying the compliment of writing to me and your mother; and Mr. Deacon has, with the most tender regard, however, to you, hinted some things to me which cannot fail giving me considerable pain: but as your master, in his last account of you, said so much in your praise, and I know you so well secured from the attacks of vice or folly, which ride predominant in London, by a virtuous and sober education, and an excellent natural temper, I will not give way to any uneasy surmises; nay, I have even gratified your request, and have desired my friend to increase your stipend ten pounds every year. I hope, my dear child, you will not give

‘ give me occasion to repent my indulgence: I am sensible of the many temptations youth are liable to in that wicked town; I am even tempted sometimes to blame myself for being the instrument of your going there; but, all things considered, and reflecting upon the excellent examples before you, in your worthy master and his amiable son, I believe I may make myself easy. Remember one thing, that immoderate expenses, even in the innocent cravings of nature, and the fashions that custom has introduced, is a thing of a very bad tendency, and will, in time, engage a corrupt habit of mind. I would not have you mean and fordid; your temper and constitution secures you from that; and, on the other hand, employ your money judiciously, and let not your plenty be a temptation to a too great indulgence of pleasure, or any extravagant gratifications. Sir Walter, who has built an house in our neighbourhood, and the young lady, who is always with your mother, and seems to have a great regard for me and my family, desire their compliments to you: your mother sends her blessing, and you have the same, most heartily, with prayers for your health and welfare, *from your very affectionate father,*

‘ WILLIAM THOMPSON.’

CHAP. XII.

HE FREQUENTS THE PLAYHOUSE—CONVERSES WITH WOMEN OF THE TOWN—RESORTS TO BAWDY-HOUSES—ADVENTURES AT A NOTED BAGNIO—BEATS THE WATCH—IS CARRIED WITH PRIM TO THE WATCH-HOUSE—THEY ARE RELEASED—PAYS A DEBT FOR PRIG—COMMENCES AN ACQUAINTANCE WITH MRS. MODISH.

THIS letter of my father’s at first gave me a great deal of pain, and opened a field of reflection, which, however, I soon overcame: if it did me any service, it was only to make me more careful of keeping up appearances at home, that my master might

not perceive my alteration of character; therefore I never staid out late, or lay out all night, at those times which he spent in town, which were now less frequent than ever, as his son was more and more capable to supply his place; and, as to him, his friendship silently winked at every thing. Freed from the incumbrance of the perfidious wretch my mistress, and Packer, for his own sake, behaving with great circumspection and modesty, I gave a loose to the false pleasures I was devoted to, more than ever; every night carried me with Speculist, Prig, or Prim, to the theatre, which was now become my reigning taste; but as my soul was muddled, and foul with vicious taint, all the sublime morality of our excellent dramatick performances was lost upon me, and, mingling with the senseless herd, it only became a place of downright debauchery, and stupid fallies of incoherent impertinence; hissing, affronting the audience, drawing blushes from the fair, intriguing with the actresses behind the scenes, attending the levee in the Green Room, conversing with the lowest part of the town, though, perhaps, distinguished by dress and title, buffoonery, bawdry, and rank nonsense, were the delicate inducements that drew us there. Often our entertainment concluded with a riotous quarrel, wherein the maddest actions, the most obscene and irregular starts of passion distinguished us; and as we seldom went there till we were top-heavy, as the saying is, we frequently came off with the worst: from thence we used to adjourn to the tavern, and, when thoroughly inflamed with the inspiring juice of the vine, scour the hundreds of Drury, and commit such pranks, as it were a shame and reproach even to mention. The women of the town now engaged my attention; and, for a time, I took the greatest pleasure imaginable in frequenting the dark regions of lust. To describe the various broils this engaged me in, and the *hair-breadth ‘scapes* I had from the wiles of the flattering whore, and the rage of the swaggering bully, would tire my reader’s patience, and keep him too long from things of greater moment, and of more engaging relish. The tricks I have seen put upon the unwary that fell into these righteous hands,

hands, the loathsome nauseousness of those apparently tempting charmers, when viewed in *puris naturalibus*, would have soon given a surfeit to any but a wretch who had thrown aside all delicacy and consideration, and the exercise of reason and good sense. My excesses of this kind frequently made me the victim of the most shocking distemper; which, however, as I suffered it to run to no extremity, gave me but a slight uneasiness; a surgeon's apprentice, one of our gang, was always at hand, with his own skill, and his master's medicines, to patch up the disorder, without hindrance or confinement sufficient to draw us off long from the odious custom of resorting to those temples of Satan. The life of a common prostitute is surely the most miserable that imagination can form an idea of, ever subject to the brutal violence and filthy embraces of a promiscuous motley herd, and, like the common-sewer, a receptacle of all filth that flows from the libidinous excesses of the town; nor could the famed box of Pandora contain more evils than she is made the inheritor of; till a constant pursuit of the same filthy trade totally demolishes her health, and she rots away by piece-meal, and at length is too often exposed and abandoned to a shocking untimely end, by the course of the slowly-stealing corruption, or the hand of justice heavily pressing her for some trivial theft, that, perhaps, her woeful wants have forced her to commit.

One evening Prim and myself had formed a resolution of lying at a noted bagnio near Charing Cross, to purchase the enjoyment of a fresh brace of these dulcineas, being quite cloyed with those at our usual resorts: being strangers to the governess of these *filles de joye*, we persuaded Speculift to introduce and start the game. Old mother Damnable received us with great affection of complaisance, and calling us her children, the usual cant, saluted us severally with a pair of lips that expelled a breath equalled by nothing but the cadaverous scent of a putrified carcase, and had almost prejudiced me against the goods we were going to cheapen. Speculift asked her how trade stood. 'Alack, my dear,' says the whining bawd, 'I am almost ruined; these half-pay officers lie so

heavily upon my hands, and score up more than I take of my other guests: well, God bless the king! but if we had another war, I might have some chance for my money—but what will you drink? I have some of the finest arrack you ever tasted.'—'Well said, mother, let us have a staring crown bowl, then.'—'Fye, Mr. Speculift! sure you would not call for such a pimping quantity as that!—What say you, love?' chucking me under the chin, 'shall I make it up half-a-guinea?—Here, Mrs. Decoy, fill this bowl with arrack.—Won't you walk into the parlour, gentlemen? you will find all the ladies there; poor things, they want company.' Away we posted into the parlour, and found three delicate *bona robas* drinking tea, and chatting by the fire-side. Here an elegant supper was served up; and, after replenishing the bowl three or four times, most of which was sucked up by Madam and her nymphs, we settled the preliminaries, and every man singling his doxy, mounted for our several apartments, just as the watchman had roared out, 'Past two o'clock!' I must own, I thought I was going to clasp an angel, the red and white was so livelily displayed on her cheeks, and the swelling bosom gave me such a prospect of heightened raptures; so with eager haste disrobing ourselves, we crept between the sheets, prepared to employ our time as industriously as eager warmth foretold we should: my bashful goddess, from her high sense of modesty, extinguishing the taper, to hide, as she pretended, her glowing blushes, being, poor thing, but newly instructed in the trade. In about an hour afterwards we both fell into a sound sleep, from which we were suddenly awakened by a thundering noise at the door, which at first I could not conceive the meaning of, till I was thoroughly roused by the terrifying cry of 'Murder! thieves!' Finding it high time to provide for my security, I huddled on my cloaths in a trice: as for Madam, she stood shivering and shaking like an aspen leaf; not that robbing the old devil's house, she said, would affect her, but she was fearful the rogues would abuse and violate her person. I advised her, however, to stay where she was.

was, whilst I, armed with a poker, sallied forth as grim as Hercules or Nero. Upon coming into the entry, which divided our apartment from three or four more on the same floor, I was immediately jumbled in the dark amongst five or six women; who, by their voices, I found were the old bawd and some of her females, all trembling and crying to God, *to have mercy upon them*. I ventured to ask the meaning of their fright; 'Alack-a-day!' says the old whore, 'I am ruined, Sir; to be sure they have moved off every thing valuable below;' and then blubbered out, 'Oh, my china! my pewter! and, to be sure, they have broken open my bar!' 'I am an undone woman!'—'Well,' says I, 'can't you strike a light?' and the good mother then recollected she had a tinder-box in her room, but neither herself, nor any body else, could be prevailed on to stir to fetch it. Whilst this was under debate, we heard the door of another room opened, and a hoarse voice hallowed out, 'D—n your blood! what is all this racket for? are you all mad?'—'Oh, captain,' says one of the wenches, 'there are thieves in the house;' and at that instant a noise, like the overturning of a table and glasses, saluted our ears. 'Oh, by G—! if that's all,' says the same voice, 'it is no business of mine. D—n ye, why don't ye call the watch?' and so slapped the door too again, and double-bolted it. 'Aye,' says one of the ladies, 'there is your man of courage for you, Madam; I am sure I would never disgrace scarlet, if I was such a coward—you will take care of number one, I perceive.' Presently we heard a stamping up stairs, upon which the nymphs all scudded, some into one room, and some in another, wherever they could grope their way. As soon as I perceived the stamping was pretty near our stair-head, I asked, 'Who is there? who is that?' A voice replied, which I soon distinguished to be Prim's. 'What the devil have you been at,' says I, 'old friend?'—'Nay, I can't tell,' says he, 'for I believe all the devils in hell are let loose below.' By this time Madam Governess brought a light, and found Prim and me together; he without any

thing on but his shirt, and shaking with cold till his teeth uttered a sound like the ticking of a clock, but more irregular. We resolved now to explore the bottom of the matter; so snatching the light, and brandishing my poker, I marched in the van; Prim, armed with a brass candlestick, followed me, and the whole bevy of ladies brought up the rear. When we came into the parlour, where we had been drinking, we found, indeed, the whole room stripped, and, turning our eyes towards the window, perceived that it had been broke open; and the shutter had a pannel completely cut out of it: here was the mystery opened; our next work was to look after the stragglers, if perchance any had lagged behind; but our search was fruitless, for our noise had hurried them away so precipitately, that they had decamped without making any extraordinary booty. The man in scarlet, and Speculist, by this time had joined us, and proposed a tiff of punch, which, as soon as Mrs. Decoy had kindled a fire, we had served up, and nobody remained dull but the kind hostess, who was mourning over the loss of a punch-ladle and some other geer which she missed after this incursion. Such a groupe of figures I never surveyed before; the women had only loose gowns over them, and so dishevelled, that you would imagine they resembled so many furies: the captain, who was now very valiant at sight of a clear coast and the punch, had only his regimental coat on, and Prim had just put on a gown of Mrs. Decoy's, which he found lying in the kitchen; as to the mistress of the house, having nothing on to confine her load of belly, she appeared a creature of such a form, that it was impossible to invent a name for. Every one moved now to retire again to their warm beds, and the same hint was given to me by a female voice over my shoulder, which I then perceived proceeded from my bargain, who I thought had not ventured out of her room; but, O heavens! Ovid, with all his metamorphoses, could not have matched such a transfiguration. The red that had glowed in her cheeks was now removed to her chin; and her whole face was such a jumble of colours, and so haggard and frightful,

that I disputed the identity of the person: instead of the swelling breasts, two shivering bags discovered themselves of the colour of bladders, and not unlike them, when just half blown up; and, as to the jutting hips, their prominence, which before supported a slender waist, was quite levelled and lost. Quite sick, and full of aversion and curses, I resolved to stay no longer; and Prim being of the same mind, we left Speculift, and paying our reckonings, which amounted to forty-five shillings, sallied out in pursuit of farther adventures. We directed our course towards the city, and in my way I took occasion to ask my companion how he came down stairs at the bagnio at that hour of night; he informed me, that, being cloyed with his doxy, he had gone down with an intent to go to bed to Mrs. Decoy, as had been often practised by Speculift in that house; but found her nest empty, and had been forced to hide himself till the thieves, of whom he counted three, had evacuated the premises. In our way down the Strand and Fleet Street, we assaulted every one we met, chagrined with our late disappointments; broke lamps, kicked strumpets, and abused the watch, whose lanthorns and staves became a prey to our frolicks, which we made prize of as they slept, contentedly snoring, at their stands. Turning the corner of Fleet Ditch, we perceived one of these hopeful guardians of the city's peace in a profound doze, his lanthorn and staff standing by him, which we seized and tossed over into the ditch; but, waking suddenly, we were obliged to take to our heels, followed by him and half a dozen more of the fraternity, whom he had alarmed with the cry of 'Watch!' As we were nimbler than our pursuers, we should soon have got clear of them, if a watchman had not started out of Ludgate, as we were scouring through the gate, who at one blow laid Prim flat upon the pavement: fired with this disaster, and the injury done to my friend, I flew upon him, and wresting his weapon out of his hand, soon sent him to bear him company. By this time, more assistance coming, I had a hard task to maintain my ground; and, after giving and receiving many weighty

thwacks over the back and shoulders, I was seized by two of them behind, and with Prim, who had just recovered, was in triumph conducted to the watch-house: there sat, in great state, the nocturnal majesty of Mr. Constable, who, on hearing the allegations of the accusers, determined to accompany us directly to the Compter, for which purpose, he sent orders for all his band to attend him; but perceiving he was an hired magistrate by his appearance, and the oddity of his behaviour, I begged the favour to speak to him apart, and pretending to know most people in the ward, and adding to my speech the prevailing rhetoric of half-a-crown, he persuaded the injured parties to come to terms of agreement, telling them, we seemed to be good-natured young gentlemen, and would, no doubt, make them proper amends. His eloquence prevailed, and a gallon of beer and a quantity of gin being set before us, we soon came to an accommodation, and for the sum of a shilling to each, after paying for the lanthorn and staff, we were joyfully released. It was now light, and we made such a rueful appearance, that we determined not to go home till next evening, and directed our steps to the fresh air of Islington, to endeavour, by the reviving breezes of the country, to get rid of the qualms of our drinking, and the lassitude occasioned by want of rest. In our way through that part of the suburbs in our rout, who should we meet but poor Prig, in durance vile, in the hands of a marshal's court catch-pole! he was quite ashamed of this rencounter; but, understanding that he was only detained for a debt of three pounds to his shoemaker, we jointly deposited the money and the costs, over a quartern of brandy at an alehouse, and set him at liberty. As he had made a midnight excursion also; we prevailed on him to go with us, and got about dinner-time to Holloway, where we joined company with a promiscuous set of persons that were just sitting down to table, at a house we had often used before. Amongst the rest was a very handsome woman, seemingly of about thirty years of age, whom her husband, a morose, ill-behaved man, had brought out for an airing: the betrayed so
much

much aversion to her yoke-fellow, and appeared so complaisant to every body else, that I soon judged her disposition, and made all the advances I could to a farther acquaintance; and some of the company, after the cloth was removed, proposing a walk in the garden, I gave my hand to the lady, who willingly left her spouse to blow his pipe with my companions, and two or three more, over a bowl of punch, and accompanied me. I found this lady was not over coy, and judged by what I perceived, that if opportunity could be found, she would not shew much obduracy to a warm, pressing young fellow. She had smitten my fancy, and I was resolutely determined to possess her, and rendered myself so agreeable to her, that we made an appointment to meet the next day at an acquaintance of her's in town, where I was to enquire for Mrs. Modish. We all came to London together, Prim and Prig having taken the hint, and made themselves very agreeable to the husband.

C H A P. XIII.

FATAL CONSEQUENCES OF HIS AMOUR—GOES TO THE MASQUERADE—PICKED UP AT VAUXHALL GARDENS—HE IS BEAT AND STRIPPED—GETS TO MR. SPECULIST'S LODGINGS—CATASTROPHE OF PRIM—CONTRACTS A BAD DISTEMPER—IS QUITE REDUCED—PAWNS HIS WATCH—GOES TO THE GAMING-TABLE—IS KICKED DOWN STAIRS—MEETS PRIG AT TOM KING'S—RETURNS HOME—IS WELL RECEIVED.

WITH eager expectation I counted the tedious hours, the next day, till the time of my appointment arrived; when, making an excuse to go upon some business to the Custom House, I visited the place that inshrined my princess; which was at a little shopkeeper's on Tower Hill, where I found her waiting with as much impatience as I could possibly be agitated with. I perceived this was not to be the scene of our amour; for, when the good woman was gone aside, she desired me to propose going with her to Vauxhall, and gave me instructions to

call her cousin: this, as soon as tea was ended, I did accordingly, and carried the grimace on so well, that, having observed her acquaintance express herself in a great hurry of business, I even pressed her to accompany us; which, as I knew she would, she very politely declined: so, calling a coach, I handed her into it; and, when I had joined her, ordered the coachman to drive to Vauxhall, aloud; but, in a kind of whisper, told him to make what expedition he could to Chelsea. In our way, all the little wanton blandishments that we had an opportunity for were practised on both sides; and, in short, we became so enamoured of one another, that the coach went too slowly for our wishes. She indulged me in the most tempting liberties, and seemed quite pleased with and proud of her conquest. I understood her husband was a rich druggist, and that she had been married against her consent and inclination to him, which had, together with his most unsociable, jealous, and suspicious temper, driven her to seek that happiness and felicity abroad, that she could not meet with at home. I began to think myself not at all to blame in this intercourse; I looked upon her as a fine woman in distress, and flattered myself that my affording her relief and satisfaction was meritorious. Thus falsely do we argue, when the mind is depraved, and loaded with a weight of iniquity; we gild over to ourselves crimes of the deepest dye, if the smallest circumstances can be gathered to alleviate them. I verily believe the most abandoned miscreants thus reason with themselves; and that no man, let him be ever so wicked, but suggests to his mind some excuse for what he commits, before he feels the false pleasure in it that he proposes. A plain proof this of the human heart's being originally created void of blemish, and stimulated by the Author of Nature to nothing but praise-worthy motions. I began to be tired of the promiscuous latitude I had given myself in the use of women: those uneasy, wretched days, that succeeded the loathsome revelling nights, which left me all jaded, tired, and qualmish, began to give me disgust; I looked upon this adventure as a relief from such nauseous debauches, and resolved to confine myself solely to my present object, and

drink large draughts of love. Mrs. Modish, to a very fine person, joined a turn of wit and good-sense that charmed me; I found her conversation irresistible, and thought myself the happiest of men in her embraces. We spent the day so satisfactorily to us both, that we parted not only with regret, but in such a tender manner as began to make us both serious; and I must say, that, barring the indulgence of this one appetite in so unlawful a manner, she was not addicted to any one bad property. Poor woman! how happily, how prudently she would have passed her days, had fortune bestowed upon her a husband of good-sense and humanity, that she could have an affection for, instead of a sour, morose, jealous wretch, who had not capacity enough to put any means in practice to engage her tenderness! Ye covetous, worldly-minded parents, how many unhappy creatures you have made!

Our meetings were now very frequent; I forsook my old companions, and was bent on nothing else but pleasing and obliging her. Methought there was somewhat in it that flatteringly recalled me to my former delicacy and good taste; I imagined I was not doing any harm, as our intercourse gave no body disquiet: but this grave species of vice was soon to have a period. We were one evening returning from a country walk, her arm fondly resting upon my shoulder, when we were met by a gentleman, the sight of whom put her into the utmost consternation; she trembled, and was ready to faint. I was soon delivered from my ignorance of the occasion by hearing him say—'So, sister, where have you been walking? I hope my brother is well?—Sir, your servant,' to me, and then brushed by us with great haste. When she recovered her spirits sufficiently, she informed me it was her husband's brother, who had always been her very great enemy; and having some expectancy, in case he should die without children, would, no doubt, make a handle of this meeting to do her all the prejudice in his power. I was disconcerted at what I heard; my disposition was too generous to think of the insults she would be liable to with patience; I even went so far as to propose an element to her; but, with the utmost good sense, she repressed my

proposals, and particularly insisted that she would do nothing to injure her reputation, or to provoke my ruin, which would, by such a proceeding, be inevitable. I was convinced, and embraced her with all the tenderness and gratitude her words inspired: we parted, and tears were shed on both sides, deceiving ourselves with the hopes of silencing her brother, which she promised to attempt, and meeting the next day again. Full of the ideas of what might have happened, I went to the old place of assignation; but, instead of finding the object of my concern, had the following letter given to me—

'DEAR THOMPSON,

'I Fear, alas! this is the last time that even the liberty I at present take can be indulged: our being met was discovered, before I came home, with all the aggravated circumstances that malice could invent. You may guess the usage I have had from what you know of my husband's brutal temper: I will not give you the pain I am sensible you'll feel in the relation of it. In an hour's time I shall be hurried into the country, where confinement will be my lot, perhaps, till the hour of my death; I have only just opportunity to write these two or three lines unobserved: guess the torment this cruel separation from you occasions me! I believe you will be equally affected; but strive to forget an unfortunate woman, and be happy as your deserts can make you. Your affectionate friend,

'KATH. MODISH.'

It was a long time before I could get over this untoward accident: my nature soft and compassionate, my temper generous to an excess, gave me more disturbance than can possibly be imagined. I cursed myself as the author of her misfortunes, and determined to take vengeance on her husband; but the little reason I retained soon banished such thoughts. I now again returned to my old acquaintance, who received me as a man risen from the dead; for I had practised the utmost deceit with Prim and Prig; and had made shift to keep my affair with Mrs. Modish an absolute secret to every body. I mingled again in noise, folly,



folly, and uproar, to get rid of my uneasiness: for some time the remembrance of this charming woman made it very insipid to me; but I soon became hardened against reflection. We all expressed an inclination one day to visit the Masquerade, which about this time was a diversion very much admired; so accordingly equipping ourselves with proper dresses, Speculift, Prim, Prig, and myself, entered the grotesque assembly: never was surprize equal to mine at the oddity of the sight, which I had entertained no notion of before; a mixture of beings, of both sexes, employed in all the ridiculous mummery that would only distinguish the monkey race; whispering, nodding, luscious discourse, offensive to modesty and good manners; and, in short, secure in their disguises, every one giving a loose to the corrupted dictates of their hearts, and throwing aside every necessary reserve. Prim soon got to the gaming-table, where in a trice he emptied his pockets, and came away cursing his ill-luck. Speculift got into a *tête-à-tête* discourse with a coronet, with whom I saw him leave the place; but understood next day, that, instead of a countess, he was engaged with a woman of the town, who had dexterity enough to make him spend a large sum of money, and, in return, gave him the French disease. Prig exhausted all the ill-natured malignity of his heart in railing against the company; and we, both heartily tired, came away together, and adjourned to the tavern, where we were soon after joined by Prim, with a most deplorable length of face, having lost to the tune of twenty guineas; and what made him the more uneasy, was, that at least a moiety of it was cash of his master's. We contrived soon to ease that part of his pain, by making the sum up between us; and, having sent home our dresses, we supped, and retired to our several habitations, with an appointment to be next day at Vauxhall, where I promised to engage Speculift to accompany us.

At the close of the succeeding day, when I repaired to Mr. Speculift's, to procure his company, I found him so chagrined with his last night's mischance, that he resolved to keep his chamber for some time; so leaving him, I repaired to the rendezvous,

where I expected the other two; but when I had waited a pretty while, and perceived they neither of them came, I took boat, and immediately rowed away for Vauxhall, resolved not to be balked of the pleasure I expected that night. When we came opposite to Whitehall Stairs, (as I had not insisted upon going singly in the boat, but had given the waterman liberty to take in any fare that might be agreeable to me) we were plied by a very pretty young lady, attended by a footman in a green livery. I gave her my hand to help her in, which she accepted with the utmost good-nature, and we put off again to pursue our voyage. To have seen this young lady, one would have imagined that she was the Goddess of the Silver Stream; it was impossible to survey her, without feeling one's self filled with the highest complacency and good-humour; such an irresistible sweetness played in her features, as would have softened the rigours of pain, and smoothed the brow of anguish: her modesty was unaccompanied with affectation, and a single look from her would have dashed assuming rudeness. I thought myself entirely happy in having so gentle a partner in my boat, and strove, by all the little civilities I was master of, to make my company and conversation agreeable to her. When we landed at Vauxhall, she was received by a handsome young gentleman, who accosted her with such a becoming tenderness, and whose appearance lighted up such satisfaction in her eyes, that I discovered, before they spoke, that the strictest ties bound them together. She very politely returned me thanks for my company, which were enforced by her happy husband in so complaisant a manner, that it almost raised blushes in my face. Understanding we were all bound to the same entertainment, he begged the favour of my company, which I was far from having the power to refuse, they had gained such an ascendent in my good opinion. The discourse of the gentleman was so judicious, and we were so mutually pleased with each other, that it was with reluctance we parted, after some time, when they left the Gardens, giving me a direction where they lived, and desiring me to call, and continue the acquaintance. I could not help envying the

the happiness of this amiable pair; virtue sat so elegantly upon them, without any of that displeasing stiffness, too often the attendant of strict morals, that I made many mortifying comparisons between my present state and theirs, and indulged a few moments melancholy upon my unhappy turn of mind; from which I was awakened by an ambling female, who seemed to cast a kind regard upon me, as I sauntered down one of the walks. I passed her, we met again; I thought I discovered a certain *je-ne-sçai-quoi* about her that pleased me, though she appeared to be turned of thirty. I was resolving to make some advances to a farther acquaintance, when she accidentally stumbled within a few paces of me, and I eagerly ran to her assistance, and supported her in my arms, she pretending to have sprained her foot.—‘I hope, Madam, you have not received much detriment!’—‘No, Sir,’ she replied, with a smile; ‘I have no pain, unless I am too troubled to be so generous a gentleman.’—‘I assure you, my dear creature,’ I rejoined, ‘I am ever at the service of the fair; and as to the trouble you fear to have given me, it is your fault if it is not repaid; for I must own I feel it very considerable: but I believe I had better conduct you to the next seat, that you may repose yourself after your fright.’ She gave a silent assent with a nod of her head, and I seated myself by her, and called for some wine and sweetmeats; when, either by design or accident, she spilt a drop or two from her glass upon my hand and ruffle, which endeavouring to wipe off with her handkerchief, in contention between us, her face was reclined so near to mine, that I stole a sudden kiss; at which she blushed, and seemed displeased; but, resuming herself, would have taken her leave, under pretence of being fearful lest she should be discovered by any one who knew her: upon which I proposed to attend her in a walk through the gardens, which, with a seeming reluctance, she permitted. At the bottom of one of the alleys she was accosted very cavalierly by a young fellow under the name of Mrs. Tripsy; and, to my utter surprize, I discovered by her answer she was certainly a lady of a very free disposition; that is to say, one of

those convenient and ready commodities, that, without acting like a common woman, only receive visitors at their lodgings under the highest notion of secrecy. We presently, hereupon, grew very familiar; and, in short, I was foolish enough to propose going home with her to Newington, where she said she lodged; and she was quickly prevailed upon to accept of my company. Nothing, sure, is so eminently calculated to soften the mind as these places of harmony; they raise inclinations, in the most cold and frozen constitutions, to all the soft inducements of vice. It was with no little shew of reason that the famed Legislator banished musick out of his commonwealth: every fascinating note opens the breast to receive the impressions of pleasure, and unmans the soul, by propagating the enervating weakness to which human nature is too subject. What resistance can be made against the melting concord of *swweet sounds*? The appearance of beauty decked in all its wanton attire, the inflaming power of wine, the verdant bower, the fanning breeze, conspire to the destruction of that regularity of conduct, that nothing can atone the transgression of. It was pretty late before we departed; and as I had drank freely as well as my mistress, the coach we hired for our tour to her apartments, excited desires in me which were too powerful to be delayed, and called for a speedy enjoyment. We were locked fast in each others arms when the coach stopped, and I could over-hear a volley of oaths from a voice as hoarse as a boatswain’s, and a demand of a woman, who he was sure was in that coach, and was his b—h of a wife—‘I know there’s a fellow with her, too,’ continued the voice; ‘but, by G—d, I’ll spoil his sport! he shall never caterwaul in my territories again, I warrant him!’ and, so saying, pulled open the coach-door. I had just recovered my seat, when I was attacked with a smart blow of a cudgel over my shoulders; and, at the same time, Madam was hauled out by main force, and I jumped out after her, and collared the fellow; but, two or three others coming up at the instant, I received half a dozen strokes more, which levelled me with the ground! I had but just strength enough left to ask the

meaning

meaning of all this; and, it being very dark, could neither discover the number nor faces of my assailants.—‘O damn you, d’y’e chatter, you dog!’ ‘I’ll give you your hire before I have done with you,’ says the same voice—‘and as to you, Madam, I defer your punishment till I get you home.’—The woman then counterfeited tears, and vowed to her husband, as she called him, that I had forced her into the coach with me; and, before I could appeal to the coachman, I found he was one of the gang, and corroborated what she said. This parley was finished by so many cuffs, kicks, and bastinadoes, that I fainted away; and how long I lay in that condition, cannot well determine, but found myself, when I recovered my senses, in the arms of two or three passengers, who happened to come that way, and had raised me up, and wiped the blood from my face. I had only my breeches, shoes, and stockings on; my coat, waistcoat, hat, buckles, gold-headed cane, and about four guineas which I had in my pocket, were gone; therefore they made no enquiry after my mischance, perceiving I had fallen into the hands of footpads; and I had no inclination to let them into the truth of the story. I begged them to help me to some house or other, which they complied with; and it proved to be a little blind tippling-house by the side of the road. The landlord was prevailed upon to lend me an old great-coat to go to London in, after leaving my stockings, which were silk, as a security for the return of it; otherwise, if I had died with cold, he could not have been moved to assist me. It was near one in the morning before I got to town, very faint, and hardly able to crawl; in which condition, not caring to go home, I went to Mr. Speculist’s lodgings, and found him just come from the tavern. After telling him my story, which suggested a good deal of warning to me, he got a surgeon to look at my wounds, who found nothing that required more than the application of common plaisters; and, being an honest man, did not attempt, by any unintelligible jargon, or the common chicanery of the profession, to make a penny of my cure. I slept very soundly till ten the next morning, and found myself able to return to

my business. My friend Diaper was shocked at seeing the change of my dress, for I had borrowed a coat and waistcoat of Speculist; and seeing my face bruised, and hearing my relation of being robbed and stripped, in which I carefully concealed the part that affected my own conduct, he would not suffer me to enter upon business, but insisted on my going immediately to bed, which I did accordingly. I had now sufficient leisure to reflect on my numerous follies, and the train of mischiefs they had engendered; and must confess my actions at this time appeared in so absurd a light, that no words can express the confusion and disordered shame that arose in my breast. I resolved, if possible, to forsake such pernicious courses for the future, and was thus running on in self-accusations, when Prim entered my chamber, all pale and wan, and with a countenance that betrayed the utmost disorder of mind. I was startled to see it, and asked, hastily, what brought him there, and what was the matter. ‘Alas, Joe!’ says he, ‘I’m ruined for ever. You remember I was to have met you last night, instead of which that devil Prig tempted me to go to the gaming-table, where I was fleeced of above fifty pounds, which was most of it my master’s money: he demanded it of me this morning; I had no excuse to make, and was obliged to confess the truth. My father was sent for, and the result is, that I am going to sea to expiate my crimes. I am now returning home, and shall hardly see you again before I go. God bless you, my friend; take warning by my unhappy fate, and leave off courses of extravagance, that can never fail of the most dreadful consequences.’ In saying this, he let fall a shower of tears, and my heart was too full for utterance: we embraced, and took a farewell, very likely for ever. The misfortune of this young fellow increased my chagrin, bating the follies he was guilty of, he had every good quality to recommend him. I heartily sympathized in his trouble, and formed to myself still stronger resolutions of amendment.

For a week after this accident I lived regularly, and stuck close at home; my friend, charmed with this appearance

ance of reformation, was quite beside himself with joy, and studied to oblige me in every thing; but I soon discovered that my last amour had left a latent poison in my blood, that began to shew itself with very frightful symptoms; I applied to a surgeon, and it was his advice that I should undergo a salivation, without which, he assured me that I could never be perfectly cured. This sentence distracted me; I cursed myself, and the cause of my sufferings; I was almost in the mind to dispatch myself out of the way; I could apprehend no means of keeping the scandalous affair from being made publick, to my utter disgrace, and the ruin of my reputation; but Providence kindly took my part, and put it into the head of my friend to propose my taking a country journey of a week, or so, for my health, which was now visibly impaired, though he was far from guessing the reason: I accepted the liberty with gratitude, and resolved to make it subservient to my cure; accordingly, having put my horse, which he lent me, to livery, I took a lodging at Hoxton, and the surgeon began his operations, providing a nurse, and every thing necessary. Notwithstanding the perpetual perturbations of my soul, I went through the business with great safety, and got up in three weeks quite recovered of the vile distemper, but so weakened, that I was hardly able to stir. It was necessary I should stay some time to recruit my strength, but my money ran short, and it was impossible for me to procure a supply without hazarding a discovery: in short, I was reduced to the greatest misery and distress; every thing valuable about me went, one after another, to the pawn-brokers, and at last my watch, on which I procured two guineas; and having recovered strength enough, though not my complexion, I was resolved to be confined no longer; so discharging my lodging, I kept just five shillings in my pocket; but now my horse must be paid for, before I could have him to make a semblance of returning from the country; I was here quite nonplussed; at length, it entered into my head, that I might perhaps be lucky at the gaming-table in Covent Garden, where I had seen persons that brought in a few shill-

ings carry off pounds; the suggestion was tempting, and I immediately obeyed it.

When I came into this school of villainy, I could not help employing a few minutes in surveying the groupe of figures that crouded about the tables,

“Some to undo, and some to be undone,”

As the poet says: that rapacious eagerness and avidity, the different distortions of the adventurers, shewn in their faces, and the sudden starts of joy, or ravings of despair, on the several turns of fortune, made me strongly conceive the pernicious effects of this vice, both to the mind and body: here was a creature chinking his ill-gotten treasure, and dancing about the room in extasies of gladness; but soon behold what a change! he is stripped by a turn of luck, and loses his last shilling; he flings the balls into the fire, stamps, raves, curses his folly, and acts over the perfect madman; blasphemies and execrations, enough to fill the soul with horror, echo throughout the room; and a constant buz and tumult is heard on every side; envy, hatred, malice, revenge, and all the unsociable and unamiable passions, here reign in their genuine deformity. I was lucky enough to win three or four pounds at the silver-table, after several turns of fortune, but could not be contented, and removed to the gold-table; where, in the twinkling of an eye, I lost again every shilling in my pocket. I was now perfectly distracted; and was so abominably imprudent, that I returned to the silver-table again, and laid five shillings to four, though I had not one farthing about me, trusting entirely to good luck; but I was woefully deceived, and not being able to pay what I had lost, notwithstanding all my excuses, two or three fellows disgracefully carried me to the stairs, and, by the vote of the whole company, kicked me down from top to bottom, where the attendants turned me out of doors. As I had received no hurt, I thought myself tolerably well off, though I was extremely mortified: what to do now I could not tell; but, thinking I should meet with some acquaintance or other, I strolled over to Tom King's: here the scene was somewhat changed; in one corner

Two or three drunken sleepers, snoring away their load of liquor; here a group of rakes in lascivious discourse, and wanton attitude, with half a dozen whores; others, of both sexes, poaching after game; brawling and wrangling at one box; cursing and swearing at another; at this part of the room a pair of boxers dealt lusty blows on each other's chops, whilst some dirty devil of a prostitute remained the prize of him who had the fortune to overcome his antagonist; at another part, two or three viragos were demolishing each other's coifs, and rooting up their hair, inspired by some sudden gust of jealousy. It was some time before I cast my eyes on any body I knew; at last, who should I discover, but Prig, as drunk as David's sow, retailing out law to an audience of market-women and porters, who were going to fetch a warrant for some poor wretch from the justice? He was overjoyed to see me; and, taking advantage of his usual good-humour, in his cups, I borrowed three pieces of him, and then adjourned, without taking leave, to the inn where my horse stood, where I went to bed, after the most fatiguing, unhappy, and mortifying day, that I ever passed in my life.

Next morning I took a tour round the neighbouring villages, and came home as just alighted from a journey; and, though my stay had been so very long, I was received by my young master with the highest tokens of friendship and kindness.

CHAP. XIV.

PACKER WRONGS HIS MASTER, AND IS DISCHARGED — DISCOVERS THOMPSON'S PRACTICES TO MR. DIAPER—GENEROUS BEHAVIOUR OF YOUNG DIAPER—HE RESCUES HIM FROM ROBBERS—BRAVERY OF PRIG—HE IS HIGHLY CARESSED BY HIS MASTER AND MISTRESS.

SOON after my return home, an affair happened that gave my master a great deal of trouble and concern; Packer, our journeyman, with whom I had seldom held any conversation since I discovered his ill usage of me, and who, on his part, behaved with

great-civility, accompanied with a distant reserve, had been frequently employed, in my absence, in receiving money of our town customers, which used to be constantly my department. It happened, that the day after my arrival I was sent to a retailer's shop to receive a small sum of money which was become due, to the amount of twenty-eight pounds; but they informed me that Mr. Packer had received it a week before; I had no suspicion upon this, but only imagined that he had forgot to settle the book, which occasioned me to think it was still due. I came home, and told Packer of his neglect, which he seemed to be sorry for, and went directly and entered the sum on the credit side of the account. As we were at dinner, I informed my friend what business I had done; and, amongst the rest, mentioned the error I had been led into, hoping our customer would not be disobliged at it. He seemed quite surprized, and protested that Packer had never brought the money on account. He very seldom dined with us, having the privilege to board himself at a sister's he had, that kept an house not far from us; and therefore we carried on the discourse somewhat farther, and both agreed in observing that he had been very melancholy, and, as it were, out of himself for some time past. It directly jumped into my thoughts, that he was carrying on no good design, which I had more reason to imagine than any one; but however, I would not strengthen Mr. Diaper's suspicions, but proposed to go to all the customers in town, and see if we could gather any farther tokens of infidelity; which my friend agreed to, and I put in execution that very afternoon. Upon the whole scrutiny, we found he had received in all sixty-eight pounds more than he had accounted for, which made my young master vastly uneasy, and not a little disturbed me; for, on the one hand, I loved Mr. Diaper and his family too well to be unconcerned at such a discovery; and, on the other, I feared, when things came to extremity, Packer might be villain enough to hint at some particulars in my conduct that would very greatly sink me in their opinion. My friend resolved to set out that evening, though very late, to impart the matter

to his father, desiring me to behave as usual, and not to seem to know any thing of what he was going upon, at so unseasonable and unusual an hour. Guess the astonishment of our master, when his son made known to him the dishonesty of Packer! he could scarce credit him; and, had he not been armed with the most convincing proofs of his trespass, he would almost have thought it a forgery, such an ascendancy he had gained over him by his affectation of religion and sobriety. When he was thoroughly convinced, he set out for town, and arrived at home at about eight o'clock in the morning, to the surprize of all the family, but to the utter discomposure of poor Packer, whose condition I heartily pitied, notwithstanding the reason I had to detest him. At the distance of an hour or two after his arrival, he ordered him to appear before him; and what passed we could not learn, only he was dismissed from his place, but in so considerate a manner, as not to drive him to any desperate folly or rashness. I could perceive the tears trickle from his eyes; but, as I feared it would look like an insult upon his misfortunes, had I taken any notice of him, I retired till he was gone. My master then called up his son and me, and addressed us thus: 'I am sorry for this poor wretch; certain unhappy habits he has contracted have brought him thus to betray my confidence; but I hope my lenity, and the instructions I have given him, will prevent his total ruin.—What surprized me greatly, child, applying himself to me, was, that he gave me some hints that you had swerved from those excellent principles you imbibed from your father, and have even shewn a neglect of my business: I must own I am apprehensive the share you had in the detection of his knavery put him, unhappy creature! upon this accusation.'—'Depend upon it, Sir,' says my friend, 'that must be the case, for Mr. Thompson is so constantly in my company, that nothing of that nature could have happened without my knowledge and participation.'—'Why, that's the very reason for my disbelief,' replies the worthy gentleman—'nor will I give way to any surmises to your prejudice: go on, young man, to

'deserve my esteem, and to pursue maxims of virtue and prudence, which will not fail of endearing you to all good men, and establish a peace and harmony of mind, that no accident, in future life, will have the power to destroy.' He then gave us both some excellent lessons of advice; and, after leaving orders relative to business, returned to his country-house. When he was gone, I took my generous friend in my arms, and was so overcome with this testimony of his goodness and affection, that I even shed tears, which flowed from the purest gratitude; he accepted my acknowledgments with a becoming reluctance, and assured me nothing should ever destroy his regard for me, which he hoped in time would entirely help to separate me from those haunts, and those friendships, that would not fail of being my undoing.

I became now more circumspect in my conduct, and kept very regular hours, and found a greater relish for the society of my friend, who did and said every thing he could to engage me to put a confidence in him, and disclose my situation. Gratitude, that inherent principle of a worthy breast, kept me steady to my duty; nothing could ever rob me of that amiable incentive, which still directed my actions in a faint and concealed degree in my worst lapses; nay, this very principle engaged me the first opportunity I had to call upon Prig, who now kept chambers in New Inn, to repay my obligation to him. He recollected it next morning; so, in balancing accounts, I paid him thirty shillings, which were due to him, and was over-persuaded to go with him to Chelsea, upon a party of pleasure, of which he assured me only two other male friends would partake. We spent the evening there in high glee, and did not set out for London till near midnight, and were gaily discoursing along the first of the five fields, when we over-heard several blows given, accompanied with oaths and curses, and a voice which methought I was well acquainted with, calling out for help and assistance. Our two friends, immediately concluding it was somebody attacked by robbers, crying out, 'It will be our turn next, and so the devil take the hindmost!' ran away; but, encouraging Prig, I told

told him, I was resolved to see what was the matter; in which he seconded me, for want of courage was not one of his foibles. I was induced to this rashness by the sound of the voice, which again and again was repeated, and, how improbable soever it appeared, I could not for my soul conceive it to be other than that of my dear friend Diaper. I was armed with a large oak-stick, and Prig had a sword by his side, which not being skilled in the use of, he put into my hand, and took the cudgel in exchange. We were some time before we reached the spot whence the noise proceeded, which we no otherwise discovered, for it was dark as pitch, than by a challenge of, 'D— ye, who are you?'—'Friends,' 'what's the matter?' we replied; and, in answer, a pistol was snapped at us, which flashed in the pan without any explosion; by which light discovering three fellows, I lunged at the first with my sword, and heard a groan, after having with some difficulty recovered it, and perceived it was wet. Prig gave and received several blows, when suddenly our antagonists took to their heels and fled; we thought it to no purpose to pursue them, but enquired if any one was there who had been ill-used by the villains. Nobody answered; and, groping about, I stumbled over a man, who we made no doubt was murdered, and were going back to the town to get some help, if peradventure any signs of life remained; when a groan or two, and a struggle, as if from throttling, proceeded from the corpse: we then determined to bear him between us, as it was not above two fields off, rather than delay assistance till our return; accordingly we, in about half an hour, brought him to a public-house; but oh, good God! what were my griefs, when, upon bringing him into the light, we discovered it to be Mr. Diaper, my excellent friend, streams of blood running in plentiful currents down his face and bosom. Leaving him in the care of Prig and the landlord and landlady, I ran with all haste imaginable for a surgeon, and luckily found one at home; and, upon coming back he had recovered his senses, to my very great joy. He fixed his eyes upon us, and just reached out his hand to me, which I took and bathed with my tears,

but could not utter a syllable. On searching for his wounds, the surgeon found none dangerous, the great flux of blood proceeding from his head, which was cut in several places as with a hanger, but slantways; and several lacerations he had received on his shoulders, breast, and sides. We asked, if it would be improper to remove him so far as his own house; but the surgeon apprehending no danger in it, and he signifying his desire, having just recovered his voice, to be removed there, we procured a sedan from my Lord —'s, and brought him safe into the city, myself, Prig, and two or three men we had hired, serving as a guard. His wounds were dressed at Chelsea, and therefore, without any delay, we got him into a warm bed, which, with the motion he had just received by the chair, soon brought him to the perfect use of his faculties. It is impossible to describe his grateful returns for the succour we had afforded him, and the embraces he bestowed upon me in particular; for my part, I thought it the most happy and providential accident that ever befel me, for no manner of doubt could have been made, that these robbers intended to butcher him, being irritated by a stout resistance which he had made till overcome by numbers, having a great charge about him; it coming into his head that evening to call on a customer at Chelsea, where he had been induced to stay so late, after having received a large bill, by the pressing solicitations of his kind host. This affair could not be concealed from my master and his mother, who hurried up to town frightened out of their wits at the news of their son's disaster; but, when they understood how wonderfully Providence had interposed in his safety and deliverance, they were all admiration; they embraced me, and my master told me, this circumstance had so increased his value for me, that he loved me little less than his own son, whom I had so bravely and so like a true friend rescued from destruction. Their acknowledgments to Prig were unbounded, who was greatly delighted; which gave me more esteem for him than ever, at the service he had rendered this worthy family.

The next day we saw an account in the paper of this robbery, and that a

man was found dead in the field, who had received his mortal wound by the thrust of a sword; upon which my master went with Mr. Prig to see if they could make any discovery; but returned without any other satisfaction than that this must be the man whom I had run through the body. My friend had only lost five guineas and some silver out of his left breeches pocket, our seasonable interposing having saved the money he had received, amounting to near an hundred and fifty pounds. I was with him almost continually, and his friendship to me was so increased, that he was never happy when I was absent.

CHAP. XV.

DISCOURSE BETWEEN HIM AND YOUNG DIAPER—THEY ARE TRICKED BY GAMBLERS—HE BORROWS MONEY—IS SCURVILY USED BY SPECULIST—A DISCOVERY, WHICH SURPRIZES HIM.

AS soon as my friend was tolerably well, his father, willing to give him an opportunity for a little recreation, staid some time in town, and permitted us to take what innocent diversions we had an inclination to; amongst others, we frequently took excursions on foot, into the country, without determining upon any particular rout, sometimes rambling in one direction, over hedge and ditch, and sometimes in another, entertained with the profusion of sweets that nature had bestowed on the fields and meads, with such a liberal hand, and the variegated beauties of the season. It was in these walks that I unbosomed myself to this excellent youth, and gave him a detail of all my follies, from my first stepping aside from virtue to the present time. He helped me to make many useful reflections on the vanity and fatal consequences of such a rakish and abandoned course of life; 'But, my Joey,' says he, 'one day, you won't be surprised, when I acquaint you, that I knew most of these particulars long ago; but dissembled my knowledge of them, depending, that, one time or other, your good sense would get the upper hand of your foibles, which, if they had met with opposition

or upbraidings, would perhaps have only been strengthened by it. Packer was so great a villain, as to betray your intercourse with Nanny, very much to your disadvantage, without making any mention of himself; but only as a matter of his observation. I despised his malicious insinuations, for such I judged they were; but was concerned for your situation. As to other matters in your conduct, I have gathered them from your own behaviour, your shunning my company, the embarrassment you was generally under; but more particularly the company you kept easily let me into the manner of your spending your time, and the nature of your diversions: but tell me now sincerely, my friend, was not your generous temper shocked at the idea of being involved in a course of life that was absolutely contradictory to your own sober thinking, and put you to the necessity of making concealments, and acting under a cloud in every thing? I am amazed, for my part, when I reflect upon your difficulties and the breaches you must make in truth, in order to keep up appearances; which endeavour is a plain proof that you were sensible you was carrying on schemes directly opposite to the received opinions of mankind, and those decorums that the most profigate are willing to comply with for their own sakes, and to avoid publick censure and reproach.'—'Indeed, Sir,' I replied, 'you are making a very just judgment of my situation, and nothing could be more miserable; my depraved appetites bore down my reason, and a habit of pursuing false pleasure intoxicated me to such a degree, that it made a moment's reflection uneasy. Unhappy is that man, who hears about him a thorough conviction of what is regular and fit; and, at the same time, transgresses against his knowledge, and even the bent of his natural disposition! I perceived I was affronting myself in every thing I did, and yet so powerful was passion, and overbearing appetite, that I had it not in my power to stem the torrent of vice that flowed in on every side. Alas! my dear friend, you are not acquainted with the hell such a man carries about him, ever resolving to forsake his ways,

ways, and yet every moment more and more entangled. I believe I should have forsaken my follies very often upon the pain the various disasters and scrapes they brought me into occasioned; but there a kind of pride opposed me—"No," I cried, "if I return to virtue by such a change, I have no merit in it; I ought not to give her a triumph from the ills her enemy brings upon me, but for her own sake, and giving her the honour of making a conquest over my soul, by the force of her pure and undissembled charms, without the inducements of sorrow, pain, or ill-nature, I felt in transgressing her precepts." By this time we had entered the town, which broke off our discourse. We were going through Old Street, when a quarrel between three or four well-dressed men engaged our attention; one of them, in particular, seemed to look like a responsible tradesman, and had abundant gravity and seriousness in his countenance; who seemed to regard us with a great deal of curiosity, ever and anon casting his eyes at us with a kind of eager penetration. His antagonists soon left him, before we could gather the meaning of the dispute, and went into a public-house in the neighbourhood, whilst he addressed his discourse to us seemingly in a very great ferment. "Gentlemen," says he, "you look like men of honour—I know you, Mr. Diaper, and have a great friendship for your father—these villains, I can call them no better, have inveigled me into a game at cards, and have stripped me of seven or eight guineas; I am sure they could not win it fairly: I can't imagine what could rob me of my senses so much as to engage with them, and I can't prevail upon the man of the house to fetch a constable, otherwise I would see into the bottom of their roguery, and punish them for the good of other unwary people that may chance to fall in their way; there's a nest of them, I believe, that infest all parts of the town. I wish, gentlemen," says he, in a half whisper, "you would step in to them and engage them to stay till I return with an officer; here are a couple of guineas, please to take them, Sir, and whatever you lose more, in the mean time, to detain them, I

will return you again; the good of the publick I would buy at any price." It was impossible to refuse him this favour, he pressed us so closely, and we had a curiosity likewise to see the tricks of this sort of folks, of whom we heard every day such odd accounts: and, accordingly, begging him not to stay long, because our time was precious, we went into the house. We found them railing against our employer in the bitterest terms. One said, he was a presbyterian parson; "No, damn the preaching puppy," says another, "he is an oilman in Cheapside, and a devilish rich fellow."—"Let him be what he will," says a third, "he deserves to be punished for charging gentlemen with unfair practices, who are as good men as himself!" and then went on to tell us a long story of the games they had played; after which, they said, one and all, that they would go: "What signifies staying, Mr. Bishop," says one to another, "it is late in the evening now, without you will play a rubber or two at cribbage?"—"What do you say, gentlemen, shall we make four?" We assented, and it came to be our lot to be partners; we played three or four games, and won, at which they seemed to be wondrously vexed, and then fortune changed unperceivably, and we not only lost the good man's two guineas, but two more to them, which chagrined us so, that we set in earnest to take our revenge; but it was all the same, we lost a guinea and a half more; when one of them getting up, seemed to recollect a piece of business he had forgot, and said he could stay no longer, but would return again in half an hour; however, he did not come in an hour; and the old gentleman not returning, we grew impatient, and more so when, maugre all our intreaties, the rest brushed off one after another. The landlord then accosted us, and asked us, "Gentlemen, do you know what a set of people you have been conversing with?" We told him, "Yes," and the reason why we engaged with them; at which he could not forbear bursting into a loud laughter, and told us, that grave person was one of the gang; and, no doubt, had at once contrived this scheme to take us in. It is impossible to express our spleen at this news; we were

were almost ready to accuse one another, and fell upon the man of the house for not giving us an hint sooner. 'Lack-a-day, Sir,' says he, 'if they were to discover me in giving any such intelligence, I should be murdered; they are the closest and most impudent gang of villains in the world, and appear in all disguises.' We had no remedy, and went home full of displeasure, though we could not help smiling at the trick that had been played us. Nobody can guard too much against sudden prepossessions in a man's favour, as the world is at present situated, for such people make it their business to know every body, witness this fellow's pretences to acquaintance with my master, which was what most deceived us; the quarrel had only been a sham to draw some unwary person into their company, and the sight of us directed him to this expedient. We could not help telling Mr. Diaper, when we came home, of this adventure, at which he was highly diverted, and took occasion to caution us against the tricks of the town, which are every day put in practice.

I now quite lost my inclination to the life I had led, and seriously applied myself to business, seldom stirring out, except now and then to meet Speculif and Prig, with whom I still kept up a correspondence; but I was harassed incessantly with duns, my late extravagances having left nothing in the hands of Mr. Deacon, whom I had so disoblged also, by refraining from visiting him, that I had not the face to ask him to advance money, before it was due. My shoe-maker, taylor, nay, even my shoe-blacker, became importunate, so that I was forced to undergo the drudgery of promising, this time and that time, and t'other, to pay them, without a possibility of performing my engagements; which, as they thought I never wanted money, they interpreted much to my disadvantage. It would be full half a year, before I could receive any part of my stipend, and I did not care to expose my wants to my friend. What to do to release myself from these vexations I could not tell, and was forced to borrow sum after sum of Speculif and Prig, which they began to grow uneasy about: nay, at times, I borrowed of others of my acquaintance, so that

I was hardly able to shew my head. In this dilemma I called on Speculif, who I always thought had a peculiar value for me, and, knowing he did not want money, laid my trouble before him, and desired him to let me have as much as would satisfy my other creditors, upon giving him a draft upon Mr. Deacon, for my yearly allowance as fast as it became due; but, how was I astonished, when he broke out into this speech: 'Look ye, Mr. Thompson, I don't care to trust you any farther, and can't imagine what you do with your money; for my part, I have no more than is necessary for my own occasions, and can't supply you any longer, nor do I desire any more of your company: I have fallen under a great deal of censure already, by conversing with young fellows that are not at their own hands, and I have lost money by that scoundrel Prim, who is now gone clerk to the captain of an East Indiaman, and I believe will never have the honesty to repay me a farthing; you should apply to your relations, I think—' Here, interrupting him, I told him, I was sorry that I had put it into his power to make me these reproaches, though I was glad thereby I had discovered his temper; which would give me a greater surfeit of the ways he had introduced me to, and been a constant partaker of with me, than the most heightened eloquence that could be employed: I put him in mind of that universal benevolence and kindness he was always inculcating; though I was a fool to regard it or think it sincere, as, before now, I might have observed him contradict it in all his actions, had I not been totally blind: 'I find, Mr. Speculif,' I added, 'you can perceive the beauty of a right behaviour, when exercised towards yourself, but not when it is required of you, or puts you to any pains or expences; and am now thoroughly convinced of the usefulness and beautiful instruction conveyed in these words, by the son of Sirach, "If thou wouldst get a friend, prove him first, and be not hasty to credit him: for some man is a friend for his own occasion, and will not abide in the day of thy trouble. And there is a friend, who, being turned to en-

"mity

"mity and strife, will discover thy reproach. If thou be brought low, he will be against thee, and hide himself from thy face." Indeed, could I expect any other, when ours was a friendship like a conspiracy in vice, and leagues of pleasure, as Mr. Addison says? He was struck dumb with this just retaliation upon him, and I left him with all the marks of fury in his countenance. I must own I was shocked at the insolence of this man, and his usage of poor Prim, who, by the bye, I knew, owed him little or nothing, shewed him to me in his proper colours. I was resolved to avoid such companions for the future, and was returning home, deeply involved in self-accusation, when a tumultuous uproar, at the corner of a street I was to pass through, made a stop, and I discovered the occasion to be, that a woman had been detected in picking a pocket, and was put into the hands of the mob for due discipline: she was cleanly dressed, and betrayed tokens of the greatest fear and terror; but my eyes had no sooner fastened upon her, than I recollected the very features of the *quondam* Mrs. Tripsley, who had served me such a foul trick in my return from Vauxhall. As my resentment had long subsided, I regarded her as an object of compassion, and would have prevailed on the people to carry her before a magistrate; but the prosecutor could not be found, and therefore it was in vain to plead for mercy, and she was severely ducked in the horse-pond of a neighbouring inn, and then turned adrift in a most uncomfortable condition. I marked which way she went, and followed her for near half an hour, till the poor wretch got into the fields, with an intent to dry her cloaths, and thenhipped after her. She turned about, but no sooner discovered me, than she gave a shriek, and was making all possible haste to run from me: but I overtook her; and, telling her, I meant her no harm, she became tolerably calm; I told her, she might well fear the consequences of my seeing her; but, as I had just seen her punished for another crime, I would wave my resentment, if she would let me know where to get my cane again, which I very much valued. She wept and thanked me; but assured me it had been sold with my other

things by her male accomplices, she knew not where. I then laid before her her vile and wretched manner of life, and the consequences it would in the end produce, with which she seemed affected; and, giving her a small piece of money, was going away; but she begged me to stay a minute or two, for she had somewhat to impart to me that might be of service. "The villain, Sir, that passed for my husband, and robbed you that night I was in the coach with you, is dead; he was run through the body by some gentlemen who came up to the rescue of another he had attacked in a field near Chelsea."—"How!" says I, "is what you say true?"—"Yes, Sir," she replied, somewhat alarmed at my starting, "he was, I assure you: I was unhappily ruined by that man, who brought me, through a series of misfortunes and distress, to aid him in his wicked courses; he was at Vauxhall, during the whole time of our conversation there, and the coach I called was driven by a fellow of the gang, who plied for the purpose of assisting us in any such attempt as that I made on you. But what I want to inform you is this, Sir, that the gentleman, who was robbed at Chelsea, is a great linen-draper in the city, with whom you live at this time; for this knowledge I gathered by seeing you both at the shop-door together the night before the robbery, and I wanted then an opportunity to discover the design to you; for a design it was, and the fellows had their intelligence of his going to Chelsea, from a man who is lately become a partner in their rogueries, who lived as a journeyman with your master, and has the greatest inveteracy against you all three, for what reason I never could learn. Since yesterday morning, I have been quite abandoned to wretchedness, and the crime you saw me so roughly handled for, I was induced to commit through mere want of bread. Your generosity and goodness, Sir, I hope will make me a true convert; and, if Heaven is so gracious as to accept my repentance, I am resolved to work my fingers to the bones, rather than ever expose myself to such villainess and wickedness as I have too long been subject to and partaker of." Here she

she wept aloud, and moved my compassion so much, that I gave her half a guinea, which was the whole that I had about me, advising her to cherish these motions of returning goodness, and telling her, that if ever I saw her again, and was witness to a reformation and industrious honesty in her, I would be her friend.

I could not help adoring the justice of Providence, in making use of my arm to execute vengeance upon the villain who had so ill used me; and my indignation against Packer, who had received so many favours from the person he was thus endeavouring to murder and destroy, was excessive: I remembered he knew of the money that was owing us at Chelsea, and if I had gone for it, no doubt, the favour received by my friend was intended also to me. So many instances of the villainess and corruption of human nature made me quite melancholy, and I returned home in an astonishment and profound thoughtfulness, that was immediately taken notice of by my friend, to whom I imparted the occasion. He was pained affected with the discoveries I had made; and, as we did not know what farther mischiefs Packer, as he knew the secrets of the family, and the nature of our trade, might endeavour to do, we resolved to be very circumspect for the future in every thing we undertook, and to keep it a secret from my master, for fear of giving him any disturbance.

CHAP. XVI.

SPECULIST WAITS UPON MR. DIAPER, WHO REPROVES THOMPSON—HE CONFESSES HIS FOLLY—IS PARDONED—EXCELLENT BEHAVIOUR OF HIS MASTER—PERMITTED TO VISIT HIS FATHER AND MOTHER WITH HIS FRIEND—THEY SET OUT ON THEIR JOURNEY.

I Found it was now absolutely necessary for me to regain the confidence and esteem of Mr. Deacon, in order to get rid of my troublesome visitants, for which purpose I more frequently went to see him; and, as he was really a very sensible and understanding man, reaped a great deal of benefit from his

conversation, and had almost defaced the bad opinion he had conceived of me, when the malice or vanity of Speculist at once made a discovery of my untoward situation. He bore my late rejoinder to his discourse very hardly; and, fired with resentment at my consequent estrangement from him, (for what he had said, of not desiring my company, was only one of those airs, he gave himself with those acquaintances over whom he acquired a superiority) resolved to be revenged; and, therefore, this man of reason and philosophy, who was not quite unknown to my master, one day paid him a visit, at which he seemed very much surprized, as he had never conversed with him, not at all liking his character. He soon put him out of the uncertainty of his design, by acquainting him, he came out of pure compassion to Mr. Thompson, to let him know, that he was fearful he had taken some bad courses, and kept company with persons who would do him much disservice; and then gave him a detail of those little follies I had been guilty of, the necessities he knew I was driven to, and an account of the debt I had contracted with him; concluding, that he gave him the present trouble out of pure good-will to the young gentleman, not doubting but he would exert his authority and influence over me, to engage me to forsake such practices for the future. The good man was quite surprized at this account of me; and, as he had heard me mention Mr. Speculist, as an ingenious gentleman, and one I greatly respected, saw, through the appearance of friendship he put on, the rancour of his heart; and, without any emotion, gravely asked him, what it was I owed him. And, upon hearing it was only twelve pounds, counted him out the money, took his receipt, and begged the favour of him to depart the house; which he did with the utmost precipitancy and shame, which was the more increased by his meeting me full-butt at the bottom of the stair-case. He just moved his hat, and went away; leaving me in amaze at seeing him in our house, where he had never been before, and many conjectures about his business there.

The next morning, my friend and myself were both sent for into my master's

her's chamber; who, after shutting the door, accosted us in the following manner. 'My dear children, for I can't prevail upon myself to consider either of you in any other light, I have observed, with an unmeasurable satisfaction, your strict union ever since you have been together; your tempers, your actions, and the regard you have paid to me and my wife, and your studying my welfare with so much care, in the management of my business, has charmed me, and my mind has made me happy in the contemplation of your virtues.—You, Mr. Thompson, particularly, because bound only to me by the weak tie of obedience: I hope I have given you convincing proofs, by my behaviour to you, that I regard your fidelity and attachment in the tenderest manner. What will you, then, what can I say to a man who has endeavoured to persuade me with a fond officiousness to bear ungrateful tidings, that you have followed courses that I must highly disapprove; have neglected my concerns—which you, son, have connived at—have frequented the company of lewd women, and wild young fellows, whose only aim and study is the gratification of their debauched imaginations and depraved passions? I must own, I treated him with the contempt he deserved, as I could see, through his mask of friendship and concern, an inveteracy which all the shew of impartial representation could not hide; nor had I believed any thing against you, if he had not at the same time convinced me of something which grieves me greatly; he says you have been extravagant, and are in debt, and, as a proof of it, declared you was indebted to him. I gave him no encouragement to pursue his animadversions, but have paid him the money for you; see, there is his receipt, and by that you will know the author of what I tell you. Now, I must own, if you are driven to such necessities, it would almost lead me to think all the rest of his charge was true; for I am sensible your father supplies you with every thing necessary, and more pocket-money than I should care to trust a youth with. I am not an-

gry, child, and only beg you to let me know your embarrassments, that you may be relieved, and not tempted to do any thing unbecoming a youth I so greatly esteem, and the son of a worthy and dear friend: I am sensible what temptations surround us on every side, at your age, and make all the allowances for human frailty that I possibly can.'—Here he paused, whilst the tears ran down my cheeks, and I was for some time incapable of answering: at length, recovering myself, I thanked him for all his kindnesses and constant goodness to me, and told him, I should be inexcusable not to make a sincere confession of all my follies, which I hoped were not of so heinous a nature as not to be pardoned upon a sincere amendment, as he had expressed such a regard for my welfare, and it was the only means left me to return to my former innocence and tranquillity. I then gave him a short detail of all my errors and slips of youth, not without mingling my tale with conscious blushes and motions of shame and regret, which often interrupted my discourse. 'And now, dear Sir,' I cried, falling on my knees, and kissing his hand, with a fervent action of affection, 'I have given you an account of the crimes I have been guilty of, let me intreat you not to hate me, but let me plead with you for forgiveness and compassion: I hope it is not too late to recover my mind from those vices which I have now a thorough detestation of; I have for some time forsaken these resorts of wickedness, and feel the highest pleasure on the approaches I make again to that peace and happiness I have for so long a time lost. Deprive me not of the society of my dear friend, and the comfort I have ever received in your good opinion; I will be doubly diligent the remainder of my time, to make you amends for my repeated neglects; your goodness gives me a thousand nameless compunctions; may Heaven enable me to deserve it the remainder of my life!' I could say no more, and a flood of moving sorrow put a period to my discourse. My friend mingled his concern with mine, and said every thing that could disarm any resentment that might arise

in his father's breast: he stood for some time thoughtful, at length he softened, and a tear of mercy stole down his venerable face, and, raising me up, he embraced me with eager pressures; then took his son into his arms, and kindly told us he forgave me every thing. Words cannot describe the gratitude that arose in my breast, and quite overcame me; I made no answer, but embraced his knees; he saw my condition, and left us to come to ourselves. How much relieved I was after the disclosure of my crimes and the pardon I received, no one can tell; had the weight of a mountain oppressed me, it's removal could not have given me more real ease. My friend pressed me to his bosom, and gave me the highest congratulations; I returned his caresses, and was ready to devour him with my acknowledgments for his goodness. A few minutes afterwards my master returned. 'Think yourself happy, Mr. Thompson,' says he, 'that you have been obliged to make this confession, and that you are relieved from the gloom that was occasioned by the concealment of your condition; I congratulated myself on seeing your return to virtue, almost as soon as I knew of your defection: let me intreat you to apply for pardon to the Author of our being, whom you have highly offended by ungratefully misemploying those excellent talents and abilities he has bestowed upon you; let him have all the praise for this happy turn of your affairs; at the throne of his mercy be constant in your petitions, for his grace and favour to support you in the resolutions you have taken to act agreeable to his laws, his pure injunctions; resume your good-humour and your endeavours to please and oblige every body you are concerned with, and, by a thorough adherence to religion and virtue, you will be happy yourself, and bless all your friends. Let me have an account of all your debts, which I will instantly discharge; and, rather than afflict your good father with the knowledge of what is past, I will wait till you are in a capacity to pay me again. It is necessary to relieve you from such a burden to a generous mind,

that you may have nothing left to impede you in your revived disposition to happiness; and, as you may have contracted some acquaintance you cannot handsomely part from abruptly, I have been thinking to indulge you with the liberty of taking a journey into Yorkshire, for a month or two, to see your parents; and, as my wife is able to bear the town better than she has been for some time past, my son, if he pleases, shall accompany you; your father has often pressed me to let him come down to see him, and he shall take this opportunity—therefore, finish what business you have in hand, gentlemen; you are welcome to my horses, and may set out when you will—your father and mother long to see you; and it is time to gratify their desire, after an absence of four years and an half: if I want you in town sooner than I have mentioned, I'll write you word; when you come back you will be a stranger to the people you would avoid, and may then keep them at a proper distance. Here's a small token of my respect, which you will accept of for the expenses of your journey.' In so saying, he clapped a paper into each of our hands, containing twenty guineas, and left me in ecstasy of admiration and acknowledgment for his goodness and condescension. My friend was transported with the thoughts of our going together; and, as for my part, I had never experienced so much delight before. In about a week after, having settled our books, and left all affairs ready to my master's hands, we set out on our journey, taking leave of him and my mistress, who overwhelmed me, as well as her son, with the kindest expressions of regard.

C H A P. XVII.

DIGRESSION ON THE BEAUTIES OF THE COUNTRY—THEY OVER-TAKE COMPANY, TO WHOM THEY ARE KNOWN—ARE ENTERTAINED AT MR. BELLAIR'S—DIAPER FALLS IN LOVE WITH MISS SUSANNA BELLAIR—HE RELIEVES HER FROM A GREAT DANGER—HIS PASSION APPROVED

PROVED BY HER BROTHER—
MEETS WITH A RETURN FROM
HER — THEY PURSUE THEIR
JOURNEY.

HOW agreeable is a recess from the town to a man who is constantly engaged in the hurry and noise of business! it exhilarates and refreshes the mind, and gives the spirits a new flow, that has a very sanative effect upon the body; emerging from noise, uproar, and confusion, was like getting rid of a weight that bore us down with hard oppression; the soul seemed now to enjoy it's mansion, and, roving gaily from one object to another, gratified it's unbounded curiosity, and it's enlarged vehicle was better qualified to entertain the noble guest.

What a profusion of embellishments has the Sublime Author of nature bestowed on the visible creation at this season of the year! How is the eye delighted with gaudy blended tincts of green, and azure, and gold! the ears ravished with the melody that is poured forth from the harmonious throats of the feathered inhabitants of every bush and spray, and whole nature seeming in a state of exultation to *hymn* the *Great Creator*! The loaded branches bend beneath the weight of the various products of the season; the teeming earth sends forth, from it's prolifick womb, the shining yellow grain, with rich increase; the neighing steed frisks over the plain; the tender lambkin gambols through the lawn; and the sturdy peasant sees his riches flowing in on every side. Nothing can excite the mind to a greater veneration of the Great, First Cause of all things, than to survey all the wondrous, delightful objects, that every where around bedeck the rural scene; and the grateful mind, involuntarily, breaks out into raptures of praise and thanksgiving.

The two first days of our journey were uninterrupted by any accident; we enjoyed each other's company with a satisfaction that it is impossible truly to express; our conversation, which rolled on various useful subjects, beguiled the way; and, as we had time enough before us, we made short and easy stages, gratifying our curiosity with every thing that was worth viewing, and often making excursions from

the direct road, to indulge ourselves with a pleasant country, and an agreeable prospect. Mr. Diaper, who had not been such a journey for many years, was quite captivated with the new pleasures we tasted; and we kept up a cheerfulness and good-humour, which was but bare gratitude for the enjoyments we received.

About noon on the third day of our peregrination, we overtook a chaise and pair, followed by a number of domesticks, in a livery that methought I had somewhere particularly noticed before; but when we had passed, and I just turned my head back to look at the persons in the vehicle, how agreeably pleased I was to discover the same amiable gentleman and lady whose conversation had captivated me so much at Vauxhall! They knew me also, at once, and both seemed transported at the lucky meeting: after the first civilities had passed between us, I was gently chid for not having performed my promise of calling to see them, which I excused in as handsome a manner as I could. Then they enquired our route, which happened to be through that part of the country they were proceeding to, to their country-house, where they insisted that we should accompany them, and spend a day or two, which we could by no means refuse. We arrived there the same evening, and were introduced to a genteel and commodious house, which, for situation and accommodations, was one of the prettiest and completest villas that ever I saw in my life. My companion, as well as myself, was charmed with our reception, which was as cordial and respectful as could be given to the most valuable friends. The good sense and œconomy of the master and mistress were visible in the contented and easy looks of the servants, and the excellent management and order that appeared in the minutest things: plenty without waste, or profusion, was seen at the table; and every thing wore an air of the most refined elegance. They were received, at their entrance, by a young lady, sister to the gentleman, who was a representation of Flora; an innocent sweetness shone in her countenance, and the ruddy morn was not arrayed with more inspiring blooming graces: she also accosted us with a

H 2 courteous

courteous and inviting look, that you could not help feeling to the bottom of the heart. At supper we were entertained with a repast that spoke the noble temper of our host; and a conversation ensued, in which every one bore such a share as gave a mutual good opinion of each other. We did not retire to bed till pretty late, and were conducted to a very grand apartment, where we were taken up some time in our admiration of our new acquaintance. My friend was curious to know how I came to be known to Mr. Bellair and his spouse, for that was his name, in which I gratified him; he then ran out in excessive encomiums on the beauties and perfections of Miss Sukey, by which I could plainly perceive his very soul began to be infected with her charms; which discovery not a little pleased me, as I had before observed an insensibility to the fair-sex in him that very much surprised me: the whole night he tossed and tumbled about, and every now and then a sigh escaped him, as by stealth; upon which, the next morning, I scolded him very severely. 'What signifies denying any thing to you, Joe?' says he, very seriously; 'I must confess that little Cherubim has made me uncommonly uneasy; and I would give the world, if I had it, for a companion for life, of such a distinguished merit as I observed in that dear creature.' He uttered these words in such a tone and manner that I could not help repeating my mirth at his expence; at which he grew a little angry, and forced me to desist: after which we commenced a very earnest discourse about the family, and agreed to make all the observations we could of the circumstances and disposition of the young lady, without whom he protested he could not think of living. Our consultations were finished by a servant's entering with a message that breakfast was ready; and we, immediately obeying the summons, found Mr. Bellair and the two ladies, who were very merry at our over-sleeping ourselves in such a lovely morning; which, Miss observed, was being a little ungrateful for the pleasure it bestowed upon us. Breakfast over, a walk was proposed in the garden, which was a very extensive one; and at the farther ex-

tremity of it was a very fine fishpond, with an alcove for the anglers to repose themselves, and a bank of green turf all round it. 'This diversion, you must know, gentlemen,' says Mr. Bellair, 'is a very favourite one with me, and my wife and sister, as we can pursue it, and yet indulge our contemplations, and impart them to each other: but I assure you that Miss is the best sportsman by far, and not a present inhabitant of the scaly fry but has been, one time or other, upon her hook; though, like the method of the generality of ladies in treating those lovers, who only serve to make up the number of their conquests, after trifling with them some time, she gives them their liberty again.'—'If Miss, Sir,' says my friend, 'were to torture her lovers in that manner, I apprehend it would never be in her power to restore the blessings you mention again to them, and they would be too fond of their slavery to desire it.' At this she blushed; and, to turn off the discourse, proposed sending for the fishing-rods, to try our skill. We had all of us some sport, but my friend, who was so fixed on the actions of the young lady, and so attentive to the indulgence of his infant passion, that he did not catch one; upon which she merrily told him, she would take care to provide a dinner for them both. The words were scarce out of her mouth, when, leaning too forward, the edge of the bank gave way under her, and she fell at once into the water, which was pretty deep. We were all terribly frightened; but, as to Mr. Diaper, he gave a great cry, and immediately plunged into the pond, and brought her out in his arms, all wet, and faint with terror. The time was so short, that she preserved her senses; however, it put an end to our diversion, and we attended her into the house, where she was undressed, and put to bed. Her brother and sister were so struck with this action of my friend's, that they were never tired with acknowledging it; and, as to him, he exulted to himself in the instance he had given of his regard, and betrayed his concern, by enquiring of her health, every minute, in a manner almost troublesome. He was equipped in a suit of Mr. Bellair's,
till

till his own were dry; and that gentleman, clapping him on the shoulder, told him, merrily, he was fearful that the water, instead of cooling him, had inflamed him so, that it would not be easily extinguishable.—‘What say you, Mr. Thompson? Your friend won’t be much hurt by a fine woman and three thousand pounds; and I’ll promise him my consent, I assure him.’ Mr. Diaper bowed, and was so confused at this frank discovery and good-nature, that he had nothing wherewith to reply. Dinner was served up, at which the young lady, now quite well, attended; but I could perceive such a confusion, whenever her eyes met those of her preserver, to whom she expressed a high sense of her obligation, that I made no question but she was as sensible as himself, and gave myself a great pleasure in the reflection. We stayed in this happy mansion a full week, during which Mr. Diaper made a great progress in his amour, and Miss Sukey seemed quite affected with his passion; they were ever together, and Mr. Bellair, being made sensible, by me, of his condition and expectations, was heartily disposed to give him all the liberty with his mistress that was possible. We could hardly separate ourselves from the family; and, I believe, Diaper would have been contented, if I had gone the remainder of the journey alone, if shame had permitted him; we parted, however, promising to spend a week at our return; and the parting of the lovers was so tender, that Miss could not leave her chamber to see us mount, her discomposure was so great.

Never was man so transformed as was the young gentleman; he was constantly musing; had lost his vivacity; would heave now and then an involuntary sigh; and it was seldom I could get a word from him in the whole day’s ride, except I put him upon talking of his mistress; and then what raptures would break forth! How many vows and protestations of eternal constancy and truth! He let me into the whole of his courtship, and I found, to my extreme delight, that he had reason really to esteem himself very happy; and therefore, after canvassing the matter between us, it was resolved he should ask his father’s consent to the

match, soon after our return. We put up at night at a very good inn, which was so full of guests, that we could get no other place to sit in, all the rooms being taken up, but the kitchen. As my friend did not chuse to mix in any promiscuous company, and there was not another house of a long way, we were contented, and ordered a fowl to be laid to the fire, for our supper, which was immediately complied with.

C H A P. XVIII.

STORY OF THE INCHANTED BRIDLE—MIDNIGHT ADVENTURES IN THE INN—DISCOURSE BETWEEN DR. TALISMAN, PARSON ZEALOT, AND GAGE, THE EXCISEMAN—FATAL CONSEQUENCES OF THEIR DISPUTE—THEY ARRIVE AT MR. THOMPSON’S—JOY AT THEIR ARRIVAL.

THE company in the kitchen, principally composed of the servants of the guests who had put up in the inn, withdrew from the fire, in respect to our appearance; so that we were not at all incommoded at our supper, but rather entertained with the different characters we could overhear them give their several masters and mistresses, with whom, as usual with the party-coloured gentry, they made very free. We ordered our beds to be made ready, whilst we drank a glass or two after our meal; and were just adjourning to our chamber, when a young fellow broke into the kitchen, in the greatest hurry and confusion imaginable; his hair erected on his head, like the quills of a porcupine; his body full of convulsive motions; his face pale and distorted; his eyes fixed in their sockets; and all the marks of dreadful fright and amaze, which robbed him of utterance; and, just at he advanced up to the fire, he gave a deep groan, and fell down in a swoon: every body was surprized, and ran to help him, plentifully besprinkling his face with water, which, in a little time, brought him to himself. He stared wildly about him, for some time; and cried, in a hollow tone of voice, ‘Is he gone? Is he gone?’ and then getting up, took a turn or two round the

the kitchen, and hallooed out again, 'Avoid, Satan! Oh God! save me! save me! Here he is! There he is!' and so went on, that every body concluded him distracted; and the hostess coming in, followed by her husband, ordered them to lay hands on him, for fear he should do any mischief. This they did accordingly; and, after they had got him down, he became somewhat calmer, whilst the tears in abundance trickled down his cheeks, followed by oft repeated sighs and groans. 'Alack!' says the landlady, 'I knew some bad luck would happen in our family, by my dream last night; and, to be sure, a great calf came bolt into the bar-room, this morning, and frightened me out of my wits! Well, poor fellow, that old jade, Jenny Barnes, has certainly bewitched him! Good God! it's a shame such devils should be suffered to live in the parish.'—'Hold your tongue, you foolish b—h,' says her husband, 'you are always canting some d—d nonsense or other; more likely some of your Methodist tricks have been put into his head—hold up your head, Jack; what's the matter?' The fellow was going to reply, when, moving himself in his chair, he kicked the bit of a bridle with one of his heels, which hung round his neck, and reached the pavement, which made a kind of a clink, and threw him into the same extasies and distortions again, continually roaring, 'There he is! Don't you hear his chain? Oh, Lord, deliver me!—Pray, dear master, send for the parson, I have seen the devil!'—'The devil you have,' says his master; 'what business had he in my stables?'—'No, no,' replies the man, all in a foam, 'I saw him at Black Jack's barn! there,' turning himself about, 'don't you hear him now? He's here! he's here!' and swooned away again: at this the landlord looked about him, and, spying the bridle, burst into an immoderate fit of laughing: 'O ho,' says he, 'I have discovered the whole; wake, you silly son of a b—h; don't you see that here's no chain here, nor any thing like it. It's only the bit that makes this ratling;' and so gave him a douse in the chops, which recalled him once more to himself: then turning to the company, told them,

that a negro, that once lived with him, in quality of an hostler, had hanged himself in a barn, at the back of the house, and that ever since he had haunted that barn, and had been seen by several people, dragging a huge chain after him, which he always did at twelve o'clock at night; 'And this fellow,' continues he, 'has, no doubt, seen him, or heard him; and, forgetting he had the bridle at his heels, by the force of imagination, thought he had pursued him quite into the house, I suppose; and so there's your cock and a bull story of a dream, and a calf, and Jenny Barnes—out, Madam; come, get up, and go to your business.' The hostler now, thoroughly convinced of his mistake, endeavoured to get up, but was so weakened, that they were forced to convey him to bed, leaving us in high mirth at such an instance of vulgar prepossession, and the strength of fancy. We soon after were conducted to our repose, which this accident had kept us from an hour or two longer than we intended. Our room opened into a long gallery, which was the means of communication to a whole tier of apartments; at the upper end was the conveniency of a privy for the use of the whole floor, and, by a very imprudent want of caution, the doors of the rooms were not furnished with locks, but only depended on the security of latches. We had just began to dose, when we heard the latch of our apartment gently lifted up, and somebody softly stealing to our bed-side, who, as he advanced, cried, 'Egod, Tom, I was a long time before I could find my way back again from that d—d vault; I think they ought to have a lamp burning in the gallery, for it is cursed dark; what are ye asleep already?' We made no answer, and he went on: 'I have been thinking of our expedition to-morrow; but, by G—d, I don't think it safe to attempt the coach or the chariot, for they are too strongly guarded! now, there's the two young prigs, that supped in the kitchen, seem to be flush of money, and we had better set out betimes and secure them, for they go towards York, as the landlord informed me, and he believes will be a good booty: d—n me, why don't you answer? Ha! you

'you drank so damned hard last night, that you are as drowsy as the devil.' By this time he was pulling up the bed-cloaths, when I stirred, and, as if between sleep and waking, cried out, 'Be quiet—what—what d'ye want?' The mistake was soon perceived, and a quick retreat made from the bed and out of the door; upon which I gave a jog to my friend, and being too much concerned in the late speech to be easy without some farther discovery, I slipped out of bed, and tripped softly after the person who had made it, whom I soon traced to the next door but one to ours; and finding him gone in, and the door shut, applied my ear to the crevice, and heard him say, 'Tom, are you there?'—'Aye,' says Tom, 'where have you been!'—'Why, d—n me, I mistook the room, and have been talking about our route to-morrow, thinking it was to you.'—'Aye, d—n me,' replies the other, 'it is like one of your blundering tricks: what room was you in?'—'Two rooms higher,' says he. 'Why that's where the two young gentlemen lie that supped in the kitchen.'—'Is it, by G—d?' 'Why, I hope they were asleep, however, for I was proposing to nail them to-morrow, imagining I had been talking to you; so I believe we had better decamp, before they are stirring, for fear of the worst.' As soon as I heard this, I left them to their farther consultations, and turned to go back; but had scarce groped my way three or four paces, when I was accosted with two arms round me, and a whisper of, 'Lord, William, how long you have been! I am almost starved,' which was followed by half a dozen kisses, repeated so quick, that I had not time to disengage myself. I soon perceived it was one of the softer sex who had made this mistake, and was going to undeceive her, when from a hand unseen, she received a violent blow over the side of the head, as I thought, which made the whole gallery ring, and down she fell, uttering a deep groan. As I apprehended a salute of the same sort, I put myself upon my guard, but could hear a pair of naked feet padding away as fast as possible; so I retired with great expedition to my own door, which I soon gained, and entered the chamber. I perceived my-

self right by hearing my friend's voice, who enquired, what made me stay so long: and I was going to give him an account of my adventures, when I was jostled against by somewhat that was endeavouring to pass me, which I assumed courage enough to seize hold of, at the same time enquiring, 'Who's this?' I received no answer, but violent struggles to get away from me; upon which I called out lustily, 'Houfe! Houfe!' and stamped as hard as I could at the same time with my foot. 'What are you doing,' says Mr. Diaper; 'what's the matter?'—'Matter,' says I, 'why I believe some infernal spirits play their gambols here to-night; however, I believe I have got hold of somewhat that's flesh and blood here.'—'Hold it fast,' then, says he, 'and I'll secure the door till we know who disturbs us thus: so saying, he jumped out of bed, when my prize, trembling, begged me to let him go, for he had mistaken our room for his own. 'Who are you?' says I.—'Lord, master, I am the tapster that you saw last night, who waited upon you. I ask you ten thousand pardons for this offence, and the disturbance I have occasioned you.'—'Very well, friend,' says I, 'I forgive you; but, pray, was it you that knocked down somebody in the gallery just now?'—'Sir, you seem to be a good-natured gentleman, and I'll tell you the truth: I was going to meet our cook Peggy by appointment, you may be sure, and found her fast-locked in the arms of another man, which provoked me to strike her; but I hope I have done her no hurt; for I perceive, by what you have said, Sir, that she must have mistaken you for me.'—'Why, was not you a villain to give her such a severe blow? For my part, I believe you have killed her,' says I.—'God forbid, Sir! but you know jealousy will drive one to any thing; and the blow was intended for you, Sir, I must own.' By this time a light appeared, carried by our paunch-gutted rogue of a landlord, who had been alarmed by the noise I made; upon which I let the fellow go, who ran away with all the expedition imaginable; and, looking out, perceived old Tun-belly, with great circumspection, directing his steps towards our part of the

the gallery; but the light dazzling his eyes, he stumbled over the poor girl, who still lay senseless on the ground, and came down like a weighty ruin, the candle springing from him almost as far as the place I stood in, and left us once more in darkness. His fright was so extreme, that I could hear the teeth chatter in his head, whilst he pronounced, in a mumbling accent, 'Lord have mercy upon me! Oh, spare me! spare me!' Upon which a thought entered my head, which I communicated to my friend, and we directly approached him, and seizing hold of both his ears, which we wrung very hard, in a counterfeited, hollow tone, I repeated—'Barbara, celarent, darii, ferio, baralipson—I have been barbarous enough; God knows! and fear you truly.'—'O spare me! spare me!' he replies. Upon which I repeated as much unintelligible jargon as I could recollect, which absolutely finished his prepossession that we were evil spirits; and we could discern, to the entire offence of our smelling faculty, that his fear operated in the strongest manner upon him. The girl, during this, having recovered herself, and hearing her master's tremendous voice, had, we could perceive, made shift to crawl away; so that the whole coast was clear for us; the reverberated snoarings in the rooms on every side convincing us also, that every passenger had yielded to the leaden sway of Morpheus. Then, affecting an unnatural voice, I tweaked him still harder, and told him in his ear, that, if he did not send the two highwaymen away directly, I would tear him to pieces, and scatter his limbs in the air. 'You set them,' continued I, 'to pillage the two gentlemen who supped in the kitchen; but, if the scheme is pursued, you will be betrayed and hanged on your own sign-post; so think well of what I tell you; and, d'ye hear, for the future, don't sell cyder for white wine.' As soon as he heard this he sunk down, and we perceived he was terrified so much, that he was bereft of his senses; in which condition we left him to come to himself, and went directly to bed, the morning-dawn beginning to peep abroad, hugely delighted with our manner of revenge, and the pometical circumstances that were likely to attend it. It was ten o'clock

before we arose, when we directly adjourned to the kitchen, where Mrs. Hostess was haranguing three gentlemen, we found, on the subject of the last night's adventures. 'Here,' says she, 'have been sad doings! Well, for my part, I shall never be able to go to bed in the house again! Poor Jack saw the negro last night, and Peggy saw such an apparition, to be sure, that she is not able to rise after it! But this is nothing to my poor husband; he heard a knocking and calling in one of the rooms in the long gallery, as he thought, which, to be sure, was a device of the Devil to draw him that way; and there he was set upon by two monsters, vomiting out fire, and with eyes like burning coals, who have pinched him black and blue, and fixed their claws in him, and left him in a fit, which, for aught I know, would have killed him, had I not gone to see what was become of him; and, surely, he raves and talks such strange stuff, that I fear me he has quite lost his senses; and he sent for two gentlemen, who dined in number four, and, thought I was turned out of the room, I heard as much as to say, that he thought the house was too dangerous for them to stay in, and, as they were friends, he advised them to be gone; for he said a great deal about God and Religion to them, and they mounted directly, and are gone. I believe, for my part, he might have sent them to some bishop; for I can't get a word out of him, and, to be sure, we must take some care to lay the spirits, or else our house will be ruined. I wish, Dr. Zealot, you would go up and talk to him, for I left him quite mad and distracted; mayhap you can send them packing to the Red Sea for us!' The gentlemen to whom the directed this discourse were, Mr. Curate, of the village adjacent, a surgeon of the same place, and the exciseman of that district; and, by hearing them speak to each other by name, we soon learned that the parson's name was Zealot, the surgeon's Talisman; and the exciseman's Gage. The parson, who was a little petulant animal, screwing up his mouth, and elevating his wrinkled brows, replied, with an air of uncommon gravity, that, peradventure, he should go to see him; 'Though,'

‘ Though,’ added he, ‘ he is so sinful a wretch, never having received the Communion since I served this cure, that I can scarce excuse myself for such a prostitution of my sacred character: however, what the church can do, Madam, in regard to you, shall be done; and, were he haunted by Legion himself, I’d ferret him out of your quarters, I warrant you. The powers granted to our order are extensive enough to subject Satan, and all his united imps, to our undoubted sway over the realms of darkness.’ No sooner was this grave speech uttered, than Talisman, with a malicious and contemptuous grin, seized him by one of the buttons of his waistcoat, and broke out thus, accompanying his reply with repeated tugs at his button, the parson one while hearkening to him, and ever and anon his eye bent upon that part where he was fearful the doctor would make a dislocation to his prejudice—‘ Sir, Sir, your pretensions are all farce and nonsense; the powers given to the apostles to cast out devils have long since ceased in their successors; they are proof, Sir, against all your exorcisms; the knowledge of your function does not arrive to such a pitch now a-days, I’ll assure you, as to attempt things of that nature.—If, Madam, your house is haunted, or your husband bewitched, I’ll undertake to free him of his enchantment, which is not to be done in the old road that has been long beaten to no purpose by the priests. No, no! I shall prescribe him somewhat to hang about his neck, a preparation of *electrum minerale*, by which the great Van Helmont dissolved so many forceries; adding thereto the fume of Solomon and Eleazor trees; nay, Paracelsus is pretty clear, that, if an haunted or possessed person were only to urinate through a birch broom, gathered in the morning dew, and bound up when Sol just descends below the horizon, it would be effectual; but I have other means to free your house, and will undertake your cure immediately: as to what these gentlemen talk of laying spirits, they—’ Here, all in a rage, he was interrupted by Zealot, who roared out, in a violent manner, that he was an empty pretender, and that all that he

had mentioned was mere exploded chimera. ‘ What are your Paracelsus and Van Helmont now, whose whole works may be bought for three halfpence by the pound? I thought Mr. Talisman had read better authors, and to better purpose: sure, none but himself could peruse such rubbish. I warrant you, you are superstitious enough to believe in the philosopher’s stone too, and, I dare engage, never looked into Sir Isaac’s *Principia* in your life, though he may justly be called *Princeps Philosophorum*.—’ *Princeps Philosophorum*, doctor!’ replies Talisman, all in an heat; ‘ *Princeps Rogorum*, you mean. I tell you, Newton was a plagiarist, and borrowed every thing valuable from Old Daddy Flamstead, and made no little use of those very great men you have the impudence to bespatter so.’ Highly diverted at this ludicrous scene of absurdities, I was just going to interfere with a word of encouragement on the parson’s side, who began to be out of breath, in order to keep matters even; when I was prevented by Gage, who banging the end of his cane against the pavement, after an hearty draught of ale, cried, that he was sure neither of them knew any thing about what they were talking of; and, as to calling people names, it was no argument, he said: for his part, he never heard any thing bad of Sir Isaac Newton, and respected his memory for having proved the world to be like an egg; ‘ Though, by G—d,’ continues he, ‘ if it is, it is an addled one! witness the two great men that are now disputing about nothing; for, d—n me, if I believe there is either devil or apparition in the world, and I am sure it is only priestcraft and imagination.’ This florid and witty speech was succeeded by an horse-laugh of some moments, in the conclusion of which a mischievous animal, commonly ycleped a cat, who sat upon the dresser at the back of our orator, having perceived the airy motion of the ribband that hung to the tail of his wig, which was vibrated to and fro, according to the different inflexions of his oration, suddenly jumped from her watchful station, and at one spring dexterously deprived his pate of its artificial covering, and at the same time imprinted three or four sanguine marks in the

back of his neck with her talons; he clapped his hand behind him at the first motion she made, and feeling somewhat shaggy, whilst at the same time the landlady gave a great shriek at the danger her guest was in, with a remarkable alteration of countenance, he ran out of the kitchen, muttering some exclamations by the way, which every one judged were the result of a fright; and truly frightened he was, for, whether his late discourse, or the present character of the house, had increased his natural prepossessions or no, he never stopped nor staid till he got to the village, whence a messenger soon arrived for Mr. Talisman to bleed him, which terminated the most learned dispute between him and the parson—

* *Parturiunt montes, nascetur ridiculus mus!*

We now went to breakfast; which finished, and having understood by our hostess's former discourse, that the two rogues had probably been frightened from their design, we mounted, and set forward on our journey, full of reflections upon the odd humours, and habitual villainy, of the common sort of people; the unaccountable and unconnected discourse we had heard; and the success that we had had, in terrifying a parcel of credulous fools, and, through their means, of spreading unheard-of wonders through all parts of the country, where the devil presides under so many various fantastick forms.

The remainder of our journey produced nothing remarkable; my friend's thoughts were generally employed in contemplations of his future happiness, in the proposed possession of the charming Miss Bellair; and I here first observed the prodigious alterations love produces in an amorous mind: such a person shall be totally absent to every other concern but that of his affection; the object of which, perpetually swimming before his fancy, renders every thing else distasteful and absurd; so forceably does his imagination work, that, by a constant anticipation of what he wishes for, he enjoys every minute, in idea, the happy occurrences of years to come; he converses with the mistress of his fancy; and so strong is the enchantment, that he accuses his

friend for want of respect, if he impertinently breaks in upon his meditations: whenever I did so upon Mr. Diaper's, it was censured in so peevishly fretful a strain, that I had only one remedy to regain his smiles; which was, by making myself a kind of companion in his imaginary transports, and supposing myself present at some future incident, big with bliss and rapture, which never failed answering my end.

As soon as I discovered the native seats of peace and innocence, which I had been so long absent from, my joy broke forth in a thousand tumultuous expressions of that satisfaction which so visibly agitated my countenance: my friend took his share in my pleasures; one of the greatest of which was the thought of the joy I should give my father and mother, by seeing us; and, to increase that joy, we had forborne to write an account of the precise time we intended to set out at for York-shire, so that our arrival would be quite unexpected; and therefore we left our horses at a farmer's, about a mile from my father's, where I was recognized with great joy, and set out on foot for his house. We arrived just as the family were sitting down to dinner: Mr. Diaper, who entered first, and whose face my father and mother did not easily recollect, immediately presented me to my mother, who, the minute I had fixed my eyes upon her, only cried out, 'Dear Joe!' and was quite overcome with the surprize. I took her in my arms, and, begging pardon for my rashness, our interchange of caresses was too tender and delicate to be described. My father joined us, and, blessing us both, was every moment straining us in his embraces; the servants wept for joy; the whole house echoed forth our mutual congratulations; the neighbourhood caught the enlivening infection; and crouds of visitants welcomed us into the country. Mr. Solfa, particularly distinguishing himself, set the bells to ringing; and my dear parents, willing to make it a kind of jubilee, opened their house to all the parish; and there appeared no end to the endearments we experienced on every side.

The next morning after our arrival, Mr. Sharpley and Mr. Archer, who
were

were both acquainted the evening before with my return, visited us; and the sight of them revived all the love I still continued to bear to their sons.

C H A P. XIX.

HE GIVES HIS FATHER AN ACCOUNT OF HIS MASTER'S GOODNESS—IS PARDONED HIS LATE FOLLIES—RECEIVES A PRESENT FROM HIS MOTHER—THE AUTHOR'S PERSON DESCRIBED—VISITS SIR WALTER RICH—HIS RECEPTION THERE—CHARACTER OF MISS LOUISA RICH—MR. DIAPER RECEIVES A LETTER, WHICH OCCASIONS HIS DEPARTURE.

THE first opportunity I could obtain, I begged the favour of my father to indulge me with a few words in private, which he immediately complied with; and taking me into his study, with the utmost tenderness, enquired if I had any particular request to make him. If I had, my behaviour had been so agreeable to him, that I might be sure of it's being granted the minute I mentioned it. So indulgent a preface almost disconcerted me in my intended discourse, and for some time I remained almost motionless, with my eyes fixed on the ground: he took me in his arms, and, with a warm pressure, told me he feared I was not well, or that somewhat oppressed my mind, which he conjured me to let him know: 'Look upon me, my dear,' says this best of men, 'in the light of a bosom friend; and let that take off somewhat of that awe that may be inspired by the presence of a father.' I grasped his hand, and, after some farther pause, made him acquainted with the numerous follies I had been guilty of; sincerely relating all my unfortunate mishaps, and concealing only such particulars as would have been offensive to the purity of his ears; his astonishment was so great, that I had the opportunity to proceed, without interruption, to enumerate the generous behaviour of my good master, and my friend, in such terms as the warmth of my grateful heart inspired; the circumstance of his having undertaken to pay my debts, and every thing that I

thought I could not dispense with myself in concealing from him; concluding with such observations as naturally might arise from a view of my misconduct. When I had finished, I perceived he was strangely affected; and, desiring me to stay there till his return, he left me in a situation between grief at having discomposed him, and joy, that I had got rid of the load of concealments which oppressed me. I had not remained a quarter of an hour, when he returned, and, with a smile of complacency, put me out of my pain, by telling me, that, though the hearing of my misconduct had given him great disorder, yet, as my repentance seemed so sincere, and my reflections so just, and that a mere principle of justice to him, and gratitude to my master, had moved me to this discovery, he could not excuse himself from forgiving me: 'Come, then, my son, come to my arms; and let me not be behind in the race with this excellent friend and master! I shall return him my acknowledgments in a letter to-morrow, and will remit him the sum he so generously intended to bestow on you: you make me amends, my dear, for the trouble you have given me, and the expence you have occasioned me, by joining me, in the list of your benefactors, with him; and may the Almighty, whose goodness is so manifest, in your restoration to virtue and religion, enable you, by his gracious assistance, to persevere in a course of such actions as are most agreeable to his will, and most conducive to your present and eternal happiness! Let us say no more, then, of faults, I am resolved for ever to forget you was guilty of, and rejoin our friends, who expect us;' and so saying, without allowing me farther time for acknowledgment, than just to kiss his hand, which I wetted with my tears, he left me to compose myself. Before I could well get out of the room, I heard my mother just entering; upon which I reached from a shelf, hastily, a volume of Rowe's plays, and dipped into that scene of Tamerlane, where Monefes is strangled, and seemed reading, to hide my discomposure, which, upon her enquiry, I attributed to my concern for Arpasia. This served my turn, and my mother, who now first had me in private, quite overcame me.

with her endearments, which I returned with an ineffable satisfaction. Nothing could equal her tenderness for me, which she gave a loose to, and even shed a flood of tears of gladness, on the occasion of seeing me again; which, I too tenderly loved her, not to increase with mine: it was then this lovely mother put into my hands a purse with an hundred guineas, which she had reserved, she said, as a present for me the first time she saw me in the country; and without giving me time to thank her, enquired if I had parted with the ring which was given me by Miss Rich, on occasion of my saving her from the fire. I felt some emotion at the mention of that lady, and told her, blushing, that it was still, and had ever been since, upon my finger. She advised me to wait upon Sir Walter and his daughter, who had both expressed a great regard for me several times, since my abode in London: 'Nay,' continued she, 'Miss has been almost my constant companion, ever since her father removed to the new house he has built in the neighbourhood; and I have conceived a very great affection for her, second to none but that I bear to thee, my dear.' Our farther discourse was interrupted by Mr. Diaper, who came to summon us to a game at cards; and, taking my mother about the neck, told her he would forgive her any thing but keeping his friend from him; 'And so, to punish you, Mamma, I have resolved to sit opposite to you at a game at whist, where I'll use you most unmercifully.' We then all three adjourned into the parlour, where we found my father, with our two friends; and it being my chance, with Mr. Archer, to stand out, and not being much inclined to cards, I resolved, even then, to wait upon Sir Walter. My mother's discourse had raised a kind of longing desire in me to see Miss Louisa, which I did not trouble myself to account for; but flattered myself, it was only from the view my mother had given me of her acquirements, and those increased perfections she had attained, since I had seen her. From the same motives I dressed myself with more care than ordinary; and, imparting my design to Mr. Archer, he told me he would accompany me, in a visit to his old friend. In our way we discoursed over the his-

tory of myself, and his son, and my friend Sharpley, whom we each expressed the same longing desire to see: Mr. Archer wished, in a very kind manner, that his son might be improved as much as I was, when he returned home, and passed many compliments on my person and appearance, telling me jocosely that he would send circular orders to all the fathers in the West Riding, to keep their daughters up till I went again to London. This discourse, and our intended visit to Miss Rich, first occasioned me to bestow one consideration upon my person; but an irresistible inclination to please, where I was going, gave me no little satisfaction in Mr. Archer's opinion of me. My stature was certainly of the most commanding sort, and my every motion discovered a strength and firmness in my joints, that indicated me no puny descendant of my father; my complexion was fair, accompanied with a ruddiness in my cheeks, that was set off by dark hair, which flowed over my shoulders, descending in ringlets, from the confinement of a ribband, which tied it behind: a good-natured softness in my features gave me a place in a person's favour almost the minute I appeared, which I often experienced very much to my advantage; add, to all this, an agreeable, modish dress; and I was no inconsiderable figure in a country village, as the custom of our trade allowed us also lace upon our hats and waistcoats. We got, in a little more than half an hour, to Sir Walter's new seat, which partook of all the concurrent advantages of air, water, and situation. A walk of elms led up to the house, which was built in the modern taste, and seemed to bespeak a very good fancy in the architect; every thing had an air of rural simplicity; and this villa was not loaded with such ornaments as serve, indeed, to dignify a palace in town, but are highly absurd in a rustick mansion, which seems peculiarly intended to soothe the toils of business, to inspire health and vigour, and ease to the mind, and should principally be formed to set off the beauties of nature, without surfeiting her too much with the affected touches of art. In short, Sir Walter seemed to have been inspired with a beam from that genius which has so beautifully appeared

peared in the magnificent, yet plain and simple retreats of a Boyle, or a Temple.

We had hardly advanced half way up the walk, when we were met by Sir Walter himself, his nephew, and his amiable daughter. As Sir Walter had heard of my arrival, he was at no loss to guess who I was; and therefore, though he vowed he should not have known me else, he hugged and kissed me, and protested he was as glad to see me as if I had been his own son. I returned my compliments to him in the politest terms I was capable of, as also to those of his nephew, who, I could perceive, was much the same as I had left him; and, like many narrow-souled wretches, seemed to grudge me the caresses I received. Whilst they were giving a welcome to Mr. Archer, I saluted Miss Louisa, and could see her colour come and go at this interview; and indeed I found her so, past all description, improved in her person, that I lost at once all my assurance, which was converted into a timid awe, and a reverence that made my address little less than the stile of adoration. Never, sure, did raptured fancy rove over such a profusion of charms and graces, as at this instant accosted my view! imagination, in her most wanton career, could not picture so much real excellence! Miss Louisa was of the middle stature; her bosom just betrayed her sex; and her shape was too exquisite to be described in other words, than those of Prior—

‘Fine by degrees, and beautifully less.’

Her lovely neck was shaded with dark brown hair, which in sportful ringlets played in the breeze; her face, whose features were quite regular, was overlooked by the finest pair of eyes, sure, that ever kindled love, of the exact colour of her hair; an habit of pensive thoughtfulness, which was constitutional in her, had spread an inimitable languor and softness through her whole form, that melted the very soul; but, when she smiled, ten thousand reviving nameless beauties discovered themselves, and the milk-white ivory teeth, and the laughing, joyous dimple that then appeared at the extremity of her pretty mouth, had an effect that can

only be felt, and is too delicate for description. Her hand was smaller than usual, even in women of her size; and the little foot, which was all her modesty of temper would suffer her to discover, when it peeped out from its confinement, seemed even too small to support the mistress of it. A majestic dignity of aspect flowing from a consciousness of innate innocence and virtue, was the attendant of all her actions; but, in which, the least tincture of affectation or pride was not perceivable, and indeed was absolutely contradictory to her nature. Such was this delightful fair one; and no wonder, then, if all my faculties were absorbed in admiration! Oh, have we heard the thrilling notes breathed in the inspiring airs, the gentle cadences of the inimitable Handel! Such was her voice, whose melodious accents diffused around unutterable gladness; nor tuneful Philomel’s was half so sweet, who, *most musical, most melancholy*, chaunts her griefs to the responsive groves; or the towering larks, who cheer the morn, when *the dappled dawn doth rise!*

I was soon wakened from the contemplation of these graces, by the interruption of Sir Walter and Mr. Archer, who approached us, just as Miss was returning my compliments, with congratulations on my safe arrival in the country, in such a manner as conveyed an idea of her receiving great pleasure from the visit. ‘Well,’ my boy,’ says her father, ‘what dost think of Lucy; don’t she appear worth saving from burning, you rogue, you? God zounds, I wish thou hadst an estate for her sake, or that that *youngster*,’ pointing to his nephew, who was at some distance, ‘would acquire thy merit, for whom I intend her, if he behaves well; for I think a fine woman, as well as a fine estate, ought to be entailed upon the family she proceeds from.’ This abrupt discourse of the honest baronet kindled blushes in his daughter’s face; and, fearing the farther pain the continuance might give her, Mr. Archer proposed to go and see the house, which I had never been in. Accordingly, giving the lady my hand, which she accepted with a look of extreme kindness and condescension, we followed her

her father, and were introduced to the mansion, whose inside bespoke the opulence, of the possessor, in all the varied furniture and ornaments that are the product of wealth, and a generous use of it. As it was evening before we arrived, this first visit was but short, and we parted, after invitations to see him every day, the knight letting me know, he would never forgive me if I did not take an hunt with him, and make his house my home, almost, whilst I continued in the country; adding, which was indeed a greater inducement to me than all the rest, 'I warrant you, Miss Lucy here will find some way or other to entertain her preserver;' to which she gave an inclination of assent, and in the most agreeable manner imaginable enforced her father's invitation. As we returned homewards, Mr. Archer observed, that I was quite buried in thought, and laughingly asked me, if I had left my heart behind me. 'Ah!' says he, more seriously, 'I wish, my dear Thompson, thou had'st the possession of that worthy creature, who is doomed to the embraces of that clodpate we saw yonder, and perhaps will be made miserable by it.' On our arrival at home, we were chid for our elopement, till we discovered where we had been, and I observed my friend Diaper to look more than ordinary melancholy; upon which, being fearful he was not well, I asked him to take a walk that fine moon-shine evening, which he was pleased with the opportunity of doing; and, when we were alone, pulled out a letter, which he said he had received by an express, since I went out; adding, with a sigh, 'There you will find the cause of my uneasiness.—I must be gone to-morrow.' I hastily opened it with great trepidation, and found it as follows—

'DEAR SIR,

'I Take this first opportunity of paying my respects to you, since the pleasure your company afforded us; and am the more ready to do it, as I believe your regard to a certain young lady will determine you to let us see you as soon as possible again. Poor Miss Sukey has had a violent attack of a fever, which has at times

even rendered her delirious; and, though it has spent it's baneful fury, and she is somewhat recovered, it has left a weakness behind it, that almost renders her an object of compassion; and (for I will not conceal any thing from you) I fear your absence preys upon her spirits as much as the distemper has done upon her body: you are too generous to esteem a woman of merit the less for making no secret of her regard to you, as my sister's education and disposition entirely render her incapable either of affectation or dissimulation. In short, dear Diaper, a word to the wise is enough; and, if you take a tour over here, I am sure it will contribute greatly to remove the poor girl's indisposition; and you are too much the man of honour to stand out, when you have such a summons to surrender yourself at the headquarters of your heart. I must desire my sincere respects to my friend Thompson, but will not be so cruel to insist upon his bearing you company, as it will remove him so soon from his relations, though I long to see him; but, if he should oppose your leaving him, assure him, I'll return you again to him in a week at farthest. Mrs. Bellair sends her compliments to you both. *I am your sincere friend, and humble servant,*

'A. BELLAIR.

'P. S. Be it remembered, that this tour excuses neither of you from your promise of spending some days with us, in your return to London. Take no notice, when you see my sister, of this letter, and your coming will be a greater compliment to her.'

I could not oppose my friend's desire to be gone, and he was so impatient for the morning, that sleep never entered his eyes the whole night. I undertook to apologize for his absence to my father and mother, who were not stirring when he set out; so, writing by him an handsome letter to Mr. Bellair, I rode with him some miles, and then left him to pursue his journey, and returned home.

CHAP.

C H A P. XX.

HE IS ENAMOUR'D WITH MISS
LOUISA—COMBATS WITH HIS
PASSION—RESOLVES TO CON-
QUER IT—MR. DIAPER'S ADVICE
OVERCOMES HIS RESOLUTION—
SIR WALTER FETCHES THEM TO
HIS HOUSE.

I Soon satisfied my father and mother in Mr. Diaper's absence, and now found a great and sudden alteration in myself; conversation, even with those beloved persons, became dull and insipid; I sought out solitudes, and was never more uneasy than when disturbed in them; whole days together, in this absence of my friend, I spent in unfrequent walks, where I might be at liberty to indulge my contemplations: alas! I had received an inmate into my bosom, that rendered me perpetually restless and uneasy; whenever I waited upon Miss Rich, I came away still more full of the insinuating infection, which bore down all the powers of reason, which in vain I called to my assistance, before it. I was even fearful of seeing her, apprehensive the tumultuous motions of my soul might get the better of my discretion; nothing pleased me but thinking or talking of that dear creature, a flood of tender sentiments softened my breast, and sometimes even melted me into tears; too surely I found love had fixed his empire in my heart, where he triumphed with more than tyrannick sway; such a progress had a few days made, that I hardly could attend a moment to any thing but the dictates of this new passion; but yet it was a holy and pure respect, not mingled with the disordered ravings of lust I had so often experienced: no, it took rise from a knowledge of the virtue, the merit, the amiable goodness of the object, which even reason told me was the most praise-worthy and deserving I had ever seen or conversed with. I longed, methought, to make such charms of beauty, wit, and truth, my own; and here I was justified, thus far I could greatly excuse myself; but when I considered, on the other hand, the great disparity of our conditions and fortunes, the ingratitude I should

be guilty of to her father, who loved me, and had informed me of his designation of her to another, and that such a woman would be reward sufficient even for an whole life of pains, and care, and industry in the profession I was destined to, I sickened at the prospect of the miseries I was bringing upon myself, and upon this object of my wishes, were she favourable to me; which, however, I had no reason to believe she would, from the knowledge I had of her prudence, and the duty and constant regard she paid to her father; though on all occasions she had treated me with a distinction favouring somewhat of the regard due to a brother, which was a title she always gave me, as she called my mother her's, and was even what Sir Walter himself had heard her with pleasure repeat. She took notice, and seemed pleased with the value I set upon the dear ring she had given me so many years ago, and shewed a great fondness for my company, and a thorough detestation of the brute, her cousin, which she could not forbear even to impart to me when we were alone. At her harpsichord, she took delight in all the softest tenderest airs, and, as I was mighty fond of hearing her, would be ever obliging me, often requesting me to accompany her with my voice, which was tolerable good, or the German flute. She would often, in seeming compliment to me, praise the life of a citizen, enumerate what she had heard of the sudden fortunes many of them had made, and the great families they had allied themselves to. Another discouraging circumstance was my condition of a servant at present; and I often cursed my fate, that had given me a susceptible heart, great and capacious, but had denied me a situation, and the goods of fortune, to indulge it's laudable desires. My family, indeed, was one of the best in the country, but Sir Walter's estate, which was very great, and his title, threw a damp upon that thought: I could expect at most, from the patrimony and possessions of my father, a few thousand pounds, which might enable me to begin the world with advantage; on the contrary, her fortune, independent of her father, was 12,000*l.* which had been left her by

by an uncle, and, as her father shewed no inclination to marriage, it was very probable his whole estate would descend to her and her issue. In fine, every thing served to discourage any attempts I might make that way, and, after repeated and most cruel struggles, I came to a firm resolution to stifle my flame, and to endeavour to cure it by absence: but no one, who has not been in the same dreadful circumstances, can imagine the horrid conflict I had to go through, and the practice of this resolution cost me more pain than if my bowels had been torn out by the hands of an executioner. I then recurred to books, and the conversation of my friends; but that would not do. I took the tour of the neighbouring villages, and visited the whole parish, who adored me for my father's sake; but here every step I went, every house I entered, presented somewhat that brought my charming Louisa to mind; every family was full of her praises, and instances of her kindness and benevolence; the poor were clothed by her, the hungry fed, and sure so many marks of the goodness, piety, and charity of a young lady, never abounded anywhere before: this I found had been her and my mother's constant employment of every vacant hour, and blessings and prayers for her welfare were heard on every side. I now became a votary to the chase, and other country sports; but here I was so often thrown into the way of Sir Walter and his kinsman, that I could bear it no longer; the one always forcing me home with him, where I was sure to see the cause of my distress; and the other being quite obnoxious to my sight, from the idea I had of his ensuing happiness: and, on his part, regarding the favours I received as so many insults upon himself, and as low minds are easily inspired with suspicions, he thought he saw somewhat more than ordinary between Miss Louisa and myself, which in an invidious way he insinuated frequently to his uncle, who only laughed at him, and called him fool for his pains: 'You blockhead,' would he often say, 'you have no worth yourself, and are jealous of every body that has; zounds, it's time enough to confine

her to your company and humours when she is married to thee!' In this impartial manner could Sir Walter judge, and yet was determined to sacrifice his daughter to a wretch he despised. Upon my friend's return, who had quite, by his presence, chased away Miss Bellair's disorder, and was more and more enamoured with that lovely woman, I proposed to my father, that we should accept of an invitation made us by Mr. Archer and Mr. Sharpley, to spend a week or two at their houses; which he readily complied with, and accompanied us himself there for a few days: here, I thought I bid fair for ease, in their conversation, and the amusements they had provided us; but, alas! it was flying from myself; and I grew so visibly altered, that a man of less discernment than Mr. Diaper would have suspected the cause. He had often seen Miss Rich, and was full of her praises; and, by observing my behaviour in her company, had formed a near guess at my disorder; so that he seemed not at all surprized when I opened my situation to him: but guess my amaze, when, instead of assisting me to conquer my passion, he spoke to the following effect; 'Dear friend, I am sorry you make yourself so uneasy; consider, Sir Walter is doing a work that God and nature must equally disapprove, and a work that is as absurd to attempt, as to reconcile antipathies: no, no, I would assist you in any thing to relieve that worthy young lady from the impending ruin that awaits her, in the proposed match with that wretch her father seems determined to give her to; and as to you, my dear Joey, in my eye, you are an equal match for her, or any other woman. I'll propose to my father, as soon as we return, to take you into partnership; and in a few years Sir Walter will not blush at an alliance with you; I'm sure, if he does, she has a fortune independent of him; and I don't think we are bound to obey our parents, in what would not only end in our unhappiness, but be one of the greatest crimes we could commit, an offence against Heaven itself; endeavour then, by all lawful means, to gain her affection; and,

‘as to the time you have to serve, I know my father’s regard to you so well, that it need give you no manner of uneasiness.’ How easily are we reasoned into our wishes, and brought to follow our inclinations! but the kindness, the friendship, of this dear youth, brought tears into my eyes, and I remained in his arms some minutes without speaking, his generosity had so affected me: when I recovered, my acknowledgments were extreme; and I could have no objection to what he said, so exactly his advice tallied with my desires. I returned to my usual tranquillity, and was now as eager to return home, as I had been before to come away from thence.

I was in this state of mind, when one morning Sir Walter came hallooing at Mr. Archer’s door; and, dismounting, came up to our bed-chamber, where we had just begun to dress ourselves. ‘Lads, lads! we can do no longer without you at home; my daughter obliges me to give a ball to-night, to the neighbouring good people, in order to have both your companies; so make no words, but mount, and away with me directly; mayhap we may start game as we return, which we’ll carry home as part of our dinner.’ We made no reply; and he went on, in his merry way, till we were ready to go, when, taking leave of our good friends, who promised to be with us in a day or two, we rode after Sir Walter, who was heartily vexed we could meet with nothing in our way to his house worth killing; where we arrived about noon, after a very pleasant ride, in which we entertained him with various relations of town-adventures, at which he lifted up his eyes, and was sure, he said, London was the devil.

C H A P. XXI.

THEY ARE RECEIVED WITH GREAT PLEASURE BY MISS LOUISA—HE DANCES WITH HER AT THE BALL—AN ACCIDENT DISCOVERS HIS AFFECTION TO HER—THE RECEPTION IT MEETS WITH—HE IS ASSAULTED, AND WOUNDED, BY SOME PERSONS UNKNOWN—CARRIED TO SIR

WALTER’S—DISTRESS OF MISS LOUISA, ON THE OCCASION—SHE DECLARES HER LOVE FOR HIM.

SIR Walter would not permit us to go home to shift our linen, but lent us a servant to send for fresh cloaths from my father’s; and, at the same time, to invite him and my mother to his daughter’s evening-entertainment. When we were dressed, he introduced us to that young lady, who was habited in a white damask sacque, which flowed loosely about her, with an air of beautiful negligence; and she was so brightly bespangled with jewels, in her stomacher and other parts of her apparel, that I never beheld a more sumptuous sight; but her ornaments borrowed lustre from her, instead of increasing her charms, and served only as so many foils to set off her blooming graces. After the usual compliments, she joined with her father in raillying me, for absenting myself from their house; which drew a sigh from me, which it was not in my power to suppress, and which I found she perceived, and innocently asked me if I had not been well; which I answered, in assuring her, that nothing but a certain melancholy disorder, that for some time had oppressed me, would have detained me from the only conversation that I delighted in. She seemed to be concerned at what I said, and was going to reply, when dinner was served up, and we sat down to table. Amongst other dishes, was a chicken-pye, ‘Which,’ says the lovely creature, ‘I have heard you say, Mr. Thompson, was your favourite, and I made it on purpose for you; and therefore you must oblige me, by eating very heartily.’ Such an instance of regard transported me; and I replied, with a tone and manner that let her easily conceive how much I thought myself obliged; our conversation grew quite brisk; and my angel-mistress said and did so many agreeable things, that my friend, as well as myself, was full of admiration: the old gentleman was ready to jump out of his skin for joy, and protested that I had inspired her by my company. ‘Why, my boy, she had drooped ever since you have been gone,’ says he; but

'but if ever you serve her such a trick again, whilst you stay in the country, I'll never forgive you.'—'Nor I neither, I assure you, papa,' says Miss, with an inimitable pleasantness in her smile. 'Aye, aye,' replies Sir Walter, 'I and Numps here,' meaning his nephew, 'are nothing in the world with her; she loves your company, because you read and understand books, and such kind of things, which we don't know the use of, farther than the Bible, and Shaw's Justice, and Jacob's Law Dictionary, mayhap.' Night approached, and company poured in very fast, which forced us to adjourn into the ball-room, which was decked in a very splendid and genteel manner; and during the whole time it lasted, I had the happiness to be partner to my charming creature, every touch of whose hand fired anew my soul. Her cousin was busy, meanwhile, in drinking and carousing with his companions in the hall, this manner of spending time not being suitable to his taste or education. Sir Walter danced with my mother; and Mr. Diaper procured an agreeable partner, in a young lady of the neighbourhood; and the whole concluded with an elegant cold repast, which shewed the polite judgment of the mistress of the treat. Sir Walter would not permit us to leave him that night; and, after his daughter retired to rest, resolved that we should both accompany him in a debauch; where we drank so freely, though contrary to our usual custom, that it was with difficulty we steered our way to bed; Sir Walter declaring, with an oath, that we were heartier cocks than he thought us to be, and not such wishy-washy fellows as he frequently met with from London.

The next day Sir Walter proposed to take an airing, on horseback, upon the neighbouring downs; and his daughter very readily consented to bear us company. No woman ever sat a side-saddle with better grace! She looked like Diana herself, in a riding-habit, which was the richest that the indulgent fondness of her father could procure for her! The pad she rode, which was a beautiful, long-tailed chestnut, seemed proud of his burden; and champed the bit, and pawed the earth, with a seeming consciousness of

the honour he received in such a rider. We had just gained the downs, when the beast, who was naturally startish, suddenly descrying some object that surprized him, curvetted to one side, and immediately after set up such a race, that it was not in the power of the bridle to controul him. Sir Walter and my friend were a considerable way behind us when this happened, and I was riding by her side; she gave a shriek, and the vicious creature tore up the very ground before him; distracted with the danger the life of my soul was in, all wild and apprehensive for her safety, I clapped spurs to my horse, endeavouring to overtake and stop her's; which, before I could effect, he stumbled in an hole, in his full career, and came down, casting the frightened fair-one at some distance from him, where she lay in a swoon, when I came up, and dismounted. I immediately took her up in my arms, and, in the first agonies of my grief, could not help crying aloud, my tears descended plentifully upon her lovely face, which lay reclined, all pale and wan, upon my bosom. 'Heavens! what an unfortunate wretch am I! Oh, ye powers! restore me the lovely maid, or let my breath expire with her's! But, alas! she hears me not, and already she's no more!' Whether the tears I shed, or these disjointed exclamations, brought her to herself, I cannot say; but a sigh, which heaved her panting breast, gave me the inexpressible satisfaction of thinking her alive. 'Gracious God!' I continued, 'give me back the charming maid, the pattern of your own excellence!' and, casting my eyes down, perceived her's were opened; when, in the tumult of my joy, I imprinted an eager kiss upon her forehead; but, recollecting myself, I blushed, and was ready to sink into the earth for my presumption: she drew herself out of my arms, and gently said, 'Mr. Thompson, I am troublesome; I can walk.'—'Dear Madam,' I falteringly said, 'let me support you, you are certainly hurt;' and by this time our two friends came up, and had caught the horse, who, after his fault, was galloping home, and first gave tidings of the misfortune. I wiped my face, and strove to conceal my tears. Sir Walter was mad with joy, that his daughter

daughter had received no hurt; and my friend took his share of the general satisfaction. As to me, I was quite abashed at the thought of having incurred her anger, by my rashness, and the discovery I had made of my sentiments; and, removing her side-saddle to my horse, without daring to look at her, assisted her to remount. Sir Walter embraced me over and over, and was so full of the service I had done her, that nothing else employed him but thanks and praises all the way home: she said very little, and seemed quite reserved, which was attributed to the accident that had just befallen her; but I interpreted it as resentment against me, and the thought racked me with the greatest torture. As soon as we arrived, she begged leave to retire, and went to bed, and her woman brought word down that she was very ill; upon which, proper assistance was called, and we were all in the utmost pain and anxiety for her. I resolved not to stir till she was better; and Sir Walter took our concern very kindly; but, good God! the pangs that I felt were indescribable, and my friend could scarce keep me from doing some desperate deed upon myself, till word was brought us down that she was fallen into a doze, after taking somewhat to compose her. The next morning, to my extreme satisfaction, she was perfectly recovered, and appeared at breakfast, if possible, more enchanting than ever; but I was the only sufferer, to whom she behaved with such a distance, though with the utmost gentility, that I cursed a thousand times the imprudence that had robbed me at once of the sweet familiarity I had before enjoyed: however, she returned me her thanks with so much feeling sincerity, that I had reason to rejoice in the service I was so happy to render her on this occasion; but I could not overcome my timid confusion, which scarce allowed me to speak three words the whole time of breakfast; and I took leave in a situation of mind, that made me an object of compassion; and, arriving at home, as soon as decency would permit me, I retired, to vent my sorrows in private. For some days a state of stupid melancholy possessed me, which made my mother very uneasy, and was ascribed to illness, when a message

arrived from Miss Louisa, to desire my company; glad tidings, indeed! which in a minute dispelled my gloom, and I set out, immediately, for her wished-for presence. In entering the open walk to Sir Walter's house, was a kind of wilderness, which partly nature, and partly art, had made quite private, and concealed from view. Through this maze I directed my steps, as it was the nearest way; and had got half through, when I received a sudden shot from a pistol, which grazed the side of my head, and almost stunned me; and, before I could turn about to discover the hand it came from, I was saluted with a blow over my arm, and a second over my head, which felled me, senseless, to the ground. I had no time for reflection before my fall; and whether the ill-usage from these assassins was repeated, or what followed, I cannot tell; for the first discovery I made, when I recovered my senses, was my father and my friend, weeping by my bedside, which seemed to be in a very strange place, which I did not at all recollect. I found myself weak and feeble, and could scarce speak, but enquired, with a faint voice, where I was, and what brought me there. They were overjoyed to perceive I had so well recovered my understanding, but tenderly begged me to compose myself, and, in due time, I should be informed of every thing. They said no more; and I could see, by the sorrow displayed in their countenances, that I had been very dangerously ill. For some hours I kept myself still, according to their desire; but, though my weakness still was extreme, I heard every thing that was said, and saw my mother very assiduous about me; and, to my great surprize, Sir Walter, Mr. Archer, and Mr. Sharpley, frequently in the room, enquiring how I did. Being left in the latter part of the day, with only Mr. Diaper by me, I beckoned him to my bedside, and begged to know what had happened; but he still refused me, and earnestly desired me not to enquire any thing till I was more capable to attend the recital. I was forced to comply, and was three days longer in this uncertainty, in which time my youth got the better of my illness, and I recovered so fast, that I was able to crawl about the chamber, by means of hold-

ing by the chairs and tables, and in two days more, without any assistance, though my arm pained me violently still. It was now that my friend, who was ever with me, ventured to talk to me; and, in answer to my queries, spoke thus—'Blessed be God, my dear Joey, that you are so well again; you have gone through an intolerable fever, attended with a constant delirium of near ten days, in which every body despaired of your life; and you may judge the grief and sorrow it occasioned to us all, especially as the authors of your horrid ill-treatment were not known, nor could be guessed at, or found, upon the most diligent search; for you was discovered weltering in your gore in Sir Walter's Wilderness, in all appearance dead, by some of his servants, who conveyed you to his house, where you have been ever since, and are at present in his own bed-chamber; and I may venture to tell you, since your recovery has had a like effect on her, that Miss Louisa has been almost as bad as yourself. When you was first brought to her father's in that condition, she swooned away, and was with difficulty brought to herself; but when the surgeons had pronounced your case to be very bad, and doubtful at best, her concern could be no longer hid; she wept, and, in a frantick manner, tore her lovely hair, and expressed such a regard for you, as surprized every body, which was succeeded by a fever which had well nigh put a period to her life. Sir Walter, at present, thinks this the effect only of her friendship; but your mother and her woman are witnesses to the contrary: in her light-headed condition she was incessantly calling on her dear Thompson, said she could not live without you, and expressed such a peculiar tenderness for you, that any one might guess the cause. In proportion as you have recovered, she has gained strength, and is now better than yourself; but, though she is ever enquiring after you, she has intreated your mother, and charged her woman, not to mention the unguarded things she has said. I congratulate you and myself on this disco-

very, which I hope will lessen your cure. No one can tell, my dear Joey, the grief and trouble you have put your father and mother in, and how greatly affected I have been with the danger of so inestimable a friend; and Sir Walter has shewn as much regard for you as if you had been his own son, notwithstanding his distraction for the illness of his daughter. Pray, now, tell me, my friend, how you came by such wounds in your head, and that fracture of your arm, which has puzzled the skill of the best of surgeons about us?'—I gave Mr. Diaper an account of the affair, which amazed him; but, after all our guesses, though there seemed to be so visible an intent to destroy me, we could not conjecture who could make such an attempt, as I had never disoblinded any one in that part of the country, and was universally beloved. Though my grief rose to a great pitch at the thoughts of my Louisa's illness, yet what I had heard so transported me, that I forgot even that, and my own, and indulged an hundred extasies and transports! The glad knowledge of her tender sentiments towards me made me almost bless the cruel hand that involved me in so much danger, and made the discovery. I exulted in my happiness, as much as if I had her already mine; and the joy it occasioned soon brought me to my pristine health and vigour. That dear creature likewise became so well as to be able to leave her chamber: our enquiries after one another had been repeated every minute; and now, that I was recovered so much, I burnt for an opportunity to see her, in which I resolved to profit by my friend's advice, and not betray the knowledge I had acquired. Sir Walter resolved to keep me there a week after the cure; upon which my father, mother, and Mr. Diaper, Mr. Archer, and Mr. Sharpley, returned to our house, after the highest acknowledgments to Sir Walter for his goodness to me, the two last-mentioned gentlemen having been his guests on the same occasion, their regard for me having made them too anxious to return home, from whence the news of my misfortune had brought them, till I was perfectly out of danger.

C H A P. XXII.

MISS LOUISA CONFESSES HER REGARD FOR HIM—HER AMIABLE SINCERITY AND PRUDENCE—HE IS OVERCOME BY HER GOODNESS—THEY VOW ETERNAL CONSTANCY—NATURAL RHAPSODY ON LOVE—THEIR CONJECTURES OF THE LATE ASSAULT.

I Was overcome with sadness the first time I saw the charmer of my soul after her indisposition, the roses being quite vanished from her cheeks; and she was grown so thin and pale, she was scarcely to be known. I accosted her with a trembling accent, and expressed my sorrow at her late illness; which she received in so affecting a manner, and was so overjoyed to see me recovered, that the roses again revisited her face, and a kindling blush of conscious pleasure overspread her countenance. Sir Walter gave us both joy on the occasion, and, in his way, said a thousand things that favoured of his great affection for his daughter, and his regard to me; and, after sitting some time, left us alone. Now, I was at the greatest loss imaginable how to behave, and hardly dared lift up my eyes to her: a thrilling transport, mingled with awe, invaded my whole frame, and, for some moments, I remained speechless and immovable; at length, assuming courage, I threw myself at her feet, and broke silence in this manner—‘Ah, loveliest of women! justly have I been punished for my presumption and temerity, in daring to express the fond concern of my heart at your late danger; but, as your disposition is mercy itself, pardon me, my dearest Madam, the crime I was guilty of; it was what nothing should ever have prevailed on me to commit, and flowed involuntarily from me, when I feared I was going to lose you! Pity me, and forgive me, and don’t banish me from your reviving presence for ever!’ Her astonishment at this sudden action was so great, that she could not interrupt me, and I went on—‘I must confess I love you, but is it my fault? No! all that see your perfections do the same. Oh! then accept the humble adoration I shall

ever pay you, which shall never disturb your happy moments; and, though I cannot conquer my rash and fatal passion, I will keep it within such strict limits, that it shall never in the least offend you. Alas, Madam! is it possible for me longer to conceal the effects of your wonderful charms, or to resist the empire you have over all my thoughts and actions! an empire more acquired by your virtue, your good-sense, and your amiableness of soul, than by the exterior graces of your person. Let the miserable situation I am involved in excite your commiseration! Behold me, conscious of having a heart capable of all the sublime and generous motions of love, and yet infinitely enamoured of an object, that, though reason convinces me I should be for ever happy in, and endeavour to communicate the highest satisfaction to; yet she even denies me hope of the possession of it in the most distant degree. No, I own my ambitious presumption does not aim so high: suffer me, in anguish, however, to smile in myself, and say that ‘you do not utterly despise me!’ Here the goddess of my supplications, raising me with her hand, which I imprinted an hundred burning kisses upon, before it could be withdrawn; and, striving to conceal a confusion that rendered her still more lovely, broke silence in this manner—‘Were I, Mr. Thompson, to consult the prudential or the political maxims of my sex, I should retire from your declarations, without vouchsafing you any other answer than the haughty disdain you ought to think you have deserved; but let me be a woman, and yet proof against her natural insincerity: it is too late to deny to you, since the cause of my late illness has been too plain to your friends; I say, Sir—’ And here the lovely face was painted with such a crimson dye as just illumines the horizon when the sun first streaks the skies with his ascending rays!—‘It would be an insincerity, which my mind would condemn me for greatly, were I to deny that I have a proper regard for your merit, that I esteem your person, and think myself greatly obliged to you for some instances of your friendship to me, which in an heart like mine,

‘which

' which cannot be obliged, and at the
 ' same time affect an insensibility of
 ' the obligation, may have been very
 ' forcible recommendations to me in
 ' your favour. All the native pride
 ' of our sex, Sir, as I know you to be
 ' a man of honour, should not with-
 ' hold me from indulging this esteem
 ' of you to a greater degree; here a
 ' sigh, unnoted by her dear self, heaved
 ' her generous breast—' but I have ever
 ' resolved not to disobey my father,
 ' who, I hope, will have so much af-
 ' fection for me as not to force me to a
 ' match he has often talked of, which
 ' will undoubtedly make me the most
 ' miserable of beings. As to my part,
 ' let me own, that, be our fortunes
 ' ever so different, a gentleman of Mr.
 ' Thompson's rectitude of mind, and
 ' purity of sentiment, would deter-
 ' mine me to follow my inclinations:
 ' but, Sir, let us say no more of what
 ' seems to affect us both so much.—
 ' Say no more, Madam!' I cried, in
 ' an extasy of transport; ' after this melt-
 ' ing discovery, say no more! as well
 ' you might restrain the thanksgivings
 ' that pour forth from the grateful
 ' mariner, who has unexpectedly land-
 ' ed, after shipwreck, on some hospi-
 ' table shore; as well the raptures that
 ' proceed from the dying penitent,
 ' when the gleaming hopes of mercy
 ' have been visiting his departing soul;
 ' as stem the torrent of my acknow-
 ' ledgments, which must, which will,
 ' have utterance! O adorable Louisa!
 ' you have, indeed, raised me from
 ' death, to a new, an added sense of
 ' the importance of my being, since
 ' you interest yourself in my fate. For-
 ' give me, my angelick comforter, if,
 ' in the wildness of my transports, I
 ' am not able to express myself in
 ' sober, temperate language! O ye
 ' soft zephyrs! whisper the kind, the
 ' tender accents, of my Louisa, in
 ' every fanning breeze that murmurs
 ' through the grove! Tell it, ye imi-
 ' tative echoes! catch the heavenly
 ' sounds, and propagate the strains
 ' I've heard around! O happy, happy
 ' youth! what envied bliss! superior
 ' joys are mine! Let the pains, the
 ' corroding cares of mortality, rage as
 ' they list, the idea that the ever-sensi-
 ' ble, the blooming fair, pants for my
 ' welfare, wishes every blessing that I
 ' aspire to share, will bear me safely

' through the gathering storms!—
 Here the workings of my imagination
 had so strongly affected me, that my
 weakened faculties were no longer able
 to support them, and I sunk down,
 without life, at her feet; at which she
 gave a shriek, and the servants ran in
 to her assistance, and carried me to bed;
 where, when I came to myself, I turned
 my eyes about, and saw her sitting by
 me, with earnest cares employed for
 my recovery. I begged her pardon
 for the disturbance I had given her, as
 well as my weakness would permit;
 and she sweetly and tenderly desired
 me to compose myself, for fear I should
 endanger another attack of my fever
 by the tumults of my mind. How
 judiciously did she inculcate to me the
 government of our passions, and urged
 the future enjoyment of each other's
 company in safety, as a reason for my
 moderation, for fear of causing any
 suspicions of my sentiments in her fa-
 ther and her cousin, who of late had
 more than ordinarily pried after every
 thing that occurred between us, and
 began to be a constant, troublesome
 guest, whenever we were engaged.—
 ' Let me, for I can hide it no longer
 ' from you, Mr. Thompson,' says the
 dearest and best of creatures, ' confess
 ' that I have a tender regard for you;
 ' that I should think myself unhappy
 ' with any body else; and, though I
 ' have all the respect and duty possible
 ' for my father, yet, I freely own, I
 ' should be disobedient, if I were or-
 ' dered to make choice of the wretch
 ' he, I find, proposes to give me to:
 ' for, if he had all the other quali-
 ' fications I could wish in a man I
 ' would chuse for a companion in life,
 ' yet his natural brutality of temper,
 ' and the baseness of his principles,
 ' would render him detestable.—No,
 ' Sir, nothing but a similitude of senti-
 ' ments, an union of souls, a thorough
 ' and mutual liking of each other, can
 ' make the marriage-state eligible;
 ' but let me, Mr. Thompson, have no
 ' reason to accuse myself of indiscre-
 ' tion and weakness in making a con-
 ' fession so opposite to the general
 ' maxims of my sex, whose hypocrisy
 ' and pride, on such occasions, teach
 ' them to hide the motions of their
 ' hearts, and to take pleasure in the
 ' little servile complaisance they ex-
 ' act of their lovers. I am above
 ' those

‘those mean arts, and you will be generous enough, I don’t doubt, to make a proper estimation of what I have been tempted to say in your behalf. We are yet young enough, and time and application may render you as agreeable in the eyes of my father, for a son, as you are now for a friend; for, be assured, I will never marry without his consent, any more than I will make myself miserable to please his humour.’ Here she ceased; and, raising myself in the bed, I assured her my sentiments were, and ever should be, conformable to her’s; ‘But excuse me, dearest Madam, if I here protest, before Almighty God, that I will never indulge a thought contrary to my affection to you; and that, let what good or ill fortune soever betide me, you, and only you, shall be the mistress of my heart.’—‘And,’ says my angel, with equal vivacity, ‘in the presence of the same Being, I here vow, that, if I am not to be allied to you, my maiden-name shall descend with me to the grave!’ I could not forbear kissing her hand, with inexpressible ardour, for this infinitely kind condescension, which with some reluctance she permitted me to do: and, oh! let any lover, who has been so exquisitely happy, figure the situation, the blissful situation, I was in at that time, and he will wonder I could keep my transports from breaking out into farther actions of an enamoured, overjoyed, and raptured soul! Oh! the serene calm my bosom now began to feel is inexpressible! Methought I had assumed a new and more improved state of existence, and soared above the fetters of mortality!

‘Hail, softest, sweetest, most delightful passion, that warms the human heart! If virtue, and if merit, dignify thy triumphs, what real, solid bliss, thou canst impart! Hail, guest sublime! all pure and lovely! thou art wisely given by Providence, adored, to soothe the ills of life!—The cordial drop Heav’n in our cup has thrown,’ to balance all our pains ‘and numerous ills! By thee each fond notion is exiled, and every sentiment refined!—“Our miens are fashioned, and our tongues are fil’d.” Charmed with the love of my adored Louisa, I breathed a purer element—and seem’d, nor only seem’d, but

‘was inspir’d!’ The little base desires indulged before, now sickened in my thoughts; how mean! how low! how trivial!—

‘Who to forbidden joys would rove,
That knows the sweets of virtuous love!’
ADDISON.

The present ease of my mind had such an effect on my body, that I was soon restored to my pristine health, and had at the same time the pleasure to see my Louisa’s countenance arrayed in her usual smiles; the beautiful vermeil, which had been so long banished, resumed its seat in her cheeks, and gave an added lustre to her graces. Till this time she had forgot to enquire into the manner I received my late hurts, and the consequences were to me so salutary, that I even counted the assault made upon me a blessing rather than a misfortune; but when I happened to say, that I was come to pay her a visit, pursuant to a message I had received from her, she was astonished, and protested she had never sent to me, nay, had, even at that period, resolved, if possible, to wean herself from my company, fearful of the effects of that insinuating passion that she found had assaulted her breast. This opened a field of conjectures about the author or authors of the cruelties that had been acted upon me, and we could, after long examination, fix upon no one so likely to have engaged in so rash and base an attempt, as her cousin, who, though she believed he had little affection for her, was too much swayed by his interest to look upon her regard for me with any measure of patience or forbearance.

CHAP. XXIII.

SHE MAKES HIM HER CONFIDANT—
HER AMIABLE BENEVOLENCE
AND CHARITY—SHE SURPRIZES
HIM BY A PROOF OF HER GOOD-
NESS—STORY OF AN UNFOR-
TUNATE FAMILY—ADVICE TO
YOUNG LADIES—HE MAKES A
DISCOVERY WHICH HE IMPARTS
TO HER—HER SENTIMENTS OF
RELIGION.

NOW, the glad some hours flowed in jocund rounds, and all was happiness, and all was love; each con-
scious

scious walk, each embowering shade, was witness to the blissful moments I spent in the conversation, in the contemplation, of my amiable Louisa: every day discovered still more and more perfections in the soul of that lovely maid; I grew quite another sort of creature, and was so improved by her wit and good-sense, that I breathed nothing but generous and noble sentiments and desires. It was one smiling morn, when I was in raptured accents speaking my gratitude and acknowledgments, that she interrupted me, and, with a voice that spoke the softest melody, told me she was resolved to impart all the pleasure she was now capable of bestowing upon me, and make me the confidant of some secrets, that, she doubted not, would give me heightened satisfaction; 'In short, Mr. Thompson, I will give you a specimen of the manner in which I chuse to spend some part of my time, which has given me ineffable delight, and contains all the secrecy I ever thought myself obliged or inclined to observe. My father's generosity of temper yields me an opportunity, from the overplus of my own expences, to diffuse a number of little benevolent kindnesses amongst the poor inhabitants of the neighbouring villages, whom I endeavour to make as happy as I can, with what Providence has bestowed upon me. You must know, Sir, I think this one of the most grateful returns I can make to my Creator, for the blessings of abundance and plenty he has imparted to me; and raises my mind to an imitation of that beneficence wherewith he superintends and looks through nature, scattering his blessings, in such profusion, upon his unworthy creatures. A heart that is not susceptible of humanity and pity, that does not feel the angelick transports that glow in the bosom in relieving poverty and distress, and affliction and grief, is unworthy the enjoyment of the common favours of Providence, and should be ashamed to partake even of the sun's reviving influence. I am soon tired with the folly of my toilet, any farther than it administers to neatness and decency; and the books you know I generally converse with, give added force to this disposi-

sition I find so natural to me; but, above all, that best of books, which I regard as a rule for my salvation, in the strongest terms inculcates the necessity of doing good, and in so sublime a manner, that a person must be dead to all sentiment and beauty of expression, to disregard it's precepts. Nay, I will own to you, my Thompson, that my observation of your turn of mind to benevolent principles first opened a way to admit your image into my breast.—'Come, come,' continues she, smiling, 'I'll conduct you to a scene that will be a proof of what I have said.' So saying, she struck across a meadow, which terminated the walk we were in, and rose on one side into a hill of some height, whilst I followed her with silent admiration; and methought she looked like one of those ministring angels, who, we are told, are employed in acts of love and kindness to the fallen race of men. 'O worth innate! O goodness most extreme!' I was forced to exclaim, 'what envied fate is mine! thus to be considered by the fairest, best, and most excellent pattern of her sex, adorned with inward greatness, unaffected wisdom, and sanctity of manners!'

At the farther side of this verdant eminence, was a small hovel, which resembled the rustick dwelling of Baucis and Philemon of old; and no sooner was our approach discovered by the yelping of a small cur that was frisking in the sun-shine, and ran crouching to the feet of Louisa, than a comely woman looked out and approached with a modest diffidence; mingled with joy in her face, and saluted that lady, in terms of the utmost veneration and respect; to which she replied with an affability and good-nature, that was calculated to dissipate the confusion that our sudden appearance seemed to have inspired; and asked, how her husband did to-day, and then enquired after the rest of her little family by name. 'My lady,' replies the honest dame, 'since we had the honour to receive your comfortable present yesterday, which came at a very seasonable time, my husband has recovered his spirits, and is upon the mending hand. Oh, Madam! you have rendered us truly happy: may every blessing crown



‘ your wishes for your goodness!’ By this time we approached the door, when two or three little cherubims ran out, and in their pretty, prattling way, welcomed my adorable, in a manner that convinced me she had been no stranger to them; she took each of them in her arms, and bestowed kisses and caresses upon them without number; enquired after the progress they had made in learning their books, and rewarded them according to their proficiency. A blush of uncommon satisfaction shone in her face, beams of unclouded joy flashed from her brilliant eyes, and the whole family were overcome with boundless satisfaction. She then enquired into several little particulars that are wanting in a family, gave the good woman some money, calling her aside for that purpose; and then, presenting her hand to me, we departed, and her departure spread a gloom upon those faces that were so moved with joy before. I was all admiration, and had never been partaker of more real pleasure. Heavens! what a dignity, what a lustre did her goodness spread around her, and what a fine effect her elevation of mind had upon her native charms! ‘ You must know,’ says the dearest maid, ‘ that with a little assistance, and some proper advice, I have saved this poor family from destruction, and in that I am doubly repaid, by the pleasure, the secret satisfaction, it has given me; not an acknowledgment I have received, not a sudden transport lighted up in those innocent babies faces, but has given me more real bliss than if I had received the greatest benefit the world could bestow. The man was a Londoner, and came down into these parts as an exciseman; but for some slip or mistake in his books was dismissed, about three months ago, from the representations of an ill-natured supervisor; since which, being deprived of his small salary, he has worked as an husbandman for my papa, striving with the greatest affection to support his family of a wife and three children. As I was walking out one afternoon with my woman, I accidentally passed by the house, and heard a terrible swearing and scolding within, which was discontinued upon the rustling noise I made in passing, and

the woman you have seen, just looked out to see who it was, with her face swollen with tears; she dropped me a curtsy, which I returned by the like, accompanied with a “ How d’ye, good dame?” and, thinking her under some affliction, enquired if any misfortune had happened to her. The woman, who seemed to have a soul superior to her appearance, very sensibly answered, that the detail of her misfortunes would be too tedious for my ears, and she feared too affecting to herself to go through with any tolerable decency; “ But, Madam,” continues she, “ what gives me at present the greatest uneasiness is, that my poor husband, unused to want, has soured the best of tempers by dwelling too much on the thoughts of the hardships he has met with, and grows cross and peevish to his family; whereas, I could suffer the greatest extremities, without complaining in his society: indeed, our ills are almost too great to bear!” here she burst into unaffected tears, whilst two or three little children, almost naked, joined in the mournful scene. I was struck to the heart, and by my endeavours have made their circumstances more easy, and clothed them in that manner you see, and this very morning have made my father promise me his first farm that becomes vacant, which I intend to stock for them, and put it into their power, by an honest application and industry, to retrieve their affairs, and be of service to society, who had else become a burden to it: the husband, eased of his anxiety, is become mild and sober again; and the reflection upon his late impatience and repinings against Providence, has thrown him into a disorder, which, by the account of his wife, he is now like to get over.’ I observed to my charmer, that I had generally found, that those persons, who possessed the best natural dispositions and talents, were most altered by misfortunes; whereas a lifeless clod goes through the up-hill and down-hill accidents of life, with a settled uniformity of behaviour, which, though generally counted wisdom and philosophy, flows from a natural insensibility and dulness of constitution.

How happy would the beautiful
 L part

part of the creation become, if, like my Louisa, they would bestow a little less attention upon the impertinences of dress, visits, and cards, and strive to adorn their minds with wisdom and knowledge, and to illustrate the delicacy they are born with, by such a constant habit of doing good! How bright an appearance has beauty and virtue united, what a light they cast upon every action of their lives? How insipid, how unlovely are such pursuits in women, as they must and often do condemn in our sex? One would think avarice, pride, and anger, and peevishness, resentment, and rage, were vices only of male growth, and were not able to fix their residence in a female breast, where generosity, complacency, mercy, good-nature, forgiveness, and serenity, only ought to reside: Oh! ye gentle soothers of human pains and inquietudes, copy this pattern of resplendent excellency, by which you will fix your empire still more absolutely in our souls, and reason as well as passion will take a pride to sacrifice at your altars, and adore your real and never-fading charms! Then we shall truly sing, with the poet—

‘ You’ve in you all that we believe of
‘ Heaven!

‘ Amazing brightness, purity, and truth,
‘ Eternal joy, and everlasting love!’

As we advanced in our return to the house, casting my eyes at some distance, I perceived the squire, her cousin, talking very earnestly with two fellows, who had no very promising appearance, which I made her take notice of, and she, as well as myself, was startled at their looks, which she thought had somewhat villainous in them; when, casting up their eyes, they discovered our approach, they seemed surprised, and shifted their ground. I followed them with my eyes till I had quite lost sight of them. Whether or no our knowledge of his disposition, or the conjectures we had formed of his foregoing guilt, worked up our terror, I can’t justly tell; but, in short, we had reason to think he was meditating no good. I had presence of mind enough to conceal my own fears, and to calm the tumults of my Louisa’s breast, who was perfectly put into a trembling fit by her presage of some sinister

design against our quiet. At supper, where he was present, I eyed him with more fixed attention than usual, and thought I perceived a visible confusion and trouble in his countenance, which he strove to conceal, but was forced to leave the room abruptly. That night, Sir Walter being engaged at a friend’s house, I had an opportunity of spending entirely with my angel; and, amongst other discourse equally productive of such discoveries of her knowledge and reading, as astonished me, I ventured to ask her, whether she was so rigidly bigotted to the doctrines of the Roman Catholick faith, as to admit of no salvation out of the pale of that church. Let me treasure up for ever the remarkable answer of this divine creature! ‘ I expected, my dear Thompson, that some time or other we should fall upon this discourse, and am prepared to resolve you of my opinions; that I am not bigotted, you might have learnt from your dear mother, as I have constantly, for several years past, joined in the publick worship at our parish church, where I have been greatly edified by the excellent discourses of your father. As to this or that mode of worship, I think every one ought to be allowed to follow the dictates of conscience; but I must own the simplicity of the Church of England, in her rites and doctrines, seems more agreeable to scripture, than any other. I have considered; and my retirement in the country, and the method of my education, under a worthy mother, of large and charitable notions, gave me, together with a proper choice of books, which she left behind her, and the use of a much better collection of your father’s, which I had the liberty to send for any book from, an opportunity of turning my thoughts to those things, more than is common for one of my tender sex. A priest of the Roman Church used to visit our family, but was soon disgusted at our conversing so much with Hereticks, as he called them; but the truth was, because we did not make him the repository of our secrets, and act implicitly by his directions. Two things, amongst those of that persuasion, shock me more than any thing else, not that I believe all the

‘ stories

* stories that are told in our books of
 * martyrology, which are the spirit of
 * persecution, and their maxim, that
 * no faith is to be kept with Hereticks.
 * In contradiction to which, I'll stick
 * to what was said by the great Mr.
 * Pope, another Roman Catholick, of
 * a charitable allowing spirit, in one
 * of his letters, and, if I remember
 * right, his words are these: " Fire
 * " and sword, and fire and faggot, are
 * " equally my aversion; I pray for dif-
 * " ferent sects and different parties,
 * " with the same sincerity I pray for
 * " myself; I think to be a lover of my
 * " country is a glorious elogy, but
 * " that it is a much greater to be a lover
 * " of mankind." And I believe the
 * Almighty esteems no particular opi-
 * nions in comparison to the truly good
 * man, who may be said to be a Chris-
 * tian at large. As things are ma-
 * naged at present by the advocates on
 * every side of the question, religion
 * seems to have the least share in their
 * researches, which is a thing I ima-
 * gine quite simple, and her duties
 * comprized, according to our Saviour
 * himself, in a very few words; but,
 * alas! though she is, as Rowe says—

" Divinely pure and simple from all arts,
 " They daub and dress her, like a common
 " mistress,
 " The object of their fancies."

I stood amazed at the penetration of my
 excellent mistress, and the judgment
 she shewed, and the facility she spoke
 with, upon points of so puzzled and
 abstruse a nature.

C H A P. XXIV.

MR. DIAPER RECEIVES LETTERS
 FROM HIS FATHER, WITH A
 LETTER INCLOSED FROM PRIG
 —ODD ACCOUNT OF SPECULIST
 —NEWS ARRIVES FROM AR-
 CHER AND SHARPLEY—UNHAP-
 PY END OF MR. PROSODY—HIS
 DISCOURSE WITH HIS MOTHER,
 IN RELATION TO LOUISA—HE
 RECEIVES A LETTER OF CAU-
 TION BY AN UNKNOWN HAND.

IT was with the utmost difficulty I
 prevailed on myself to leave my
 blissful abode, and to comply with the

repeated requests of my friend, to re-
 turn to my father's; which, however,
 at length I was obliged to do, taking
 the most tender adieu of the charmer
 of my soul. When I came home,
 every one rejoiced at the vivacity and
 lively spirit I brought with me; all
 being easy within, and the great busi-
 ness of love settled upon so unexpect-
 edly happy a footing, I indulged all
 the jollity and mirth of my soul. My
 friend, to whom I imparted all that
 had passed, congratulated me in the
 sincerest manner. ' And now,' says
 he, ' I don't doubt, my Joey, but we
 ' shall be both extremely happy, and
 ' may promise ourselves a life of con-
 ' stant felicity, which I hope will be
 ' spent, for the future part of it, in a
 ' harmony and cordiality between us,
 ' equal to that we have maintained hi-
 ' therto in the first; our joys, our
 ' griefs, mutual and the same.' Ah!
 how blind a little flattering success ren-
 ders unhappy mortals to the strokes of
 ill-fortune, that they are every minute
 liable to, and which burst the airy bub-
 bles of their delusive, deceitful ex-
 pectations!

A day or two after my arrival, Mr.
 Diaper received a packet of letters from
 London, by the superscription of which
 we immediately knew it to be from my
 master, who had not wrote to either of
 us before, though my father and he
 had constantly corresponded; giving,
 as a reason for it, that he would not
 disturb the young people in their diver-
 sions, by giving them the trouble to
 write; notwithstanding which, we had
 frequently paid our duties both to him
 and my mistress. I was alarmed at
 this, greatly fearing it was a summons
 of us up to town; and nothing could
 at present have grieved me more than
 absence from my Louisa. Upon open-
 ing it, there was a letter for Mr. Dia-
 per, and one for me, from his father,
 and another directed to us both, which
 I discovered in an instant to be from
 Mr. Prig. Both our letters from my
 dear and worthy master were full of
 affection to me, as well as his son; but
 we were extremely shocked, when we
 understood that Mr. Traffick, a mer-
 chant at Bristol, had failed, whereby,
 at the lowest computation, he was
 become loser above twelve thousand
 pounds. In relating this circumstance
 he had said all that a man of sense and

a Christian, who was acquainted with the unforeseen accidents of life, could say to moderate his son's affliction; but it was a blow he could hardly bear with fortitude, as it in some degree disconcerted the schemes of happiness he had formed for himself with the lovely Miss Bellair: in short, though it was but a trifle, when weighed against my master's other possessions, it was a loss that could not but be very heavily felt, and would, of consequence, oblige us to retrench our extensive dealings within a narrower compass. I was not without my share of concern for myself also, that is so natural, as I knew it would render it more difficult for my friend to bring me into a share of the business, which, on account of my pretensions to Louisa, I was become more and more desirous of: however, as there was no remedy, we gave ear to the consoling arguments of my father, who represented things to us in a most philosophical and reasonable light, and convinced us of the error and folly of laying such unavoidable misfortunes to heart. My master concluded, that he found our presence very necessary, as he, or one of us, must go down to Bristol; and gave us an order to prepare for our return to London in three weeks, or a month at farthest. The letter from Prig was as follows.

‘DEAR FRIENDS,

‘**T**HOUGH I reflect with pleasure upon the enjoyments you participate of in Yorkshire, and am ideally a sharer in every satisfaction you feel, yet I am more pleased, in understanding that your principal has sent you an *habeas corpus*, to remove your bodies up to London, which has been to me a dull and lifeless place, ever since your absence. Mr. Diaper (to whose recommendations I must own myself very much obliged for a great increase of practice) has made so thorough a convert of me, that my former companions yield me no delight; and the ways I formerly pursued are grown dull and insipid; and, let me assure you, I have not kicked a watchman, bilked a bawdy-house, or snored at Tom King's, for above these two months past. What the devil can you find

‘so agreeable amongst the *tikes* of Yorkshire, to detain you so long from your friends? Are purling streams, roseate bowers, fallow lawns, and painted meads, stronger charms than we can procure to entertain you? For shame-sake, haste away, and join us; for pity-sake, do; and let me sing, as a friend of mine once did, with a little alteration—

“Yorkshire, though full of wanton glee,
“Our op'ning pleasures vie with thee;
“Thy barren wilds the stupid please,
“But mulick warbles through our trees:
“See Ranelagh, and see Vauxhall,
“The joyous glass, the sprightly ball;
“Come, join and quaff the sparkling bowl,
“Which raises, mends, and fires the soul.”

‘Your affectionate friend,

‘RICHARD PRIG.

‘P. S. The most extraordinary piece of news I can send you, is, that that man of moral rectitude, Philosopher Speculist, has been cast in 2000*l.* damages, for criminal conversation with the wife of a bosom friend; and, on non-payment, has been obliged to go to the Fleet Prison.

We could not help smiling at our friend Prig's concise and *laconick* epistle, and his dash of poetry, which exactly spoke the temper of the man; and that, together with the arrival of our friends Archer and Sharpley, contributed to expel the gloom that had overspread our minds. They had each of them received a letter from his son, which they communicated to us. Tom Archer went on with great success in his mercantile employment; and poor Jack Sharpley had met with a great many misfortunes upon his station; but by the death of the captain, and all the three lieutenants, had received the commission of third lieutenant, which fell to him by rotation, and had been confirmed such by the lords of the Admiralty: they were both in good health, which could not fail to communicate a great deal of pleasure to me, and naturally led me, which I had never thought of before, to enquire after our old master, Mr.

Profody,

Profody, who I found had been dead near two years, and that his wife died a year before him. His death was occasioned by a flogging-bout, which he too unmercifully bestowed upon the posteriors of a gentleman's son, who, in revenge, had harrassed him for his nonjuring principles, to such a degree, that, upon refusing the oaths, he was prohibited, by the archbishop, from teaching a publick school, and died of a broken heart, leaving above 1500l. to his daughter, Mrs. Harrow, who still was living, and well, with her husband. My two old companions had mentioned me with so much affection in their letters, that I thought myself obliged to sit down to write to them; which I did accordingly, and committed my epistles to the care of their fathers, to be sent with theirs.

My dear mother, one morning, taking me into her closet, began, in a rallying way, to enquire after Miss Louisa, and into the particulars of our correspondence. I was too much convinced of her prudence and affection, and her regard to that amiable lady, to make a secret to her of the progress I had made in my love, and the happy situation my heart was in; mingling my account with such encomiums upon the object of my adoration, and such involuntary raptures, and elevation of expression, that she could not help perceiving how nearly I was affected with what I said. The thoughts, though distant, of this alliance, gave her exquisite pleasure; and though she gave me many cautions to moderate my extravagant and overbearing tumults of soul, yet she concluded in assuring me, that the dear creature had such just notions, and so sincere a regard to whatever she said, that no human means were ever likely to disturb our union, and, no doubt, Providence had determined we should be happy in each other. She knew too well the delicacy of my father's temper, to need any injunctions to keep the matter a secret from him; and promised me, that in my absence at London she would endeavour more and more to cultivate the good opinion and esteem that Louisa had conceived of me: I embraced the excellent woman with unfeigned transport, and methought this confidence I had re-

posed in her, made her more my mother than she was before.

When we came down stairs, a letter was given me, which had been left by a countryman; the direction was almost unintelligible, but, opening it, I found it to this effect.

‘SUR,

‘I Give youe these notis to take
‘caree of youer selfe, for Squier
‘Riche has resolved to ha youer harts
‘bloud, and I am one of thouse hir’d
‘to dispatch you; and you may be
‘sure, if you can bee catch’d, you
‘will note iscap, as you did the tim
‘afor. I honor youer faather, which
‘is the reson of these notis

‘From your well-wisher,

‘A. B.

‘Befure alwayes to go well armud.’

This advice startled me, as it convinced me that this base and cowardly wretch had resolved to get rid of me, one way or other; and I communicated it to Mr. Diaper, who determined I should never go to Sir Walter's without him in my company, and both well armed: upon consideration, we resolved not to discover the matter to that gentleman, till we could, by some accident or other, get one of his emissaries into our hands to confront him, as he was so much beloved by him. We deplored the unhappiness he was under to be so blinded to his wicked disposition, as to entertain a thought of sacrificing his excellent daughter to so perfectly brutal a villain. I should have sought him out in the first motions of my rage, and, upon his declining a fair combat, have pinned him to the earth, had not my friend represented the imprudence of such a resolution, which obliged me to desist.

CHAP. XXV.

SIR WALTER SURPRIZES THE
TWO LOVERS—HIS BEHAVIOUR
THEREON — IS FORBID THE
HOUSE—THEY CORRESPOND BY
LETTER — THEIR CORRESPON-
DENCE

DENCE DISCOVERED—HER WOMAN DISCHARGED—SHE IS PRIVATELY CONVEYED AWAY.

I Communicated the foregoing letter the next day to my Louisa; and, at the same time, informed her, that I must be torn from all the pleasure I enjoyed in her loved society, for some time; giving her an account of the reasons for our unexpected departure from Yorkshire: she condoled with my friend in his loss; but said so many inspiring things to comfort him, that grief soon fled, being driven away by the influence of her persuasive eloquence and enlivening smiles. When he had sat with us some time, he retired to seek Mr. Sharpley, who had also accompanied us, promising to call for me in the evening. My Louisa was greatly pleased with the precautions I took to bring my friend with me, and insisted I should never come there, or go any where else, without him. ‘Mean and low designing men,’ says she, ‘are more artful than a man of a generous spirit will permit himself to become, even for his own safety; and no wretch so low, but may, one time or other, find an opportunity to wreck his malice and ill-will on the person he hates.’ Her apprehensions cast her into so profound a melancholy, that I was alarmed, and blamed myself for giving her so much pain, by letting her into the secret of the letter; it even operated so far, as to draw a shower of tears from her fair eyes: I clasped her tenderly in my arms, and she reclined her lovely face upon my shoulder, whilst I endeavoured, with my utmost art, to soothe her forboding fears. Just as we were in this posture, unluckily Sir Walter opened the door of the room, with such suddenness, that we could not adjust ourselves, before he had taken a full view of our attitude; and, after a silent look of indignation, returned the way he came. I must own I was never so discomposed in my life, and my charming mistress trembled from head to foot: we knew his obstinate, over-bearing, resolute temper; too well, to doubt the consequences of this discovery; and our apprehensions were not permitted to have a long scope, for, in

less than twenty minutes, a footman brought me this short note.

‘SIR,

‘AFTER what I have just beheld, you will not think it strange that I desire you forthwith to depart my house, and never to enter my doors again.

‘WALTER RICH.’

In the condition I was, I hardly knew what I did; but, to gain a few minutes time for reflection, I wrote the following answer.

‘DEAR SIR,

‘I Beg the favour to be introduced to you, and that you would indulge me with two or three words in my defence; you may think me to blame, when, really, I am far from any design to disturb your peace, but would rather lose my life, than cause so kind and good a friend a moment’s uneasiness. I am, Sir, your most affectionate humble servant,

‘JOS. THOMPSON.’

The footman told me, with great concern, that his master and the squire were together, and that he never saw him in so great a passion before. ‘Lord, Sir!’ says the fellow, very innocently, ‘I hope you are not going to fight; we all love you, and hope no mischief will happen between you and master.’ Whilst he was gone, Louisa told me, she believed it would be in vain to strive to bring him to reason at present, and advised me to go; the rather, as she hoped my absence, and what she had to say to him, would calm his rage; ‘But, let what will happen, Fidele,’ (that was the name of her maid) ‘shall bring you a line to-morrow, if she can without suspicion: depend upon it,’ added the lovely creature, ‘I will never forget my vow.’ I was going to return her my acknowledgments, in the tenderest manner, when the footman returned, with another written message, to this effect,

‘I Would have you quit these territories this minute, for I cannot answer for it else, that I may not act somewhat

‘ somewhat towards you that would
 ‘ violate the common rights of hospi-
 ‘ tality; hospitality, did I say! nothing
 ‘ of that kind is due to a deceiver, an
 ‘ hypocrite, and a villain.

‘ W. R.’

Finding it in vain to persist, I took
 a tender adieu of my heavenly Louisa;
 and we both mingled our tears toge-
 ther, apprehensive of what we had to
 go through, which filled my soul with
 a gloomy train of horrid ideas.

I desired the same footman to deliver
 him this answer, however, which was
 all the distraction I was under would
 suffer me to write.

‘ SIR,

‘ YOU are certainly seduced to
 ‘ your own unhappiness, by the
 ‘ false and malicious insinuations of
 ‘ that base wretch your nephew, who
 ‘ has, for what reason I cannot tell,
 ‘ even attacked my life by ruffians,
 ‘ and is meditating another exploit of
 ‘ the same kind. Believe me, Sir,
 ‘ your excellent daughter has done
 ‘ nothing contrary to the rules of
 ‘ prudence and virtue, discretion and
 ‘ duty; and you will find you have
 ‘ greatly wronged *your affectionate*
 ‘ *humble servant*,

‘ JOS. THOMPSON.

‘ P. S. I hope, Sir, if only for the
 ‘ sake of your own peace of
 ‘ mind, when your passion is a
 ‘ little abated, you will hear
 ‘ what I have to say. What I
 ‘ have hinted about your kinf-
 ‘ man I am ready at any time to
 ‘ prove.’

Oh! what pangs I suffered at this
 cruel period, the source to me of so
 many succeeding misfortunes; a thou-
 sand times I was near laying violent
 hands upon myself for my indiscretion,
 and then again I excused myself by the
 consideration, that I thought Sir Wal-
 ter abroad as well as his daughter, he
 having left word, he should not re-
 turn till evening, which was the reason
 we were caught in so unguarded a
 manner: thence I could not help re-
 flecting, that his saying he should be
 out so long was only a feint, in order
 to surprize us, the source of which I

immediately concluded to be the squire.
 I was in an hundred minds to return
 and take speedy vengeance on him, or
 die in the attempt; but then the
 thoughts of my Louisa’s displeasure
 checked the rash design, and the dan-
 ger of farther irritating her father
 against her. ‘ Wretch, that I was,’ I
 could not help exclaiming, ‘ to imagine
 ‘ Heaven would be propitious to me,
 ‘ stained with the guilt of a thousand
 ‘ crimes and enormities! Could I think
 ‘ that it had destined me so much per-
 ‘ fection, without throwing innumera-
 ‘ ble difficulties and discouragements
 ‘ in my way, as a just punishment for
 ‘ my presumption? No, I see plainly
 ‘ this is only a taste of the miseries it
 ‘ has in reserve for me.’

When I got home, I entered pri-
 vately, and threw myself all bathed in
 tears upon my bed, where I gave full
 play to the melancholy and distraction
 of my breast, till my very brain be-
 came disordered; and God knows how
 far my desperation would have carried
 me, but for my friend, who acciden-
 tally came through my apartment,
 which was the way to his own. If he
 was surprized to see me at home so soon,
 he was much more amazed to see the
 condition I was in, and with great
 precipitation demanded the reason of
 the extravagances he heard and saw
 me guilty of; which when I had ac-
 quainted him with, he sympathized
 with me, on this unlucky misfortune,
 in a truly sensible manner; but put me
 in mind of the folly of resigning my-
 self to fruitless and unavailing com-
 plaints and tears; that I ought to wait
 with patience till I heard from Louisa;
 and that possibly from her intelligence
 ways might be thought of to bring Sir
 Walter into a better temper, and, by
 exposing the villainy of his nephew,
 open his eyes to all the absurdities he
 was guilty of, in so steadily persisting
 to bring about what would render his
 amiable daughter so infinitely and woe-
 fully wretched. I became somewhat
 calmer at these encouraging words, and
 composed myself, as well as I could,
 in expectation of hearing from the idol
 of my soul, counting every moment an
 age till I was convinced of her welfare
 and safety. At length Fidele arrived,
 and brought me a letter from my an-
 gel, which I kissed with transport;
 and hugged the poor girl in a joyful
 manner.

manner, over and over again, and thought I had great reason to be comforted, when I found the contents as follow—

‘SIR,

‘AFTER you left the house, my father called me into his chamber, and, with less passion than I expected, taxed me with indulging an affection for you, which crossed all his measures; inveighed against you in the bitterest manner, and commanded me never to think of or speak to you more. In the best terms I could (though I was greatly concerned and frightened) I endeavoured to moderate his suspicions; but my sincerity, and the regard I pay to truth, would not suffer me to deny the impressions I had received in your favour, though at the same time I assured him I would never think of you in a way he should disapprove, or enter into any farther engagements with you than were perfectly innocent. This raised his fury to a pitch that made me tremble; and he told me, that he intended I should have a regard only to his nomination, and commanded me to look upon my cousin, as a man he was resolved to make my husband very shortly. I fell on my knees, and vowed I could not entertain the most distant idea of the wretch he mentioned with patience, and found my posture and the tears I shed had somewhat moved him; and, taking advantage of the lucky moment, drew from him a promise never to force my hand where I could not bestow my heart, I protesting I would not marry another than he should approve. He, however, firmly persisted in his resolves, that I should never correspond or speak to you, to which, alas! I gave a silent approbation, on pain of being denied the little liberties I enjoy. Ah, Mr. Thompson! what a situation am I in, divided thus, between love and duty! Yet let me once more assure you, that you, and only you, can, or shall, employ the thoughts of *your*

‘LOUISA.’

Oh! how I, raptured, kissed the dear name, that subscribed these ten-

der, sensible, and moving lines, and wrote with great haste this answer, which Fidele immediately returned with to her lady—

‘DEAREST AND MOST AMIABLE
‘CREATURE,

‘WHAT miseries I have suffered to this blissful moment, in which you so generously repeat your vows of constancy and affection, words are too faint to describe! Ah, charming Louisa! can there be greater torment to a man that loves as I do, than to be denied the happiness of seeing and conversing with the adorable object of his passion? The torments, that the damned are said to undergo, is a feeling consciousness of the joys and ineffable delights of the blessed, and a privation of the participation of those joys for ever, which so strongly is working in their ideas. Where, alas! now are the improving pleasures that flowed over my soul, when I heard my Louisa’s heavenly accents, her melodious, melting strains? Oh, I am tortured, even to madness, at the painful reflection of being deprived of thy sight, without hope of returning to it again! But sure, Heaven, who must be propitious to so pure an image of its own perfections, will at length accord to thy wishes, and make thee happy as thy virtues and goodness deserve. My lovely fair, preserve the remembrance of me in your mind, till I can some way or other find a way to soothe your cruel father’s relentless rage; and let me, at least in this endearing manner, frequently converse with my all of happiness I e’er desire. The distraction of my mind is too great to write more distinctly; but believe I am ever thy most tender, faithful, and eternally constant adorer, whilst I can subscribe the name of

‘JOSEPH THOMPSON.’

I pestered Fidele with an hundred questions, whilst I was writing, breaking off and writing again, every minute, with such sudden starts of joy and movements of sorrow, that the faithful creature was affected, even to tears, and begged me, for her lady’s sake, to be more composed and calm, which

which I promised her I would. I was now ever, in private, pouring out my complaints, and setting forth my passion to the object of my wishes. Fidele had scarce time to do any thing else than to carry our messages and letters to each other, which she did with so much willingness and affection, that the presents I forced upon her, and which she ever modestly would have declined accepting, were but a poor reward for her labours; though her lady also, whom she had been brought up with, was profusely generous and grateful to her. Our intercourse was carried on thus for some days without interruption, and I received fresh proofs of the consideration this delightful woman had for me; her letters were filled with such exalted sentiments, such refined notions of things, that my admiration was almost equal to my love, and I died with languishing desires to see her: this distant way of conversing only served to heighten these longings; but I was soon robbed of even this remaining consolation, this only refuge from despair; and one fatal moment involved me in a series of miseries that were dreadfully severe. The squire, whose suspicions made him ever watchful, and who was quite incensed at the total loss of the favour of Louisa, who would never sit a moment with him but when her father was in company, and gave him every day fresh marks of her detestation and abhorrence, could not fail to observe the frequent journies Fidele made from home, and, imparting his surmises to Sir Walter, that she brought and carried letters to and from his daughter and me, they agreed to watch her motions more narrowly; and one evening, in her return, they forcibly inspected her pockets, and found a letter from me, full of the expressions of my love and gratitude to my charmer, for her kindness and sensibility of my sufferings; which having read, Sir Walter loaded his daughter with reproaches and cruel upbraidings, and even went so far in his fury, as to vow revenge upon her minion, as he called me, wherever he found me; and immediately, notwithstanding all her tears and supplications, turned Fidele out of his house, who came to me in the

utmost agony and distraction, at being thus forced to leave her dear mistress. It was now that my rage exceeded all bounds; I raved and tore in so violent a manner, that my friend could not abate by all his kind lessons of advice and caution. I determined to seek this villain, this bane to my future expectations, and sacrifice him to the injuries of my Louisa; and accordingly was going to put my design in execution, having got over two or three fields on my way to Sir Walter's, armed with a pair of pistols, one of which I resolved he should make choice of, or I would put him to death without mercy, when I was accosted by a footman, whom I knew to be Sir Walter's, and who in a trembling manner gave me this billet—

‘DEAR SIR,

‘I Have just time to send you word
‘by this compassionate domestick,
‘that I am now going to be conveyed
‘to my aunt's in Somersetshire, the
‘coach waiting at the gate for that
‘purpose.—Heavens, what outrages
‘have I endured! But, be sure you
‘behave with prudence, and don't
‘suffer yourself to be transported to
‘any rashness; for, depend upon it,
‘nothing shall ever force me to be
‘other than your

‘LOUISA.

‘I fear my tears have rendered this
‘scroll unintelligible—take care of
‘my poor Fidele, and hope happier
‘moments.’

CHAP. XXVI.

HE PURSUES AFTER HER—MEETS
SQUIRE RICH—DARES HIM TO
COMBAT, WHICH HE, COWARD-
LIKE, REFUSES—PREPARES TO
PUNISH HIM, BUT HE ESCAPES
—IS OVERTAKEN—HE FIRES AT
HIM, AND BRINGS HIM DOWN—
IS KNOCKED OFF HIS HORSE BY
ONE OF THE SQUIRE'S ATTEND-
ANTS HIMSELF—FOUND BY CER-
TAIN PASSENGERS IN A BLOODY
CONDITION, WHO CONVEY HIM
TO THEIR HOUSE IN THEIR CHA-
M. RIOT—

RIOT—IS KNOWN BY A LADY,
WHOM HE IN VAIN ENDEAVOURS
TO RECOLLECT.

MY rage, notwithstanding these injunctions of my Louisa, was too great for expression, and choked up my voice, and my breast swelled with boiling choler; I just had patience to enquire if the coach was gone, which he resolved me in the affirmative, and to ask which road it had taken; which I no sooner understood, than without a single word more I returned home, and not entering the house to speak to my friend, or poor Fidele, I saddled my horse, and, mounting, galloped the way I had been directed, breathing nothing but revenge and bloodshed, whilst tears of grief and bitter anguish ran plentifully down my cheeks. I rode with all the speed my horse's legs would permit for two or three hours, when I heard the tread of horses, and, to my inexpressible delight, soon descried the squire and two attendants, who were returning back with great expedition for somewhat they had forgot to take in the hurry. I drew a pistol from my holsters, and crossing the road, which was not very broad, stood prepared to retard his farther progress; and he no sooner saw me, than he stopped short, and turned pale at the tremendous spectacle, whilst I cried out, 'Villain! dismount, and prepare to give me satisfaction for the injuries you have heaped upon me, and the worthiest and best of creatures, and declare where you have carried the charmer of my soul, or this minute is the last I will suffer you to breathe that air you have poisoned by your notorious crimes!' Before he could well recover himself to answer, one of the servants, equally fearful of what might happen to himself, said, that the squire was not concerned in the taking away his young lady, who was a great many miles onwards, under the care of Sir Walter, and that he hoped I would not do any mischief. Without attending to what the servant said, I reiterated my resolution to his master, who, clapping spurs to his horse, with a rapid pace rushed by me, followed by one of the attendants; which I could not prevent, but immediately followed him, and my horse, having the greatest share of heels, soon overtook the flying enemy, who roared

out, for God's sake to spare him, and he would be my friend for ever; but, before the words could well reach my ears, I fired at him, and he fell from his horse; upon which, endeavouring to dismount, I received from behind a blow on the side of the temples with the butt-end of an horse-whip, which laid me senseless amongst the horses feet; but was soon brought to myself, by a number of kicks and blows given with an intention to deprive me of life by the recovered squire, whose fright only had occasioned his fall, and who frequently commanded his men to ride after my horse and get the other pistol, for he was resolved to butcher the dog, before he left him. All this I heard distinctly, till a stroke, like the first, again put me into the same state as before. How long I might lie motionless and dead to all sense of my misfortunes, I cannot possibly determine; but, when I recovered my shattered ideas, the torture of my mind, the oppressive grief of my soul, was too big for utterance, and only broke way in groans, and sighs, and tears: I strove to get upon my legs, but, alas! found myself too weak, with loss of blood, and too much bruised, to attempt it without assistance. Thus then I lay in expectation some compassionate passenger might peradventure pass that way, and in charity convey me to some house where I might get assistance to return home. Oh! how violent was my distraction, and what havoc it made on my weakened and labouring faculties! How mournfully the image of my Louisa floated before my view, in vain imploring my succour and assistance! Then, again, the wretch, who had just left me in this horrid condition, called up all the fierceness and rage inspired by his numerous injuries and wickednesses: 'Yes,' I cried with a faltering voice, 'no place, though ever so sacred, shall screen thee from my resentments; even from the arms of thy uncle will I drag thee, and inflict upon thee the death thou so well deservest, for thy outrages against the best and most lovely of her sex!' These thoughts gave me ease, methought, and allayed my torments, when a chariot, with some domesticks on horseback, appeared in view; and I was no sooner descried, than a gentleman in it, of a mien that commanded respect, alighted, and, approaching me, asked me, with great concern,

concern, how I had come by such barbarous usage, the marks of which were so visible. I essayed to speak once or twice, but my voice failed me; and the gentleman ordered his servants, with great care, to put me into the chariot, gave them directions to drive gently to his house, which was two or three miles farther, and where we arrived in about an hour and an half, and found he had got home before to prepare matters for my reception. I was taken out of the chariot, and carried up to bed; but, as I was supporting through the hall, I heard a female voice, the sound of which seemed very familiar to my ears, exclaim, 'Oh, heavens! what do I see, it is Mr. Thompson!' I turned my head about, but the lady had suddenly retired, leaving me in a maze of conjectures, who this could be who had expressed such a concern, and was so well acquainted with my name and person.

C H A P. XXVII.

THE GREAT CARE THAT IS TAKEN OF HIM BY THE STRANGE GENTLEMAN—HE HAS A REMARKABLE DREAM WHICH OPERATES TOWARDS HIS RECOVERY—UNDERSTANDS WHO HIS GENEROUS BENEFACTOR IS, WHO AMAZES HIM, BY ACKNOWLEDGING A FAVOUR DONE TO HIS LADY.

MY eyes could only intimate to my generous preserver, what a grateful sense I entertained of the assiduity and care he shewed for my safety and recovery; for, though my senses were entirely perfect, my loss of blood had been so great as to deny my tongue the exercise of its office. A surgeon being sent for, he examined my wounds and bruises, and found them considerable enough to put my life to some hazard: what he most apprehended was, that a fever would ensue; and therefore, after he had dressed me, he gave strict charge that I should be kept as calm and composed as possible, and that nobody should speak to me, or engage me to talk, on any account. His orders were obeyed; but the torments of my harrassed and distracted mind had well-nigh baffled all his skill: the idea of my Louisa's loss, and the force that might be used to

make her unhappy, with my total ignorance of the place she was carried to, on one hand, and my rage and resentment against the wretch who had used me so barbarously, on the other, allowed me not a moment's interval of rest. Ten thousand crude and indigested schemes I formed in my distorted imagination, to rescue my mistress, and to punish my enemy: then, again, the absence of my friend, and the situation my sudden and rash disappearing would put my father and mother into, gave me inconceivable pain. Wearied at length with a constant succession of these thoughts, I fell into a slumber, in which, methought, I beheld my lovely maid advancing to meet me in a meadow, diversified on every side with the shining gifts that Flora bestows on the most delightful season of the year: as we approached each other, we discovered, to our mutual surprize, a deep and rapid stream, which our first transports had hindered us from perceiving. Methought we wept at this unexpected difficulty, and I was going to plunge myself into the waves, the more speedily to embrace the charmer of my soul, when, with her usual, placid smile, she repressed my eagerness, by the following words: 'Oh, my Thompson! think, with your wonted good-sense and patience, before you attempt so-fatal an action; if you should meet with death here, in my sight, think what instant misery I should be reduced to: rather let us explore the head of this river, or search on each side, if, perchance, we may meet with some bridge or boat, that will give us a passage to each other's embraces.' I obeyed the sweet phantom, and, looking up, perceived at a little distance, a small barque, which was moored to a tree, on my side of the stream, which I made to with the utmost joy; and, entering, immediately turned it adrift, and prepared to cross to the other shore; which I had no sooner reached, within the boat's length, than I gave a sudden spring, in order to get to land the sooner; but missed my footing, and fell into the water, whence, when I had got out, all wet and tired with the fatigue I had undergone, I had lost the sight of my Louisa, which I began to bewail with all the passionate gestures and language that such a disappointment could inspire; when I heard her

voice calling me, by name, from the bank of the river I had just left to meet her: 'Ah, my much-loved youth! how unhappy your violent temper makes us! Providence, ever propitious to those who put their trust in it, and, with reason and calmness, endeavour to attain it's blessings, never favours the rash and passionate murmurs and attempts of the unthinking and fool-hardy! How often have you promised me to accord to my desires, and, reposing confidence in the truth I have vowed you, wait with patience and resignation the dispensations of Heaven in our favour! Farewel. It is denied me to satisfy our ardent wishes; till you behave with more temperance and moderation than you have hitherto; yet, at length, I must believe we shall be happy.' Here the endearing form disappeared from my view, and I waked in an agony of grief and sorrow: however, this dream had a sudden effect upon my mind, that aided my physician's skill; I looked upon it as a warning from above, to be less violent in my desires; and recollecting how well it tallied with what my Louisa had always inculcated, and particularly in her last melancholy letter, I grew more composed; and, in two or three days, was so altered, as to be able to talk and sit up in my bed. I was prodigiously curious to know what kind hands I had fallen into, and particularly who the lady might be, who had expressed herself with so much seeming emotion at the sight of me. I had seen no female since I had been there, but an elderly matron, who was my nurse; and the gentleman, who seemed more than ordinarily tender of me, was very cautious how he spoke to me, for fear of giving me any disturbance. I now ventured to ask the good woman, my attendant, the name of my benefactor; which she satisfied me in, by letting me know it was Squire Goodwill, and that his seat, where I then was, was called Mount Christian; by which I understood, for I had before heard of the family, that I was about thirty-six miles from my father's, whither I determined the next day to get a message carried to Mr. Diaper. The next morning, when Mr. Goodwill came in to see me, he found me up, and sitting by the fire-side; he ex-

pressed some apprehension that I had got up too soon, and then congratulated me on my recovery in the most polite and good-natured terms. I returned my thanks for the various instances I had experienced of his goodness; and was so much affected with the subject, that I thought I could never acknowledge them enough. He told me not to think myself under any obligation, for that he had done no more than he thought he was obliged to perform to his fellow-creature, under such circumstances, as a man and a Christian; and that he reaped the more pleasure in having been the means of saving my life, from the consideration that I had conferred formerly some favours upon his wife, 'Which,' added he, 'I shall ever retain a very grateful sense of.' I was confused at what he said, not being able to recollect I had ever seen her; which doubt I imparted to him, and told him, though I had reaped the benefit and honour of his friendship, by a deception which had operated so much in my favour, I could not dispense with myself, for my want of sincerity, if I did not undeceive him, by assuring him I had never had the happiness even to see his good lady. He smiled at this, and told me he did not doubt but I should know her at the first sight, and that, the next morning, he would do himself the satisfaction to introduce her to breakfast, an opportunity she had languished for; but was fearful, before, of the surprize doing me hurt.

CHAP. XXVIII.

HE ADVERTISES HIS FRIEND WHERE TO FIND HIM—RECEIVES A VISIT FROM MADAM GOODWILL—HIS AMAZEMENT AT THE SIGHT OF HER—WHO SHE PROVES TO BE—SHE RELATES HER ADVENTURES.

AS soon as Mr. Goodwill had left me, I wrote a letter to my friend Mr. Diaper, acquainting him that I was at Mount Christian, with the occasion of my being there, and every thing that had happened to me, since my precipitate departure from my father's; which I endeavoured to excuse to him, and begged, that without letting our family know my situation, he would

would immediately do me the pleasure to visit me, that I might return in his company; at the same time begging him to put poor Fidele, who had, till now, been entirely out of my thoughts, under the protection of my mother, till my return. This letter I immediately sent by a domestick, whom Mr. Goodwill had been so obliging to furnish me with for that purpose.

I must own I waited with some impatience for the sight of Mrs. Goodwill; there was somewhat so mysterious, I thought, in her knowledge of me, that it very much raised my expectations of the event. I immediately imagined the lady, whose voice and manner I had taken such particular notice of at my being brought in, must be that gentlewoman; and the tone of her voice, being what I thought I was no stranger to, still involved me in more and more perplexity: at length the time arrived, and Mr. Goodwill entered with his spouse, whom I no sooner got up to salute, than I was seized with the utmost admiration and astonishment, discovering in her features the well-known lines of the amiable and unfortunate Mrs. Modish. Her present situation, and the discourse I had had with Mr. Goodwill the morning before, together with the recollection of what had passed between us some years ago, joined to make my ideas a jumbled chaos of odd and unconnected thoughts. She perceived my confusion, and obliging me to sit down, told me she did not wonder at my surprise to see a woman so altered in her circumstances, and in so happy a station, the preceding part of whose life had been attended with so much misery. — ‘I was equally struck,’ continued she, ‘to behold a gentleman I shall ever esteem and value brought to my house in so cruel a condition, which gave me great and uncommon uneasiness and concern. If Mr. Goodwill, who is well acquainted with my history, will permit me, and you have strength enough to bear the recital, I will soon inform you how good Providence has been to me, and how surprizingly I am become, from the most wretched, the most happy woman breathing; and still more so, as it has afforded the late opportunity to shew my regard for Mr. Thompson.’ I returned my thanks for her favours

in the most feeling manner, and signified my desire to hear her adventures; which, Mr. Goodwill being otherwise engaged, and withdrawing, after begging pardon for his abrupt departure, she recited accordingly, in the following manner—

THE ADVENTURES OF MRS. GOODWILL.

‘YOU may remember, Sir, the distress I was in upon being met by my brother-in-law, as I was returning from a country-walk with you, and that afterwards I sent you a mournful letter, which was dictated by my concern, as well for you as myself; for Mr. Modish was full of rage, that I would not discover who you was, and where you lived, vowing the utmost revenge for the wrongs he supposed you had done him; but I was proof against all his menaces, which made him carry his brutal treatment to a length of outrage, the very remembrance of which makes me tremble; and, about half an hour after, at the utmost hazard, I had sent the letter to you, I was hurried into a coach with himself and his brother, and a box, in which were my cloaths and linen; and a coachman, according to his instructions, drove at a great rate, till we came to a village, about seven miles from town, where we alighted, at the gate of a very large house, which, upon entering, I immediately discovered to be a private mad-house, and you will easily imagine my melancholy and despair, when I over-heard them give instructions to the gentlewoman who kept it to hold me closely confined; and, if it was found needful, to chain me, shave my head, or otherwise treat me, as the nature of my disorder should require; and then, with an angry menace, that he would now wreck his utmost vengeance upon me, they went away, leaving me in a condition that may be more easily imagined than described. The gentlewoman then approached me with an air of the utmost humanity, and bid me be comforted, telling me she already knew the nature of my case, and heartily pitied my unfortunate condition; adding, that she knew too much of the surly disposition

tion of her own husband, and the ills she suffered from it, not to attempt every way to make my captivity as easy as possible, merely from sympathizing in my distress: in short, I found the good woman to be a person of so kind a disposition, and humane behaviour, that I began to think myself more happy than I could have expected. Her husband, indeed, was a brutal tyrant, that, having been used to domineer over and chastise the unfortunate creatures that were put into his hands, practised no decorum towards me, or any one else; and, upon any little pretence, would lock me into my apartment, and swear I was absolutely mad, and should be treated accordingly. To get rid, in some degree, of his abuses, I was advised by his wife, who heartily befriended me, to be as serviceable as I could to them in their domestick affairs; and the scheme took so well, that I was even trusted with the keys, and made the gaoler of my fellow-prisoners. To tell you how many exorbitant crimes I took notice of in the time I continued here, would make your hair stand erect upon your head: wives have been received, as mad, from their husbands, who were tired of them; parents from their children, children from their parents, and used in so brutal a way, as often, really, to produce that disorder, or others that have proved more fatal to them. The keepers of those houses are generally the lowest and most hardened wretches to any sense of pity or regard for mankind, and use the power given to them with a wantonness that is terrible to think of: all the schemes possible are put in execution to get money, and the people in a common workhouse may be said to enjoy better provisions than those whose friends really pay large sums for their support and maintenance. My good comforter and adviser, who was used little better herself, frequently lamented her abject fate, and the necessity she was under to countenance such proceedings, which pained her to the very heart. I think, amongst a great number of reputed lunatics, in the compass of one year and an half, I observed ten or a dozen who were as much in

their senses as I was myself, and were only trepanned into the house, to gratify the base designs, or satiate the revenge and cruelty of their relations. My husband, who allowed them forty pounds a year for my detention and board, never came near me more; and I understood, in about two years, that he had died without making any provision for my future support; so that, consequently, I was at liberty to go where I would. I was now in great distress where to apply for relief; the law, with the small remainder of my friends, seemed too tedious a method to recover some part of my fortune from his relations, to whom he had left every shilling he was worth. My father was dead, and my brother, the only survivor, besides myself, of the family, I knew was too penurious and avaricious to assist me. I once thought of sending word to you of my forlorn condition; but a train of reflections upon the former actions I had been guilty of, and which I really had long regretted, and resolved to forsake; actions I should never have been guilty of, had my good fortune cast me into more worthy, kind, and indulgent hands than those of Mr. Modish; and the injury I might thereby continue to do to a young gentleman, whose temper seemed to destine him to a happier fate than to possess the heart of so unfortunate a woman, determined me against it.—Yes, Mr. Thompson, though I ever loved you since I knew you, yet I was resolved never to indulge my passion in the disorderly and criminal manner I before had done, and therefore forbore to let you know in what way fortune had disposed of me. At last I closed with a proposal made me by kind Mrs. Ludlam, and stooped so low as to accept wages of her husband to assist her in her household concerns, and the superintendency, at times, of the lunatics under his care. I exercised this post, hoping that, as the Almighty had thought proper and fit thus to humble me in this life, he would graciously accept my sincere amendment and sorrow for my past offences, and mercifully receive me into his favour, when it should please him to demand my
wretched

wretched being into his hands who lent it to me. Such serious reflections, and a view of the many miseries human nature is subject to, instances of which I had daily before my eyes, together with the conversation of my amiable mistress, dissipated all my anguish of heart; and I enjoyed a calm in this low situation, that I thought nothing could ever have power to disturb, and which I wished no alteration in, when Providence, doubtless, to reward my resignation to it's will, and to put it into my power, by acts of goodness, to manifest my sincere repentance in a condition more suitable to my former sphere, sent a gentleman one day into our house as a patient, whom it had reserved to make me compleatly happy. A coach stopped at the gate, attended by a number of domesticks in rich liveries, and a gentleman alighted from it of a fine aspect and presence, which seemed altered by a profound melancholy, and a kind of stupidity in his countenance, which one might plainly perceive was far from being natural, and indicated his distemper too strongly to leave any doubt of the loss of his reason. He was led in by two others of the same age nearly with himself; and, after he was introduced into the parlour, they left him to give proper instructions to my master, and were longer in conference than ordinary, talking with seemingly great vehemence and force; and I thought I heard one of them tell my master, that, if he performed their orders strictly, he should, over and above what was agreed on, receive a farther reward of an hundred pounds; to which he made a very profound obedience. I don't know how, but methought this gentleman at first sight interested me in his fate; I commiserated his depravity of mind, and wished he had been happier. I found in myself an inclination to attend upon him, long before his conductors, each of them, put a guinea into my hand, desiring I would add my care to my master and mistress's, that their friend should be kept close, and no one suffered to see him, without he came in company with one of them. I could not help thinking there was somewhat extraordinary in this method and manner of proceeding; and if the gentleman had not shewn all the signs of frenzy in his eyes, and stupid deportment, I should have imagined he had been brought there rather as a sacrifice to some bad design than for a remedy against his disorder. When they left us, my master ordered me to see that a certain room was prepared for him, which was the worst in the house; at which, when I admired, he bid me not be impertinent, but obey his orders. Accordingly, things were made ready, and he was locked in; and, though in no degree outrageous, had the *strait waistcoat* clapped upon him, which he was so far from opposing, that he yielded to every transaction with the passiveness of an infant. Mr. Ludlam then gave me orders to attend him, and bid me not mention him to Dr. Hellebore, (the physician attending our house) as the gentlemen had left what physick was necessary for him, which I was to give him every other morning. Nothing of this, so contrary to our common methods, but still more and more increased my surprise: however, it was not my business to dispute, though when my mistress understood from me my instructions, she could not help saying, with a shake of the head, that she was fearful it was never intended he should go alive out of the house. None of our keepers, either men or women, were suffered to go near him but myself, so great was the confidence our governor reposed in me; and, the first time I went in to him, I found him in a fixed posture, weeping like a young child; and, if I asked him any question, he answered with the same simplicity and inattention which a young child would have done. He was suffered to eat no meat, and his fare was only water-gruel, bread and cheese, and butter, which he never took with the least appetite, and generally left three parts of his day's allowance for me to carry away again. Thus he continued, with his arms constantly confined in the day-time, for near a month, in which I duly attended him, and every other day infused a powder in his water-gruel, which my master gave me for that purpose. He was almost always

dozing,

dozing, and fell away till he was so meagre, that his bones appeared through his skin, and he looked like the picture of death. I frequently carried him provisions privately from our table, which he would eat very greedily, and shewed a much greater relish for than the food appointed him. Things were in this situation, when my master was obliged to go as far as Cambridge for a week, to receive another patient, and both of us totally forgot to mention his leaving the powder, which he delivered only day by day, which I neither knew by name, nor had seen before, though it seemed to be a composition of several kinds of drugs and minerals. This occasioned an omission of three days in the administration of his physick; for it was so long before Mr. Ludlam discovered that he had been guilty of such an oversight; which he no sooner did, but, leaving his business imperfect, he returned in great haste to rectify his neglect: but it was too late; for, the morning of the second day after his departure, our patient began to rave and talk in a very extraordinary manner, and would frequently curse his brother, and several others by name, who had been the source of so many misfortunes, as he mentioned, to him; yet, in his utmost anger, he behaved mildly to me, and, in the evening of that day, told me, in as sober a way as I ever heard any thing told, that he had been abused, and that his brother and some other persons, eager to possess his estate, and to hinder him of a match with some suitable person or other, which they apprehended would baulk their design, had taken the advantage of a debauch, and mingled a soporifick and stupifying powder with his liquor, by which they had reduced him to the state he supposed I first saw him in, and which he did not doubt had been continued by frequent repetitions of the same benumbing and dreadful composition. He begged me, for God's sake, to hear his story; which I did, and, indeed, thought it a very melancholy one. He had been at one mad-house already by the same means, and perceived that they had trepanned him thus again, with a settled intention

to take away his life; adding, that he did not desire me to believe him, till, by hearing the same story over and over from him, without a material omission or variation; and from his temperate behaviour, I was convinced he was not distracted, and that at this time he only enjoyed a lucid interval. He was sensible, he said, that the same stuff had been given him since he had been under our care, but hoped I was not privy to any of this villainy; that he entertained great hopes from the good-natured cast of my mind, that, when I was convinced of the truth of this relation, and who he was, which he would put me into a way of learning, I would use my good offices to procure his liberty; and that, as a recompence for that important service, he would vow, in the most solemn manner, to make me the mistress of himself and fortune, the minute he had settled his affairs.—“I am now alive again, I suppose by some mistake in the execution of their project; and I conjure you, if you know, to tell me how you give me that cursed inslayer of my senses, and that you would omit it for the future, and shew it to me. As a proof that I am perfect in my understanding, I will still counterfeited the stupidity I was subject to, that (for I perceive you are an assistant here) your rogue of a master may not suspect the alteration, that has happily betided.” How impossible is it for you to guess the amazement that seized me upon hearing him! I at first doubted the reality of what I heard; and thought it only some sudden turn of his disorder; but when I recollected every thing I have before related, and compared it with what he had just told me, I could no longer doubt the villainy that had been practised upon the poor gentleman. I therefore assured him of my services, upon his giving me the same proof of his sanity on the morrow, by persisting in the same story; that, as to his name and family, I had heard it from my master, telling him that I found he was a Yorkshire gentleman, of a good estate, whose name was Goodwill; and that what astonished me most was the information I had received

received from the same hands, that, after a proper trial, a commission of lunacy had been awarded against him by the Lord Chancellor. He said, that was, he believed, too true; but, the acts of lunacy had been proved upon him at a time when the aforesaid potions had rendered him for some time incapable of managing his affairs, and returning proper answers to the questions that were asked him; that he had friends, who, if he had an opportunity to see them, would help him in his application to his lordship for a revival of his case, and which could be no otherwise effected than by my affording him my assistance to make his escape to London. His behaviour the next day so thoroughly convinced me that he had been imposed upon, that I told him I was resolved to assist his escape that very evening. His acknowledgments were couched in terms of the most extreme gratitude; and, my confidence in him having given him the use of his arms, he pressed me between them, and protested that he would not, he could not, enjoy the fortune I was returning into his hands, unless I would promise to share it with him. In short, Mr. Thompson, his person, his manner, and a secret inclination my heart could not help, confessing towards so much merit and good-sense as he seemed to be master of, dictated a reply suitable to his wishes; and, when I had told him my own story, he said he could not help observing, that Providence had undoubtedly appointed, by our thus meeting, a period to each of our misfortunes. It was but an hour before Mr. Ludlam's arrival that I privately opened a way for him through the back-door of our house, and that of the garden, whence, after a tender embrace, I saw him, swift as his condition and ill-habit of body would permit, set off for London, over the neighbouring fields, after I had assisted him in tearing the sheets of his bed, and wrenching the bars of the window to which he tied them, to make it appear that he had made his escape without any assistance. Mr. Ludlam returned in the utmost pain for his forgetfulness, and was very ready to charge me with part of the fault;

but when, upon going up stairs, he perceived what had happened, he cursed and swore like a madman; and, but for the expedition he thought himself obliged to use in the pursuit of Mr. Goodwill, would, I believe, have done me some mischief in his passion. He returned, however, jaded and fatigued, the next morning, not being able, to my great joy, to overtake or discover the runaway; and immediately dispatched an express to the brother in Yorkshire with an account of his misfortune, and the next day put an advertisement in the papers, describing Mr. Goodwill's person, and promising a reward to whoever should bring him back. For some days after this, in which his revenge was directed against me, to whom, in spite of all the remonstrances of his wife, he had given warning, and resolved that I should stay there no longer, for my neglect, as he called it, we heard nothing of Mr. Goodwill; but one evening a coach and six stopped, and to my transported view was presented that gentleman himself with another, alighting and entering through the gate. I flew to open the inner-door, and, the minute he entered, he clasped me fondly in his arms, and told his companion, in me he might behold his guardian-angel and preserver, to whom he owed his life and fortune; adding, "I came, my dear creature, with the utmost expedition, to make you a sharer in my happiness: my Lord Chancellor, convinced by my appearance, and the testimony of this good and worthy gentleman, and some other friends, how much he had been imposed upon, and how ill I have been treated, has recalled his commission, and re-instated me in the possession of what I had been so villainously deprived of; and I have yesterday directed a prosecution to be commenced against the parties, who have injured me so grossly, whom I don't fear of bringing to condign punishment. I recollected the obligations you said you were under to Mrs. Ludlam, and on that account have declined any proceedings against the villain her husband, on condition he becomes a witness against my brother, and the other conspirators." Mr. Ludlam, who had

‘just come to the door, and perceived how matters had been carried, and heard these last words, fell upon his knees, and confessed the share he had had in this state of roguery, and that he had undertaken to give him such things as were sent for that purpose, and very bad usage, to deprive him, as soon as possible, of his life. Some things he added, that had passed between the brother and him, which made the two gentlemen lift up their eyes in the utmost astonishment at his unparalleled wickedness. They gave him proper advice upon the occasion, and he was so affected with what was said, that he promised a sincere reformation of his life, and protested a detestation of the many crimes of this sort he had been guilty of. Mr. Goodwill, after bestowing a handsome present upon my good mistress, of whom I took a most tender adieu, carried me with him to London; where, the morning after our arrival, he married me, and I have ever since, with that most excellent of men, enjoyed a life of perfect bliss and satisfaction. We have been at this seat about three months, and understand that the conspirators, fearful of abiding the issue of the law, before they could be secured, have fled over into France, where my spouse thinks to leave them to the remorse of their own consciences, without carrying his just resentment farther against them; nay, has even privately remitted some monies for the use of his wretched brother; so merciful and forgiving is his disposition! Mr. Ludlam is altered for the better, and behaves with more decorum to his good wife, with whom I even now take a pleasure to correspond.—And thus, Mr. Thompson, I have recited this surprizing series of events. My husband knows nothing of our former familiarities, which is the only circumstance I ever hid from his knowledge; and your prudence will direct your behaviour so properly, as neither to give him or myself any uneasiness. I dare answer for it your principles are not altered, that you possess the same veneration for virtue I knew you once did, and which I am sorry we ever offended; which, more than any thing, will ever en-

‘gage me to beg a share of your friendship, and to endeavour, on all occasions, to shew you how much I think myself obliged to promote your interest and welfare both by my own good offices and those of my spouse. I shall be glad to know by what accident you came into the cruel condition my husband found you in, and whether you still pursue the profession I left you engaged in.’

CHAP. XXIX.

HE SATISFIES MRS. GOODWILL'S ENQUIRIES—SHE ENGAGES TO TAKE FIDELIO INTO HER SERVICE—MR. DIAPER ARRIVES, WITH WHOM HE RETURNS TO HIS FATHER'S—RECEIVES A LETTER FROM LOUISA—HIS FRIEND AND HE SET OUT FOR LONDON—THEY ARRIVE AT MR. BELLAIR'S.

THUS this worthy woman concluded her narration, which gave me infinite pleasure: I was grieved at the hardships she had gone through, and sincerely congratulated her on her present happiness, which, indeed, seemed without the least alloy to adulterate it. We both took occasion to admire the ways of Providence, ‘puzzled in mazes, and perplexed with errors;’ nor could I forbear repeating the following lines of the same excellent poet upon the occasion—

‘Our understanding traces them in vain,
‘Lost and bewilder'd in the fruitless search;
‘Nor sees with how much art the windings
‘run,
‘Nor where the regular confusion ends.’

I began to be more resigned to the dispensations of Heaven, perceiving by this recital, which illustrated many former observations, that our designs and counsels are far from being able to produce the effects we desire, unless Providence at the same time superintends and approves our plans of action; and that we should never repine at the little accidents or rubs we meet with in pursuit of our wishes, seeing they may in the end be productive of the very things we think them most retrograde and contrary to.

I thanked her for her professions of regard

regard to me, with warmth and fervour, and related my former adventures, in as brief a manner as possible to her, enlarging upon what had lately happened, and my affection for the charming Louisa. She consoled with me upon the crosses that had befallen us in our loves; but, at the same time, comforted me, by representing how much I ought to be satisfied in the prudence and constancy of that lady, and her promises of being no other's than mine; that all the sallies of rage and passion I had been guilty of, had been an injury to the opinion I ought to entertain of her, and, instead of furthering my wishes, had involved me in the greatest danger and distresses. I was convinced of the truth of what this excellent woman said, and resolved for the future to act with more caution and regard to my Louisa's instructions. She then took notice of what I had related of the grief of Fidele at her being separated from her mistress, and obligingly told me, that she would take her under her care, if I would permit her, till her lady was in a capacity to receive her again into her service. I was charmed with this offer, as I was under a little dilemma, as to the manner I should dispose of that faithful girl, whom my lovely maid had so strongly recommended to my protection, knowing that my father would be too delicate in an affair of this nature, to let her continue about my mother, who otherwise I was sure would have been proud of the opportunity of keeping Fidele with her. Mr. Goodwill, by this time, returned, and the conversation became general; amongst other matters, he said, he was glad to understand I was his countryman; that he recollected to have seen my father, whom he wished for an opportunity to revive his acquaintance with, and hoped, wherever I settled for the future part of my life, I would join with him and Mrs. Goodwill, in maintaining a friendship and correspondence with each other. I was too much honoured by such a proposal to hear it without the utmost returns of thankfulness I could make, by owning my sense of so kind and to me interesting a proposal; for Mr. Goodwill, without dispute, was a gentleman of a very large estate, and as considerable in his interest as most in

the county. I discovered in this and other conversations I had with him, that he was a man of great sense, nice discernment, and had acquired a knowledge of letters, that almost induced me to think he had spent the greatest part of his life in a college. As I grew still better and better, they took me with them in the chariot, and now and then on horseback, and endeavoured, by all the amusements they could invent, to chase away my melancholy, and inspire me with my wonted health. In about a day and an half, my dear friend, who set out with the messenger the minute he received my account where I was, arrived, and his presence seemed to cast a new satisfaction over my mind, that soon helped me to overcome my remaining weakness. Our meeting was very tender and affectionate, and he expressed his grief at seeing so visible an alteration in my countenance; but, when he heard from me every minute circumstance of the cruelties that Squire Rich had acted upon me, he was all distraction, and it was with difficulty I could restrain him from going immediately in search of the villain, to bring him to immediate punishment for his repeated crimes. He was received by my friends with great distinction and respect, they having understood by me his worth, and the mutual friendship that subsisted between us; and they spared no device to make our abode agreeable and entertaining to us. I gave him a succinct account of the adventures of this happy pair, which gave him prodigious pleasure, and opened a field for many excellent observations, by all which he essayed to convince me of the unreasonableness and folly of my late behaviour. I was curious to know how my father and mother took my sudden disappearing, upon which he informed me, that they were both under a consternation that is inexpressible, when they understood the motives and manner of my setting out, which Fidele was able to give them an idea of: as to his part, he said, he had rode in search after me every way, and had employed two or three days in vain and teasing efforts to find me; but that nothing could equal the dread and apprehensions of their foreboding souls, when my horse, which had been stopped by a neighbouring farmer, who had seen me ride

him, was brought home without his rider. My mother fainted, and Fidele wrung her hands in the utmost agony; my father, to whom, at that time, my friend was disclosing my amour, which he thought it now necessary to do, was struck with fear at what might have happened to me, and dispatched messengers every way, but to no purpose, to discover where I was, or what accident might have befallen me; and every one was inconsolable in the family till my letter arrived, which, notwithstanding my injunctions, he thought proper to communicate to my father and mother, which raised their drooping hearts. He farther informed me, that Sir Walter had not returned to his seat, since he went from it, which was the day of my own departure; that my father was quite grieved at my imprudence in involving myself in a passion for Miss Louisa before I was settled in the world; but more particularly blamed me for my rashness, and want of temper, in the pursuit of it: however, he believed, he said, that he was secretly inclined to favour my pretensions, as well from affection to me, as his veneration for the lovely and deserving object of my flame, whose great merit and beauty, he could not help privately owning, were a sufficient inducement for my acting as I had done.

Two days after my friend's arrival, being now able to take the journey, we took leave of Mr. Goodwill and his lady, not without loading them with sincere and hearty acknowledgments for the favours and kindnesses we had received, and making protestations, on all sides, to continue our friendship and acquaintance, accompanied on our parts with repeated promises of waiting upon them again in the country, or as soon as they arrived at their house in London. In the evening we alighted at my father's, and the sight of that neighbourhood well-nigh plunged me into my former melancholy, and drew a profound sigh from the bottom of my heart. My mother received me like one risen from the dead; and poor Fidele, who had staid with her ever since, was in extasies at seeing me again. My father received me also with great affection, but mingled his expressions of joy for my safe arrival with animadversions upon

my folly, in suffering myself to be driven to such headstrong actions by my passion, which, however, he generously said he had not the power to condemn, but only let me know that he thought I ought at least to have been freed from the obligation I was under to my master, before I had suffered love to make such an alteration in me; concluding with rules for the future government of my transports, and injunctions to wait the happy moment, which he said might probably arrive, when Sir Walter might be induced, by his daughter's solicitations, and a view of my increasing worth and merit, to return to his former esteem of me, and consent to make me his son-in-law. I kissed his hand at this flattering conclusion, which seemed to revive my expectations of happiness, and resolved, as near as possible, to conform myself to the rules he had laid down. Fidele and my mother both approved of her going to stay with Mrs. Goodwill, where, accordingly, she went, carrying a letter of compliments from me, and another of thanks from my father, for their goodness to me, after I had made her a handsome present in money, and promised her she should never be at a loss for a friend, till I could restore her to my Louisa. She had not been gone above two hours, when a man, in Sir Walter's livery, delivered me a letter, which I immediately discovered, to my equal amazement and joy, was the writing of my charming Louisa. Finding, by it, I was not to return an answer, I rewarded the servant for his fidelity to his young lady, in the most generous manner, and ventured to ask him if he knew where the squire was gone; and he informed me he was at a neighbouring seat to that where my Louisa resided, where he still lived with Sir Walter, without making any progress with his cousin. I was concerned the distance gave me no liberty to chastise this scoundrel; but it was impossible, and I pleased myself with the thoughts of some future opportunity of gratifying my just and equitable resentment. Never was mortal so inspired as I was by the receipt of this reviving letter, which I kissed and hugged to my bosom, with enthusiastick raptures! Oh, the melting tenderness conveyed in every line! the tender

der fears! the earnest wishes for our happy return to each other! dissolved my very soul away. She informed me of her health, and that her father, content with having removed her from me, allowed her more liberty than she could have expected at her first arrival; that she had engaged this servant to bring me that letter, to which she desired I would not think of returning an answer, as it might occasion, by a discovery, still more unhappiness to her: she sweetly endeavoured to chase away any distrust of her truth and constancy, which might dwell upon my mind; and supposed, soon after I could receive this, I should be obliged to return to London, where she advised me to live as happily as possible, till some future good fortune should put it in our power to satisfy the motions of our hearts. Such a pleasing satisfaction and calm succeeded the receipt of these welcome unexpected lines, that could be equalled by nothing but that ease the sight of my Louisa herself would have inspired, which gave my father and mother, and my friend, a great deal of joy; and now the time of our departure, according to my worthy master's instructions, was near expired, and Mr. Diaper was eager to visit his Miss Bellair, where, according to promise, we were to spend a week, which I could not refuse to this excellent associate. Before we set out, we visited Mr. Goodwill and his lady once more, Mr. Archer, and Mr. Sharpley, and took a farewell of all our friends, who regretted our departure. A thousand times I visited, also, every retreat about Sir Walter's, where I had been so blessed in my Louisa, and sighed her name in every conscious grove! I went to the poor family she had once carried me to see, whom I found in grief for the loss of their benefactress, whose place, at present, I endeavoured to supply, by giving the good woman a sum of money for her immediate purposes, and promising to see them at my return into the country. My mother's tenderness gave her great pain in this separation; but, when Mr. Diaper and myself both assured her that we would obtain leave to take another tour, in four or five months, she was, in some measure, comforted. My father was also moved at parting with us; and, indeed, we were now

so naturalized to the country, that we could hardly bear the thoughts of leaving it ourselves. Our embraces and adieus were sensibly touching, and we set out with my father, Mr. Archer, and Mr. Sharpley, who would insist upon seeing us some miles on our way; but which only served to give us fresh torment, in going through the same tender scene once more.

Now left to ourselves, nothing but love filled our thoughts, and we rode a considerable stage without breaking the silence our contemplations occasioned. The difference, indeed, between my friend's reflections and mine was great; he was, with eager wishes, longing expectations, in the prospect of throwing himself at the feet of his lovely Bellair, whilst I was deploring the immense distance that still divided me from my Louisa, and the various obstacles I had to surmount, before I could even promise myself the happiness of seeing that adorable creature. Thus differently were we employed, till we arrived at Mr. Bellair's, where we were received with more rejoicing and civilities than can well be expressed.

CH A P. XXX.

A GENEROUS PROPOSAL OF MR. BELLAIR'S—MR. DIAPER HAPPY IN THE VIEW OF HIS FUTURE BLISS—THE TENDER PARTING OF THE TWO LOVERS—THEY SET OUT FOR LONDON—ARRIVE THERE—ARE MOST AFFECTIONATELY RECEIVED BY MR. AND MRS. DIAPER.

THIS amiable and worthy pair studied how they could testify their pleasure at our long expected visit; and Miss Sukey, whose charms were more and more improved since I last saw her, contrived a thousand little entertainments for her lover, to fix him as long as possible with her. Our conversations rolled upon the several accidents we had met with in the country; and Mr. Diaper having jocularly told Miss Bellair that I was as much a captive to love, since she saw me, as himself, it opened a way for me to gratify these good and kind friends with a character of my Louisa, and a detail of my past misfortunes, and the
griefs

grievances that at this time oppressed my heart. 'After all you have said,' cries Mr. Bellair, 'I don't see you have so much occasion for despair as you imagine; your principal difficulty seems to lie in gaining Sir Walter's consent to your happiness, which you imagine want of fortune will render an impossibility.' As to that, I believe I may soon promise you a remedy, which I here vow I will administer with the utmost satisfaction. I expect, by the death of an uncle in Leicestershire, who is every day likely to de cease, an increase to my estate, already large enough for this lady and myself, of 1100*l.* a year. If I were to make this privately over to you for some years, which I protest I shall find no regret in doing, would you consent to make an acknowledgment, by paying your friend here 2000*l.* as an increase of my sister's fortune, as soon as it comes into your hands? The term shall be twelve or fourteen years, then to be resumed by me or my heirs, paying a proper consideration upon the death of Sir Walter, for the use of the money arising from the income of the said estate, which also shall be applied to the use of Mr. Diaper and my sister, or their children. What do you say, Thompson?' added he, 'I love you so much, that you shall be welcome to the possession of it, as soon as it falls; and then, I fancy, with that stock of merit, so much in request, Sir Walter will give ear to your suit.'

As I knew this proposal was not merely dictated by mirth, but would have been put in practice, upon my desiring it, as soon as it was in Mr. Bellair's power, I returned him thanks with a mixture of seriousness and jest; and told him I would take as much time to consider of it, as would pass between this and the death of his uncle.

We hunted, fished, and made frequent parties of pleasure, whilst we staid at this gentleman's; and both himself and his lady endeavoured to banish that settled, mournful gloom, that constantly, notwithstanding all my efforts to the contrary, was impressed upon my countenance. As to Mr. Diaper, he was as happy as a man can be, who enjoys the company of the

object of his love; and seemed now to have nothing to fear that could hinder his approaching marriage, which he was to get his father's consent to the minute he arrived in town, and where Mr. Bellair and his family proposed to repair in a month's time at farthest. Miss Sukey was entirely pleased in her choice; and upon his mentioning his father's late loss, which so much affected him, told him, an increase or decrease in his fortune was never capable of making the least impression, to his prejudice, in her bosom; that she did not doubt of being happy with him, and that riches had no share in the affection she professed for him. Her sentiments were agreeable, in that, to her brother's and sister's, who often told my friend, that half what he was likely to possess was enough to make two reasonable beings happy.

The time of our departure came. My friend had perceived it's approach with pain, and was now quite afflicted at the thoughts of leaving his mistress; who, on her side, also, was full of anxiety and uneasiness, which she could not conceal. I have thought since, that Providence permits us to receive some foreboding hints of the ills that are likely to be our portion. I have often, before some sinister event, found a heaviness and dulness, a grief dwelling with me, that I could not account for, just before the blow has fallen upon my head. All the fair prospects these tender lovers had of their felicity, which seemed so near in it's approach, could not console them for this separation, and sighs and tears involuntarily flowed! Alas! too sure a preface of the gathering storms, that were threatening to discharge their force upon them!

Mr. Bellair and his spouse, by their discomposure in parting with us, convinced us how dear we were to them; and I could not help feeling a certain unspeakable regret when I took my leave. We set out, and, nothing particular happening the remainder of our journey, we arrived in London, in perfect health of body, but with other minds than we had carried thence, after an absence of seven months and a few days.

When we came home, the servants hardly knew us, our faces were so tanned; nay, honest Prig, who happened to

to be there at our entrance, swore we had made a voyage into the South Seas, and had brought home the dusky hue of the Spanish Indies. My master and mistress received us with the utmost affection, and endeavoured every way to shew how much they were pleased in our punctual compliance with our orders to return. We visited our acquaintance, and began to resume our several departments in business, which, from so long a disuse, appeared at first very awkward to us.

C H A P. XXXI.

HE GROWS MELANCHOLY—HIS MASTER SUFFERS ANOTHER GREAT LOSS—HIS FRIEND'S DISTRESS THEREON—LETTER TO HIM FROM MISS SUSANNA BELLAIR—MR. DIAPER WRITES TO MR. THOMPSON ON ACCOUNT OF HIS SON'S CONDITION—HIS FATHER WRITES HIM A LETTER WHICH INCREASES HIS DISORDER—MR. DIAPER FAILS—BEHAVIOUR OF THAT WORTHY MAN UPON THE UNFORTUNATE OCCASION—HE GIVES THOMPSON HIS INDENTURES, ACCOMPANIED WITH PROPER ADVICE.

MY master, soon after our arrival, set out for Bristol, to inspect into the affairs of Mr. Traffick, where he staid near a fortnight; but found things so bad, that himself, and the rest of the creditors, were obliged to accept of five shillings in the pound for their demands; which, as that gentleman made it appear to their satisfaction, that his misfortunes flowed from no personal bad conduct, but from unavoidable losses in trade, they made no difficulty of, and suffered him to enter into business again; my master, in the most generous manner imaginable, giving him fresh credit.

My mind so dwelt, ever since my return from the country, upon my charming Louisa, and represented the difficulties I had to encounter to procure the enjoyment of that lovely maid, and the distance she was at from me, with the possibility of her being induced, by absence and threats, to forsake me, in such gloomy and torturing lights, that I fell into so black and

profound a melancholy, as alarmed the whole family for my safety; in vain were all the reasons of my friends, vain were the various avocations business provided, or the several amusements the goodness of Mr. Diaper suffered us to partake of: nothing could remove my fixedness of thought from objects of so terrifying a cast, on which I was brooding perpetually, with an intenseness that shattered my brain. I forgot to correspond with my friends, and hardly ever wrote to any but my mother, whom I pestered with enquiries of Louisa, from time to time, which she was utterly incapable to answer; and were, some of them, so absurd and ridiculous, that the excellent woman wrote me word often, she was fearful my head was disordered, and gave me very proper advice to moderate my grief and disturbance, which she so plainly perceived, but which I was now incapable of attending to. Life hung upon me, and became a burden; I had entertained a notion that it was impossible I should ever be happy: hope, with all its encouraging train of smiling promises, had forsaken my breast, and the cursed fiend Despair tyrannically ruled there, with despotick sway: tears, involuntarily, would frequently trickle from my eyes, and whole hours I used to sit moping in my apartment, and quite stupid with the indulgence I gave to my sorrows. My health declined apace, and I became a mere shadow of my former self, to the great concern of my master and mistress, and the grievous affliction of my dear friend, who was reduced almost to the same state by his sensibility of what I suffered: alas! as great torments were in store for the generous youth; he, too, was destined to undergo his share of pain; and a blow our affairs received, about this time, roused me from my inattention to what passed in the world, and made my consolations as necessary to him, as his had been to me. Of three vessels, the cargoes of which were Mr. Diaper's, we every day expected to arrive from the Streights, with rich returns of merchandize, two of them were taken by Sallee Rovers, and carried into that den of pirates, where they were confiscated by those rapacious Barbarians. This was such a loss as obliged us immediately to stop our payments, in such

such a manner, that our credit suffered greatly; and it well nigh obliged Mr. Diaper to shut up his shop. He bore it himself like a Christian and a philosopher; he could accuse himself of nothing that could impeach his character, and it was an accident that all the foresight in the world could not have guarded against: the ships were not insured, and therefore there was no remedy for the disaster, and he was forced patiently to sit down with the total loss of near 20,000*l*. My friend, however, would receive no comfort; it was the death to all those flattering, delusive hopes he had entertained of his uninterrupted happiness with his dear Bellair. His father had given his consent to the match, had, as a prelude to it, taken him into partnership with him, and he was to have set out in a month to make that beauty his own. He himself had as contemptible an opinion of wealth as it deserves; but his ambition centered solely in making her rich and happy, and extending the agreeable views of independency and fortune to their future offspring. No wonder if the abortion of all these schemes, and the loss of so engaging prospects, should give him the severest tortures! I, on my side, could not but reflect that the misfortune was also greatly mine; all my hopes now of being taken into the partnership, which my worthy master, as well as his son, had promised me I should, were in a manner extinct, and I despaired, more than ever, of possessing my Louisa. Fortune seemed to obstruct me in all my views and designs; but I bore up under it, with more constancy than I could ever flatter myself I should be able to do; and applied myself, by all the means in my power, to comfort my young master; but he was inconsolable, and, in the first agonies of his soul, wrote word to Miss Sukey of the bitter loss, in terms of mingled love and despair. I cannot help giving the world the remarkable answer he received from that lady, which in some measure, when every thing else failed, restored him to some relish for life.

‘DEAR SIR,

‘I Received your melancholy letter, with a sincere grief and sensibility of your late misfortunes; but

‘don’t mistake me, it was not occasioned at all by my being likely to suffer by the blow; far from it, my love for Mr. Diaper was built upon other foundations than the hopes of riches, or the blandishments of fortune; your personal merit, Sir, your worth, your virtue, and good sense, were the inducements to give you my heart, and no accident of this kind can ever deprive you of it. A little, Sir, a very little portion of wealth is sufficient to make a pair of reasonable creatures happy; or, we will suppose you stripped of the common needs of life, yet I can be pleased and happy, whilst I am sensible your mind is the same. If we must defer our union longer on this account, let us bear it with becoming patience, and depend upon it nothing shall ever alter my sentiments towards you, or alienate my affection from you, which is too pure to suffer decay. My fortune you are acquainted with already, and I hope you will think it somewhat more than a compliment, when, with my brother’s leave, I desire you would take it, even just now, into your hands, if any application of it can be of service to you; I will make you my steward and guardian, but only take notice of this, that you will be obliged to provide some how for the owner, if it should not thrive in your hands, but follow the fortune of what you have already lost. Dear Sir, let me desire you to exercise the same resignation to the will of Providence that I do, and cheerfully bear up under ills that cannot now be cured, but may in time be overcome. Adieu for the present, and be assured, that Mr. Diaper is ever in the mind and thoughts of his affectionate

‘SUSANNA BELLAIR.’

‘Disinterested creature! generous maid! may thy excellences prove a pattern to thy sex, and atone for the faults of a thousand less worthy fair-ones! Cursed be the pen that prophanes the glorious, the resplendent kind, with malicious slander or envenomed satire! May that writer, who arraigns them all without distinction, never be revived by their cheering

' chearing graces! may their delicate
 ' softness of soul, and innate genero-
 ' sity, never soothe his black, his
 ' gloomy ideas, or chase away his
 ' meditative spleen! Come, ye balmy
 ' influences, ye beings breathing in-
 ' effable delight and fair unclouded
 ' peace, in all your radiant beauties,
 ' and gild each dusky scene of mortal
 ' woe! Transported with the know-
 ' ledge of your faithfulness and truth,
 ' your natural rectitude of sentiment,
 ' your nice discernment, and the joys
 ' you diffuse around you, I, raptured,
 ' hail that great creating Power,
 ' whose works were cheerless dark,
 ' till you were formed, for such a pre-
 ' cious valued gift as you. It was
 ' then that lordly man began to live,
 ' began to taste of happiness, sur-
 ' passed by none but that of Heaven
 ' itself! it was you refined his gross
 ' material frame, and taught the every
 ' art that meliorates our souls; you
 ' are the fountains whence all the
 ' *sweet civilities of life* derive their
 ' spring and source! Pain, with all
 ' it's writhing pangs, it's fell distor-
 ' tions, vanishes before your gladden-
 ' ing smiles; and carking care, corroding
 ' melancholy, with all it's brood-
 ' ing train of dark chimeras, fly your
 ' enlivening glances!

" Oh, woman! lovely woman! nature form'd
 " you
 " To temper man, we had been brutes with-
 " out you."

My friend was no sooner restored to
 himself, than, as if we were alternately
 to want each other's aid, I drooped
 again, and resigned myself, with more
 violence than before, to all the gloom
 my dark ideas spread around me;
 which went so far as to render me al-
 most incapable even of business, or
 common conversation. My master,
 good man, who used all his art to draw
 me from my untoward state, by reason
 and argument, and who partly guessed
 the condition of my mind, by what he
 had heard pass between me and his son
 at several times, thought he ought to
 neglect no longer informing my father
 of my situation, and his fears of the
 consequences; and accordingly wrote
 him word, that if he thought the coun-
 try would contribute to restore me to
 myself, however he wanted me in Lon-

don, I should have liberty to return
 into Yorkshire for some time. I was
 not apprized of this, till one morning
 he gave me a letter from home, which
 came inclosed in an answer to him;
 which, when he gave me, he told me
 he feared it contained some news that
 would be very shocking to me; but
 put me in mind, that we were with pa-
 tience to bear the misfortunes Heaven
 permitted to fall upon us, and not by
 idle murmurs against it's dispensations,
 or a too great indulgence of sorrow, to
 provoke still more it's displeasure. I
 was stunned with this preface, but, O
 heaven and earth! what was my situa-
 tion when I read the following lines!

MY DEAR SON,

' WHEN I reflect upon the vanity
 ' and frailty of all mortal joys,
 ' the uncertainty of life, the pains we
 ' daily, hourly, struggle with, the
 ' damp that succeeds our full-blown
 ' hopes, and the brevity of our exist-
 ' ence here, how much I despise the
 ' avidity and eagerness we express in
 ' our worldly pursuits! *Man that is*
 ' *born of a woman bath but a short*
 ' *time to live, and is full of misery*, is
 ' the sentence that awaits us at our
 ' births, and we feel the fatal effects
 ' of it, through the whole course of
 ' our pilgrimage. Let us, then, be re-
 ' signed to the disposal of that Being,
 ' who orders every thing aright, and
 ' *whose ways are past finding out*; let
 ' us press forward to the end of our
 ' race, and not suffer the accidents
 ' that befall us here, to disconcert us
 ' in our pursuits of a happier and bet-
 ' ter state, which surely awaits us at
 ' the appointed time. Let us reflect
 ' that we are formed for such purposes
 ' in this life, as immoderate grief and
 ' overbearing sorrow will unfit us for;
 ' and that we commit the greatest of
 ' crimes, if we incapacitate ourselves
 ' for those uses for which Providence
 ' has designed us. You are young,
 ' you are capable of being serviceable
 ' to yourself and others; God has
 ' given you an upright mind and an
 ' understanding heart; strive to exer-
 ' cise those gifts in a proper manner,
 ' by applying yourself to the duties
 ' of your profession. I command you
 ' to do so as a father, I exhort you as
 ' a divine, I conjure you as a Chris-
 ' tian,

'tian, and I call upon you as a phi-
 'losopher! Oh, my son! I must, not-
 'withstanding, confess my weakness
 'as a man, and feel for you all the
 'pains the mournful intelligence I am
 'going to give you will occasion you!
 'Your poor Louisa is no more—a fa-
 'tal illness carried her to the joys of
 'immortality, near a fortnight ago—
 'in Somersetshire. All the country
 'mourns the loss of so much good-
 'ness and perfection, and your poor
 'mother is inconsolable on her own
 'account, and distracted for fear of
 'the consequences it may produce to
 'you. We received this advice from
 'Sir Walter himself, who says, now,
 'he wishes some things had not hap-
 'pened, which he fears gave her great
 'uneasiness: he seems to feel all the
 'grief that a father must feel on such
 'an occasion; and as he, of his own
 'accord, sent for me to acquaint me
 'with the news, I endeavour all I can
 'to console him. Remember, son,
 'the wise conduct and excellent beha-
 'viour of that prudent maid we have
 'so immaturely lost; think how she
 'would have behaved, had she heard
 'the news of your decease; she would
 'have mourned greatly, no doubt;
 'but her sentiments of religion, and
 'her duty to God, were too strongly
 'impressed upon her mind to permit
 'her to indulge her bewailings to a
 'criminal excess. Look upon your-
 'self as still obliged to pursue the
 'maxims I am sure she must have
 'frequently laid down to you, and
 'strive to make up her loss to the
 'world, by copying all her virtues.
 'Your master is under as great afflic-
 'tion for you as I am: consider, he
 'now wants your service more than
 'ever, and let your gratitude to him,
 'your love of your worthy friend,
 'your respect to me and your mother,
 'and your own good, rouse you from
 'unavailing sorrow and impious com-
 'plaints against the conduct of Provi-
 'dence. Sir Walter has discarded the
 'squire; and, which is somewhat ex-
 'traordinary, presents his love to you,
 'and wishes you would forget the in-
 'juries you have received from him.
 'I am, your ever-affectionate and ten-
 'der father,

• WILLIAM THOMPSON.

The ravings of the damned, the
 howls of the tortured wretch in the
 vaults of the cruel Inquisition, the
 starts of the bewildered madman foam-
 ing in his fits of frenzy, methinks,
 could be no more than a picture of
 what I felt at the reading of this let-
 ter, which soon flung me into a vio-
 lent fever, in the deliriums of which
 I incessantly called out upon my lovely
 and unfortunate Louisa. I recovered,
 indeed, by the strength of my consti-
 tution, the care of my physicians, and
 the kind attendance of the family,
 which was involved in more grief on
 my account, than on account of their
 own misfortunes: but my mind, quite
 jaded and fatigued, sunk into a state
 of stupid quietism, and I barely moved
 as it were by clock-work; and yet,
 that I might have still an added weight
 of affliction, about this time, my dear-
 est master, pressed on every side by his
 creditors, was forced to consent to a
statute of bankruptcy, in which his son
 was joined. How serenely, with what
 fortitude this good man behaved under
 so grievous a calamity, would shame
 description; he gave way to no fretful
 repinings, but seemed to meet the ruin
 of his affairs with a composure that
 astonished every one that knew the
 happiness and prosperity he had fallen
 from! If he had any great concern, it
 was on my friend's account; who, by
 this mortifying stroke, was reduced to
 a necessity of beginning the world
 anew, and who felt more pungent sor-
 row than can be expressed. I was so
 afflicted at the ill fortune of this well-
 beloved family, with whose fate my
 own was so linked, that I was incapa-
 ble either of giving or receiving com-
 fort; and my master even descended so
 far, as to endeavour to moderate the
 transports of my sorrow, with a ten-
 derness that only served to increase my
 trouble. When the commissioners
 had concluded their proceedings, every
 creditor received sixteen shillings in the
 pound, and were so affected with the
 fairness, justice, and equity of Mr.
 Diaper's proceedings, and the regu-
 larity of his accounts, that they pro-
 fered to take half the sum, if he
 would again enter into trade; but he
 was now advanced in years, and ex-
 pressed so much aversion to launching
 out again into an ocean of difficulties,

that they found it in vain to persuade him, and therefore made my friend a present of three hundred guineas, in token of their respect. My master had still his wife's jointure to live upon, which he said would be abundantly sufficient to make the remainder of his days happy, in a retreat, free from the noise, hurry, and uncertainties, of the busy life he had led, and which now he was quite sick of: it was near 200*l. per ann.* on which the creditors could form no pretensions, and, indeed, were so far from doing it, that they made his lady a present of great part of her plate, and other valuable moveables. When all the infernal hurry of this affair was over, my master called me to him one morning, and thus addressed me. 'My dear Thompson, you see the end of all my pains and care to provide, as I intended to do, for your friend, and the disappointments that have ruined my schemes of happiness; and that now I have left but just enough in the world to live in a genteel privacy with my family: alas! my dear, one of my greatest troubles springs from the knowledge I have, that I cannot do the justice I intended to your merit, fidelity, and the affection you have ever shewn to me and mine, which, however, I hope Heaven will graciously reward in the future course of your life.' Here the good man wept, and my tears flowed without intermission: I could just bring out, 'Oh, Sir—you are too kind—I don't deserve a thought of yours should be thrown away upon me; your misfortunes press me too hard! I shall never overcome them.'—'Say not so, child, I beseech you,' he replied; and, after some pause, went on thus. 'I had fondly hoped to have made you for ever one of my family, as you know, by taking you into the business, which I should then have retired from, and left to you and my son, whose love to you is greater than that of a brother; but you see Providence has otherwise disposed of events, and we must rest contented. My son, I find, is quite averse to following his business, and I am making interest to get him to go to the East Indies, in quality of one of the Company's supercargoes; in which

post he imagines he may have an opportunity of acquiring another fortune, sufficient to make him happy with the young lady you are acquainted with. I will ever study to do you, my dear, all the service I am capable of; and my interest in the world, I thank God, is not in the least affected by my late disaster. I am sensible you must wait your good father's pleasure, before you can determine as to your destination; and, till you hear from him, let my house in the country be your home: I here give you up your indenture, and set you free from all obligations of servitude; you have behaved too well for me to deny you the little time that is to run of the seven years, and I would not oblige you to serve any one else as an apprentice. I hope your mind will recover its former serenity, and I advise you to take care of your conduct, seeing, if you enter into business, as I suppose you intend, you will find a fair character will ever be your greatest good in all the dealings you will be engaged in. You are now your own master; and I hope you will behave in such a manner, as to be an honour and credit to me, a blessing to your parents, and of service to mankind. My heart was so full, I could return no other answer, than my kissing his hand, and bathing it with my tears; and the idea of the total loss of my friend's company (for I had never heard him mention his design of going abroad) was more than I could well bear. My mistress and her son soon after entered the room, and gave me joy of my freedom; which I informed them was not a state at all different from what I had ever enjoyed, from the first minute I was bound apprentice, by their kindness and goodness. Mr. Diaper would provide a supper upon the occasion, and we spent the night as agreeably as we could be supposed to do after all the late occurrences.

C H A P. XXXII.

MR. DIAPER DISCOVERS HIS PURPOSE TO THOMPSON—HE TAKES LEAVE OF MISS BELLAIR—IS

② ACCOMPANIED

ACCOMPANIED TO GRAVESEND
BY THOMPSON AND PRIG—THEIR
TENDER FAREWEL — HE EM-
BARKS FOR CHINA — MEETS
WITH AN OLD ACQUAINTANCE
AT BLACKWALL—HER STORY,
AND DEATH — THEY SAVE A
WOMAN FROM DROWNING —
WHO SHE PROVES TO BE—SE-
QUEL OF HER STORY.

AS soon as my friend and myself were alone, I poured out my complaints of his unkindness to me, in designing to leave me alone and forlorn, to tempt the rage of angry seas, and tempestuous skies, with all the dangers of unusual climates: he told me he had resolved not to apprise me of it till he was sure of the time of his going, as he could not bear to anticipate my uneasiness; that he had great conflicts with himself before he came to the resolution of going abroad, but found it the readiest way to regain the state he had lost, and to make himself, and his charming Bellair, happy. I told him I thought he had no occasion to attempt, by this way, to acquire a fortune; that he might be sure of Miss Sukey's venturing all for his sake, and that, as my father would, no doubt, put me into trade with five or six thousand pounds, which should be employed in our mutual behoof, with his father's set of customers, and our assiduity, we might soon be in a condition not to be despised. He embraced me at this offer, but desired me not to dissuade him from his resolution; which only gave him pain, as he was to part from the object of his wishes, so dear a friend, and such good parents: and then, resuming a vivacity which had been long banished from him, cried out, 'Come, my dear boy! I presage that we shall both yet be completely happy, if you can but forget one fatal stroke, which I hope you will, before I see you again.' I was obliged, at length, to acquiesce, with a sorrowful heart, to his resolves, and attended him to take leave of Miss Bellair, who was come to town a few days since with her brother and his family, and he had already visited them, and reluctantly brought her to consent to his going. He was to embark in two days time, and was on the morrow to

take his leave of the Directors, who had appointed him a very good station, that of Canton in China. Their adieu was too tender for even the standers-by to support with dry eyes; and, after vows of eternal truth and constancy, they parted, but both of them, as well as Mr. Bellair and his spouse, insisted I should visit them as often as I possibly could; which I promised, with a great deal of pleasure.

The parting between him and his parents was little less tender, and, he set out the next evening, with myself and Prig, who were resolved not to leave him till we saw the ship under sail. We arrived at Gravesend at about ten o'clock at night, and he found, at the Swan, the rest of his brother-super-cargoes, who were appointed to the same ship, the ———, of thirty-two guns, and one hundred and fifty men, commanded by Captain Friendly. We spent two days here very agreeably, save that the continual gloom of my mind gave my friend great uneasiness, who charged Prig to be as much with me as possible, and endeavour, all he could, to divert my melancholy; telling him he should expect his friend at his hands, safe and well, at his return. Prig, had, indeed, behaved, ever since our arrival from Yorkshire, with so much friendship and respect, and his character was so much altered, that we both conceived a great value for him; which was heightened by the disinterested concern he had shewed in the late transactions of my master, who had been of great service to him in his profession. The wind shifting favourably, and every thing ready for sailing, now began the task of parting, which we were both incapable to support with the decency we had resolved to support it; we wept, and betrayed so much real sorrow, as amazed all the standers-by; rough, unpolished seamen, who were not capable of the delicate sensations, so warm and lively a friendship as ours was capable of inspiring. Far as our eyes could strain, we marked each other, till the lessening ship entirely mocked the sight. A thousand times I implored the merciful Ruler of the world to return him in safety to his friends embraces, and his native country, happy and prosperous! We returned to London by water, the next morning,

morning, in a boat we had hired for that purpose; and, passing by Black-wall, our curiosity led us on board a ship that was receiving the criminals, for transportation to the American colonies. As we were attentively viewing these unhappy, hardened wretches, as they came up the ship's side, a woman, in tattered weeds, all pale and wan, with the symptoms of death in her face, who was forced to be supported up the side by several sailors, arrested my sight, and presented the remains of a face, that, methought, I very well remembered, and soon recollected to be that of the perfidious and designing Nanny, who had served me such a trick, in conjunction with Packer, and laid the foundation of all my former disquiets. Her condition, notwithstanding, gave me pain, and she no sooner fixed her eyes on me, than she fainted away. As soon as she recovered her senses, I would have gone away; but she called me with a weak and hollow voice, and desired to speak to me. I approached her, and the poor creature fell upon her knees, and hoped I would forgive her for the injuries she had formerly done me; to which I was going to reply, when one of the officers offered me the use of his cabin, if the young woman had any thing to say to me; which I accepted, and she crawled in after us, as well as she could, where she addressed herself to me in this manner. 'Oh, Sir! how shall I look you in the face, after what you know of me! that villain that first debauched me, soon after you so justly abandoned me, left me in want and misery, which obliged me to seek a subsistence by the most abhorred ways, that of prostitution, at an house of ill fame in Covent Garden, where he had before often carried me, and would have persuaded me to go to lodge. Here I was long subject to the loathsome embraces of all comers and goers, till a vile distemper obliged me to undergo a salivation; which, being unskilfully managed, left me in a most deplorable condition, having totally ruined my complexion and constitution. Perfect want induced me, one night, to pick a gentleman's pocket, who passed through the

'Strand; for which fact I was tried at the Old Bailey, and am ordered for transportation, to which you may perceive I am going, with the rest of these unhappy creatures. I am so ill now, that I can scarce support myself whilst I tell you this, and hope a few hours will ease me of all my miseries together, by death! I trust I have made my peace with Heaven; and, if you will mercifully forgive me, I shall die with satisfaction.' She wept, and I told her I freely forgave her, and hoped, as she had repented of her crimes, Heaven would forgive her too. She shewed the utmost joy at this; and, whilst some refreshments were providing, which we ordered for her, I asked her if her father and mother were alive; but she informed me they were both dead, and she feared had broke their hearts at the bad courses she had taken; the remembrance of which drew a sigh, which seemed to proceed from the bottom of her heart. We both gave her money, and hoped she would live to make amends for her faults, and once more be happy; which words were hardly out of our mouths, when she dropped down before us; and, upon stooping to raise her up, we found the unfortunate woman had breathed her last.

So sudden an exit surprized us, and we could not help reflecting on the incident, as a fresh mark of the superintendency of Providence, which had directed me to call on board that vessel, by which I was able to speak peace and comfort to the soul of this departing instance of it's displeasure.

Our boat had scarce carried us half a mile from this melancholy scene of human wretchedness, when another boat, in passing us, ran foul of a ship's hawser, and overset, before we had even an opportunity to fix our eyes upon it, so much as to discern if there were any passengers in it; but we ordered our waterman to lie upon his oars, to be of what service we possibly could, if there were any persons in danger. Presently a woman popped her head above water, at some distance from our stern; and, at the same time, the waterman came up, and began to swim towards us, and we soon took him in, whilst the woman sunk again, before

before assistance could be given her, there happening to be no boat but ours near us at the time this unfortunate accident happened. We watched earnestly her rising the second time, which she did just at our boat's side, when I seized her by the arm, and supported her, with her head above water, till Prig and the waterman came to my assistance, and helped me to draw her in. She happened to be the only passenger, so that we applied ourselves to bring her to her senses, and held her up till she had voided a prodigious quantity of water, which she had swallowed; and then she began to revive, Mr. Prig having, with a penknife, very dextrously opened a vein in her arm. We ordered our man to row to the Surry shore; and, landing, the two watermen bore her between them to a public-house, where we got the landlady to put her to bed, and were resolved to wait till she was somewhat recovered of her weakness, and to see her home, as she appeared, by her habit, to be no mean woman.

Towards noon she got up, and came down stairs into the room we were sitting in, and returned us her thanks in a very grateful manner, for having saved her life. I discovered, the minute I heard the voice, somewhat, methought, in the tone and manner of it, that was a little known to my ears; and when, thereupon, I looked her steadily in the face, we both mutually betrayed signs of amazement, I discovering my Vauxhall harlot once more, and she the benefactor who had relieved her after her being ducked by the mob a long time before. The confusion she was in, and the alteration her half-drowned condition had made in her face and cloaths, when she was in the boat, had hindered my recognition of her then; but now, I cried out, 'What, Mrs. Tripsey, once more obliged to me?' adding—'Why, my friend Prig, this, and the adventure before, would sound very romantically, if they were to be related—However, I'm glad to see you, Madam, so well habited, and hope you have forsaken your old courses.' She was so astonished, she could not speak for some minutes; but, at length, assumed courage, and addressed us thus.

SEQUEL OF THE STORY OF MRS. TRIPSEY.

'NOTwithstanding the bad usage, Sir, you received by my connivance, Heaven has made you my benefactor and saviour; at once you have saved me from present and future destruction, for your goodness, more than any thing else, determined me to forsake the vicious courses I was engaged in, and now you have given me my life; would to God, Sir, it were in my power to make you a proper return for these blessings! but, as I am sensible of the generosity of your mind, I know it will please you to hear that an unfortunate fellow-creature is raised, by your means, from the lowest depth of misery to happiness.

'No creature sure could be in greater distress of body, or under greater tortures of soul, than I was, when you saw me so cruelly used by the barbarous hands of the unrelenting mob. You generously relieved me from the first, and your kind exhortations, and the resolutions I made, consequent thereto, in great measure, calmed the latter. All that day I chose out the most unfrequented fields; and, by walking about, dried my cloaths upon my back, meanwhile pondering what I should take to for my future subsistence, and to support me free from the wretched ways I had used, and the company who had been my ruin. I came of good parents, who died some years before my lapse from goodness, leaving only myself and a brother, who was now, I knew, a substantial farmer in the county of Middlesex; but he had shewn so much detestation of me, on account of the courses I had taken, that I found no encouragement in the thought of flinging myself upon his mercy and protection. I was musing thus in my way, to town, and by the slowness of my motion, and want of attention to my way, to be sure, looked like one of those creatures I had formerly been; when a man on horseback, in the road, called to me in a familiar strain, and asked me, how I did, and if I would grant him a certain favour. I turned my eyes at the sound of the voice,

' voice, and perceived it was the very
 ' brother I had been thinking of so
 ' intently, though I was certain, from
 ' the great alteration a length of time
 ' had made, he could not possibly
 ' know me. I thought this meeting
 ' was providential, and was willing to
 ' humour the matter, to see what lengths
 ' he might possibly go, before he knew
 ' me; and accordingly with a shy air at-
 ' tempted to cross the road, at some dis-
 ' tance below him; on which he alight-
 ' ed, and catching me by the arm, was
 ' going to use me somewhat roughly,
 ' for no passengers were coming by,
 ' when I cried, "Come, brother, you
 ' are attempting to commit a greater
 ' crime than you imagine!" These
 ' words, and the sound of my voice,
 ' struck him all on an heap, and he was
 ' some time before he came to himself,
 ' when I fell on my knees, told him
 ' my forlorn condition, my late praise-
 ' worthy resolutions, and begged him
 ' to believe me, and shield me from
 ' vice and poverty!

' He melted, at length; and, raising
 ' me, carried me to a publick-house at
 ' some distance, where he displayed all
 ' that love and affection, which, though
 ' it may be for a time stifled, by little

' ruffles and accidents of life, yet
 ' must still, one time or other, revive
 ' again, in the bosoms of near rela-
 ' tions, let their misconduct be ever
 ' so notorious, and got an horse there
 ' for me to ride home with him upon.
 ' I understood his wife had been dead
 ' near a twelve-month, and had left
 ' him two children, the care of whom
 ' and his house became my province;
 ' where I have lived ever since, in the
 ' utmost calm and content, hoping God
 ' will accept my sincere repentance
 ' and amendment, and graciously par-
 ' don the numerous crimes I have
 ' committed. I was going to Green-
 ' wich, when the late unfortunate ac-
 ' cident happened to me, which you,
 ' Sir—and that gentleman—so gene-
 ' rously relieved me from, for which I
 ' shall pray for eternal blessings on your
 ' heads.'

We were pleased with this short nar-
 ration, caressed her, and encouraged
 her in her pursuit of virtue and so-
 briety; and, after dinner, saw her into
 another boat, in which she pursued her
 voyage; and we, full of the odd adven-
 tures we had met with, returned to
 London.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.



THE
LIFE AND ADVENTURES
OF
JOE THOMPSON.

VOLUME THE SECOND.

CHAP. I.

MR. DIAPER AND HIS FAMILY RETIRE INTO THE COUNTRY—THOMPSON RETURNS FROM THENCE, AND TAKES A LODGING IN LONDON—ALMOST CONSTANTLY AT MR. BELLAIR'S—THE MANNER OF EMPLOYING THIS LEISURE TIME—HEARS FROM ARCHER—CONTRACTS AN AVERSION FOR WOMEN—VISITS A SUBURBIAN CLUB WITH MR. DEACON—ACCOUNT OF THAT ABSURD SET OF PEOPLE, AND THEIR CONVERSATION—RECEIVES A LETTER FROM MR. DIAPER, DATED LISBON.



SOON after I came to London, Mr. Diaper, having settled all his affairs, set out for his country-house, where he proposed to spend the remainder of his days, and where I could not be excused from accompanying him. From thence I wrote to my father an account of my present situation, and prayed his directions how to dispose of myself; at the same time giving him an hint, that I should be glad to enter into another employ, than that I

had been engaged in; and, if he consented to it, had much rather follow the example of my friend, and spend two or three years abroad, which would in all probability conduce to wear off the melancholy gloom that oppressed my mind. The solitude I indulged in this recess, though at first it humoured my disposition, and gave a scope to my perpetual ideas of my lovely lost Louisa, and my absent friend and partner in affliction, yet it soon grew dangerous for me to stay there longer, for fear of entirely unhinging myself for the pursuits of life, which were now become necessary to me; and therefore I took leave of my worthy master and mistress, who made me promise to see them every week or fortnight, to console them for the loss of their son, and returned to London, where I took an apartment in Red Lion Street, Holborn, till I should otherwise dispose of myself. I almost every day paid a visit at Mr. Bellair's, which was now the only comfort I received, and was much edified by the company of that worthy family; Miss Sukey lived quite recluse, and seldom would see any company but me, and then her conversation ran wholly upon her dear Diaper, whose health we were continually drinking. These amiable persons so sincerely sympathized with me in the

P

loss

loss of my Louisa, that my melancholy was always dispelled in some measure by their society; but, in a few weeks, I lost even that consolation, by their departure into the country, where they would fain have had me bear them company. Now, my only relief lay in the conversation of Prig and Mr. Deacon, who entered into all my concerns, and behaved in the kindest manner, and once a week I generally went over to see Mr. and Mrs. Diaper. I employed myself sometimes in writing to my friend, Mr. Goodwill, his spouse, and poor Fidele, who were all under great concern at my loss; but Fidele was quite inconsolable, and had taken on so much at the death of her mistress, that they feared she would fling herself into a consumption. I wrote her word, that I would for ever take care of her, and desired Mr. Goodwill to let her have whatever money she wanted, which I would repay him again. She frequently went over to see my mother, with whom also Mrs. Goodwill had commenced an acquaintance. I received a letter from Archer about this time, informing me, that he was become a dealer himself, and went on with great success: as to poor Sharpley, I had heard nothing from him a considerable time, nor knew in what part of the world he at present was. My father wrote me word, that I might stay where I was, and take a little pleasure, till he came up to London, to talk with and see me settled, which he proposed to do in about three months. In the intervals of my other avocations, I endeavoured to make myself master of several branches of learning I had not touched on before; and, merely by way of amusement, went through the study of navigation, which yielded me great pleasure. Still the image of my Louisa remained before my eyes, and I every now and then fell into the most cruel despondency, and called aloud for death to relieve me from my torments. I found it so dangerous to be alone, that I encouraged my friend Prig to call upon me as often as he had an inclination, and forced myself to partake of all the diversions and amusements he proposed; but thoroughly conceived an aversion for the company of women, which at first was inspired by a certain delicacy of never taking any delight in the

sex, since my Louisa's death, which was a resolution I so constantly supported, that at length I even grew morose and unmannerly, and would abruptly leave any company upon a lady's entrance. Mr. Deacon, though an excellent man, had one prevailing foible; he loved his bottle, and had a club for every night, where he often importuned me to accompany him, under the notion of keeping up good company and fellowship. I was one evening persuaded to go with him to one of these meetings, which gave me such an idea of the folly and absurdity of spending time in a promiscuous company, of that *while away strain*, that I cannot help drawing the picture of it, not doubting but it is a pattern of most others in this metropolis. At our entrance, we were saluted by three or four persons, to whom Mr. Deacon presented me, and excused his breaking in upon the rules of the company, by bringing a stranger without leave; we then seated ourselves, and a profound silence ensued of near twenty minutes, which was interrupted by Mr. Shuttle, a weaver, who observed, that it was the finest day we had had for a fortnight past, which he was very glad of, as the next day he was to go to a parish feast at Barnet. Mr. Burnish, a brazier, replied, that he had been invited to go there too, but that Mr. Tunbilly, the churchwarden, had never had a goose at any one of his feasts, which was a thing he greatly loved, and could not imagine he had any aversion to it himself, for which reason, he was sure it was always omitted as an affront to him. Mr. Shuttle then gave a long account of a dinner he eat the day before with Justice Mitimus, in which he particularly praised the chicken and asparagus, and concluded with observing, that the justice did nothing without his advice. Immediately the doors were thrown open, and in came the justice himself, at which all the rest raised themselves up, and lowly bowed; he was a pretty large made man, of a venerable aspect, and a deal of gravity, who saluted every body by name; but observing me, was going to retreat in a huff, if Mr. Deacon had not pacified him, by assuring him I was his friend. 'Oh! oh! very well, very well! How do you do, Sir?' And, soon after seating himself, lugged the leg of a fowl from

from one of his pockets, and a lunch of bread and cheese from the other, and would insist upon it every body should eat with him; some compliments, bestowed by Mr. Shuttle on the goodness of the fowl, produced an account from Mr. Magistrate of its cheapness, and a digression of the price of beef, and the insolence of the butchers of Newgate Market. This over, in came Mr. Snap, the justice's clerk, with a warrant to sign, which obliged the justice to put on his spectacles, notwithstanding which he would have signed it at the wrong end, if his clerk had not directed his hand. 'You know what the affair is, Mr. Snap, I suppose?'—'Yes, Sir,' replies the clerk, 'it is about an assault.'—'Oh, ho! is it so? Send them to Bridewell, then.'—'Yes, Sir,' says the clerk, who could hardly contain himself, 'I made the commitment out for that place.' The clerk dismissed, and supper ended, his worship took up the pipes, and filling one, after offering his tobacco to the whole company to smell to, saying it was the best in Christendom, he pouted out a glass, and drank the king's health. Another pause of silence ensued, till the health went round, when Captain Swagger, a sea-officer, entered upon politicks, by swearing it was shameful England should ever be in peace, since she got more by war; adding, that he did not doubt of seeing us soon masters of France, Spain, and the Indies, if we did but exert our naval strength as we did in Edward the Third's time: the justice here observed, that the captain must be mistaken, for he never had heard of a man of war in those days; the captain swore by God there was, and that they were called the Cinque Ports, from their being five of them. Mr. Shuttle observed, that France never could be conquered, it was so much bigger than England, which the justice disputed, and said, England he was sure was bigger, and applied to me for a decision, saying, I looked as if I had been abroad, and could certainly tell. I was fearful of offending either side, so contented myself, by telling him, that what was called L'Isle de France, where the city of Paris stood, was much less than England; at which he set up a laugh of triumph, telling Mr. Shuttle, it was hard if he should not know, when

he had Berry's map of France in his parlour, and his wife had an uncle who was cook to the Duke of Orleans. This proud vaunt was concluded with a bumper, in which he drank confusion to Cardinal Fleury, and damnation to the French king. Now they began to be noisy, and talked in separate sets about their wives and children, and their several professions, which was interrupted by Mr. Bonnet, the peruke-maker's singing a bawdy song, to which Mr. Shuttle, licking his lips, cried '*Oncour!*' soon afterwards the justice fell asleep, Shuttle got drunk and abused the captain, the captain struck him, the tables were overturned, and we thought it high time to pay our shot, and move off; which we did, Mr. Deacon assuring me, as we went home, that, if I had not been a stranger, I should have heard very good conversation; but did not doubt I should be made amends the next time.

When I arrived at home, I made many reflections upon what the world generally calls *conversation*, which is so far from being what is really intended by the word, that it is rather a perversion of it; and though perhaps twenty thousand people in London meet every night for that purpose, one might safely lay an even wager, that scarce an hundred ever partake of the sweets of that enlivening and improving banquet, or understand what conversation is.

In six weeks after my friend's departure, upon a visit to Mr. Diaper, I found he had just received a letter from him, by way of Lisbon, where they had been obliged to touch to rest, having met with a storm in the Bay of Biscay, which had done them considerable damage. There was also a letter for me, one for Mr. Bellair, and another for Miss Sukey, both which Mr. Diaper desired me to take the charge of transmitting, which I did accordingly. My letter was to the following effect—

'MY VERY DEAR FRIEND,

'AFTER a tempestuous voyage, which has already well-seasoned me to my new life, we have put into Lisbon, to repair our shattered vessel, from whence I take an opportunity of writing to you and the rest

P. 2 . . . of

‘of my friends. Alas! I did not
 ‘know half the pain I should feel in
 ‘this separation from every thing that
 ‘is dear to me! My endearing Sukey
 ‘runs for ever in my mind, and I sur-
 ‘vey the awful distance that will se-
 ‘parate us still more and more with a
 ‘terror that I cannot describe. I have
 ‘no one now to tell my griefs to, and
 ‘I turn my eyes in vain on every side
 ‘to find my dear Thompson, to solace
 ‘and comfort me in my distress. Oh!
 ‘had fortune kindly joined us both in
 ‘the same adventure, I had then been
 ‘happy; but now—

‘—Like the ship-wreck’d mariner, aghast,
 ‘On some curs’d barren shelve, I seek in
 ‘vain,
 ‘With wand’ring eyes, for help in my
 ‘despair!”

‘I hope this will find you, my ever-
 ‘valued associate, in better health and
 ‘spirits than when the writer left you;
 ‘and that, if Providence sends me
 ‘again to revisit my native skies, I
 ‘shall see you cured of a hopeless
 ‘grief than can be of no avail to re-
 ‘cal the precious saint you have lost,
 ‘who now perhaps attends and watch-
 ‘es over your steps as your guardian-
 ‘angel.

‘I have desired my dear father to
 ‘put my letter to the charmer of my
 ‘soul into your hands, trusting to
 ‘your care for it’s safe conveyance.
 ‘Whilst I write my hand shakes, and
 ‘I tremble with apprehension at what
 ‘may have happened since my depar-
 ‘ture! Oh! this cruel uncertainty,
 ‘that distance creates, of what passes,
 ‘is grievous! Often I wish I had the
 ‘power of transporting myself with a
 ‘thought from place to place, to solve
 ‘my doubts of your healths and prof-
 ‘perity. You may now, with every
 ‘body else that I love and esteem,
 ‘have become the prey of Death’s
 ‘daily ravages. Tormenting thought!
 ‘which I must not, will not, indulge;
 ‘for it would carry with it distraction
 ‘and madness!—My sincere respects
 ‘attend Mr. Prig, who I hope never
 ‘leaves you long enough for you to
 ‘increase your melancholy. Our cap-
 ‘tain and the rest of our gentlemen
 ‘are very agreeable companions; and
 ‘I am as happy as a man can possibly
 ‘be in my station, and have hitherto

‘preserved my health very well. A-
 ‘dieu, dear friend; you will hardly
 ‘hear from me again till some home-
 ‘ward-bound ship comes from the
 ‘Indies; by the first of which, if
 ‘alive and well, I will not fail to
 ‘write to you, and every body else, at
 ‘large. Take care of my lovely maid,
 ‘and keep her mind as easy and com-
 ‘posed as possible, whenever you have
 ‘the happiness to see her; though I
 ‘suppose she is now gone with her bro-
 ‘ther into the country.

‘If, oh! ye Powers supreme, who still pre-
 ‘side

‘O’er all events, and all our actions guide,
 ‘Virtue, and Virtue’s votaries, are your care,
 ‘Preserve the best of friends, and kindest
 ‘fair!

‘Shed balmy comfort, wheresoe’er they
 ‘move,

‘Ah! cure an anxious grief from absent
 ‘love!

‘Restore to peace a mind in deep despair!
 ‘And suffer patient calm to enter there!

‘And, oh! protect me through the raging
 ‘main,

‘And safe restore me to their arms again!
 ‘Rebuke the billows, that destructive roll,

‘And spread their baneful rage from pole
 ‘to pole:

‘Soft may the breezes fill the swelling sail,
 ‘And no rude storm deform the gentle gale!

‘Excuse my numbers, and believe
 ‘me, my dearest Thompson, *thy eter-
 ‘nally-affectionate and sincere friend,*

‘W. DIAPER.’

CHAP. II.

HE, WITH PRIG, IS ATTACKED BY
 FOOTPADS—THEY TAKE THREE
 OF THEM—ONE OF THEM PROVES
 TO BE PACKER—DISCOURSE BE-
 TWEEN THOMPSON AND HIM—
 HE IS COMMITTED TO NEWGATE,
 TRIED AT THE OLD BAILEY, CON-
 DEMNED, AND EXECUTED—OB-
 SERVATIONS ARISING FROM HIS
 BEHAVIOUR IN HIS LAST MO-
 MENTS—MR. ARCHER AND MR.
 SHARPLEY ARRIVE IN TOWN.

I Dispatched an answer to my friend
 by a ship that was just sailing to
 Lisbon, which probably might arrive
 there time enough to give him the
 wished intelligence how matters stood

in England; and, by the same conveyance, sent another letter to Archer.

One evening, as Mr. Prig and myself were returning from Hampstead, where we had taken an excursion, somewhat later than ordinary, on foot, thinking it the safest way, we struck through the fields between Kentish Town and Bloomsbury; and, for our better security, as there were many accounts of robberies committed between Hampstead and London, had drawn our hangers, which we carried naked in our hands. We had already crossed three fields, and could plainly discover the lights from Red Lion Street and Queen's Square, so that we imagined we had got clear of any molestation; but we were mistaken, for suddenly passing over a narrow causeway, two men jumped out of a ditch on one side, whilst two others did the same on the other side, and, with a multitude of oaths and execrations, ordered us to stand and deliver, or we were dead men. As we perceived each of them was armed with a pistol, we did not think proper, for the sake of a little money, to be fool-hardy, and so directly delivered our purses to them; at the same time I told them we had no more, for our watches were left behind us; and desired them to treat us like gentlemen. 'Aye, so we will!' says one of them, and immediately fired his pistol, the ball of which grazed upon my shoulder, and took away a piece of my coat. We immediately concluded we were to expect no quarter from them, and therefore turning back to back, prepared to make the best defence we were able, and in that position received the fire of another pistol, two others flashing in the pan, without receiving any hurt, and then were attacked on all sides with bludgeons, which they had concealed in their bosoms. We bestirred ourselves as nimbly as we possibly could, but yet were fearful we should be overpowered with numbers, when a lucky stroke I made, cut one of the fellows down the shoulder; and, shortening my hanger, which was a cut-and-thrust one, I ran it up to the gripe in his body, at which he gave a groan, and fell down at my feet. There needed no more to dishearten the rest, who directly took to their heels; but we pursued them so nimbly, crying out, 'Thieves!' all

the way, that, at the end of Red Lion Street, they were all three taken, and we immediately carried them into a public-house till we could get more assistance, and convey them before a magistrate. We found no other offensive weapons upon searching them; but no surprise could be equal to ours, when, in the face of one of these footpads, we discovered the features of that villain Packer! I gave a great cry, occasioned by my astonishment, and asked him the reason he was not contented with our money, but pursued our lives with so much inveteracy, which had brought him into his present circumstances. I added, I was sorry to see him in such a situation, for he must now expect the reward due to so many crimes as he had been guilty of; at the same time wishing any other person had been the means of bringing him to justice. He looked a scornful look, and swore nothing grieved him but that he had not been the death of me, for then hanging would have been but a trifle; 'And could I,' says he, 'have found you out, long since, I would have made you the victim of my resentment.' I told him I was sorry his disposition was so wicked; for though he had done me many injuries, and had well nigh caused the death of my friend, who was attacked by his procurement at Chelsea, yet I could not remember I had ever provoked him, by any thing I had ever transacted, to such an inhuman resentment. 'No!' he replied, 'was not you the means of turning me from Mr. Diaper's, by making yourself busy with what you had no concern with?' I assured him the contrary, and that what I did in that affair was what I merely thought my duty, and what I could not dispense with myself from doing, without mixing it with any thing personal against himself, more than the nature of the case required. By this time some persons returned, with an account that the man who had fallen was dead, and a constable entering at the same time, though very late, we carried them before a neighbouring justice of the peace, and the matter was so clear against them, that he committed them all three to Newgate; and, the sessions being begun at the Old Bailey the day before, the bill of indictment was found; they

they were tried the last day but one of the sessions, and, upon the strongest evidence, condemned to die. Packer behaved with the utmost boldness during the whole trial; and, reflecting upon his former appearance and behaviour, it gave me a melancholy concern to see such an alteration. His present disposition and temper, to be sure, however, was natural; whereas the sobriety he had formerly assumed, must have been all hypocrisy and grimace.

Packer had a great many friends; but his disorderly behaviour had so incensed them, that no one would stir on his behalf; and, with the other criminals, he was soon after executed at Tyburn, where he would make no confession, but died in an hardened and senseless disregard to religion and hereafter. Such was the end of this man; and, notwithstanding the manifold injuries I had received of him, it was with pain I considered myself as one of the instruments of his punishment. Mr. Diaper was also concerned at his fate; but it was contrary to all the maxims of reason, self-defence, and regard to the publick, to endeavour to get him a reprieve, which otherwise, by that gentleman's numerous friends, there would have been very little reason to doubt. How soon this death followed that of the unhappy woman he had debauched and ruined! and of which I was also a spectator! And the hand of Providence was so visible in their punishment here, that I hope we may entertain an opinion that mercy will be extended to them in a future state, from that Being who is all forgiveness and forbearance, and of whom mercy is one of the greatest and most sublime attributes.

I made many observations upon the behaviour of this man in his last moments. One would be at a great loss to conceive how a human creature, capable of reflection, can work himself up into such an utter insensibility, at an hour so awful, as that of the separation of the soul from the body, and launching into the boundless immense ocean of eternity; and yet we see daily instances of this shocking stupidity, for stupidity it must be in such instances as these; where the wretch has not that innocence and purity, that consciousness of having acted like a rational

creature, and that 'earnest hope, that 'fond desire, that longing after immortality!' which fills the heart, and supports the spirits, of the just man in his last moments. Annihilation would be more tolerable to them, were they to think at all, than a future state of existence; they would feel no 'secret dread, nor inward horror, of sinking into nought;' far from it, the thought would be agreeable. Ignorance, such total ignorance, as I have observed, in some of the lowest of our race, may be one reason of the unconcern at a circumstance it is possible they know little of; but may we not rather seek for it, than in ignorance, and a false bravery, in the consultations they receive from the ordinary, the absolutions and promises he gives them? He administers the sacraments, and assures them of pardon and remission of sins, through the merits of Christ. Nothing can come nearer to the practices of the Roman Catholics than this artificial assurance and comfort given to the criminals; and I think Dr. Mandeville's scheme would have a better effect both upon them and the spectators of their exit, when he advises not to prostitute the sacrament in that manner, but to suffer them to go full of despair, 'weeping and gnashing their teeth,' to the gallows; which perhaps would have a real good effect upon their minds, bring them to a sense of their condition, and make their breathings, and sore sighings of heart, an acceptable sacrifice for their sins. Now, full of the notion, that, by saying they believe what the ordinary tells them, they shall be saved, adding thereto the sacred ceremonies of the church, they think they may put on what appearance suits their tempers best at the shocking moment; and their natural vanity directs them to such an one as shall gain the greatest applause with the mob. The ordinary should be honest enough to tell them the uncertainty, the evident uncertainty, of their repentances being received, when it is deferred to the last moment of life; that death-bed repentances are not worthy of that term, and that no one can be said sincerely to repent, unless he has an opportunity, and does amend his life; that, indeed, God is a Being of infinite mercy, and that he has great confidence, if they are truly sincere,

cere, that their prayers, though late, may be received, and plead at the throne of grace; and farther than this he ought not, nor should not, presume to go.

The prosecution we were thus obliged to, of these men, took us up a considerable time; and it was scarce finished, when a message was left at my lodgings, that Mr. Archer and Mr. Sharp-ley were arrived in town; and that, as they could stay but a week at most, they begged as much of my company as possible, and desired I would meet them that very evening at the Standard Tavern in Leicester Fields. I was quite overjoyed at the thoughts of seeing these two dear friends, whom I loved as much, almost, as if they had been my fathers. I could not imagine, however, what brought them up to town, and suspected it had some relation to my affairs, or that somewhat had happened to their sons, more than ordinary, since I had heard from them: so, full of eager expectation, begging the favour of Prig's company, I halted, as soon as the hour came, to the place of appointment.

CHAP. III.

HE MEETS MR. ARCHER AND MR. SHARPLEY — HE APOLOGIZES FOR HIS FRIEND—RECEIVES AN ACCOUNT OF SIR WALTER'S ALTERATION OF TEMPER, AND THE DIFFERENCE BETWEEN HIM AND THE SQUIRE—THEY BRING HIM A LETTER FROM FIDELE—IT'S REMARKABLE CONTENTS—HIS RAGE AFTER PERUSING IT—THEY RETURN INTO YORKSHIRE—PRIG SETS OUT UPON A JOURNEY—HE GROWS MORE AND MORE MELANCHOLY.

MY meeting with these worthy gentlemen was accompanied with marks of the sincerest friendship and affection, proceeding from the heart, undefiled with the grimaces of compliment. I introduced Mr. Prig to their acquaintance, as a man I greatly esteemed, and was thanked, on all sides, for the favour. After the first civilities were over, I enquired after the health of my father and mother, and their families. My father had

sent me a letter by Mr. Sharp-ley, in which he informed me, that he and my mother were in perfect health; but that he was somewhat chagrined, at not being able to come up to London in less than three months after the time he before had appointed, and which was now just on expiring, because the gentleman, who had the greatest part of his ready-money in his hands, would not be able to call up what he thought necessary before. He told me, in the conclusion, that, if I had no overbearing inclination to stay in town till then, he should be glad if I would come into Yorkshire, and spend the intermediate space of time, between this and his setting out to see me settled in the world. There was no answer to my request of going abroad, as my friend Diaper had done, which a little surprized me, as I had made it in so pressing a manner. Mr. Sharp-ley had accompanied his friend up to town through civility, and principally with a desire to see me, for Mr. Archer's business was to execute some commissions for his son, who went on at Oporto with great success. As to young Sharp-ley, I found he was, at present, second lieutenant of the Swift-sure, to which he had been removed from the Loo, and was now upon the station of Boston in New England; of which I took a memorandum, with a purpose to write to him the first opportunity. We now began to talk over old affairs, and Mr. Archer was surprized, he said, at the step my friend Diaper had taken, and more especially when he understood with how much ease he might have entered again into trade, with an absolute prospect of retrieving his circumstances; to which I replied, that it was no easy matter for a man, who has once found himself at the end of his wishes, but is suddenly disappointed by some unforeseen stroke of ill fortune, to assume spirit and perseverance sufficient to bear the reflection, and the tedious toil of acquiring, by going over again the slow methods of industry and trade, what he had lost; and especially when love intervenes, and points out every tedious path to our wishes, as an injury done to the beloved object, and to the completion of our hopes and expectations; and therefore I could easily excuse, from my friend's youth and sanguine disposition,

disposition, his hazarding himself as he had done, seeing, that if a few years, in the employ he had embarked in, were spent with the usual success those gentlemen meet with, he would find himself in a better situation than he could expect to be in, after having spent his whole life in traffick at home. I even went so far, as to say, that, since some cruel disappointments I had myself met with, I had much rather venture abroad, than settle in my profession in England, where my ambition would be constantly checked by the idea that I had lost every thing in the world that could serve as a spur to me to undergo the necessary fatigues of business; nor could I forbear shedding tears at this conclusion, and the presence of two persons who revived in my mind all the painfully-pleasing transactions of my disastrous and unfortunate passion. They were very much moved at this apostrophe of grief, which naturally led them to console with me on the loss of my Louisa, which they did in terms that plainly shewed me what an interest they took in my welfare. 'I should,' says Mr. Archer, 'have been at a loss how to have brought this subject on the carpet, knowing the sensibility you still have when it is mentioned, if you had not put me thus upon it; but I am able to give you a better account than you have yet received, I believe, of the death of that young lady, and what happened afterwards in her family, which is so much altered, by the loss of her, that you cannot help being amazed at the relation of it.' I endeavoured to restrain my tears, and besought him to proceed, which he did, in the following manner. 'Sir Walter was not present at his daughter's death, but was at York, with that villain the squire, in order to the settlement of some affairs previous to the marriage which he had resolved on between her and that nephew, and which he had tyrannically endeavoured, but in vain, to procure her consent to, and had left her, with menaces of all that displeasure and rage could dictate, if she did not comply at his return. His sister, in sending him the mournful tidings, let him into some things in relation to the squire, that immediately induced him to dis-

card him for ever; and he was so touched with his daughter's loss, that he could not bear to visit the place of her interment, which was in the family-vault at Taunton, where her mother was also deposited, for Sir Walter's family, you know, was originally of Somersetshire, and he has never attempted to go there since; for his sister was so much affected with the loss of her niece, that she went soon after to France, with an intent to reside there the remainder of her days, after bestowing all the hard epithets that grief and anger could suggest, against his cruelty and barbarity. He has been ever since at his house in Yorkshire, and he is so altered, that he has quite forsaken his old diversions; and when I waited upon him to take my leave, and told him of my designed rout to London, he shed tears, and said, with a melancholy gesture, that perhaps I might then see poor Joe, to whom he desired I would give his love, and tell him he was a severe sufferer for what he had acted against him and his daughter, his dear Louisa. "Had I known," continued he, "the worth of that youth, so well as I do now, I believe I should have conquered my aversion to his alliance with my daughter, whom I was foolishly endeavouring, nay, did sacrifice, to the views of one of the worst of men, whom I have since found out to be in the lowest degree base. I can now, alas! make no other recompense, than by assuring him I shall ever esteem him as my own child; and pray tell him if I can be of any use to him in his future concerns, neither the inclination, nor the money, shall be wanting." I was surprized, you may imagine, at such a declaration; and more so, when he informed me, that Fidele, his daughter's waiting-maid, had yielded to his persuasions, and the desires of your mother, to quit Mrs. Goodwill, and she is now Sir Walter's housekeeper: he does nothing without consulting her, and endeavours all he can to compensate her for the loss of her kind lady. She gave me a letter for you, when I left the house, which I have here brought you.' Upon this, he delivered me the letter, which I knew to be

be Fidele's hand, and which I opened hastily, much astonished with what had been told me. I found it as follows.

DEAR SIR,

I Hope you will excuse the trouble I am going to give you, when you know that my obligations to you, and some matters I have to relate of my excellent lady, are my motives for writing to you. In the first place, Sir, let me return you my unfeigned thanks for the kind and genteel treatment I have received from Mr. Goodwill and his lady, since you placed me with them, and the marks of your favour and remembrance I received, at several times, when I was there, which will ever engage the most grateful returns that shall be in my power. You will be surprized when I acquaint you, that I am now with my old master, to whose pressing solicitations, and the commands of your honoured mother, which I more regarded, I at last consented; and he has made me ample amends, by placing me at the head of his family; where, however, I have the continual pain of reflecting, by all the objects before me, upon our great and irreparable loss in the death of my dear young lady, which nobody but yourself could feel so tenderly as I did. Sir Walter has taken on very grievously for my mistress's loss, and is so changed, that if any one were to say any ill thing of you in the family, he would immediately lose his favour. I have gathered several things from him, at times, which I shall acquaint you of, if ever I have the happiness to see you again; but two things I cannot now dispense with myself from telling you: he has, with the utmost concern, told me that the squire led him into a scheme that was, in the end, fatal to Miss Louisa; which was, to propagate a story in Somersetshire, that he had killed you in a duel; and, after that report, she never held up her head again. He has, likewise, since that, been informed, by one of the squire's attendants, of his usage of you in the road to Mr. Goodwill's, and his having attacked your life by ruffians, near his own seat; all which conspired, with his

regard to my lady's memory, to render him so distasteful to his uncle, that he has forbid him ever entering his doors, or appearing any where where he is; and has resolved never to give him a penny more than he can help. He is retired to a little estate he has near Doncaster, full of spleen and resentment, to brood over the villainies he has committed, and the fine prospects he has lost. I pray Heaven, Sir, to protect and prosper you, and to enable you to overcome your distraction of mind! From your most obliged and affectionate humble servant,

FIDELE HEARTWELL.

The circumstances of this letter called up all my griefs afresh; and I bemoaned my loss in so tenderly affecting a manner, mingled, every now and then, with such motions of rage, and vows of revenge, against the author of my unhappiness, that my friends were at the greatest loss how to calm my transports. I even raved against Sir Walter himself, for a blind, stupid, insensible wretch, who merited ten thousand times more tortures than he had, or was likely to suffer; cursing him, in the bitterest terms, and wishing all the plagues upon his head that could be mentioned, hoping, with Shakespeare—

————— a thousand knees,
Ten thousand years together, naked, fasting,
Upon some barren mountain, and still winter,
In storm perpetual, would not move the gods
To look what way he was.

When I had thus vented all that my dolour and rage could suggest, I yielded to the supplications of my three friends, and became more composed; but still, every now and then, the silent tear would trickle down my cheek, and the bursting sigh rend my very bosom in twain.

We spent the remainder of the evening in a very agreeable manner; and, as my friends were not provided with a lodging, I prevailed upon them, the one to accept of part of a bed with me, and the other with Mr. Prig, who was quite

quite smitten with their conversation, and earnestly desired as great a share of their company, as he could have, during their stay in town.

I could by no means bring myself to go down into Yorkshire: I was too much disordered, even upon the least mention of my dearest Louisa, to venture myself where every place, every face I saw, would revive all that flow of sorrow and anxiety, that was at present somewhat stifled by the endeavours of my friends, and my own and the frequent change of company and place, I, on purpose, indulged myself in; so that I wrote my father word, I would wait in town for his wished-for arrival; giving him such reasons for my resolution, as he must be very well satisfied with.

It was with great reluctance, after ten days stay in London, in which I constantly accompanied them, and frequently carried them to Mr. Diaper's country-house, who made them heartily welcome, as well on his son's account as mine, that I parted with our two friends; who, having finished the business that brought them up, to their satisfaction, set out for Yorkshire, and Mr. Prig and myself accompanied them twenty or thirty miles out of London, where we took a very affectionate farewell. Soon after, I was also robbed of another agreeable companion, in my friend Prig, who was obliged to go on a journey, into the West of England, on some law affairs, which he imagined would employ him between three and four months; and now I was left too much to my own reflections, which I indulged in all their baneful ravages over my soul, and gave way to, all the distracting gloom they occasioned; whole days I used to shut myself up in my chamber, and give a loose to my complaints and tears, for the death of my poor Louisa, whose lovely image was ever before my eyes, and whose accents hung upon my ears. Mr. Deacon took notice of this alteration, with concern, and began to call more frequently upon me, and took me out to his societies; where, indeed, sometimes the very comical absurdity of the company would draw a smile from me, and chase away an uneasy thought; but I wanted my dear Diaper, whose kind reasonings, and consoling arguments, could only have

been effectual enough to have made me more patient and easy. In short, I began to be a torment to myself, and a pain to every body about me.

CHAP. IV.

HE TAKES TO DRINKING—MR. DEACON DIES, BY WHICH HE IS INVOLVED IN A SAD SCRAPE—HE IS ARRESTED—CARRIED TO THE SPUNGING-HOUSE—HIS TREATMENT THERE—REMOVES HIMSELF, BY HABEAS CORPUS, TO THE FLEET—HIS MOTIVES FOR DOING SO.

THE stupid languor of my mind, and the continual perturbation of my spirits, which were incessantly harassed in this manner, at length brought me into a state of downright insensibility; and I went, as it were, mechanically, to some club or other, every evening, where I contracted a habit of drinking, than which nothing could be more low and degrading. I ran into the strain of their discourse, and felt a kind of relief from myself, and a pleasure in saying things nothing at all to the purpose; and, when wine or beer could not suffice to allay my uneasiness, I had recourse to drams, which grew so habitual to me, that I kept a private bottle in my chamber; to which I used to apply so frequently, that it was a mercy I did not kill myself. Could any creature be more fallen! but, in short, ambition, and every other incentive to life, and praise-worthy actions, were defunct in me; and, in the sole reflection that I had lost Louisa, I was dead to any acquisition of name, fortune, or happiness. Oh, how wretched a situation was this! and the force of these hellish cordials, soon expired, left me in a worse state than before, which could only be mended by a repetition of the same fictitious spirits.

I was thus lost, when, one morning, poor Mr. Deacon, who, as I said before, was too great a votary to the bottle, dropped down dead in his counting-house, with a sudden fit of apoplexy: he had received some intimations before, that he was going to be subject to that dreadful disorder, and had resolved, over and over, to drink less than he used to do; but had

not

not had power enough to break his habit of evening debauches, to which he thus fell a sacrifice.

I was much concerned at the death of so worthy a man, who was a perfect adorer of my father, and, on that account, had been a good friend to me; but I soon found, to my cost, that, by a piece of imprudence we had both been guilty of, I was like to be a greater sufferer by his decease, than I was aware of.

Mr. Deacon, about two months since, had a very large demand for money; and his affairs were so situated, at that time, that he could not command so much as he wanted, by 6ool. His friendship with my father, and that which subsisted between him and me, made all his concerns known to me; and I foolishly offered to give him my note for so much, which, as I was well known to have served my time to Mr. Diaper, and to be going into trade for myself, and my father to be a man in very good circumstances, he might easily get the sum he wanted upon: this, though an affair that ought to be very cautiously transacted, was what I had known to be very common in the city, upon such emergencies; and I did not doubt Mr. Deacon's honour, who was rich, and who promised me to take it up before it became due; so that I took no counter security from him, and confided entirely in his integrity and discretion, forgetting the excellent maxims I had imbibed in my apprenticeship, of leaving nothing of that nature to chance, or the accidents of death or sickness. Mr. Deacon was, I am persuaded, a very honest man; but somehow or other, not being able to take up my note, as soon as due, had called on the person who had it in his possession, and made him easy, by appointing a time of payment; so that I thought the affair quite over, when his sudden death betrayed to me that he had not paid it, and it was still in the same hands: what to do I could not tell; I waited on Mr. Deacon's brother, who was his sole heir and executor; but, being a mercenary, selfish wretch, he pretended his brother had left no minute of the affair any where amongst his books and papers; and flatly refused to believe what I related, or to pay me the money; and, after all I could say, I was forced to leave him,

venting such reproaches only as my anger and resentment dictated to me to make use of. I thought this as mortifying a stroke as any man could meet with, thus to be trapped, before he begun the world, by his good-nature and gratitude, out of 6ool. besides, I had not the money to pay it, and my reputation was likely to suffer upon the occasion. I was quite ashamed to mention it to Mr. Diaper; and, as to my father, I resolved, if I could not get time for the payment, to undergo any thing, rather than make him acquainted with it; and it was a great misfortune to me, that Prig was out of town, who was most capable of advising me on such an affair; for as to the clerk he had left in his chambers, he was a mere greenhorn. I was resolved therefore to keep out of the way, as the person who had the note was very vociferous in demanding the money; so that I did not stir from my lodging for near a fortnight; but, as ill luck would have it, I expected one morning a porter from an inn, with some presents from Mr. Goodwill, which I was obliged, in civility, to receive; and, in the interim, the maid of the house came up to my chamber, to let me know a porter below had brought me a letter, and something in a basket, whom I immediately ordered up; but my blood was congealed in my veins almost, when, presenting the letter, which was all a sham, he told me he had a warrant against me, at the suit of Mr. Vulture, the money-scrivener; and immediately three or four more villainous countenances, *sans ceremonie*, bounced into the apartment. I found it was as vain, as imprudent, to resist; and, putting on a tranquil air, desired to know where they proposed to carry me. 'Sir,' replies the chief of them, 'my lock-up house is in Gray's Inn Lane, where you will be as much at your ease as at home;' so ordering a coach to be called, and giving proper directions to my landlord, if any body enquired, I suffered myself to be conducted to the aforesaid place of *salva custodia*. I was put, at my entrance, into a room, where were several prisoners, of both sexes, some airily singing and talking, others stupid, and full of despair, at their misfortunes; but all seemingly agreed in this, that drinking was a cure for their maladies. As soon as the

officer had left me, one of them advanced, and very facetiously welcomed me to my new quarters, where, he said, he had been several times; and, seeing me look somewhat dull, bid me not mind it, one half of the world had been there already, and the other must come there soon; 'Come, Sir, we must have your *footing*, and when your *'gall's* a little broke, you'll be easy.' I asked him what he meant by my *footing*. 'Only two and sixpence for a bowl of punch, which is what we all pay at our entrance into this noble society, Sir; and you look too much like a gentleman to dispute the custom.' I immediately gave him two and sixpence, and a bowl was brought in, which was soon sucked up by my associates, who then became very curious and inquisitive to know my business, and the occasion of my being *bum'd*, as they called my being arrested. I had no mind to satisfy them, nor indeed did I relish their company; but immediately had a messenger called, to send a note by to Mr. Brisk, Mr. Prig's clerk, that I might have a little advice. Meantime the officer had intimated to the keeper of the house, that I was a warm hand, and flush of *cole*, as I afterwards heard; so that he came, with a great many bows and scrapes, and told me, if I pleased, I might have a room to myself, if I did not chuse so much company. I told him I had much rather to be alone; so, taking leave of my new acquaintance, he ushered me into an apartment up two pair of stairs, where he locked me in, and left me to my meditations. I was, indeed, harassed, by my uneasy thoughts, to some purpose, and never was seen so forlorn a wretch; my former sufferings, and my present distress, combined together to make me exquisitely unhappy. I had now the idea of the pain and regret I should give my father, whose reproaches, for my want of conduct and prudence, were ever in my ears, and made me perfectly distracted: at length Mr. Brisk came, who relieved me from my present perturbation, by his presence. He wished his master had been at home, who, by backing the warrant, would have given me time to put in bail; but as that could not now be done, considering the exorbitant expence I must be at where I was, he advised me to remove myself

to the Fleet, till he came to town, which, in the end, would save me money; and he gave me such an idea of that prison, that I could not help thinking it far preferable to the dungeon-life I led at present, and was likely to do if I continued at the spunging-house any longer; so I agreed to what he said, and gave him the necessary money to procure me an *habeas corpus* for my removal. I had luckily above twenty guineas by me, at the time of my arrest, which, in some measure, supported my spirits; and now I had taken my resolution, methought I was easier, when the officer came into my apartment, to whom I had imparted what I had done. He seemed quite chagrined, and put on a deal of ill-humour upon it, no doubt, expecting me to renew the writ, and, for the sake of avoiding a gaol, ply him continually with civility-money, to permit me to remain where I was. He said the plaintiff would take any bail, and was surprized I would go to the Fleet, which he represented in the most shocking colours to me; but I was prepared for him, and, the four and twenty hours not being expired, I knew he could not carry me to the county gaol, Newgate, before my *habeas corpus* would be taken out, and then I was secure from the disappointed rage of these inhuman gentry: however, my good-nature operated so strongly, that I gave him half a guinea, at which his brow began to smooth; and, assuming another tone, he told me he would do anything to serve me; that I was happy to have fallen into his hands, who was a gentleman that had been reduced, by misfortunes, to accept of his present employ; that many of his brethren would have carried me to Newgate, upon the first mention of an *habeas*; but as to him, he was a man who did not love to prey upon gentlemen under trouble. All that he said was backed by the man of the house; and I could not help calling for a bowl of punch, to reward them for their civility. At night I went to bed, about ten o'clock, but slept little; and about ten the next morning, Mr. Brisk brought me news, my *habeas* would be ready at night, which made me very easy, for I longed to be in a state of more liberty. As soon as he was gone, the officer came in, and, taking me aside, told me he believed

believed the plaintiff was a sour, ill-tempered fellow; and, if I would give him five guineas, he would put in bail above, that should justify their being worth 10,000*l.* though one was a broom-stick maker, and I might go about my business, where I would; but that, if I was obliged to stay publicly in London, I might clap in a writ of error, and fight him off for a twelvemonth. I was astonished at the roguery of this set of men; and though it was not proper for me to reprove him, I conceived so hearty a dislike to these wicked, incroaching instruments of the law, that I would sooner suffer an injury, at any time, than employ them: to both plaintiff and prisoner they will be equally unjust! Gain is the god they worship! and I will venture to say, there is not one in an hundred that has either honour or honesty.

At night I experienced the extortion of such infernal houses, and was charged three shillings for my bed, two shillings for firing, and five shillings extraordinary for occupying the room by myself; which, with what my diners, suppers, and liquors, came to, in their way of reckoning, amounted, for the day and an half I staid there, to forty shillings and upwards, beside the half guinea I gave the officer: yet this is suffered in a country subject to the best laws, and where we boast so much of our liberty, and the privileges of Englishmen!

Mr. Brisk, a tipstaff, and the bailiff, attended me to a judge's chambers, from whence, the usual forms complied with, we were set down at the prison-gate about nine o'clock at night, and were immediately ushered into the Lodge, where a rough-hewn fellow, staring me full in the face, and seeming to devour me with his eyes, demanded two shillings as his fee, telling me, he was the *bead-turnkey*; I complied with his demand; being advised before by Brisk, as also in paying a compliment of a bottle of wine to the rest of his colleagues, who welcomed me to the College, as they called it, with great mirth and jollity. I also paid the master's-side fee, and had a room promised me that very night at the rate of two shillings and sixpence per week, ready furnished.

I was the more ready to go to the Fleet, from the consideration that I

should there be more secret than at a spunging-house, and had conceived a notion that it was a place where few people of consequence were seen to enter; but in this I was mistaken, I afterwards found; for a *fair*, comparatively speaking, could not have a greater resort of persons of all sorts than this place, where I was every minute known by some body or other. Again, I imagined, when my father came to London, and saw me there, he would be more ready, after such a *faux pas*, as I had been guilty of, to gratify my inclination of going abroad. I thought I had money enough to subsist me till his arrival, for I had been informed, that every thing was very cheap in this place, and that a man could find few opportunities of spending money there; in which I was also deceived, as the sequel will demonstrate, for I believe, by such a number of people, more money is hardly ever spent abroad, there not only being all the incentives to luxury and extravagance, but almost an obligation to comply with them: however, I was now in it, and it was in vain to think of a sudden retreat; so, following Mr. Brisk, we entered the house, and were introduced to a pretty commodious coffee-room, where, at several tables, were many well-dressed persons, regaling themselves with variety of liquors.

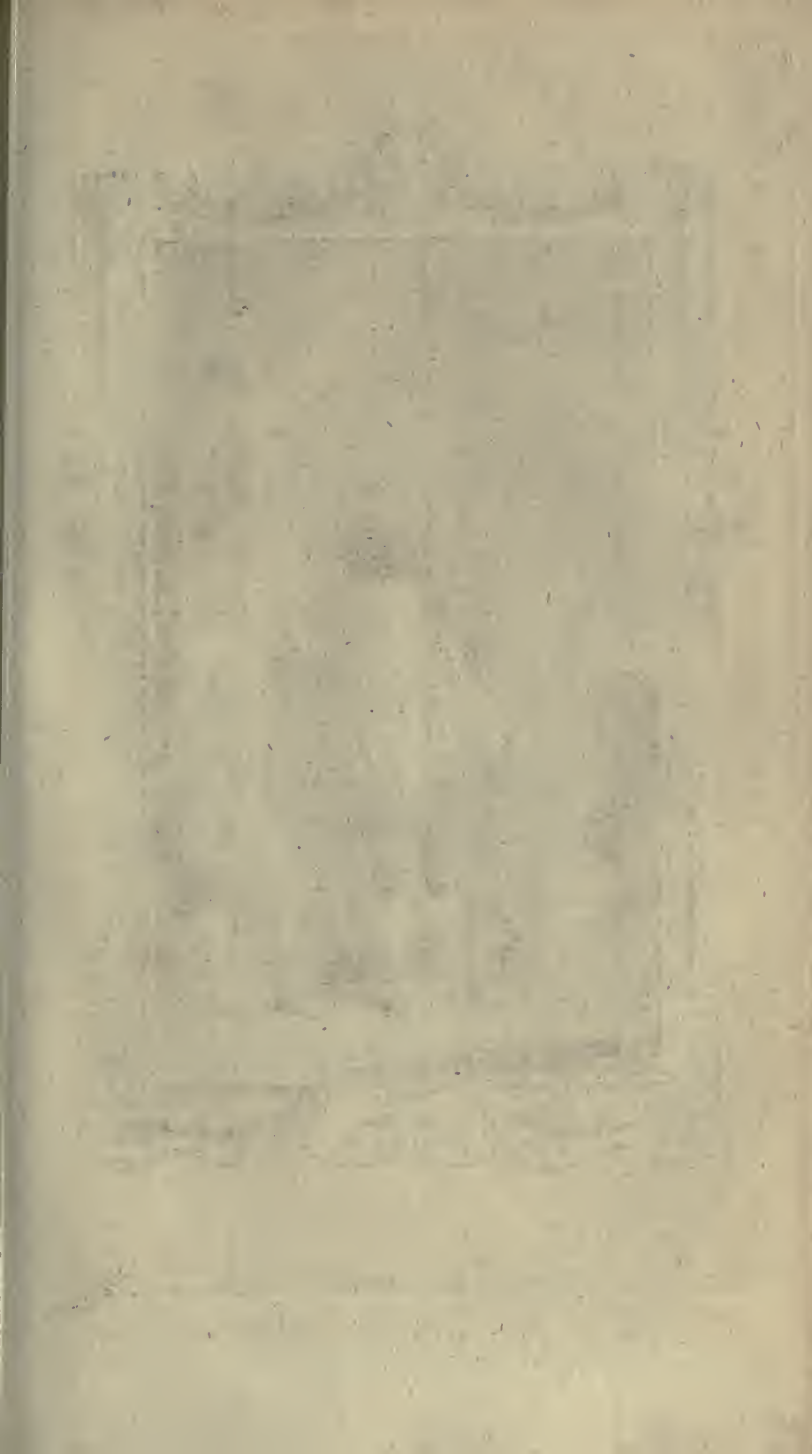
CHAP. V.

HE IS PAINTED IN THE COFFEE-ROOM—ADJOURNS TO THE FLEET CELLAR—HUMOUROUS APPEARANCE OF THE GUESTS THERE—HEARS A CHARACTER OF SPECULIST—ENTERS HIS NEW APARTMENT—DESCRIPTION OF IT—CHARACTER OF THE PLACE IN GENERAL—DIVERS REFLECTIONS—HE JOINS WITH AN ORDINARY.

WE had not been served with the bowl of punch we called for, before several fellows, most of whom I had taken notice of in the Lodge, came in, one after another, upon different errands, and staring me for some time earnestly in the face, and seeming to measure my very height, went out again;

again; I expressed my surprize at such treatment, at which the gentlemen, who were most of them prisoners, I found, seemed very much diverted, and informed me, they came to *paint me*; by which I afterwards understood was meant to take such an observation of my person and features, as might make me known to them, if ever I came to the jig, for so they call one of the inner gates of the prison; and, indeed, without some such observation, it would be impossible to prevent escapes amongst such a number of people as are here confined. These fellows serve the warden also as a kind of delatores, and are his intelligencers of every thing that passes in the inside of the place. The man that kept the coffee-room, being a very pragmatick saucy fellow, we agreed to adjourn to another scene, and see what entertainment we could meet with in the tap or cellar, to which we descended by a staircase; and upon my entrance, from the blackness and darkness of the walls, and the low ceilings, I imagined I was entering the temple of Moloch, and the buz and promiscuous noise of the guests and the drawers put me in mind of the hurry and confusion between decks in a first rate *man of war*. Such a motley crew of jovial beings, sure, never were seen any where else; for my part I forgot I was in a place of confinement, and began to think I was entering Tom King's, or a booth in Bartholomew Fair; some were in serious debate on matters of high-import, as how to circumvent their creditors, and escape the jaws of the gaol; others were cursing the remorseless wretches, who had suffered them to linger out so many years in misery and distress, without any view or prospect, but that of satiating their inhumanity. Many were dancing from box to box, with all the anticks of madmen; and these I soon discovered were the wits, who caused redoubled peals of laughter at every thing they said or did. Some were drunk, others half-drunk and quarrelling, some eating, some drinking, and, in short, wherever you cast your eyes, you discovered little that could bespeak the object of your view at all touched with their conditions. The landlord, perceiving that we were strangers, accomodated us with a box, after some little time, and we called

for a tankard of beer; and presently all the company was up in arms to see the new prisoner, and many, with a familiar air, shook me by the hand, and told me, they were glad to see me there; where, if I had money, I might live as well as ever I did in my life. This grew tiresome to me, and Brisk, having been there before, asked, if we could not procure a room. Upon which we were shewed to one, which was as handsome as one in a tavern, in which were only two grave-looking gentlemen, who I found were also prisoners; one of them Sir William Fader, a baronet, and the other Dr. Diagonstick, a physician, who both appeared to be men of sense, and expressed a great concern at seeing me there. We called for a bottle of wine, and had some small matter for supper, which was brought in by a man cook, who was as great an oddity, in person and behaviour, as ever I had seen. Sir William and the doctor drank with us, at my request, and entertained us with the history of the place, and the character of the chief persons in it; and, amongst the rest, told me, there was one Mr. Speculist, who was a very clever man, but had behaved so arrogantly and overbearingly, that he was universally despised by all his fellow-prisoners in general. Then they cautioned me against lending money, and advised me to keep as much above stairs in my own apartment as possible, which I should find more for my peace and comfort than being below, where they were perpetually involved in broils and factions. The reckoning coming to be paid between the baronet and the physician, I perceived they were at a kind of a plunge, not having enough about them, and both pretending to be angry at the trouble of going to their rooms for more; upon which Sir William said, he would see if he could find anybody in the tap-room that would oblige him, and prevent his journey; seeing this, and thinking them very honest gentlemen, I pulled out a crown, and begged they would not be at a loss, since I could oblige them: with some difficulty they accepted the favour, promising payment next morning; but I never heard of it again, and soon after found they were notorious, both of them, for borrowing and never returning





turning what they borrowed. This indeed is the curse of this place, and a man should never carry about him more than enough for his own use; for, if he does, he is sure to have customers enough to make it away too. At ten, Brisk was obliged to depart, when the tremendous cry of, *Who goes out?* was bawled forth by the watchmen, and soon after the chamberlain, with a pair of sheets on his arms, summoned me to explore my new apartment. Guess my surprize, when passing through a narrow kind of passage, which stunk most abominably, and which I understood afterwards was called Mount Scoundrel, I was introduced to a little room, that I presume had been, some twenty years before, white-washed; but now was so black, and the walls so decayed, that the light pervaded it in several places, and, at the top, I had through several cracks a clear view of the azure sky: a sordid bed, covered with horse-cloths rather than blankets, and a rug that had received many a gorgeous party-coloured patch, which *seemed to speak variety of wretchedness*; a grate, consisting of three worn-out crooked bars; a chair or two without backs; and a table, which of a foot was lame, and

* Thrust between the limping leg a sherd,
 * So was the mended board exactly rear'd;

composed the furniture. I expressed my discontent to the chamberlain; who, scratching his head, with a burlesque air, told me, few gentlemen had a better room at first; but, no doubt, when I became acquainted with the custom of that place, I might remove more to my satisfaction. I found by this I had made a mistake; so I tipped him half a crown, and promised him half a guinea more, if I could have a better on the morrow: he bowed, and very obligingly told me, he would see what he could do for me.

The next morning I rose early, not having slept the whole night, partly from the badness of my lodging, and partly from the incessant noises of drunken disorderly prisoners, who all night long raked about and quarrelled in the adjacent galleries. *Now to explore my prison*, and indeed a more gloomy prospect, methought, I had never seen before. It was met by the

doctor I had supped with the over-night, who shewed me all its avenues, and read me a long lecture, to convince me how necessary exercise was in this place to preserve health; particularly recommending *five*s for that purpose, at which I soon understood the doctor was a dabster, and partly got his living by it.

To a thinking man, who exercises his reasoning faculties, nothing can be more irksome than such a miserable state of existence as this in a gaol; and however necessity, or avarice and dishonesty, may form a kind of artificial ease and tranquillity in some breasts, yet signs of horror and regret will sometimes break forth from them, whether they give way to it or no. Can there be a more horrible situation, than to labour under this *civil impediment*, and to reflect that you are cut off from the race of mankind, as a destroyer of your neighbour's property, and, as it were, buried *quick* from all remembrance? Dreadful thought! which can be equalled by none but those of the remorseless creditor, who under the sanction of laws, too much abused, shall daily, hourly, become the torturer of some unhappy honest family, whose misfortunes only have rendered them insolvent: yet such there are, who, in our church service, every day still repeat, *Forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors*. Blasphemous impiety! execrable murderers! wisely has the legislature, from time to time, relieved, at certain periods, the suffering guiltless creature from these merciless bonds!

In the Fleet, I found persons of all ranks, all professions, and almost all religions; and there can be no loss of agreeable companions for men of every taste. Some have taken shelter here to save the fortunes for themselves or their heirs, which ought to be given up to the ruined creditors; numberless families suffering by such villainies; others have been caught, and fixed here, after a train of successful rogueries, bringing in the spoils of hundreds; but the greatest number are those unhappy ones. I hinted at before, whose case is greatly, sincerely, to be pitied. The honest man here droops and pines, despair and death are seen in his face, and he deplores his misfortunes! The others lose, in a round of drinking, riot,

riot, and debauchery, all sense of shame, and all compunction for their crimes, and make their prison a veritable hell, to those about them, more serious, more composed.

‘Just Heaven! when will the blissful time arrive, that man, thy substitute below, shall cease to tear and rend his fellow-creature! shall cease to be designing, cruel, base, and act in every thing consistent with his nature and his make! Lions their fellow-lions ne’er devour, and tigers love their kind! Each savage, prowling through the howling desert, with fiery eyes and baneful glare, in search of needful prey, still spares his likeness, wars not on his brother! but man, ungrateful for the every blessing thou hast on him bestowed, with ruthless ravages deforms his soul, and triumphs in his neighbour’s wretchedness; nor feels the pitying thought, nor sheds the melting tear, for others’ woes!’

When dinner time arrived, Sir William accosted me upon the Bare, acquainting me, there was a very good ordinary in the cellar, at which himself, with some other very sociable gentlemen, usually dined, and hoped, that I would let them have the pleasure of my company to dinner. I, for my part, had neither thought of eating or drinking yet, and was taken up in many melancholy reflections upon my forlorn estate, and the unhappiness and the succession of misfortunes that seemed to attend me, at every step in life; but this invitation awaked me from my reverie, and made me perceive the calls of nature were strongly struggling within me, and I attended him to a room in the cellar, where our meal was elegant and cheap, and the company really deserved encomium; save that wit had here unbounded licence, and shook off all the restraints of modesty and decency. However, I was not disposed to be very cynical, and promised to dine there every day, so long as the same good company frequented it.

CHAP. VI.

GETS ANOTHER APARTMENT—
MEETS SPECULIST—BECOMES
EXTRAVAGANT—LOSES MONEY

AT FIVES—IS QUARRELLED
WITH AT THE DRAGON-CLUB—
FIGHTS HIS ANTAGONIST UPON
THE BARE, AND BEATS HIM—
IS IN GREAT DISTRESS—MAKES
AWAY WITH HIS CLOATHS BY
DEGREES.

NEXT morning the chamberlain, eager to handle the half-piece I had offered him, helped me to an airy and commodious room fronting the Bare, where I gave a little treat to Sir William, the doctor, and two or three other members of the ordinary. I was going up to it in the afternoon, when I met, at the end of the gallery, Speculist, full-butt, who made a stand, and burst out into an immoderate fit of laughter, crying out, ‘Mr. Thompson, who ever thought of seeing you at College! Come, my friend, let us sacrifice all our old animosities; and, since fortune has put us into the same situation, let us live as sociably as we can, and endeavour to do one another all the little services that are requisite in this place.’ I was not proof against the good-humour with which he uttered this, and gave him my hand; for I thought it in vain to stand out, as every minute would fling us in one another’s way, and I was ever an enemy to an implacable temper; though I silently resolved in myself to keep as great a distance as I well could, and to converse with him in the most cautious manner. So I went with him to his room, which was on the same floor, after he had visited mine, which I found to be one of the best in the house, and superbly furnished. Here I drank a dram with him, and parted. I soon found I had got into a set of company that made it impossible for me to live frugally; and, though our eating daily was so reasonable, yet the want of something else to employ time, and the vivacious mirth of the table, generally kept us over the bottle or bowl till pretty late, and I soon got an habit of going to the clubs that were held almost in every part of the prison, where I seldom came off for less than half-a-crown at a sitting, and sometimes not for double the money. I engaged also at fives very frequently, which fleeced me of a good deal of money, having generally my masters in the game to deal with;

with; so that my small stock, in less than six weeks time, was pretty much exhausted, and I began to fear it would not last me so long as was needful; which gave me the bitterest pangs, as I saw daily instances of the excessive misery of poverty in this prison, where money, and money only, engages respect, and the services and civilities of your fellow-prisoners. I admitted of no visits but Brisk's, whom I made promise not to let his master know where I was till he came to town; and as to my father and Mr. Diaper, I wrote to them as usual, so that they had no suspicion of what had happened. I was here in a constant round of company and diversions of one sort or another, which I eagerly pursued, fearing the return of my griefs and melancholy despondency, if I indulged in the least my reflections on my dearest Louisa, who still was uppermost, when I did not use art to stifle my remembrances of her. Things were in this situation, when, one evening, at the Dragon Club in the cellar, I had a dispute with Captain Bully, late an officer in a marching regiment, who attacked me very uncivilly, for having said that swearing in common conversation was a very ungentleman-like behaviour. The captain was a brute and a blockhead; but had reigned conqueror in all the athletick trials of skill he had been engaged in, so that he was the terror, and, at the same time, the may-game of all his fellow-prisoners. 'Damn you, Sir,' says he, 'who made you a reformer here? I will swear, Sir; and I am a gentleman, that my commission will declare.'—'Captain,' I replied, 'I meant nothing personal; but still must insist on what I said before, and am sorry to see there is any body so stupid as to contradict me.'—'Stupid! G—d d—n me! what do you mean by that?'—'No more stupid than yourself; I believe I have had as good education too, and will read Greek with you, or any thing else, for what you dare.' At this the whole company fell into a laugh, which encouraged me to lay him a wager that he could not read English. A book was brought, and he attempted to read, but the wager was given against him; and, upon my saying somewhat farther, he took up a

glass, and flung it full at me, which, by ducking my head, I avoided, and challenged me out upon the Bare. I had no mind for this porterly exercise, but, as amongst school-boys, so here I was sensible a man would be reflected upon by every one that refused such a challenge; so, being heartened by all present, I stripped, and went to the field of action, where my antagonist was gone before me. Speculist, upon this occasion, behaved exceeding well, and insisted upon being my second. A ring was formed, and now, being stripped in buff, we stood for some time lowering defiance at each other, like two furious bulls contending for the mastership of the pasture. At length we advance with more than mortal fury, and the resounding blows thunder upon our breasts with repeated force. My antagonist, I soon found, was inferior to me in strength, but superior in skill; upon which I endeavoured to close with him, but all in vain; he baffled my every attempt, and a blow I received over my temples, sent me senseless to the earth; but, soon recovered, I fought aloof till I had gained breath, when, darting, at once, head and hands into the pit of his stomach, I laid him sprawling, and, to compleat the stroke, fell with all my weight upon him. It was some time before he came to himself, but so dismayed and weakened with his unlooked-for fall, that now I closed with him with ease, but did not at first put forth my utmost strength; and presently the sanguinary streams ran from all parts of our bodies, and Victory seemed to hover in suspense to whom she should give the day; when, suddenly, grasping him closely in my arms, I raised him up, as Hercules did Antæus, and dashed him with such force to the ground, that he lay without sense and motion, nor could again resume the fight. The crowds around hailed my conquest with loud shouts, and rung my praises through the Bare; some shook me by the hand, others clapped me upon the back, and all expressed the highest satisfaction to behold the haughty bully thus discomfited, and Hockley in the Hole, and Tottenham Court, yield the day to invincible Yorkshire. My bruises were not very troublesome, and I soon recovered my pristine vigour,

and could now walk or talk without molestation, all my fellow-prisoners allowing me a *cock of the game*.

I fell soon from this height into the most direful distress; my money was gone, and now I employed, for some time, one of the runners to carry, from time to time, my cloaths, watch, and other valuable things, to the pawnbrokers, to support life. I had most of my things from my lodgings, and a few weeks stripped me to one coat, two shirts, a pair of breeches, stockings, and shoes; but I still kept up some appearances, and frequented the usual clubs. I was obliged to refrain even that in a few days longer, and could go no more to the ordinary, having already a score at the tap, of which the landlord gave me many mortifying items. I shooled about, and picked up a dinner here and there in the prison; and more than a score times have gone the whole day without nourishment; so that I became a mere skeleton. I once kept to my room, and, for a whole week, or ten days, lived upon bread and water, obstinately resolving not to impart my distress to any one, but to wait with patience till my father's arrival, which I now expected in a very little time, the plaintiff having *declared* against me, and refusing all terms of accommodation. And at this time my former griefs revived in my mind, with redoubled impetuosity; and my Louisa, sleeping or waking, haunted my soul, and swam before my eyes, in all her torturing, lovely charms; but Louisa lost and gone for ever! I had no sports or company to divert my cruel reflections; and all my old associates, perceiving the game was up with me, forsook me, without vouchsafing even to speak to me when we met. Speculist, indeed, two or three times invited me to dinner; but I was not so far reconciled to baseness, as to accept any farther favours of a man I could not but recollect so many mortifying occurrences of. Often a biscuit and a dram of Geneva, together with the water from the pumps, made my repast for four and twenty hours; and I wished earnestly for death, to hide my shame, and terminate my grief and miseries at once.

CHAP. VII.

A DIGRESSION—SPECULIST TAKEN ILL—HIS BEHAVIOUR ON HIS DEATH-BED—DIES—AN UNEXPECTED VISITOR ARRIVES, AND ENQUIRES FOR THOMPSON—THE AFFECTING INTERVIEW BETWEEN THEM—HIS FATHER AND DIAPER COME TO HIM—HE IS SET AT LIBERTY—TAKES LEAVE OF HIS FELLOW-PRISONERS.

SURE no condition can be more calamitous, more to be pitied, than that of an unfortunate wretch under confinement for debt! His friends, tired with his importunate requests for relief, forsake him, and abandon him to his fate, with bitter censures on his indiscretions and follies; his enemies, knowing themselves secure from his resentments, load him with all the bitter invectives that wanton pride, and hellish malice, can inspire; his incensed creditors, fired with their injuries, are too apt to think his punishment just, and, arrogantly assuming to themselves the authority of Heaven, call down vengeance, and inflict tortures, unceasing tortures, on his head; not reflecting, that the *Saviour of the world* has most authoritatively recommended charity and kindness to the prisoner, as one of those virtues by which we merit happiness hereafter. *I was sick, and in prison, and ye visited me.* What a pathetic sentence! and how truly worthy the Divine lips that spoke it! If benevolence is due to our fellow-creatures in general, how much more so is it to that part of them who are thus exiled from the community, and for a misfortune, perhaps, rather than a fault, as is the case of numbers, doomed to a melancholy gloom, shut up within relentless walls and bars, without the means to support, even there, the wretched remains of life!

- ‘—————Take physick, Pomp;
- ‘Expose thyself, to feel what wretches feel;
- ‘That thou may’st shake the superflux to
‘them,
- ‘And show the heavens more just.’——

SHAKESPEARE.

Oh! I have seen, and have sickened at the horrid sight, numbers of wretches, capable of being useful, in the highest degree, to the publick, secluded from all the privileges of men and Christians, *pale famine* wasting them away by slow degrees, and grievous oppression grinding them to death! These are the greater number that fill our English prisons, and every minute, with bitter anguish, curse the hour they were born, and invoke an end of their wretched beings. Let us look abroad: do Turks, or Infidels, thus treat their debtors? Is it necessary here, when the wise Hollanders, the glory of commerce, find it otherwise there, and every Christian country seems to act by contrary maxims? Oh, Britain! thou land of liberty! how canst thou view disgrace like this, and suffer many thousands to be torn from useful labour, arts and sciences, for ills, the lot of human race, or unwary indiscretions! Lives there a man, who, kindly sympathizing, pities human woes, who gives the quick reliefs to wailing sorrow! all humane, great, and good, the pride, the glory, of his native country, who feels for suffering merit's deep distress! Lives there a Lyttleton, who softly bends, and lends his ready ear to every tale big with calamity! And are these things still so? Rife, Cornwall, Oglethorp, and all the generous band of patriot souls, and see mankind redressed!

Mr. Speculist, about this time, was taken ill with a malignant fever, which carried off a great number of the prisoners, and, before I heard of it, was out of all hopes of recovery. One morning, a man, who waited upon him, came to tell me that Mr. Speculist wanted to have a little conversation with me; at the same time letting me know that it was the first interval of reason he had had for some time, having been constantly delirious ever since the distemper seized him. I made what haste I could, and found the poor creature so changed, that he was hardly to be known; the fire and *hau-* tear of his countenance, that *fierte*, so visible in him, was now extinct, and he lay, with hollow eyes, and pallid, meagre face, gasping, as it were, for breath. The sight shocked me; and,

notwithstanding all the former reasons I had to be angry with him, I could hardly refrain from shedding tears. He reached his feeble hand, quite cold and clammy, to me, and begged me to sit down, for a few minutes, which I did, and he thus addressed me.

‘ Mr. Thompson, I see you are touched to see me thus; and you can’t help making some reflections on the difference between my former appearance and my present. I shall die—of that I am assured; and all the philosophy I thought myself master of, will not support my spirits in this dreadful moment! Oh, Time! how have I abused you, and all the precious gifts Providence has kindly bestowed upon me!’ Here a rending sigh heaved his breast, and a tear or two, all the moisture left in his brain, trickled down his withered cheeks. ‘ Oh, my friend!’ he continued, ‘ could I recal my days again, I should, I think, despise and hate the odious ways I have followed. How has vanity, and a desire of applause, tempted me to dispute those truths which the conviction of my mind, per force, would still make me only acknowledge! How have my hours been spent! how idly, unprofitably, and how wickedly! and, alas! the consequences are bitter pangs, despairing groans, and fears of what may come hereafter! for—

“ If there’s a Power above us,
“ (And that there is, all nature cries aloud
“ Through all her works) he must delight
“ in virtue;
“ And that which he delights in must be
“ happy.”

‘ I would pray—but I am convinced my present circumstances will be the inducement; and I fear a death-bed repentance will be of no avail! Oh! how extreme are my tortures, and the wounds of my conscience are not to be healed! Could I this minute make reparation for all the injustices, cruelties, and wrongs, I have acted towards my fellow-creatures, (for I have been a most abandoned monster of vice) I should then, with some confidence, apply to the throne of grace for *mercy in time of need*; but, alas! I am taken,

as the poet expresses it, *unmuzzled, disappointed, unanealed*, with all my crimes staring me full in the face, and bearing me down to the bottomless-pit, *where shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth*. My friend, take warning by me, and never affront your good sense so much, or the sentiments of your mind, as to join in scenes of riot and debauchery, and run such base lengths, for the gratification of those appetites and passions, which should constantly be governed by religion and reason; then in the hour when your soul is separating from it's earthly mansion, you may have the exceeding great consolation of applying, by such acts of devotion as are the manna of the mind, to that God who never forsakes those who love him, in the time of their tribulation; and not, like me, be downed a prey, to anguish, fear, and doubt, dreading, yet longing, to exist again, and lost in wild and endless mazes of exploring wretchedness! Here his spirits would hold out no longer, and he fell into his usual delirium, with such strong convulsions, that I doubted not he was in his last agonies. Poor unhappy man! I wept at his condition, and, by an involuntary motion, fell on my knees, at the side of his bed, and put up earnest petitions for mercy and compassion, from the offended Author of his being, in terms that surprized every body about us; and, before I rose, he was no more!—but gave up the ghost, a placid smile being visible on his countenance.

This was the end of poor Speculift; a man, who, if he had rightly managed his great talents, would have been a blessing to his friends, and an ornament to his country; but over-bearing vanity and lust brought him thus to a gloomy prison, and, by an infectious distemper caught there, to an untimely grave! May that be the end of his sufferings!

I had fulfilled near three months in this confinement, where every thing conspired, with my sorrows, to rob me entirely of any relish for life; and was now reduced to so sad a state, that my remaining cloaths hardly sufficed to cover my nakedness, and my toes peeped through the yawning chasms time had made in my shoes; so that I

could not stir out of my room, and was almost starved. In this dilemma all my woes returned upon me with repeated violence; and, having no books of any account left, my time was spent merely in the most bitter reflections, and the most cruel sighings and groanings of an afflicted spirit. Sometimes I vented my sorrows in poetick strains, where I endeavoured to warble forth my complaints, and the beauties of my adorable Louisa; nothing giving the soul a greater turn to numbers than so melancholy, so tender a situation as I was in. Amongst many such essays, I have selected the following, which will truly picture the condition of my mind at this time—

I.

Was ever maid so form'd to please,
As sweet Louisa, heavenly fair!
Whose smiles could howling tortures ease,
And calm the soul's most deep despair!

II.

Where'er she mov'd, untainted joys,
All gladsome, wanton'd in her train;
And ribbald nonsense, riot, noise,
Exi'd, forsook the blissful plain.

III.

Fierce thro' the flames her charms inspir'd,
Where all the blooming graces rovd;
Her mind's perfection's more admir'd;
E'en Reason bow'd, obey'd, and lov'd!

IV.

Such thoughts! such sentiments refin'd!
Ne'er mov'd a female breast before;
And sparkling wit, soft beauty join'd,
Compell'd sage Wisdom to adore!

V.

Ah, then! what sorrowing strains can tell
The bitter anguish I endure!
Who can my pangs, my griefs, reveal
What my tormented bosom cure!

VI.

For, ah! the radiant angel, torn
From these fond arms, to Heaven aspires!
And, doom'd to ceaseless woe! I mourn,
My hopeless, ineffectual fires!

VII.

Hail, then, the dungeon's darksome gloom!
Hail, horrors! miseries! and cares!
Since Lucy, in the silent tomb,
Commands my groans, excites my tears.

VIII.

No more glad day shall gaily shine!
No more shall balmy comfort cheer!
But musing sadness shall be mine!
And pensive moans, and sighs sincere!

IX.

Come, friendly Death! to mortal grief,
Though dreaded, yet a welcome guest!
Ah! give a suffering wretch relief!
And ease the youth's afflicted breast!

X. Oh,

X.

‘ Oh, then! to fields, to floods of light!
 ‘ My raptur’d soul shall blissful stray;
 ‘ And all resplendent, glorious, bright!
 ‘ Louisa meet me on my way.’

Whilst I was one day busied in this manner, I heard my name repeated by a well-known female voice in the gallery several times, which, for my soul, I could not believe to be any other than my mother’s; and nothing can equal the shock that the thought gave me. The voice approached my ears nearer and nearer; and at length one of the common fide prisoners opening the door of my room, said, ‘ That’s the gentleman’s room, Madam, you enquired for; and you will find him within.’ Gracious God! it was she, it was the dear woman herself! who, advancing a few paces, and at the same time shutting the door with one hand, no sooner discovered the meagre, wretched figure her son, than she uttered a loud cry, and fell back in a swoon, in a chair that stood behind her. Sufficiently rouzed from my stupid lethargy, I flew to her, and raising her head, reclined it on my bosom, whilst a flood of tears flowed from my eyes; and all I could pronounce was, now and then, in the intervals of my convulsive emotions, ‘ Dear Madam!—Heaven!—What do I behold!’ She soon came to herself; and, fastening her arms about my neck, wept bitterly; oft repeating, ‘ My son! My son! What wretchedness to see thee thus! Oh, what! what have you done, to bring you here!’ I fell on my knees, and, grasping her hand, begged her to calm herself, and I would relate all my story; ‘ But your sudden, unexpected, surprizing arrival, has filled me with such wonder and astonishment, that it will be some time before I can command myself so much as to talk any thing sensible. My amazement, dear Madam, has even turned my brain;’ and, indeed, so it had: I was not prepared for such an incident, which, had I thought of all the improbabilities in life, would never have entered my thoughts, and puzzled me so to account for, that my head ran round, as it were, upon wheels, with a velocity that took from me all steady thinking for some considerable time. I called the man in, who still waited

without; and my dear mother sent him for a bottle of wine, of which, when I had drank a glass or two, (for nothing but water had entered my lips that day before) I was revived enough to talk, and my mother had acquired spirits enough to hear me. The first question I asked was about my father’s health, who she assured me was very well, and that they arrived in London the day before, and went immediately to Mr. Diaper’s country-house, apprehending they should meet with me there; for I had not let them know where I lodged in any of my letters, and they had forgot to enquire of Mr. Archer and Mr. Sharpley before they set out, who could have informed them. Mr. Diaper, overjoyed to see them, came with them to town; and, as he knew where I lodged, in Red Lion Street, carried them directly there; but no surprize could exceed theirs, when, upon knowing who they were, my landlord informed them I was a prisoner in the Fleet Prison. My father, after indulging, with my mother and Mr. Diaper, all the grief such news could occasion, enquired if he knew on what account I had gone there, and had kept it a secret from all my friends so long; but he could not satisfy them, and directed them to the spunging-house, where I was carried after my arrest, and there they came to a knowledge of my plaintiff, the nature of the debt, and every thing else that could give them a thorough insight into the affair; at which my father and master were so concerned, they could hardly utter a word for a long time. From thence they waited on Mr. Vulture, and he was so generous as to own that he believed I had never received a penny satisfaction for my note from Mr. Deacon; but that it was the unguarded mistake of a youth, whom he would not have been so severe with, if he could have afforded to stay any longer for his money; but as he did not know, nor I care to tell him, where my relations lived, he found it necessary to arrest me, to secure the payment of it. Mr. Diaper, who knew him, and who was known to Vulture, blamed him highly for not letting him know the affair, when he would have bailed me, and not suffered me to undergo the disgrace and pain of imprisonment; but he excused himself by saying,

saying, that he could not imagine so much friendship had existed between us as that came to. Then they talked to Mr. Deacon's brother, but could not bring him at all to reason, though my father talked of commencing a suit in equity to recover the money; and demonstrated, that I could not possibly be any thing in his brother's debt. Vulture was applied to again after this, to know if he would come to any composition; but he excused himself by saying, he had been the whole money out of pocket so long, that he had been a great loser: however, in compliment to Mr. Diaper, he would deduct the fees and law-charges, and give me a discharge on the receipt of the 600l. 'Mr. Diaper and your father,' continues this dearest mother, 'are now in the Lodge, paying your fees, and setting you at liberty, having paid Vulture the sum upon the note this morning betimes; but, my dear, you are quite altered; I never thought I should see my Joey in such a place! or such an habit!' She had just finished these words, when in rushed my father and Mr. Diaper. If they expressed all the joy imaginable to see me again, the forlorn condition I appeared in gave them the utmost torment; and my father and he both, though very tenderly, chid me for not acquainting them sooner with this matter, and writing for the proper support for my necessities, whilst I was here. 'Look ye, my son, though you have acted so sillily, so ungardonally, in this affair of the note,' says my father, 'yet, as I believe you was swayed by gratitude to my old friend, poor Mr. Deacon, to do what you did, and cannot be accused of any thing but folly and inattention, in not taking a proper counter security of him, I shall make you no reproaches, and hope your future conduct will wipe off any stain your imprisonment may have occasioned; but now we have got you discharged, and you are at liberty to go, your figure is so rueful, that you cannot appear till dark.'—'But,' says my mother, 'I fancy, Sir, a little money will redeem Mr. Thompson's cloaths sufficient to appear in; for I suppose he has not sold them, but committed them to the custody of some pawnbroker.' To this I answered in the

affirmative; upon which my dear father gave me ten guineas, and immediately sent the runner I used to employ, for my cloaths, whilst they satisfied their curiosity in viewing the prison, the Bare, the coffee-room, &c. and then I got shaved and dressed, and appeared before them like myself. We bespoke a dinner in the cellar; and my fellow-prisoners, hearing of my discharge, thronged into the room to wish me joy, which I returned, desiring them to drink a glass of wine; and presenting them to my father, to whom, when I had informed him of their several characters, he ordered me to make some presents, if I thought proper; accordingly I did so, where I knew it would be acceptable; and gave, in his name and Mr. Diaper's, a considerable sum to the begging-grate. Amongst the rest, poor Sir William Failer came to congratulate me; but my father had no sooner fixed his eyes upon him, than he ran to embrace him; and they exchanged such mutual civilities, as quite surprized me. 'And is this your son?' cried Sir William; 'I wish I had known it sooner, how happy should I have been!' My father, who I soon perceived had a great regard for him, asked him how long he had been there. He said, 'Near two years, for a debt of forty pounds.'—'Good God!' said my father, 'is it possible! *Tempora mutantur, & nos mutamur in illis!*'—'Ah, my old chum!' replied Sir William, 'little did I think, some years ago, ever to see this place; but *jacta est alea.*'—

"—*Quæque ipse miserrima vidi;*

"*Et quorum pars magna fui!*"—

After some other discourse relative to Sir William's affairs, my father invited him to dinner; and that over, called him on one side, and made him a present of ten guineas, which he received with a grateful transport: then taking leave of all my acquaintance, and clearing all my scores and debts in the place, I once more launched out into the open air, and immediately, with these three dear and much-loved persons, set out for Mr. Diaper's country-house. Mrs. Diaper, at my arrival, overcame me almost with caresses; but, when she had heard my story,

story, she lifted up her hands and eyes, and said, if her son was to know it, she believed he would go distracted; and blamed me greatly for not acting with more regard to myself, by letting my friends know my distress; declaring she would have made away with her plate, if it could not have been done without, rather than have suffered me to continue in prison a minute. At supper, talking about the place we just came from, I acquainted Mr. Diaper with the death of poor Speculist, and the manner of it, which occasioned a great many curious and useful reflections on all hands; 'But what most surprises me is, to see Sir William Failer so destitute of friends,' says my father; 'though, indeed, when we come to consider all things, it is not so strange neither; for he has, to be sure, been a very indiscreet and unhappy man; and the passages I recollect of his life are a remarkable lesson of prudence to mankind.' I asked him to relate what he knew of that gentleman; which, being backed by Mr. Diaper and the two ladies, he did immediately, to the following effect.

C H A P. VIII.

THE HISTORY OF SIR WILLIAM FAILER, BART.

MY acquaintance with this gentleman commenced at the University, where he was at that time a student as well as myself; Sir William being of Emanuel, and I of St. John's; and has been continued till within nine or ten years; when his various misfortunes and distresses so altered him, that he sought other friends of a different stamp from those he before associated with. You will observe, in the anecdotes I am going to give you of this gentleman's history, that the greatest talents, the finest opportunities of rising in life, are of no avail, if a little worldly prudence, or care to keep up appearances, and a little self-interest also, for a little is undoubtedly laudable, mingle not in our actions.

Sir William was descended from a collateral branch of one of the noblest and most antient families in the North of Scotland; the heads of which being

p>
dipped in a late rebellion against the prince on the throne, were obliged to forsake their native country; but, however, at present, make the brightest military figures in a neighbouring government; one of them being allowed to be as consummate a general-officer as any in Europe. He was tall, and well-made, had a great deal of vivacity and spirit, and a finished education, which, I assure you, you now but see the remains of: his name and family brought him into the world with great advantages; and, though his paternal estate was very small, he might, from his knowledge of the world, and adroitness in the management of publick affairs, have expected very great encouragement from the people then at the helm in the latter end of the reign of our late majesty Queen Anne; but just as he came to London for good, she died; and those friends who were likely to assist his rise, were out of play. Soon after he stood candidate to represent his native borough in parliament, but was opposed by a courtier of great distinction, who, by procuring a number of honorary freemen to be made, carried the election against him; upon which Sir William petitioned the House, and had such flagrant proofs of bribery and corruption to produce, that it was thought proper not to suffer him to be heard; and, the very night before the hearing came on, he was seized by a messenger, and confined by an order from the Secretary of State. Sir William was examined to certain interrogatories several times by my Lord T—; but behaved with a spirit and firmness that surprized that sagacious nobleman, who, from this behaviour, commenced a very warm friendship for him, and recommended him to another great man, who promoted him to a lucrative employ in one of our West India colonies, where he might have made himself rich and happy, could he have sacrificed his honour and conscience to views of interest, as too many employed in publick affairs do. A large sum of money came into his hands, by way of forfeitures, for which his predecessors never used to account; but Sir William, full of the patriot, and fraught with all the sublime principles

' principles of disinterested love of the
 ' publick, refused to follow their ex-
 ' ample, and wrote for orders to remit
 ' it to the Treasury. The mi ister
 ' wrote him a kind letter, in which he
 ' told him he thought he had as much
 ' right to the money as other persons
 ' in his office had had, and advised
 ' him to say no more of the matter;
 ' but he could not stomach this, and
 ' accordingly remitted the money,
 ' which was safely received; and what
 ' use was made of it the publick never
 ' came to the knowledge of; but I re-
 ' member, when Sir William after-
 ' wards came to England, and applied
 ' to the same great minister for some
 ' pecuniary favours, he laughed in his
 ' face, and told him he had it once in
 ' his power to make his fortune, by
 ' keeping what, perhaps, was dissipated
 ' amongst a parcel of scoundrels: so
 ' openly did that minister acknowledge
 ' the corruption in which he dealt, and
 ' of which, indeed, he was truly the
 ' father. In this colony he became
 ' enamoured of the beauteous Matilda,
 ' a widow lady, of large possessions,
 ' whom attacking with all the advan-
 ' tages of person and power, he soon
 ' made a conquest of, and married;
 ' but this marriage was so far from
 ' being so agreeable to Sir William as
 ' he imagined it would; and, the *honey-*
 ' *moon* over, he found his lady stiff,
 ' morose, a great devotee, and, even
 ' in the arms of her husband, uttering
 ' extempore prayers, and doing every
 ' thing according to the maxims of
 ' soul-seeking and saving-grace: terms
 ' which Sir William had as little
 ' notion of the efficacy of, as he had
 ' of the Pope's supremacy. In vain
 ' he endeavoured to conquer this de-
 ' vout humour; she was a Presbyterian
 ' of the most finished cast; and, for
 ' an oath or profane word, used in
 ' passion, would deprive him of her
 ' bed and company for a month.
 ' One day, I, amongst others, after
 ' his return to London, dined with
 ' him; it happened to be on a Sunday,
 ' and, after dinner, my lady went to
 ' the meeting, as usual. Sir William
 ' had been praising a parcel of Ma-
 ' deira very highly, but, when he
 ' came to look for the key of his cel-
 ' lar, found my lady had carried it
 ' with her. This was a trick she had
 ' often served him, to prevent his pro-

' faneing the Sabbath; and he had as
 ' constantly vowed to be even with her.
 ' He had a footman, a stout fellow,
 ' whom he ordered immediately to assist
 ' him in taking the cellar door off the
 ' hinges; which done, he laid it upon
 ' his shoulders, and saw him himself
 ' bear it into the meeting-house, which
 ' was not at a great distance, where he
 ' carried it to his lady's pew, and,
 ' flinging it down, told her his master
 ' had sent the cellar-door to unlock,
 ' since she would not leave the key at
 ' home. My lady screamed out; the
 ' preacher was forced to stop in the
 ' midst of his discourse, the hubbub
 ' was so great; and, mean time, one
 ' of the elders was turning the foot-
 ' man out of doors; when Sir Wil-
 ' liam appeared, and hallooed out,
 ' "Look ye. Madam, your affected
 ' "godliness is not to deprive me of my
 ' "wine; give him the keys directly,
 ' "or we will carry you in procession
 ' "upon our shoulders, and make you
 ' "unlock it at home." My lady
 ' found she was not joked with, so
 ' gave the key; but never came home
 ' afterwards; and they parted, by mu-
 ' tual consent, Sir William surrender-
 ' ing up to her use, and that of her
 ' children by a former husband, all
 ' her fortune. Some years after, grow-
 ' ing out at elbows, he solicited for,
 ' and obtained a government in North
 ' America, in which he behaved with
 ' satisfaction to the government at
 ' home, and to the ease and benefit of
 ' the people under his command, for
 ' fifteen years; but was thrown out
 ' by a faction, and came home as poor
 ' as ever. Now he applied all his ta-
 ' lents to drawing up schemes for the
 ' use of the ministry, in which he met
 ' with great encouragement from Ge-
 ' neral Commodus and Sir Houghton
 ' Hall; the first of them a patron of
 ' great integrity and credit, and gene-
 ' rous even to a fault; the other as re-
 ' markable for his extensive power at
 ' the helm. Several of his schemes
 ' were put in execution, and he made
 ' shift, from the largesses that were
 ' bestowed upon him, to keep the best
 ' company, and to support a tolerable
 ' equipage. Undoubtedly no man in
 ' England understood more the inte-
 ' rest of his mother country, or that
 ' of those numerous and beneficial de-
 ' pendants upon her in America; but,
 ' that

that prime minister being forced to resign and retire, he was for some time unemployed; and having contracted large debts, (for Sir William was far from being an economist in his own affairs) he was several times arrested, and consigned to loathsome prisons, whence he was generally relieved by some of his worthy patrons. He now turned publick writer, and for some time plied the quill with great success; but, that yielding him but a slender supply, he grew scandalously guilty of borrowing small sums of every one he met; and an unfortunate second marriage, together with this sad habit, hurt his reputation greatly; which was the more to be pitied, as he now advanced apace into years. His distress was told to the generous Commodus, who with a princely generosity made him a present of five hundred pounds, to pay off his troublesome creditors: but he did not know who he had to deal with; Sir William ought to have been master of 10,000*l.* a year, according to the dictates of his natural temper. He left Commodus full of gratitude, and hastened to an ordinary to regale himself, not having made an hearty meal for some days; and who should he see there but the unfortunate Bellario, a great unhappy friend of his, who, after the first compliments, told him a long story of his present distresses? "Good G—d!" cries the baronet, "how happy am I, my dear friend, to have it in my power to relieve you: here, take this hundred pound bank-bill, and make yourself easy; if you want more, call on me to-morrow at my lodgings;" thus he went on, forgetting entirely, in the native benevolence of his heart, the excessive occasion he had for more than the whole himself, and the intent of it's being bestowed upon him; but a question Bellario put to him a little disconcerted him; he asked him, where it was he lodged: upon which he blushed, recollecting it was at a blind chandler's shop; and, taking a short leave, hastened home to pay six weeks arrears of rent that he owed there, before he forgot it. When he came home, his landlady's husband, who was a very honest fellow, and father of a numerous family, he

found, by the wife's tears and complaints, was arrested for a debt of five and twenty pounds, which would be the total ruin of him and his family. Sir William's heart was not proof against this scene of distress; he cried out in an extasy, "Thank God! I can relieve him! I will do it this minute!" so pacifying the woman, and, putting a guinea into her hands, he went and released her husband, and brought him home with him, paying the whole debt and charges for him. In short, before the next week, poor Sir William began to fall from all that sudden elevation this money had raised his honest heart to, and was obliged to borrow half a crown of a friend, dine in a cellar, and soon after was arrested in a small action, and carried to the Marshalsea; whence, indeed, Commodus again released him, but would never see his face more. After this he pursued certain schemes, which he had proposed for the benefit of the city traders, of which he made a good deal of money at times; but was frequently interrupted by a taylor, to whom he owed a considerable sum of money, who had put the cause into the hands of a pettifogging scoundrel of a lawyer. This lawyer was special poor, and, whenever he wanted a new suit of cloaths, used to frequent the coffee-house where Sir William used, and that gentleman never being able to conceal his noble temper, when he was full of money, as soon as ever he discovered it, persuaded the taylor to arrest him; which he no sooner did, than he advised him to take the charges, and fresh security for another twelve months; so that Sir William has been arrested five times for the same debt, merely owing to his own inattention and the villainy of the attorney, who has got as many suits of cloaths by it; and I believe it is that very debt he is now in du-rance for. I apprehend, Sir William may have been too great a votary to the fair sex, and too incautious in those promiscuous amours, which may have disoblged some of his friends; but this is certain, by what he hinted to me, that, after having done his country great services, some of which he is still un-

“ paid for, and though he is still capable of being of great use, particularly in America, and understands the fishery of Great Britain better than any man in the kingdom, yet his application to a great man only for five shillings *per diem* has been rejected, and he is in a downright starving condition, which I think is a disgrace to our country. He has put into my hands the copy of the very touching letter he wrote to that great man, by which one may see the distress he laboured under; and I think myself happy that it was in my power to give him some assistance. My father then read the letter, which was as follows, dated from the Fleet Prison—

“ RIGHT HONOURABLE SIR,

“ I Have now been confined in prison near five months, for a debt under the value of thirty pounds; and, as I do not truly owe fifty pounds besides in the world, I am no ways apprehensive of any other considerable demand of that nature.

“ On my first hearing of the intended settling of —, and by that means securing an important barrier to all the colonies in the main, as well as encouraging our trade both in the fishery, and with the distant Indians, I was uneasy that my unhappy confinement would not permit me to do myself the honour of waiting on you, in order to acquaint you with a great many truths, some of which perhaps are yet unknown to you. For, altogether regardless of any particular advantage that such information could bring to myself, I most humbly presume to assure you, that, without dissimulation or reserve, I shall always take the greatest pleasure imaginable, in rendering a person of your amiable character, and my country, at the same time, real service, acting in such a manner having always been my ambition, as it gave me the greatest satisfaction in life, and still affords me, in the present distress, a quiet contented mind.

“ There are some other things essential to the affairs of America that I wish could be laid before you, such as the nature and use of a paper-currency there, the necessity of put-

ting it under a proper regulation, and the unavoidable consequence of utterly ruining our trade in, and with these colonies, should it be totally prohibited.

“ I have likewise some useful remarks to offer on a proper encouragement to be given for carrying on both the herring and cod fishery, on the north coast of Scotland; and I should think myself sufficiently rewarded, if any knowledge or industry I am master of, could but procure me so small an encouragement as five shillings a day for common bread; and having now but a very few years to live, if your honour will condescend to gratify your own humanity, by procuring me liberty, together with such an allowance for my subsistence, it will undoubtedly afford you the agreeable reflection of having saved, from inexpressible want and misery, *right honourable Sir, your honour's most dutiful and ever obedient servant,*

“ WILLIAM FAILER.”

CHAP. IX.

HE PERSISTS IN HIS DESIGN OF GOING ABROAD—PRIG ARRIVES, WHOM HE CONSULTS—LUCKILY THINKS OF APPLYING TO MR. GOODWILL—THAT GENTLEMAN ARRIVES AT MR. DIAPER'S—HE PERSUADES MR. THOMPSON TO LET HIS SON GO TO THE EAST INDIES—MR. GOODWILL PROCURES HIM TO BE SENT AS A FACTOR TO FORT ST. GEORGE—HE TAKES LEAVE OF THE DIRECTORS—IS NOBLY FITTED OUT FOR THE VOYAGE.

WE spent three or four days in this recess, and I took it so kindly and gratefully, that my father nor Mr. Diaper ever reproached me, or mentioned my late folly, that I was full of a sense of their goodness, which gave me more than usual inclination to please in every thing I did; and I even, for some time, sacrificed my cruel regrets to the joy and pleasure I experienced in the company of these dear persons. I found Mr. Diaper had not yet heard from my friend again; which

which did not give us much uneasiness, as no India ship had arrived, since he set sail from Lisbon; but, to make us some amends, we received letters from Mr. Bellair and Miss Sukey, accompanied with some presents to Mrs. Diaper, by which we found that lady and her brother in the same sentiments of my friend, and longing for advices from him.

Notwithstanding the ease and composure, however, that I affected, I was under a good deal of concern to see my father and Mr. Diaper still in an humour of settling me in the business of a linen-draper, to which I had now lost all manner of relish; and to which the departure of my friend had not a little contributed: besides, the many accidents that I had met with, the death of my Louisa, together with the life I had lately led, had given me a repugnance to a close application, and a course of hurry and trade: this, though, was not making a proper judgment of things, for, in the execution of my design of going abroad, if I had thought only of the common difficulties that would naturally occur, and the care I must manage with to bring myself into a wished state of success, I believe I should have laid it absolutely aside; but now I saw, I thought, a relief from my afflictions, in thus shifting the scene of action, by the variety of unusual objects that would present themselves; and, in short, my hapless love had given a romantick turn to my mind, which absolutely unhinged me for an home employment. I should not have known how to manage in this dilemma, if good fortune had not returned Mr. Prig to town, who immediately came down to pay his compliments to Mr. Diaper and us, upon hearing we were all together. He was received with great respect by that gentleman and my father, to whom I introduced him with particular expressions of regard; but, as for myself, I felt unusual satisfaction in seeing a man, who was now my only bosom friend, and the repository of my secrets.

He was to the last degree surprized when he heard of my imprisonment, and the affair of Mr. Deacon; but it was his advice to sit down with the loss; for though, by filing a bill in Chancery, perhaps some relief might

be got, yet the time it would employ, and the necessary expences, previous to the obtaining any satisfaction, would be so great a discouragement, that we should be heartily sick and tired, before it would be terminated. My father, who was an enemy to long and tedious litigations, upon these advices, agreed to let the affair drop, telling me, with a great deal of good-humour, that he would look upon it as a debt due to him from me, whenever I was able to pay him.

When I could conveniently do it, I took my friend Prig with me upon a ride, and disclosed to him my situation, and the eager desire I had to follow Mr. Diaper's example, by going abroad; for which I gave him such reasons, that, finding all his persuasions to the contrary of no avail, he heartily promised me his assistance to bring over my father and mother to lay aside their thoughts of seeing me fixed in England; and now we began to think of the best means to bring it to bear, when, luckily, I recollected that Mr. Goodwill had an uncle in the direction of the East India Company, and determined to write to that gentleman to use his interest with him, for my obtaining somewhat in their service, which I had all the reason in the world to believe he would employ with a great deal of pleasure; and, accordingly, that very evening I wrote to him, acquainting him with my request and my inducements for it; and another letter to his lady, to back me in my desire; and sent them directly to the post. Mean time, I endeavoured to keep my father from making any progress in my affairs, by proposing continual parties of pleasure to him and Mr. Diaper, which they readily engaged in, upon the consideration of the confinement I had suffered, which they imagined must have considerably hurt my constitution, and rendered air and the amusements of the country necessary to re-establish my health; and my mother, as well as my father, was very careful never to mention Sir Walter or his family, which I was glad of; for the least word of my dear Louisa would have cast me into my old melancholy, which I was now somewhat relieved from by the pursuit of my favourite project. At length a letter arrived from Yorkshire, which,

to my surprize, only contained these words—

‘DEAR SIR,

‘MR. Goodwill will be in town almost as soon as you receive this; and I believe I shall also have the happiness to see you myself.
‘*Your most affectionate friend,*

‘K. GOODWILL.’

I could hardly tell what to think of Mr. Goodwill's not writing himself, and the laconick strain of this epistle from his wife, and waited impatiently another week for the event; for I had wrote to Mr. Goodwill, to be so good to send a letter to my father, and to endeavour therein to bring him to consent, by representing the service he could do me, if it were in his power. The week was hardly expired, when, as we were one morning at breakfast, a coach and six drove up to the house, which Mr. Diaper was wondering at; when my mother, clapping her hands for joy, cried out, ‘I am sure, Joe, that livery belongs to a very great friend of yours;’ and so it did, indeed, and springing from my seat I ran to the door before any of the servants, and, opening it, flew to the coach-side, where Mr. Goodwill and his lady were just alighted, who clasped me in his arms, with affection, telling me, ‘You see, Mr. Thompson, I don't do things by halves; but am come to town myself on purpose to serve you.’ I returned him my thanks, as well as my confused joy would permit, and ran to salute his lady, who was in raptures to see me, and said an hundred obliging things. My father and Mr. Diaper, with the two ladies, soon approached, and the interchange of compliments was very polite and endearing, and my father, who had, before he came to town, been several times at Mr. Goodwill's, introduced them to Mr. Diaper and his spouse, who expressed their satisfaction at the honour that was done them, in terms that shewed how much they thought themselves obliged. When the first hurry of our spirits was over, my father asked, to what happy turn it was that we owed the pleasure of seeing them: upon which Mrs. Goodwill told him, laughing, that he should

soon know that, and, perhaps, when he came to be informed, he would wish they had never come at all; but he replied, that, since she could behave so merrily upon the occasion, he was sure it was nothing that could make him uneasy, for he, next to the son they had preserved him, respected her and Mr. Goodwill, second to no persons on earth. The conversation then became general, and the day was spent most agreeably, the evening concluding with mirth, in which Prig, who soon after arrived, was a sharer; and the health of my friend was not forgot to be toasted over and over, to whom this amiable pair expressed so much value, that Mr. Diaper and his mother were full of acknowledgments for it.

The next morning, after breakfast, (for Mr. Diaper, who had room enough, insisted upon, and obtained their company, for two or three days, with their whole equipage) taking an hint from Mr. Goodwill, I went out, and left them all together, when I was sensible he would bring the matter of my desire upon the anvil; nor was I mistaken, for I was sent for in, in about two hours, by my friend Prig, who told me he believed all things were made easy for me, and that I should hear something that would surprize me. I followed him into the parlour, where I had left them, and perceived my mother was drying her eyes, which gave me some pain. ‘So, Joey,’ says my father, ‘I find you have put a trick upon us; and yet such an one, that, as it has afforded us the company of such valuable friends, I can't be angry at. So you are willing to leave us in pursuit of adventures, I find; but Mr. Goodwill has said so much in favour of your scheme, and has been so well backed by Mr. Prig, that, notwithstanding all my reluctance, I believe I must yield to part with you, if you can bring your mother to a compliance, who seems more averse to losing you than any one. Mean time, pray return that good friend of yours,’ pointing to Mr. Goodwill, ‘thanks; for he has been offering such things in your favour, that convince me he loves you as much as if you were his own son.’ I advanced to him, and thanked him, with
an

an action betokening all the gratitude of my mind; and then endeavoured, by all the persuasions I was master of, to bring my dear mother to accord to my going abroad; which, with great reluctance, I at length did; and then they all lamented my not going at the same time with my friend, as Mr. Goodwill was certain he could have got the same voyage for me, by his interest: but nobody seemed more sorry on that account than Mr. Diaper and his lady, who hoped, however, we should encounter each other in some part or other of the voyage, which it was far from impossible we should do. We then, agreeable to a desire of Mr. Goodwill, all consented to accompany him to his house in town, where he insisted we should spend the time till my embarkation, which would be soon, as the Company were now taking up ships to send out to their several factories; and he did not doubt of procuring me a very good birth in one of them. My father told him, he left it entirely to his management; and was sure he could give his son into no better hands.

At our arrival in town, we were received and entertained with great magnificence; and the day after it, Mr. Goodwill took me with him to wait upon his uncle, who, the first minute he mentioned his request, assured him I should be provided for immediately; and mentioned one Captain Social, of the Hastings, bound to Fort St. George, as a man of a good disposition; and that he hoped to procure a factory for me at that place, which he thought would be more advantageous than the business of a supercargo; and would advise me, when I was appointed, to go with him. We left him, quite pleased with our visit; Mr. Goodwill not doubting he would be as good as his word. 'And now, Mr. Thompson,' says he, 'I'll persuade Mrs. Goodwill to send a venture of a couple of thousand pounds by you, which you shall make the most of.' I embraced him at this fresh mark of his kindness, and returned home as brisk and lively as ever I was in my life, fired with the expectations of my new destination, and the pleasures I should experience in viewing foreign countries, improving my fortune, and making my friends

happy. Two or three days after I received an order to attend the Board of Directors, which I accordingly did the next day, and think I never was more struck with any thing than the sight of a number of gentlemen, through whose hands the concerns of so important and extensive a traffick passed, and who managed the affairs of such a tract of country as they possessed in Asia, superior to the dominions of some European princes in magnitude. I was received in such a manner, as convinced me how powerful my recommendations had been; and, after enquiring into my abilities, and the profession I had followed, I was informed I was appointed a factor at Fort St. George, and that I must prepare to embark in a fortnight's time, on board the Hastings, Captain Social, bound to that place. They then gave me some lessons of fidelity and honour in managing the concerns that would be committed to my care; and, after having seen the proper securities taken, very politely wished me a good voyage, with health and prosperity in the country. We then, that is, myself and Mr. Goodwill, and my father, went with Mr. Goodwill's uncle home, where we returned him our thanks, in a proper manner, and staid to dine with him, when he gave me all the intelligence he could of the nature of my post, and the country, where he had been himself some years; which afterwards was of very great use and service to me.

Thus all things settled, my father applied himself to fit me out in an handsome manner, in which he spared no cost; and the joint endeavours of Mr. and Mrs. Diaper, my mother, and Mrs. Goodwill, furnished me with every thing in such profusion, that I believe never any body was better provided; and, amongst other things, my father took care to buy me a choice collection of books.

CHAP. X.

MR. THOMPSON GIVES HIS SON A PAPER OF INSTRUCTIONS, FOR THE MANAGEMENT OF HIS CONDUCT—MR. DIAPER RESOLVES, WITH HIS SPOUSE, TO SPEND SOME TIME IN YORKSHIRE—

PRIG

PRIG EMPLOYED ADVANTAGE-
OUSLY BY MR. GOODWILL—
THEY ACCOMPANY THOMPSON
TO DOVER—THEIR TENDER
PARTING—HE EMBARKS ON
BOARD THE HASTINGS, CAP-
TAIN SOCIAL, COMMANDER—
THEY WEIGH ANCHOR, AND
SET SAIL ON THEIR VOYAGE
TO THE EAST-INDIES.

THE nearer the time of my departure approached, the more sensibly my father and mother were affected at the thoughts of losing me; and, indeed, I myself felt all that anxiety that is so natural, at a view of the distance that would soon divide me from all I held dear. Mrs. Goodwill and Mrs. Diaper caught the infectious concern from my mother; and the former began to be sorry she had used any means to forward my going. I spent as much time as I could with these worthy women, and endeavoured, in concert with the other gentlemen, to dissipate, as much as possible, the uneasiness that possessed my mother's mind, and to cure her of those apprehensive thoughts she entertained of the disasters that might happen to me.

My father, one morning, took me aside; and, taking me into his arms, whilst he indulged a few tears, which rolled down his cheeks, said, 'My dear son, you are going to be divided from me—perhaps for ever. I have yielded to your importunity; and, now I have done so, I am uneasy for the event: however, that Being, who orders every thing for the best, will, I hope, guide and protect you, prosper your ways, and return you safe to your disconsolate parent, whose only comfort you are, and to the arms of your valuable friends. I have drawn up here a set of instructions for you, my dear, which I recommend to your frequent perusal, that so, when you are far from me, your father's care may still follow you. If you act agreeably thereto, which I don't at all doubt, you will be happy.' He ceased here, and gave me the dear paper, over which I shed many tears; and shall never forget the affectionate and truly excellent contents, which were as follow.

'MY DEAREST SON,

'HARD as it is to think of parting with you, I yield to your desires, and commit you to the care of that overseeing Providence, that directs and governs all the actions of our lives; but as you have disappointed all those sanguine hopes and expectations I had fondly raised to myself, of immediately seeing you settled in your native country, and receiving that comfort and pleasure the knowledge of your being near me would have inspired; and you are going to launch into an uncertain ocean of difficulties, and to encounter the unavoidable dangers of a long and tedious voyage, and a sojourn in a distant, sultry climate, obnoxious to the health of the inhabitants of these northern countries; you are bound, by the most sacred ties, to act agreeably to the dictates of wisdom and virtue, and, as much as lies in your own power, to preserve yourself safe, that you may return once more to bless me, before I die. You will, therefore, excuse to the affection and the tenderness of a parent, that I give you some lessons for the government of yourself, in your hazardous undertaking; though I am sensible your good sense, and your excellent endowments of mind, render it in some measure unnecessary.

'In the first place, oh, my son! preserve, in all your words and actions, a thorough veneration and regard for the Divine Being; let nothing buy your attention from that object of your thoughts, have an *intention* to please him in all you do, be constant in such acts of grateful devotion to him as raise the soul from it's earthly fetters, and will secure an ease and calm of mind in the greatest distresses and troubles you can meet with.

'I need not inculcate to you, I hope, to persevere in the steady practice of the precepts of your immortal Saviour, and, by adhering to those maxims of virtue and religion you have imbibed, secure yourself, at all events, a place where sorrow never shall come, nor sin and death shall ever abide. This practice will always keep your breast tranquil and
'easy,

easy, amidst the most torturing hardships; and, were the whole world, as Horace says, to feel a general dissolution, you would hear the mighty shock with unconcern, and unappaled.

To your superiors, shew a generous and disinterested respect; to your equals, an honest, open freedom; and to your inferiors, a good-natured humanity, and a proper sensibility of what they do to serve you.

In the Company's concerns, behave with a fidelity, that your own heart shall never reproach you with; and in such legal opportunities as occur, of profiting yourself, shew no greediness, no rapacious avarice; and those riches you thus may chance to acquire, will be as balm to your mind, and you will never survey them with that peevish anxiety ill-bought wealth does always occasion.

Never affect superior knowledge to those you are concerned with; and, in dealing with the natives of the country you are proceeding to, let them see that you are a real Christian, and that that sets you above them, in sincerity, honour, and honesty, as much as it does in your future expectations of hereafter; then, perhaps, though you are not required to step out of your road, to attempt it, you may make them enamoured of those doctrines you profess, and become partakers of the cross of Christ.

Be not hasty nor passionate, the common fault of those who reside long in hot countries; passion deforms the visage, hurts the bosom, and renders a man uneasy in himself, and odious to those about him.

Drink with moderation, for your health's sake. I charge you to avoid all intemperance of that kind, which destroys such multitudes in the Indies. Look upon yourself as accountable for your life, and the use of it, to the Author of your being; and that your father and mother's happiness or misery here depend upon it's valuableness and preservation.

Adieu, my beloved son! may success crown all your lawful and

honourable undertakings! and may you be returned safe and happy, at length, to the embraces of *your most affectionate and tender father,*

WILLIAM THOMPSON!

I received a great deal of satisfaction, before my departure, upon understanding that Mr. Diaper had yielded to the desires of my father, mother, and Mr. and Mrs. Goodwill, to go with his family to spend some months in Yorkshire, partly at one house, and partly at the other; and that they were also to set out to go there as soon as they had seen me safely embarked: thus I had the pleasure to contemplate, that all these dear and valuable persons would be together, to console and comfort each other, under the concern my absence, and that of my friend, would naturally occasion to two such fathers, of whom we were the only children, and the solace of their age; and Mr. Goodwill was so taken with Prig, that he promised him the management of all his concerns, and gave him a deputation to act as his steward, in three or four manors he possessed in the county of Hertford; insisting, also, he should take a journey into Yorkshire, at the same time, which he readily complied with, as it was now vacation; and that particularly gave me great delight, as by him I sent letters to Mr. and Mrs. Bellair, and Miss Sukey, with an account of all that had happened; and recommended him to them, as a proper hand, to convey their letters to, for me and Mr. Diaper, and to transmit our answers to them, when they arrived in London.

When Captain Social informed me he was to fall down to Gravesend, I would have gone on board; but he very genteelly told me, that he believed he should come to in the Downs; or if not, that if I would immediately set out for Dover, he would shorten sail till a boat could bring me on board from that place, or Deal. I took him at his word; and, all my friends resolving to accompany me, we arrived, without any remarkable accident, at the first-mentioned place, and found the Hastings had not yet come round; but she did that very night, and, the wind

wind dying away, the captain came to anchor in the Downs, and came on shore, with several gentlemen, bound on the voyage with us, to pay their compliments to my friends, and receive their fellow-passenger; so that our inn was filled with guests; and Mr. Goodwill would pursue his generosity so far as to entertain us all. We strove to keep up our spirits, as well as we could; but still were all very heavy-hearted; though my father put on all the gaiety that he could possibly, to divert the rest: at last the dreadful word was given, that we must repair on board; and, whilst the captain and the rest went down to the boat, I prepared, with an heavy heart, to take a long adieu of my friends. Mr. Goodwill himself was struck a little at the mournful scene, notwithstanding all his philosophy; and the big drops stood in Prig's eyes, who could not utter a syllable. Mr. Diaper behaved with as little composure as when he parted with his own son; his wife and Mrs. Goodwill dissolved into tears; my father clasped me in his arms, with the utmost fervour, and bestowed ten thousand blessings upon me, and put up his prayers for my safety. I embraced my dear mother; whose grief would hardly permit her to return the caresses I gave her; and, as for myself, I was a kind of weeping, inanimate chorus to every thing that was said or done. We parted; and the separation of the soul from the body, methought, could not be more dreadful! Mr. Goodwill and Mr. Diaper could only see me to the boat, where, after embracing each other, without saying a word, I cast myself into it, and a flood of tears relieved my anxious bosom. I really thought I could have stood this adieu with more firmness; but I even sobbed, and my breast heaved, painfully, with the struggling sorrow; so that I was incapable of turning my eyes towards the shore again, dreading, yet longing, still to behold, once more, the dear people I had forsaken.

When we came on board, the captain ordered a bowl of punch, to wash down sorrow; telling me, at the same time, that he had not been more moved himself a great while, than at the condition he saw me in, and my friends;

adding, that he did not doubt but our meeting again would be as affecting. I dried my tears at the mirth my companions assumed; began to reason with myself, and became calm and sociable, not without putting up some silent petitions to Heaven, for the health and safety of those I had left, and my own happy voyage. Whilst we were weighing anchor, a boat came on board, with some live stock, and some dozens of wine, which my father had sent as an additional present for our stores, and several other favours of the like kind from Mr. Diaper, with their kind love to me, and their respects to the rest of the mess; and a servant of Mr. Goodwill's, who came in it, gave me a letter, which, by the superscription, I knew to be my dearest mother's hand; and, though I had been absent but an hour, I was ready to kiss the fellow, as a person whom I had not seen for an age, and who brought tidings from the dead. I perceived there was somewhat inclosed; and the man telling me I was desired not to open it till I got out to sea, I put it up securely in my pocket, and wrote a few lines to the dear woman, and the rest of my friends, in such terms as my present tender situation dictated.

An easterly gale soon after springing up, we finished getting up our anchor, with the shouts of the crew, to whom we had given a handsome quantity of liquor; and Captain Social saluted the town with ten guns, and added as many more, in compliment to our friends, who, coming on the shore, pursued us with eager eyes, as far as sight could follow us—

‘I shook my hand at distance on the main:
‘They took the sign, and shook their hands
‘again.’

I was charmed in sailing along the chalky coasts, to observe the country all bespread with towns, which had a fine romantick effect upon the sight; and could not fail of being highly entertaining to persons who had never been at sea before; and what gave me great joy was, that, after a little qualmishness, I felt no more sickness then, or all the voyage after. With a sigh I took leave of England, as we passed that famous promontory, the Land's

Land's End, which we did the next morning betimes, extremely glad to have cleared the channel; and—

‘ Now dreaded Scilly mocks the straining
‘ fight,
‘ Whose useful fires, expiring, faintly gleam.’

And we are lost, in the vast Atlantick ocean, to any other objects than sky and water.

CHAP. XI.

HE OPENS HIS MOTHER'S LETTER, AND FINDS A PICTURE OF HIS LOUISA—THEY MEET WITH A TERRIBLE STORM—DISCOVER A VESSEL ON FIRE, WHICH BLOWS UP—THEY RECEIVE THE CREW OF HER ON BOARD—THOMPSON DISCOVERS AN OLD FRIEND AMONGST THEM—THEIR ACCOUNT OF THE MISFORTUNE.

MY new way of life agreed with me exceedingly well, and I felt myself so brisk and lively, that I thought I was perfectly inspired by every breeze that breathed through our sails. Beside the officers of the ship, we had several other gentlemen on board, some, like myself, going in the Company's service, others to settle, for the sake of improving their fortunes, at their factories in the East Indies, by trafficking on their own bottoms; and we were in general a very sociable and friendly set of people, who having seen the world, and being intelligent and improved in their minds, formed an entertaining and agreeable society. We had laid in such a stock of provisions and liquors of all kinds, that we had little to fear of wanting any of the conveniences of life, in so long a voyage, if we were favoured with a tolerable passage. The captain relinquished much of the usual ceremony practised by gentlemen of his rank, and we formed a mess together, that made every thing satisfactory about us, and in all our actions we shewed an inclination to please each other. My cabin was large and commodious, and sufficient for me and a faithful domestic, Will Truman, who had long lived with my father, and, out of pure

affection, resolved to follow the fortunes of his son.

We had no sooner got out to sea, than I opened my mother's letter, and oh! what was my joy, what my sorrow, to behold, in a gold-case, set with small brilliants, the picture, in miniature, of my dear, my lovely Louisa! Wonder seized me at viewing the unexpected image of that eternally adored fair-one, and all my regret for her loss revived afresh, and kindled up remembrances in my soul, which time and my present views had somewhat stifled. I kissed the sweet resemblance, over and over, and hung it by a ribband to my bosom, resolving to keep it there till the hour of my death. In the hurry of my spirits, I forgot for some time to look at the letter that conveyed this inestimable present; but, when I became calmer, I found it to the following effect—

‘ MY DEAREST, MUCH-LOVED SON,
‘ THOUGH I blame myself for
‘ renewing your trouble, at the
‘ sight of this jewel, yet I cannot keep
‘ it longer from you, as it is your undoubted property. Some time before
‘ our dear Louisa's aunt set out for
‘ France, after her niece's death, a
‘ footman came from her with a letter,
‘ and this precious relic. If the
‘ sight of it surprized me greatly, the
‘ contents of the letter gave me still
‘ more astonishment: she said, her
‘ niece, on her death-bed, had desired
‘ it might be sent to me, as a
‘ token of the respect and love she
‘ bore to the mother of a gentleman
‘ who was infinitely dear to her, and
‘ for whom it was originally intended,
‘ if fate had not deprived her of him
‘ in so cruel a manner. By Fidele, I
‘ afterwards understood the meaning
‘ of these expressions, which were then
‘ quite dark to me, and that the news
‘ of your death had given her the fatal
‘ stroke, that lost her to us for ever.
‘ But, my son, you live, thank God,
‘ and may you live long and happy!
‘ Whenever you look at that sweet
‘ face, consider my loss in our Louisa,
‘ and preserve yourself, to make me
‘ amends for my affection to both of
‘ you. Oh! my dear, my heart is
‘ too full, at this separation, to say
‘ more! Heavens guard, protect, and
‘ keep

'keep you; make you happy where
'you are going, and return you safe,
'to bless the fondly-longing sight of
'*your most tenderly affectionate mother,*

'ELIZABETH THOMPSON.'

Propitious gales carried us, without any remarkable occurrence, to the height of Cape Cantin, to the north-west of which we were by our reckonings distant about 120 leagues, when we began to apprehend a gathering storm. The clouds on the western board began to blacken the skies, and a few melancholy drops wept a farewell to one of the finest days I had ever, methought, experienced: and now the lightnings flashed, and the hoarse thunder growled over the concave vault with deafening roar, as if whole nature was meeting with a general dissolution, and presently the imperious west wind raised the irritated billows mountains high. Our commander had given his orders, with such just discernment, that we were prepared we thought to meet it's worst efforts; but the redoubled fury of the storm soon rendered our situation very dangerous, and, before we could hand our main-sail, it was split into twenty pieces, and kept flapping against the mast for some time, before a short lull of the wind would permit it to be run up to the yard. If I had ever had advantageous notions of our British seamen, I now more than ever found them just, and their diligence and bravery, on such occasions, surely dignifies them before those of any country I ever knew. Not an hand but was employed in executing some order or other, for the safety of the vessel; and to see them, like swarms of bees, hanging on the yards, was a sight equally pleasing and dreadful. The tempest increased with greater violence, and the waves tossed us aloft, and then sunk us alow, with such sudden shocks, that my brains were perfectly addled; and, notwithstanding all the force I used with myself, I could stand the deck no longer, but followed the example of the rest of the passengers and committed myself to the safe custody of my cabin. The horrid tumult upon deck, the piping of the boatwain and his mates, mingling with the howling of the winds, and the continual dashing of

the foaming waves, made such a confusion, as was sufficient to stun the head of any stranger to these uncouth and terrifying scenes. For near four and twenty hours we lay to; but, though to us all this gave excessive pain, when it was in the height, Captain Social told me, it was nothing at all but good seaman's weather, and swore he was tired of the little action he had had so long before. About noon, the next day, the skies began to clear, the wind seemed to die away in gentle sobbings, and soon the heavens were serene; the sun darted his brightening rays upon us, and we felt no inconvenience but the ship's rolling motion, occasioned by the great tumbling sea the storm had left behind it, and which put the seamen into more apprehension than the foregoing blasts had occasioned; but in the evening a stark calm succeeded, and the surface of the water was as smooth as a mill-pond. The descending sun formed a kind of dusky amphitheatre around our horizon; the azure firmament was illuminated with all the glorious shining host that adorn those spacious plains, till the moon—

'Rising in clouded majesty, at length,
'Apparent queen, unveil'd her peerless light,
'And o'er the deep her silver mantle threw!'

A scene this, that raised my mind into such a state of wondering devotion, as I could not, if I may say so, even in thought express; at last I broke out into a soliloquy somewhat like this:
'Oh, infinite Creator! benign Governor of the universe! *How manifold are thy works! In wonder hast thou made them all! Day by day we magnify thee, the Father of a boundless majesty.* Permit an humble mortal to prostrate before thee, and worship thy immense omnipotence! Can we be ungrateful when thou hast given us faculties above all the rest of thy creatures here below, to contemplate thy works, to reverence thy forming wisdom? How low, how unworthy, I seem, how little to myself, when I reflect, that all yon splendid sparks, that, glittering, cheer me with their influence, may be worlds, more worthy thy care and protection, than the yet not well known spot, of which I am an inhabitant! But, oh! forgive

' give the attempts we make to search
 ' into thy hidden treasures, the stores
 ' of thy eternal creation, the arcana
 ' thou hast every where around strewed;
 ' for, by our researches, we are still
 ' more and more convinced, that *thy*
 ' *ways are past finding out*, and our
 ' adoration is raised in proportion to
 ' the discoveries we fancy we make!
 ' Lowly bending before thee—

" Supreme! Good! whose providential sway
 " Remotest seas, far prostrate nations tell;
 " Whether ador'd invisible, all pure,
 " Diffuse as light throughout eternal space;
 " Or circumscrib'd, a local deity,
 " As narrow ignorance has oft maintain'd;
 " Accept our grateful praise, which, taught
 " " to rise
 " From our glad hearts, invades thy op'ning
 " " ears,
 " For every instance of thy gracious aid,
 " For every wonder in our favour wrought,
 " Whilst roving thus thro' ocean's utmost
 " " bounds!"

In the morning we were blessed with a
 fine easy gale, that carried us at the
 rate of two knots an hour, so smoothly,
 that we could hardly perceive the
 way the vessel made—

' ————— a breeze
 ' Soft, breathing lightly with it's wings,
 ' ' along
 ' The slacken'd cordage glides; the sailor's
 ' ' ear
 ' Perceives no sound throughout the vast
 ' ' expanse;
 ' None but the murmurs of the sliding prow,
 ' Which gently parts the smooth and azure
 ' ' main.'

GLOVER.

In latitude 20°, 10', about a week
 afterwards, whilst we were endeavour-
 ing to stand away to the Cape de Verde
 Islands, we heard several guns fired,
 as from a ship in distress; which sig-
 nals our captain answered, and stood
 far to the westward, more than his
 course required, as we imagined the
 sound came from that point of the
 compass: they continued firing for se-
 veral glasses, and then we discovered a
 great light at some leagues distance, as
 if a ship on fire, which made a most
 terrible appearance; and, soon after
 we had descried her, she blew up, the
 fire extinguished, and a black thick
 cloud seemed to rise from the water.
 We made no doubt that the crew had

had time enough to save themselves in
 their boats; so the captain shortened
 sail, and fired a gun every half hour
 to acquaint the unhappy sufferers that
 assistance was at hand. About twelve
 next day, having happily very favour-
 able weather all the time, we saw, as
 far as our glasses would enable us to
 see, a boat crowded with men, who
 seemed struggling, with all their might,
 to gain our vessel; upon which Cap-
 tain Social took in more sail, and,
 about seven o'clock, the poor creatures,
 almost spent, and dead with fatigue,
 got within a boat's length of the ship's
 side; whence they hailed us, and beg-
 ged, for God's sake, to be taken on
 board. This was immediately grant-
 ed, and, backing the sails, they all
 got safely in, to the number of forty-
 six souls. I never received more plea-
 sure than in seeing how eager the gene-
 rous seaman is in relieving his fellow
 in distress; every man strove who should
 be foremost, in giving them or procur-
 ing them refreshment; and, on our
 part, the captain, as we understood
 him to be, and two others, whom he
 pointed out, we got into the great
 cabin, where we set before them the
 best provisions and liquor we had, and
 had the satisfaction to see them eat like
 famished men, for they had not had
 time to get any thing out of their ship
 but a little biscuit, so that most of
 them had been fasting ever since they
 left her. We found their ship was
 bound from Virginia to London, partly
 laden with tobacco, partly with rum,
 having touched at Barbadoes to take
 in the latter, both on the account of a
 gentleman who was a passenger on
 board, to whom the captain behaved
 with great deference, which made us
 all take more particular notice of him;
 but I had scarce cast my eyes upon his
 face, whilst at the same time his en-
 countered mine, than he ran eagerly
 to me, and we embraced each other
 with the utmost affection, all we could
 utter being, ' Dear Thompson!'—
 ' Dear Prim!' For it was that very
 young fellow, whom, I must confess,
 I should as soon have expected to meet
 in London, at that minute, as on board
 the Hastings. Every body seemed
 pleased as ourselves, at a meeting so
 unexpected as they judged this to be;
 and my mess-mates as well as myself,
 strove to outdo each other in complai-

sance and tenderness to these new comers. If I was surprized to see Prim, he was as much so to see me at sea; but we were obliged to suspend our curiosity to attend to other matters. Capt. Clements, for that was the name of the captain of the ship that was burnt, returned, together with the rest, the most unfeigned thanks for the relief we had afforded them, and begged Captain Social would permit him and his crew to remain with him till such time as he met a vessel bound to Europe; promising to draw bills on his owners to indemnify him: but Prim, which made me stare at him, assured our captain that he would satisfy him for every thing before he left our ship, and accept Captain Clements's bills himself. We were soon induced to comply, and when every thing was regulated for the men, and births assigned them, Captain Social provided Mr. Clements with a cabin; and I desired the favour of Prim to accept of half mine whilst he staid on board, which he readily acquiesced in, and another gentleman practised the same hospitality to their comrade.

Captain Clements's account of the late unfortunate accident that had happened to his ship, which was called the *Lovely Betty*, of fourteen guns, and three hundred tons burden, was thus—A fire being left later than ordinary by the cook in the capooch, one of the seamen had lighted his pipe at it, and then went down to his birth to smoke it with some of his mess-mates over a cann of flip. It happened their liquor was very low, and, to get a fresh supply, they very honestly agreed that this same fellow should attempt to spile one of the hogheads of rum, which, for want of room in the hold, was stowed pretty near them: he forgot his pipe, and, whilst he was at this precious work, a quantity of the lighted tobacco fell into his chest, which stood open, and some combustible matters he had in it, (being the gunner's mate) took fire, which was not perceived till the flames had got to too great an head for all the pains and skill they made use of to put a stop to them. They knew they were not far from the Cape de Verde Islands, which gave them some spirits to attempt getting there in their boat; but, however, not willing to miss

any opportunity that might offer to save their lives before they left their ship, they had fired those signals of distress, which brought them the blessing of the relief we gave them.—The captain concluded his narration, by acquainting us that Mr. Prim was the chief sufferer, most of the cargo being shipped by him, which, however, he was sensible he had wrote word to insure in London by a vessel that failed before from Barbadoes; and, as to the bottom, that he had insured himself.

I was surprized still more and more to hear Prim talked of thus as a man of great worth, though I was heartily glad to hear it; and when we retired to rest, which was not till pretty late, after the mutual caresses were over, and I had gratified his curiosity to know how I came into the *Hastings*, I said—‘My friend, you left England very abruptly, which I have often thought of since with the utmost concern; and, by the situation you are in at present, I am sensible you must have met with several turns of fortune, that I wish you would gratify me in the recital of.’—‘I have so, indeed, my dear Thompson,’ he replied; ‘and, though at present in such circumstances, am really a happy man. I always loved you, my friend; have thought of you tenderly an hundred times since my departure; and, as soon as I had seen London, you would have been the first person I should have renewed my acquaintance with. Come, make a bowl of punch; and, whilst we are drinking it, I will gratify you with a relation of the good and bad accidents that have occurred to me since my unhappy breach with my master, and the means by which I may say I am at present rich and happy.’ I made the punch, and Mr. Prim began his adventures thus.

C H A P. XII.

THE ADVENTURES OF MR. WILLIAM PRIM.

‘YOU remember what an agony I was in that fatal morning I took my leave of you, after my master had discovered my being deficient in the cash he had intrusted to

my care. He was so incensed, that he would suffer me no longer to continue with him; and my father, who was as much irritated against me, hurried me on board an East India ship, which sailed the next day, the captain of which he had some slight acquaintance with, and who took me in quality of his clerk. All this was done so suddenly, that I was but poorly fitted out for such a voyage; and my father has since lamented the precipitancy with which he parted with me, by letter, which has cost him a great deal of affliction, and numberless tears; but, being a man of a warm and passionate disposition, I can very easily forgive him, especially as it was an introduction to the good fortune I have since met with.

Captain Surly, my commander, who from his infancy had used the seas, was a mere brute, and wanted common humanity; and my father, having indiscreetly confided to him the secret of my being forced to sea, upon the aforesaid account, instead of striving to make my captivity easy, and if I had any bad principles to reclaim me from them, he was continually observing, in a reproaching, malicious strain, the slip that I made, and menacing me with bad usage, if I served him as I had done my former master.

You may guess that this sat very hardly upon a breast that had some principles of honour, and knew how mankind ought to be treated; but you must confess, my friend, this is too often the case, and many an unhappy man that has been guilty of an error, would reform, if the world would let him; but, being exposed and maltreated, they grow desperate and regardless of what may happen to them; and, finding all mankind their enemies, resolve to be even with them, and commence downright villains from the impossibility of regaining their characters. However, this was not my case; and I knew the humane and thinking part of mankind would pass over a single crime in a young extravagant, could they see tokens of amendment that would justify their good opinion of him.

A dog could not endure a worse

life than I did, most part of this dreadful voyage; and, when I exulted with him, he gave me the most opprobrious language, and several times even went so far as to kick me out of the cabin, where he was generally drunk the greatest part of the day. Such tyranny made me weary of my life, and I began not to care what became of me; and more especially as the ship's crew took the signal from their captain, and treated me in general with the utmost contempt: and one day a nephew of Surly's, who was a fourth-mate on board, without the least provocation, took me by the nose, and led me about twenty paces, to the great diversion of the ship's company. Flesh and blood could hold out no longer, and, seizing him round the waist, in spite of all his struggling, as he was not near so strong as myself, I fairly flung him overboard, where he would certainly have paid for his insolence with his life, if all the sails had not been laid aback, and the boat hoisted out to save him. The minute the captain heard of this action, he ordered me before him, and, with the fury of a tyger, fell upon me with his cane, and having nothing to defend myself, and he being a very strong man, beat me most unmercifully, and then ordered me to be turned before the mast. I must say this for every one of the officers and men, that they thought my usage on this occasion very hard, and without the least colour of justice; and a supercargo we had on board was so exasperated, that he told the captain to his face that he was a scoundrel; for which the brute ordered him to keep to his cabin, and would not suffer him for some days to take the benefit of walking upon the quarter-deck. And now the young Surly used me worse than ever any galley-slave was used, and made me almost curse the hour I was born; and if we had not put into Madagascar, where we were driven by stress of weather, I should have executed a resolution I had formed; which was, the first opportunity, to seize him and fling myself overboard with him, and drown him and myself together; but the sight of land put other thoughts into my head, which

which I pursued the dictates of in the following manner.—We lay in a good bay on the west-side of the island, where we were repairing our rigging, which I think is called the Bay of St. Augustine, and were employed in taking in such wood and water as we stood in need of for the prosecution of our voyage; and as I was employed in the boat, in making frequent trips from the shore to the ship to fetch on board the wood we cut, I resolved, the first opportunity I had, to make my escape, and rather trust to the mercy of the barbarous natives, of whom I heard strange accounts, or to the chance of some other ship's putting in, by which I might get off the island, than longer to continue in the hellish slavery I was under amongst this villainous set of wretches. About two leagues from our landing-place was a very thick wood, by which my escape might be concealed till the ship was obliged to pursue it's voyage. Being thus determined, I waited an opportunity till the last water was to come on board, and mean time secretly conveyed on shore, at times, a tinder-box, some biscuit, and a bottle or two of brandy; all which I had, unperceived by my comrades, concealed in the sand; and taking a lucky time, when they were all engaged in sleep, waiting a proper minute till the tide set off shore, I secured a musquet, and an horn of powder, which lay by them; and, with all expedition possible, gained the wood I have before spoken of, where I tarried at the skirts of it till such time as the boat went on board; which it did, after they had hallooed and hooped for the space of half an hour after me, to give me notice of their going off. I had got upon a rising hill, from behind which I could see the vessel, without the danger of being seen myself; and whether the brute was glad to get rid of me, or what, I cannot tell, but, without sending ashore again to search for me, they weighed anchor, and I saw them stand out to sea, with a brisk wind at north-west by west, which soon carried them out of my sight.

I now began to feel all those terrors a man must experience upon being thus left alone in an unknown coun-

try, of which I had heard dreadful stories, and without a prospect of meeting with the necessaries of life, unless I threw myself into the arms of barbarous savages, who, perhaps, might treat me with more cruelty than I had been used with before; and I began to bewail my rashness and folly in leaving the ship; but I soon awaked from this tumult of my soul, and went to the beach to get my biscuit and brandy, and what other matters I had left there, which I found safe, and then sought the cover of the wood again; which I had no sooner entered, than I espied, upon a tree, the wood of which is somewhat like Brazil wood, a fowl of a black colour, spotted with white, somewhat resembling our turkies, which I shot at, and killed; and immediately cutting sticks with my knife, I made a fire, dressed my prize, and made as hearty a meal as ever I did in my life; and which was the more pleasant, because I had brought salt on shore in my pocket to relish what I killed. I was now in great want of water, and a vessel to drink it in: the first complaint I soon eased, by going to the foot of the rock where we watered our ship; and my hat served me for drinking out of. In a few days I began to find my situation very agreeable, and resolved to keep as near the bay as I could, to discover any ship that should chance to put in there, by which I might get off the island. I found in the woods dates, and on the mountains oranges and citrons, which also yielded as fine clear water as ever I drank. Apes abound here in abundance, and many birds fit for food; but especially that I have before spoken of, which has this remarkable circumstance, that it has yellow horns on it's head, which is a mixture of blue and red; and they rove about the woods in large flocks, and are not shy; so that I got them without difficulty; and in a rock, pretty near the extremity of this wood, I found a natural cave, which served me for my lodging. My brandy, by good management, held out to a miracle; and I soon learned to live without bread, in lieu of which I eat dates. What I most apprehended was the want of powder, of

which

which I had now only a few charges left; and, to provide against the worst, having a very good knife, I cut long lances of the hard wood I have mentioned, and practised myself in darting at a mark; so that at length I became so dextrous as to be able to transfix any bird at a moderate distance that was not on the wing. I had a chart of the East Indies, and several others, with a treatise of navigation, and a pair of compasses, with which I employed some part of my time; and, at other times, I cut my name on the trees, and the date of the year on which I voluntarily became a fugitive from the human race; and one of these I carved very handsomely, with the following inscription—

“Seaman,

“This inscription will tell thee,

“That an unhappy youth,

“William Prim, an Englishman,

“And citizen of London,

“Chose here to expose himself to all the

“Dangers of an unknown country,

“Rather than longer pine under the hard-

“ships inflicted upon him

“By John Surly, commander of the Dover

“Indiaman,

“In the year 17—.

“Oh! if my grief were known, my dire

“despair,

“Thou could’st not, sure, thy pitying

“tears forbear;

“Condemn’d, an hopeless exile, thus to

“mourn

“My native plains, where I shall ne’er

“return.

“*Ens entium, miserere mibi!*”

“All this time, which was near five months, I had been discovered by none of the inhabitants, and took care, for fear of them, to keep pretty much within the purlieus of the wood, which I had so long made my residence, often casting a wishing eye towards the sea, from my lookout, eagerly hoping for the arrival of some vessel, to bear me from my melancholy solitude. My cloaths were worn off my back almost, and hung in grievous tatters about me; and my shoes had been gone a considerable time; but my feet were so hardened and callous, that I felt no incommodity from going bare-footed. One day I discovered from my

eminence, two of the natives going towards the bay; but providentially, though they passed through my wood, they did not discover me. I cannot express to you the affright I was in; for, had they seen me, I must have expected to have been carried into the inland parts of the island, and have forsaken all hopes of ever getting off, which now buoyed up my spirits. They were well shaped, and had printed pieces of linen, seemingly calicoe, thrown over their shoulders, by which I perceived they now and then trucked with the European vessels that came into the island. They were armed with bows and arrows, and had each a long wooden lance in his hand. I cannot say I was entirely, however, without a companion, for I had taken an ape, in a toil which I invented for that purpose, made of the boughs of trees, over a deep pit, which I had dug upon a sand-hill; and though they are very large, I tamed him so, by my kindness, that he followed me about like a dog; and had so many odd pranks and grimaces, that he often made me laugh extremely, and would imitate all my actions; so that I frequently sent him for water, and to gather me oranges and lemons, which he did very dexterously. At length my deliverance arrived; and to my inexpressible joy, when I had, as near as I can guess, fulfilled my seventh month, as I was wistfully surveying the distant ocean, and thinking over all the accidents of my life, I saw, some leagues in the offing, a sail, and the sight almost made me faint away; but how rejoiced, beyond expression, was I, when it stood directly into the bay, and casting anchor there, sent its boat on shore to look for fresh water! I presented myself before the landing-place, and startled them by my ragged, uncouth figure, which at first made them stare; but our joy was mutual, when we discovered each other to be countrymen; and, when I had told them some part of my story, they carried me on board to their captain, who seemed to be a sensible, humane man, but who questioned me very closely, fearing I had belonged to some of the pirate ships with which these seas swarmed; and

and when he was convinced of the contrary, he entertained me on board, gave me cloaths and necessaries, and I once more began to live; but, having been so long disused to breeches and shoes, the former galled me, and the latter swelled my feet most intolerably. The captain's name was Nelson, and that of his ship, the Charming Susannah. I found he was very rich, and a considerable planter in Virginia; that the vessel was his own; that he had carried a lading of his own tobacco to London, from whence he took in a proper cargo, to trade on the coast of Africa for slaves; that a mutiny had happened amongst his crew, who had risen upon him, and seized the ship, which they endeavoured to bring round the Cape to this island; but being in great danger, in lat. $40^{\circ} 10'$ S. and long. 10° W. of London, in a storm, they had released him to navigate the vessel, which he carried into the Cape; but though he had them now in his power, he had been so honourable as not to betray them to the Dutch; and by mere dint of argument and persuasion, at which I found him an artist myself, had reclaimed them, and all was past over, after setting the two chief mutineers on shore, and very justly paying them their wages; that another hard gale had driven them so far to the eastward, where their want of water had induced them to bear up to Madagascar, where they relieved me in so unexpected a manner. There were 150 negroes on board, he having lost near eighty in these seas by sickness.

When Mr. Nelson had heard my story, which he animadverted upon with great sweetness, and found that I was not a seaman, but bred up a trader, he gave me charge of his books, and made me also his steward, as well as his clerk, having lost his former steward in the voyage; and never was man's condition so altered for the better; for he was a mild, sociable, humane creature, had little of the rough seaman, but a vast deal of the gentleman about him; and had, I soon found, studied and read the best authors. In short, I loved him, and served him so readily and affectionately, that I perceived I gained much upon his mind; and

you would be surprized to think how dearly he valued me in so short a time; but now he never would eat or drink without me; I became his constant companion; and, by the civilities I was thereby enabled to confer on my shipmates, gained the esteem of the whole ship's crew. I found my captain had in Virginia a wife, and one daughter, of whom he was often talking with great tenderness; and he promised me, if I would settle with him there, he would give me an handsome salary, to look after his affairs; which proposal I readily closed with; and indeed one main inducement was the character he gave Miss Fanny, of whom I became perfectly enamoured, and already conceived hopes of possessing her, and making my fortune.

We had a very good voyage till we came to the Cape de Verde Islands, where we touched at St. Vincent, but had no sooner taken our departure, than a great storm arose, which puzzled all the skill of our seamen, and it was with difficulty we rode it out, after losing our main-mast, which was shivered from top to bottom by a flash of lightning; and, being unstepped by the same flash, rolled overboard, endangering the loss of the ship, which, however, was preserved safe; and bearing away for the Leeward Islands, under a jury-mast, we there remained near a month to refit, in which time we disposed of an hundred of our negroes, to great advantage. My health, during all these tedious adventures and voyages, was not in the least affected; and I grew rather stronger and stronger, by the continual exercise I went through; and the captain falling ill at Bridgetown in Barbadoes, he trusted the management of all his concerns to me, without reserve; in which I behaved with such diligence and fidelity, that he embraced me, when he saw my accounts; and, over and above my wages, made me genteelly a present of twenty guineas; and spoke of me in such terms, to the gentlemen of that island, that, if my gratitude to him would have suffered me, I might have settled there with great advantage.

We arrived at Gloucester, in Virginia, in about ten days after we set sail

' sail from Barbadoes; but in our pas-
 ' sage we had very near all been de-
 ' stroyed by a very terrible accident
 ' that happened to us; and my beha-
 ' viour on the occasion, still more and
 ' more endeared me to Mr. Nelson.
 ' One of our people being sent down
 ' into the powder-room for some car-
 ' tridges, in an absence of thought,
 ' carried an inch of candle with him,
 ' without putting it into a lanthorn,
 ' which was an usual precaution we
 ' made use of; and, having some diffi-
 ' culty to come at what he wanted,
 ' very calmly stuck it into a barrel of
 ' powder, which was half unheaded;
 ' and, forgetting it afterwards, came
 ' up without it, fastening the hatch-
 ' way after him. I immediately re-
 ' collected he had carried a candle with
 ' him, and called him aft, where the
 ' captain, a mate, and myself, were
 ' walking on the quarter-deck, and
 ' asked him hastily, what he had done
 ' with the candle. The fellow stood
 ' aghast, and could not utter a word;
 ' Mr. Nelson, and all the rest of us,
 ' turned as pale as death; and he or-
 ' dered the boat out immediately, ex-
 ' pecting every minute the ship to blow
 ' up; but I instantly assumed presence
 ' of mind enough in this dread and
 ' confusion, and, opening the hatch,
 ' jumped down the ladder, where I
 ' found the steady candle had burnt
 ' till within the distance of two lines
 ' only from the powder: I imme-
 ' diately ran my hand gently under it,
 ' and, scooping that, and an handful
 ' of powder with it, out of the bar-
 ' rel, endeavoured to toss it up into
 ' the cabin; but it fired in my hand,
 ' and burnt me in a dreadful manner:
 ' however, it saved the ship, and our
 ' lives; and every body had such a
 ' sense of the hazard I ran, and the
 ' service I had done them, that the
 ' captain clasped me in his arms, and
 ' told me he would ever esteem me as
 ' his son; and the whole ship's com-
 ' pany rang acclamations and praises
 ' to me from stem to stern. Mr. Nel-
 ' son's plantation was upon James
 ' River; so that when he had deliver-
 ' ed some part of his cargo at Glou-
 ' cester, we ran up, and anchored at
 ' his very door, saluting his family
 ' with all our guns. Mr. Nelson made
 ' me dress myself in a rich suit of
 ' cloaths, which he ordered me to pro-

' vide myself with at Bridgetown; and
 ' being, you know, no contemptible
 ' figure, he made me a great many
 ' compliments on the gentility of my
 ' person. We were rowed on shore in
 ' the barge, only him and myself; and
 ' he was received, at his arrival, by
 ' his wife and daughter, with a ten-
 ' derness that well indicated the regard
 ' they had for so valuable a relation.
 ' He presented me to them, with these
 ' kind expressions—"See here, ladies,
 ' " a man to whom I owe my ship and
 ' " cargo, my own life, and that of my
 ' " people: I beg you would esteem him
 ' " as a friend of mine, and who is
 ' " going to become one of my family."
 ' I saluted Mrs. Nelson, and her
 ' amiable daughter, at whose sight, I
 ' must confess, I directly yielded up
 ' my heart a prize to her charms.
 ' They received me with great polite-
 ' ness and good-nature; and I found
 ' Mrs. Nelson's temper to be pretty
 ' much a copy of her husband's; but
 ' (and, my dear friend, you will suffer
 ' a lover to speak) I found Miss Fanny,
 ' past all my expectations, lovely, and
 ' the beauties of her mind exceeded
 ' far even those of her person. You
 ' know, Thompson, that I have a
 ' good address, and a ready fluency of
 ' speech; and I put myself forward in
 ' every thing that could be agreeable
 ' to my friend, and these ladies; in-
 ' somuch, that Fanny, I believe, soon
 ' perceived me another guest creature
 ' than the *buckskins*, a term the
 ' towns-people make use of, jocosely,
 ' to distinguish the country planters,
 ' who had made love to her; and I
 ' flattered myself, that this first inter-
 ' view gave her some motions in my
 ' favour. She was tall and fine-
 ' shaped, her features regular, and her
 ' delicate skin was of the finest white
 ' that ever I beheld; she was near
 ' nineteen years of age; and if she had
 ' any fault, it was that of being a lit-
 ' tle affected, and too conscious of the
 ' charms nature had given her. Mr.
 ' Nelson was a justice of peace in the
 ' county, and so respected by his
 ' neighbours, that we had a crowd of
 ' visitors every day, for some time, to
 ' welcome him on his arrival; and,
 ' determining not to go to sea again, he
 ' put his mate into the vessel, as cap-
 ' tain; and loaded him with a cargo
 ' for London, soon after; and just be-

fore he failed, I passed a compliment, at an entertainment, that was made us on board, which my young lady took with a sensible pleasure. I asked Mr. Nelson, why he called his vessel the Charming Susannah. To which he answered, wondering at my question, that it was the name he bought her in, and he never had thought it worth while to alter it. "But, Sir, I beg the favour you would re-baptize her," says I; "and, if I have found any favour in your sight, let me give it a name that has a real meaning."—"Agreed!" says he; "what shall the name be?" I bowed to the company, and, begging them to walk on the quarter-deck, I stepped forward, with a bottle of wine in my hand; and, dashing it against the main-mast, cried, "From henceforward this vessel shall be called the Lovely Fanny, as a just compliment to the finest woman in Virginia!" Miss blushed like scarlet; her father and mother were pleased, as well as herself, to the last degree; and we fired a round of the guns at this new ceremony. When we came home, whether the liquor, which I had drank pretty freely of, or the heat of the weather, oppressed me, I can't tell; but I, all on a sudden, fell down, without sense or motion, which frightened Mr. Nelson and his lady extremely; but, as to Miss, she was like one distracted, and talked so tenderly of me before, by bleeding, I was brought to my senses, that her father and mother were amazed at it, and perceived I had made a very deep impression on her mind. In short, my friend, I won't trouble you with our courtship, which, though it yielded me the greatest pleasure, would not be very interesting to you; and shall only relate a circumstance, which made a great deal in my favour, and hastened the match; which was this—

We were, with her father and mother, in a distant county, at the back of the colony, paying a visit to Mr. Hoe, a planter there, whose son, a great, senseless, *harbuck*, was desperately in love with her; and though she hated him, I knew, yet she permitted his addresses, on purpose to make me jealous and

more submissive; and one evening, walking in the neighbouring Savannah, whilst she was, by turns, raising and depressing our hopes, for we were both with her; and had just said, "Gentlemen, I have no opinion of a man's professions that can thus live tamely with his rival; I should rather think rage and despair should engage them to fight for the possession of what they so eagerly wish; and I should be glad to be the first woman in Virginia, that has been the subject of a duel;" when out issued from the wood a dreadful large bristling wild hog, and, without fear, made across the Savannah, directly opposite to us. Poor Miss screamed out, and ran for shelter, in her hurry, to young Hoe, who had a matchet by his side; but he directly scoured away in a minute; whilst I, laughing, had presence of mind to halloo out to him to come and defend his mistress, who, by this time, was fallen into a swoon. In fine, I had no time to lose, for the brute advanced apace, and began to grunt, like a real wild boar, casting up his snout, all white with foam, into the air, and gnashing his prominent, jaggy tusks. I drew my hanger, and made a stroke at him, that hardly penetrated his hide, and but inflamed him the more; and, tearing up the very ground for madness, he attacked me, with a spring, and tore my breeches up, and made a slight wound in my left thigh, which I immediately returned, by cleaving him, at one blow, aimed with all the strength I was master of, down the skull; and, seconding it, he fell, and rose no more. Fanny had just recovered, and seen the latter part of the fight; and now, like a Guy of Warwick, or a valiant Moor of Moor Hall, I cut off his head, and laid it bleeding at my mistress's feet. The first thing she did, was to lend me her handkerchief to bind up my wounds; and, whilst she was doing that, observed what a scoundrel and coward her other lover was; adding, at the same time giving me her hand, "Generously you have saved my life, and, therefore, it is but justice to devote it, for the future, to your happiness and satisfaction." I embraced the grateful

‘grateful fair-one with transport, and carried her to the house, where Hoe was sufficiently roasted by all present, and I was as much applauded; so that, in about six months after this, with the consent of both father and mother, I married my amiable Fanny, and partook of delights in that tender union, that are far too great for the power of eloquence to describe. My father-in-law and mother surrendered a large plantation to our use, and, to our inexpressible grief, both of them deceased about half a year ago, leaving us in actual possession of near 30,000*l*. My love to this dear creature has been constantly increasing, and she has blessed me with a lovely boy, that is just the picture of his mother. If any thing at first gave me uneasiness, it was the observing a coldness in my wife’s disposition, which did not suit with the warmth and fervour of my sanguine and amorous temper, and which I often reproached her with; but I soon got her lovely person in as full perfection as I knew before I had her soul.

‘I parted with her to come this voyage to settle some affairs in England, with the utmost regret; and, indeed, she would have been my comrade in it, if she was not big with child, which would not permit me to trust her to the uncertain dangers of the sea; and the event has proved the justness of my judgment; though nothing gives me pain in the accident that has happened to me, since it has procured me the pleasure of seeing Mr. Thompson, save that it will make my voyage somewhat longer, and thereby detain me, more than I proposed, from the arms of my dear wife, to whose labour I am under solemn promise to return, if Providence permits me. I hope the friends I have wrote to have insured my cargo; but if not, the loss, at present, won’t be much to me; and I have bills about me to the value of 2000*l*. upon some of the best merchants in London. And thus you see, my friend, that I am a very happy man; and I do assure you, I strive, by doing all the good in my power to my fellow-creatures, to return thanks to Providence for it’s blessings, and to atone for the former

‘irregularity of my conduct. But now I should be glad to hear how Speculist, Prig, and the rest of our old acquaintance do; and whether, in purse or person, I can serve my old friend, and prove to him, that I am still the disinterested Will Prim he formerly knew me to be.’

C H A P. XIII.

HE SATISFIES PRIM IN HIS ENQUIRIES—THE MUTUAL CIVILITIES THAT PASS BETWEEN THEM—THEY TOUCH AT ONE OF THE CAPE DE VERDE ISLANDS—A VESSEL PUTS IN THERE ALSO, BOUND TO GLASGOW IN SCOTLAND—PROVES TO BE FREIGHTED BY PRIM’S OVERSEER—HE GOES ON BOARD HER—ENTERTAINS THE GENTLEMEN FROM THE HASTINGS—THEY TAKE LEAVE OF EACH OTHER, AND PROCEED ON THEIR RESPECTIVE VOYAGES.

I Was charmed with the frank and open air with which Mr. Prim related his adventures, and the various difficulties and distresses he had encountered before his fortunate and happy settlement, and congratulated him with the utmost sincerity; and we both observed that many young fellows of natural good dispositions, and whose minds were of a generous cast, though they might be somewhat rakish, and pursue bad courses; yet, one time or other, their good sense will get the better of their follies, and they will return to those maxims of virtue and honour which they had forsaken. He was sorry for my worthy master’s misfortunes, and was surprized at what I told him of my friend Diaper’s being gone to the Indies, saying, ‘I think we are all turned adventurers for my part, but Prig, who holds his own ground, and thrives in his native country, which I am very much rejoiced at, and will call to see him.’ I told him, if he had any luck in getting to England, that Prig would be in Yorkshire. ‘Then, faith,’ says Prim, ‘if you will give me a direction, I will go and pay him a visit there.’ I answered, I should do that with great pleasure, and would recom-

mend him to my father's acquaintance, and some other worthy people, to whom I would take an opportunity to write by him, if he would take the trouble to carry the letters; which, he said, he would make it his care and study to do, and informed me, that if his wife would consent, he intended in a few years to settle in his native country, there to spend the remainder of his days, and hoped he should see me there too by that time. He was very sorry for poor Speculift, though, he said, he had not behaved to him very handsomely; and, being very curious to know my real motives for going to the East Indies, I related all my misfortunes to him, at which he very tenderly sympathized with me, and attempted to speak some encouraging words of comfort. 'Let me assure you, my friend,' says he, 'if ever you have any occasion, if you'll draw bills on me, I'll pay them at sight, for any sum of money you may want, and here is my direction, "To Col. Prim, upon James River in Virginia;" for you must know I am a military man too, and command in our Virginia militia, and am also in the commission of the peace for James, York, and Gloucester counties.' I thanked him for his civility, and then opened my wardrobe, desiring him to fit himself with what cloaths he liked best amongst them. He chose a suit of blue cloth, with a gold lace, and took three of my shirts, and some other necessities of that kind, having lost all, but what he had on his back, in the late conflagration of his ship. He offered to give me a bill to the amount, but I refused it with anger, and told him, I would trust till we saw each other in England. The winds not hanging very favourably for us, Captain Social resolved to touch at St. Vincent, one of the Cape de Verde islands, which we safely reached; and in a very commodious bay came to anchor, intending to purchase some additional live stock, and get a recruit of fresh water to fill our empty casks. Here I took an opportunity of writing to my father and mother, and all my good friends in Yorkshire, and also to Mr. and Mrs. Bellair, and Miss Sukey; all which, with proper directions and instructions, I confided to the custody of Mr. Prim. We spent our time very

agreeably, often taking trips to the shore; and our new comrades being all as agreeable as ourselves, we led a life that was really to be envied. I shall not take up my reader's time in a description of those islands which are so well known, and of which such ample relations are given in books of voyages, which may justify such omissions in the future course of my adventures.

When we had laid here about two days, a large ship came in, which Captain Clements knew to be a ship he had left in Virginia, commanded by Captain Cable; and Prim, he, and myself, with two or three more of our company, went on board her, and found that most part of the cargo had been shipped by Mr. Prim's overseer, and was consigned to Mr. Ferguson, a merchant at Glasgow, on his account. The captain was glad to see his freighter, and soon agreed to take him, Captain Clements, and the crew of his ship, on board, and to carry them to that port; Mr. Prim engaging to pay what was thought due, over and above their working their passage. We were entertained very nobly on board, and soon after Prim and his ship's company removed to Captain Cable's ship, giving Captain Social an indemnification for their stay on board of him. Two of the hands, being willing, were entertained on board the Hastings, and agreed to go to the Indies with Captain Social.

I stayed with Prim in the vessel he was going home in, and, in a day or two after he had left us, all the gentlemen on board the Hastings were invited to an entertainment on board the York, where we were regaled with the best the ship could afford, and Prim was never tired, with Captain Clements, of paying their acknowledgments to us: we had our musick with us, and spent the day in a most agreeable manner, making an entertainment of the same sort next day for them in the Hastings; and Prim got a pipe of Madeira, and some other refreshments, which he bestowed, as a present, on the crew of the ship, in return for the civilities they had shewn to his people. He also would insist upon increasing our stores out of the York, which was extremely well provided for her voyage to Scotland.

Both ships having taken in what they had occasion for at St. Vincent, and the wind serving to turn out of the bay, we both weighed, after taking leave of each other in the most affectionate manner; Prim and myself being almost melted into tears at parting. He would make me accept of a diamond ring, as a token of his love, which I returned by a present of the like kind; and, having a very fine gold repeating watch, he insisted upon making Captain Social a present of it for all favours; and he also made some very pretty acknowledgments to the other gentlemen of our mess.

We both got out to sea, and saluted each other with our guns, and three cheers, and their ship was soon out of sight.

It gave me extreme satisfaction, that I had met with such an opportunity of writing to my dear friends in England, which I knew would in some measure ease them of their anxiety for my welfare.

C H A P. XIV.

THEY ARE IN DANGER FROM A WATER-SPOUT—HE IS SAVED FROM GREAT PERIL BY HIS SERVANT—CAPTAIN SOCIAL DIES—THEY ARE DRIVEN BY A STORM TO THE SOUTHWARD—IN GREAT DISTRESS—THEY MEET WITH LAND—BEAR UP TO THE CAPE OF GOOD HOPE—REFIT THEIR VESSEL, AND PROCEED ON THEIR VOYAGE.

THIS meeting with Prim spread an ease and calm over my mind that was very salutary to me; and no one, that has not been long and tedious voyages, can imagine how agreeable it is at a great distance from home to meet with a friend or a countryman; you seem then to be enjoying all you have left behind you; and such an interview stores you with a number of pleasing ideas and remembrances, that soften and lessen all the fatigues you undergo. We touched at St. Helena, where we continued only two days, and then run away for the latitude of the Cape; but we were surprized one morning with the sight of what the seamen call a *water-spout*, and the more so, as they

are not very frequent on this side the Cape: for my part, I regarded it as a curious instance of the wonders of Nature, but did not indulge my delight so far as not to be apprehensive of some danger. We were so near, that we could see the water ascend through this column of air, and were obliged to tack, to avoid any ill consequences that might arise from it's breaking; which, at the discharge of a swivel, it did, curling the ocean with a white foam as far as the eye could reach. It was very merry to hear the superstitious reasonings of the sailors upon this phænomenon: I looked upon it as one of those natural events that illustrate and demonstrate the truth of the new philosophy. I was attentively viewing it's disappearance, and for that purpose had stretched myself farther than ordinary out of one of the cabin-windows, when the ship sent an head so violently, that I was suddenly cast out a prey to the waves. I bestirred myself, after the first surprize was over, and began to swim after the vessel, which made considerable way, and was in the utmost terror, as I happened to be the only one in the cabin, at the thought of being left by them; but luckily Truman, my man, casting his eyes abroad, discovered me struggling with the billows, and making what efforts I could to raise my head above water in such a manner as to be perceived. He knew me; and, telling the next person to him of what he had seen, immediately jumped overboard to my assistance. He was an excellent swimmer, and soon came up to me, where I was almost spent with labour and overcome with despair; and, slipping under me, supported me on his back, till the ship being sufficiently now alarmed, the sails were backed, a boat put out, and we were taken up more dead than alive, and carried on board. We soon came to ourselves, and every one congratulated my deliverance; and I was so struck with this action of Truman's, that I thought I could not acknowledge his affection and attachment too much; and from this time I gave him a more respectful treatment, made him superintendant of all my affairs; and, finding him a man of as good an head as he had an heart, I seldom resolved on any thing without first asking him his

his advice; and by this faithful servant I reaped many advantages, as will be perceived in the following part of my adventures.—Poor Captain Social was attacked, about this time, with the gout in his stomach, which he had for a series of years been afflicted with, in so violent a manner, that, notwithstanding all the assistance of our surgeon, a paroxysm carried him off, to the great regret of every body on board, as he was truly an excellent seaman, a vigilant commander, and a gentleman of great good-temper and humanity. He was succeeded in the command of the *Hastings* by Mr. Bentley, our first mate, whose good qualities could alone console us for our loss. The death of our captain was followed by a violent storm, which met us in longitude 10° west, and latitude $30^{\circ} 8'$ south, and continued without intermission for fourteen days; so that our people being all jaded and tired, our ship tried an hull, and drove at the mercy of winds and waves, and, by our reckonings, far to the south of our true course. It was now I began to conceive and feel the miseries and hardships of a sea-faring life, and for most part of the time, as we could light no fires, we were forced to content ourselves with biscuit, and such cold stores as we had by us, to satisfy our hunger; being also forced to keep close in our cabbins, for the most experienced seamen could very difficultly stand the deck. The tenth day, whilst the waves rolled over us, and burst upon us with a fury that made us apprehend every minute we should founder, our fore-mast was brought by the board, and it was with difficulty we cleared ourselves of her, time enough to prevent the damage we feared it would do us; and we had no sooner got over that distress, than one of our guns of the lower tier broke loose, and we were apprehensive she would by her forceful sallies break through the ship's sides: in short, we were all confusion; but the captain, with a commendable presence of mind, ordered up all the hammocks and bedding, and so providentially choaked her up, that we found the danger quite over. When the storm in some measure subsided, we found ourselves in latitude 50° and some minutes south; and, as near as we could guess, in longitude $118^{\circ} 15'$

east of the meridian of London, in the vast and unploughed Southern Ocean; and, a calm succeeding of many days, our water grew so scanty, that we were reduced to half a pint a day; and, to add to our calamity, above half the ship's crew were eaten up with the scurvy, and our fresh provisions were so low, that what we spared to them was not sufficient to be of much service in that dreadful distemper: but how surprized were we one morning, when a man at the mast-head cried out—'Land! Land!' and sounding, we found fifty fathom water. We were at a loss to imagine what land this could be, which bore from us south-east, till Mr. Bentley, in one of his charts, found a cape, which was there called Cape Circumcision, and was a very late discovery. I must own, just at that moment, I was in hopes our commander would send a boat to discover the coast; but a southerly wind springing up, he took the advantage of it, and stood away to the north-westward, which course in a few days brought us safely into Saldana Bay, at the Cape of Good Hope, to our inexpressible joy and satisfaction. Here our men were soon recovered of their toil and illness, and I received great pleasure in viewing the fine settlements of the industrious Dutch at the Cape, who have made a paradise of the country the English despised, and all other nations looked upon with the utmost distaste. The natives themselves, who seemed hardened to all the maxims of human creatures, now, under their government, begin to associate together and form societies; a plain proof that the wildest natures may be cultivated, if proper methods are employed. We lay here near three weeks; and, having taken in proper provisions and refreshments for the farther part of our voyage, we weighed, with one French and two Dutch ships in company, and, with a fine gale, and delightful weather, doubled this famous promontory, and entered the Indian Ocean.

CHAP. XV.

THEY ARE OBLIGED TO PUT INTO THE ISLAND OF JAVA—SAIL FROM THENCE, AND ARRIVE AT FORT ST. GEORGE, ON THE COAST

COAST OF COROMANDEL—HE IS WELL RECEIVED—FALLS ILL—RECOVERS, AND APPLIES HIMSELF ASSIDUOUSLY TO THE DUTIES OF HIS PROFESSION—RECEIVES LETTERS FROM ENGLAND.

WE pursued our voyage through this delightful sea for several days with all the success we could desire, and, methinks, nothing can equal the pleasure we experienced: still quiet gales filled our steady sails, the vessel gently gliding through the waves; and, if the heat was almost intolerable, we were compensated by having little else to do than to look abroad, and survey the fine skies, and the smooth face of the ocean, curled into meandering forms by the sliding keel. An infinite number of sheerwaters, and other birds of the aquatick kind, attended our progress; the timorous flying fish, pursued by the devouring albigones, now and then skimmed over us, whilst the sportive porpoise, tumbling with uncouth postures, basked every now and then on the surface of the waters. This weather did not, however, continue a great while, and was followed by a smarter gale at north-east than we could well expect; so that we were driven a great way to leeward, and our captain thought it advisable to try to stretch over, either to fall in with the island of Sumatra or Java; which last we safely reached, and anchored in the port of Batavia, the capital of the Dutch empire in this part of the world; where we were visited by the proper officers, who continued on board of us to prevent any illicit trade, as few of our outward-bound Indiamen ever touch at their settlements in this country. However, considering Dutch craft and policy, we were tolerably well used, permitted to buy such things as were necessary for us, and to go on shore. Nothing is a greater proof of the opulence of their company, and their power in the East Indies, than this city, which has in it all the conveniences and pleasures this part of the world can afford; and it is surprizing to what an height they have raised themselves, by perseverance and absolute industry, in such a few years, as those since they applied themselves so indefatigably to this trade.

The Dutch governor-general lives like a prince, and exacts and receives more homage than the States-General themselves do from their subjects in Europe. We lay here only three days and an half, and then put to sea with the wind at S. W. which still shifting more favourably, we entered the harbour of Fort St. George, after a tedious and fatiguing voyage of near seven months, saluting the fort, which was returned by the like compliment. We landed the next day, and waited on the governor, by whom we were very politely received; and I was also visited and congratulated on my arrival by the rest of the gentlemen and factors of the place, which much exceeded the ideas I had entertained of it. Fort St. George is a very handsome strong building, but, sadly situated, the soil being very sandy and dry, so that all roots and herbs are brought to perfection with a great deal of trouble. The sea rolls very impetuously upon the shore, and more so than on any other place on the coast of Coromandel. The White, or European Town, has two churches, one for the English, the other for the Roman Catholicks. I hired a lodging in what they call the Old College, which was but a sooty kind of dwelling; but I found many other gentlemen-factors there, which made me tolerably easy. It is governed by a mayor and aldermen. The Black Town is inhabited by Gentoos, Mahometans, Armenians, and Portuguese, and has temples and churches for each religion. The company have a mint, and there are several publick schools in the town. The governor is the supreme magistrate, and has a council, composed generally of factors and merchants, with whom he consults on the company's concerns. The colony has very little of it's own produce or manufactures for foreign markets; and the trade is principally in the hands of the Armenians and Jews, the English being greatly employed in ship-building. There are supposed to be eighty thousand inhabitants in the towns and villages under the company's jurisdiction; and there are about five hundred English amongst them, as gentlemen, merchants, seamen, and soldiers. People enjoy a great share of health here, and look brisk and ruddy; the heats in summer being the greatest

greatest trouble and inconvenience they labour under; but that seldom lasts above four or five hours a day, when the sea-breeze comes on, and revives the drooping spirits of the panting inhabitants. The governor has an handsome country-seat, with good gardens, a bowling-green, a teal-pond, and other agreeable curiosities. He is attended by a guard of English soldiers whenever he goes abroad; and lives in princely state and grandeur. So much for description, which is a little beside my design; but I thought I could not excuse myself from saying somewhat of a place in which I spent some years of my life, and laid the foundation of my present happiness.

Soon after my arrival, I had the misfortune to be taken ill with a violent fever, peculiar to the climate, which held me a considerable time, and brought me almost to death's door; but the care of my physician, who was the surgeon of the Hastings, a very worthy and ingenious man, and skilful in either profession; and the constant, affectionate attendance of Truman, together with the strength of my constitution, overcame my disorder; and, as soon as I was well, I applied myself, with all the assiduity I was capable of, to make myself master of the manner of trade in these countries, and the nature of the business I was to transact; in which I was very much assisted by Mr. William Saris, another factor, who had some time resided there, and was nearly of my own age and temper, with whom I contracted a very intimate and close friendship; so that I soon began to move about in the sphere fortune had allotted me with becoming spirit and industry; and was universally caressed by both superiors and equals. I had, in a month after my arrival, the pleasure of letters from my father, and other friends in England, by a ship that sailed a fortnight after us; which, indeed, gave me no account of any thing that had happened extraordinary, but was a pleasing proof of my friends punctuality in writing to me.

CHAPTER XVI.

HE SENDS TRUMAN ON A TRADING VOYAGE—RECEIVES GREAT AD-

VANTAGES FROM IT—SENDS HIM TO THE DIAMOND MINES—IS ORDERED ON THE COMPANY'S AFFAIRS TO SURAT—EXECUTES HIS COMMISSION WITH SUCCESS—IS ORDERED UP TO HUGHLY—IN GREAT DANGER AND DISTRESS ON THE ISLAND OF SAGAR—PROVIDENTIALLY RELIEVED—RETURNS TO FORT ST. GEORGE.

I Was near three months in the country before I ventured to turn what money I brought with me, which was between 3 and 4000*l.* of my own and Mr. Goodwill's, to any advantage; in all which time, however, I endeavoured to improve, by the experience I acquired, from observation and converse, particularly with my friend Saris; and as I was willing to avoid any imputation of preferring my own interest before that of the company, or indeed of interfering in private trade, I kept Truman about me, in the nature of a friend, who had come to improve his fortune, and at length determined to provide him with a cargo, and send him in one of the country ships on a trading voyage, to the coast of Persia; and Saris also wanting to be concerned, he advanced a proper cargo; and, for Truman's better encouragement, who was a man of solidity and good sense, we agreed to pay him a certain sum for agency; and I advanced him 200*l.* to risque on his own account; so, giving him proper instructions, we sent him away. He was five months in executing his commission, which he did with great dexterity and equal fidelity. The wines, and other returns, he brought, were disposed of to such advantage, that I found myself near 1000*l.* gainer; and Mr. Saris was upwards of 300*rupees* the better. His own venture procured double, and he paid me the 200*l.* having with his agency cleared near 300*l.* sterling; which gave me infinite pleasure, as I was resolved, if possible, to make his fortune, before he left the Indies, with me; and he had shewed himself so much a man of spirit and genius in this affair, that, afterwards, both myself and Saris approved of any thing he proposed for our profit, and never found ourselves deceived. He was soon after quite enamoured of a scheme he had formed of making a tour

our to the diamond mines, which we accordingly furnished him properly for, and understood, by a letter we received from him a fortnight after his departure, that he had hired so many covets of ground, inclosed them, and had begun to dig, as is the custom, surrounded by the King of Golconda's centinels, who challenges all stones of above sixty grains as his own, the adventurer having all the rest he finds.

We entertained great hopes, from the good fortune that we generally found attended Truman, that this expedition would turn very much to account; but before we heard again, I was ordered on my employers affairs, to transact some business at Surat; and was obliged to go over land to that city; which gave me great pleasure, as I wanted to satisfy my curiosity in visiting the interior parts of the country. The goods I had with me were loaded on oxen, an ox being able to carry between three and four hundred weight; and for myself, as soon as I came to Massulipatan, I hired a palanquin, or little coach, with ballustres about it: it had a covering of sattin; a slave attends to manage the covering, according to the traveller's position, as to the sun; and another carried a targot, or fan of officers, covered with stuff, to keep off its heat; it is carried by three or four men on their shoulders, who go as swift as the chairmen in England do with a sedan, from being brought up to the laborious exercise from their youth. They are paid at the rate of five golden rupees per month, for each man; but if they continue with you after a limited time, they will increase the price. I was very well provided with provisions; for in the Banjan towns we had flour, rice, milk, and such other food; and in those of the Mahometans, mutton, fowls, and pigeons; and, as the heat of the sun was excessive, I generally contrived to travel after sun-set, and lie by in the most sultry part of the day; by which I preserved myself from illness, for I found my spirits greatly jaded and fatigued by the excessive warmth of the climate. They measure their distances by leagues, or by a measure they call *gos*, which is equal to four leagues of ours. I arrived at Golconda in about a fortnight; which is a very large city, under its own

monarch, who is tributary to the Great Mogul. I saw this potent prince, who can raise an army of 600,000 men; and what I most admired about him, was a diamond, of above half a foot long, upon the crown of his head. From Golconda I journeyed to Visapour, which is above 300 leagues distant from it, and from thence to Bicholly, and thence to the Portuguese island of Goa, on which stands their famous city, the capital of their possessions, and the scene of so many brave and heroic acts as were performed by the Albuquerque, and the rest of those great men, that first fixed them in this part of the world; but they are now dwindled to a bare shadow of what they formerly were, and are, at the same time, the scorn and victims to the cunning of every other nation settled since in the Indies. From Goa, after seeing every thing that was esteemed curious, partly by land, and partly by water, I arrived at Surat, to my entire content, after a journey, which, though it gave me such opportunities as are very agreeable to a curious and inquisitive man, yet almost tired me to death. This is the only port in the Mogul's dominions, and is inhabited by a promiscuous medley of Moguls, Persians, Arabians, Turks, Persees, or Gaur, and Franks, or European Christians, whose number, however, is not very considerable. I was well received by the English factory, and, after transacting the business I came about, partook of the diversions and amusements of the place, and made a thorough inspection into every thing in Surat, and the country adjacent. This city may be reckoned the great mart of the Indies, and where all the Chinese and European commodities may be had in great plenty. I took a passage from hence to Bombay, the chief of our forts on this coast; and from thence sailed in a junk to Fort St. George, where I arrived in about ten weeks afterwards, giving a satisfactory account of the execution of my commission to the governor. Soon after my arrival, I was ordered on another affair of importance, up to Hugly factory, to which I departed in a small vessel, with two or three Gentoo mariners. This factory is situated on a river of that name, which is a branch of the famous Ganges.

When I arrived at Fort William, after having delivered my credentials, I was received into the factory in a very friendly manner; and, notwithstanding a good deal of chicanery, and ill usage, from some persons in authority, I found means to finish what I came about, with honour; and also to do myself some private services in the way of traffick, upon my own bottom; and took my departure, with tokens of respect from all the gentlemen there. In coming down the river, I had a great fancy to put into the island Sagar, though I had heard it was much infested with tygers, who are very fierce, and the seamen did all they could to persuade me from it: however, we brought to, and, arming myself with a matchet and firelock, with several charges of powder and ball, I left the vessel, and resolutely determined to face any danger that might happen in the gratification of my curiosity; and the more so, as the island is reckoned holy amongst the Pagans, numbers of Jougies going there, the latter end of every year, to worship. The island is full of bushes and mangroves; and I was no sooner on shore than my people rowed the canoe out again, and stood over, full of affright, to Rogues River, where I saw them come to anchor. I was not very well pleased at this; but, looking upon their fear as a piece of superstition, I advanced into the island, and came, without interruption, to a savannah, about half a mile from the place I landed at, which was dry and parched up; but I had no sooner got over it, than, casting my view forwards, I perceived no less than four glaring fiery eyes, directed towards me through the bushes, and presently concluded they were the creatures I had heard so much talk of; nor had I time for much consideration, for, setting up an infernal howl, they both made at me, with all the fierceness their savage natures and hunger could inspire. I must own I was greatly shocked and frightened, and had only just presence of mind sufficient to recollect, that I had no way to secure myself, if my piece missed fire, and as I could not have time to charge again, if I did not dispatch the remaining beast with my matchet: I had heard of wonderful escapes made from wild beasts, by the

native terror they feel in hearing the human voice elevated, and therefore I gave as loud a shout as I could, and, at the same time, fired my piece, and, very providentially, shot one of my antagonists through the head; the other stood some time in a kind of astonishment, at the flash and report of my piece; but soon made a spring at me, with redoubled fury. If I was capable of indulging any reflection at this time, it was to curse my foolish curiosity that brought me into such imminent peril and danger; and I really gave myself over for lost: however, not to be wanting to my defence, I gave a forcible stroke with my matchet, and cut off one of the brute's fore feet; at which he set up such a hideous yell, that the island and shore around reverberated back the sound, which was continued by such an infinity of echoes, that my hair stood upright on my head: he made a second spring, and, more lucky than the first time, I clove him down the skull, and he fell, the black inflamed gore running from him in purple streams. Immediately snatching up my musquet, I made all the haste my legs would permit me to the place I landed at; and, waving my handkerchief, the people took notice of the signal, and the canoe came just time enough to save me from a fresh attack, numbers of tygers following us even into the water, two of the foremost of which we dispatched with our fire-arms. I looked upon what I had undergone, as a just punishment for my rashness, and determined, for the future, never to hazard myself in so idle and ridiculous a manner. As soon as we got on board, where they never expected to see me again, we stood into the bay; and, after touching at Bellasore, Visagipatan, and some other factories, where I left some dispatches that were given me from Fort William, I safely landed with my goods at Fort St. George, whence I had been longer absent than it was supposed I should be. My friend Saris now advised that we should leave our present lodging; and therefore, with the governor's leave, with whom I stood in high favour, we took an house in the White Town, and hired proper servants, resolving to live together as long as we staid in the country.

CHAP. XVII.

THEY RECEIVE CERTAIN ADVICES FROM TRUMAN, WHO DESIRES TO BE RECALLED—HE ARRIVES WITH GREAT GAINS FROM THE MINES—GIVES HIS MASTER A VERY VALUABLE STONE—METHOD HE TAKES TO CONCEAL IT—HE RECEIVES MORE LETTERS FROM ENGLAND—THEIR CONTENTS—WRITES TO MR. GOODWILL FOR A PARTICULAR REASON.

WE had heard but once from Truman since he left us, which gave us some pain, as fearing some accident might have happened to him; but, just as we were going to dispatch an express to see what was become of him, one of his slaves arrived with the following letter—

HONOURED SIR,
 I Have been employed for you very much to the purpose; and, though I have had my health but badly, yet I need not be ashamed of the acquisitions I have made; and therefore, if you think I have been long enough employed here, should be glad of your orders to return to Fort St. George. I have inclosed a list of the most valuable stones I met with, which are clear from all deductions or charges to the king or his officers. I am at present at Golconda, where I have also purchased some stones; but I have a very particular reason to desire my recall, which I cannot trust to this letter; and am, after compliments to Mr. Saris, *honoured Sir, your obliged, affectionate and faithful servant,*

WILL TRUMAN.

By his subjoined list and account, we had indeed great reason to be satisfied with his pains, computing that he had gained on my account to the value of near four thousand pounds, and above one thousand for Mr. Saris; so that, eager to see the honest creature, I sent him orders to set out, as soon as they came to hand, sending them by a trusty servant of my own, who went along with his messenger, and in about three

weeks afterwards he arrived; but so altered by his fatigues, and the heats he had endured, that we hardly knew him. I caressed him with the utmost affection, for I really began to esteem him rather as a brother than any thing else. He delivered to us our respective quotas, mine amounting to several pounds weight of small stones, of divers sizes, which I knew would turn to an extreme good account, either here or in Europe. He had also made a considerable deal of profit himself, so that he might now be said to be possessed in his own right of little less than a thousand pounds; and I obliged him to accept of two hundred pounds, as Mr. Saris did of fifty, in recompence for his unwearied pains and diligence. The first opportunity we had to be alone, we settled our particular accounts, which I found justly and fairly stated and balanced; and then smiling, he told me, that he had somewhat still that was my property, that he hoped would soon, with other things, conduce to carry me from these uncomfortable parts of the world; For, dear Sir, I can't help longing to see my old master and mistress, and our friends in Yorkshire; who, no doubt, are already impatient enough of your absence; and, so saying, he pulled out of a leathern purse, which was sewed to the waistband of his breeches, a diamond of a size and lustre that amazed me so much with it's brightness, as for some time robbed me of speech; and at length, when I hugged him in my arms, and asked him by what good fortune he got so valuable a prize, he gave me the following account—'I was more than ordinarily attentive, Sir, to inspect all the soil my labourers removed, and for that purpose hardly gave myself even time for rest; and being pretty generous of my money, and what provisions and refreshments I had about me, to the king's overseers, as well as my own people, they did not so strictly watch my actions, as they did those of other undertakers: one day I thought I perceived somewhat of a larger bulk than ordinary shine through the sand; but took no notice, and, when all eyes were employed another way, I stooped, and put what I suspected to be so valuable into my pocket, and retiring to a

stream at a distance, which was shaded by some trees, and where I generally retired in the heat of the day, I examined, and found, amongst a cluster of small stones, this very diamond; I was fearful of a discovery, as it was of a size far superior to those we were allowed to take away, and therefore immediately sewed it up again in my breeches, in the manner you have seen; and, thank God, brought it safely away with me; and wish it was more valuable than it is, that, by presenting it to you, it might be a greater instance of my gratitude to your family, and my zeal and affection in your service. I made him a noble present, and took it into my custody, we both, according to the best of our skill, imagining it to be worth above 20,000*l.* so that with what I had acquired otherwise, I might be deemed a sudden very rich man. Our next care was to contrive how to secure and conceal it from all eyes till the time when we could return to Europe arrived; and, at last, I hit upon a project of hollowing the heels of an ordinary pair of shoes, in such a manner as to contain it in the cavity under the upper heel-piece; which we did so, that it was impossible for any one to discover what had been done; and so cautious I was, that I determined to keep it a secret, even to my friend Saris himself. If the thoughts of my dearest Louisa had not now, ever and anon, intervened, I should have esteemed myself a very happy man; but whenever her remembrance crossed my mind, as it frequently would, all the acquisitions I made, were matters of grief to me, as I was sure I could never enjoy them with my lovely, charming maid, now no more an inhabitant of these mortal regions of misery. If I had any satisfaction in the view of being returned to England in wealth and splendour, it flowed from the regard I had to my parents gratification, the joy of my friends, and the good of the indigent and unhappy.

We had been settled here for four years, and though I took care to write home by every conveyance, yet I had received no return, which gave me the most touching pain and uneasiness; for I looked upon the advices I had received at my first arrival, as of no great

importance, being dispatched so soon after my departure. I knew the punctuality of my friends too well to doubt their writing to me by every opportunity that offered, and, therefore, unless death or sickness had happened, I was sensible their letters must somehow or other have come to hand. In short, the concern I was under gave me no rest; and Truman was almost as much grieved as myself, for he had as much love for my father and mother, as if they had really been his own. Whilst we were in this despondency, the arrival of a ship from England cheered our hearts, bringing us letters of a very fresh date, from all the persons I so dearly loved. They mentioned their having wrote often before, so that I concluded they had sent by ships bound to other parts of Asia, and that the letters might miscarry in the country vessels they were sent to me in, or in the carriage over land. My father, mother, and all my friends, were in health, for which I returned sincere thanks to the Almighty; and my friend Mr. Diaper, to my great joy, had been home from two voyages, and was then gone out upon his third, and had acquired a very considerable fortune. He was to the last degree surprized to hear, that I was gone to the same part of the world he came from, and tenderly concerned that the distance of the scene of his voyages from the place I was settled at rendered a correspondence or interview impossible, unless by mere accident. His lovely mistress and her family were well, and, at his return from his present voyage, he intended to settle in England, and enter into the happy union he had so long sighed after: all these particulars I received in a letter from old Mr. Diaper; and Prig gave me a long account of Prim's behaviour in Yorkshire, where he came down with my letters, and to see him, and gave him the greatest satisfaction in the knowledge of his having seen me and brought tidings from me. He had carried himself, whilst in England, with so much honour and generosity, as to wipe out all suggestions to his prejudice, and to gain the love of my father, and all he conversed with; and they expected him, by every ship that came from Virginia, with his family, to settle there. I took the opportunity, upon the return of the ship that

that brought those letters, to write answers to them, and particularly wrote to Mr. Goodwill, to get me an order from the directors to come home, whenever it suited my inclination or desires; for, by the time I should receive it, I did not doubt but I should be eagerly fond of returning to my native country, after which I sent many a rending sigh, that came from the bottom of my heart, crying often, in the height of my passionate remembrances—

‘ Ah, may I yet revisit thee once more!
 ‘ Once more survey thy Thames’ unequal’d
 towers!
 ‘ Or thro’ thy fruitful vales transported stray;
 ‘ Back under those lov’d shades I us’d to
 hunt,
 ‘ Secure from scorching heats, benumbing
 dews,
 ‘ And all th’ inclement rage of eastern skies!
 ‘ —But, ah! Louisa, thou art ever fled,
 ‘ And joy returns not to this tortur’d breast!’

C H A P. XVIII.

HE HAS FARTHER GOOD FORTUNE
 —OBSERVES THE SETTLED MELANCHOLY OF MR. SARIS—ENDEAVOURS TO SOOTHE HIS DISQUIET—DISCOVERS SOMEWHAT OF THE CAUSE OF HIS AFFLICTION—HE INDUCES HIM TO RELATE HIS UNHAPPY STORY.

SEVERAL things I, after this adventure of the diamond mines, undertook, with the assistance of Truman, had a like good success; so that, at the end of five years, I found myself worth above 35,000*l.* supposing my great jewel to be worth no more than 15,000*l.* which was the lowest value I could put upon it; and all this success accrued to us without subjecting me to envy or reproach, seeing I took all the care in the world to merit every body’s esteem, and to execute faithfully the orders of my principals. Truman was looked upon as a relation of mine, and most of our riches were supposed to belong to him, which opinion we did all in our power to keep up. As to Mr. Saris, he had brought but a small fortune with him; but had, however, by the opportunities my money gave him of good markets, raised it to 11,000*l.* and, as to Truman, he

had of his own above 2,500*l.* which he looked upon as sufficient for him to live happily upon the remainder of his days: in short, we all thought ourselves very happy, and were, unlike the generality of merchants, content, nor desired by still accumulating more money to tempt fortune too far, and bring upon ourselves a reverse of luck; which, could we get safely to Europe, we thought ourselves out of the power of. Mr. Saris and myself lived in the utmost harmony, and were complimented with the epithet of the brother-factors; and I must own his temper was so amiable, his notions of things so just, and his actions so disinterested and honourable, that I felt for him as great an affection as I had ever done for any man but my friend Diaper, whom I could not help fancying he was very much like; but it gave me some uneasiness to perceive, as I had constantly done, a gloom and melancholy spread over his countenance, that for my life I had not been able to fathom the meaning of; he disliked much company, and shewed a distaste at being amongst the ladies, which, though it humoured my disposition, yet I could not imagine he had the same motives for that I had. I used all the art I was master of to dissipate this chagrin; and, that failing, did all I could to learn the occasion of it: to engage him to disclose himself, at times I gave him my own history, at the recital of which, he expressed a great deal of concern, but still continued silent, as to what affected himself. We frequently diverted ourselves, according to the custom of the place, in visiting our neighbours, and going abroad in the country in our palanquins; sometimes our books, of which, as I observed before, I had a large collection, made our entertainment at home in our vacant hours, and at other times musick or back-gammon killed our tedious moments. A brisk young lady, the widow of an English merchant, and very rich, fell in love with Saris; and it was a great surprize to me and every one, considering that people here stick at nothing to make their fortunes, to see this young gentleman not only cold upon the occasion, but, when a proposal of marriage was made to him, he absolutely, though genteelly, refused
 the

the offer. I thought it so much to his advantage, that I should be wanting to friendship, if I did not do all I could to persuade him into it; but, with a sigh, he told me, if I knew the reasons he had never more to think of the sex, I would excuse him; and, to free himself from my importunities, he one evening told me, he could no longer refuse to gratify my curiosity by a detail of his story, how much soever he might suffer in the recital; and, without waiting my reply, began thus—

THE STORY OF MR. SARIS; OR,
THE UNHAPPY HUSBAND, AND
CRUEL FATHER-IN-LAW.

WHEN I reflect on the ills I have suffered, in the few years I have seen of life, it amazes me, that I have supported myself from death or distraction; for I cannot forbear to exclaim, that sure, of all men, I am the most unhappy. I am a native of the kingdom of Ireland, and my true name is not Saris, but Fitzgerald; having altered it, when I left that country, that the repetition of it might not administer to the remembrance of my misfortunes. My mother, who was reckoned a beauty, was of a very illustrious family, in the county of Cavan, but was basely betrayed by a promise of marriage from a nobleman of distinguished rank; and I was the unhappy fruit of an amour, in which she repented to her dying hour. She had an independent fortune, and therefore the falseness of her lover, who basely married another, soon after I was born, did not subject her to the frowns or ill usage of her friends and relations; and she was so privately delivered of me, at a farm-house in a distant county, that the secret of her miscarriage was known to very few. She resisted all the overtures of altering her condition after this, though many very advantageous proposals were made her; often telling those that were in her confidence, that, though the wretch who had wronged her, had acted so meanly, she still thought herself married in the sight of Heaven, and would never violate those engagements. She solely applied her-

self to my education; and her extreme fondness for me was repaid by a like affection, and such progress in all that I was put to learn, as gave her inconceivable delight. She was a woman of a noble and generous soul, and would never hear her betrayer mentioned, and studiously avoided every place she was likely to see him in: to me she never made a secret of my birth, telling me, that I must make amends for my mother's folly, by acquiring worthy and honourable sentiments, and, qualifying myself to serve mankind, wipe out the vulgar prejudices they might imbibe, which would, no doubt, level their force against me. My father, whom I was never permitted to see, died when I was ten years old, leaving to a son, by his second marriage, (for so I must call it) his title and estates, subject to an annuity of 400*l.* a year, payable to my mother, as an expiation of his crime, and a token of his repentance, for so he expressed it in the will he left behind him, and to me 200*l.* My mother was so struck with this instance of his regard, that she forgot his faults, and mourned his death, as if she had been his widow; and, though she lived till I was sixteen, yet she carried a load at her heart, that threw her into a deep consumption, and, in fine, carried her off, to my excessive regret, in the 35th year of her age, leaving me in the guardianship of Sir Thomas Bourke, with an estate of 500*l.* per annum, and the 200*l.* I have before-mentioned. I went to live with that gentleman, till I was properly qualified for the university, and then went to pursue my studies at Trinity College in Dublin, where I remained till my 20th year, and made no small improvement in letters: from thence I went to reside for some time at Paris, where I learnt the language, and all those exercises and accomplishments necessary to a young gentleman, who would push his fortune in the world; and returned at the end of a twelvemonth to my native country. Sir Thomas received me with the utmost kindness; and I determined to stay with him till I had procured a commission in the army, for to that way of

life

life my genius particularly led me. This gentleman was a widower of 50 years of age, well made; and, having always lived in the polite world, carried an air of distinction about him in every thing he said or did; and I thought myself entirely happy in his conversation; and he, on his part, let me perceive that he had for me the affection of a father. The next seat to ours was that of Mr. Malony, a gentleman of quite a different disposition, a brute by nature, and whom mere accident had given the possession of a large estate to; he was litigious and spiteful, the dread of his neighbours, the tyrant of his tenants, and the plague and tormentor of his family: his raps, as the peasants are called in Ireland, hated him mortally; and, but for the virtues of a lovely and charming daughter, then in the 18th year of her age, he would have lived in a desert, none of his neighbours caring to converse with him. This lady had all the perfections of body and mind that could adorn the sex; and such a fund of charity and humanity, that the whole country rung her praises. I had never seen her, though my curiosity was greatly excited by the reports of her beauty and good sense; but one evening, as we were returning from hunting, we met her going home in a chaise, and Sir Thomas giving me the hint who she was, I regarded her with a fixed attention, and never took off my eyes, till, alas! her image had made too deep an impression on my heart ever to be removed. We complimented her, which she returned in so engaging and complaisant a manner, and with such a good-natured condescension, that she finished her conquest; and I returned home so thoughtful and pensive, that Sir Thomas told me, smiling, it was proper I should pay a visit to Malony, which would yield me a proper antidote against the charms of his daughter. In a word, after this, I had no rest, and was continually proposing schemes to myself of being introduced to her again, when Sir Thomas informed me, that Malony had very ill-naturedly confined one of his raps for pursuing the game over his

manor; and told me he would make me his agent, to bring him to reason; by which I might have an opportunity to see Miss Jenny. I jumped at the proposal; and, receiving proper instructions, set out on my embassy. It was about a mile from our house; and, when I came to the gate, I knocked near a quarter of an hour before any body answered me; at length a surly fellow, preceded by a mastiff, who had not a worse look than himself, enquired my business. I bid him acquaint his master, that I begged to see him, and that I had somewhat to say to him from Sir Thomas Bourk; the fellow made not a word of reply, but, with a scowling look, retired into the house, crying, as he went off, "Here, Towser, come along." In some time after he came again, and, opening the gate, told me, in the same surly manner, that his master was in the parlour, and, if I wanted him, I must go that way, directing me with a nod of his head. I entered the house, and, seeing a door open to my right, went in, and found my gentleman wrapped up in flannels, having got a fit of the gout, and his sweet daughter working with her needle, at the other end of the room. "So, I know your business," he cried; "and you may tell Sir Thomas that I will pursue the law; and, if I had been able, I would have tied his rascal to a tree, and shot him dead; for his insolence!" He went on in this wild manner, and never asked me to sit down, nor would suffer me to put in a word; till Miss, rising, brought me a chair, and desired me to repose myself. This action, and the sight of her charms, quite transported me; so that I remained some moments silently gazing upon her, which made her blush; at length I began to talk to her father in so mild and persuasive a strain, that I overcame his brutal, savage temper; and he promised me the man should be released, and he would forgive him. This was a great matter; but I still wanted to stay longer, and commended the situation of his house, or rather castle, in such an insinuating manner, that he bid his daughter shew me his gardens, and every thing

' thing else that was worth seeing,
 ' which she readily obeyed him in.
 ' Indeed, this creature had bestowed
 ' all that art could yield on this deli-
 ' ghtful spot; for so it appeared
 ' when I got into it; and, if regular
 ' parterres, falling cascades, cooling
 ' grottos, and embowering shades,
 ' could render a garden agreeable, all
 ' these might be found here. I walk-
 ' ed with this lovely maid, with so
 ' much disorder in my heart and coun-
 ' tenance, that she easily perceived,
 ' and gently told me, she feared I was
 ' tired. I told her I could never be
 ' tired with such company as that I
 ' was blessed with; but, if she pleased,
 ' would repose a little in the alcove, at
 ' the end of the alley we were in, if
 ' she would not forsake me; she, smil-
 ' ing, said, she would accompany me;
 ' and we entered, and seated our-
 ' selves. Happy situation! a murmur-
 ' ing rill ran at the foot of the little
 ' eminence this box stood upon, which,
 ' in tinkling falls, meandered amongst
 ' the shining pebbles; the jessamine,
 ' and the woodbine, interwove their
 ' gentle tendrils with each other, as
 ' they ascended the alcove. The mu-
 ' sical that was poured from the throats
 ' of the feathered songsters, in the
 ' neighbouring groves, interrupted
 ' now, and now swelled by the fanning
 ' breeze, that brushed the quivering
 ' leaves, joined the amorous cadence
 ' of a spouting Triton, that from his
 ' full-blown cheeks emptied his watery
 ' treasures into a reservoir, in full view
 ' of our retirement; and the goddess
 ' of these rural scenes sat beside me,
 ' arrayed with more resplendent graces
 ' than deck the rising morn, or streak
 ' the western skies, at the retreat of
 ' the enlivening god of day! Fired
 ' with the present occasion, I ventured
 ' to tell her, that, though now the
 ' happiest of mortals, I should soon
 ' experience a sad reverse, if she would
 ' not permit me to breathe my passion,
 ' a passion that took birth when first
 ' I saw her! and would continue to
 ' the latest hour of my life. She
 ' blushed, but at length confessed she
 ' had conceived some favourable senti-
 ' ments of me; and that, would her
 ' father consent, my visits would not
 ' be disagreeable. Oh, my friend!
 ' you who have known the warmth of

' a lover, may easily conceive how I
 ' received this generous declaration!
 ' My acknowledgments were un-
 ' bounded, and I acted like one trans-
 ' ported. We retired into the house,
 ' and her father chid her for staying so
 ' long; but I behaved in a manner
 ' agreeable to his humour; and he
 ' went so far as to give me a general
 ' invitation to smoke a pipe with him,
 ' that was his phrase, whenever it
 ' suited my convenience. Sir Tho-
 ' mas was surprized, at my return,
 ' when I gave him an account of my
 ' success; and more so, when the re-
 ' turn of his tenant convinced him
 ' that what I said was true. He con-
 ' gratulated me; but told me, he was
 ' sure Maloney would never give his
 ' consent to my having his daughter;
 ' as he was a bigotted Roman Catho-
 ' lick, and intended her for a nephew
 ' he had in Ruth's regiment of the
 ' Irish Brigades, in the French ser-
 ' vice, whom he had invited over to
 ' possess his daughter, and heir his
 ' estate. This was very discouraging
 ' news; but I was resolved to pursue
 ' the dictates of my passion; and we
 ' took care to keep our correspondence
 ' so secret, that I had free access to
 ' Maloney's house; and he never sus-
 ' pected the inducements for my fre-
 ' quent visits. I will not keep you
 ' too long by the rehearsal of the hap-
 ' py moments I enjoyed at this time,
 ' and the progress I made in my Jen-
 ' ny's affection; but it may suffice,
 ' that, in six months time, I had her
 ' liberty to demand her in marriage of
 ' her father; and employed Sir Tho-
 ' mas Bourk to get his consent; but
 ' no rage could equal his, when the
 ' proposal was made to him; he ran
 ' out into the most scandalous and
 ' mean invectives; and, in conclusion,
 ' rudely bid that gentleman depart his
 ' house, for he would take care his
 ' daughter should never have it in her
 ' power to marry a bastard. You
 ' may be sure this usage of my friend
 ' and me shocked me greatly, and, at
 ' first, I was resolved to call him to a
 ' proper account; but my love over-
 ' came all, and I now pondered upon
 ' every method I could devise, to speak
 ' to the inslayer of my soul, which, at
 ' length, I effected, by getting over
 ' the garden wall, in disguise, and
 ' brought

brought her to consent to make her escape in a few days, and marry me, without her tyrant's consent. I was the rather induced to this precipitancy, as every day Colonel Maloney was expected in Ireland, and I was fearful she would not be proof against the hardships that would be inflicted upon her, if she did not consent to have him; and it was the easier to attempt an escape now, because her father had not discovered she had any regard for me more than ordinary, and therefore still allowed her the liberty of going at large about the house and gardens; for Sir Thomas, by my desire, had concealed the inclination she had for me, for fear of subjecting her to his brutal fury; so that it seemed only a simple proposal made from me, without other inducement than the hopes of having a good fortune.

We agreed that I should wait at a place assigned, with two or three trusty friends, and a ladder of ropes, by which she might get over the wall; and then we were to proceed to Dublin, to be married, and to leave our reconciliation with her father to time, which might operate in our favour.

The second night after this agreement, I engaged three of the neighbouring young gentlemen to assist me; and, providing horses and firearms, we set out for the expedition. It was very dark, but I found my delightful creature punctually attending at her station, and, with ease, conducted her over the wall, and mounted her; and, my friends getting on horseback, I was preparing to do the same, when I was challenged, in a hoarse voice, with—
 "What are you about there, you dog? Have you been robbing Mr. Maloney?" I had not time to reply, for, at the same instant, I received a blow over the head, that made me stagger; on which I let go the reins of my horse, and, facing about, drew my sword, my antagonist, whom I could just see, doing the same, and at it we went; but I was so fortunate, that, in three or four passes, I ran him through the body, and he fell; and, at the same time, I was assaulted by another hand, who cried out, that I had killed his poor ma-

ster, in the French language. One of my friends, who had dismounted, soon gave the same account of him that I had done of the other; and then we bestrode our horses again, and encouraging poor Miss Jenny, who had fainted at the danger I was in, we made the best of our way, and in three days arrived, without any remarkable accident, at Dublin, where I was soon put into possession of all my soul desired. Sir Thomas had declined making one of us, as it was more prudent for him to stay on the spot, where he was more likely to be of service to us, than where we were; and you may be sure I was quite surprized, when acquainted, by letter from him, that Maloney was searching the whole country for me and his daughter, with vows of a bitter revenge; and that the two men, whose rashness had occasioned their deaths, were his nephew and his valet de chambre, who were just arrived, when our getting over the wall put them upon seeing what we were about, which proved so fatal to them. There was now no time to be lost, and, concealing ourselves, as well as we could, we applied to our friends in power; and having obtained a promise of a pardon from the Lord Lieutenant, if necessary, leaving my wife at Dublin, we went, and took our trials at the assizes; and the jury, though greatly influenced by Maloney, brought in their verdict, *chance medley*, and we were acquitted of the murders. That wretch put all methods in practice, and used all his friends and money to get a verdict against us; but the affair was so clear, that he was quite baulked in his villainous designs; though I was obliged, however, to send for his daughter from Dublin, into court, he having preferred a second bill of indictment against me, for stealing an heiress, which ended as much to his dissatisfaction as the former, by her generous testimony in my favour. The whole country rejoiced at his chagrin, which added so to his resentment, that he hired ruffians to destroy me; which having discovered, and finding no other way to put an end to such practices, I indicted him in my turn, and he received a sentence agreeable to his crime; but

his emissaries, on account of being his tenants, and threatened, to force them to undertake the job, with all his resentment, in case they did not undertake it, were acquitted.

Finding it in vain to attempt to bring him to reason, I sat down contentedly; and, having an estate of my own in the country, went to live upon it, and enjoyed all the pleasures in my union with my endearing wife that my fondest expectations had flattered me with; and I believe no couple in the universe could live more happily in themselves, or more beloved by others. Here poor Saris wept, and made the bitterest reflections; and uttered such moving complaints, that I could scarcely calm. "Alas!" he said—

"It is the curse of virtuous minds, oppressed,"

"To think what their state is, and what it should be:

"Impatient of their lot, they reason fiercely,

"And call the laws of Providence unequal."

When I had brought him to some temper, he resumed his narration in the following manner: "My spouse, at the end of a twelvemonth, brought me a son, who, I hope, is now living, and will meet with a happier fate than his poor father; and in all that time, though we used all the arts we could employ for that purpose, the brute, her father, would neither see us, nor speak to us, though our coaches often met in the same road; and he consoled himself for the loss of my wife, by taking a housekeeper, who was a shocking, red-haired creature, and made him believe she had a child by him some years before, which he now took extraordinary care of, on purpose to spite me. After the birth of my son, I was resolved to have justice done to my wife, in an affair which I had, till that time, suffered to lie dormant: a brother of her mother had left her, by his will, some years before, 8000*l.* in the hands of her father, who was his executor in trust for the use of his daughter. I sent a proper person to demand payment of it, which, as I knew he would, he peremptorily refused, telling the gentleman, in his

way, that we were villains and beggars; besides, he had more money to spend in law than I had, which he would rather do than we should be sixpence the better for him. Upon this, I brought my action against him, and carried the affair on, till, on various pretences, he removed it to another court; and, in fine, I filed a bill in Chancery against him, and went so far, that, after spending near two thousand pounds on each side, I was sure of a decree in my favour the following term, the Lord Chancellor having expressed the utmost detestation of his proceedings; and now this devil, for I can give him no gentler term, made overtures of peace, and employed emissaries, who expressed his sorrow at our differences, and told us it was his desire all animosities should be buried, and he would appoint a day when we should wait upon him, to eat a reconciling dinner at his house. Good God! to what lengths some men can carry their wickedness! Upon my wife and son's account, I closed with the proposal, and appointed my friend Sir Thomas to be one of our company, little suspecting any treachery. The day came, and I carried my wife and son with us, and we were received by him, with all the dissembled fondness the execution of his black design required. We spent our time very agreeably; he kissed and embraced us, and made my wife a present of some of her mother's jewels, and after dinner we had several bottles of wine to drink success to our accord, and agreed to put a stop to all law-proceedings on both sides. The housekeeper, whom I could scarcely relish, made one of the company; but, all on a sudden, my wife complained she was sick, and both myself and Sir Thomas found ourselves very queer and qualmish: she grew worse and worse, and turned black in the face, and before help could arrive expired in my arms. Dreadful moment! Whilst I was lamenting loudly this cruel disaster, I heard the housekeeper whisper him softly, "You see, Sir, it did take at last." These words roused me from my deplorable situation, and, my head beginning to turn round, I seized her by the

the

‘ the shoulders, and, drawing my sword, asked her sternly, what she was telling her master. She turned pale as death, and was going to reply, when a servant breaking in, fell on his knees, and told us, he was sure his young lady and all of us were poisoned; that he had brought some stuff to kill vermin for his master the day before, and was sure it had been applied to that purpose. Good God! what a scene was here! my dear wife dead before me, Sir Thomas just fainting, myself hardly able to stand, and the wretches, who had brought this ruin upon me in horror and amazement at being discovered. What could I do, my friend? What would you have done? Rage dried up my tears, and choked the passage of my words; and oh, heavens! I seized my wretch of a father, and ran my sword up to the hilt in his breast, and leaving him to vomit out his black soul, I executed the same vengeance on his whore; and then, losing all strength, fell lifeless upon the body of my dearest Jenny! The surgeon and physician we had sent for, when I first perceived my wife ill, soon after arrived, and were shocked at the mournful scene; but finding some signs of life in me and Sir Thomas, and hearing the report of the family, that we were poisoned, ordered us to bed, and administered proper antidotes, by which we expelled a great quantity of it, and came to ourselves, but sufficiently weakened; and though the strength of our constitutions overcame the shock nature had received, yet a violent fever succeeded from the disorder of my mind, which kept me in this accursed house near six weeks, during which Sir Thomas kindly took care of my child and family, and had the proper depositions made before the coroner, which prevented a great deal of trouble to us. My wife’s death lay heavy at my heart, and I was near six months, in which I never shewed any signs of reason. Sir Thomas had removed her soon after his recovery, and caused her to be buried with proper ceremony; and, when I was a little brought to my senses, I caused a stately monument to be erected over her, with a proper in-

scription to her memory, which, however, has far a better record in my breast, from whence the lovely image shall never depart.’ His griefs were so renewed at this part of his disastrous history, that he fainted, and it was a long time before I brought him to himself, and was concerned my silly curiosity had called to mind his cruel sorrows. I begged him to finish here, and say no more; but, wiping his tears away, which trickled fast from his eyes, he continued as follows. ‘ Had it not been for the consideration of my infant son, I had certainly done some desperate mischief to myself; but argument and reason made me soon more temperate; I resolved, however, to forsake a country that had been the stage of so many cruel accidents to me; and settling my affairs, which were now larger than ever, by the accession of the monster’s estate, who had so barbarously killed my comforts for ever, I appointed Sir Thomas guardian to my son, giving proper instructions for his education; and, taking 2000l. with me, resolved in some distant clime to end my days. Fortune, at London, directed me to a friend, who proposed a voyage to the East Indies to me, which I closed with, and arrived here about half a year before you. I understand by letters I have lately received from Ireland, that my son is well; and have so many pressing instances to return home, that I believe I must once more visit this image of the woman I loved, and suffer grief to lay me there by her side. My trafficking here has been merely by way of amusement, and with no desire to amass money. Alas! those times are over with me! and now I have given you my dreadful story, you will not wonder at my melancholy, or that I think of nothing but death; which, I hope, will speedily end my wretched and painful being.’

CHAP. XIX.

HE RECEIVES LEAVE TO RETURN
TO ENGLAND—SOME STRICTURES
ON GOVERNMENT—FINDS MR. SARIS
AT LIBERTY TO GO ALSO—THEY SEND
Y 2 TRUMAN

TRUMAN AWAY WITH THE
GREATEST PART OF THEIR
EFFECTS — TAKE LEAVE OF
THEIR FRIENDS — ARRIVE AT
BATAVIA — EMBARK IN A DUTCH
EAST INDIA SHIP FOR EUROPE
— TOUCH AT THE CAPE OF
GOOD HOPE.

IT was more than twelve months before I heard from Mr. Goodwill, and the rest of my friends; and I returned sincere thanks to God, that, during all this time, no mortality had happened amongst us. Mr. Goodwill sent me the order I desired, which his uncle had obtained by his interest, and bore date at the time that letter was wrote: it permitted me to leave the country, and my factory, in six months after the receipt of it. I waited upon Governor ——— with this leave, who received me in the politest manner; for he had shewn me extraordinary respect ever since I arrived, which had been repaid by me in an observation of that due deference and obedience that I think should be always paid to our superiors. There are, no doubt, a set of persons in being, who are constantly uneasy under whoever governs. Man, born a free agent, naturally aims at reaping all the privileges that are his happy lot; but he carries this sometimes too far, he enters into a comparison between himself and the person who rules him; he erroneously imagines, that that person should have greater talents and abilities than fall to the share of such finite beings; he sees him subject to the same frailties with himself, and he blames the Power who could not better distinguish than to appoint such a governor to rule over him. My friend, the most divine and heavenly man that ever existed, that true judge of human nature, to whom we are obliged for all those sublime rules and precepts, that under various forms govern the civilized part of the world, never entered into the merits of a ruler's character, or it's demerits: he even supposes, or seems to suppose, that Providence has a great sway in setting up magistrates, when, in answer to the Jews ensnaring question, without calling Cæsar an usurper and a tyrant, as he really was, he says, *'Give unto Cæsar the things that are*

'Cæsar's, and unto God the things that are God's!' Certainly, in the wise disposition Heaven makes of things, it destines one man to this employment, and another man to a different one; it also appoints those that shall govern, and those that shall obey; and, their obligations to each other being mutual, if the heavenly contract is broke through by either party, it becomes void, of no effect, and such remedies ought to be applied to, as are thought proper by either side of the question; so far as they do not affect the general laws of nature, and the rules or conduct of Providence. It is enough, my gentle reader, that thy property is secured, and thy person free from danger; leave the minute springs and movements of government to statesmen; believe they do right, and never by an exploring inquisitiveness into the actions of your superiors in their publick station, or in the management of their private concerns, endanger that hurt to your mind, that discontent and ill-humour produce. The governor, undoubtedly, is obliged to consult the good of the governed, and no obligation lies upon us tamely to submit to oppression, and the injuries flowing from a bad administration, to, let me say, it's constituents. But we must not magnify our wrongs, or increase our sorrows, by seeing through a false and deceitful medium. Here we are happy—George reigns in the hearts, as he does over the persons of his subjects, with a mild, a gentle sway. Does he appoint ministers? He appoints such, we must hope, as from a thorough knowledge he thinks equal to the task of advising and directing him to pursue his people's good and happiness; like small streams derived from this source, all our petty magistrates have their original; and let us endeavour rather to cover than to declare their faults, if they produce no other bad consequences than what flow to themselves, by the contempt an imprudent management of their private concerns will occasion. Every department of government does not furnish an Hallifax, or a Montague; a Montague, alas! lately departed, too soon lost to the bewailing world.—
'Oh, Montague! as long as virtue is respected by mankind, as long as virtue is esteemed by the good, as long

‘ long as trade flourishes in this maritime country, as long as true and genuine benevolence of heart shall conduce to the relief of the miserable, so long shall thy loss be lamented by all that ever heard thy name and character! Thy ducal coronet borrowed lustre from thee; and thy high rank and birth only served to make thy noble mind more conspicuously apparent!’ I see, methinks, the godlike peer, with that humanity of countenance so remarkably his, bending in silent attention to some tale of woe, and reaching out the ready hand to relieve distress; his heart melting in soft sympathy and gentle compassion, hardly restraining the tears that stand in his pitying eyes! But I can enlarge no more, though I long to do it on this engaging subject, which has carried me so far out of my road, and brought to my remembrance one of the greatest men that ever existed.

I was in some pain about poor Saris, as I did not thoroughly know how he stood in regard to the company, and whether he could also leave Fort St. George as soon as I did, which was what I earnestly desired; but when I mentioned my thoughts to him, he told me, he was at liberty to depart whenever he would; which leave he had obtained of his friend, in the same manner I had procured it by mine, and that he would go to England when I departed, for the benefit of my company. I returned him thanks, and we immediately began to get matters in order, and to finish our various concerns, particularly, that of settling our accounts for the company with the governor, which we did with tokens of his approbation for our fidelity. When Truman found we were disposing matters for our departure, he jumped and skipped about as if he was distracted, and was not so much master of himself for a long time, as to govern his transports with any degree of moderation. When he came a little to himself, he advised us to go to Batavia, and from thence in a Dutch ship to Europe; war being declared, according to our accounts, between the English and French, though as yet no hostilities had been commenced in the Indian seas. ‘I tell you what, Truman,’ says Mr. Saris, ‘with Mr. Thompson’s consent, we’ll send thee off for

England, with our best effects, in the homeward bound Dutch fleet, and you shall leave us next week, and go to Batavia for that purpose; and we will take the chance of any single ship that may sail from thence at the six months end.’ Truman was at first averse to this proposal, his affection for me not permitting him to think of parting with me; but, upon our joint desire, he undertook, though reluctantly, to prepare for his departure; and, in about a month, having furnished him properly, we sent him, in a small vessel, to Batavia, whence the same vessel brought letters from him, that he had embarked, and sailed, in good health, for the Cape of Good Hope. I retained my large diamond, and a small charge of money, having consigned all the rest of my effects, jointly, to my father, Mr. Diaper, and Truman, till I arrived. Truman affected me greatly, when we parted, and, in a respectful manner, clasping me in his arms, begged me to take care of myself; and prayed to God to preserve me safe in my designed voyage: in short, we both shed tears, and I paid that tribute with pleasure, to so faithful, so just, and so disinterested a man, who had secured himself a large share of my love and esteem. We implored the blessing of God upon his voyage, and hoped he would arrive safe at the destined port. No man, that has not experienced the pleasure of having a faithful agent and servant, can express the relief it gives to the cares of life; and the secret to procure that satisfaction, is to convince the servant, you have his welfare and interest at heart; and then it is natural for him to consult yours, as his own well-being depends upon it. The lowest people may be brought to esteem and practise noble principles; and will, of course, follow them, if no absurd, or bad management, in those above them, directs them to different courses. Would we have honest and true domesticks about us, we must act in such a manner ourselves, as to appear amiable in their eyes; which will make them fearful of following other maxims themselves. When the time of our own departure came, we took an adieu of all our good friends, and were entertained agreeably by all the gentlemen of the town, who shewed great concern in parting with us;

us; and the governor, and our brother-factors, particularly vied with each other, in making us presents of such things as would, they thought, render our voyage agreeable. As we had no fleet, or single ship, going to Europe, we determined to go the same way that we sent Truman, and arrived safely in the city of Batavia, where we had immediately an opportunity of a passage to Holland, in the Yfrow Christiana, commanded by Captain Vander Spiegel, which was a remarkable stout ship, and well manned, mounting forty guns, and carrying a hundred and seventy seamen. Having obtained Governor Van Bluck's licence, which we did with some difficulty, to go in her, I had our effects registered, we embarked, and stood out to sea. Before we passed the line, we lost our captain, who was one of the most sottish and brutish fellows in the world, and was actually set on fire by drinking spirituous liquors, which, at length, burnt out his entrails, and carried him off. He was succeeded by a very gentleman-like man, Captain Beeckman; and, as if the existence of this fellow had retarded, or been the *remora* of our progress, the wind, which had been till now unfavourable, shifted about, and carried us at a fine rate, till we fell in with the Cape, where we came to anchor along-side of two Dutch, and three English East Indiamen, after paying the proper salutes to the forts and ships, and receiving the suitable returns to our compliments.

CHAP. XX.

HIS AGREEABLE SURPRISE, IN MEETING, UNEXPECTEDLY, A DEAR AND VALUABLE FRIEND—THEY RELATE TO EACH OTHER THEIR ADVENTURES—MR. DIAPER'S ACCOUNT OF AN UNHAPPY SHIPWRECK AND ESCAPE—THE SHIPS SAIL IN CONCERT—ARE SEPARATED BY A VIOLENT STORM.

WHEN we had come to anchor, Mr. Saris and myself went, with the captain, and some other gentlemen, for shore, in our long-boat; and, as we passed along-side of a large

English ship, we enquired her name, and my heart jumped from my bosom almost, when we were answered, as to that particular, and that she was commanded by Captain Friendly. This revived a thousand endearing ideas in my mind, and I begged the captain to call on board her, which we did; and, the minute I set my foot on deck, I enquired, precipitately, whether Mr. Diaper was on board. I was answered by the captain, that I was very lucky if I wanted to see that gentleman, as he was supercargo on board the next ship; to which he would do himself the pleasure to accompany me, as he had not himself seen that valuable man a great while, his voyage having been altered when he left England. When he came there, as I was getting up the ship's side, I overheard my friend's voice talking to somebody, and purposely covered my face with my hat, to surprize him with the unexpected sight I was going to present before him. We were entreated to go into the great cabin, where we seated ourselves, and soon after Mr. Diaper entered and saluted us; he was so altered, that, had it not been for his voice, I should scarcely have distinguished him, and for that sympathetick involuntary recognition my heart afforded me. I was as much altered myself; but, the moment he heard me speak, he turned his eyes eagerly towards me, without saying one word; his knees tottered under him, and he exclaimed, 'Great God! I thank thee for this!' and would have dropped down, had I not ran to him, and clasping him in my arms, could not refrain from tears: 'Heavens!' I cried, 'this is bliss—utterable—inexpressible—and pays me for all my fatigues.'—'To meet thee thus,' he rejoined, 'who could expect it?' And thus, for near a quarter of an hour, we did nothing but embrace, and utter such disjointed speeches, as our sudden elevation of mind could only dictate. Has my reader known what it is to feel the warmth of friendship's sublime and inspiring sentiments, that flow of joy that rushes over the soul, in obliging and being obliged by disinterested virtue? Has he been long absent from the amiable partner of his bosom? Has he found her at his return constant, true, and

and faithful, and equal to all his long-
 ing wishes? Then he may have felt those
 guilts and starts of passionate fondness,
 that we felt in seeing each other, after
 a seven years absence, and all the un-
 certainties it had produced in our minds
 of each other's welfare; *that flood of*
joy, that wild tumultuous roll, that cast
aside body, and left nothing about us
but mind, and wondering, gazing
 fight. When we became somewhat
 calmer, still our enquiries of each
 other made our conversation a dis-
 jointed medley, in asking questions on
 each side, without being master enough
 of ourselves to resolve them. At
 length I presented Mr. Saris to him as
 a valued friend, who had been, ever
 since we met, highly participating in
 our mutual satisfaction; and, being
 obliged to yield to Captain Beeck-
 man's desires to go on shore as soon as
 possible, Mr. Diaper obtained leave of
 his captain to accompany us; for
 though the supercargoes are superior
 to the commanders of India ships,
 when on shore at the factories, they
 are under the captain's direction in the
 voyage: when we came on shore, after
 again refreshing ourselves, whilst the
 captain was employed in his business,
 Mr. Diaper, Mr. Saris, and myself,
 took a walk in one of the beautiful
 gardens of the Dutch Company, which
 bloom with all nature's various pro-
 ductions; and, sitting down under the
 shady covering of a delightful alcove,
 I related all my adventures and suc-
 cesses to my friend; and he, in return,
 gratified me with an account of all that
 had happened to himself since our sepa-
 ration; by which I understood, to my
 great joy, that he never again proposed
 going to India, having acquired a for-
 tune of near 30,000*l.* through various
 difficulties and dangers, with honour
 to himself and satisfaction to his own-
 ers. He now hoped, with me, we
 should find all our friends well, and
 particularly his adorable Bellair, whom
 he was hastening to espouse. I found,
 in his last voyage with Captain Friend-
 ly, he had been shipwrecked, and un-
 derwent great difficulties on a barbar-
 ous coast, whereby he had been a great
 loser; and, that adventure being very
 curious and extraordinary, I shall par-
 ticularly insert it, as he related it.

THE UNFORTUNATE SHIPWRECK
 AND LUCKY ESCAPE OF MR.
 DIAPER.

WE had a succession of foul wea-
 ther, from the very day we
 left the Cape of Good Hope, which
 continued, with little intermission,
 till we came the length of the Philip-
 pine Islands; from which, by our
 reckonings, we had been driven a
 great way to the eastward, when
 another violent storm arose from the
 S. E. and for near three weeks we
 were the sport of the winds and
 waves, and could keep no regular
 account of our way. Our people
 had been so reduced by sickness be-
 fore, that we had not hands suffi-
 cient to manage the ship, so that the
 supercargoes, and other gentlemen,
 were obliged to exert themselves in
 performing the meanest as well as the
 most toilsome offices. Our provi-
 sions fell so scarce, that we were at
 very short allowance; and for water
 we had not above half a pint a day
 per man, and we had been obliged to
 throw our guns and the less valuable
 part of our cargo overboard. No-
 thing could be more dreadful and
 pitiable than our melancholy situa-
 tion; so that we began to abandon
 ourselves to despair, and, wearied
 with sickness and fatigue, resigned
 ourselves in expectation of the fatal
 moment that should put a period to
 our misfortunes. I took a spell one
 evening at the helm, and experienced
 a great instance of the protection of
 Providence; an increased gulf of
 wind threw a sea over us, that wash-
 ed me, a mate, and three other men,
 that were upon deck, overboard, and
 though it was almost instantaneous,
 yet I had time enough to reflect that
 I was lost, and to put a few fervent
 supplications to God, recommending
 my soul into his hands, who bestow-
 ed it upon me; when another wave
 threw me again upon the main-deck,
 and there left me gasping for life:
 it was some time before I came to
 myself, and I was then hurried into
 the cabin, and put to bed by Cap-
 tain Friendly. The mate and the
 other three were lost, and, with the
 highest sentiments of devotion, I
 gave

gave thanks to, and adored that merciful Being, who had thus saved me from the waters that so terribly encompassed me round about. We began soon to experience all the miseries of famine, which appeared in its most terrifying forms. Six of our sick people expired through mere want of necessary sustenance, and we were all so overcome with fasting, that the men began to debate, whether or no lots should not be cast for one of us to die to preserve the rest. We drank our urine for many days, not having the least rain since the storm began; which otherwise we should have saved for our use. Our main-mast was brought by the board, but, through mercy, we got her clear of the ship, and our bowsprit and part of our rudder were carried away by the howling waves. Sure no sight can be more dreadful than to see a vessel in such a forlorn condition, and to survey, all around, the horrid waste of waters breaking mountains high on every side! at distance you see them dissolve into a white foam now sinking into an abrupt vale, or rising into a perpetual succession of broken craggy hills, rolling far and wide away. The howling bursts, that the bellowing wind sends forth, rattle through the rigging with impetuous force, and, like one continued peal of thunder, seem to deafen the ears, and stun the brain.

“ see forked glare

“ The livid lightnings through the vast expanse,

“ And, hark! hoarse thunder growls with dreadful roar!

“ No more the helm obeys the pilot’s hand;

“ See, borne aloft, our masts pervade the skies,

“ And now we’re bury’d in the gulph below!

“ Dreadful the shocking scene! but grateful still

“ To Genii, who aspire, though still surrounded

“ By every wretched ill that starts the soul,

“ To purchase honour, and to serve mankind!

“ Let wretches, mean and sordid, safely lurk,

“ Bury’d luxuriously, in holes and corners;

“ Ours is the useful life, though want and anguish,

“ Famine, and all the dreaded train of evils

“ That human nature shrinks at, oft conspire

“ To check our frailty in the glorious race!”

At the end of three weeks, or thereabouts, as I was looking out afore, methought I saw an object, that, after observing stedfastly, I found still kept its position: I set it by the compass, and perceived it bore off us due south; so, with joy, I called to Captain Friendly, who was then very ill, and told him, I was sure I made land a-head. Though he could scarcely crawl, the news gave him such spirits, that he was up in an instant; and, every body getting the scent, the decks were soon filled with people, whose looks were capable to strike the soul with horror; all wan and pale, and ghastly, from illness and famine; their countenances now betrayed somewhat of a smile, and the meagre hands and hollow eyes were lifted up to thank God for the mercy he had bestowed upon us. The succeeding day we had a short cessation of the storm, and, the sky being somewhat clear, we could now perceive it was plainly land, rising into hummocks, and descending on each side into a point; we could not imagine what land it was, but steered directly in for it, imagining it to be about seven leagues distant from us, when the wind again began to rise with its wonted fury, and drove us directly in for it: and now a fresh difficulty arose, how we should prevent the vessel’s driving up the rocks, which would be our inevitable destruction; however, after tacking about, we found we could not keep her head up to the wind, and, weary and faint, let her drive, invoking the great Pilot of the universe once more to appear and act in our favour. In short, three or four hours brought us amongst the breakers, and presently the ship thumped hard upon the rocks, beat part of her false keel off, and one of the larboard strakes; so that soon the water poured upon us on all sides, and we were obliged to put out our boats, which were the long-boat and pinnace, which with less difficulty we did, as the former had

‘ had been all day in the chains ; and, ‘ putting in the latter the company’s ‘ silver, and providing ourselves with ‘ some powder, fire-arms, and mathe- ‘ matical instruments, with all our ‘ books and papers, and some other ‘ materials, we safely got into them, ‘ to the number of forty-five souls, ‘ and committed ourselves to the pro- ‘ tection of Providence, whose assist- ‘ ance we again experienced, by get- ‘ ting safely also on shore, whilst at a ‘ distance we saw our poor vessel torn ‘ into a thousand pieces.

‘ Our first care was to secure our ‘ boats ; and, whilst a party set about ‘ building tents for such of our people ‘ as were quite sick and unable to help ‘ themselves, and whom with extreme ‘ difficulty we had got from the wreck ‘ with us, the captain, myself, and ‘ two more, went armed to look abroad ‘ into the country, to see the place, ‘ and to discover if it was inhabited, ‘ and if we could procure the neces- ‘ saries of life. The soil was sandy, ‘ and abounded in several kinds of ‘ trees and shrubs ; particularly, to our ‘ great joy, we found the palm-tree to ‘ be one of them, which gave us a ‘ prospect of meeting with still greater ‘ abundance. We found some deer ‘ and some wild hogs, and several ‘ other sorts of animals for food, and ‘ a particular kind of herb somewhat ‘ like spinach, by the help of which ‘ refreshments we were soon all well ‘ recovered save six, who expired ‘ soon after our landing ; and began ‘ to enter into a form of domestick ‘ government, parties being appointed ‘ to kill game, others to cut firing, ‘ and the remainder to lengthen our ‘ long-boat, by the help of which we ‘ were in hopes we might get from ‘ this place. All our conjectures were ‘ a long time at a puzzle to know ‘ where we were, though some of our ‘ old voyagers were positive we were ‘ in one of the most northerly of the ‘ Marian Islands, which lie from 13° ‘ to 22° of northern latitude, and in ‘ 148° of east longitude from the me- ‘ ridian of London. Our observations ‘ were confirmed in this ; and some of ‘ our men desiring to go out in the ‘ pinnace, to discover if we were really ‘ upon one of these islands or no, and ‘ to seek for inhabitants, (for as yet ‘ we had seen none) ten of them were

‘ permitted to go with Mr. Midgley, ‘ a supercargo, and a mate at their ‘ head : they were victualled as well ‘ as we could supply them ; and, hav- ‘ ing the proper instruments, and some ‘ trifles which we had saved, to truck ‘ with the natives, they set out on their ‘ voyage ; but whether they were bu- ‘ ried in the sea, or destroyed by the ‘ Barbarians, I cannot tell, for we ‘ never saw them more ; and the loss ‘ of so many of our comrades struck ‘ us with a great damp, and sunk our ‘ spirits, having now only twenty- ‘ seven left ; besides, in losing the pin- ‘ nace, we received a very great detri- ‘ ment, as now we could not go out ‘ to fish, which had made a part of ‘ our diet. The island, in the interior ‘ part, was like a garden, and the air ‘ so temperate, that we could not help ‘ thinking ourselves as happy as peo- ‘ ple in our circumstances could de- ‘ sire to be, considering all things ; ‘ and could we once get to any of our ‘ settlements or factories, and from ‘ thence to Europe, as we had done ‘ all that men could do, we did not ‘ doubt our conduct would be approv- ‘ ed by the company, and that they ‘ would make no difficulty of employ- ‘ ing us again in their service. In the ‘ close of the day we busied ourselves ‘ in such sports or diversions as we ‘ could perform, as wrestling, leap- ‘ ing, &c. and I made a back-gam- ‘ mon table in a rude fashion, and ‘ having dice, that was the entertain- ‘ ment of the better sort of us : every ‘ day I read the church-service morn- ‘ ing and evening, by the captain’s de- ‘ sire, and on Sundays we attended the ‘ devotion of the day with all the punc- ‘ tuality and seriousness imaginable, ‘ and set apart that seventh portion of ‘ time to those exercises that amend ‘ and raise the heart to the great first ‘ Fountain of all-created things. In ‘ appearance there could not be a more ‘ harmonious and peaceable set of peo- ‘ ple than we all were, expressing great ‘ regard and affection to each other ; ‘ but our melodious Waller might ‘ well say—

“ More dangers now from man alone we
“ find,
“ Than from the rocks, the billows, or the
“ wind.”

‘ And this in a little time proved ex-
‘ actly

'actly to be our unhappy case. Is it
 'not something surprizing that the
 'spirit of discord reigns so much
 'amongst mankind, that it follows
 'them, and intrudes itself into their
 'breasts, even when their very being
 'depends upon unity and friendship's
 'being preserved amongst them? Could
 'a situation much more direful be
 'thought of than ours was, separated
 'as it were from all the world, the
 'companions and brothers of mis-
 'fortune, and of misfortune not to
 'be overcome without our joint ef-
 'forts employed to extricate us. Yet
 'we fell into feuds and dissensions that
 'caused the death of many, and had
 'very near ruined the innocent with
 'the guilty, and involved us all in
 'destruction. Hitherto every one had
 'shewn the utmost willingness in the
 'tasks appointed them, and to obey
 'the commands of their officers, to
 'whom they had been as submissive
 'before our shipwreck; and by that
 'means our long-boat was nearly ready
 'for sea, was decked and strengthened
 'properly, so as to become an excel-
 'lent sea-boat; and the rigging her,
 'for which we were particularly oblig-
 'ed to the palm-tree, was on the point
 'of being finished, when a most hor-
 'rid conspiracy was discovered, carried
 'on by twelve of our best hands, who
 'had entered into an agreement to take
 'away the company's treasure, and
 'make their escape in the vessel, and,
 'leaving us in this disconsolate con-
 'dition, go to some of the Portuguese
 'settlements, share the money, and
 'every one to shift for himself. This
 'was their first plan; but they after-
 'wards altered it, and agreed to run
 'amongst the Philippine Islands, or
 'to steer to the Straights of Manilla,
 'and there to endeavour to seize some
 'large vessel, and go upon the *account*,
 'or turn pirates. The principal con-
 'spirator was one Scott, the boatswain,
 'a fellow that on board I had observed
 'to be of a mutinous, domineering
 'spirit, and particularly severe in the
 'execution of his office: in short, I
 'never liked him, but had seen him
 'behave with great caution and cir-
 'cumspection since he had been on
 'shore, which had in a manner cured
 'both Captain Friendly and myself of
 'our prejudices against him. They
 'were all armed with firelocks and
 'hangers, as well as ourselves, which
 'made it the more dangerous; and
 'their design was just ripe for execu-
 'tion, when I was the happy instrument
 'to discover and defeat it. I was one
 'day with my gun, and a favourite
 'dog of mine, who had been before
 'to India with me; and, having tired
 'myself in the pursuit of game, laid
 'myself down in a copse, intending
 'to take a nap before I returned to my
 'companions, whilst the dog strayed
 'at some distance from me round-
 'about, employed in the seeking way
 'of pointers. I overheard a voice
 'which I knew to be Scott's, who
 'hallooed to another man—"Damn
 'me! how came this dog here? He's
 'like his master, always peering and
 'prying about, and be damned to
 'him! I wish I could as easily dispatch
 'him as I could his dog, and then
 'we should have nothing to fear; but
 'I'll be damned if I do not hide the
 'precise son of a bitch some how or
 'other, notwithstanding!" Upon
 'which he gave my dog a kick, who
 'ran yelping away, and, as it hap-
 'pened, distant from the place I lay
 'in, at the back of which these fel-
 'lows were walking.—"Curse me,"
 'replies another, whom I knew to be
 'Will Jones, the carpenter's mate, he
 'is a good fellow, too, for that mat-
 'ter; I would not have any blood
 'spilt if it could be helped; but as
 'to the company, a pack of rich
 'scoundrels, I think it no sin to rob
 'them, if it was of twice as much."
 'I lay close all this while, and heard
 'them talk over their whole design,
 'and luckily left the spot, without it's
 'being perceived that I had overheard
 'them; and, in the course of their
 'talk, learned all the names of the
 'gang. I was shocked and amazed
 'at such a scene of villainy, but re-
 'solved to act very cautiously, as I
 'perceived they were already very
 'strong. The next day I took Captain
 'Friendly out with me, and Mr. Ben-
 'son, one of our mates, and the only
 'one we had remaining, under pretence
 'of shewing them a fine prospect which
 'I had discovered in my peregrinations
 'the day before. When we had got
 'far enough, I began to open what I
 'had heard, and my important disco-
 'very, which made them tremble;
 'and, though they were both as cou-
 'rageous

'rageous men as any I ever knew, yet
 'it was some time before their amaze-
 'ment would suffer them to speak a
 'syllable: at length, when their first
 'surprize was over, we began to con-
 'sult ways and means to crush the
 'conspiracy before it came to a greater
 'head; and, in order to that, it was
 'thought necessary that the silver should
 'be put under a guard of two of our
 'trustiest men, to be relieved every
 'four hours, and that I should lie in
 'the hut where it was secured; that
 'the captain should call all the hands
 'together the next day, and endea-
 'vour to seize the conspirators un-
 'armed, by the help of such of our
 'people as still continued faithful,
 'and to whom we were to impart the
 'heads of the affair this very evening.
 'Accordingly, we sent privately to
 'them, one by one, to avoid suspi-
 'cion, and received a promise from all
 'of them that they would stand by
 'their commander, and not see the
 'company injured; and most of them
 'were so irritated, we could hardly
 'restrain their rage within proper
 'bounds: but what gave us great un-
 'easiness, was the impossibility of se-
 'curing their arms, or catching them
 'without them; for, from a precau-
 'tion generally attendant upon the
 'actions of designing and bad people,
 'who are full of suspicions, and ever
 'on their guard, they, it was observed
 'of late, always went armed, and,
 'as we were told, which was what had
 'surprized the rest of the men, even
 'lay with their musquets by them all
 'night. It was then thought proper
 'to alter our plan of action; and,
 'the first time three or four of them
 'went out together to fish or hunt,
 'to surround them, and, by force of
 'arms, make them prisoners; and,
 'thus weakened in their numbers, to
 'attack the rest, and, not surrender-
 'ing, to put them to the sword. An
 'opportunity immediately occurred;
 'and Scott, with four more, going out,
 'towards the other end of the island,
 'with pretence to hunt, but really to
 'agree on methods to put their scheme
 'in execution, I begged the captain
 'to permit me to follow him with
 'seven picked men; which, accord-
 'ingly, he did; and I took a different
 'route, knowing, however, it would
 'soon bring us to encounter each other.

'In about an hour we heard them ap-
 'proach at a distance; upon which I
 'ordered three of my men to enter a
 'kind of thicket, where they might
 'be concealed from their first sight,
 'whilst I advanced with the rest some
 'paces, and soon perceived my gentle-
 'men, who made a stand, and asked,
 'in a familiar way, how we came out
 'so far. I drew them by degrees to
 'the place of my ambuscade, talking
 'of indifferent matters; and then,
 'facing about suddenly, cried, "Gen-
 'tlemen, I command you to lay down
 'your arms, and surrender yourselves
 'prisoners, that you may be cleared
 'of a black design against the lives
 'of your companions, and to run
 'away with the vessel that we have
 'all contributed to build, to carry
 'us from this solitary place, or re-
 'ceive the punishment due to your
 'crime." Scott, with the rest, turned
 'pale, to hear me speak thus; but
 'being a bold and desperate set of
 'wretches, they soon resumed their
 'countenances, and he told me he did
 'not know by what authority I called
 'them to account; that they were not
 'under my command, nor any one
 'else; and would try who were the
 'best men, if I persisted in my design;
 'So, d—n ye, my lads, let us charge
 'them directly!" On which he fired
 'at me; and thereupon I ordered my
 'men in the thicket to let fly, by
 'which two of the conspirators were
 'killed, who at the same instant, with
 'an unlucky shot, dispatched one of
 'my companions: however, like wild
 'beasts, they did not take warning
 'by their friends' fate, which only
 'served to redouble their fury; and,
 'Scott advancing before the other two,
 'to knock me down with the butt-
 'end of his piece, I clapped my fire-
 'lock to his breast, and shot him dead
 'on the spot; on which his companions
 'surrendered themselves prisoners at
 'discretion, and we bound their hands,
 'and drove them before us till we
 'came near home; when, leaving them
 'with two men for their safe-keeping,
 'the rest of us entered our little plan-
 'tation, where Captain Friendly was
 'under dreadful apprehensions, fear-
 'ing our plot had miscarried; but
 'now, when, from the information
 'of my prisoners, I could give him
 'an exact account of the number and

' designs of these wretches, he was
 ' made tolerable easy, and we prepared
 ' for the execution of the second part
 ' of our scheme. The captain and
 ' Mr. Benson, each attended by six
 ' men well armed, advanced before
 ' their hut, and summoned them to
 ' surrender, or expect to be treated
 ' without mercy, as Scott and the rest
 ' of their companions had been be-
 ' fore; but crying out, "One and
 ' "all! One and all!" they sallied out,
 ' and, desperado like, fired their pieces
 ' on both parties, by which we lost
 ' two men; and, by our return to their
 ' fire, dropped two of theirs. By this
 ' time they had retreated to a large
 ' tree, which had been cut down for
 ' some time before, of which they make
 ' a kind of breast-work, and, before
 ' our people could close with them,
 ' had loaded again, and discharged full
 ' in their teeth, by which another man
 ' was killed, and Captain Friendly
 ' wounded in the shoulder; but, in
 ' return to the salute, our parties fired,
 ' and laid three more of them flat on
 ' the earth; and the remaining two
 ' flung down their arms, and submit-
 ' ted. As so much blood had been
 ' spilt, and these four fellows were
 ' the least guilty amongst them, Cap-
 ' tain Friendly deferred any proceed-
 ' ings against them, and proposed to
 ' keep them confined till we sailed, in
 ' order to deliver them up to the first
 ' factory we came to, for the company
 ' to dispose of as they thought fit: but,
 ' whilst we were busied in quelling this
 ' insurrection, five of our men, who
 ' were on board the *Escape*, (for so we
 ' had named our new vessel) agreed to
 ' run away with her; and providing
 ' themselves privately with some pro-
 ' visions and water, had put out to sea,
 ' without being perceived by any of us,
 ' we were so employed in the aforesaid
 ' operations; and thus, whilst we were
 ' contending for the prize, it was run
 ' away with from both parties. Our
 ' consternation was extreme, when we
 ' discovered this perfidy, and saw, at
 ' distance, our boat under sail, and
 ' ploughing through the waves. We
 ' were unable to speak or think, and
 ' were involved in the deepest and most
 ' cruel despair, finding now all hopes
 ' to get away fruitless, and of no ef-
 ' fect, unless Providence directed some
 ' vessel that way, which was a thing

' we had no foundation to suppose.
 ' We were now only ten of us, in-
 ' cluding our prisoners, who seemed
 ' so sincerely penitent, that they were
 ' suffered to walk abroad, but were
 ' not trusted with arms. Nothing can
 ' equal, sure, our disconsolate condi-
 ' tion, and we began to think Heaven
 ' had forsaken us, and that we must
 ' finish our days thus remote from our
 ' friends, and native country, and rob-
 ' bed of all our sanguine desires, and
 ' fondest wishes; when, one calm
 ' morning, to our infinite joy, we de-
 ' scribed a sail, at some leagues distance;
 ' upon which we made a great fire on
 ' an eminence, and, getting upon ano-
 ' ther hill, pitched a great pole there-
 ' on, upon which we hung a shirt, and
 ' continued firing our musquets, with-
 ' out intermission, hoping some eye or
 ' other on board her would discover
 ' these signals of distress; and how re-
 ' joiced were we, when we could see
 ' a boat put off, full of men, who
 ' rowed with all their might towards
 ' the island; and soon came within hail
 ' of us; when, lying on their oars,
 ' they asked us, in Portuguese, who
 ' we were. I answered for the rest in
 ' that language, that we were the re-
 ' mains of the crew of an English ship,
 ' who had been shipwrecked here a
 ' great while ago; and begged them,
 ' for God's sake, to take us on board,
 ' which they immediately consented
 ' to; but would not touch the com-
 ' pany's silver, without first obtaining
 ' their captain's leave. We were over-
 ' come with transport at this change of
 ' our condition, and returned sincere
 ' thanks to God for our deliverance,
 ' and that we had fallen into the hands
 ' of friends and allies to our nation;
 ' and, indeed, we met with the noblest
 ' usage from the captain, Don Fran-
 ' cisco de Zuniga, who, at my re-
 ' quest, sent his boat again to shore for
 ' the treasure I was so fond of saving
 ' for my owners benefit. This ship
 ' was bound from Goa, on a trading
 ' voyage to China and Japan, and was
 ' a very large vessel, and better manned
 ' than most of the Portuguese ships
 ' generally are in these parts of the
 ' world; and the good captain agreed
 ' to put us ashore at Canton, which
 ' was the first place he designed to
 ' touch at. Nothing could happen
 ' better than this; nor could we be

' carried

carried to a more desirable place; but, though we experienced all the goodnefs and generosity imaginable from this noble Portuguese, we experienced the utmost brutality, and superstitious hatred, from the common sailors possible; and could not help acknowledging, that, in their ships, they are the most nasty and lazy wretches, that ever the world produced; and such bad seamen in general, that, in a hard gale of wind, they, instead of bestirring themselves with briskness and alacrity, are constantly supplicating their St. Antonio to do their business for them; so that their commanders are forced to exert their authority over them, as over a pack of slaves, to bring them to any thing. They are, however, well acquainted with the East Indian Seas, and are good pilots; and from them we learned, that the island we were upon was called Assogon; which they themselves had been driven to the sight of also by a storm, which proved to us so propitious and fortunate. Don Francisco was as good as his word, and set us safely on shore at Canton, refusing to take any satisfaction for the service he had done us; and we once more got amongst our countrymen, after a series of such perils, misfortunes, and dangers; and soon after took passage in another of the company's ships for England; where, when we arrived, and had given the directors an account of our behaviour and hardships, they treated us very kindly, made us handsome presents, and gave Captain Friendly a ship for Coast and Bay, and provided me with my present voyage, to my old station, Canton; whence I am arrived here, homeward-bound, happy in having recovered a friend I so dearly love, and who has been constantly uppermost in my thoughts.

We sympathized with each other, in the various difficulties and misfortunes we had met with, and congratulated, mutually, one another, on our good success, which was likely now to raise us to a state of uninterrupted happiness, if a mortal can ever be said to participate of it. He heard Prim's adventures with pleasure and surprize, and conceived an high opinion and regard for Mr. Saris. When he talked

of his dear Bellair, he perceived the tears start in my eyes; and I could not help making a mournful comparison between his happy state and my misery, deprived, for ever, of my adorable and adored Louisa. He saw my pain; and, taking me in his arms, kindly said all he could to dissipate my uneasiness, and blamed himself for mentioning a name which could not fail reviving my ideas of the charmer of my soul. He would fain have persuaded us to leave the Dutch ship, and go passengers in his; but we had contracted such a friendship for Captain Beeckman, and he had done so many things, kindly to accommodate us in the voyage, that at length my friend agreed, it would be almost a crime to leave him, and especially as their ship was so full, that he could not promise us near so good entertainment there. He invited the captain with us, to a genteel treat he gave us on board his ship; and, all the time we lay at the Cape, the intercourse of civilities from ship to ship was great and noble, and like men who sincerely delighted to oblige each other. The friendly behaviour between Mr. Diaper, myself, and Mr. Saris, spread a complacency every where, and inspired love and humanity into every breast. When we had got all on board that was necessary for our voyage, my dear friend took a tender farewell of us, hoping we should arrive safe to the desired, the destined spot, from which we had been so long absent, in these uncomfortable, sultry climates. Captain Beeckman, by the desire of the other captains, took the command as commodore, and delivered his orders accordingly; resolving, if possible, to keep company with each other to Europe. We weighed, and set sail in concert, and continued so till we came the length of the Canaries, when a violent storm arose, that put us in the utmost pain for each other. Our ship rode it well; but Captain Friendly's, and that wherein my friend was, seemed to labour very hard, amidst the impetuous winds, and boiling waves, which rose even to the clouds; and, in a day afterwards, the storm still continuing, we lost sight of our whole fleet, to our great uneasiness. I sent up petitions for their safety, and prayed that the Almighty would still the raging main, and protect my poor friend

friend and his companions. We drove thus for several days; but at length the tempest abated, and a still calm succeeded this war of the elements,

CHAP. XXI.

THEY PUT INTO MADEIRA—AN EXTRAORDINARY ADVENTURE—HE SAVES AN OLD FRIEND FROM A GANG OF BRAVOES—THEY ARE WOUNDED IN THE CONFLICT—THEIR MUTUAL JOY AT THE SIGHT OF EACH OTHER—MR. ARCHER'S ACCOUNT OF THE ACCIDENT—HE EMBARKS WITH CAPTAIN BEECKMAN—THEY ARRIVE AT AMSTERDAM.

THE winds hanging contrary to us, and some of our men being very ill, our captain resolved to touch at the Madeiras; and accordingly we anchored in the road of Fyal; and soon after the captain, Mr. Saris, and myself, went on shore, and dined at the Dutch consul's, where we were elegantly entertained; and the next day paid our compliments to the English consul, who received us with that politeness so usual to that gentleman, and fraid us to dinner; and several of the English merchants accompanied us to see the curiosities of the island, and those of the town. I had a particular veneration for this place, as it was the scene of the adventures of two faithful lovers, who here finished their lives and misfortunes together, after retiring from the rage of their persecutors in England. The Romish inhabitants abound with all the superstitious customs and ceremonies that can make a rational creature sick of ignorance and enthusiasm; and, perhaps, in their manners, are the basest and lowest wretches that one can form an idea of. I found the celebrated wines of this place not near of so generous a relish and flavour, as they were in most distant parts I had drank them: and it is an observation of the merchants, that the best Madeira is to be found at New York, in North America, owing as much to their management of it there, as to the accidents of purgation and refining, which it meets with in the passage. We spent many agreeable hours here, and were universally caressed; but, to

our disappointment, found only one Dutch ship, of all our convoy, had put into Fyal; which gave me fresh pain for poor Diaper, who, my melancholy disposition suggested to me, had perished in the ocean's devouring jaws.

One evening I was returning from a merchant's to the English consul's, having left Mr. Saris and Captain Beeckman behind me, and was going to the upper part of the town for that purpose, when my ears were accosted with the clashing of swords, and several heated expressions uttered in the Portuguese language; and particularly one voice cried, 'Villains, though oppressed with numbers, you will find me no easy conquest!' From a certain generous propensity in my nature, I drew my sword, and hastened to the succour of this unknown person, and, by the glimmering twilight, could perceive he was assaulted by six others, who had surrounded him; upon which I cried, in the same language, 'Courage. Sir; I believe your cause is good by the multitude of your assailants; fortune has sent you an assistant, who, perhaps, may turn the scale on your side;' and, so saying, I bestowed myself in a manner that made our antagonists think it was time to act with more caution than they had hitherto done: but villains are always cowards; and after giving my companion a wound, that laid him on the ground, and running me through the left-arm, one of them dropping, and the rest having received several hurts, they scoured away, and left us masters of the field of battle. By this time the garrison had been alarmed, and a strong party, with an officer at the head of it, sent to quell any disorder that might have arisen: they found me raising the unknown gentleman, who had received several wounds; and, when they had looked in the dead man's face, they knew him to be one of those execrable rascals, that for hire will undertake to rid a man of his enemy, by stabbing him or shooting him privately, or attacking him with numbers; a practice more common amongst the Portuguese than even with the Spaniards and Italians; nay, those fellows pretend to so much honour in their way, that, if the employer happens to relent, they surely sacrifice him, if he gives notice to his antagonist to avoid the danger

he has planted for him. When the officer had received my account of the affair, he very civilly desired me to attend him to the governor, who was making merry at an English merchant's, who testified so much in my favour, that we were set at liberty, and a proclamation issued to take the rest of the persons concerned in this vile attempt. The gentleman I had relieved, could scarcely walk; but, understanding he quartered at Don Henriques de Guzman's, the officer and myself accompanied him there, where we received the thanks of that gentleman, and a fine young lady, his daughter, who both seemed mightily affected with the misfortune that had happened to their friend. In the hurry and confusion this affair had put me into, I had not regarded him attentively; but, hearing him thank me very gratefully in the English language, methought the tone and manner of his expression revived somewhat in my memory, that had been very faithfully recorded there; and how pleasingly surprized was I, when, asking the name of his preserver, after telling him it was Thompson, weak as he was, he gave a transporting cry, and said, 'Yes, it is he! it could be no body else but him that saved me. Ah, my dear friend!—and yet it cannot be he—it must—it is—and he has quite forgotten his faithful Archer!' At that name, I plainly perceived it to be that young gentleman I had so dearly valued, and who was so altered, it was impossible for me else to have recollected him. Though now plain, it was still mysterious; and, taking him in my arms, our congratulations were so affecting and tender, as melted all the standers-by; in short, we were moved ourselves, and all the little scenes of boyish affection, and the transactions of our juvenile years, rushed at once into our minds, and caused an inexpressible gladness to play about our hearts. Don Henriques, and the rest of us, could hardly persuade him to go to bed, and have his wounds dressed, which we found were not dangerous; and, as to mine, it appeared so slight a matter, that I would have sat up all night with my friend; but that the surgeon would by no means permit, for already our interview had

occasioned a fever in him, which he was very apprehensive of the consequences of; so returning thanks to the gentleman and his family, I departed to my lodging, promising Archer that I would see him betimes in the morning.

I informed Mr. Saris of my good fortune, in having saved the life of a man I so much loved, and whom I had not seen for so many years. I could perceive Mr. Archer was altered very much for the better, and had all the gentleman about him; together with the roughness of an Englishman, there was mingled the soft air and look of the Portuguese, which had a very good effect upon the spectator; but what I valued him much for was to see, that he carried the same honest friendly heart in his bosom, that he had done when we roved the fields of science, under the endearing care of my father. I carried Mr. Saris with me to see him, and he was so well recovered, that he was able to discourse; and we renewed again all those testimonies of affection, so natural where there is an established regard between two persons; and, he being able to bear it, at his desire I gave him an account of all my transactions and adventures from the time of our separation till now, part of which he had received by letter from his father, who he informed me, much to my joy, was alive and well, with Mr. Sharpley the elder; but, as to young Sharpley, he had not heard of him for some time, near a twelve-month. He consoled with me like a man that loved me on my disasters, and congratulated me on my succeeding good fortune, with an unfeigned satisfaction. Upon enquiring after his affairs, I found they had not been interspersed with any very extraordinary accidents; but that, in a settled course of traffick, he had made himself master of a pretty fortune; that the scene of his business had not been solely confined to Oporto; that he had frequently resided at Lisbon, from whence he had now brought a cargo to Madeira, which having disposed of to great advantage, he had a thought of taking passage with us for Holland, from whence he would provide himself with another cargo to Oporto: his letters from England were of much later date than

than any of mine, and from them I learnt my father and all our friends were well in Yorkshire, where Mr. Archer proposed to visit us in about a twelvemonth, and, if things went to his mind, to settle in London. I was charmed at his proposal of going with us to Holland, and assured him he should want no accommodations, if I myself was forced even to swing in a hammock. Mr. Archer's life hitherto had been one uniform plan, wherein the merchant had always the upper hand; and, in the consideration of rising in his profession, all the starts and passions of the soul were centered; indeed, no man seemed better cut out for trade, having all the admired principles of that set of men. As he had not mentioned a word of love in his whole story, I could not imagine how he came to be attacked by the braves, those assaults being commonly the result of some *amour*; and therefore I made so free as to ask him, if he knew the meaning of his being set upon by them. He told me, he guessed somewhat of the matter; and that his being caressed by Don Henriques, and his amiable daughter, had raised the hatred of Don Juan de Carvalho, a noble Portuguese, who had pretensions to her; and, love and jealousy being almost always united in the Portuguese, that he had thus contrived to take him off. We entered into a discourse of the base principles that animate this nation, and from thence into another on duelling, which is so common in other countries; and Mr. Saris observed, that the method of taking an enemy off in this manner, with the gloomy revengeful Portuguese, allowing for the different notions of things, that different people or nations have, was equally honourable when considered in this light, that the single combatant, as well as the assassinator, thinks nothing can retrieve his honour but spilling the blood of his antagonist. Indeed, the generous Englishman, and the Frenchman, opposes his man singly, and face to face; but the same principles inspire his breast as do those of an Italian, when he stabs you behind with his stiletto; for they pursue the same ends, but by different routs. If any thing, the practice of the English and French is more absurd;

for to have received an injury, and, at the same time, to put it in the power of your enemy to take your life, is either confounding right and wrong, or is depending upon the assistance of a Being, in the combat, who has declared, *he that sheds man's blood, by man shall his blood be shed*. Pity it is, that the utmost contempt does not succeed such encounters to both parties, and that, by a publick brand, they were not separated from society, as aliens and strangers to those amiable propensities of human nature, mercy and forgiveness of injuries.

Captain Beeckman consenting at our request to Mr. Archer's taking passage with him, we accommodated him as well as we could; and being quite recovered, and settling his affairs, so as to find them as he wished, when he saw his correspondent at Lisbon, we took leave of all friends and acquaintance; and, weighing, stood for the north-east, and were soon out of sight of the island, running afore the wind with a fine gale, which gave us hopes of soon concluding our tedious voyage. Fair and serene weather continued during the remainder of our passage, which, being at the most pleasant season of the year, yielded us a great deal of satisfaction; and sure no one can describe the many starts and motions of joy that filled my heart, in approaching Europe's happy seats, after so long an absence; nay, the same gladness shone in the eyes of the meanest of our crew; and even Mr. Saris, though oppressed with a black and deadly melancholy, seemed inspired with pleasure. It is Providence, it is Heaven itself, who has placed in our breasts, that inclination to our native country, that directs and stimulates us in all our actions; that amiable propensity to desire and long to behold and enjoy the happiness of living, of dying, where we were first kindled into life, and first became members of society! Even the frozen Laplander, and the sun-burnt Hottentot, have the same sentiments; and deprived of their native, though comfortless skies, are greatly unhappy, and, pining, feel the most pungent sorrow.

We came to anchor in that famous river, on which is seated the ever-renowned mart Amsterdam; and I thought, for a long time, my curiosity

could

could never be satisfied, in viewing all the wonders of that great metropolis, not only of the United Provinces, but; I may say, also of the whole trading world; and my two companions, who were also before strangers to the place and country, were as eager, as myself, to gratify themselves in inspecting the laws and customs of this wise and great people.

CHAP. XXII.

MR. SARIS DEPARTS FOR IRELAND — ARCHER TAKES LEAVE OF THOMPSON, AND EMBARKS FOR OPORTO — HE DISPOSES OF HIS DIAMOND TO GREAT ADVANTAGE — VISITS ROTTERDAM, AND OTHER PLACES — EMBARKS IN THE SALISBURY, M'KENZIE, FOR LONDON — THEY ARE TAKEN BY THE FRENCH.

MR. Saris having found an opportunity to go to Ireland by a ship bound to Cork, laid hold of it; and, after taking the most tender leave of each other, and promising to keep up an epistolary correspondence, embarked for that place, leaving it to my care to remit him the effects he had in Truman's hands, when I got to England, where I would have persuaded him to accompany me; but he was very eager to see his son, and therefore I could not possibly expect that gratification. Soon after his departure, Mr. Archer, having completed a valuable cargo for Portugal, also took his leave of me, intrusting to my care letters to his father, to mine, and my mother, and Mr. Sharpley the elder. I parted with him with great regret, and his reluctance to separate was almost as great as mine; but we comforted each other, in the consideration, that, in about a twelvemonth, he would be able to compleat all his affairs abroad, and return to England.

I applied to several eminent jewelers to dispose of my large diamond, which I was now resolved to turn into money, in order to remit it to England; but some through ignorance, and others through knavery, put so low a price upon it, that I was resolved not to dispose of it here at all: however, at last I happened, at a coffee-house

adjoining to the Stadt-house, to mention it to Mr. Levy, a noted Jewish broker, who was in raptures at the sight of it, and undertook to get me a customer; which he accordingly did in the Prince of Darmstadt, whose agent paid me down to the amount of 22,000*l.* which was more than ever I expected; and I thought myself so obliged to the fidelity and address of Levy, that I insisted upon his accepting 200 florins, besides what was usual for commission; and thus I found myself richer than I could in my most sanguine hopes have desired, and immediately procured bills payable at London, which I sent by the packet to Mr. Diaper, reserving only about 500*l.* to carry me home, and for such other matters as might occur. I now made the tour of the provinces, and saw the most considerable places in the dominions of the Republick, and at length went to Rotterdam, with a view to get a passage in some ship for England, and found the Salisbury, Captain M'Kenzie, ready to sail; with whom agreeing, I embarked with him, and in three or four days afterwards sailed for that country my soul now longed after, though it revived in my mind a thousand ideas, that gave me pain inexpressible.

Captain M'Kenzie's ship was a very stout one, and well manned; so, notwithstanding privateers swarmed in the Channel and North Seas, he was resolved not to wait for convoy, but make the best of his way alone, and accordingly we sailed with a favourable wind; but, abreast of the North Foreland, we were chased by a privateer under French colours, who, though we crowded all the sail we could, wronged us greatly, and soon came up with us. She was a large ship, full of guns and men; however, M'Kenzie resolved to do all he could to save himself, and, edging down upon her, gave her a broadside, which raked her fore and aft, and damaged her rigging: our salute was returned by the like compliment, and all their tops being manned with marines, with small arms, who discharged at the same time, we had a number of our men killed and wounded; and Captain M'Kenzie being shot through the head, his mate disabled, and all things in confusion, it was thought high time to strike to the enemy, who sent their boat on

board of us; and, leaving a number of hands behind them, took me and two or three other passengers with them to appear before their captain, whose name was Le Serre, and the privateer's the Terrible, belonging to Havre de Grace. He behaved with an extremity of politeness, returned us our swords; made us dine with him, and forbade his men to strip any of the prisoners, to whom he acted with great generosity and tenderness. He found his prize a very good one; which, perhaps, not a little contributed to his pleasant temper, for we were laden with a very valuable cargo. My loss was very trifling, consisting principally of what money I had about me; and Le Serre very much distinguished me, and seemed greatly pleased with my conversation. And thus I found myself in the condition of a captive, though it did not give me much pain, as there had, I understood, been a cartel settled between the two nations for the exchange of prisoners: nay, I was not a little pleased that I should have an opportunity to see France, which I had a long time desired.

C H A P. XXIII.

HE SETS OUT FOR PARIS—HE RELIEVES AN ENGLISH OFFICER IN DISTRESS—FINDS HIM TO BE AN OLD FRIEND—THEY SATISFY ONE ANOTHER IN THE RELATION OF THEIR ADVENTURES—THEY VISIT VERSAILLES—THE OFFICER FALLS IN LOVE WITH A LADY THEY MEET IN THE GARDENS.

HAVING disposed of matters in the prize, and on board the Terrible, the captain carried us into Dunkirk, where our men were put into the prison; but, as to myself and the rest of the passengers, we had liberty, upon our parole, to walk in the town; so that we did not go near the works, which they are very cautious lest any stranger should inspect. We had a house assigned us to lodge in, and from thence, when a little settled, I wrote to my father, Truman, and other friends in England, to whom I had also before wrote from Rotterdam, acquainting them with the misfortune

that had happened to me, and letting them know that I had drawn a bill for two hundred pounds, payable on sight to Monsieur Varillon, or his order, in London. I received an answer in about a month, in which, after condoling with me on my mishap, they informed me that Truman, with my effects, had arrived safe in England, and that they had disposed every thing for my benefit; that the bills I sent from Holland had been paid, and that all my friends were in health, and longed for nothing so much as to see me; and Mr. Goodwill had got letters from a great man to the minister of the marine in France, by which he did not doubt they should hear I was immediately released; and this way they the rather took, as no cartel ship would sail to France for some time. My mother's letter was full of tenderness, and all that affection and regard she preserved in her breast for her son, of which I had had so many and so great instances. One thing gave me a high satisfaction, which was, that I received a letter from my friend Diaper, who had safely arrived in England, and only waited my coming home to celebrate his nuptials with his dearest Miss Bellair. In about ten days after I had the pleasure of receiving these letters, which set my heart at rest, an order came to the governor of Dunkirk to release an English gentleman, whose name was Thompson, and to suffer him to depart to whatever place his inclination led him; and accordingly I was sent for by him, and acquainted with the news. I returned him my thanks in the best manner I could, and he staid me to dine with him; and I wrote a letter of acknowledgment to the minister, and hoped I should be permitted to thank him in person at my arrival in Paris, where I proposed to do myself the honour to go as soon as I had settled my affairs at Dunkirk. This I had no sooner done, and received remittances from London, than I resolved to set out for Paris; but, before I went, thought I could not leave Dunkirk, with satisfaction to my mind, unless I endeavoured to soften the rigours of my countrymen's confinement, who were now very numerous; and, accordingly, I went to the place of their durance, and bestowed upon each of them a sum of money; and, for
the

the use of the ship's crew I was taken in, I left a considerable sum in the hands of Mr. Pofflethwaite, an English merchant residing at Dunkirk, with a desire that he would issue it out to them as he thought in his discretion they needed it. Dunkirk is not more formidable at present to this nation, by its situation and the works that have been carried on there, than as it is the receptacle and asylum of all the outlaws, bankrupts, and smugglers, almost, that are forced to leave their native country for fear of punishment for their crimes and frauds; the latter particularly, who are constantly employed, in defiance of our laws, in making trips over to England with uncustomed goods, are of the greatest service to the French, by the early intelligence they give their merchants of the men of war and privateers that sail from our ports, with their destination, by which they are able to steer such courses as they may avoid the danger of being made prize of; so that no set of people meet with more countenance here, or are more encouraged by the governors of all their sea-port towns.

I hired a proper conveyance, and set out by way of Graveline to Calais, and from thence took passage in the coach for Paris. Our company consisted of three or four French officers and a Dominican, who was going to that metropolis, having procured a chaplainship to a person of distinction there. Nothing could be more entertaining than this company, and the usual politeness of the French nation made our journey infinitely agreeable. At Amiens one of our companions left us, whose place was supplied by an English gentleman, who seemed in person and temper formed to please. It is natural for one to be very curious in knowing the affairs that detain our countrymen in France at this time; and in a free and genteel way he informed us, that he had been captain of the Spy, an English sloop of war, which was, in pursuing a French privateer too eagerly, run on shore upon the coast of France; where, after losing their vessel, they were obliged to seek for shelter in their long-boat, and were made prisoners of war; that his crew had been, with himself, exchanged, but having contracted a friendship with the

Sieur du Pleffis, captain of the *Amiable*, a French ship of war, he had accorded to an invitation he made him to pay him a visit at Paris. The rest of this gentleman's discourse gave me a very high idea of his good-sense; and there was somewhat so sweet seemingly in his disposition, that one could not avoid loving him. At Beauvais, (for we took that road) this gentleman called me on one side, and, begging my pardon, desired I would with patience and candour hear him make a request to me, which, from his knowledge of his countrymen's generosity, and from some things he had heard me advance in discourse, he had great hopes I would freely grant him. 'In short, Sir, I am unhappy enough to have been robbed between Calais and Amiens, by two Irish soldiers, of all I had about me, and I cannot promise myself to receive money for some weeks, even when I come to Paris. At present I have only one livre about me, and am unable to pay my reckoning and coach-hire; but, if you can have so much confidence in me as to lend me a few livres, you may depend upon it I will most faithfully repay you again.' I took him by the hand, and told him he obliged me by his request; and, feeling in my purse, drew forth half the contents, and put it into his hands, amounting to some louis d'ors. He stood silent for some time, and then advancing, caught me eagerly in his arms, and could not find words to express his acknowledgments; at length he cried, 'Would to God, Sir, I may merit your friendship; for I already feel I shall be unhappy, if I am not esteemed by you; and, perhaps, Sir, you may one time or other think it no disgrace to be known by Sharp-ley.'—'Sharp-ley!' I replied, with a remarkable alteration of voice and countenance, 'it cannot be: pray, dear Sir, what countryman are you? If of Yorkshire, as my heart seems to tell me, I shall count myself happy.'—'I am, Sir; I am of that county,' he rejoined, with precipitation; 'but, dear Sir, are you acquainted with that name and family?'—'I am not only acquainted, Sir, but love them all as well as I do myself, and am surprized at my dulness that I could not discover my dear

‘ dear friend before! Come to my arms, and partake of all that is mine; for our ancient tie of friendship entitles you to it.—Is it possible you should not remember Thompson?’ — ‘ Thompson!’ he cried.—‘ What!’ — ‘ Yes—my dear Joe!’ — ‘ It is he himself, and that accounts for the impulses I felt in his favour!’ We embraced, and I believe no one ever was witness to so much mutual love and tenderness between two friends: we were never tired with gazing at each other; and this unexpected meeting in a foreign country, in such circumstances, gave a flow of pleasure and satisfaction that expression is too faint to describe. There was somewhat in Sharpley more like myself than in Archer; he was a more generous, open soul, his scene of life had been as much varied as my own, and he had all that native freedom and generosity in his breast and actions that cannot fail of raising love and esteem. We even wept on both sides, and quite forgot that we were going to Paris, had not the driver of the voiture awakened us from our transports, by telling us it was time to prepare for going. The rest of our journey was full of the increased pleasure arising from the company of such a friend, and we arrived safely at Paris, where Sharpley insisted on my accompanying him to the house of Monsieur du Plessis, where that gentleman, in the politest manner, begged us to make it our own whilst we staid. It was in the street of St. Honore; and himself and his family were such engaging people, that I thought myself quite happy in their society; and, as to Sharpley, he was treated by Du Plessis more like a brother than an acquaintance. He had received some wounds in an encounter with an English ship of war, and had obtained leave, for his bravery, to spend some months with his family in this city, where the best and greatest company daily resorted to see him. When we were a little settled, I called my friend on one side, and told him, as he expected no remittance from his agent for some time, I begged he would make free with my purse, and let us share it; that, as to my part, I was so situated, that I could have money enough of any banker in Paris, and therefore insisted upon it that he should deal with

it as his own, without reserve. He thanked me in the warmest manner, and we immediately shared what I had remaining about me, and began to live in common with that openness that distinguishes friends and gentlemen from the avaricious and penurious creatures, that only pretend to those sublime principles that we felt at the bottom of our hearts.

‘ Hail, holy friendship! that inspires the bosom with generous warmth and harmony! that tunes the soul to notes of highest concord, and compensates for all the ills of life! Born with this principle towards each other, this kind, this heavenly motion to mutual love, and soft benevolence, nothing but Passion’s fell, detested reign, and baneful vice in her malignant progress, can break the native tie that knits mankind together! A tie as necessary to societies as it is to individuals! It lessens loads of woe, with aching sympathy and tenderest compassion; and joy, which loves to be communicated, increases more and more, whenever it finds partakers in its transports. The wretch, all gloom, who has not, does not, feel thy influence, lives a most jealous, most suspicious creature: forlorn, he stalks about all comfortless, and knows he wants the friendly aid, the powerful assistance, to ward each fatal blow that threatens destruction to his peace and quiet! Oh! may I never live devoid of thee! Benign and lovely sweetener of my life, dear consolation to the troubled breast!’

When we found a proper opportunity, according to my friend’s earnest desire, I gave him an account of all the accidents that had befallen me since he first went to sea, at which he expressed the utmost surprize; and when I related the death of my Louisa, and my despair and distraction after that melancholy occurrence, he could not refrain tears, which plentifully trickled down his cheeks, and testified more than any thing the affection he bore me. He then gratified me with an account of his own adventures, which principally consisted of sea voyages, and affairs, and descriptions of such places in the several parts of the world as he had visited. He had wrote to his father since his being taken pri-

soner, but had received no answer; so that he was obliged to me for the latest accounts how affairs stood at home, at which he was very much pleased, particularly to hear that his father was well: he had not seen him since his first going to sea, nor had been in England but once, when he was fitted out for a cruize in the *Spy*, and they had then only an opportunity to receive one letter from each other. He had taken some prizes, which had turned to a good account, as his agent on Tower Hill had informed him; so that, exclusive of his pay, he was master of a comfortable sum of money; and had endured such a number of fatigues in the service, that, though he had an entire affection for his king and country's interest, he longed for nothing more than to retire into Yorkshire, and there enjoy some years of quiet; and for that purpose was resolved to return with me, after seeing what was worthy a curious observation in France. I was charmed to hear his inclination, and, embracing him, told him that his interest should be ever mine; and that, as to money, he never need want it, whilst I had any in my possession. He received this declaration with so visible an emotion, and so many acknowledgments, that I was obliged to insist upon ceasing the discourse, which with some difficulty I brought him to do; for Sharpley's seafaring life had not robbed him of his natural eloquence, and I found those rudiments of science, and those great and noble principles he had received from his worthy tutor and mine, were rather enforced and strengthened by the observations he had made, than weakened by a life of turmoil, noise, and hurry, accompanied with the usual dangers that fall to the lot of gentlemen of his profession; and, indeed, it is the misfortune of most of the officers of the navy, that they are sent very young to sea, before they have made that progress in learning that would polish and brighten their future conduct; and the fages of the sea may say what they will, but so early an initiation is no more necessary in that art than in the science of the army, where you ever find the finest and most polite gentlemen, and the smallest number of brutes. It was no wonder at all

that we did not immediately know one another; for Sharpley, when a lad, was thin and spare, and of a very fair complexion; but now he had increased in bulk greatly, though it had not taken away from, but rather added to his gentility, and was of a swarthy complexion, which, together with the difference a modish dress and a wig occasioned, very well might conceal him. I think I never saw a man, who looked more like a person of distinction and importance, and his very look and action bespoke the good opinion of all that beheld him. As to my part, I was grown very thin, and was of as black an hue as a Mullatto, from the intense heat of the climate I came from. I had also lost my hair, and wore a peruke, and the richness of my habit might, with all this, very much disguise young Yorkshire; and I had contracted such a careless way of wearing my apparel, in which I used to be remarkably neat, ever since the loss of my dear, my much-lamented Louisa, that I could not but seem a quite different creature, even to those who had seen me since Mr. Sharpley.

Mr. Du Pleffis was so kind, with Mons. De Bassompierre, his nephew, and some other French gentlemen, to carry us to all the publick diversions and places in Paris; the Theatre, the French and Italian Opera; and, by the favour of the Marquis of Houdaincourt, a particular friend of his, we had the honour to be introduced to his most Christian Majesty's presence, to see him dance at a ball, and dine, several times, with the royal family: we were also present when his majesty killed a wild boar, with his own hand, in the wood of Soignies. We visited Fontainebleau, Marli, and all the remarkable palaces of the nobility and gentry thereabout; and were also, once or twice, on a party of pleasure at St. Dennis, and other publick places of resort; nor could help admiring that sweetness and *politesse* that make the inhabitants of this country so very agreeable to foreigners. One object still remained, which I was resolved we would thoroughly feast our senses upon, before we left France, which was, the stately palace of Versailles, and its admired gardens and prospects; and, several of our new friends deter-

mining to accompany us there, we set out, in the marquis's coach, for that delightful place.

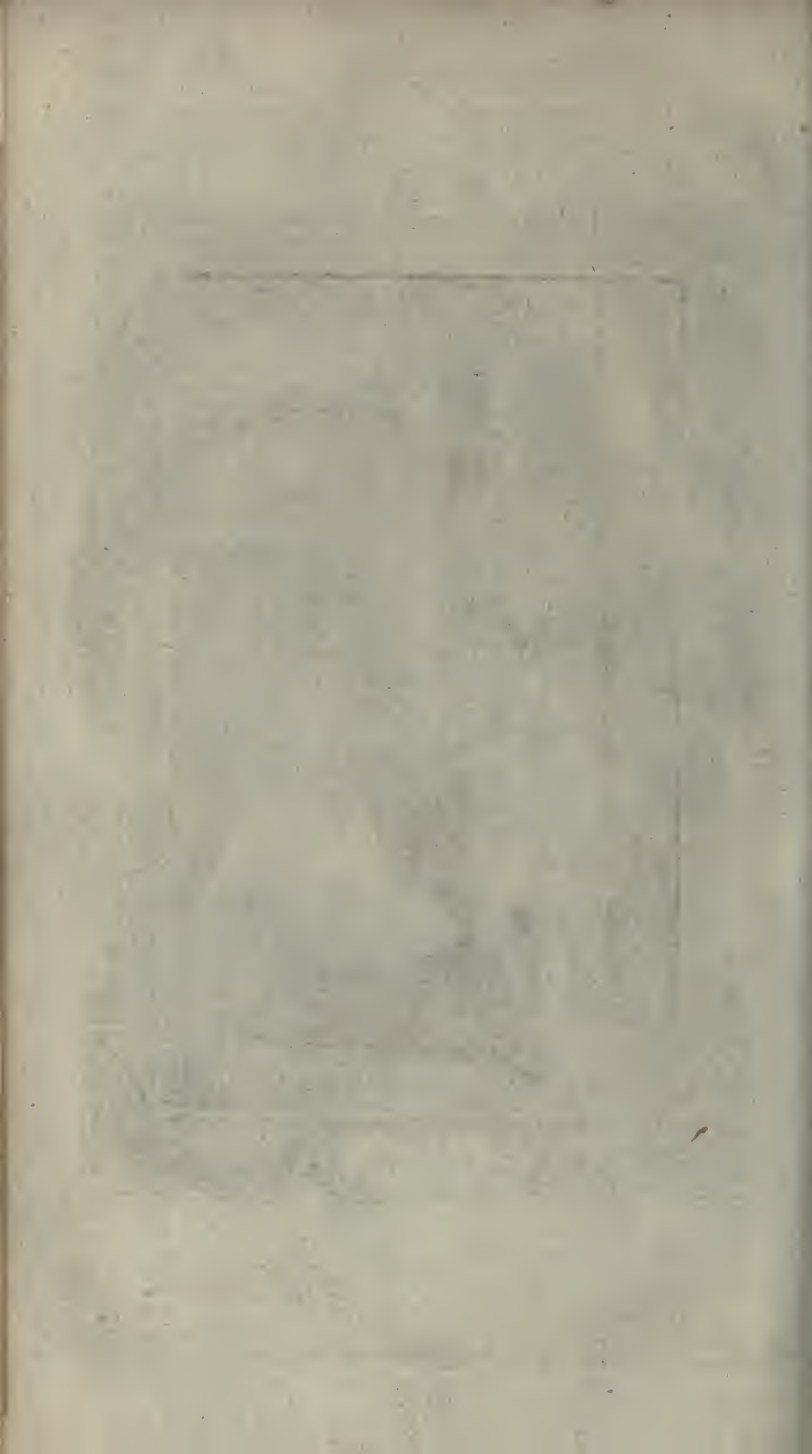
We were three or four days in viewing this magnificent palace; and were so lost in a field of wonders, that it was with regret we thought of leaving the charming spot. Sure nothing in the world can equal the beauties that every where around delight the eye, and exalt the mind! The superb apartments, decked with all that art and science can furnish; and the spacious gardens, in a thousand varieties, seem the favourite retreat of all the rural deities. Flora has here bestowed her choicest graces; and the Dryads sport in every labyrinth and grove of this immortal monument of the glory of Lewis XIV. who certainly went, amidst a thirst of empire, the only way to deserve the name of great, by becoming the patron of all the distinguished and learned in every profession; and, like Augustus, cherished those artists that were sure to make him live for ever. Here he laid, more than by his conquests, the foundation of an universal empire; and, if any thing contributes, some time or other, to give his country that distinction, it will proceed from their cultivating wisdom, discipline, and liberal arts; and, thereby procuring a respect, esteem, and veneration, from all nations, who now, in general, act by her maxims, speak her language, and imbibe all the politeness and gentility, so natural to her. In short, she sits supreme in literature; and gives her laws with so much amiable sweetness, that the whole world yields ready and willing homage.

We were taking our last view of this pride of France, when, walking through one of the alleys, we met two ladies, one of them masqued, who, at our approach, would have directed their steps another way; but, seeing them under some embarrassment, we would have retired; and I said to Sharpley, 'Let us, Sir, turn down the next walk;' when the masqued lady exclaimed, 'Good God! what do I see?' and fainted in the arms of her companion. The sweetness of the voice attracted all ears but mine, who had been deaf so long, and blind to all female perfection; so I kept on my way with Mr. Du Plessis, while Sharpley, the marquis, and Bassom-

piere, flew to the assistance of the ladies. The fainting fair-one had just come to herself, and handsomely returned thanks for their kind intentions; but seemed to cast her eyes on every side, as if to seek somewhat she wanted; and heaving a repining sigh, when she could not discover it. The other lady enforced her compliments, and would have withdrawn; but the marquis enquired of a footman, who attended them, if they had any convenience waiting to carry them home; which he answering in the negative, insisted upon their accepting his coach, and Sharpley offered his service to attend on them; which, after some denials, they, with seeming reluctance, accepted; and, ordering the coachman to drive to St. Clou, left them, full of admiration at their uncommon beauty. We went to Paris that evening, in a coach we borrowed of the Marchioness de Gesveres, where we found Mr. Sharpley had just arrived before us. He appeared so grave, and so much upon the reserve, that he was bantered by the whole company, who told him his civility to the unknown ladies had lost him his heart. He smiled, and made an evasive answer, which only confirmed us in the truth of our observation. When we went to rest, he made an excuse to visit me in my apartment, and then told me he feared he was a miserable creature, if he could not gain the attention of one of the ladies he had conveyed home to his addresses. 'My friend,' he cried, in rapture, 'never was so finished a piece in the creation, as this lovely creature! and the beauties of her mind far excel those of her person: besides, she is so inartfully merry and debonair, that she exactly suits my temper, and I cannot live without possessing her; lend me your assistance, dear Joey, and I'll be your slave the remainder of my life. The other is also a perfect beauty, but too melancholy and pensive for my disposition; and, if I judge rightly, has some great load of sorrow at her heart, by her frequent sighing, and the involuntary tears that trickled now and then adown her lovely face: in short, they are our countrywomen; the one the daughter, and the other the niece, to an elderly lady, that has resided some years in France.

'They





They keep little company, and have done me the honour to give me a general invitation to see them at their house at St. Clou, which is a large and spacious edifice; and they live, in all respects, like persons of the first quality. Oh! how happy should I be, could I obtain so dear a companion, to solace the future hours of my life! One thing surprized me, which was, that the melancholy one, who is the niece, enquired particularly after the names of the gentlemen she saw us with at Versailles; and, amongst the rest, asked who the gentleman in scarlet and gold was, who left the walk, with the old one, in complaisance to them; and I had no sooner told them you was our countryman, and that your name was Thompson, than she fainted away, and wept most piteously; and, in that condition, was borne off to bed; her cousin and aunt assuring me, they were accidents very frequent with her, and that she had been troubled with such fits from her infancy: however, the discourse was still continued; and my charmer particularly enquired, if you was married, and what part of the world you came from last. I satisfied their enquiries; and it is my opinion, (though I know it is what you neither like nor desire) that you have, at first sight, smitten the niece, in a manner that I should be rejoiced to melt her cousin to, after years of longing 'servitude.' I congratulated Sharp-ley on his good fortune, and promised him, if I could any way serve him in his amour, I would; and, after mutually embracing one another, we parted and went to bed.

C H A P. XXIV.

HARPLEY MAKES GREAT PROGRESS IN HIS AMOUR—RECOMMENDS A PAGE TO THOMPSON, AT THE REQUEST OF SERENA—HE SETS OUT FOR THE MARQUIS DE HOUDAINCOURT'S SEAT IN NORMANDY—THEY ARE ATTACKED BY BANDITTI—HIS LIFE SAVED BY HIS PAGE—THE STORY OF THE MARQUIS, AND THE BEAUTIFUL MARGUERITE

D'AULNAY—THEY RELEASE HER FROM HER CONFINEMENT—SHE IS MARRIED TO THE MARQUIS.

MY friend was now almost constantly at the feet of his mistress; and, though he could not prevail upon me to accompany him to her hotel, yet I heard, from time to time, from him, that he had reason to think himself a very happy man, and that Serena, that was the name of his beloved, made him all the returns that so faithful and tender a passion deserved. I should, had it been necessary to him, have made no difficulty of visiting that lady and her family, as they often had requested, by him, that I would; but the account he gave me before, of the sensibility of the niece, deterred me. I had too much honour to trifle with a lady in so important an affair as that which concerned, I presumed, the happiness of her future life; and my resolution was so honestly and firmly fixed, never to think of woman more, since the loss of my Louisa, that I would expose myself to no temptations from the fascinating sex. These reasons Sharp-ley could not help acknowledging were unanswerable, and ceased to press me any more on that head.

One day he told me he had a proposal to make to me, which he hoped, for his sake, I would not refuse him: I told him I could not conceive any thing could be asked of me, by him, that I should have the least pretence to refuse. 'Then I will tell you, my dear friend,' he replied; 'my Serena, to whom I have frequently, from the overflowings of my heart, given an account of our mutual friendship, and those excellent qualities you possess, has enquired if you had any faithful servant about you; and, upon my informing her, that neither you, nor myself, had any other than two we had hired since we came to Paris, who did not much suit our disposition, she told me she had the son of an unfortunate officer to provide for, and would take it as the kindest favour I could confer upon her, if I would endeavour to prevail on you to take him into your service as a page; and I hope, dear Joey, you will do me that favour; and, as the niece is out of town, that

‘that you will farther wait on Serena, and take him from her hand.’ I liked Mr. Sharpley’s proposal exceedingly well, as I had no one about me that I could confide in; and promised next morning to wait on Serena, and accept the youth from her. Sharpley was all joy at my condescension, and took care that I should not forget my appointment. We were received by that lady, who was extremely handsome, and her mother, with the utmost respect; and how I cannot tell, but I felt a pleasure in conversing with them that I thought I should never again feel in any female company. They seemed as natural to me as my own relations would have been; and, after talking over the merits and abilities of the youth I was going to take into my service, and promising the kindest usage, for her and her mother’s sake, he was called in, and appeared before us. The minute I cast my eye upon him, I was prejudiced in his favour. He had a certain sweet softness in his features and address, that was very taking; but what gave me still a stronger liking to him, was, that, allowing for the difference of sex, he was so exactly the picture of my poor Louisa, that the sight of him produced such agitations in me that I was almost ready to swoon; and I had reason to think he liked his master also, at first view, for, seeing me in such convulsions, he turned as pale as death, and his knees tottered under him. ‘Good God!’ I cried, ‘was ever so near a resemblance! Oh, Sharpley! it is the picture, the real image of my Louisa! which is so strongly and lastingly engraved in my heart.—Alas, Madam!’ I continued, turning to Serena, ‘you are going to give me eternal torment, by recommending to me this young gentleman, who will, every time I look upon him, put me in mind of the greatest loss a man could ever suffer.’ Sharpley, and the two ladies, could scarce refrain from tears, the rest of my speech was so moving; and as to Estampe, for that was the name of the young lad, he wept sincerely, which still added to my regard for him; and, notwithstanding the trouble it gave me to look on him, I resolved to carry him home with me, which I did accordingly.

I gave him some lessons, as to his conduct and future behaviour; and conceived so well of him, that I gave him immediate charge of all my papers, and every thing else that was valuable; suffered him to sit at table with me; and recommended him strongly to the care of Madame du Plessis, and her family, whilst I staid at Paris; and, in short, I grew so fond of him; that I could hardly bear him out of my sight. I appointed him an apartment to himself, as he professed an aversion to lying with his own sex, and did every thing that I thought would be agreeable to him. On his side, he shewed all the attachment to me I could wish for; he prevented all my wishes by his diligence; and when (for I concealed nothing from him) I used to lament my Louisa, he sympathized with me, in such a manner, that I was fearful, sometimes, it would hurt his health. He now and then waited on Serena and her mother, who returned me innumerable thanks for the favours I bestowed, every day, upon their Estampe, for so they used to call him; as they had, as they informed me, bred him up from a child. He was very cautious and sparing, when I desired an account of himself and his family; contenting himself with telling me, that his father was an officer in the Swiss Guards, who, dying, left him, a sister, and their mother, in great distress, having been an extravagant and expensive man; that Serena’s mother had bred them up, through charity, and given him those sentiments of generosity and gentility I had so much admired; that, as to his mother, she had been dead near a twelvemonth, having subsisted, to the hour of her death, on the bounty of the same good and benevolent family; and that he was in hopes he should be able to recommend himself so to my favour, that he should never want another friend. I assured him he never should, and that I esteemed him rather as a brother than a servant.

About this time the Marquis de Houdaincourt gave me an invitation to spend some weeks with him at a seat he had in Normandy, and engaged Du Plessis and Bassompierre to be of the party; and would have prevailed on Sharpley to go, but he was too deeply engaged

engaged with Serena to leave her company so soon. We set out for that province, which I was the more desirous of viewing, as it contained so many monuments of the bravery of our noble ancestors, who here, in thousands, lost their lives, to preserve possessions on the continent; which will always be detrimental to the nation. His house and estate lay near Elbeuf, in a pleasant country, watered by a branch of the Seine, and surrounded by other noblemen and gentlemen's estates and castles. We were received with peculiar distinction, and made daily visits to the cities and towns about it, gratifying our curiosity with every thing remarkable to be seen. The Normans are a brave, industrious, and honest people, who remember their former independency, and regret the loss of it; retaining, still, some customs and privileges that all the power of the court of France has not hitherto been able to deprive them of. In one of our excursions, when only the marquis, myself, and Estampe, were going to Caen, we were attacked by three banditti, at the edge of a forest we had just before passed through, who, without giving us the least notice, fired upon us, but without doing us any damage; save frightening our horses. Estampe trembled every joint, whilst the marquis and myself fired, each, one of our pistols on the robbers, and brought one of them down, who thus paid for his rashness with his life. The other two then fired upon us with their pistols again, the balls whistling by our ears without doing execution; and, our horses being pretty unruly, we dismounted, fired our other pistols, flung them at their heads, and attacked them sword in hand: the villains stood it well; but fortune had nearly given us the victory, and we found but a faint resistance, when another of the rogues, drawn by the noise of firing, rode up to the assistance of his comrades, and attacked me behind, and would have clove me down the skull before I was aware; when my page gave a loud shriek, and, advancing, fired one of his pistols at the new comer, which luckily sent a shot through his brain; and the others, seeing this, left their horses, and made a retreat into the thickest of the forest, where it was in vain for us to pursue them. Poor

Estampe lay on the ground, and I was beginning to bewail his fate, when he rose up and convinced us nothing but fear had cast him upon his face, after he had so readily opened me a deliverance, in the manner just recited. I did not expect much courage from such a youth, and without reproaching him for the want of what is merely mechanical, and to be acquired by long practice and custom, I thought I could not dispense with myself from shewing my gratitude by a multitude of caresses, and by making him a present of my purse, as an encouragement to him; and the marquis would have done the same; but how greatly were we surprised, when he said, 'Gentlemen, let me have the merit of having done some service to you and myself, without impeaching it by taking a reward for what was my duty and my own interest.' We put our money up, and I began to perceive all that nobility of heart in this youth, that would have adorned a more exalted station, which still more and more raised my love and esteem for him. We caught our horses, and, mounting, went to the destined place, and from thence by another way returned home safely. I cannot here help making some reflections upon what the world generally calls courage and bravery, which I believe in some few breasts to be constitutional, or flowing from a particular quality of the blood and juices; but, in most, from a mechanical acquired habit of reasoning themselves out of their fear, which may be said to be natural: thus, a certain great general would duck his head at the first discharge that was made on either side; but, recollecting himself, and standing two or three fires, his reason got the better of his apprehension, and he boldly plunged into blood and confusion. If courage is then a principle or virtue to be acquired, can we blame a person who is destitute of it, if he has not had such opportunities of learning it, as generally fall to the lot of a particular set of people; or, if the same noble juices warm not his heart, as distend our own to fortitude and valour? The country *lout*, at first, hears with terror the cannons roar, and the din of war; but use and custom soon conquer his natural aversion to those shocking scenes, and he rushes

into the battle with a thirst of glory, and joins coolly in the sack of towns, and the pillage of the poor inhabitants: but this let me insist upon, that even the unthinking common soldier and sailor, as well as the thinking officer, feel at first onset a palpitation of heart, which the continuance of the fight, and the example of each other, soon overcome. When we had been some time with the marquis, he one morning told us, that we should not depart without first doing him a piece of service, which he did not doubt of our assistance in, as it was to relieve oppressed and distressed innocence; and immediately accounted for his request in the following manner—

‘ It was about three years ago, that, at a publick assembly at Paris, I lost my heart to one of the finest young ladies of this province, who was then with her father, who came to that city to solicit for a post in the government here. She was tall, remarkably well shaped, and her skin like alabaster; her majestick aspect commanded respect, at the same time that her lovely eyes swam in heavenly moisture, and her good-natured behaviour encouraged the approach of her adorers, who were very numerous, and the beauties of her mind set off the graces of her person. I was so struck with her charms, that I learnt her father’s business at court, and, an opportunity serving, did him such effectual service with the minister of state, that he could not help returning me thanks, and inviting me to see him at his lodgings, which were in one of the best quarters of Paris. I knew little of him in Normandy, where the common report proclaimed him an avaricious, revengeful wretch, whose god was gain, and whose greatest happiness consisted in amassing riches. He had only this daughter Marguerite, and another named Bellimante, who was crooked, and otherwise deformed; but more so in her mind than in her body, which made her the aversion of every one that approached her: in short, she was the very reverse of her beautiful sister. D’Aulnay had married a second wife about twenty years younger than himself, who was an intriguing, artful lady, and was in hopes by her management to get

every penny at his death, which he was, through all the perils and dangers the Scripture warns us of, making himself master of by injustice, cruelty, and oppression. I soon got the entire affection of the lovely Marguerite, without it’s being perceived by any of the family; and we were quite happy in the prospect that D’Aulnay could not refuse his consent to my marrying his daughter, as my rank and fortune were far superior to his; but, unluckily for us, Madame D’Aulnay cast a favourable eye upon me, and, quite inflamed with lust, made a declaration in such terms to me, as called up all the blood in my cheeks. I was so surprized, that I was unprepared for an answer; but at length I recovered, and read her ladyship such a lesson of conjugal duty, that she vowed revenge, and was soon after too much in a capacity to execute it. I made a proposal of marriage to him between his daughter and myself; but Madame D’Aulnay had been beforehand with me, and represented to him, that I had made an attempt upon her honour, and desired him to forbid me the house; and therefore he received my proposal with cutting disdain, and never desired to see me more. I asked him the reason of his surprizing conduct; but he refused any; upon which I rose up, and in a great passion told him, which I own was imprudent, that I valued not a fortune, and, if his daughter would consent, would soon release her from his odious tyranny. His wife was soon informed of the affair, and now no longer doubted that I had refused her offer, in consideration of my love to her daughter-in-law; for bad and designing people cannot possibly apprehend, that any body can act virtuously but from a view of private interest, and think all the world as vile as themselves; she, therefore, got the custody of her daughter committed to her charge, and employed her sister as her deputy; under which management she underwent the most shocking mortifications and hardships, which were increased by her being guarded so strictly, that it was impossible for us to correspond together. I sought out by all the ways

I could

'I could to transmit a letter to her hands, but in vain; and at length she was carried to his castle, about three leagues from hence, where every servant is an Argus; notwithstanding which, I have yesterday, by disguising myself as a workman, a number being employed at present in making some repairs in his mansion-house, delivered a letter to her hands as she walked in the garden, by which I have appointed her to be ready to-morrow night at six o'clock in the park, where her mother permits her sometimes, with herself and her sister, to walk; when, with Heaven's help, and your kind assistance, I am resolved to take her from her tyrants, and make her mine, for which I have got a license ready.'

We consented to bear him company, and set out at the hour appointed, and had not been long at our station, well armed, before we saw the beautiful Marguerite appear, attended by her two tormentors, who shewed all the animosity in their behaviour to the poor lady, that could be; whilst she, conscious of approaching relief, had a countenance, in which joy seemed to seek shelter under the mask of sadness. When they came pretty near, the marquis went forth from our ambuscade; and, advancing towards his mistress, took her by the hand, and saluting her, was going to lead her off; when Madame D'Aulnay interposed, and asked him, what business he had with the lady. Upon which he retorted, 'A business that God and nature approve; not such a business as you, Madam, once proposed to me.' She swelled with malice and spite at this answer, and ordered Bellimante to go and alarm the family, that they might prevent a rape; but our friend led off a blooming maid, blushing like the rosy morn, and having put her into a chariot, that stood ready, without any pursuit or opposition, we carried her to his castle, where his sister and other ladies were assembled to receive her; and from thence we attended them to Evreux, where a priest tied the holy knot, and made them one in person, as they had been long in soul. The next day, he, attended by us, waited upon his father-in-law, who at first gave him but a cold reception; but when he declared he expected no fortune with her,

and that he only hoped he would do her justice at his death, he brightened up, and became so sociable, that he delivered all her wearing apparel; and promised, if they behaved dutifully to him, she should be treated by him like a daughter at his death.

C H A P. XXV.

THEY RETURN TO PARIS—A PROPOSAL OF MARRIAGE IS MADE TO HIM—ESTAMPE'S BEHAVIOUR THEREON—HE ASKS HIM A PARTICULAR FAVOUR—IS DENIED AFTER IMPORTUNING HIS MASTER TO GRANT IT—A TERRIBLE FIRE AT THE HOUSE OF DU PLESSIS—GOES TO SERENA'S AT HER DESIRE—SEES ESTAMPE'S SISTER—A MOST AFFECTING DISCOVERY—GREAT JOY OF SHARPLEY, AND THE FAMILY.

A Few days after the marquis's nuptials were celebrated, we took leave of that happy couple, who parted with us with reluctance, and returned to Paris; where, as soon as we arrived, I sent Estampe to find out Sharpley, and give him notice of it. He found him at Serena's, and he came; or rather flew, to my arms at the first summons, expressing all the joy his honest heart felt at seeing me again; and I, for my part, experienced as much joy in meeting that worthy man, as I did when he informed me, that Serena's mother had, at length, consented to gratify his and her daughter's inclination, in returning to her native country, and making these two tender lovers happy in each other; and therefore Sharpley very pressingly importuned me to make our stay in France as short as possible. I assured him I would soon resolve to set out for England; but, though I longed, yet I dreaded to set foot on that delightful shore. As sorrow increases by comparison with others felicity, the happiness I had been witness to in the marquis and his lady, and that I now perceived in my friend, recalled a number of sad and doleful ideas into my mind; and I gave myself over to all the pangs and tortures that despair indulged can inflict. In vain were the little arts my Estampe put in practice to cheer me;

I saw all nature happy, I thought; but myself, and in the irrecoverable loss of Louisa, I found all the affection that a human breast could feel, and Serena and her mother, desiring my company, at the same time, added to my unhappiness, by introducing me to the Countess D'Elbeuf, who had taken a liking to my person, and who desired them privately to let me know, that my addresses to her would be so agreeable, that, if I would marry her, she would settle the whole of her immense fortune on me and my heirs. She was young, handsome, and rich; and the two ladies used, or seemed to use, all their art to bring me to pay her a visit; which I obstinately, notwithstanding, refused, and sternly told them, if the subject was again insisted on, I must come to a resolution, never to see them more whilst they staid in France; and, Sharpley joining his intreaties to mine, I heard no more of the proposal from that quarter; but I found Estampe was set on continually to ring the countess's praises in my ears, and, in an insinuating way, to represent how hurtful my fruitless and unavailing tears were for the loss of my Louisa, and how much my repining was a sin against Heaven: that I was in the prime of life, and owed a duty to my friends and country, which I was by my resolution and manner of life attempting to destroy. He fell at my feet, and begged me to lay aside all thoughts of my unfortunate angel, and to embrace the enticing and glittering prospects that were yielded to my acceptance. I rose up in a fury, and cried out, pushing him rudely from me, 'And art thou so little acquainted with my temper, as to utter such words before me? Thou, who bearest the image of my adorable Louisa, and whom, in respect to that, I have made my companion and bosom friend—begone from my sight, and never see me more! No,' I continued, shedding a flood of tears, 'never shall the generous compact we made be broken, never will I forfeit my vows of eternal truth and constancy, which death and the grave have not the power to cancel: made before the awful Majesty of Heaven, in Heaven the sacred tie shall be affirmed, and my Louisa shall be mine for ever!

'This ring, the sacred pledge of my Louisa's love! This speaking picture, that almost truly smiles, and soft approves my constancy, shall ever hang upon this faithful breast, and, when the damps of death bedew my face, the last request, that e'er my faltering tongue shall make, will be, May these be buried with me! Methinks I see my radiant maid floating in purest fields of light! and she gives a plaudit to my constancy. Oh! if I e'er could meet a fair-one, that confessed thy wondrous matchless charms; that shewed a mind, so excellent and so endowed with every ornament and every grace; it would then be some excuse to be unfaithful—but that's impossible, as 'tis impossible to bring thee back to life—No—second marriages are my aversion. I sure was married once—and other joys shall never reach me more!' The poor boy stood trembling during all these exclamations, and the tears even wetted the place he was in; though I thought I perceived a kind of satisfaction in his eyes, at the same time, that was unaccountable to me. He knelt, and embracing my knees, asked me pardon for his rashness, which proceeded purely from his affliction for me, and through hopes of seeing me cured of a grief that hung upon me so heavily; 'But, Sir,' he went on, 'I'll never tempt your indignation so far as I have done, the remembrance of which makes me tremble; and will ever be a faithful monitor to you of all my poor lady's perfections,' (for so I had instructed him to call her) 'of which you have given me such transporting accounts.' I raised him, and told him, I forgave him now; but if the dearest friend I had in the world were to set about moving my unalterable resolution of living and dying for ever my Louisa's, or encouraged such discourse and such proposals, I never would see him or speak to him again. Estampe turned up his eyes to Heaven, in wondering astonishment; and his heart was so full, that he was obliged to quit the room to ease the burden of his sympathizing bosom. I declare, after this, I had not so much regard to Serena and her mother, as I had before; nor could bear to go to the house, for which I framed

framed such excuses, as made it neither look like want of affection to my friend, or disrespect to them.

One day, as I was fondly contemplating the features of my Louisa, in the faithful picture that had been my constant companion through all my difficulties and dangers, Estampe told me, that his sister was so nearly like that portrait, that he was very sure I could not tell the difference between his lady and her, if I was to see her. This led me to ask a number of questions, about her, and to enquire, how it came she had never yet been to see him since his being in my service. He answered me, that she had, by the recommendation of Serena, been introduced to the Duchesse de Chartres, and that she had taken such a fancy to her, as to admit her at first to attend about her person, and that since, her affection increasing by a view of her good qualities, she had made her her companion and confidant, and was so fond of her, that it was seldom she could suffer her out of her sight; and that she very rarely visited even Serena, or her mother; where he had had an opportunity twice of seeing her, since he had the honour of being with me; but that, by appointment with those ladies, she was to wait upon them in a day or two, and he wished I would suffer him to enquire the particular time of her coming, and make myself an accidental guest to satisfy myself, that what he had said of her resemblance to his lady was just. 'Indeed, Sir, I won't compliment her,' he continued, 'but she is so near a copy of that excellence you weep the loss of, that I don't doubt but the sight of her will give you pleasure, and perhaps may contribute to chase away, for some moments, the chagrin and despair that perpetually haunt your mind.'

I was pleased to see the zeal of this worthy lad, who was continually proposing somewhat or other to divert my attention from the subject of my sorrows; but this visit I absolutely refused to comply with, telling him, I suffered mortification enough in daily seeing his features, which had so near a resemblance of Louisa, and that I could not, I was sure, be able to support myself in seeing before me so living a picture of the woman I loved, which would, no doubt, rob me of my senses

entirely, and drive me to distraction. He urged me, notwithstanding, again and again, with such earnestness, that he surprized me, and even begged upon his knees, that I would gratify him by seeing his sister, and was sure it would be productive of more good to me than I could possibly be aware of. I took him up very short, and told him, his talking in that manner to me was such a riddle, that I could not understand it, and threatened him, that if I ever found him capable of carrying on, or supposing he could execute any cunning scheme upon me, that was prejudicial to my honour and the resolutions I had taken, I was certain I should very difficultly refrain from using him as he deserved, and turning him out of my service. 'Look ye,' I added, 'when once a servant thinks he can be too cunning for his master, he never stops at small crimes, but carries his designs on till they end in his own detriment and ruin; and therefore, to preserve my good opinion, I must never know you capable of any thing of the sort, even where you should think it was for my peace, quiet, or interest.' Poor Estampe was grievously shocked at what I said, and was going to reply, when Sharpley came in, and brought his Serena with him to pay me a visit. I received them with my usual gladness; and, after some other matters talked over, Serena told me, that she had a great favour to beg of me, which was, that I would come and dine with them the next day; to which I gave my assent, on condition there was no other company than themselves and her mother; she freely owned there would be an English lady there, that she wanted to introduce to my knowledge and acquaintance, who had met with as great misfortunes in love as myself, and had come to the same resolution never to think of marriage again. 'Indeed, Mr. Thompson,' she added, 'you will find her far from being a disagreeable lady; nor will she force you, like our tittle-tattle sex, to talk more than you care for: come, my dear friend's friend,' clapping one of her pretty hands upon my shoulder, 'you shall not refuse me this favour, which, I assure you, shall be the only one of the kind I will ever ask again till you give me leave.' I

could

could not long resist this agreeable creature, and the joint endeavours of my friend, who enforced what his Serena said, as much as he possibly could. When they departed, Estampe told me, he was glad they had got my promise to go, as he was sure it would divert my melancholy; for latterly I had seen no company at all: 'And, Sir,' says he, ' (but I am afraid to mention it again) ' that English lady, Miss Serena mentioned, is the very sister I spoke of to ' you, to whom they jocosely give ' that title, and who has been as 'unfortunate as yourself.' I started at this, but it was too late to go back, though it put me out of humour; for I thought I saw the heads of a contrivance in it, that I could not fathom. My visit had like to have been baulked, however, the same night, by a dreadful fire that broke out at the house of Du Plessis, and raged in a terrible manner; and the city of Paris not being provided with so convenient aqueducts as we have in London, it did a great deal of damage before it was extinguished. My concerns were of so small a bulk, that they were soon removed; but poor Du Plessis suffered greatly, which infinitely concerned both Sharpley and me, who resolved in some measure to assist to recover his loss. It began between eleven and twelve at night; we were all in bed, and myself in a most profound sleep, when the flames had taken hold of the very stair-case that led to my apartment, that of Estampe and some others. The first news I had of the danger was from that page, who ran trembling to my bed-side, and begged me, for Heaven's sake, to awake and arise, or I should be burnt in my bed: he had had time to dress himself, and soon secured what belonged to us; but, by that time I had slipped on my cloaths, the flames had seized the chamber-door, so that we were forced to tie the sheets together, and it being but one story from the ground, though a pretty lofty one, I ordered Estampe first to descend, which he refused to do; so, not to waste time in dispute, I got down safely first, and he as safely followed me. The family of Du Plessis, and myself, and servants, were invited by Count Garonne, whose house was opposite, to make use of the conveniences it afforded us till we could better pro-

vide ourselves; which we did accordingly, for it was impossible to refuse so polite an invitation: as to Mr. Sharpley, he had left Du Plessis, and had taken lodgings hard by St. Clou, where he could be nearer his Serena; so that he suffered nothing by the misfortune, nor heard of it till next morning, when he came to condole with us on the accident, and was quite delighted to hear that not one person was hurt, but that we all escaped the flames without the least detriment. Poor Estampe, as he was attending me whilst I dressed, said, 'Now, Sir, this puts me in mind ' of the service you was of to my poor ' lady, when you saved her from the ' fire at her father's; and, though I ' barely resemble her, yet I have had ' the happiness in her person, as you ' are pleased sometimes to call it, to ' retaliate the kindness you did her.' I sighed, and told him, I would never forget the office of love he had performed, which still increased his value in my opinion.

When we were dressed, I walked to St. Clou alone, for Estampe had begged to be excused going with me, the last night's surprize having so affected him, that he was greatly disordered in his head. I was received by my three friends, with the gladdest testimonies of affection; and, before dinner, we entertained ourselves in the garden, and in a library, full of the best and politest authors, which gave me an high opinion of the refined taste of these ladies, and their good sense; and, in short, every action of Serena's made me approve my friend's choice.

Dinner being ready, we went into a summer-house, where the table was spread in an elegant manner, and the mother and daughter both excused the lady's not coming, they had mentioned; who had sent word, she could not make one of the company till after dinner, when she would be sure to attend us. I could not help perceiving, by the looks of Madame Rich, that somewhat more than ordinary was in agitation; and when dinner was over, and they withdrawn for some moments, I told Mr. Sharpley so, who said, that he had made the same observation, but was totally ignorant of the meaning of it. They came in again, and seating themselves, in about a quarter of an hour afterwards, word

was brought, that a coach had stopped at the gate; on which advice the old lady got up, and went to receive her guest, as she supposed it to be, and soon returned with her. As she entered the room and saluted the company, I, though I hardly encountered her with my eyes, perceived she was prodigiously genteel, and of a middle stature. She complained of being troubled with the tooth-ache, and, on that account, held an handkerchief to her face, which concealed the lower part from view; but, by what I saw of her, upon a closer attention, she was a very charming woman, and recalled much of my Louisa already into my mind. We sat some time talking of indifferent matters; but the lady suddenly dropping her fan, and I sitting opposite to her, ran to take it up, and, presenting it to her, looked full in her face: but, oh! angels, and all the blessed host of heaven! Had an apoplexy darted through my brain; had a thunderbolt, red from the flashing sky, transfixed me; had, instant, the last day been proclaimed, and the graves given up their dead in my sight, my affright and terror had been not much more—

‘ A sudden horror seiz’d my giddy head,
‘ And my ears tingled, and my colour fled:
‘ Nature was in alarm.’——

To my sight was revealed the form, all beauteous as it was, of the dead Louisa; who, smiling, took the fan, and bowed her head. I fell, and, uttering a hollow groan, lost all my senses at once in a swoon! It was, I afterwards found, a long time before I came at all to myself; and, when I did, my words were so incoherent and disjointed, that it was feared I had totally lost my understanding; and I was put to bed in a high fever, raving, and calling upon my Louisa! dear, lovely Louisa! whom still my eyes perceived, shedding tears by my bed-side; when I exclaimed, ‘ Oh! mockery of woe! whence, oh! am I thus tortured, thus abused; with images and fancies of what is not in being?’ The lovely phantom, inclining her cheek to mine, and wetting it with kindly dew, cried out, ‘ My dear, my long-lost dear! how I accuse myself for rashly putting you into this strange delirium, by presenting your Louisa before you, in so unguarded a manner?

‘ But yet, behold it is she, it is she herself, preserved yet to be happy with her Thompson, her dear lamented Thompson, whose death she long has mourned, with sighs and tears of bitter, cruel anguish. See that I tell the truth;’ and, softly laying her balmy lips to mine, said, ‘ Don’t you know Estampe in your Louisa?’ The touch reviving brought me to myself, though still wondering amazement made me gaze around, as if I doubted of my own existence; at length, I folded round the slender waist my longing arms, and snatched her to my bosom, imprinting kisses on her blushing cheeks, that glowed with warmth and love. ‘ This, this,’ I cried, ‘ repays my every pang, and all the numerous ills thy loss has caused me, thou excellentest and thou sweetest fair! whose death was death to me; for since I have not lived, but walked, and stalked about, forlorn, and most unhappy! Oh! gracious God! *our present joy makes our past miseries sport!* But where, or how, or when, wast thou preserved to bless my longing sight? It is all a miracle—it is wondering frenzy of fierce intensest love.’—‘ All, all, my Thompson,’ she replied, ‘ thou shalt know, and how, for many years deploring thy sad loss, I have lived obscure in this beloved place; beloved, since again it gives me you: but let us cease and calm our frantick souls; repose thyself whilst I retire and strive to be composed.’ I would not, could not, part with her; and she kindly consented to stay by my bed-side till I had tried so to come to myself, as to be able to rise, and be fit for conversation. I fell, at length, into a sweet slumber, that held me near an hour; and, waking, looked about earnestly for the charmer of my heart, whom I saw sitting beside me, and watching my return to reason—

‘ —fairer to be seen,
‘ Than the fair lilly on the flowery green;
‘ More fresh than May herself, in blossoms new.’——

Seeing me awake, she gently pressed my hand, and asked me, if I thought I could rise; which answering in the affirmative, she withdrew, and I arose, and went down into the parlour, where I found my charmer, and my other friends, who congratulated me on my happiness;

happiness; and Sharpley, clasping me in his arms, protested he wanted nothing to make him compleatly blessed; 'But pray, Madam,' says he, turning to Serena, 'how could you be so cruel to conceal this secret from me? Why might not I have had a share in this plot?'—'No, no, Sir,' replies the good old lady, 'we knew your attachment too well to your friend, to think it possible for you to conceal any thing from him, and therefore were resolved to keep it to ourselves.' He advanced to my Louisa, and, saluting her with great politeness, and that awe her presence always inspired, told her, had he known her before, he should have recommended Miss Rich, his countrywoman, to another place with his friend than that of a page. To which she replied, that she should always be delighted to serve her old master, in that capacity or any one else that would give him greater pleasure. I bowed, and told her, she should always command me, for I had been too long at my own hands, not to see that I wanted government. 'Well, niece,' says her aunt, 'you are now sure of your lover's constancy, which you was resolved to try to the utmost, and I believe he is not now sorry, that he has seen Estampe's sister.' The old lady, whose good-nature and good-sense I admired, and her amiable daughter, were never tired of caressing us both; and we past the remainder of the day in the utmost gladness and festivity: the servants had their share of the rejoicing for this good news; and, as to my part, if I have any idea of the future joys of Heaven, it flowed from the true and genuine satisfaction I enjoyed in my recovered angel's soft society, whose pleasure seemed, and was as great as mine. Decency requiring us to part, I went with Sharpley to his lodging, after taking leave of my soul's treasure, with the utmost reluctance.

C H A P. XXVI.

THE ADVENTURES OF MISS LOUISA RICH.

AS soon as the morning dawned, my friend and I arose; lovers like us were not much given to sleep;

we had enough of tenderness and boundless affection to employ us most part of the night, in conversation of our happiness; and the idea of being so nearly related to each other gave us a pleasure, that could only be felt by us, who understood and practised all the delicacies of friendship. We hugged one another, and mutually spoke congratulation to ourselves, and praises to our mistresses. For my part, I felt no such dulness and melancholy, as for so many hundred mornings afflicted my soul; but was all over the gay, easy, free Joe Thompson, that I had been before my misfortunes. 'Hence! hence!' I cried, 'all sadness, all despair, since my Louisa is again revived, and shall at last be mine!'

We found the ladies were not risen when we waited upon them, and went into the garden to recreate ourselves till they came down to us, which they soon did; and, all around them—

'Spread fragrant odours, spread ambrosial sweets!'

We breakfasted, amidst all the felicitous raptures their presence inspired; and, then, to encourage my Louisa to relate her miraculous (for so I could not help calling it) escape from England, and the jaws of death, I told all that had befallen me since the moment, the fatal moment of our separation, till the present happy hour. They all lifted up their eyes at the vile actions of the squire, on whom they could not help calling down punishment for his crimes. My amiable maid now reddened, now turned pale, at the various misfortunes that had befallen me, and often was ready to sink at the narration of the grievous ills I had suffered; and the story of my grief and perpetual despair for her loss drew tears from all my four auditors, who sweetly, gently sympathized in my woes. The presence of the dear creature, who was the principal cause of all, gave me so much spirits in my relation, that I seemed inspired, and painted all I said so strongly, that I myself even wept at the doleful tale. 'And now,' I cried, as soon as I had concluded, 'thou joy of my heart,

heart, oblige me with thy adventures, which I think must have been as extraordinary as my own; and let me know how you resolved to counterfeit death, and the motives for all your proceedings since.' Blushing, she began, and thus recounted what I had desired—

'I hope I shall be excused, when I say that it is impossible for me to describe so touchingly what I have undergone, as my dear Thompson has; for women, though, perhaps, their souls are softer far than men's, have not so much the power of eloquence and nervous fire, to shine in descriptive tale. They feel most sensibly, but cannot relate the motions of their breasts so well; not used to misfortune, not expecting it, it hurries their spirits to such a degree when it comes upon them, that they lose the power of expression in the fulness of their minds. Much more now, then, I am worthy of excuse, when I can hardly call what I have suffered, ills at this moment, when the presence of that gentleman has so rejoiced my heart, that, whilst I look on him, I forget, in extremity of satisfaction, every torturing incident of the many years I have mourned.

'No one, sure, can imagine the grief it occasioned me to lose my faithful and trusty Fidele, in the manner I so suddenly did; but my pain was still increased, when my father came into my chamber foaming with rage, and after the most irritating language that he could use, in which he hardly kept his hands from executing the punishment he said I deserved, for my disobedience and silly love, as he called it; he locked me in, took the key in his pocket, and told me, at his departure, he would remove me far from the wretch I had chosen to place my affection upon; and, accordingly, some time afterwards, having armed his servants, and ordered a coach and six to the gate, I was carried, or rather dragged into it, by himself and the villain my cousin, having had but just time to get one of the servants that loved me, and had been obliged to me for preserving him in his place, to carry you the little note you have men-

tioned in your story. This I wrote to prevent those sallies of passion that I knew would assault you, when you could not learn what was become of me, and to make you easy as to the continuance of my affection. I knew not, but by some words my cousin had dropped unawares to my father, in my presence, where I was going to be hurried: there was no one in the coach but myself, and I was senseless to every thing but the distracted ideas that oppressed my brain, whilst it was drove at a prodigious rate, lest you should get notice of the way we had taken, and pursue us; for my father often said to the squire, "The dog is brave, and he, and young Diaper his friend, would stick at nothing to serve each other; and, as I don't care for murder, let us keep our rout as secret as possible; for they will be so desperate, that we must sacrifice them, if they offer to follow us." The squire recollecting, when we had got some miles, that somewhat or other was forgot in the hurry, was sent back with two servants; for he refused to go alone, as I afterwards heard, for fear of meeting you, and for which I heard Sir Walter call him a sniveling, pitiful dog; so that I continued under my father's convoy, and hoped, when we came to the stage we were to bait at, that I should be able to soften and mollify his temper in the absence of that incendiary, the bane to all my happiness. We put up, late at night, at a large inn in a noted town, where we found pretty good accommodations; and when supper was brought in, and we had eat what we had an inclination to, my father called for tobacco; and, in a surly way, told me I must give him my company, and must not go to bed till he did. I informed him, as tenderly as I could, that his company was more desirable than any other, and my behaviour might inform him, that I never was better pleased than when he did me the honour to bestow it upon me. "Sayest thou so, Lucy?" he replied, "give me a buss for that speech: I could forgive every thing, if you would forget your linen-draper, and agree to my sentiments."

“ments.” I ran to him, threw my arms round his neck, and, with tears in my eyes, told him, I must own I perceived so many good qualities in Mr. Thompson, that I could not help being moved by them—“But, dear papa, what need is there of any restraint upon me? My sincerity is justified by my not concealing my affection to him from you; and I promised you, (and, you know, Sir, promises are sacred with your little Lucy) that I would never think of him any otherwise than as a friend and acquaintance, unless you gave your consent to it.—Why, then, Sir, must I be hurried from you, at such a distance from my dear father, whose only solace and comfort I used to be, merely for liking a man he has himself so much esteemed, and introduced to my favour and acquaintance? Have you not, dearest Sir, said yourself, he was the only man you should like for me if he had a fortune sufficient, and that you wished he was a son of yours, and one of better birth?—Ah, Sir! his descent is known to you to be almost equal to your own; but, setting that aside, and supposing him to be beneath my choice in birth, yet let me repeat some lines to you, you have often desired me to read, and applauded—

“—Search we the secret springs,
“And backward trace the principles of things;
“There shall we find, that, when the world began,
“One common mass compos’d the mould of man;
“One paste of flesh on all degrees bestow’d,
“And kneaded up alike with moist’ning blood.
“The same Almighty Pow’r inspir’d the frame
“With kindled life, and form’d the souls the same;
“The faculties of intellect and will,
“Dispens’d with equal hand, dispos’d with equal skill,
“Like liberty indulg’d with choice of good or ill:
“Thus born alike, from virtue first began
“The difference that distinguish’d man from man:
“He claim’d no title from descent of blood,
“But that which made him noble, made him good;”

“Warm’d with more particles of heavenly flame,
“He wing’d his upward flight, and soar’d to fame;
“The rest remain’d below, a tribe without a name.”

“Then, dear papa, tell how I have offended you in being of the same sentiments with yourself, and acknowledging that merit which you first taught me to see and admire: beside, Sir, you say, or always have said, that an ungrateful person is a monster. Oh! how often—you can tell—the generous youth has saved my life when in the utmost peril! And can I, Sir! can I, my father! be insensible of the favour of that being he has preserved to me!” My father wiped his eyes; and, after some pause, broke out thus, “G—d z—ds! and so I have brought you up to know more than the father that begot thee!—What doest tell me of a new-fangled tale, of this and that, that I nor any body else can understand the meaning of, of merit and gratitude, and the rest, at this time? Yes, I have told thee it was good to be grateful; but did I ever think thou wouldst plead his own words against thy father? I respect old Thompson and his wife well enough, and did like the boy, I must own, till he manifested a design upon my daughter. You know I intended you from your birth for your cousin, and ha’ him you shall. G—d’s blood! doest thou think so many thousand a year was ever intended for a parson’s son, and a London tradesman? No, no! if he had offered to court your maid, I’d given my consent, and somewhat beside, mayhap; though I wish that numps knew as much as he, too, it would be better for him; and you know Joe is an heretick, and of an heretick family: but, however, to be sure he is as good as us, no doubt. I don’t believe he’ll be damned neither; and the dog tosses off his bottle as well as any man.” Here I interrupted him—“Papa, if he has not a great fortune now, with your assistance he may have one; and a man that can improve an estate like him, is a far better match than one that has

“has not wit enough to keep what he has.”—“Huffy, hold your tongue,” he replied, “my resolution is fixed; you shall have your cousin, or no body. Z—ds! if I had had sense enough, I should have cut off your paramour’s ears; but those he keeps to lose in the pillory, for lies spoken behind his compter!” I said no more, after this odd, incoherent harangue; and he fell asleep, and snored so loud, that an house-dog, who laid under the table, suddenly made at him, and bit him by the heel; at which he waked, and, looking about, saw me sitting weeping, and asked me what ailed me. “Indeed, Sir,” I replied, “I am not used to sit up these hours, and it frightens me, for fear either my dear father, or myself, should get sick upon it.”—“Thou art a good girl, faith; and I ask thee pardon,” he said; and ringing for the hostess, who had sat up merely through complaisance, ordered her to shew me to bed, and went immediately after to bed himself. I was in hopes what I had said would have altered his way of thinking; for I added a great deal more than I can at present remember: and, indeed, the next morning at breakfast, he behaved with so much affection, that my thoughts, I imagined, had proved true; but, just after we had sat down, my cousin came in, and glancing a malicious look at me, in which joy was very visible, (that is, not the pure joy that animates an honest face upon any happy incident, but such a malign kind of satisfaction that the bad part of the world experience, when they have served a particular turn of their own, and which is distinguished from the other by their very countenances) called my father aside, at which time I suppose he related his rencounter with you, which you have so mournfully, and, to me, painfully described; for the old gentleman returned, with new fury painted in his visage, and, without saying a word to me, ordered the horses into the coach; into which entering, we pursued our journey, and in three days more arrived at this lady’s, at the Grange in Somersetshire. My aunt, who has a fine estate there, had been often, in my dear mother’s time, at our house,

and her amiable daughter, my dear Serena, was partly brought up with me under my mother’s care. I need not describe them, the sequel of my story will inform you of their noble and generous turn of mind; and, as to their persons, it would be vanity and impertinence in me to attempt to draw their pictures. My father apprehended that my aunt would have immediately fallen into his sentiments; and, indeed, she was much prejudiced against me when she first heard his story, and agreed to a vote he put, that I should be confined to my chamber till my temper was altered: but how surprized was the dear good woman, when she, attempting to call me to account for my folly, heard the real truth of the affair, and that Mr. Thompson was not a vagabond, a rascal, a designing villain, but a gentleman in every respect formed to gratify the taste of a woman of good-sense and virtue! At another time she may tell you, no doubt, in what a spirited and affectionate manner I talked of you: it would not become me at present to repeat all I said in your praise, and on your behalf; let it suffice, that, with this young lady’s assistance, I melted her so, that, the next morning, she persuaded my father to let me be at large under her inspection, for that she would answer for my conduct. I was pestered all this while with the nauseous visits of the squire, who, in his awkward way, addressed me, and bespoke my goodwill: but I returned him no other answer than silence gave; and once, when he particularly teased and pestered me, I told him I would sooner pierce my heart with a dagger, than ever think of marrying such a monster of revenge and cruelty. He left me abruptly upon this, and forbore his visits for some days; he and my father being, at that time, at Sir William Careless’s, a seat about two miles from that of my aunt; and in this interval, a servant I could depend upon being sent about some business in Yorkshire, I put into his custody a letter for you, which I am glad to hear you safely received.—Ah, Mr. Thompson! my fears at this time were much greater on your account than my own; I knew your

' sanguine resolute temper, and was
 ' shocked at the thought of the desper-
 ' ration my loss would occasion in
 ' you, in your noble spirit, which can
 ' never submit to an injury with that
 ' moderation, that, perhaps, is as com-
 ' mendable as necessary; and I framed
 ' that letter on purpose to calm the tu-
 ' mults of your soul. Mean time I
 ' underwent all that the foolish offici-
 ' ousness of my father, the hateful
 ' addresses of the squire, and my own
 ' gloomy ideas, could inflict. Let me
 ' own my love to you was as intense
 ' as it was pure and holy: I lamented
 ' your absence, and the distance
 ' that divided us, and ruminated upon
 ' the accidents that might prove fatal
 ' to our loves, with such perpetual
 ' sighings and tears, such frantick
 ' sorrow, that my aunt and cousin,
 ' nay, even my father, was alarmed
 ' lest I should throw myself into a fe-
 ' ver; and the villain, our persecutor,
 ' was forbid for some time to approach
 ' me. By this time these two ladies
 ' had entertained such a love and
 ' esteem for me, which all my life will
 ' never be able to make them amends
 ' for, that they sincerely resolved to
 ' befriend me in all my desires, and,
 ' if possible, to ease me of the perse-
 ' cutions that surrounded me: they
 ' talked all they could suggest to my
 ' father, but found him as firm and
 ' steady as a rock in his purposes,
 ' that I should renounce you for ever,
 ' and wed the squire. "I did pro-
 ' mise," said he, "never to force her
 ' inclinations, provided she would
 ' not correspond, or have any thing
 ' more to say to young Thompson;
 ' but she broke through her contract,
 ' and I have now a discharge for every
 ' thing I attempt to make her happy,
 ' even against her will: nor shall she
 ' much longer dally with me, if I
 ' drag her to church, and give her
 ' hand into my nephew's by force."
 ' These ladies, as well as myself,
 ' knew the resolute obstinate temper
 ' of my father; and his behaviour so
 ' irritated me, that, though I had pro-
 ' mised never to marry without his
 ' consent, yet I believe, had you been
 ' upon the spot, I should have made
 ' my escape to you, or done any thing
 ' to be freed from his tyranny. A-
 ' mongst the great number of visitors
 ' that resorted to see my aunt, was
 ' Colonel Williams, a gentleman of
 ' a very large estate, who at first sight
 ' expressed a very great value for me,
 ' and asked leave of her to pay his
 ' addresses to me. He was as polite
 ' and generous as he was rich; and,
 ' when my aunt told him of my pre-
 ' engagement, he desisted; but when
 ' she informed him also of the hard-
 ' ships I laboured under on account of
 ' the squire, whom by this time all
 ' the gentry in the neighbourhood
 ' esteemed a very booby, he proposed,
 ' with my leave, to appear publicly
 ' as his rival, that, by producing some
 ' act of villainy and baseness from
 ' him, my father might be forced to
 ' alter his purposes. I consented—he
 ' made parties of pleasure for us—
 ' professed himself my admirer, and
 ' went so far as to ask my father's con-
 ' sent to marry me; which, though
 ' he genteelly declined, yet his vanity
 ' was too much humoured in seeing
 ' his daughter the toast of the county,
 ' to forbid his visits, and my aunt put
 ' on an air of satisfaction at what he
 ' did. The squire, who was soon ap-
 ' prized of this potent rival, complain-
 ' ed of it to my father, and of the en-
 ' couragement he had received; but
 ' he gave him this answer—"Z—nds!
 ' why if thou hast not spirit enough
 ' to defend thy claim against all the
 ' world, thou art not worthy of her."
 ' He took this so much in dudgeon,
 ' that he came to my aunt's, where he
 ' found the colonel and myself playing
 ' a game at picquet, whilst my cousin
 ' was looking on, in a summer-house
 ' in the garden: as soon as he came in,
 ' he sat down without saying a word,
 ' or pulling his hat off; upon which,
 ' the colonel, laughing, said, "La-
 ' dies, I have so much veneration for
 ' your sex, that I think a man who
 ' has assurance enough to come into
 ' your presence without taking off
 ' his hat, ought to have it nailed to
 ' his head, as the Czar of Muscovy
 ' once did that of a certain ambassa-
 ' dor."—"By G—d!" returns the
 ' squire, "you can't nail it there."—
 ' Not in the presence of these ladies,"
 ' he rejoined; "but if you are very
 ' impertinent, I'll take you out and
 ' correct you for it." The natural
 ' cowardice of this villain made him
 ' preserve silence some minutes; but
 ' at length he broke out, "Sir, what
 ' business

"business have you with that lady?" — "No other at present," says the colonel, "than to protect her from your rudeness and brutality; and so, pray, Sir, don't watch our actions, but be gone directly, or I shall be forced to use you as you deserve!" He did not stir, and the colonel, still laughing, got up, and gave him three or four strokes over the shoulder with a hazel-twig, and hauled him out of the summer-house by the collar; and the great oaf, with his long sword by his side, stole away into the house to our inexpressible diversion. To go farther yet, the colonel paid a visit to my father at Sir William's, to complain in form of his rudeness, and to tell him that he would use him just so, whenever he was impertinent again in any place he chose to be in. My father at first was very angry with the colonel, but soon came into a better temper, and cried, "Ay, do, colonel; I wish you could raise his passion so much as to get him to fight: well, he's a worthy lad, too; but we were not all born with courage." My aunt and cousin rallied him so far for his cowardice, together with his uncle, that he thought he was obliged, according to his notions of honour, to kill him, and, for that purpose, way-laid him in a bye-path, and fired a pistol at him, the ball grazing on the crown of his hat. The colonel started, and, turning about, drew his sword, and pursued his antagonist, whom he soon came up with, and was quite astonished to find it was the noble Squire Rich. In the first motions of his resentment he was going to run his sword through him, but, considering the worthlessness of the object, thought it was better to expose him to shame; so, tying his hands behind him, he made him march before him to my aunt's, where he ushered him in, and told the story of the intended assassination. Never creature, sure, looked so meanly as the wretch did at this time; and, when my father was sent for, he was ready to expire with shame at the reproaches that were made him. The colonel left him bound, saying, "Sir, in consideration of you and your family, I will not expose this villain to publick

punishment; only consider wisely, whether a man of this stamp is a fit husband for your charming daughter." My aunt protested to my father, that he should never enter her doors again; and the old gentleman took him home with him, giving him an angry kick on the breech, as he went out at the door. Would you believe it, this fellow had assurance enough to tell my father, and made him believe it too, that he was walking out, and, for diversion, fired his pistol at a mark, not knowing the colonel, or any body else, was passing that way; and promised him, that, to retrieve his reputation, he would call him to a gentleman-like account for the calumnies with which he had loaded him, and that the reason of his silence under the charge against him, was the presence of himself and me, and the consideration of the apparent circumstances, which, to be sure, were greatly in his disfavour. All this he uttered with so many sighs and tears, and protestations of his innocence, that my father, blindly fond of him, credited all he said; and only required, that, as a proof of his innocence, he would challenge the colonel; "And, if you don't do that," says he, "to be sure you can never have Louisa." He introduced him again to my aunt with this strange story, which, though none of us believed, we agreed to his visits, knowing he would soon ruin his scheme by his fear of challenging the colonel; which we imagined he would as soon attempt to do, as to face an army of 10,000 men; but, this time, his credit was preserved with my father, by the colonel's being ordered, the next day, to his duty in London, to which place he set out, after taking a genteel farewell of us, with a promise to return, and try the squire's courage in less than a fortnight. But this dreadful fortnight gave me more pangs than tongue can describe, and was the source of a resolution that brought me to this country; and, now let me say, to all the happiness I could propose in life.

The squire, after the colonel's departure, blustered, and strutted about, like the famous *bully* of Mr.

Congreve,

“ Congreve, and then disappeared, ‘all on a sudden; giving out, that since one victim had fled, he was resolved to take satisfaction of another, who had used him as ill as this *prig*, by daring to rival him in my affections. He was gone near a week, when my father, with a mixture of joy and concern in his countenance, brought a letter to shew my aunt, saying, “Z—ds! I am sorry for the poor lad’s fate, too; but Numps has, at last, shewn himself a man of courage; and I’d have Colonel Williams stand clear, when he comes back.” The letter was—

“ HONUR’D SUR,

“ I Hope youe wil now not blive the “ many bafes stories thate are so “ constanteley tolde youe of me; for I “ have givene a good acounte of “ younge Tomlin, whome, in a du- “ elle, I made a sackrifice off, and “ bite the grounde. I have got safe “ here, frome the pursut made after “ mee; and, now hes removde, I hope “ I shall meete with no further mulestetion, in aboute havinge cusen “ Louisee. The poore fellow was “ just settinge out for London. *Your dutifull nefeew, tell deth,*

“ HUMPHRY RICHE.

“ BOSTON, LINCOLNSHIRE.”

“ My aunt read this letter with the utmost astonishment; and, though she did not believe he had killed you in a duel, yet she did not doubt but he had, in the base way of assassination, taken away your life. She took my father aside, and begged him not to let me know the affair abruptly, but trust to her care cautiously to discover it, and let her have the letter for that purpose; and the next morning, taking me into her chamber, she called in her daughter; and, shutting the door, began to open the matter to me thus. “My dearest niece, to me misfortunes are no strangers; I have lived long enough to look upon every thing below as vain and transitory, and all our fancied enjoyments as only so many incentives to get acquainted with misery. The pleasures we reap here cannot compensate for the pains we

“ endure; we are daily, hourly, seeking after toys and bubbles, and neglect the more important concerns of a future state. You yourself, young as you are, have felt some trouble: the loss of your dear mother, though you was then almost an infant, caused in you a sincere grief, which I know you was sensibly afflicted with; but, perhaps, somewhat that will more nearly affect you has happened; a fatal accident, that, if you are not armed with religion and reason sufficient to bear, may, perhaps, kill your peace of mind for ever!” Here, all wild and frantick, yet unsuspecting the reason for this discourse, I cried, “Oh, Madam! what has happened?—My father!—Is he killed?—Is he dead?—Alas! what shall I do?—I am sorry I ever disobeyed him.”—“No, no, my dear, calm yourself—your father is alive and well—perhaps he does not so much deserve this dutiful concern—no, it is not for his loss you are now to mourn—but—” here a shower of tears stopped her farther utterance, and she tenderly clasped me in her arms, whilst her daughter and myself joined our tears, unknowing the occasion, with her’s. She came to herself, and went on. “The best of youths, my dear—don’t look so wildly—the best of youths, as you have described him, is dead!—is murdered by a villain!—your dear —Thompson!”—“Oh, God!” I cried, and fell from my chair in so stupid a swoon, that my head received a violent contusion, which, see, I carry the marks of to this day. They were both so alarmed at this accident, that they were near being in the same condition; they both loved me tenderly, as I did, and ever shall do, them: what could they say? what could they do? They raised me, rubbed my temples with Hungary water, and other such-reviving preparations; but, for a full hour, could not bring me to the least sense or motion. At length I awoke from this death-like trance; and the first idea that presented itself to my imagination, was my dearest Thompson, all wan and pale, his blood issuing out at several wounds, and his hair clotted with gore! “Oh!” I cried,

cried, "let me die with thee! I have no business now in life. Where shall I meet thee, thou dreadful, well-known form?—Oh! let me hide thee in my arms, and wipe off the sanguine streams that deform thy visage!" and then fainted away again; and, assistance being called, I was put to bed in an high fever; and was for some days so delirious, that it was thought I should never get over it. My dear aunt and cousin were inconsolable; and my father, notwithstanding his obdurate temper, was sincerely grieved; but the two ladies would not suffer him to approach me, and loaded him with the epithets of Cruel! Base! and Barbarous! and told him he had murdered one person, and now, they supposed, would send his emissary to kill the other. His nephew was arrived, and put on the air of a great deal of concern; but my aunt sent him word, if he approached the house, she would order her servants to secure him as a murderer. In about three weeks I was somewhat upon the mending hand, but recovered slowly, and with such a worm at my breast, as deprived me of all comfort. My colour vanished from my cheeks; I grew as pale as a spectre, and my body so thin and emaciated, that I was hardly known to be the same: however, I had resolution enough to desire my aunt to let me into the particulars of my Thompson's fate, and had seriously entered into the gloomy resolution to make away with myself the first opportunity. Oh! let a person be ever so wise or intelligent, there are some misfortunes so severe, that it is impossible for them to bear up against their force; the brain, and all the faculties weakened, admit of the most direful resolves; and, perhaps, none but thinking persons can be so much affected. *A fool has not sense enough to grieve*, is as true a saying, as it is a trite one. I agreed with her, that you must have been basely murdered, though I could not account for your having staid so long in Yorkshire; and, for a great while, I formed many schemes to bring your murderer to justice; but the unlucky thought, that, perhaps, my father was concerned in it, stop-

ped me in my intended prosecution, which otherwise my aunt, notwithstanding the squire's near relation, would have joined in. I was no sooner up, than my father, very abruptly, brought the squire to pay me a visit; on which I would have retired, but he took hold of me, and told me I ought not to blame Numps for what he had done, for a gentleman must defend his honour and his mistress. I kept an obstinate silence all the time they staid; and, had I had a proper weapon, I believe I should have had strength to have run it through his perfidious heart. My father said, in a menacing way, "Well, Lucy, Numps and I are going into Yorkshire to settle matters for your removal home; and then I expect you'll—d'ye hear me—do as I order you, and think no more of a man who deserved to die, and was beneath your notice." I made no other answer than by a flood of tears, which hindered my sight; and they departed. My aunt and cousin were shocked at this inhumanity, so much that they could not speak to him; and I told those ladies, very deliberately, after they were gone, that I would never more see Yorkshire, or the face of my cruel father, whatever became of me. They were frightened at the manner of my expression; and, the next day, my aunt, having consulted with herself, proposed the following scheme, not thinking that I would long persist in my resolution; and she hoped, by flattering my disposition, to keep me from suicide, which was what she imagined I hinted at; and, at the same time, she knew it would bring my father to his senses. "Dear Lucy," says she, "I was brought up in France, and have contracted friendships there; I long to see that kingdom again, and we will all three, for some years, leave this fatal country; but, as I cannot keep you from your father's authority, you shall fall sick, and, seemingly, die: we will make a sumptuous funeral for you, and bury you apparently amongst the family at Taunton. You shall, mean time, till our embarkation, go to a distant tenant's of mine in Exeter, who will never betray our secret; and, after

"you

“ you are buried, I’ll write such a letter to your father, as, perhaps, may entirely alter the system he at present acts upon.” My estate is sufficient for all our uses, and you and my daughter shall have an equal claim to it with myself.” I jumped at this proposal; it flattered the gloomy, despairing condition, I was in; I hated Yorkshire; I hated England; I almost—I could not help it—hated my obdurate father! What my aunt proposed, as a scheme politically to over-reach my disordered mind, I improved into a settled vow, never to see my father, or my native country again. Perhaps I had some principles, like revenge, then in my heart—yes—I confess I had—but your mother and father I thought of with great affection: I could have wished the former had known the truth of my destination; but, at last, I resolved she should not, lest, from tenderness to me, she might betray me to my father; I therefore desired my aunt to write a letter to her of my death; and in it I inclosed my picture, as a present to her, which I had got drawn on purpose for you, and you have got it, Sir; and, if you value the original, as much as you have that copy, I shall be the happiest woman living. In short, I died—was buried—as had been concerted; my aunt wrote a terrible letter to my father upon it; and, without waiting an answer, we hired a vessel for France, where we safely arrived, after a pretty turbulent passage. My aunt had so settled her affairs, that her steward remitted her the profits of her estate quarterly; and, it being large, the dear woman has kept up a grander equipage than she did in Somersetshire. We have now been in this house near eight years, and, keeping little company, we have been happy in ourselves, and have, by numerous good offices, contributed to the happiness of others. Our needle-work and our books, and now and then a ride or a walk, have been our principal avocations, I mean that of my aunt and my Serena; for, as to myself, I have not enjoyed a moment’s ease; your endearing form has ever been before my eyes; and the tortures of my soul, the perturbations of my heart,

my departing, dying, bleeding heart, even thy pen or tongue could never be able to describe! I have resolutely hitherto refused to hear from, or send to my father; or England; and my dear aunt has humoured my disposition so far, as never to mention one word of the intelligence she has, at times, received. I must own, since your account of my poor father’s repentance, so long ago, I burn to fling myself at his feet, to ease the tortures of his now altered mind; and, since I have recovered my dear Thompson, Yorkshire will be the only agreeable spot to me in the world. I long to see your dear father and mother also, and my poor Fidele, and to return my thanks to your Mr. and Mrs. Goodwill, and all the rest of our friends, and to be happy once more amongst them.

My cousin and I had been to see a lady of the court of Versailles, when I saw you come down the walk, and heard your well-known voice; and the surprize (for I immediately thought, with the vulgar, it must be an apparition) made me faint away, and the rest that followed you are acquainted with. Mr. Sharpley has also occasion to remember it, continues my Louisa, with a heavenly smile, for he lost his heart the moment, he says, he saw my much-loved Serena; though I think, if I understand the language of their eyes, he has got as precious a pledge in return. When Mr. Sharpley was persuaded to stay that night, we endeavoured to get your name, if haply you wore flesh and blood about you; and his account of your adventures confirmed me we had both been imposed upon. I longed to know, if you were really as faithful to your lost Louisa, as it was said you was; and, your resolution never to converse with the sex rendering it impossible to see you under that character, I proposed to my aunt and cousin the resolution I had taken, to get into your service as a page. This you are sensible I did, through the good offices of Mr. Sharpley; and I faithfully served you, under the name of Estampe; but, Mr. Thompson, if I loved you before with an intenseness of affection, how must your Louisa love you now! joined

proved in knowledge! improved in goodness! and so constant to your first affection, as often whilst I attended you, made me lift up my eyes, in thanks and praises to the Almighty, for forming so excellent a copy of his own perfections here below!—In defence of this dear man, says Louisa, turning to the two ladies and Mr. Sharples, 'I did a thing beyond the usual daring of my sex, and fired a pistol, and killed a man; but there can be no wonder in all that, seeing, if he had died, I should soon have followed him!—Come, Mr. Thompson, let us haste to England.—my father can no longer deny his consent—he repents—you are rich, and we cannot live without each other, and I will study to be grateful to you for all your constancy, by ordering every future action of my existence, so as to please—*my life, my lord, my husband.*'

Thus the melodious, angelick voice, ceased the charmingly eloquent and sensible narration; and, for some time, buried, absorbed in admiration, I could not utter one syllable; but fondly gazed, and devoured all her world of perfections with my eyes. At length I broke out into such raptures, as well-nigh, with mere over-straining nature, had robbed me of life. 'Lovely dear Louisa! heavenly maid! it is impossible for me to express what I feel of thy matchless, unprecedented virtues! Had I the tuneful tongue, the gentle lyre of a Catullus, the Horatian lute, the numbers of the melting Waller, the prevailing art of Sedley, I could then scarce do thy merits adequate justice! Oh!—

"For thee each gladsome morn shall wake;
"Grey e'en, replete with bliss, retire;
"My Lucy I will ne'er forsake,
"But still, to fast'ring age, admire.

"Ever the same, no discord shall decrease
"Our settled happiness, celestial peace.
"Politeness smooth, and decency, shall
"Sway
"Our thoughts, our acts, and reason's
"forceful ray."

"Yes, we will return to the arms of
"our friends, and the embraces of our
"parents! I burn, I sigh, I die, till I
"have thee mine for ever!"

Mr. Sharples, her aunt, and Serena, were quite delighted with her manner

of relating her adventures; and all, in their turn, thanked her in the politest and wittiest terms for the compliments she had bestowed upon them. 'And, 'is it true,' says Sharples, 'that I have got my Serena's heart?—Blissful discovery!—Is it true, my angel?'—'Nay, ask my cousin,' replied that amiable lady; 'my cousin says so, and she never tells an untruth.' He got up, embraced her first, and then her mother; and never, sure, were a happier set of people seen together.

CHAP. XXVII.

THEY SETTLE THEIR AFFAIRS IN FRANCE—MADAM RICH DISPOSES OF HER HOUSE AND GOODS—THEY STAY SOME TIME IN PARIS—MEET WITH AN OBJECT OF CHARITY—THOMPSON RELIEVES HIM, NOTWITHSTANDING A FORMER PIECE OF ILL USAGE—THEY TAKE LEAVE OF THEIR FRIENDS—SET OUT WITH PASS-PORTS FOR FLANDERS—ARRIVE AT WILLIAMSTADT—EMBARK FOR ENGLAND—LAND AT HARWICH.

MR. Sharples and myself soon settled what affairs we had to transact at Paris; and, having now gratified our curiosity with the sight of every thing worth viewing, we only waited till Madam Rich had discharged her servants, except the English ones she brought over with her, and disposed of the house she had bought at St. Clou, and the furniture, which was very superb; which she soon did, to great advantage, Mynheer Van Straaten, the Dutch resident, making a purchase of the whole. My Louisa had lived so reclusive, since her being in France, that she had not seen many of the remarkable publick places, buildings, and palaces; so that we determined to take lodgings at Paris for a fortnight, and do all we could, and dedicate the whole time for the entertainment of the ladies. One day, when we were at the Hotel Dieu, a recovered patient, amongst others, attended to shew us the several wards and conveniences of that noble charity; and I soon found, by his accent, that he was an Englishman; and, looking

steadfastly upon him, methought I also recollected his features. I asked him where he was born in England. He said in London, and that his name was Deacon. 'I think I have heard of a merchant of that name.'—'I had a brother a merchant, Sir,' he replied, 'and I was his unfortunate successor in the business.' I found now it was really poor Mr. Deacon's brother, who had been the cause of my arrest and imprisonment in the Fleet so many years before; but appeared to be in such miserable circumstances, that I was resolved I would not mortify him, by making myself known; for nothing can be greater cruelty, than to insult over the miseries, even of an enemy: I was, instead thereof, really concerned, and grieved to the highest degree; and all my old regard for his worthy brother returned fresh into my mind. I was curious to know how he came in an enemy's country, and what had reduced him to such a forlorn situation. He informed me that he had suffered great losses in trade, before the war broke out; and, at last, was obliged to fly to France, with a very small sum in his pocket, to avoid the miseries of a gaol in his native country; that he lived some time as a clerk to a merchant at Boulogne, but, his master failing, he could find no farther business in his own way, after spending the little money he had in search of it; and mere want induced him to enlist as a common soldier, in the regiment of Picardy; that, in a smart engagement between the French and the Allies, he had the misfortune to have two of his fingers shot off, and was discharged as unfit for service; that he strolled to Paris, begging most part of the way, and was there taken ill in the street of an ague and fever, and sent to the hospital by the parish where he was found; and hoped soon to be able to shift for himself, and get over to England, if he could get money to pay his passage, where he did not doubt of meeting with friends to serve him; and, as he was a fugitive, of getting clear of his debts, by an act of insolvency, which he heard had lately passed. My heart was moved at his dreadful relation, and, calling him aside, I told him I was his countryman, and could not bear to see him in so much distress, and begged he

would suffer me to make him a small present; on which I slipped twenty *louis d'ors* into his hand; and he was so overcome at the sight of it, that he was ready to drop down before me; his face turned pale as death, and his knees tottered under him. Mr. Sharp-ley had an eye upon me; and, finding what I was about, approached, and told me he hoped I would let him advance his mite to the relief of a countryman under misfortunes, and made him accept of ten *louis d'ors* more; adding, 'If it had not been for you, my dear friend, I should have made but a bad figure not long ago myself: we are all subject to the unavoidable ills of life, and should consider our fellow-creatures under such calamities, as types of what the best of us may one day be.' Madam Rich and the ladies would know the business we were about, and all three made him handsome presents; upon which his joy flashed from his very eyes, and dwelt, in involuntary smiles, on his countenance.

Soon after we took leave of Monsieur Du Pleisis and his family, Monsieur Bassompierre, Count Garonne, and all our friends in Paris, who loaded us with civilities; and, having obtained the proper passports, which we had a great deal of difficulty to do, we set out for Flanders, by the rout of Cambray, where, after staying some time, as we did indeed in every remarkable place, for the ease, and, at the same time, for the entertainment of our fair fellow-travellers, having obtained a *safé conduit* for any place where we met with the troops of France, we arrived at Antwerp; from whence, in a day and an half, we came to Williamstadt, where we designed to embark for England. My Louisa, Serena, and the old lady, preserved their healths and spirits surprizingly well, during this long and fatiguing progress, notwithstanding, at many places in Flanders, the accommodations are so mean, that the lowest wretch in England would grumble to be forced to take up with them: and this may be observed, for the honour of our country, that in no part of the world you meet with such fare, and such treatment, as in the inns upon the roads in England. France and Holland come nearest to the same standard; but, as to the Spaniards, Italians,

Italians, Germans, and all other people in Europe, the usage amongst them is coarse, but tricking; their accommodations wretched, and their fare execrable. I was now quite gay, pleased, and cheerful; all the world appeared to me in an amiable light; I had no resentment in my breast; mankind were forgiven by me, for all their oddities and their follies, which now seemed rather virtues than crimes. Alas! how misfortune sours a man to the relish of life; the least thing said or done, that contradicts his humour or particular fancy, is construed into a fault.—Tired with living, fretted, and continually vexed by his uneasy thoughts, or condition, he looks upon all men as his enemies, and sees absurdities in their conduct, which, at another time, would only seem peccadilloes, and be easily looked over.

We were the most at a loss to preserve the decorums, in this country, due to the sex; but with the assistance of the officers of both the French and Allies, we did tolerably well, and could generally provide one bed for the three ladies, in a country harrassed by the marches and countermarches of, and the numerous devastations caused by two potent armies; and all the praise imaginable is due from me to the military gentlemen on both sides, who freely granted us efforts, where they thought it would contribute to our ease and safety, from post to post. ‘Ye powers! did I ever think, could I have the least idea, of enjoying thus the society, without fear or interruption, of my angelick Louisa, now truly mine, since dead to all the world beside;’ and if little tender fears, now and then, intruded themselves, for her safety and protection, it sprang from no such low principle as jealousy, for that passion was quite lost in the confidence I reposed in the lovely creature: in short, we were such a set of people as nothing now could possibly disturb; we were secure of our freight, and myself and Sharpley acted as if we had the wealth of both Indies in our possession. The elevation of sentiment our soft companions inspired, gave all our actions a noble and generous cast; we were kind, even to a fault, to our servants, and bestowed largesses upon the soldiers, with a princely magnificence,

particularly to those who every day arrived at Williamstadt from England, yet unacquainted with the hardships and fatigues of the war.

We hired a vessel for ourselves, but, Captain Sharpley soon after meeting with the captain of a man of war of twenty guns, an old acquaintance, he got leave of the commodore to take us on board, and stand over to Harwich; which he did, and we safely landed at that place, in thirty-six hours after we weighed from Holland, making Captain Tripsack, our commander, a very handsome present for his good-nature and politeness, and bestowing a considerable benefaction upon his brave and undaunted seamen.

C H A P. XXVIII.

IS ACCOSTED BY AN ACQUAINTANCE—MAKES HIM AN HANDSOME PRESENT—THEY SET OUT FOR LONDON—ARE KNOWN AT COLCHESTER—BY WHOM DISCOVERED—THEY ARRIVE IN LONDON—SEND FOR MR. PRIG—TENDER SCENE BETWEEN THOMPSON AND MISS RICH.

WE had just settled ourselves, and were going to dinner at the best inn in the town, when word was brought me, that a gentleman, who had seen us come in, desired to speak to me; upon which I begged the favour of the messenger to desire him to walk in;—he came; and at his first entrance I really did not at all remember him, but he no sooner essayed to pass the usual compliments upon me, than I, shaking his hand with a good deal of heartiness, said, ‘What—Mr. Brisk! my old friend—how could you know a man so much altered since you saw him in the Fleet, both in habit and person?’—‘Sir,’ he replied, ‘it was a long time before I could recollect you; but, at last, I did make shift to remember Mr. Thompson, my master’s friend, whom I left but yesterday; and he telling me, you was every day expected from France, it added to my memory’s ability.’ I asked him, what brought him down to Harwich; he told me, that, by his master’s recommendation, he was appointed clerk to the British commissary

in Flanders, and was going to Helvoetsluys in the packet from Harwich, having transacted first some business for Mr. Prig at Colchester. I was glad to see this young gentleman, to whom I had forgot to be grateful for his former ready and willing attendance under my misfortune; and after staying him to dinner, and entertaining him with agreeable satisfaction, I took him aside, and told him, that I was sorry I had not thought of my obligations to him before I left England; but I hoped he would excuse me, and that it was not too late to shew him my gratitude; upon which I put a bank-note for an hundred pounds into his hands. He blushed, and would have refused the favour; but I insisted on his acceptance of it, and told him, that, when he came again to England, I would endeavour to settle him in his old profession, in which, I was sure, from the example of Mr. Prig, he would behave so as to become a blessing; and not a curse to the world, as too many attorneys were. He was all rapture at my kindness, and returned me a million of thanks; but the packet being ready to sail, I had not an opportunity of farther conversation, and he took his leave.

The next day we hired a coach and a set of horses; and set out full of joy for London. We were now upon English ground, and hastening to the embraces of our friends, who I did not doubt were impatient to see me; and had for a long time expected my arrival; though, as to Captain Sharp-ley and the ladies, they could have no idea of the arrival of such persons. Oh! what floods of rapturous delight overspread our bosoms, the nearer and nearer we approached the place of our natiivities, or the scenes that were to terminate our uncommon adventures, in so glad some, so happy an union as we expected soon to experience! At Colchester, when we had just alighted in the inn yard, I was seized by the arms of a gentleman in boots, who hugged me so closely, so swiftly; and so eagerly, that I had not time to discover who he was, till I heard him repeat, every now and then, 'My dear master—arrived at last—my friend—my son, my every thing that is valuable!' and then, by the expression and the voice, I knew it to be my ho-

nest faithful Truman. I returned his caresses, with an enlivening fervour, and an emotion of heart, that was inexpressibly touching to me—we shed tears; and my company soon understood, by hearing me repeat, 'Dear Truman! over and over, that he was that worthy domestic they had heard me so often celebrate the praises of. We retired into a room, and I presented him to Sharp-ley and the ladies, who caressed him without measure: when he approached my Louisa, he started back some paces, and, lifting up his hands and eyes, turned towards me, and said, 'Ah, dear Sir, what do I see! you are either very happy, or my fancy has cheated me with an illusion; sure, it is Miss Rich, whom I have so often seen in Yorkshire, arisen from the dead, and whom you have so sorely, and for so many years, so justly lamented.'—'Yes,' the dear maid replied, 'I can't keep so good a friend to Mr. Thompson in the pain of suspense: I am that person, and have as sincerely lamented your master, who I thought was lost for ever.' Truman fell on his knees, and kissed her hand, again and again, and was so transported, that for some time he could only utter such disjointed sentences, as the fullness of his joy would permit. He danced, he sung, and practised over so many different movements of passion, that I feared it would turn his brain. When somewhat calmer, he, on my enquiry, told me, Mr. Goodwill and his spouse, Mr. and Mrs. Bellair, and Miss Sukey, were in town, and that he left them at Mr. Diaper's, where his son also was, in earnest expectation of my arrival; that, at their desire, and from his own impatience to see me, he had undertaken to cross in the packet to Holland, and, having obtained a proper passport, to wait upon me at Paris, for which purpose he had got as far as Colchester on his way, when he had the good fortune to meet us in so surprizing and unexpected a manner. 'Your father, Sir,' added he, 'has been in town twice since your last letters; but is at present gone down again to Yorkshire, where he hopes soon to see you.' He did not remember any thing of Sharp-ley, till he told him who he was, at which he embraced him feelingly, and congratulated him on his safe arrival in England, tell-

ing him, his father was very well, with the whole family: 'But, Sir,' he continued, 'is my dear lady here to be discovered immediately? If I might advise, I would persuade her to be disguised, that she may see Sir Walter, without his knowing her, and, which I am sure he will be ready to do, he may give her to your arms himself, without knowing he bestows his daughter upon you, whose loss, and the injuries he has caused to you, he still laments in the most affecting manner.' We listened with pleasure to his proposals, and resolved to put his scheme in execution, and to keep her revival to life a secret to every one till our marriage was performed; and, by Madam Rich's desire, I would keep him no longer, but sent him up to town, with a commission to hire a ready furnished house for the ladies in the most genteel part of the town, till I had settled my affairs in London, and could attend them into Yorkshire. We now, on that account, to give him proper time, staid some days at Colchester; and, in the rout to London, employed as much time as we could, so that it was near a week before we entered into that (to me, well-known) metropolis, which we did in the evening; and Truman waiting, according to a letter of advice I sent him, at the White Hart Tavern in Holborn, we immediately took another coach, and conveyed our fair and dear companions to an house in Red Lion Square, which we found Truman had made choice of with a great deal of judgment; every thing about it being in the most polite and elegant taste.

The next day, with Sharpley, I went to the Temple Exchange Coffee-house, dressed in the richest manner, and, going into a room above stairs, sent the waiter away to Mr. Prig's chambers, to acquaint him, that two gentlemen desired to speak with him. Prig I found was very particular in enquiring after our appearance, &c. no doubt, suspecting it was me, and soon after arrived; I got up and stood at the window, with my back towards the door, have given Sharpley a letter for him, as from me, and proper instructions how to behave. When he came in, Mr. Sharpley asked him if his name was Prig; to which, having answered in the affirmative, he told him, he had

seen a gentleman in France, one Mr. Thompson, who had desired him to bring him that letter, and to drink a glass of wine with him. 'Thompson, Sir,' says he, 'you honour me, and oblige me!—How does that dear friend do whom we have expected every day in England?'—'I left him, Sir,' replies Sharpley, 'in a very bad state of health; but—' 'Good God,' the other interrupted with a sigh, 'is he at Paris, Sir?'—'He was there, Sir, when I was there.'—'I'll go over in the packet and see my valued friend, let what will be the consequence.' He spoke this so touchingly, that I could refrain no longer; and, turning round, cried, 'No, my dear Sir, you shall have no such fatiguing journey; behold your Thompson here, and more yours than ever!' He jumped from his seat, and, after gazing wishfully upon me, ran into my arms, and almost devoured me with embraces; which I returned as cordially, and it was some time before we were able to speak: it was all madness of extasy; and Sharpley was forced merrily to interpose, to bring us to the level of rational creatures. I then let him know who that gentleman was, and he was quite overjoyed to see him; and the relation of our adventures gave him fresh and added satisfaction. 'Well, gentlemen,' says he, 'thank Providence you are returned safe and happy, which will gladden the hearts of all your friends, as much as it does mine. Your Mr. Diaper, and all the rest that are in London, long as much to see you as they ever did for any thing in the world; my friend, and Mr. Goodwill, have staid in London a considerable space of time on purpose: but what do you think? Prim and his family are come to England, and I am just now preparing the title-deeds of an estate he has purchased near Cheshunt in Hertfordshire.' This more and more increased my satisfaction, already risen to a great height; and I could not help, though I had resolved to the contrary, to impart to Prig the secret of my having found my long-lost Louisa; at which he was all wonder and astonishment, and exclaimed on the goodness of Providence, and the surprising ways it every day takes to bless mankind.

Prig was just the same man as when I left him, and was still unmarried; but by the great and extraordinary favours bestowed on him by Mr. Goodwill and Mr. Bellair, and the recommendations of Mr. Diaper and my father, had such a flow of success in his profession, that he was already set above the world, and had acquired a genteel fortune.

I begged him not to give the least hint to our other friends of my arrival, because I intended to go down to Mr. Diaper's, and surprize them agreeably by my presence; and that the recovery of Louisa might be a secret to every body but himself: we then took him with us to sup with the three ladies, and he was struck with admiration at the charms of my Louisa and her conversation, and repeated, as he went away, several times to me, 'She is a most lovely creature!—I never saw such a beauty before!'

Mr. Sharpley and I had been in the city with Prig, and I had bought a rich diamond solitaire, and he had purchased a magnificent pair of ear-rings, as presents for our two mistresses, and some trinkets for the old lady, and had hired a coach and chariot of a proper person, to attend them during their stay in London: after Prig was gone, we each of us presented our jewels, and I had the happiness to put mine round the delicate neck of my angel, who was quite struck with the action, and said, 'You are very gallant, my dear Mr. Thompson, and study so many ways to oblige me, that I can't express the tender sentiments that crowd into my mind towards you.'—'Ah! lovely maid,' I replied, 'can I do too much, in the whole future course of my life, to merit the regards of the dear creature, who has suffered so much on my account, and is such a miracle of beauty, truth, and constancy?' Serena received her present with joy, and the old lady took it so well that we remembered her in these trifles, that she was in an extreme good-humour upon it, and told Sharpley, that she would take care and make him such satisfaction, that, on his marriage, beside her daughter's fortune, she would give him an estate, that should equal him with the best gentleman in the county of York. Sharpley and Serena both threw their arms about her neck,

and embraced this kind mother; and we were so transported with each other's company, that it was very late before we left them to retire to a lodging Truman had provided for us in the neighbourhood. The next day, I ordered Truman to let me have bank-bills to the value of a thousand pounds, one of which I turned into guineas, and putting all together into a rich purse, which I had purchased on purpose for the occasion, I waited on the ladies, and, taking my Louisa into her closet, I began thus, 'My lovely creature! I now hope you look upon yourself as mine, and that you ought to share with me that fortune Providence has permitted me to gain, and which, if Sir Walter had it in his power to deny his consent to our union, or should deprive us of his favour, is sufficient to make us happy! I can't bear you should be longer obliged to Madam Rich, for what you may have in your own person, and really do possess. Take this purse, and it's contents, which will suffice for the remainder of your expences in your maiden state, and provide yourself with every thing you shall have an use or fancy for, before we set out for Yorkshire.' The dear angel looked at me with a world of tenderness, whilst I was speaking, and then broke forth into the following speech!—'My dear Thompson, I accept your generous present, in trust for your use, and hope I shall manage this with the same prudence I shall always study to behave with in your affairs. I do always look on myself as yours, and only yours; for my father has, I think, greatly forfeited his authority over me by his usage: but still let us practise all the duty due to parents, and then if he refuses his consent, or is angry when he discovers his daughter, under the character of your wife, why let him dispose of the dirty acres as he pleases; I have stock of affection sufficient I hope to compensate for their loss to you; but I look for happier things, and believe he will now be proud of his son-in-law! To say I am surprized at your present, would be glossing too much the sentiments of my mind; for, knowing my dear Thompson, I know him capable of every thing good, and kind,

‘kind, and generous; but how—
 ‘which way—shall I, can I, reward
 ‘his goodness to his Louisa?’—‘Your
 ‘being sensible only, my sweetest
 ‘Louisa, of my pains, my sufferings
 ‘—your approving my passion, your
 ‘consenting to bless me with that
 ‘world of charms—to give me that
 ‘soft hand—to be mine for ever—is
 ‘more than a recompence for ages of
 ‘torture.—And, ah! for ever, shall
 ‘the dear condescending gentleness be
 ‘the guide, the motive to all my ac-
 ‘tions. I will haste, love, and finish
 ‘my affairs in town, and prepare to
 ‘launch into an ocean of bliss, which
 ‘can have no alloy.’

CHAP. XXIX.

HE GOES DOWN TO MR. DIAPER'S
 —JOY ON SEEING HIM—CARRIES
 THEM TO SEE HIS LOUISA—RE-
 CEIVES LETTERS FROM MR. SA-
 RIS—GENEROSITY OF THAT GEN-
 TLEMAN—MR. GOODWILL'S EX-
 CESSIVE KINDNESS—VISITS MR.
 PRIM—HE FINISHES THE SET-
 TLEMENT OF HIS AFFAIRS—
 THEY SET OUT FOR YORKSHIRE.

WHEN a week more had passed,
 in which we were taken up in
 visiting all the curiosities in the city and
 neighbourhood of London, to which
 our Louisa and her cousin Serena were
 as yet strangers, never having been in
 that metropolis before; I could not
 farther restrain the impatience I was
 agitated with to see my dear friend,
 and the rest of the amiable society,
 who, we understood by Prig, were
 still at my old master's in the country;
 and, accordingly, that gentleman,
 Captain Sharpley, and Truman, ac-
 companied me there. As we approach-
 ed the well-known spot, it recalled to
 my memory a thousand former scenes
 of happiness and misery that had oc-
 curred to me; but all this served now
 only to increase my present satisfaction,
 which was unbounded. We arrived;
 and I was no sooner entered the room
 where they were at dinner, than I was
 universally known at first sight, and
 they had well-nigh, in their hurry of
 rising to congratulate my appearance,
 overturned the table they were sitting
 at. My master, Mr. Goodwill, and

Mr. Bellair, were never tired of strain-
 ing me in their arms; the ladies gazed
 upon me with the utmost fondness, and
 wept plentifully with mere joy. I re-
 turned their caresses with interest, and
 shed a flood of tears, which my full
 heart could not restrain: but, as to my
 friend and myself, it was all delight
 and transport that seized us, and we
 were near a quarter of an hour in one
 another's embraces, saying all the ten-
 der and affectionate things that inspired
 our bosoms. When we were some-
 what calmer, our discourse, however,
 was equally touching, and we were
 never tired of making fond enquiries
 into each other's health and welfare,
 and the accidents that had befallen us.
 They knew most part of what had
 happened to me from Mr. Diaper; but,
 as to what had passed since our sailing
 from the Cape of Good Hope, I was
 obliged to recount it to them, which I
 did in as succinct a manner as possible;
 and, notwithstanding my resolution to
 the contrary, I could not help letting
 them into the miracle of my recover-
 ing my Louisa, knowing it concerned
 us only to keep it a secret from Sir
 Walter; at which eyes and hands were
 lifted up in wondering admiration at
 the goodness of Heaven! and then
 they all burst out into fresh congratu-
 lations to me on my inexpressible hap-
 piness, and proposed the next day to
 pay a visit to the ladies our fellow-ad-
 venturers. Captain Sharpley, whose
 father was known to them intimately,
 was received with the utmost politeness,
 and every one at first sight entertained
 a friendship for him, particularly my
 dear Diaper; and we three happy lovers
 exulted together upon the blissful situ-
 ation we were at present witnesses to in
 each other. We went to town the
 same day to prepare my Louisa, Ma-
 dam Rich, and Serena, for the intended
 visit, that was to be paid to them on
 the morrow; and I entreated my
 dearest maid to dress herself in the
 richest manner she could; which she,
 smiling, promised to comply with. She
 asked me, if I had heard any thing
 more of her papa: I told her, he was
 well as ever, but still as much grieved
 at what had happened in our affairs,
 and for her loss; that the squire, as
 Mrs. Goodwill had informed me, was
 still at his own seat at Doncaster; and,
 notwithstanding all the arts he could
 use,

use, had never been able to mollify his uncle, who had been informed of his villainies, by one of the fellows that attended him, when I was last used so ill by him; and, again, his meanness and baseness in persuading him that he had killed me, by which report he had lost his Louisa, had more and more exasperated him against him: he had been informed, by the very person who wrote me the letter of caution when I was at my father's, of my life's having been attacked by his procurement, near his own house. He had pardoned that fellow for his honesty, but had by continual prosecutions driven the rest out of the county, as a sacrifice for the injuries I had received from him; and that he was at present in such a temper, that it was believed, if no art at all were used, he would readily, at the unexpected sight of us, consent to our marriage. All this gave my Louisa new spirits, and she cried, 'Oh! how I long to soothe the pains of this cruel, yet repentant father!' Our visitors arrived the next day, and we introduced them to Madam Rich, who entertained them whilst Sharpley and myself went to bring in our adorable mistresses. I never was surprized at any thing before, so much as at the fine and lovely figure my Louisa made; her dress was magnificent to the last degree, and she was all over apparently a climax of stars that blazed in the jewels that adorned her: round her neck hung the solitaire I had presented to her, and at a locket my picture in miniature, which I had a fat on purpose to oblige her, in the trembling panting bosom. We brought them into the apartment, and all the senses the company had were now reduced to one, in viewing our two lovely, delightful fair-ones!

Mr. Goodwill, Mr. Bellair, Mr. Diaper, Mr. Prig, and all the ladies in general, struck with astonishment at her numerous graces, advanced to meet her, and saluted her as a person of whom they had received the highest sentiments of regard and affection, and expressed after some time by their actions and speech, how much they were pleased with her conversation. Serena had her share also in the praises that were bestowed, and those two and Miss Bellair immediately commenced a friendship for each other: young Mr.

Diaper, who was the only one present she had seen before, was particularly taken notice of by her, and he whispered me, that he thought her infinitely improved, and still more wise and more lovely. In short, before they parted, they almost adored her; and Mrs. Diaper, hugging me to her, said, 'Joey, I thought you would be happy at last; and see, Providence has blessed both you and my son with it's choicest gifts, to whom I constantly return unfeigned thanks for it's goodness to you, and for the blessings it thereby provides for your fathers and mothers, and your friends.'— 'And what,' added her spouse, 'is a prodigious increase to all this joy is, what few persons can say; they have not only been returned safe themselves to our arms, but find all their friends as safe and well, after eight years absence, or more, as when we had all the grief of parting with them.' And thus, indeed, Providence has blessed us; and be it's goodness ever adored!

After this first interview, they frequently waited upon each other, and Louisa often went to Mr. Diaper's with her aunt and cousin, and to the houses of Mr. Bellair and Mr. Goodwill in town, who were so enamoured of our angelick family, that they were never easy out of their company. Mr. Sharpley was generally for the latter part of our stay in London, for I wrote, when I first arrived, to my dear father and mother, that I would be down in a month or six weeks at farthest, their squire and conductor: as to myself and Truman, with the assistance of Prig, we were busy in settling my concerns, and putting my money into the funds, which I looked upon as my duty till I could better employ it; for nothing can become a true Englishman more than to assist the government, which is at present supported against it's enemies attacks, as much or more by the influence of the monied people, to whom the present establishment is a security for their fortunes, as by the share they have in the hearts of the whole kingdom, who must own the blessings they derive from their mild and merciful sway. My merchandize, as well as that of Mr. Saris, most of the produce of which Truman had paid to his order, and what belonged to himself had been

turned

turned into cash by Truman, except such things as I reserved for my Louisa's use, and for presents to my father, mother, and other friends, to whom also Mr. Diaper had been pretty profuse of the curiosities of the eastern world. About this time I received a letter from our friend Saris, Truman having received several before I came over, which was to this effect, in answer to one from me—

‘ MY DEAREST FRIEND,

‘ MY trouble was excessive when I understood by Truman's last, that you had been taken in your passage, and was a prisoner in France; but, thank God, I now have received one from your own hands, that testifies to me, to my infinite satisfaction, that you are as happy, after a series of uncommon events in your behalf, as love, wealth, and your native country, can make you! I rejoice greatly at this turn of kind Providence in your favour, and beg to hear from you every now and then, but particularly when you have made the adorable Louisa your own. As to poor Saris, he never intends to move from this spot, where his whole time is spent in the care of a dear son, and the friendship of Sir Thomas, whom you have often heard me mention; yet all the while I am devoured by a slow and deadly melancholy for my unhappy fate in the loss of my dear wife, which nothing can ease but the obliterating arms of death, to which I shall give myself no concern, let my descent be ever so soon. Truman has remitted me, in your absence, all I could demand save about 300*l.* which I beg that faithful creature would accept of as a token of my gratitude for the many services he has done me, and for which I have inclosed a discharge: may Heaven bless you, my worthy dear Thompson, in all your good undertakings! and may you reap those felicities in this world, which were denied to *your truly affectionate and faithful friend, and obliged humble servant,*

‘ WILLIAM SARIS!

‘ CORE, JULY—

I was pleased to hear of our friend's welfare, and, with Truman, struck with this instance of the generosity of his temper: with this increase, he had a fortune of near 4000*l.* which put that faithful friend and servant in the state he could never have flattered himself with obtaining, had he staid in England, and not gone abroad with me. We both of us wrote answers to his kind letters, and promised to preserve our correspondence with him that way, as often as we had an opportunity.

The last thing I had now remaining to settle was my account with Mr. or rather Mrs. Goodwill, who had generously ventured two thousand pounds with me when I went to the Indies; but, after all I could urge, neither he nor she would accept of one farthing more than the original sum. I was so acquainted with their kindness and affection for me, that I was not surprized so much as I otherwise should have been, and still insisted there was twelve thousand pounds due to them, whenever they pleased to call for it. ‘ If so,’ replies Mr. Goodwill, ‘ we will make you our steward, to employ it for the good of mankind, which nobody understands better how to do.’ He carried me to his uncle, and most of the directors, to return thanks for their goodness to me; and to the former I made some presents of value that I had sent home, which he received at my hands with great good-nature and pleasure. And now all being ready for going into my native county, which I longed heartily to see, I begged Prig and Sharpley to accompany me to pay a visit to Prim, who was gone from London to his new seat in Hertfordshire; and accordingly we set out, and got there about dinner-time. As, by my friend's account, he every day expected to see me, he was not much startled, but received me with that open and sincere friendship that ever had distinguished his actions. His lady was but in a bad state of health, or he would have accompanied us into Yorkshire, where all the rest of my friends had promised to repair. He gave me a detail of what had happened to him since we met at sea, and informed me that his old tyrant, Captain Surly, with his nephew, were, going on shore at

an island, (one of the Ladrões) murdered by the inhabitants, in revenge for having seized one of the natives, a female, and carried her on board his ship to gratify his brutal lust. This account he received from the supercargo, who took his part when the captain beat him so violently in his cabin. He rejoiced without measure at my having recovered my Louisa, and we parted, after his making a resolution to visit me in Yorkshire as soon as his wife's illness would permit him.

All things ready, Mr. Goodwill and his lady, and Mr. Diaper and his lady, in Mr. Goodwill's coach and six; Mr. and Mrs. Bellair, Miss Sukey, and my dear Diaper, in Mr. Bellair's coach; and Madam Rich, Serena, my Louisa, and Sharpley, in a coach Mrs. Rich had bought in London, with a splendid retinue of servants, set out for Yorkshire. Myself, Mr. Prig, and Mr. Truman, rode on horseback, and generally kept a mile before the coaches, to provide refreshments, quarters, and accommodations, which was our department. Never was a set of happier people! Content sat on every face, and joy unbounded distended every breast with rapturous emotions! And, as to the three lovers, never were creatures so altered! no uneasy pangs from absence, or jealous suggestions of despairing frenzy, now assailed our bosoms, and we experienced—

‘ Good after ill, and, after pain, delight :
‘ Alternate, like the scenes of day and night.’

CHAP. XXX.

ARRIVE AT MR. BELLAIR'S—ONLY THOMPSON AND SHARPLEY SET OUT FOR MR. THOMPSON'S WITH TRUMAN—THEY ARRIVE THERE—JOYOUS EMOTIONS OF HIS FATHER AND MOTHER—THEY WAIT ON MR. ARCHER AND MR. SHARPLEY—VISIT THEIR FRIENDS—RECEIVE A MESSAGE FROM SIR WALTER RICH—VISIT HIM—WHAT PASSES UPON IT.

WE arrived happily at Mr. Bellair's seat, where he insisted we should repose ourselves some days, and were entertained with his usual genteel hospitality, and he contrived

all the pleasures he could to divert the ladies, and make their stay agreeable to them. It was here agreed amongst us, that only myself, Sharpley, and Truman, should proceed to my father's, as well to get proper quarters for so numerous a company, as to keep our arrival a greater secret from Sir Walter; and, accordingly, we set out, after recommending our lovely mistresses to the care of my friend Diaper, who, at this short separation, could hardly withhold the tears that stood ready to start from their eyes, upon which Prig bantered them very smartly. We made such expedition, that we soon arrived within sight of the dear and well-known plains where first we drew our vital breath. ‘ Ye groves,’ I cried, ‘ receive under your cooling shade once more your old inhabitants! Ye murmuring streams, that o'er the unnumber'd idle pebbles stray, once more bring your bubbling notes to our listening ears! Ye responsive echoes, once more repeat, in imitative strains, the name, the wondrous charms, of my Louisa, that dwells upon my tongue! Ye conscious bowers, to lovers sighs and vows for ever sacred, holy, once more to you we breathe the amorous tale of soft, endearing transports, now our own!’

Mr. Sharpley gave me the compliment of going first to my father's, where we arrived; and, giving our horses to Truman, who staid without, enquired of a servant, whose face I well remembered, if Mr. Thompson was within. He looked earnestly at me, and I could perceive by his not answering, and the visible alteration of his countenance, that he knew me, which a little disconcerted us; and, before we could stop him, he opened the parlour-door with eager haste, and cried—‘ Oh, Sir!—Oh, Madam!—my young master is—come home!’ There needed no more.—My dear mother crying out, and running into the passage, which we had just traversed, as far as the door, would have fainted and fell, but that I caught her in my arms, repeating, ‘ Best and most-loved of mothers! behold, at last, your son, who never will leave you more, nor more will cause you tears!’—‘ And is it thee, my dearest, dearest Joey!’ she replied. ‘ How blessed! how happy am I!—But yet—how altered!’—

‘altered!—Sure it cannot—it must—
 ‘it must be he!—I feel it here—my
 ‘heart confesses him!’ All this while
 I did not see my father; and as soon
 as my mother was somewhat calmed,
 though still she wildly gazed, she led
 me into the parlour; and Sharpley, who
 had taken no notice, nor been taken
 notice of, followed me.—We found
 that excellent man just risen, trembling,
 from his knees, where he had been
 pouring forth ejaculations of praise
 for this happiness! He advanced to-
 wards me, the colour now going from,
 and now coming into his face alter-
 nately, and he could scarcely support
 himself from falling, whilst I rushed
 into his arms, and we both uttered the
 fondest, the most warm expressions of
 paternal affection—filial love and duty!
 Reason, at length, resumed her empire
 over us, and our spirits more composed,
 Sharpley seizing my mother round the
 neck, and then kissing the hands of my
 father, said, ‘Sure, dear Sir—dearest
 ‘Madam—you have another son—
 ‘that yet you have not acknowledged!’
 They stared wishfully on him, but
 were still at a loss to know him; till
 I cried—‘Ah! can you forget your
 ‘Sharpley, Sir?’ They both rose at
 this, and caressed him in the kindest,
 tenderest manner, which he returned
 with a becoming warmth. We then
 sent a servant to relieve Truman, who
 was received by my father and mother
 as a valued friend. By this time all
 the neighbourhood were apprized by
 the servants of our arrival, the bells
 rung, and the farmers came in, to
 congratulate us. I hugged the honest
 people in my arms, and was transported
 to see them; and, as to Solfa, he had so
 much feeling upon the occasion, that
 he could hardly speak, whilst Sharpley
 and I embraced this honest friend to
 our boyish years. My father, at my
 desire, set open his doors, and gave all
 the parish a hearty welcome to the best
 of cheer; and the next day we went
 over to Mr. Sharpley’s, who was so
 overcome with this providential re-
 covery of his son—and in such com-
 pany—so happy in his love—that he
 dwelt for ever on the pleasing topic,
 and never ceased embracing us; and
 Mr. Archer also, to whom I gave tid-
 ings of our other friend, was almost
 ready to die with joyous emotion. They
 accompanied us to see all our old friends

and associates of the neighbouring vil-
 lages and hamlets, who thought them-
 selves happy in the notice we took of
 them; and I begged my father, in my
 name and young Mr. Sharpley’s, to
 give five hundred pounds in charities
 to the distressed poor, and the industri-
 ous labourers, of his parish, which
 raised their love and veneration of me
 to a height like adoration. I was con-
 gratulated by every one upon my good
 fortune; and, in a day or two after
 our arrival, an opportunity serving,
 we, at their desire, related our adven-
 tures to my father and mother, Mr.
 Archer, and Mr. Sharpley: but when
 I came to that part of my story where
 I had found, so miraculously, my
 Louisa, it was a long time before I
 could obtain belief, though from per-
 sons that confided in my veracity, till
 our joint protestations of the truth,
 and, as a proof, her being so near us,
 confirmed what we said. Never were
 people so beside themselves with joy—
 the bliss to them was unutterable! My
 father himself could not refrain from
 shewing the share he took in my felici-
 ty, by the most transporting acts of
 satisfaction; and my mother now
 wept, and now smiled exultingly at
 having recovered her dear, dead Louisa!
 They promised, however, to keep the
 secret till a proper time for discovery;
 and my father’s, Mr. Sharpley’s, and
 Mr. Archer’s houses being sufficient
 to entertain all our illustrious guests,
 they begged they might have that ho-
 nour; and my mother bespoke Louisa
 to be with her till our nuptials, which
 I readily granted.

I was just designing to pay a visit to
 Sir Walter, whose pulse I longed to
 feel; and, indeed, I longed to see him,
 and all my old regard for him was re-
 turned, when he sent a servant to me to
 desire my company at his house; and I,
 taking Captain Sharpley with me, im-
 mediately obeyed the summons. We
 found him in the apartment in which
 I had enjoyed so much happiness, in a
 mourning dress, which he had worn
 constantly ever since he received the
 news of his daughter’s death! At the
 sight of me, (for he knew me imme-
 diately) the old baronet burst into
 tears, and said, ‘Ah, Mr. Thompson!
 ‘you are too good—I did not expect
 ‘so ready a compliance to my desires—
 ‘I did not deserve it at your hands—

‘ I who murdered Louisa, and behaved so ungratefully, so wickedly, to you !’ I was moved to see him so touched with sorrow, and advancing, pressed him in my arms, whilst the tears stood in my eyes; and replied, ‘ Dearest Sir—my father—for I must ever call you so—forget whatever injuries were done to me—I forget them for ever—you are punished enough, Sir, in the loss of our dear and excellent Louisa !—Can I forget you are her father—and, though oppressed with the same sorrow, will ever behave to you with duty and affection, and strive to lessen your woes, or mix my own with them !’—‘ Ah, generous youth !’ he returned, ‘ how could I be blind to so much merit ?—Oh ! if the dear girl were now alive—she surely should be thine; but, since it cannot be recalled—come, live with me—the solace of my age—and accept of all that I can give at my decease !—That wretch, that villain—that bane to my happiness—seduced me !—But, no doubt, you have heard it all—the sad, the fatal story !’—‘ I have, dear Sir—you are excusable, and highly so.—I accept your kind proposal of living with you, and cheering my Louisa’s father in his troubles—for fortune I have enough—and long for nothing now—so much in life—as to punish, to chastise, that basest wretch, your execrable villainous nephew !’ Fidele broke in, and, hanging about my neck, repeated oft her lady’s name with mine—her dear friend and patron, her Mr. Thompson; and when we were taking our leave, and retiring through the gate, an honest-looking man and woman, whom I did not recollect, gave me a thousand blessings, and prayed for my long life and prosperity ! I stood still, and, after returning their compliments, enquired how I came to merit such a share of their respect. The man replied, with some emotion, ‘ Dear Sir, if you have forgotten us, we shall ever remember your bountiful goodness to us, as well as that of our dear lady departed.’ I then began to recollect somewhat of their faces, and found it was the poor exciseman and his wife, whom my dear Louisa had so charitably relieved, and to whom I made a present at my departure for London so many years ago. I saluted the woman, and, taking the

man by the hand, enquired if I could be of any service to them now. If I could, I was very ready to do it; but he replied, ‘ Sir, your goodness overcomes me; but I want nothing at present, and have every thing in the service of Sir Walter that we can desire; for when he understood that we had been the objects of my late young lady’s charity, he took us into his house, making me his bailiff, and my wife his laundry-maid; and has been infinitely kind to me ever since.’ I was charmed to hear these instances of his regard to Louisa’s memory, and found every thing so situated, that we had little opposition to fear, even if he knew his daughter’s real story.

I had presented Mr. Sharpley to him, who was going, though unknown to him, to be his nephew; and he received him as the son of a gentleman he esteemed; and upon our mentioning the brilliant assembly that was coming down to the marriage of Mr. Diaper, and those of some other friends, he generously offered his house also for their accommodation.

C H A P. XXXI.

THEY RETURN TO MR. BELLAIR’S.—ALL SET OUT FOR MR. THOMPSON’S—ARRIVE THERE—HOW THEY ARE DISPOSED OF—HE MAKES A PROPOSAL TO SIR WALTER—SIR WALTER CONSENTS TO IT—FIDELE INTRODUCED TO HER LADY—TRUMAN FALLS IN LOVE—MAKES A REQUEST TO THOMPSON—HE GRANTS HIS DESIRE, AND MAKES LOUISA AN ADVOCATE FOR HIM—FIDELE GRANTS HIS SUIT, AND OBTAINS SIR WALTER’S LEAVE TO MARRY HIM.

WE staid about a week longer with our parents; and now, longing to behold our mistresses, accompanied by my father, Mr. Sharpley, and Mr. Archer, we set out for Mr. Bellair’s, and once more rejoined the dear objects of our affection, and gave our company an account of Sir Walter’s disposition; at which my Louisa was transported, and said, ‘ I think, my dear Thompson, I had better

'better die in earnest: you see you may have the estate without the incumbrance of a wife.'—'Ah, Madam!' I replied, 'you know me too well to think I can ever bear a smiling sentence of that sort from you: without you, all the riches and pleasures in the world would be distasteful.' When my father came forward at first to salute her, she would have fallen upon her knees; but he caught her in his arms, called her *his sweet daughter—his angel*—and told her, her revival would add twenty years to his life. Mr. Archer and Mr. Sharpley, in their turns, expressed how much they were affected with the sight of her; and all our company were charmed with the presence of these three gentlemen. It was agreed that my Louisa should wear a mask till she got into private at my father's; and, every thing being settled, we set out for that loved place; but were quite surprized, at about a mile from the house, to meet twenty runners, all dressed in rural pomp, with ribbands and flowers, being the young men of my father's parish, and almost all the gentlemen and farmers on horseback, who came to welcome us, and precede us through the villages, where all the bells rung our welcome. We thanked the honest people for these testimonies of their respect, and when we alighted, Mr. Diaper threw a handful of money amongst the runners, whose example was followed by myself, Mr. Goodwill, and Sharpley; and the gentlemen were invited to partake of a cold repast, which was prepared by my mother for our refreshment. Louisa and Madam Rich, with Serena, went into a back parlour with my mother; where, when she had unmasked, the scene between them was too delicately melting and tender to be described; and, 'Dearest mamma!'—'Sweetest, most excellent daughter!—lovely Louisa!' was all they could, for a long time, utter. The two ladies were transported with the conversation of this good woman, who, in her turn, conceived a great affection for them; and, as Louisa could not appear publicly yet, nor her aunt or cousin, Sir Walter's servants knowing them, she spent the remainder of the day in their company; to which the other ladies frequently paid visits.

Sir Walter came to my father's, unexpectedly, as soon as we arrived, to compliment the company, and to give a general invitation to them to his house; and behaved more cheerfully than he had done for a long time before, often embracing me and my friend Diaper, and calling us his children. He was known to all the company, present, who had most of them spent some time in Yorkshire, after my departure for the Indies; and, as to the Bellair's, they were an ancient family, and well known to him before. It was agreed, that Mr. and Madam Goodwill, with their equipage, should go to Mr. Archer's; Mr. Bellair and his lady, and servants, to Mr. Sharpley's; Mr. Diaper and his wife, with Prig, to Sir Walter's; and Madam Rich, Serena, Louisa, and Miss Sukey, to remain at my father's. As to Diaper, Sharpley, myself, and Truman, who I insisted should always now be treated and live like a gentleman, we had beds provided for us at our old friend Solfa's, which we liked, as being nearer our mistresses, than any other situation. Our presence diffused gladness all around the country, and the inhabitants of the neighbourhood vied with each other in the games and sports they exhibited, upon occasion of having such good company amongst them. As it was thought proper, on account of the concealment, I was forced to go to York for a licence for my intended marriage; but, as to Mr. Sharpley and Mr. Diaper, my father bade the banns in his church, which he thought the most primitive and regular way. All things being settled for the happy moment that was to unite such faithful lovers, and it being to be performed in three days time, I, one morning, took Sir Walter aside, and began to talk to him thus. 'My father, I have a favour to beg of you: my Louisa is no more! and it is vain now to lament for what we cannot recal. Oh! were she but alive, I should be happy. My father has persuaded me, for some family reasons, to marry. I have paid my addresses to a young lady of birth and fortune, and she has yielded to my suit. You might once have made me happy, but that is past; and, as I could not receive my Louisa at your hands, grant me the same favour.'

‘ your to give away this lady to me at the altar, and adopt her for your child.’ The old gentleman wept, and reproached himself for his former cruelty and folly; but, at length, consented to do as I proposed, for which I returned him my utmost acknowledgments. I farther requested of him, that he would suffer Fidele to attend upon her till the marriage was over, which he, with great readiness, granted also. I told that good creature, that my mother desired to see her, and she went over to our house directly, where she every day, since my departure, had visited. That dear woman and Mrs. Goodwill, after caressing her, and introducing her to the rest of the company, carried her into the room where her lady was playing upon the harpsichord to Serena, Miss Sukey, and Mrs. Bellair. She rose up, and the poor girl, the minute she saw her, swooned away, only crying out, ‘ Good God!’ They brought her to herself; her mistress embraced her, and was never tired of bestowing kisses and pressures upon her, which soon convinced her she was flesh and blood. She heard her lady’s story with admiration, like that one would express at seeing a person rise from the grave; and, falling upon her knees, cried, ‘ Oh! did I ever expect to be so happy!’ whilst tears of joyous affection trickled fast from her eyes.

Truman, as soon as I returned home, begged me to walk into the garden, and surprized me, when he told me, that he hoped, as he had long and faithfully served me, I would contribute to make him happy. ‘ I love Fidele, Sir, have loved her ever since I first saw her; and I shall never be easy, if I have not her heart and person. It is true, Sir, I am somewhat older than she is; but, when I was down before in Yorkshire, after I came from India, I paid my addresses to her, and believe she was not indifferent to my offers; and one motive to her condescension was, that I was valued and respected by you. She will soothe my future hours; and has imbibed such excellent principles from my lady, that she will be in herself a valuable fortune. Do, Sir, speak to Miss Louisa; and, with her, endeavour to incline her to marry me.’ I was so

pleased to hear this, that I could not enough express my satisfaction, and promised to do all in my power to serve him: accordingly, I spoke to my Louisa, who was as pleased as myself to hear it; and we both, in a proper manner, spoke to Fidele; particularly Louisa represented him, as he really was, a very worthy and excellent man, a good friend of mine, beloved by us both, and one, who, in person and temper, was formed to make a woman happy. In short, we soon discovered, by her eyes and her answers, that she loved him as much as he loved her; and, blushing, she told us she would be ruled in any thing by us. Truman was all extasy when he heard of her compliance, and I went with him to Sir Walter, and represented him, and his affairs, in such a light, that he readily gave his consent to her leaving him; and this news caused great mirth and pleasure to our whole company; and we resolved their marriage should be performed at the same time with our own.

C H A P. XXXII.

MR. ARCHER THE YOUNGER ARRIVES IN YORKSHIRE—ANOTHER VISITOR CALLS UPON THEM—THE FOUR AMIABLE PAIR ARE MARRIED—SIR WALTER’S SURPRISE AND JOY IN DISCOVERING HIS DAUGHTER—HE PAYS HER FORTUNE, AND MAKES OVER AN ESTATE TO THEM—THEIR GUESTS DEPART—HAPPINESS THAT SUCCEEDS THOMPSON’S MARRIAGE—CONCLUSION.

THE next day Mr. Archer brought up a gentleman from his house, that, to my great satisfaction, I found to be his son, whose presence, on the present happy occasion, was prodigiously agreeable to Sharpley and myself; and he was overjoyed when he heard how our affairs stood. My father and mother almost overwhelmed him with kindness; and, being presented to all our good friends, they conceived so good an opinion of him, as to give him, at once, a place in their esteem; but this was not the only unexpected visitor that arrived, for a gentleman

gentleman alighted at my father's, attended by several servants, and asked for me. I came to him, and he accosted me with great gentility, and said, that he had heard my name mentioned at the next town, as just arrived from abroad, and that I was surrounded with numerous friends; though unknown at present to me, he had formerly done me some services, and was resolved to leave the road, and make one in our happy society, and congratulate me on my arrival in England. I returned him thanks, and introduced him to our company; at the same time telling him I was sorry so to forget my obligations, as not even to have the pleasure to recollect his face. Madam Rich, who heard his voice from the next room, and what had passed, with Serena and Louisa, none being present but those who were in the secret of her being alive, pressing towards him, cried, 'Ah, Colonel Williams! how lucky we are to see you here!' This name, and the compliments that passed between them, gave me to understand, that it was that generous gentleman Louisa had mentioned with so much distinction: nor was I mistaken; but he was so surprized to see my adorable, that, for some time, he could hardly recover himself, till, being let into the heads of our adventures, he broke forth into congratulations upon our happiness; and we persuaded him to stay with us till our marriages were performed, to which, with joy, he consented. His presence put us upon talking about the squire, who now lived a brutish, sottish life, at his little estate at Doncaster; for my part, I was so easy at present, that I seldom thought of him; and, when I did, it was not revengefully, but with absolute pity and contempt; and we all agreed, that, if he remained quiet, it was not worth while to use him as he deserved, my father concluding with the poet—

• It is punishment enough to be a villain!

• Now morn, her rosy steps in th' eastern
clime

• Advancing, strew'd the earth with orient
pearl!

The morn, the glad some morn! that
was to make the lovely cause of all my

cares and pains for ever, ever, mine.
It was in the joyous month of May,
when nature all around bloomed odorous sweets, that forth issued our blissful brides, but chief my Louisa—

—'Dress'd in rich array;

'Fresh as the month, and, as the morning,
'fair;

'Adown her shoulders fell her length of
'hair:

'Ribbands and gems her braided tresses
'bind,

'The rest hung loose, and wanton'd in the
'wind.'

A gown of white damask, richly embroidered, shaded her transporting beauties, which received still greater lustre by the crimson blushes that overspread her lovely face; and her eyes put to shame the clusters of diamonds that were spread all over her hair and bosom! Serena and Miss Bellair were as richly dressed; but Fidele had, with becoming modesty, contrived to suit her habit a little to her former condition. We seized their willing, yet reluctant, hands; and, followed by our admiring friends, and wondering neighbours, proceeded to the church; Sir Walter, at my desire, having once more cast off his mourning, and dressed himself in rich cloaths suitable to the occasion. Louisa put on her masque as soon as he appeared; which he wondering at, I told him I was forced to indulge her modesty, by letting her be married thus veiled. He surveyed her shape and stature as we walked along; and, fetching a sad sigh, wiped his eyes, endeavouring, however, to conceal his emotion under an air of affected gaiety. My father joined our hands in the holy tie, and we were edified with the grave and truly apostolical air with which he performed the sacred ceremony. After it was over, Sir Walter insisting upon supplying the marriage-feast, we adjourned to his house, where the whole neighbourhood was also invited; and, just before we sat down to dinner, my father called him aside into a room, where only Louisa and her aunt, both still masqued, and he and myself, were, and addressed him thus—'Sir Walter, Providence orders all things for the best; and this day, by means no one ever could think of, has made us all happy.—If these young folks have exercised a
little

‘little stratagem with you, it was to increase the pleasure you will feel, I am sure, when, in my son’s wife—in Mrs. Thompson—you will discover your long-lost Louisa!’ Upon which she unmasked, and we knelt before him, and intreated his blessing. He was motionless some time—but soon discovered it was really his daughter; and, without enquiring into the affair, embraced us one after another, blessed us, and jumped and danced about in such a manner, that any one would have thought him distracted. At length he resumed himself, and we shed tears in concert; and my Louisa hung about his neck, whilst he held her fast in his arms, crying, every now and then, ‘It is she herself, and I am happy—blessed for ever!’ And when his sister discovered herself, and had informed him succinctly of all this wondrous turn of fortune, he was amazed, and told her he would love her better than himself as long as he lived. Nothing but joy reigned throughout the whole vicinity: the house was full of delight and pleasure. Abroad, every green sward was exercised by the gambols of our country lads and lasses; and, Louisa’s return being noised abroad, the hearts of all that knew us ran over with satisfaction.—Sharpley was presented to Sir Walter as his nephew, and he received him with the utmost goodness—bussed Serena, and was quite inebriated with his felicity. ‘You see, papa,’ said my lovely consort, ‘I am as good as my word, and have not only married with your consent, but you have given me away with your own hands.’—‘Yes,’ he replied, ‘it is true; and, if I could, I would give thee away an hundred times over to that worthy youth, my dear Joey!—So make haste, my boy, and make me a grand-father.’ I bowed—Louisa blushed. Oh! the delightful moments I passed this night in the arms of this adorable end of all my wishes! even luxuriant fancy cannot paint in colours equal to the truth!—‘Oh, life! how art thou improved by a virtuous and lawful intercourse with these delightful companions, these soft, melting recompenses of all our pains and numerous cares!’

We were complimented next morning by all our friends, who spent a

fortnight more with us; and they had the pleasure to see Sir Walter pay me the twelve thousand pounds that was his daughter’s, and he made over the estate in our neighbourhood, of near one thousand pounds *per annum*, to us and our heirs. Mr. Goodwill and his lady repaired to their country-house; Mr. Diaper and Mrs. Diaper, with my friend and his charming spouse, went with Mr. Bellair and his wife to their seat, to spend some time before they returned to London; and Sharpley, with his dear Serena and Colonel Williams, accompanied Madam Rich to the estate in Somersetshire, which they were to possess at her death. Prig accompanied Mr. Archer the younger to London, where he was going to settle in the profession of a wine-merchant; and our adieus were sensibly touching to us all: but, as our fortunes were all considerable enough to visit each other in the most distant parts we could settle in, we comforted ourselves with the thoughts of frequently seeing each other again, and the promise of corresponding constantly by letter. Mr. Archer and Mr. Sharpley each set out with his son for some months; so that now our happiness was quite domestick. Truman bought a pretty estate in our neighbourhood, where he happily still lives with our Fidele, and often visits us, still preserving that modesty and discretion that made every one love him. As to myself, I enjoy, my gentle reader, in the society of my charming wife, all those comforts and solacements that give a man a relish, and earnest desire, of life. Her virtue, and her good-sense and prudence, endear her to all the world; and I strive to act in such a manner as to preserve that love and esteem from her, that is the principal ingredient in conjugal felicity. My father and mother are still living, and behold in their son the good qualities, I flatter myself, that they early endeavoured to inspire; and are never easy a day without the sight of my charming Louisa. Sir Walter lives with us, and is hearty and well, and like to survive long enough to see his second generation rise to maturity; for already I have been blessed with two fine children, a boy and a girl, who are the very pictures of their angelick mother. Our correspondence with, and now

and then the sight of our dear friends add greatly to our happiness; and I reckon myself, at present, at the summit of human felicity.

Thus, through a long and toilsome pilgrimage of woe, attended with few real delights, I have attained that settled state of pure, uncorrupted bliss, that we are all, in different routs, wandering after: and I hope my papers

may happily fall into such proper hands as will improve by my misfortunes; and, by avoiding vice and folly, with all their attendant ills, acquire the same serenity that is at length my happy lot: and as, with my Louisa, I pursue a constant course of benevolence and kindness to our fellow-creatures, I hope, with Dryden—

‘ We ever shall be blest’d—who live to bless.’

F I N I S.

THE
LIFE AND ADVENTURES
OF
PETER WILKINS,
A CORNISH MAN.

TAKEN FROM HIS OWN MOUTH, IN HIS PASSAGE TO ENGLAND, FROM
OFF CAPE HORN IN AMERICA, IN THE SHIP HECTOR.

BY R. S. A PASSENGER IN THE HECTOR.

IN TWO VOLUMES.



L O N D O N:

Printed for HARRISON and Co. No. 18, Paternoster-Row.
M DCC LXXXIII.

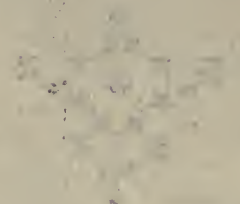
THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

LIBRARY OF THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

1891-1892

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

1891-1892



THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

TO THE RIGHT HONOURABLE

Elizabeth, Countess of Northumberland.

MADAM,

FEW authors, I believe, who write in my way, (whatever view they may set out with) can, in the prosecution of their work, forbear to dress their fictitious characters in the real ornaments themselves have been most delighted with.

This, I confess, hath been my case, in the person of Youwarkee, in the following sheets; for having formed her body, I found myself at an inexpressible loss how to adorn her mind in the masterly sentiments I coveted to endue her with, till I recollected the most amiable pattern in your ladyship; a single view of which, at a time of the utmost fatigue to his lordship, hath charmed my imagination ever since.

If a participater of the cares of life in general alleviates the concerns of man, what an invaluable blessing must that lady prove, to the softness of whose sex nature hath conjoined an aptitude for council, an application, zeal, and dispatch, but too rarely found in his own!

Had my situation in life been so happy as to have presented me with opportunities of more frequent and minuter remarks upon your ladyship's conduct, I might have defied the whole British fair to have outshone my southern Gawry; for if to a majestic form and extensive capacity, I had been qualified to have copied that natural sweetness of disposition, that maternal tenderness, that cheerfulness, that complacency, condescension, affability, and unaffected benevolence, which so apparently distinguish the Countess of Northumberland; I had exhibited in my Youwarkee a standard for future generations.

Madam, I am the more sensible of my speaking but the truth, from the late instance of your benignity, which entitles me to the honour of subscribing myself,

Madam,

Your Ladyship's

Most obliged and

Most obedient Servant,

R. P.

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO

PHYSICS DEPARTMENT

RESEARCH REPORT

1950

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO
PHYSICS DEPARTMENT
RESEARCH REPORT
1950

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO
PHYSICS DEPARTMENT
RESEARCH REPORT
1950

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO
PHYSICS DEPARTMENT
RESEARCH REPORT
1950

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO
PHYSICS DEPARTMENT
RESEARCH REPORT
1950

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO
PHYSICS DEPARTMENT
RESEARCH REPORT
1950

1950

1950

1950

1950

1950

EXPLANATION

OF

Names and Things mentioned in this Work.

A.

A BB—a room.
Asilo—capital of Norbon.
Arco—a man who committed the first murder.
Arndrumflake—Pendlehamby's colambat.
Arkoe—water surrounded with wood.

B.

Barbarfa—Georigetti's favourite.
Barkut—a husband.
Barras—a leathern apron, or flap behind.
Bash—a valet de chambre.
Battringdrigg—the name of an arkoe.
Begjurbeck—an old king of Safs Doorpt Swangeanti.
Born Isles—islands to the right-hand.
Boskee—a very grand room, or saloon.
Bott—a gourd.
Bougee—lie down.
Brandeguarp—chief city of Safs Doorpt Swangeanti.

C.

Callentar—a doctor, or surgeon.
Cluff—a captain.
Colomb—a governor.
Columbat—a government.
Colapet—a bag for provision.
Collwar—God.
Coovert—a mansion-house or seat.
Crasdoorpt—Quangrallort's colambat, or country of the slit.
Crasbee—slit.
Crullmott—a fruit tasting like a fowl.

D.

David—Peter's fourth son.
Doorpt Swangeanti—the land of flight.
Doors—a fort of apples.
Doffee—a soft thing.

E.

Emina—a rock.

F.

Felbamko—Oniweske's nephew.
Filgay—a freeman.
Filus—a rib of the graundee.

G.

Gadfi—governor of Mount Alkoe.

Gduingrunt—a revolted town in the west.

Gawrey—a flying woman.

Georigetti—king of Safs Doorpt Swangeanti.

Glantpze—an African who escaped with Peter.

Glumm—a flying man.

Glum Bys—a young man.

Goppa—a father-in-law.

Gorpell—an enigm.

Gororen—women.

Graundee—the glumms wings and drefs.

Gripsack—a trumpet.

Graundevolet—Peter's arkoe.

Gume—the leather between the filuses of the graundee.

H.

Hallycarnie—Yeuwarkee's sister, also her second daughter.

Harlokin—prince of the rebels.

Hoximo—a place to bury the dead.

Hunkum—marriage.

I.

I. O.—the chief ragam.

J.

Jabamel—the king's sister.

Jemmy—Peter's second son.

L.

Lallio—first king of Safs Doorpt Swangeanti.

Lask—a slave.

Laskmett—slavery.

Lasmeel—Peter's scholar.

M.

Maleck—Peter's man from Mount Alkoe.

Mindrack—the devil.

Mouch—a church.

Moucheratt—an assembly of the states.

Mount Alkoe—a kingdom taking name from a burning mountain.

N.

Nasgig—a common soldier made a general at the request of Peter.

Nicor—a creature of Barbarfa, the king's favourite.

Norbon—the name of the north country.

Normbdjgrfust

Normbdsgrfutt—ancient name of Youwarkee's country.

O.

Oniwheske—king of Norbon.

Ors clam gee—here am I.

P.

Padfi—a fruit tasting like fish.

Palang—a town.

Parky—sweet.

Patty—Peter's eldest daughter, also his first wife.

Pedro—Peter's eldest son.

Peter—the author.

Pendlebamby—Youwarkee's father, the colamb of Arndrumpstake.

Perigen—the first-born man.

Philella—the first-born woman.

Puly—an image.

Praave—modest.

Q.

Quangrollart—Youwarkee's brother, colamb of Crashdoorpt.

Quilly—Peter's bash.

R.

Ragan—a priest.

Razy—mighty.

Richard—Peter's fifth son.

Roppin—marmalade.

Rosig—Quangrallort's companion.

S.

Sary—Peter's youngest daughter.

Safs Doorpt Swangeanti—Peter's new name given to Georigetti's dominions.

Slip the graundee—drawing the graundee tight to the body, by a running noose on a line.

Stapps—minutes.

Stygee—Oniwheske's daughter.

Sweecoe—an insect giving a strong light in the dark.

Sweecoan—a flight with sweecoos.

Swangean—flight.

T.

Telamine—a woman, whose husband committed the first murder.

Tommy—Peter's second son.

Y.

Yaccombourse—the king's mistress.

Yacom—a man child.

Youk—capital of the west.

Youwarkee—Peter's wife.

Z.

Zaps—lords.

INTRODUCTION.

THE

INTRODUCTION.

IT might be looked upon as impertinent in me, who am about to give the life of another, to trouble the reader with any of my own concerns, or the affairs that led me into the South Seas. Therefore, I shall only acquaint him, that in my return on board the Hector, as a passenger, round Cape Horn, for England, full late in the season, the wind and currents setting strong against us, our ship drove more southerly, by several degrees, than the usual course, even to the latitude of 75 or 76; when the wind chopping about, we began to resume our intended way. It was about the middle of June, when the days are there at the shortest, on a very starry and moon-light night, that we observed at some distance a very black cloud, but seemingly of no extraordinary size or height, moving very fast towards us, and seeming to follow the ship, which then made great way. Every one on deck was very curious in observing it's motions; and perceiving it frequently to divide, and presently to close again, and not to continue long in any determined shape, our captain, who had never before been so far to the southward as he then found himself, had many conjectures what this phænomenon might portend; and every one offering his own opinion, it seemed at last to be generally agreed, that there might possibly be a storm gathering in the air, of which this was the prognostick; and by it's following, and nearly keeping pace with us, we were in great fear lest it should break upon and overwhelm us, if not carefully avoided. Our commander, therefore, as it approached nearer and nearer, ordered one of the ship's guns to be fired, to try if the percussion of the air would disperse it. This was no sooner done, than we heard a prodigious flounce in the water, at but a small distance from the ship, on the weather-quarter; and after a violent noise, or cry in the air, the cloud, that upon our firing dissipated, seemed to return again, but by degrees disappeared. Whilst we were all very much surprized at this unexpected accident, I, being naturally very curious and inquisitive into the causes of all unusual incidents, begged the captain to send the boat, to see, if possible, what it was that had fallen from the cloud, and offered myself to make one in her. He was much against this at first, as it would retard his voyage, now we were going so smoothly before the wind. But in the midst of our debate, we plainly heard a voice calling out for help, in our own tongue, like a person in great distress. I then insisted on going, and not suffering a fellow-creature to perish for the sake of a trifling delay. In compliance with my resolute demand, he slackened sail; and hoisting out the boat, myself and seven others made to the cry; and soon found it to come from an elderly man, labouring for life, with his

arms across several long poles, of equal size at both ends, very light, and tied to each other in a very odd manner. The sailors at first were very fearful of assisting, or coming near him; crying to each other, 'He must be a monster!' and, perhaps, might overset the boat and destroy them; but hearing him speak English, I was very angry with them for their foolish apprehensions, and caused them to clap their oars under him, and at length we got him into the boat. He had an extravagant beard, and also long blackish hair upon his head. As soon as he could speak, (for he was almost spent) he very familiarly took me by the hand, I having set myself close by him to observe him, and squeezing it, thanked me very kindly for my civility to him, and likewise thanked all the sailors. I then asked him by what possible accident he came there; but he shook his head, declining to satisfy my curiosity. Hereupon reflecting that it might just then be troublesome for him to speak, and that we should have leisure enough in our voyage for him to relate, and me to hear, his story, (which, from the surprising manner of his falling amongst us, I could not but believe would contain something very remarkable) I waved any farther speech with him at that time.

We had him to the ship, and taking off his wet cloaths, put him to bed in my cabin; and I having a large provision of stores on board, and no concern in the ship, grew very fond of him, and supplied him with every thing he wanted. In our frequent discourses together, he had several times dropped loose hints of his past transactions, which but the more inflamed me with impatience to hear the whole of them. About this time, having just begun to double the Cape, our captain thought of watering at the first convenient place; and finding the stranger had no money to pay his passage, and that he had been from England no less than thirty-five years, despairing of his reward for conducting him thither, he intimated to him that he must expect to be put on shore to shift for himself, when we put in for water. This entirely sunk the stranger's spirits, and gave me great concern; inso-much that I fully resolved, if the captain should really prove such a brute, to take the payment of his passage on myself.

As we came nearer to the destined watering, the captain spoke the plainer of his intentions, (for I had not yet hinted my design to him or any one else;) and one morning the stranger came into my cabin, with tears in his eyes, telling me, he verily believed the captain would be as good as his word, and set him on shore, which he very much dreaded. I did not chuse to tell him immediately what I designed in his favour, but asked him if he could think of no way of satisfying the captain, or any one else who might thereupon be induced to engage for him; and farther, how he expected to live when he should get to England, a man quite forgotten and penniless. Hereupon he told me he had, ever since his being on board, considering his destitute condition, entertained a thought of having his adventures written; which, as there was something so uncommon in them, he was sure the world would be glad to know; and he had flattered himself with hopes of raising somewhat by the sale of them to put him in a way of living; but as it was plain now he should never see England without my assistance, if I would answer for his passage, and write his life, he would communicate to me a faithful narrative

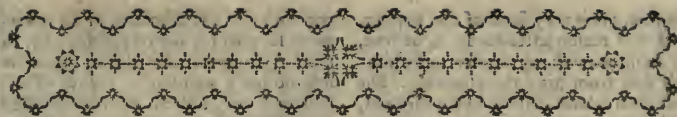
narrative thereof, which he believed would pay me to the full, any charge I might be at on his account. I was very well pleased with this overture; not from the prospect of gain by the copy, but from the expectation I had of being fully satisfied in what I had so long desired to know: so I told him I would make him easy in that respect. This quite transported him: he caressed me, and called me his deliverer; and was then going open-mouthed to the captain to tell him so. But I put a stop to that: 'For,' says I, 'though I insist upon hearing your story, the captain may yet relent of his purpose, and not leave you on shore; and if that should prove the case, I shall neither part with my money for you, nor you with your interest in your adventures to me.' Whereupon he agreed I was right, and desisted.

When we had taken in best part of our water, and the boat was going it's last turn, the captain ordered up the strange man, as they called him, and told him he must go on board the boat, which was to leave him on shore with some few provisions. I happening to hear nothing of these orders, they were so sudden, the poor man was afraid, after all, he should have been hurried to land without my knowledge; but begging very hard of the captain only for leave to speak with me before he went, I was called, (though with some reluctance; for the captain disliked me, for the liberties I frequently took with him, on account of his brutal behaviour.) I expostulated with the cruel wretch on the inhumanity of the action he was about; telling him, if he had resolved the poor man should perish, it would have been better to have suffered him to do so, when he was at the last extremity, than to expose him afresh, by this means, to a death as certain, in a more lingering and miserable way. But the savage being resolved, and nothing moved by what I said, I paid him part of the passage down, and agreed to pay the rest at our arrival in England.

Thus having reprieved the poor man, the next thing was to enter upon my new employ of amanuensis: and having a long space of time before us, we allotted two hours every morning for the purpose of writing down his life from his own mouth; and frequently, when wind and weather kept us below, we spent some time of an afternoon in the same exercise, till we had quite compleated it. But then there were some things in it so undescrivable by words, that if I had not had some knowledge also in drawing, our history had been very incomplete. Thus it must have been, especially in the description of the *Glumms* and *Gawrys* therein mentioned. In order to gain (that so I might communicate) a clear idea of these, I made several drawings of them from his discourses and accounts; and, at length, after divers trials, I made such exact delineations, that he declared they could not have been more perfect resemblances if I had drawn them from the life. Upon a survey, he confessed the very persons themselves could not have been more exact. I also drew with my pencil the figure of an aerial engagement, which, having likewise had his approbation, I have given a draught of.

Then, having finished the work to our mutual satisfaction, I locked it up, in order to peruse it at leisure, intending to have presented it

to him at our arrival in England, to dispose of as he pleased, in such a way as might have conduced most to his profit; for I resolved, notwithstanding our agreement, and the obligations he was under to me, that the whole of that should be his own. But he, having been in a declining state some time before we reached shore, died the very night we landed; and his funeral falling upon me, I thought I had the greatest right to the manuscript: which, however, I had no design to have parted with; but shewing it to some judicious friends, I have by them been prevailed with not to conceal from the world what may prove so very entertaining, and perhaps useful.



THE

LIFE AND ADVENTURES

OF

PETER WILKINS.

VOLUME THE FIRST.

CHAP. I.

GIVING AN ACCOUNT OF THE AUTHOR'S BIRTH AND FAMILY—THE FONDNESS OF HIS MOTHER—HIS BEING PUT TO AN ACADEMY AT SIXTEEN BY THE ADVICE OF HIS FRIEND—HIS THOUGHTS OF HIS OWN ILLITERATURE.



I WAS born at Penhale, in the county of Cornwall, on the twenty-first day of December 1685, about four months after my father, Peter Wilkins, who was a zealous protestant of the church of England, had been executed by Jefferys, in Somersetshire, for joining in the design of raising the Duke of Monmouth to the British throne. I was named, after my father and grandfather, Peter, and was my father's only child by Alice his wife, the daughter of John Capert, a clergyman in a neighbouring village. My grandfather was a shopkeeper at Newport, who, by great frugality, and extraordinary application, had raised a fortune of about one hundred and sixty pounds a year in lands, and a considerable sum of ready-money; all which at his death devolved upon my father, as his only child; who being no less parsimonious

than my grandfather, and living upon his own estate, had much improved it in value, before his marriage with my mother; but he coming to that unhappy end, my mother, after my birth, placed all her affection upon me, (her growing hopes as she called me) and used every method, in my minority, of encreasing the store for my benefit.

In this manner she went on, till I grew too big, as I thought, for confinement at the apron-string, being then about fourteen years of age; and having met with so much indulgence from her, for that reason, found very little or no contradiction from any body else; so I looked on myself as a person of some consequence, and began to take all opportunities of enjoying the company of my neighbours, who hinted, frequently, that the restraint I was under, was too great a curb upon an inclination like mine of seeing the world: but my mother, still impatient of any little absence, by excessive fondness, and encouraging every inclination I seemed to have, when she could be a partaker with me, kept me within bounds of restraint, till I arrived at my sixteenth year.

About this time I got acquainted with a country gentleman, of a small paternal estate, which had been never the better for being in his hands, and had some uneasy demands upon it.

He

He soon grew very fond of me, hoping, as I had reason afterwards to believe, by an union with my mother, to set himself free from his entanglements. She was then about thirty-five years old, and still continued my father's widow, out of particular regard to me, as I have all the reason in the world to believe. She was really a beautiful woman, and of a sanguine complexion; but had always carried herself with so much reserve, and given so little encouragement to any of the other sex, that she had passed her widowhood with very few solicitations to alter her way of life. This gentleman observing my mother's conduct, in order to ingratiate himself with her, had shewn numberless instances of regard for me; and, as he told my mother, had observed many things in my discourse, actions, and turn of mind, that presaged wonderful expectations from me, if my genius was but properly cultivated.

This discourse, from a man of very good parts, and esteemed by every body an accomplished gentleman, by degrees wrought upon my mother, and more and more inflamed her with a desire of adding what lustre she could to my applauded abilities, and influenced her so far as to ask his advice in what manner most properly to proceed with me. My gentleman then had his desire; for he feared not the widow, could he but properly dispose of her charge; so having desired a little time to consider of a matter of such importance, he soon after told her he thought the most useful method of establishing me, would be at an academy, kept by a very worthy and judicious gentleman, about thirty, or more, miles from us, in Somersetshire; where, if I could but be admitted, the master taking in but a stated number of students at a time, he did not in the least doubt but I should fully answer the character he had given her of me, and out-shine most of my cotemporaries.

My mother, over-anxious for my good, seeming to listen to this proposal, my friend (as I call him) proposed taking a journey himself to the academy, to see if any place was vacant for my reception, and learn the terms of my admission; and in three days time returned with an engaging account of the place, the master, the

regularity of the scholars, of an apartment secured for my reception, and, in short, whatever else might captivate my mother's opinion in favour of his scheme; and, indeed, though he acted principally from another motive, as was plain afterwards, I cannot help thinking he believed it to be the best way of disposing of a lad, sixteen years old, born to a pretty fortune, and who, at that age, could but just read a chapter in the Testament: for he had before beat my mother quite out of her inclination to a grammar-school in the neighbourhood, from a contempt, he said, it would bring upon me from lads much my juniors in years, by being placed in the first rudiments of learning with them.

Well, the whole concern of my mother's little family was now employed in fitting me out for my expedition; and as my friend had been so instrumental in bringing it about, he never missed a day enquiring how preparations went on; and, during the process, by humouring me, ingratiated himself more and more with my mother, but without seeming in the least to aim at it.

In short, the hour of my departure arrived; and, though I had never been master of above sixpence at one time, unless at a fair, or so, for immediate spending, my mother, thinking to make my heart easy at our separation, (which, had it appeared otherwise, would have broke her's, and spoiled all) gave me a double pistole in gold, and a little silver in my pocket to prevent my changing it.

Thus I, (the coach waiting for us at the door) having been preached into a good-liking of the scheme by my friend, who now insisted upon making one of our company to introduce us, mounted the carriage with more alacrity than could be expected for one who had never before been beyond the smoak of his mother's chimney; but the thoughts I had conceived, from my friend's discourse, of liberty in the academick way, and the weight of so much money in my pocket, as I then imagined would scarce ever be exhausted, were prevailing cordials to keep my spirits on the wing. We lay at an inn that night, near the master's house, and the next day I was initiated; and, at parting with me, my friend

friend presented me with a guinea. When I found myself thus rich, I must say I heartily wished they were all fairly at home again, that I might have time to count my cash, and dispose of such part of it as I had already appropriated to several uses then in embryo.

The next morning left me master of my wishes; for my mother came and took her last (though she little thought it) leave of me, and smothering me with her caresses and prayers for my well-doing, in the height of her ardour, put into my hand another guinea, promising to see me again quickly; and desiring me, in the mean time, to be a very good husband, which I have since taken to be a sort of prophetic speech, she bid me farewell.

I shall not trouble you with the reception I met from my master, or his scholars; or tell you how soon I made friends of all my companions, by some trifling largesses which my stock enabled me to bestow as occasion required: but I must inform you, that, after sixteen years of idleness at home, I had but little heart to my nouns and pronouns, which now began to be crammed upon me; and being the eldest lad in the house, I sometimes regretted the loss of the time past, and at other times despaired of ever making a scholar at my years; and was ashamed to stand like a great lubber, declining of *bac mulier*; a woman, whilst my school-fellows, and juniors by five years, were engaged in the love-stories of Ovid, or the luscious songs of Horace. I own these thoughts almost overcame me, and threw me into a deep melancholy, of which I soon after, by letter, informed my mother; who (by the advice, as I suppose, of my friend, by this time her suitor) sent me word to mind my studies, and I should want for nothing.

CHAP. II.

HOW HE SPENT HIS TIME AT THE ACADEMY—AN INTRIGUE WITH A SERVANT-MAID THERE—SHE DECLARES HERSELF WITH CHILD BY HIM—HER EXPOSTULATIONS TO HIM—HE IS PUT TO IT FOR MONEY—REFUSED IT FROM HOME BY HIS FRIEND, WHO

HAD MARRIED HIS MOTHER—IS DRAWN IN TO MARRY THE MAID—SHE LIES-IN AT HER AUNT'S—RETURNS TO HER SERVICE—HE HAS ANOTHER CHILD BY HER.

I Had now been passing my time for about three months in this melancholy way; and, you may imagine, under that disadvantage, had made but little progress in my learning; when one of our maids taking notice one day of my uneasiness, as I sat musing in my chamber according to my custom, began to railly me, that I was certainly in love, I was so sad. Indeed, I never had a thought of love before; but the good-natured girl seeming to pity me, and seriously asking me the cause, I fairly opened my heart to her; and, for fear my master should know it, gave her half-a-crown to be silent. This last engagement fixed her my devotee, and from that time we had frequent conferences in confidence together; till at length inclination, framed by opportunity, produced the date of a world of concern to me: for, about six months after my arrival at the academy, instead of proving my parts by my scholarship, I had proved my manhood, by being the destined father of an infant, which my female correspondent then assured me would soon be my own.

We; nevertheless, held on our frequent intercourse; nor was I so alarmed at the news as I ought to have been, till about two months after; when Patty (for that was the only name I then knew her by) explained herself to me in the following terms—‘ You know, Mr. Peter, how matters are with me; I should be very sorry, for your sake, and my own too, to reveal my shame; but, in spite of us both, nature will shew itself; and, truly, I think, some care should be taken, and some method proposed, to preserve the infant, and avoid, as far as may be, the inconveniences that may attend us; for here is now no room for delay.’ This speech, I own, gave me the first reflection I ever had in my life, and locked up all my faculties for a long time; nor was I able, for the variety of ideas that crowded my brain, to make a word of answer, but stood like an image of stone; till Patty, seeing my confusion, desired me

me to recollect my reason; for as it was too late to undo what had been done, it remained now only to act with that prudence and caution which the nature of the case required; and that, for her part, she would concur in every reasonable measure I should approve of: but, I must remember, she was only a servant, and had very little due to her for wages, and not a penny besides that; and that there must necessarily be a preparation made for the reception of the infant, when time should produce it. I now began to see the absolute necessity of all she said; but how to accomplish it was not in me to comprehend. My own small matter of money was gone, and had been so a long time; we therefore agreed I should write to my mother for a fresh supply. I did so; and, to my great confusion, was answered by my former friend, in the following words—

‘ SON PETER,
 ‘ YOUR mother and I are much
 ‘ surprized you should write for
 ‘ money, having so amply provided
 ‘ for you; but as it is not many months
 ‘ to Christmas, when possibly we may
 ‘ send for you home, you must make
 ‘ yourself easy till then; as a school-
 ‘ boy, with all necessaries found him;
 ‘ can’t have much occasion for money.
 ‘ *Your loving father,*

‘ J. G.’

Imagine, if it is possible, my consternation at the receipt of this letter. I began to think I should be tricked out of what my father and grandfather had, with so much pains and industry, for many years been heaping up for me, and had a thousand thoughts all together, jussling out each other; so could resolve on nothing. I then shewed Patty the letter, and we both condoled my hard fortune, but saw no remedy. Time wore away, and nothing done, or like to be; as I could see. For my part, I was like one distracted, and no more able to assist, or counsel what should be done, than a child in arms. At length poor Patty, who had sat thinking some time, began, with telling me she had formed a scheme which in some measure might help us; but, fearing it might be disagreeable to me, she durst not mention it, till I should assure her, whatever I thought

of that, I would think no worse of her for proposing it. This preparatory introduction startled me a great deal; for it darted into my head, she waited for my concurrence to destroy the child, to which I could never have consented. But, upon my assuring her that I would not think the worse of her for whatever she should propose, but freely give her my opinion upon it, she told me, as she could see no other way before us, but what tended to our disgrace and ruin, if I would marry her, she would immediately quit her place, and retire to her aunt, who had brought her up from a child, and had enough prettily to live upon; who, she did not doubt, would entertain her as my wife; but she was assured, upon any other score, or under any other name, would prove her most inveterate enemy. When Patty had made an end, I was glad to find it no worse; and, revolving matters a little in my mind, both as to affairs at home, and the requested marriage, I concluded upon this latter, and had a great inclination to acquaint my mother of it; but was diverted from that, by suspecting it might prove a good handle for my new father, to work with my mother some mischief against me; so determined to marry forthwith, send Patty to her aunt’s, and remain still at the academy myself, till I should see what turn things would take at home. Accordingly, the next day, good part of Patty’s wages went to tie the connubial knot, and to the honest parson for a bribe to ante-date the certificate; and the very soon after took up the rest, to defray her journey to her aunt’s.

Though Patty was within two months of her time, she had so managed, that no one perceived it; and, getting safe to her aunt’s, was delivered of a daughter, of which she wrote me word, and said, she hoped to see me at the end of her month. ‘How,’ thought I, ‘can she expect to see me; money I have none!’ and then I despaired of leave for a journey, if I had it; and to go without leave, would only arm J. G. against me, as I perceived plainly his interest and mine were very remote things; so I resolved to quit all thoughts of a journey, and wait till opportunity better served; for seeing my wife and child, and our good aunt, to whom we

we were so much obliged. While these and such like cogitations engrossed my whole attention, I was most pleasingly surprized one day, upon my return from a musing walk, by the river side, at the end of our garden, where I frequently got my tasks, to find Patty sitting in the kitchen, with my old mistress, my master's mother, who managed his house, he having been a widower many years. The sight of her almost overcame me, as I had bolted into the kitchen, and was seen by my old mistress, before I had seen Patty was with her. The old lady perceiving me discomposed, enquired into the cause, which I directly imputed to the symptoms of an ague, that, I told her, I had felt upon me best part of the morning. She, a good motherly woman, feeling my pulse, and satisfying herself of it's disorder, immediately ran to her closet to bring me a cordial, which she assured me had done wonders in the like cases; so that I had but just time to embrace Patty, and enquire after our aunt and daughter, before Madam returned with the cordial. Having drank it, and given thanks, I was going to withdraw, but she would not part with me so; for nothing less than my knowledge, that this cordial was of her own making, from whence she had the receipt, and an exact catalogue of the several cures it had done, would serve her turn; which, taking up full three quarters of an hour, gave room to Patty and me to enjoy each other's glances for that time, to our mutual satisfaction. At last, the old prattlebox having made a short pause, to recover breath, from the narrative of the cordial—'Mr. Peter,' says she, 'you look as if you did not know poor Patty; she has not left me so long that you should forget her; she is a good tight wench, and I was sorry to part with her; but she is out of place, she says, and as that dirty creature Nan is gone, I think to take her again.' I told her, I well knew she was judge of a good servant, and I did not doubt Patty was such, if she thought so; and then I made my exit, lighter in heart by a pound than I came.

I shall not tire you any farther with the amours between self and Patty; but to let you know she quitted her

place again seven months after, upon the same score.

CHAP. III.

MINDS HIS STUDIES—INFORMS HIS MASTER OF HIS MOTHER'S MARRIAGE, AND USAGE OF HIM—HEARS OF HER DEATH—MAKES HIS MASTER HIS GUARDIAN—GOES WITH HIM TO TAKE POSSESSION OF HIS ESTATE—IS INFORMED ALL IS GIVEN TO HIS FATHER-IN-LAW—MORAL REFLECTIONS ON HIS CONDITION, AND ON HIS FATHER'S CRIMES.

I Was now near nineteen years of age; and though I had so much more in my head than my school-learning, I know not how it happened, but ever since the commencement of my amour with Patty, having somebody to disburden my mind to; and to participate in my concerns, I had been much easier, and had kept true tally with my book, with more than usual delight; and being arrived to an age to comprehend what I heard and read, I could, from the general idea I had of things, form a pretty regular piece of Latin, without being able to repeat the very rules it was done by; so that I had the acknowledgment of my master for the best capacity he ever had under his tuition: this, he not sparing frequently to mention it before me, was the acutest spur he could have applied to my industry; and now, having his good will, I began to disuse set hours of exercise, but at my convenience applied myself to my studies, as I best pleased, being always sure to perform as much, or more, than he ever enjoined me; till I grew exceedingly in his confidence, and by reason of my age, (though I was but small, yet manly) I became rather his companion upon parties, than his direct pupil.

It was upon one of these parties I took the opportunity to declare the dissatisfaction I had at my mother's second marriage. 'Sir,' says I, 'surely I was of age to have known it first, especially, considering the affection my mother had always shewn to me, and my never once having done the

‘least thing to disoblige her; but, Sir,’ said I, ‘something else I fear is intended, by my mother’s silence to me; for I have never received above three letters from her since I came here, which is now, you know, three years, and those were within the first three months.’ I then shewed him the fore-mentioned letter I received from my new father-in-law, and assured him, that gave me the first hint of this second marriage.

I found, by the attention my master gave to my relation, he seemed to suspect this marriage would prove detrimental to me; but not, on the sudden, knowing what to say to it, he told me he would consider of it; and, by all means, advised me to write a very obliging letter to my new father, with my humble request, that he would please to order me home the next recess of our learning. I did so, under my master’s dictation; and not long after received an answer to the following effect—

‘SON PETER,

‘YOUR mother has been dead a good while; and as to your request, it will be only expensive, and of little use; for a person who must live by his studies can’t apply to them too closely.’

This letter, if I had a little hope left, quite subdued my fortitude, and well-nigh reduced me to clay. However, with tears in my eyes, I shewed it to my master; who, good man! wishing me well; ‘Peter,’ says he, ‘what can this mean, here is some mystery concealed in it; here is some ill design on foot!’ Then taking the letter into his hand, ‘A person who must live by his studies,’ says he; ‘here is more meant than we can think for. Why, have not you a pretty estate to live upon, when it comes to your hands?’ ‘Peter,’ says he, ‘I would advise you to go to your father, and enquire how your affairs are left; but I am afraid to let you go alone, and will, when my students depart at Christmas, accompany you myself with all my heart; for, you must know, I have advised on your affair already, and find you are of age to chuse yourself a guardian, who may be any relation or friend you can confide in;

‘and may see you have justice done you.’ I immediately thanked him for the hint, and begged him to accept of the trust, as my only friend, having very few, if any near relations: this he with great readiness complied with, and was admitted accordingly.

So soon as our scholars were gone home, my master lending me a horse, we set out together, to possess ourselves of all my father’s real estate, and such part of the personal as he had been advised would belong to me. Well, we arrived at the old house, but were not received with such extraordinary tokens of friendship, as would give the least room to suppose we were welcome. For my part, all I said, or could say, was, that I was very sorry for my mother’s death. My father replied, so was he. Here we paused, and might have sat silent till this time for me, if my master, a grave man, who had seen the world, and was unwilling any part of our time there, which he guessed would be short, should be lost, had not broke silence. ‘Mr. G.’ says he, ‘I see the loss of Master Wilkins’s mother puts him under some confusion; so that you will excuse me, as his preceptor and friend, in making some enquiry how his affairs stand, and how his effects are disposed; as I don’t doubt you have taken care to schedule every thing that will be coming to him; and though he is not yet of the necessary age for taking upon himself the management of his estate, he is nevertheless of capacity to understand the nature, and quantum of it, and to shew his approbation of the disposition of it, as if he was a year or two older.’ During this discourse, Mr. G. turned pale, then reddened, was going to interrupt, then checked himself; but, however, kept silence till my master had done; when, with a sneer, he replied, ‘Sir, I must own myself a great stranger to your discourse; nor can I, for my life, imagine what your harangue tends to; but sure I am, I know of no estate, real or personal, or any thing else belonging to young Mr. Wilkins, to make a schedule of, as you call it; but this I know, his mother had an estate in land, near two hundred a year, and also a good sum of money, when I married her; but the estate

‘She

‘ she settled on me before her marriage, to dispose of after her decease as I saw fit; and her money and goods are all come to my sole use, as her husband.’ I was just ready to drop, while Mr. G. gave this relation, and was not able to reply a word; but my master, though sufficiently shocked at what he had heard, replied—‘ Sir, I am informed the estate, and also the money, you mention, was Mr. Wilkins’s father’s at his death; and I am surprized to think any one should have a better title to them than my pupil, his only child.’—‘ Sir,’ says Mr. G. ‘ you are deceived; and though what you say seems plausible enough, and is in some part true, as that the late Mr. Wilkins had such estate, and some hundreds, I may say thousands, at his death; yet you seem ignorant that he made a deed, just before entering into the fatal rebellion, by which he gave my late wife both the estate, money, and every thing else he had, absolutely, without any conditions whatsoever; all which, on his unhappy execution, she enjoyed; and now of right, as I told you before, belongs to me: however, as I have no child, if Peter behaves well under your direction, I have thoughts of paying another year’s board for him, and then he must shift for himself.’

‘ Oh!’ cried I, ‘ for the mercy of some savage beast to devour me! Is this what I have been cocker’d up for! Why was I not placed out to some laborious craft, where I might have drudged for bread in my proper station! But, I fear, it is too late to enquire into what is past, and must submit.’

My master, good man! was thunderstruck at what he had heard; and finding our business done there, we took our leaves; after Mr. G. had again repeated, that if I behaved well, my preceptor should keep me another year, which was all I must expect from him; and, at my departure, he gave me a crown-piece, which I then durst not refuse, for fear of offending my master.

We made the best of our way home again to my tutor’s, where I staid but a week to consider what I should do with myself. In this time he did all he could to comfort me; telling me, if I would stay with him, and become his

usher, he would compleat my learning for nothing, and allow me a salary for my trouble. But my heart was too lofty to think of becoming an usher, within so little a way from mine own estate in other hands. However, since I had not a penny of money to endeavour at recovering my right with, I told my master I would consider of his proposal.

During my stay with him, he used all methods to make me as easy as possible; and frequently moralized with so much effect, that I was almost convinced I ought to submit, and be content. Amongst the rest of his discourse, he endeavoured to shew me, (one day, after I had been loudly condemning my cruel fortune, and saying I was born to be unhappy) that I was mistaken, if I thought, or imagined, it was chance or accident that had been against me, when I complained of fortune; ‘ For,’ says he, ‘ Peter, there is nothing done below, but is at least fore-known, if not decreed, above; and our business in life is to believe so: not that I would have such belief make us careless, and think it to no purpose to strive, as some do; who being persuaded that our actions are not in our own choice, but that being pressed by an irresistible decree we are forced to act this or that, fancy we must be necessarily happy or miserable hereafter; or, as others, who, for fear of falling upon that shocking principle, would even deprive the Almighty of fore-knowledge, lest it should consequentially amount to a decree—“ For,” say they, “ what is fore-known, will, and must be.” But I would have you act so, as that, let either of these tenets be true, you may still be sure of making yourself easy and happy: and for that purpose let me recommend to you an uniform life of justice and piety; always chusing the good rather than the bad side of every action; for this, say they what they will to the contrary, is not above the power of a reasonable being to practise; and doing so, you may without scruple say, “ If there is fore-knowledge of my actions, or they are decreed, I then am one who is fore-known or decreed to be happy.” And this, without farther speculation, you will find the only means always to

'keep you so; for all men, of all denominations, fully allow this happy effect to follow good actions. Again, Peter, a person acting in a vicious course, with such an opinion in his head as above, must surely be very miserable, as his very actions themselves must pronounce the decree against him: whilst, therefore, we have not heard the decree read, you see we may easily give sentence whether it be for good or evil to us, by the tenor and course of our own actions.

'You are not now to learn, Peter, that the crimes of the father are often punished in the children, often in the father himself; sometimes in both, and not seldom in neither, in this life; and though, at first, one should think the future punishment, annexed to bad actions, was sufficient, still it is necessary some should suffer here also for an example to others; we being much more affected with what the eye sees, than what the heart only meditates upon.

'Now, to bring it to our own case: your father, Peter, rose against the lawful magistrate, to deprive him (it matters not that he was a bad one) of his lawful power. Your father's policy was such, and his design so well laid, as he thought, that upon any ill success to himself, he had secured his estate to go in the way of all others he could wish to have it, and sits down very well contented, that, happen what would, he should bite the government, in preventing the forfeiture. But, lo! his policy is as a wall of sand blown down with a puff! for it is to you it ought, even himself being umpire, to have come, as no one would think he could prize any before you his own child. Now, could he look from the grave, and know what passes here, and see Mr. G. in possession of all he fancied he had secured for you, what a weak and short-sighted creature would he find himself! If it be said, he did not know, he should have a child, then herein appears God's policy beyond man's; for he knew it, and has so ordered, that that child should be disinherited; for, by the way, Peter, take this for a maxim, wherever the first principle of an action is ill, no good consequence can possibly ever be an attendant on it.

'Could he, as I said before, but look up and see you, his only child, undone by the very instrument he designed for your security, how pungent would be his anxiety! I say, Peter, though there is something so unaccountable, to human wisdom, in such events of things, yet there is something therein so reasonable and just withal, that by a prying eye, the Supreme Hand may very visibly be seen in them. Now, this being plainly the case before us, and herein the glory of the Almighty exalted, rest content under it, and let not this disappointment, befallen you for your father's faults, be attended with others sent down for your own; but remember this, the Hand that depresses a man, is no less able to exalt and establish him.'

CHAP. IV.

DEPARTS SECRETLY FROM HIS MASTER—TRAVELS TO BRISTOL—RELIGIOUS THOUGHTS BY THE WAY—ENTERS ON SHIPBOARD, AND IS MADE CAPTAIN'S STEWARD.

I Seemed to be very well satisfied whilst my master was speaking; but though I thought he talked like an angel, my former uneasiness seized me at parting with him. In short, without more consideration, I rose in the morning early, and marched off, having first wrote to my wife, at her aunt's, relating the state of the case to her, with my resolution to leave England the first opportunity, giving her what comfort I could, assuring her, if I ever was a gainer in life, she should not fail to be a partaker, and promising also to let her know where I settled. I walked at a great rate, for fear my master's kindness should prompt him to send after me; and taking the bye-ways, I reached by dark-night a little village, where I resolved to halt. Upon enquiry, I found myself thirty-five miles from my master's. I had eaten nothing all day, and was very hungry and weary, but my crown-piece was as yet whole; however, I fed very sparingly, being over-pressed with the distress of my affairs, and the confusion of my thoughts. I slept that night tolerably;

lerably; but the morning brought it's face of horror with it. I had enquired over night where I was, and been informed that I was not above sixteen miles from Bristol, for which place I then resolved. At my setting out in the morning, after I had walked about three miles, and had recollected a little my master's last discourse, I found by degrees my spirit grew calmer than it had been since I left Mr. G. at my house, (as I shall ever call it) and looking into myself for the cause, found another set of thoughts were preparing a passage into my mind, which did not carry half the dread and terror with them that their predecessors had; for I began to cast aside the difficulties and apprehensions I before felt in my way, and encouraging the present motions, soon became sensible of the benefit of a virtuous education; and though what I had hitherto done in the immediate service of God, I must own had been performed from force, custom, and habit, and without the least attention to the object of the duty; yet, as under my mother at home, and my master at the academy, I had been always used to say my prayers, as they called it, morning and night; I began, with a sort of superstitious reflection, to accuse myself of having omitted that duty the night before, and also, at my setting out in the morning, and very much to blame myself for it, and, at the same instant, even wondered at myself for that blame. 'What,' says I, 'is the real use of this praying? and to whom or to what do we pray? I see no one to pray to; neither have I ever thought that my prayers would be answered. It is true, they are worded as if we prayed to God: but he is in Heaven, does he concern himself with us, who can do him no service? Can I think all my prayers that I have said, from day to day, so many years, have been heard by him! No, sure; if they had, I should scarce have sustained this hard fate in my fortune. But hold, how have I prayed to him? Have I as earnestly prayed to him, as I used to petition my mother for any thing when I wanted it against her inclination? No, I can't say I have. And would my mother have granted me such things, if she had not thought I from my heart desired them, when

I used to be so earnest with her? No, surely; I can't say she had any reason for it. But I had her, indeed, before me; now I have not God in my view, he is in Heaven: yet, let me see, my master (and I can't help thinking he must know) used to say, that God is a spirit, and not confined by the incumbrance of a body, as we are; now, if it is so, why may he not virtually be present with me, though I don't perceive him? Why may he not be at once in Heaven and elsewhere? For, if he consists not of parts, nothing can circumscribe him: and, truly, I believe it must be so; for if he is of that supreme power as he is represented, he could never act in so unconfined a capacity, under the restraint of place; but if he is an operative and purely spiritual Being, then I can see no reason why his virtual essence should not be diffused through all nature; and then, (which I begin to think most likely) why should I not suppose him ever present with me, and able to hear me? And why should not I, when I pray, have a full idea of the being, though not of any corporeal parts or form of God, and so have actually something to be intent upon in my prayers? and not do as I have hitherto done, say so many words only upon my knees; which, I cannot help thinking may be as well without either sense or meaning in themselves, as without a proper object in my mind to direct them unto.'

These thoughts agitated me at least two miles, working stronger and stronger in me; till at length, bursting into tears, 'Have I been doing nothing,' says I, 'in the sight of God, under the name of prayers, for so many years? Yes, it is certainly so. Well, by the grace of God, it shall be so no longer; I will try somewhat more.' So looking round about me, to see if I was quite alone, I stepped into an adjoining copse, and could scarce refrain falling on my knees, till I came to a proper place for kneeling in. I then poured forth my whole soul and spirit to God; and all my strength, and every member, every faculty, was to the utmost employed, for a considerable time, in that most agreeable as well as useful duty. I would, indeed, have begun with my accustomed prayers, and

and had repeated some words of them; when, as though against and contrary to my design, I was carried away by such rapturous effusions, that, to this hour, when I reflect thereon, I cannot believe but I was moved to them by a much more than human impulse. However, this extasy did not last above a quarter of an hour; but it was considerably longer before my spirits subsided to their usual frame. When I had a little composed myself, how was I altered; how did I condemn myself for all my past disquiet! what calm thanks did I return for the ease and satisfaction of mind I then enjoyed! And coming to a small rivulet, I drank an hearty draught of water, and contentedly proceeding on my journey, I reached Bristol about four o'clock in the afternoon. Having refreshed myself, I went the same evening to the Kay, to enquire what ships were in the river, whither bound, and when they would depart. My business was with the sailors, of whom there were at that time great numbers there; but I could meet with no employ, though I gave out I would gladly enter myself before the mast: after I had done the best I could, but without success, I returned to the little house I had dined at, and went to bed very pensive. I did not forget my prayers; but I could by no means be roused to such devotion as I felt in the morning. Next day I walked again to the Kay, asking all I met, who looked like seafaring men, for employment; but could hear of none, there being many waiting for births; and I feared my appearance (which was not so mean as most of that sort of gentry is) would prove no small disappointment to my preferment that way. At last, being out of heart with my frequent repulses, I went to a landing-place just by, and as I asked some sailors, who were putting two gentlemen on shore, if they wanted a hand on board their ship, one of the gentlemen, whom I afterwards found to be the master of a vessel bound to the coast of Africa, turned back, and looking earnestly on me, 'Young man,' says he, 'do you want employment on board?' I immediately made him a bow, and answered, 'Yes, Sir.' Said he, 'There is no talking in this weather,' (for it then blew almost a storm)

'but step into that tavern,' pointing to the place, 'and I will be with you presently.'—I went thither, and not long after came my future master. He asked me many questions, but the first was, whether I had been at sea. I told him no; but I did not doubt soon to learn the duty of a sailor. He then looked on my hand, and shaking his head, told me it would not do, for I had too soft a hand. I told him I was determined for the sea, and that my hand and heart should go together; and I hoped my hand would soon harden, though not my heart. He then told me, it was pity to take such a pretty young fellow before the mast; but if I understood accounts tolerably, and could write a good hand, he would make me his steward, and make it worth my while. I answered in the affirmative, joyfully accepting his offer; but on his asking me where my chest was, ('For,' says he, 'if the wind had not been so strong against me, I had fallen down the river this morning,') I looked very blank, and plainly told him I had no other stores than I carried on my back. The captain smiled. Says he, 'Young man, I see you are a novice; why, the meanest sailor in my ship has a chest, at least, and perhaps something in it: come,' says he, 'my lad, I like your looks; be diligent and honest, I will let you have a little money to set you out, and deduct it in your pay.' He was then pulling out his purse, when I begged him, as he seemed to shew me so great a kindness, that he would order somebody to buy what necessaries he knew I should want for me, or I should be under as great a difficulty to know what to get, and where to buy them, as I should have been at for want of them. He commended my prudence, and said he would buy them, and send them on board himself; so bid me trouble myself no more about them, but go to the ship, in the return of his boat, and stay there till he came; giving me a ticket to the boat's crew to take me in. When I came to the shore, the boat was gone off, and at a good distance; but I hailed them, and shewing my ticket, they put back, and took me safe to the ship; heartily glad that I was entered upon my new service.

CHAP. V.

HIS FIRST ENTERTAINMENT ON BOARD—SETS SAIL—HIS SICKNESS—ENGAGEMENT WITH A FRENCH PRIVATEER—IS TAKEN AND LAID IN IRONS—TWENTY-ONE PRISONERS TURNED ADRIFT IN A SMALL BOAT WITH ONLY TWO DAYS PROVISION.

BEING once on board, and in pay, I thought I was a man for myself, and set about considering how to behave; and nobody knowing, as yet, upon what footing I came on board, they took me for a passenger, as my dress did not at all bespeak me a sailor; so every one, as I fauntered about, had something to say to me. By and by comes a pert young fellow up, 'Sir,' says he, 'your servant; what, I see, our captain has picked up a passenger at last.'—'Passenger,' says I, 'you are pleased to be merry, Sir; I am no passenger.'—'Why, pray,' says he, 'what may you be, then?'—'Sir,' says I, 'the captain's steward.'—'You impertinent puppy,' says he, 'what an answer you give me; you the captain's steward! No, Sir, that place, I can assure you, is in better hands!' and away he turned.—I knew not what to think of it, but was terribly afraid I should draw myself into some scrape. By and by, others asked me, some one thing, some another, and I was very cautious what answers I made them, for fear of offence: till a gravisish sailor came and sat down by me; and, after talking of the weather, and other indifferent matters, 'Pray,' says I, 'Sir, who is that gentleman that was so affronted at me soon after I came on board?'—'Oh,' says he, 'a proud insignificant fellow, the captain's steward: but don't mind him,' says he, 'he uses the captain himself as bad; they have had high words just before the captain went on shore; and had he used me, as he did him, I should have made no ceremony of tipping him over-board, a rascal!'—Says I, 'you surprize me, for the captain sent me on board to be his steward, and agreed with me about it this afternoon.'—'Hush,' says he, 'I see how it will go; the captain, if

that's the case, will discharge him when he comes on board; and, indeed, I believe he would not have kept him so long, but we have waited for a wind, and he could not provide himself.'

The captain came on board at night; and the first thing he did was, to demand the keys of Mr. Steward, which he gave to me, and ordered him on shore.

The next morning the captain went on shore himself; but the wind chopping about, and standing fair about noon, he returned then with my chest, and before night we were got into sailing order, and before the wind, with a brisk gale.

What happened the first fourteen days of our passage I know not, having been all that time so sick and weak, I could scarcely keep life and soul together; but after grew better and better. We prosecuted our voyage, touching, for about a week, at the Madeiras in our way. The captain grew very fond of me, and never put me to hard duty, and I passed my time, under his favour, very pleasantly. One evening, being within sixty leagues of the Cape of Palmes, calm weather, but the little wind we had against us, one of our men spied a sail, and gave the captain notice of it. He not suspecting danger, minded it little; and we made what way the wind would permit: but, night coming on, and the calm continuing, about peep of day we perceived we were infallibly fallen in with a French privateer; who, hoisting French colours, called out to us to strike. Our captain had scarce time to consider what to do, they were so near us; but as he had twenty-two men on board, and eight guns he could bring to, he called all hands on deck, and telling them the consequence of a surrender, asked them if they would stand by him. One and all swore they would fight the ship to the bottom, rather than fall into the privateer's hands. The captain immediately gave the word for a clear deck, prepared his fire-arms, and begged them to be active, and obey orders; and perceiving the privateer out-numbered our hands by abundance, he commanded all the small arms to be brought upon deck loaded, and to run out as many of the ship's guns as she could bring

bring to on one side; and to charge them all with small shot; then stand to till he gave directions.—The privateer being a light ship, and a small breeze arising, run up close to us; first firing one gun, then another, still calling out to us to strike; but we neither returned fire nor answer, till he came almost within pistol-shot of us, and seeing us a small vessel, thought to board us directly; but then our captain ordered a broadside, and immediately all hands to come on deck; himself standing there at the time of our first fire with his fusée in his hand, and near him I stood with another. We killed eight men and wounded several others. The privateer then fired a broadside through and through us. By this time our hands were all on deck, and the privateer pushing, in hopes to grapple and board us, we gave them a volley from thence, that did good execution; and then all hands to the ship's guns again, except four, who were left along with me to charge the small arms. It is incredible how soon they had fired the great guns, and were on deck again. This last fire, being with ball, raked the privateer miserably. Then we fired the small arms, and away to the ship's guns. This we did three times successively without loss of a man; and I believe if we could have held it once more, and no assistance had come to the privateer, she had sheered quite off: but our captain spying a sail at some distance behind the privateer, who lay to windward of us, and seeing by his glass it was a Frenchman, was almost dismayed; the same sight put courage into our enemies, who thereupon redoubled the attack; and, the first volley of their small arms shot our captain in the breast, upon which he dropped dead without stirring. I need not say, that sight shocked me exceedingly. Indeed, it disconcerted the whole action; and though our mate, a man of good courage and experience, did all that a brave man could do to animate the men, they apparently drooped, and the loss of the ship became inevitable; so we struck, and the Frenchman boarded us.

During the latter part of the engagement, we had two men killed, and five wounded, who died afterwards of their wounds. We, who were

alive, were all ordered on board the Frenchman; who, after rifling us, chained us two and two, and turned us into the hold. Our vessel was then ransacked; and the other privateer, who had suffered much the day before, in an engagement with an English twenty-gun ship of war, coming up, the prize was sent by her into port, where she herself was to refit.

In this condition did I, and fourteen of our crew, lie for six weeks; till the fetters on our legs had almost eaten to the bone, and the stench of the place had well-nigh suffocated us.

The Glorieux (for that was the name of the privateer who took us) saw nothing farther in five weeks worth her notice, which very much discouraged the men; and, consulting together, it was agreed to cruise more northward, between Sierra Leon and Cape de Verde; but, about noon, next day, they spied a sail, coming west north-west, with a fresh gale. The captain thereupon ordered all to be ready, and lie by for her. But, though she discerned us, she kept her way, bearing only more southward; when the wind shifting to north-east, she ran for it, full before the wind, and we after her with all the sail we could croud; and though she was a very good sailer, we gained upon her, being laden, and before night came pretty well up with her; but, being a large ship, and the evening hazy, we did not chuse to engage her till morning. The next morning we found she was slunk away; but we fetched her up, and, hoisting French colours, fired a shot; which she not answering, our captain ran along-side of her, and fired a broadside; then slackening upon her, a hard engagement ensued; the shot thumping so against our ship, that we prisoners, who had nothing to do in the action, expected death, one or other of us, every moment. The merchantman was so heavy loaded, and drew so much water, that she was very unwieldy in action; so after a fight of two hours, when most of her rigging and masts were cut and wounded, she struck. Twelve men were sent on board her, and her captain and several officers were ordered on board us.

There were thirty-eight persons in her, including passengers; all of whom, except five, and the like number which had

had been killed in the action, were sent chained into the hold to us, who had lain there almost six weeks. This prize put Monsieur into good heart, and determined him to return home with her. But in two days time, his new acquisition was found to have leaked so fast near the bottom, that before they were aware of it, the water was risen some feet. Several hands were employed to find out the leak; but all asserted it was too low to be come at: and as the pumps, with all the labour the prisoners, who were the persons put to it, could use, would not reduce it, but it still increased, they removed what goods they could into the privateer; and before they could unload it, the prize sunk.

The next thing they consulted upon, was, what to do with the prisoners, who, by the loss of the prize, were now grown too numerous to be trusted in the privateer; fearing, too, as they were now so far out at sea, by the great addition of mouths, they might soon be brought to short allowance; it was, on both accounts, resolved to give us the prize's boat, which they had saved, and turn us adrift to shift for ourselves. There were in all forty three of us; but the privateer having lost several of their own men in the two engagements, they looked us over, and picking out two and twenty of us, who were the most likely fellows for their purpose, the remaining one and twenty were committed to the boat, with about two days provision and a small matter of ammunition, and turned out.

CHAP. VI.

THE BOAT, TWO HUNDRED LEAGUES FROM LAND, MAKES NO WAY, BUT DRIVES MORE TO SEA BY THE WIND—THE PEOPLE LIVE NINE DAYS AT QUARTER ALLOWANCE—FOUR DIE WITH HUNGER THE TWELFTH DAY—FIVE MORE THE FOURTEENTH DAY—ON THE FIFTEENTH THEY EAT ONE JUST DEAD—WANT OF WATER EXCESSIVE—SPY A SAIL—ARE TAKEN UP—WORK THEIR PASSAGE TO THE AFRICAN SHORE—ARE SENT ON A SECRET

EXPEDITION—ARE WAY-LAID, TAKEN SLAVES, AND SENT UP THE COUNTRY.

WHEN we, who were in the boat, came to reflect on our condition, the prospect before us appeared very melancholy; though we had at first readily enough embraced the offer, rather than perish in so much misery as we suffered in our loathsome confinement. We now judged we were above two hundred leagues from land, in about eight degrees north latitude; and it blowing north-east, a pretty stiff gale, we could make no way, but rather lost, for we aimed at some port in Africa, having neither sail, compass, nor any other instrument to direct us; so that all the observation we could make was by the sun for running southward, or as the wind carried us, for we had lost the north-pole. As we had little above two day's provisions, we perceived a necessity of almost starving voluntarily, to avoid doing it quite; seeing it must be many days before we could reach shore, if ever we did, having visibly driven a great deal more southward than we were; nay, unless a sudden change happened, we were sure of perishing, unless delivered by some ship that Providence might send in our way. In short, the ninth day came; but no relief with it; and though we had lived at quarter allowance, and but just saved life, our food, except a little water, was all gone, and this caused us quite to despair. On the twelfth day four of our company died with hunger, in a very miserable way; and yet the survivors had not strength left to move them to pity their fellows. In truth, we had sat still, attempting nothing in several days; as we found, that unless the wind shifted, we only consumed the little strength we had left to no manner of purpose. On the fourteenth day, and in the night, five more died, and a sixth was near expiring; and yet we, the survivors, were so indolent, we would scarce lend a hand to throw them overboard. On the fifteenth day, in the morning, our carpenter, weak as he was, started up, and as the sixth man was just dead, cut his throat, and, whilst warm, would let out what blood

D

would

would flow; then, pulling off his old jacket, invited us to dinner, and cutting a large slice off the corpse, devoured it with as much seeming relish as if it had been ox-beef. His example prevailed with the rest of us, one after another, to taste and eat; and as there had been a heavy dew or rain in the night, and we had spread out every thing we had of linen and woollen to receive it, we were a little refreshed by wringing our cloaths, and sipping what came from them; after which we covered them up from the sun, flowing them all close together to keep in the moisture, which served us to suck at for two days after, a little and a little at a time; for now we were in greater distress for water, than for meat. It has surprized me, many times since, to think how we could make so light a thing of eating our fellow-creature just dead before our eyes; but I will assure you, when we had once tasted, we looked on the blessing to be so great, that we cut and eat with as little remorse as we should have had for feeding on the best meat in an English market: and most certainly, when this corpse had failed, if another had not dropped by fair means, we should have used foul, by murdering one of our number as a supply for the rest.

Water, as I said before, to moisten our mouths, was now our greatest hardship, for every man had so often drank his own, that we voided scarce any thing but blood, and that but a few drops at a time; our mouths and tongues were quite flayed with drought, and our teeth just falling from our jaws; for, though we had tried, by placing all the dead men's jackets and shirts one over another, to strain some of the sea-water through them by small quantities, yet that would not deprive it of its pernicious qualities; and though it refreshed a little in going down, we were so sick, and strained ourselves so much after it, that it came up again, and made us more miserable than before. Our corpse now stunk so, what was left of it, that we could no longer bear it on board, and every man began to look with an evil eye on his fellow, to think whose turn it would be next; for the carpenter had started the question, and preached us into the necessity of it; and we had

agreed, the next morning, to put it to the lot who should be the sacrifice. In this distress of thought, it was so ordered, by good Providence, that, on the twenty-first day, we thought we spied a sail coming from the north-west, which caused us to delay our lots till we should see whether it would discover us or not: we hung up some jackets upon our oars to be seen as far off as we could, but had so little strength left we could make no way towards it; however, it happened to direct its course so much to our relief, that, an hour before sun-set, it was within a league of us, but seemed to bear away more eastward, and our fear was, that they should not know our distress; for we were not able to make any noise from our throats, that might be heard fifty yards; but the carpenter, who was still the best man amongst us, with much ado, getting one of the guns to go off, in less than half an hour she came up with us, and, seeing our deplorable condition, took us all on board, to the number of eleven. Though no methods were untried for our recovery, four more of us died in as many days. When the remaining seven of us came a little to ourselves; we found our deliverers were Portuguese, bound for Saint Salvador. We told the captain, we begged he would let us work our passage with him, be it where it would, to shore; and then, if we could be of no farther service to him, we did not doubt getting into Europe again: but, in the voyage, as we did him all the service in our power, we pleased him so well, that he engaged us to stay with him, to work the ship home again, he having lost some hands by fevers soon after his setting sail.

We arrived safe in port; and, in a few days, the captain, who had a secret enterprize to take in hand, hired a country coasting-vessel, and sent her seventeen leagues farther on the coast for orders from some factory or settlement there. I was one of the nine men who were destined to conduct her; but, not understanding Portuguese, I knew little of the business we went upon. We were to coast it all the way; but, on the tenth day, just at sun-rise, we fell in with a fleet of boats, which had way-laid us, and were taken prisoners. Being carried ashore,

ashore, we were conducted a long way up the country, where we were imprisoned, and almost starved; though I never knew the meaning of it; nor did any of us, unless the mate, who, we heard, was carried up the country, much farther, to Angola; but we never heard more of him, though we were told he would be sent back to us.

Here we remained under confinement almost three months, at the end of which time our keeper told us we were to be removed; and coupling us two and two together, sent a guard with us to Angola; when, crossing a large river, we were set to work in removing the rubbish and stones of a castle, or fortress, which had been lately demolished by an earthquake and lightning. Here we continued about five months, being very sparingly dieted, and locked up every night.

This place, however, I thought a paradise to our former dungeon; and, as we were not over-worked, we made our lives comfortable enough, having the air all day to refresh us from the heat, and not wanting for company; for there were, at least, three hundred of us about the whole work; and I often fancied myself at the tower of Babel, each labourer, almost, speaking in a language of his own.

Towards the latter end of our work, our keepers grew more and more remiss in their care of us. At my first coming thither, I had contracted a familiarity with one of the natives, but of a different kingdom, who was then a slave with me; and he and I being able tolerably to understand each other, he hinted to me, one day, the desire he had of seeing his own country and family; who neither knew whether he was dead or alive, or where he was, since he had left them, seven years before, to make war in this kingdom; and insinuated, that as he had taken a great liking to me, if I would endeavour to escape with him, and we succeeded, he would provide for me; 'For,' says he, 'you see, now our work is almost over, we are but slightly guarded; and if we stay till this job is once finished, we may be commanded to some new works, at the other end of the kingdom, for aught we know; so that our labours will only cease with our lives; and,

'for my part, immediate death, in the attempt of liberty, is to me preferable to a lingering life of slavery.'

These, and such like arguments, prevailed on me to accompany him, as he had told me he had travelled most of the country before, in the wars of the different nations; so, having taken our resolution, the following evening, soon after our day's work, and before the time came for locking up, we withdrew from the rest, but within hearing; thinking, if we should then be missed, and called, we would appear, and make some excuse for our absence, but if not, we should have the whole night before us.

When we were first put upon this work, we were called over singly, by name, morning and evening, to be let out and in, and were very narrowly observed in our motions; but not one of us having been ever absent, our actions were at length much less minded than before, and the ceremony of calling us over was frequently omitted; so that we concluded, if we got away unobserved the first night, we should be out of the reach of pursuers by the next; which was the soonest it was possible for them to overtake us, as we proposed to travel the first part of our journey with the utmost dispatch.

CHAP. VII.

THE AUTHOR ESCAPES WITH GLANLIPZE, A NATIVE—THEIR HARDSHIPS IN TRAVEL—PLUNDER OF A COTTAGE—HIS FEARS—ADVENTURE WITH A CROCODILE—PASSAGE OF A RIVER—ADVENTURE WITH A LIONESS AND WHELP—ARRIVE AT GLANLIPZE'S HOUSE—THE TRIAL OF GLANLIPZE'S WIFE'S CONSTANCY—THE TENDER MEETING OF HER AND HER HUSBAND—THE AUTHOR'S REFLECTIONS THEREUPON.

HAVING now set out with all possible speed, we seemed to each other as joyful as we could; though it cannot be supposed we had no fears in our minds, the first part of our journey, for we had many; but as our way advanced our fears subsided; and hav-

ing, with scarce any delay, pushed forwards for the first twenty-four hours, nature then began to have two very pressing demands upon us, food and rest; but as one of them was absolutely out of our power to comply with, she contented herself with the other, till we should be better able to supply her, and gave a farther time till the next day.

The next morning found us very empty, and sharp set, though a very sound night's rest had contributed it's utmost to refresh us. But what added much to our discomfort was, that though our whole subsistence must come from fruits, there was not a tree to be found at a less distance than twelve leagues, in the open rocky country we were then in; but a good draught of excellent water we met with, did us extraordinary service, and sent us with much better courage to the woods, though they were quite out of the way of our rout: there, by divers kinds of fruits, which, though my companion knew very well, I was quite a stranger to, we satisfied our hunger for the present, and took a moderate supply for another opportunity. This retarded our journey very much, for in so hard travel every pound weighed six before night.

I cannot say this journey, though bad enough, would have been so discouraging, but for the trouble of fetching our provisions so far; and then, if we meant not to lose half the next day in the same manner, we must double load ourselves, and delay our progress by that means; but we still went on, and in about eight days got quite clear of Angola.

On the eighth day, my companion, whose name was Glanlipze, told me we were very near the confines of Congo, but there was one little village still in Angola, by which we must pass, within half a league; and, if I would agree to it, he would go see what might be got here to supply ourselves with. I told him I was in an unknown world, and would follow wherever he should lead me; but asked him if he was not afraid of the people, as he was not of that country. He told me, as there had been wars between them and his country for assisting their neighbours of Congo, he was not concerned for any mischief he should do

them, or they him; 'But,' says he, 'you have a knife in your pocket, and with that we will cut two stout clubs, and then follow me, fear no thing.'

We soon cut our clubs, and marching on, in the midst of some small shrubs, and a few scattering trees, we saw a little hovel, larger, indeed, but worse contrived, than an English hogstye, to which we boldly advanced; and Glanlipze entering first, saluted an old man, who was lying on a parcel of rushes. The man attempted to run away, but Glanlipze stopped him, and we tied his hands and feet. He then set up such a hideous howl, that, had not Glanlipze threatened to murder him, and prepared to do it, he would have raised the whole village upon us: but we quieted him; and, rummaging to find provision, which was all we wanted, we, by good luck, spied best part of a goat hanging up behind a large mat at the farther end of the room. By this time in comes a woman with two children, very small. This was the old man's daughter, of about five and twenty. Glanlipze bound her also, and laid her by the old man; but the two children we suffered to lie untied. We then examined her, who told us the old man was her father, and that her husband, having killed a goat that morning, was gone to carry part of it to his sister; that they had little or no corn; and finding we wanted victuals, she told us there was an earthen pot we might boil some of the goat in if we pleased.

Having now seen all that was to be had, we were going to make up our bundle; when a muletto, very gently, put his head into the door-way: him Glanlipze immediately seized; and, bidding me fetch the great mat and the goat's flesh, he, in the mean time, put a long rope he found there about the beast's neck, and laying the mat upon him, we packed up the goat's flesh, and a little corn, in a calabash-shell; and then, turning up the mat round about, skewered it together, and over all we tied the earthen pot; Glanlipze crying out, at every thing we loaded, 'It is no hurt to plunder an enemy!' and so we marched off.

I own, I had greater apprehensions from this adventure than from any thing before; 'For,' says I, 'if the woman's

‘woman’s husband returns soon, or if she or her father can release themselves, they will raise the whole village upon us, and we are undone.’ But Glanlipze laughed at me; saying, we had not an hour’s walk out of the Angola dominions, and that the King of Congo was at war with them, in helping the King of Loango, whose subject himself was; and that the Angolans durst not be seen out of their bounds on that side the kingdom; for there was a much larger village of Congovians in our way, who would certainly rise and destroy them, if they came in any numbers amongst them; and though, the war being carried on near the sea, the borders were quiet, yet, upon the least stir, the whole country would be in arms, whilst we might retire through the woods very safely.

Well, we marched on, as fast as we could, all the remainder of that day, till moon-light, close by the skirt of a long wood, that we might take shelter therein, if there should be occasion; and my eyes were the best part of the way behind me; but neither hearing nor seeing any thing to annoy us, and finding by the declivity of the ground we should soon be in some plain or bottom, and have a chance of water for us all, and pasture for our muletto, which was now become one of us, we would not halt till we found a bottom to the hill; which in half an hour more we came to, and in some minutes after to a rivulet of fine clear water, where we resolved to spend the night. Here we fastened our muletto by his cord to a stake in the ground; but perceiving him not to have sufficient range to fill his belly in before morning, we, under Glanlipze’s direction, cut several long slips from the mat, and soaking them well in water, twisted them into a very strong cord, of sufficient length, for the purpose. And now, having each of us brought a bundle of dry fallen sticks from the wood with us, and gathered two or three flints as we came along, we struck fire on my knife upon some rotten wood, and boiled a good piece of our goat’s flesh; and having made such a meal as we had neither of us made for many months before, we laid us down and slept heartily till morning.

As soon as day broke we packed up

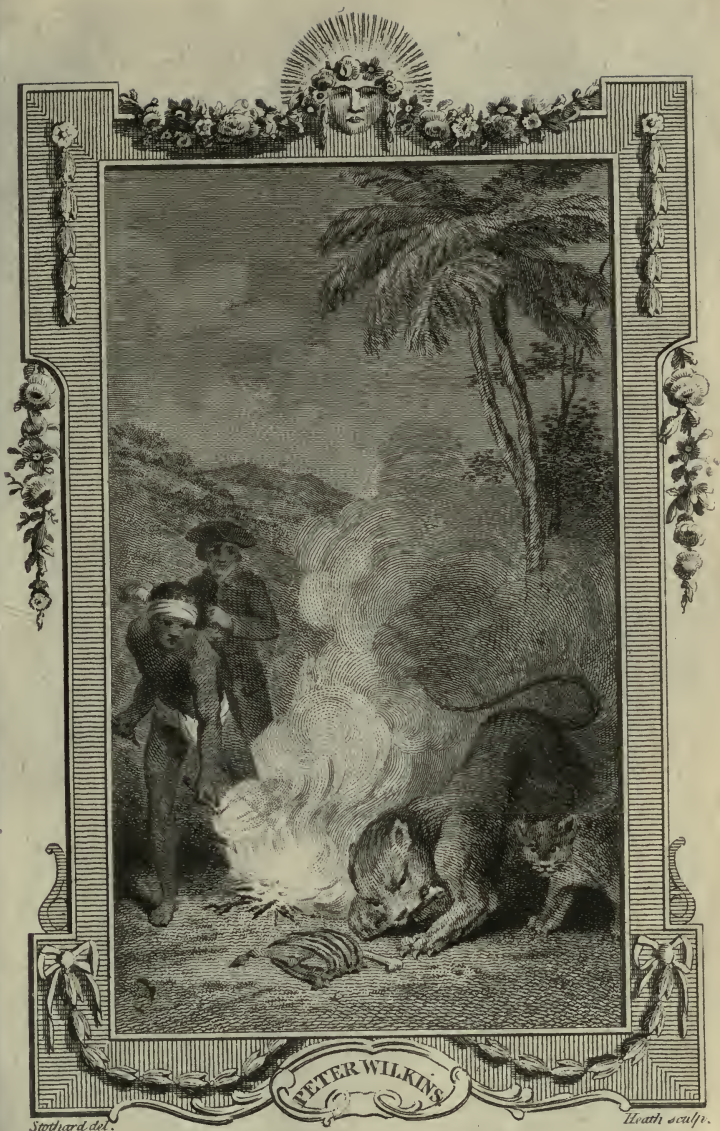
our goods; and, filling our calabash with water, we loaded our muletto, and got forward very pleasantly that day, and several others following, and had tolerable lodgings.

About noon, one day, travelling with great glee, we met an adventure which very much daunted me, and had almost put a stop to my hopes of ever getting where I intended. We came to a great river, whose name I have now forgot, near a league over, but full, and especially about the shores, of large trees that had fallen from the mountains, and been rolled down with the floods, and lodged there in a shocking manner. This river, Glanlipze told me, we must pass; for my part, I shrunk at the sight of it, and told him, if he could get over, I would not desire to prevent his meeting with his family; but, as for my share, I had rather take my chance in the woods on this side, than plunge myself into such a stream only for the sake of drowning. ‘Oh!’ says Glanlipze, ‘then you can’t swim?’ — ‘No,’ says I, ‘there’s my misfortune.’ — ‘Well,’ says the kind Glanlipze, ‘be of good heart, I’ll have you over.’ He then bade me go cut an armful of the tallest of the reeds that grew there near the shore, whilst he pulled up another where he then was, and bring them to him. The side of the river sloped for a good way with an easy descent, so that it was very shallow where the reeds grew, and they stood very close together upon a large compass of ground. I had no sooner entered the reeds a few yards, to cut some of the longest, but (being about knee-deep in the water and mud, and every step raising my feet very high to keep them clear of the roots, which were matted together) I thought I had trod upon a trunk of one of the trees, of which, as I said, there was such plenty thereabouts; and, raising my other foot, to get that also upon the tree, as I fancied it, I found it move along with me; upon which I roared out, when Glanlipze, who was not far from me, imagining what was the matter, cried out—‘Leap off, and run to shore to the right!’ I knew not yet what was the case, but did as I was bid, and gained the shore. Looking back, I perceived the reeds shake and rustle all the way to the shore, by degrees, after me. I was terribly frightened,

ened, and ran to Glanlipze, who then told me the danger I had escaped, and that what I took for a tree was certainly a large alligator or crocodile.

My blood ran chill within me, at hearing the name of such a dangerous creature; but he had no sooner told me what it was, than out came the most hideous monster I had ever seen. Glanlipze ran to secure the muletto; and then, taking the cord which had fastened him, and tying it to each end of a broken arm of a tree that lay on the shore, he marched up to the crocodile without the least dismay, and beginning near the tail, with one leg on one side, and the other on the other side, he straddled over him, still mending his pace as the beast crept forward till he came to his fore-feet; then, throwing the great log before his mouth, he, by the cord in his hand, bobbed it against the creature's nose, till he gaped wide enough to have taken in the muletto; then of a sudden, jerking the wood between his jaws with all his force by the cord, he gagged the beast, with his jaws wide open up to his throat, so that he could neither make use of his teeth, nor shut his mouth; he then threw one end of the cord upon the ground, just before the creature's under-jaw, which, as he by degrees crept along over it, came out behind his fore-legs on the contrary side; and serving the other end of it in the same manner, he took up those ends and tied them over the creature's back, just within his fore-legs, which kept the gag firm in his mouth; and then calling out to me, (for I stood at a good distance) 'Peter,' says he, 'bring me your knife!' I trembled at going so near; for the crocodile was turning his head this way and that very uneasy, and wanting to get to the river again; but yet I carried it, keeping as much behind him as I could, still eyeing him which way he moved, and at length tossed my knife so near that Glanlipze could reach it; and he, just keeping behind the beast's fore-feet, and leaning forward, first darted the knife into one eye, and then into the other; and immediately leaping from his back, came running to me. 'So, Peter,' says he, 'I have done the business.'—'Aye! business enough, I think,' says I, 'and more than I would have done to have been King of Congo.'—'Why, Peter,'

says he, 'there is nothing but a man may compass by resolution, if he takes both ends of a thing in his view at once, and fairly deliberates on both sides what may be given and taken from end to end. What you have seen me perform, is only from a thorough notion I have of this beast, and of myself, how far each of us hath power to act and counter-act upon the other, and duly applying the means.—But,' says he, 'this talk will not carry us across the river.—Come, here are the reeds I have pulled up, which, I believe, will be sufficient without any more, for I would not overload the muletto.'—'Why,' says I, 'is the muletto to carry them?'—'No; they are to carry you,' says he. 'I can never ride upon these,' says I. 'Hush!' says he, 'I'll not lose you, never fear. Come, cut me a good tough stick, the length of these reeds.'—'Well,' says I, 'this is all conjuration; but I don't see a step towards my getting over the river yet, unless I am to ride the muletto upon these reeds, and guide myself with the stick.'—'I must own, Peter,' says he, 'you have a bright guess.' So, taking an armful of the reeds, and laying them on the ground, 'Now, Peter,' says he, 'lay that stick upon those reeds, and tie them tight at both ends.' I did so. 'Now, Peter,' says he, 'lay yourself down upon them.' I then laying myself on my back, lengthwise, upon the reeds, Glanlipze laughed heartily at me, and turning me about, brought my breast upon the reeds at the height of my arm-pits; and then taking a handful of the reeds he had reserved by themselves, he laid them on my back, tying them to the bundle close at my shoulders, and again at the ends. 'Now, Peter,' says he, 'stand up;' which I did, but it was full as much as I could do. I then seeing Glanlipze laughing at the figure I cut, desired him to be serious, and not put me upon losing my life for a joke; for I could not think what he would do next with me. He bid me never fear; and, looking more soberly, ordered me to walk to the river, and so stand just within the bank till he came; then leading the muletto to me, he tied me to her, about a yard from the tail, and, taking the cord in his hand, led the muletto and me into the water. We had not gone far before



my guide began to swim; then the muletto and I were presently chin-deep, and I expected nothing but drowning every moment: however, having gone so far, I was ashamed to cry out; when, getting out of my depth, and my reeds coming to their bearing, up I mounted, and was carried on with all the ease imaginable: my conductor guiding us between the trees, so dexterously, that not one accident happened, to either of us all the way, and we arrived safe on the opposite shore.

We had now got into a very low, close, swampy country, and our goat's flesh began to be very stale through the heat, not only of the sun, but the muletto's back; however, we pleased ourselves we should have one more meal of it before it was too bad to eat; so, having travelled about three miles from the river, we took up our lodging on a little rising, and tied our muletto in a valley about half a furlong below us, where he made as good a meal in his way as we did in ours.

We had but just supped, and were sauntering about to find the easiest spot to sleep on, when we heard a rustling and a grumbling noise in a small thicket just on our right; which seeming to approach nearer and nearer, Glanlipze roused himself, and was on his legs just time enough to see a lioness, and a small whelp which accompanied her, within thirty yards of us, making towards us, as we afterwards guessed, for the sake of our goat's flesh, which now smelt very strong. Glanlipze whipped on the contrary side of the fire to that where the goat's flesh lay, and fell to kicking the fire about at a great rate, which being made of dry wood, caused innumerable sparks to fly about us; but the beasts still approaching in a couchant manner, and seizing the ribs of the goat, and other bones, (for we had only cut the flesh off) and grumbling and cracking them like rotten twigs, Glanlipze snatched up a fire-brand, flaming, in each hand, and made towards them; which sight so terrified the creatures, that they fled with great precipitation to the thicket again.

Glanlipze was a little uneasy at the thoughts of quitting so good a lodging as we had found, but yet held it best to move farther; for as the lions had left the bones behind them, we

must expect another visit, if we staid there, and could hope for no rest; and, above all, we might possibly lose our muletto; so we removed our quarters two miles farther, where we slept with great tranquillity.

Reflections on the nature of mankind have often astonished me. I told you at first my thoughts concerning prayer, in my journey to Bristol, and of the benefit I received from it, and how fully I was convinced of the necessity of it; which one would think was a sufficient motive to a reasonable creature to be constant in it; and yet, it is too true that, notwithstanding the difficulties I had laboured under, and hardships I had undergone, and the danger of starving at sea or being murdered for food by my fellows, when there was as urgent a necessity of begging divine assistance as can be conceived, I never once thought of it, nor of the Object of it, nor returned thanks for my being delivered, till the lioness had just left me; and then I felt near the same force, urging me to return thanks for my escape, as I had impelling me to prayer before; and I think I did so with great sincerity.

I shall not trouble you with a relation of the common accidents of our journey, which lasted two months and better, nor with the different methods we used to get subsistence; but shall at once conduct you to Quamis; only mentioning that we were sometimes obliged to go about, and were once stopped by a cut that my guide and companion received by a ragged stone in his foot, which growing very bad almost deprived me of the hopes of his life; but, by rest, and constant sucking and licking it, which was the only remedy we had to apply, except green leaves chewed, that I laid to it by his direction, to supple and cool it, he soon began to be able to ride upon the muletto, and sometimes to walk a little.

I say, we arrived at Quamis, a small place on a river of that name, where Glanlipze had a neat dwelling, and left a wife and five children when he went out to the wars. We were very near the town when the day closed; and, as it is soon dark there after sun-set, you could but just see your hand at our entrance into it. We met nobody in the way, but I went directly to Glanlipze's door, by his direction,

and struck two or three strokes hard against it with my stick. On this there came a woman to it stark-naked. I asked her, in her own language, if she knew one Glanlipze. She told me, with a deep sigh, that once she did. I asked then, where he was. She said with their ancestors, she hoped, for he was the greatest warrior in the world; but, if he was not dead, he was in slavery. Now, you must know, Glanlipze had a mind to hear how his wife took his death, or slavery, and had put me upon asking these questions before he discovered himself. I proceeded then to tell her, I brought some news of Glanlipze, and was lately come from him, and by his order. And does my dear Glanlipze live! says she, flying upon my neck, and almost smothering me with caresses, till I begged her to forbear, or she would strangle me, and I had a great deal more to tell her; then ringing for a light, when she saw I was a white man, she seemed in the utmost confusion at her own nakedness; and, immediately retiring, she threw a cloth round her waist, and came to me again. I then repeated to her, that her husband was alive and well, but wanted a ransom to redeem himself, and had sent me to see what she could any ways raise for that purpose. She told me, she and her children had lived very hardly ever since he went from her, and she had nothing to sell, or make money of, but her five children; that, as this was the time for the slaving-trade, she would see what she could raise by them, and if that would not do, she would sell herself and send him the money, if he would let her know how to do it.

Glanlipze, who heard every word that passed, finding so strong a proof of his wife's affection, could hold out no longer; but, bursting into the room, clasped her in his arms, crying, No, Zulika! (for that was her name). I am free; there will be no occasion for your or my dear children's slavery; and rather than have purchased my freedom at that rate, I would willingly have died a slave myself. But my own ears have heard the tender sentiments my Zulika has for me. Then, drowned in tears of joy, they embraced each other so close, and so long, that I thought it impertinent to be seen with them, till their first transports were over. So I retired

without the house, till Glanlipze called me in, which was not in less than full half an hour. I admired at the love and constancy of the persons I had just left behind me; and, Good Heaven, thinks I to myself, with a sigh, how happy has this our escape rendered Glanlipze and his wife! what a mutual felicity do they feel! And what is the cause of all this? Is it that he has brought home great treasures from the wars? Nothing like it; he is come naked. Is it that, having escaped slavery and poverty, he is returned to an opulent wife, abounding with the good things of life? No such thing. What, then, can be the cause of this excess of satisfaction, this alternate joy, that Patty and I could not have been as happy with each other? Why, it was my pride that interposed and prevented it. But what am I like to get by it, and by all this travel, and these hazards? Is this the way to make a fortune, to get an estate? No, surely, the very contrary. I could not, forsooth, labour for Patty and her children, where I was known; but am I any better for labouring here, where I am not known, where I have nobody to assist me, than I could have been where I am known, and where there would have been my friends about me, at least, if they could have afforded no great assistance? I have been deceived, then, and have travelled so many thousand miles, and undergone so many dangers, only to know, at last, I had been happier at home; and have doubled my misery, for want of consideration, that very consideration which, impartially taken, would have convinced me I ought to have made the best of my bad circumstances, and to have laid hold of every commendable method of improving them. Did I come hither to avoid daily labour or voluntary servitude at home? I have had it in abundance. Did I come hither to avoid poverty and contempt? Here I have met with them ten-fold. And now, after all, was I to return home empty and naked, as Glanlipze has done; should I meet a wife, as bare as myself, so ready to die in my embraces, and to be a slave herself, with her children, for my sake only? I fear not!

These and the like reflections had taken possession of me, when Glanlipze called me in; where I found his wife, in her manner, preparing our supper, with all that chearfulness which gives a true lustre to innocence.

The bustle we made had by this time awakened the children; who, stark-naked, as they were born, both boys and girls, came crawling out, and black as jett, from behind a curtain at the farther end of the room, which was very long. The father, as yet, had only enquired after them; but, upon sight of them, he fell into an extasy, kissing one, stroaking another, dandling a third, for the eldest was scarce fourteen; but not one of them knew him, for seven years makes a great chasm in young memories. The more I saw of this sport the stronger impressions Patty and my own children made upon me. My mind had been so much employed on my own distresses, that those dear ideas were almost effaced; but this moving scene introduced them afresh, and imprinted them deeply on my imagination, which cherished the sweet remembrance.

CHAP. VIII.

HOW THE AUTHOR PASSED HIS TIME WITH GLANLIPZE—HIS ACQUAINTANCE WITH SOME ENGLISH PRISONERS—THEY PROJECT AN ESCAPE—HE JOINS THEM—THEY SEIZE A PORTUGUESE SHIP, AND GET OFF—MAKE A LONG RUN FROM LAND—WANT WATER—THEY ANCHOR AT A DESERT ISLAND—THE BOAT GOES ON SHORE FOR WATER—THEY LOSE THEIR ANCHOR IN A STORM—THE AUTHOR AND ONE ADAMS DROVE TO SEA—A MIRACULOUS PASSAGE TO A ROCK—ADAMS DROWNED THERE—THE AUTHOR'S MISERABLE CONDITION.

I Passed my time with Glanlipze and his wife, who both really loved me, with sufficient bodily quiet, for about two years: my business was chiefly in company with my patron, to cultivate a spot of ground wherein we had planted grain and necessaries for the family; and once or twice a week we went a

fishing, and sometimes hunted and shot venison. These were our chief employments; for as to excursions for slaves, which is a practice in many of those countries, and what the natives get money by, since our own slavery, Glanlipze and I could not endure it.

Though I was tolerably easy in my external circumstances, yet my mind hankering after England made my life still unhappy; and that infelicity daily increased, as I saw the less probability of attaining my desire. At length, hearing of some European sailors, who were under confinement for contraband trade, at a Portuguese fort about two leagues from Quamis, I resolved to go to see them; and, if any of them should be English, at least to enquire after my native country. I went, and found two Dutchmen, who had been sailors in British pay several years, three Scotchmen, an Irishman, and five Englishmen, but all had been long in English merchants service. They were taken, as they told me, by a Portuguese vessel, together with their ship, as a Dutch prize, under pretence of contraband trade. The captain was known to be a Dutchman, though he spoke good English, and was then in English pay, and his vessel English; therefore they would have it that he was a Dutch trader, and so seized his ship in the harbour, with the prisoners in it. The captain, who was on shore with several of his men, was threatened to be laid in irons, if he was taken; which obliged him and his men to abscond, and fly over land, to an English factory, for assistance to recover his ship and cargo; being afraid to appear and claim it, amongst so many enemies, without an additional force. They had been in confinement two months, and their ship confiscated and sold. In this miserable condition I left them, but returned once or twice a week, for a fortnight or three weeks, to visit them. These instances of regard, as they thought them, created some confidence in me, so that they conversed with me very freely. Amongst other discourse, they told me, one day, that one of their crew, who went with the captain, had been taken ill on the way, and being unable to proceed, was returned; but as he talked good Portuguese, he was not suspected to belong to them; and that he had been

to visit them, and would be there again that day. I had a mind to see him, so staid longer than I intended, and in about an hour's time he came. After he was seated, he asked who I was, and (privately) if I might be trusted. Being satisfied I might, for that I was a Cornish man, he began as follows, looking narrowly about to see he was not overheard: 'My lads,' says he, 'be of good courage, I have hopes for you; be but men, and we shall see better days yet.' I wondered to what this preface tended; when he told us, that since his return from the captain, as he spoke good Portuguese, and had sailed on board Portuguese traders several years, he mixed among that people, and particularly among the crew of the *Del Cruz*, the ship which had taken them; that that ship had partly unloaded, and was taking in other goods for a future voyage; that he had informed himself of their strength, and that very seldom more than three men and two boys lay on board; that he had hired himself to the captain, and was to go on board the very next day. 'Now,' says he, 'my lads, if you can break prison any night after to-morrow, and come directly to the ship,' (telling them how she lay, 'for,' says he, 'you cannot mistake, you will find two or three boats moored in the gut against the church) I will be ready to receive you, and we will get off with her, in lieu of our ship they have taken from us, for there is nothing ready to follow us.'

The prisoners listened to this discourse very attentively; but scratched their heads, fearing the difficulty of it, and severer usage if they miscarried, and made several objections; but, at last, they all swore to attempt it the night but one following. Upon which the sailor went away, to prepare for their reception on board. After he was gone, I surveyed his scheme attentively in my own mind, and found it not so difficult as I first imagined, if the prisoners could but escape cleverly. So, before I went away, I told them I approved of their purpose; and as I was their countryman, I was resolved, with their leaves, to risk my fortune with them. At this they seemed much pleased, and all embraced me. We

then fixed the peremptory night, and I was to wait at the water-side, and get the boats in readiness.

The prison they were in was a Portuguese fort, which had been deserted ever since the building a much better on the other side of the river, a gunshot lower. It was built with walls too thick for naked men to storm; the captives were securely locked up every night; and two soldiers or centinels, kept watch in an outer-room, who were relieved from the main-guard in the body of the building.

The expected night arrived; and a little before midnight, as had been concerted, one of the prisoners cried out, he was so parched up, he was on fire, he was on fire! The centinels were both asleep; but the first that waked, called at the door, to know what was the matter; the prisoner still crying out, 'I am on fire!' the rest begged the centinel to bring a bowl of water for him, for they knew not what ailed him.

The good-natured fellow, without waking his companion, brought the water, and having a lamp in the guard-room, opened the door; when the prisoners seizing his arms, and commanding him to silence, bound his hands behind him, and his feet together; then serving the other in the same manner, who was now just awake, and taking from them their swords and muskets, they made the best of their way over the fort-wall; which, being built with buttresses on the inside, was easily surmounted. Being got out, they were not long in finding me, who had before this time made the boats ready, and was impatiently waiting for them; so in we all got, and made good speed to the ship, where we were welcomed by our companion, ready to receive us.

Under pretence of being a new-entered sailor, he had carried some Madeira wine on board, and treated the men and boys so freely, that he had thrown them into a dead sleep; which was a wise precaution. There being now, therefore, no fear of disturbance or interruption, we drew up the two boats, and set all hands at work to put the ship under way; and plied it so closely, the wind favouring us, that by eleven o'clock the next morning we

were

were out of sight of land; but we set the men and boys adrift, in one of the boats, nigh the mouth of the river.

The first thing we did, after we had made a long run from shore, was to consult what course to steer. Now, as there was a valuable loading on board, of goods from Portugal, and others taken in since, some gave their opinion for sailing directly to India, selling the ship and cargo there, and returning by some English vessel: but that was rejected; for we did not doubt but notice would be given of our escape along the coast, and if we should fall into the Portuguese's hands, we could expect no mercy; besides, we had not people sufficient for such an enterprize. Others, again, were for sailing the directest course for England; but I told them, as our opinions were different, and no time was to be lost, my advice was, to stretch southward, till we might be quite out of fear of pursuit, and then, whatever course we took, by keeping clear of all coasts, we might hope to come safe off.

My proposal seemed to please the whole crew; so, crowding all the sail we could, we pushed southward very briskly before the wind for several days. We now went upon examining our stores, and found we had flour enough, plenty of fish, and salt provisions, but were scant of water and wood; of the first whereof there was not half a ton, and but very little of the latter. This made us very uneasy; and being none of us expert in navigation, farther than the common working of the ship, and having no chart on board that might direct us to the nearest land, we were almost at our wit's end, and came to a short allowance of liquor. That we must get water if we could, was indisputable; but where to do it puzzled us, as we had determined not to get in with the African shore, on any account whatever.

In this perplexity, and under the guidance of different opinions, (for we were all captains now) we sometimes steered eastward, and sometimes westward, for about nine days; when we espied a little bluish cloud-like appearance to the south-west: this continuing, we hoped it might be land, and therefore made to it. Upon our nearer approach, we found it to be, as

we judged, an island; but, not knowing it's name, or whether it was inhabited, we coasted round it two days to satisfy ourselves as to this last particular. Seeing no living creature on it during that time, and the shore being very broken, we came to an anchor about two miles from it, and sent ten of our crew in our best boat, with some casks, to get water and cut wood. The boat returned at night, with six men, and the casks filled, having left four behind, to go on with the cutting of wood against next day. Accordingly, next morning, the boat went off again, and made two turns with water and wood ere night, which was repeated for two or three days after. On the sixth she went off for wood only, leaving none but me and one John Adams on board.

The boat had scarce reached the island, this last turn, before the day overcast, and there arose such a storm of wind, thunder, lightning, and hail, as I had never before seen. At last our cable broke close to the anchor, and away we went with the wind, full southward by west; and not having strength to keep the ship upon a side wind, we were forced to let her head right before it, and let her drive. Our hope was, every hour, the storm would abate; but it continued with equal violence for many days; during all which time, neither Adams nor I had any rest, for one or other of us was forced, and sometimes both, to keep her right before the wind, or she would certainly have overfet. When the storm abated, as it did by degrees, neither Adams nor I could tell where we were, or even in what part of the world.

I was sorry I had no better a sailor with me, for neither Adams nor myself had ever made more than one voyage till now, so that we were both unacquainted with the latitude, and scarce knew the use of the compass to any purpose; and, being out of all hope of ever reaching the island to our companions, we neither knew which way to steer, nor what to do: and, indeed, had we known where we were, we two only could not have been able to navigate the ship to any part we desired, or ever get to the island, unless such a wind as we had before would of itself have driven us thither.

Whilst we were considering, day after day, what to do, though the sea was now very calm and smooth, the ship seemed to sail at as great a rate as before, which we attributed to the velocity she had acquired by the storm, or to currents that had set that way by the violence of the winds. Contenting ourselves with this, we expected all soon to be right again; and as we had no prospect of ever seeing our companions, we kept the best look-out we could, to see for any vessel coming that course, which might take us in; and resolved to rest all our hopes upon that.

When we had sailed a good while after this manner, we knew not whether, Adams called out, 'I see land!' My heart leaped within me for joy; and we hoped, the current that seemed to carry us so fast, set in for some islands or rivers that lay before us. But still we were exceedingly puzzled at the ship's making such way; and the nearer and nearer we approached the land, which was now very visible, the more speed the ship made, though there was no wind stirring. We had but just time to think on this unexpected phenomenon, when we found that what we had taken for land was a rock of an extraordinary height, to which, as we advanced nearer, the ship increased it's motion; and all our strength could not make her answer her rudder any other way. This put us under the apprehension of being dashed to pieces immediately; and, in less than half an hour, I verily thought my fears had not been groundless. Poor Adams told me he would try when the ship struck, if he could leap upon the rock, and ran to the head for that purpose; but I was so fearful of seeing my danger, that I ran under hatch-
es, resolving to sink in the ship. We had no sooner parted but I felt so violent a shock, that I verily thought the ship had brought down the whole rock upon her, and been thereby dashed to pieces; so that I never more expected to see the light.

I lay under this terror for at least half an hour, waiting the ship's either filling with water or bulging every moment. But finding neither motion in her, nor any water rise, nor the least noise whatsoever, I ventured, with an aching heart, from my retreat, and

stole up the hatch-way as if an enemy had been on deck, peeping first one way, then another. Here nothing presented but confusion; the rock hung over the hatchway, at about twenty feet above my head, our foremast lay by the board, the mainmast yard-arm was down, and great part of the mainmast snapped off with it, and almost every thing upon deck was displaced. This sight shocked me extremely; and calling for Adams, in whom I hoped to find some comfort, I was too soon convinced I had lost him.

CHAP. IX.

WILKINS THINKS OF DESTROYING HIMSELF — HIS SOLILOQUY — STRANGE ACCIDENT IN THE HOLD — HIS SURPRISE — CANNOT CLIMB THE ROCK — HIS METHOD TO SWEETEN HIS WATER — LIVES MANY MONTHS ON BOARD — VENTURES TO SEA IN HIS BOAT SEVERAL TIMES, AND TAKES MANY FISH — ALMOST OVERCOME BY AN EEL.

AFTER I had stood a while in the utmost confusion of thought, and my spirits began to be a little composed, I was resolved to see what damage the hull of the ship had received. Accordingly I looked narrowly, but could find none, only she was immovably fixed in a cleft of the rock, like a large arch-way, and there stuck so fast, that though upon fathoming, I could find no bottom, she never moved in the least by the working of the water.

I now began to look upon Adams as a happy man, being delivered by immediate death, from such an inextricable scene of distress, and wished myself with him a thousand times. I had a great mind to have followed him into the other world; yet, I know not how it is, there is something so abhorrent to human nature, in self-murder, be one's condition what it will, that I was soon determined on the contrary side. Now again I perceived that the Almighty had given me a large field to expatiate in upon the trial of his creatures, by bringing them into imminent dangers, ready to overwhelm them; and at the same time, as it were,

were, hanging out the flag of truce and mercy to them. These thoughts brought me to my knees, and I poured out my soul to God, in a strain of humiliation, resignation to his will, and earnest petitions for deliverance or support in this distress. Having finished, I found myself in a more composed frame; so having eaten a biscuit, and drank a cann of water, and not seeing any thing to be done whereby I could better my condition, I sat me down upon the deck, and fell into the following soliloquy.

‘Peter,’ says I, ‘what have you to do here?’—‘Alas!’ replied I to myself, ‘I am fixed against my will in this dismal mansion, destined, as rats might be, to devour the provisions only, and having eat all up, to perish with hunger for want of a supply.’—‘Then,’ says I, ‘of what use are you in the world, Peter?’—‘Truly,’ answered I, ‘of no other use, that I can see, but to be an object of misery for Divine vengeance to work upon, and to shew what a deplorable state human nature can be reduced to; for I cannot think any one else can be so wretched.’—‘And again, Peter,’ says I, ‘what have you been doing ever since you came into the world?’—‘I am afraid,’ says I, ‘I can answer no better to this question than to either of the former; for if only reasonable actions are to be reckoned among my doings, I am sure I have done little worth recording; for, let me see what it all amounts to. I spent my first sixteen years in making a fool of my mother; my three next in letting her make a fool of me; and in being fool enough myself to get me a wife and two children before I was twenty. The next year was spent in finding out the misery of slavery from experience. Two years more I repined at the happiness of my benefactor, and at finding it was not my lot to enjoy the same. This year is not yet spent, and how many more are to come, and where they may be passed, and what they may produce, requires a better head than mine even to guess at; but certainly my present situation seems to promise nothing beside woe and misery.’—‘But hold a little,’ says I, ‘and let me clearly state my own wretched-

ness. I am here, it is true; but for any good I have ever done, or any advantage I have reaped in other places, I am as well here as any where. I have no present want of food, or unjust or cruel enemy to annoy me; so, as long as the ship continues entire, and provisions last, I shall do tolerably. Then, why should I grieve or terrify myself about what may come? What my frightened imagination suggests may perhaps never happen. Deliverance, though not to be looked for, is yet possible: and my future fate may be as different from my present condition, as this is from the hopes with which I lately flattered myself. And why, after all, may I not die a natural death here as well as any where? all mankind die, and then there is an end of all—An end of all! did I say? No, there is something within that gives me the lye when I say so. Let me see, “Death,” my master used to say, “is not an end, but a beginning, of real life:” and may it not be so? May I not as well undergo a change from this to a different state of life, when I leave this world, as be born into it I know not from whence? Who sent me into this world? Who framed me of two natures so unlike, that death cannot destroy but one of them? It must be the Almighty God. But all God’s works tend to some end; and if he has given me an immortal nature, it must be his intention that I should live somewhere and somehow for ever. May not this stage of being, then, be only an introduction to a preparative for another? There is nothing in this supposition repugnant to reason. Upon the whole, if God is the Author of my being, he only has a right to dispose of it, and I may not put an end thereto without his leave. It is no less true, that my continuing therein during his pleasure, and because it is so, may turn vastly to my advantage in his good time; it may be the means of my becoming happy for ever, when it is his will that I go hence. It is no less probable, that, dismal as my present circumstances appear, I may be even now the object of a kind Providence: God may be leading me by affliction to repentance of former

‘former crimes; destroying those sensual affections that have all my days kept me from loving and serving him. I will therefore submit myself to his will, and hope for his mercy.’

These thoughts, and many others I then had, composed me very much, and by degrees reconciled me to my destined solitude. I walked my ship, of which I was now both master and owner, and employed myself in searching how it was fastened to the rock, and where it rested; but all to no purpose as to that particular. I then struck a light, and went into the hold, to see what I could find useful, for we had never searched the ship since we took her.

In the hold I found abundance of long iron bars, which I suppose were brought out to be trafficked with the blacks. I observed they lay all with one end close to the head of the ship, which I presumed was occasioned by the violent shock they received when she struck against the rock; but seeing one short bar lying out beyond the rest, though touching at the end one of the long bars, I thought to take it up, and lay it on the heap with the others; but the moment I had raised the end next the other bars, it flew out of my hand, with such violence, against the head of the ship, and with such a noise, as greatly surprized me, and put me in fear it had broke through the plank.

I just stayed to see no harm was done, and ran upon deck, with my hair stiff on my head; nor could I conceive less than that some subtle spirit had done this prank merely to terrify me.

It ran in my pate several days, and I durst upon no account have gone into the hold again, though my whole support had lain there; nay, it even spoiled my rest, for fear something tragical should befall me, of which this amazing incident was an omen.

About a week after, as I was shifting myself, (for I had not taken my cloaths off since I came there) and putting on a new pair of shoes which I found on board, my own being very bad, taking out my iron buckles, I laid one of them upon a broken piece of the mast that I sat upon; when, to my astonishment, it was no sooner out of my hand but up it flew to the rock, and stuck there. I could not tell what to make

of it; but was sorry the devil had got above deck. I then held several other things, one after another, in my hand, and laid them down where I laid the buckle, but nothing stirred, till I took out the fellow of that from the shoes; when, letting it go, away it jumped also to the rock.

I mused on these phenomena for some time, and could not forbear calling upon God to protect me from the devil; who must, as I imagined, have a hand in such unaccountable things as they then seemed to me. But at length reason got the better of these foolish apprehensions, and I began to think there might be some natural cause of them, and next to be very desirous of finding it out. In order to this, I set about making experiments, to try what would run to the rock, and what would not. I went into the captain's cabin, and opening a cupboard, of which the key was in the door, I took out a pipe, a bottle, a pocket-book, a silver spoon, a tea-cup, &c. and laid them successively near the rock; when none of them answered; but the key which I had brought out of the cupboard on my finger, dropping off while I was thus employed, no sooner it was disengaged, but away it went to it. After that I tried several other pieces of iron-ware, with the like success. Upon this, and the needle of my compass standing stiff to the rock, I concluded that this same rock contained great quantity of load-stone, or was itself one vast magnet, and that our lading of iron was the cause of the ship's violent course thereto, which I mentioned before.

This quite satisfied me, as to my notion of spirits, and gave me a more undisturbed night's rest than I had had before; so that now, having nothing to affright me, I passed the time tolerably well in my solitude, as it grew by degrees familiar to me.

I had often wished it had been possible for me to climb the rock; but it was so smooth in many places, and craggy in others, and over-hanging, continuing just the same to the right and left of me as far as ever I could see, that from the impossibility of it, I discharged all thoughts of such an attempt.

I had now lived on board three months, and perceived the days grow shorter

shorter and shorter, till, having lost the sun for a little time, they were quite dark: that is, there was no absolute day-light, or indeed visible distinction between day and night; though it was never so dark but I could see well enough upon deck to go about.

What now concerned me the most was, my water, which began to grow very bad (though I had plenty of it) and unfavoury, so that I could scarce drink it; but had no prospect of better. Now and then, indeed, it snowed a little, which I made some use of; but this was far from contenting me. Hereupon I began to contrive; and, having nothing else to do, I set two open vessels upon deck, and drawing water from the hold, I filled one of my vessels, and letting it stand a day and a night, I poured it into the other, and so shifted it every twenty-four hours: this, I found, though it did not bring it to the primitive taste, and render it altogether palatable, was nevertheless a great help to it, by incorporating the fresh air with it; so that it became very potable: and this method I constantly used with my drinking-water, so long as I stayed on board the ship.

It had now been sharp weather for some time; and the cold still increasing, this put me upon rummaging the ship farther than ever I thought to do before; when, opening a little cabin under deck, I found a large cargo of fine French brandy, a great many bottles, and some small casks of Madeira wine, with divers cordial waters. Having tasted these, and taken out a bottle or two of brandy, and some Madeira, I locked up my door, and looked no farther that time.

The next day I enquired into my provisions; and some of my flesh having soaked out the pickle, I made fresh pickle, and closed it up again. I that day also found several cheeses, cased up in lead, one of which I then opened and dined upon: but what time of day or night it was when I eat this meal, I could not tell. I found a great many chests well filled, and one or two of tools, which some years after stood me in a very good stead; though I did not expect they would ever be of that service when I first met with them.

In this manner I spent my time till I began to see broad day-light again,

which cheered me greatly. I had been often put in hopes, during the dark season, that ships were coming towards me, and that I should once more have the conversation of mankind; for I had, by the small glimmering, seen many large bodies (to my thinking) move at a little distance from me, and particularly toward the re-appearing of the light; but though I hallooed as loud as I could, and often fired my gun, I never received an answer.

When the light returned, my days increased in proportion as they had before decreased; and gathering comfort from that, I determined to launch my small boat, and to coast along the island, as I judged it, to see if it was inhabited, and by whom; I determined also to make me some lines for fishing, and carry my gun to try for other game if I found a place for landing: for though I had never, since my arrival seen a single living creature but my cat, except insects, of which there were many in the water and in the air before the dark weather, and then began to appear again, yet I could not but think there were both birds and beasts to be met with.

Upon launching my boat, I perceived she was very leaky; so I let her fill, and continue thus a week or more, to stop her cracks; then getting down the side of my ship, I scooped her quite dry, and found her very fit for use; so putting on board my gun, lines, brandy-bottles, and a cloaths-chest for a seat, with some little water, and provisions for a week, I once more committed myself to the sea; having taken all the observation I could, to gain my ship again, if any accident should happen; though I resolved, upon no account, to quit sight of the rock willingly.

I had not rowed very long, before I thought I saw an island to my right, about a league distant, to which I inclined to steer my course, the sea being very calm; but, upon surveying it nearer, I found it only a great cake of ice about forty yards high above the water, and a mile or two in length. I then concluded, that what I had before taken for ships, were only these lumps of ice. Being thus disappointed as to my island, I made what haste I could back to the rock again, and coasted part of it's circumference; but though

I had

I had gone two or three leagues of it's circuit, the prospect it afforded was just the same.

I then tried my lines, by fastening several very long ones, made of the log-line, to the side of the boat, baiting them with several different baits, but took only one fish of about four pounds weight, very much resembling a haddock; part of which I dressed for my supper, after my return to the ship, and it proved very good. Towards evening I returned to my home, as I may call it.

The next day I made a voyage on the other side of the rock, though but to a small distance from the ship, with intent only to fish, but took nothing. I had then a mind to victual my boat; or little cruiser, and prepare myself for a voyage of two or three days, which I thought I might safely undertake, as I had never seen a troubled sea since I came to the island; for, though I heard the wind often roaring over my head, yet it coming always from the land-side, it never disturbed the water near the shore. I set out the same way I went at first, designing to sail two or three days out, and as many home again; and resolved, if possible, to fathom the depth as I went. With this view I prepared a very long line, with a large shot tied in a rag at the end of it, by way of plummet; but I felt no ground till the second night. The next morning I came into thirty fathom water, then twenty, then sixteen. In both tours, I could perceive no abatement in the height or steepness of the rock.

In about fourteen fathom water I dropped my lines, and lay by for an hour or two. Feeling several jars, as I sat on my chest in the boat, I was sure I had caught somewhat; so pulling up my lines successively, I brought first a large eel, near six feet long, and almost as thick as my thigh, whose mouth, throat, and fins, were of a fine scarlet, and the belly as white as snow: he was so strong, while in the water, and weighty, I had much ado to get him into the boat, and then had a harder job to kill him; for though having a hatchet with me, to cut wood in case I met with any landing-place, I chopped off his head, the moment I had him on board, yet he had several times after that have liked to have

broken my legs, and beat me overboard, before I had quite taken his life from him; and, had I not whipped off his tail, and also divided his body into two or three pieces, I could not have mastered him. The next I pulled up was a thick fish like a tench, but of another colour, and much bigger. I drew up several others, flat and long fish, till I was tired with the sport; and then I set out for the ship again, which I reached the third day.

During this whole time, I had but one shot, and that was as I came homewards, at a creature I saw upon a high crag of the rock, which I fired at with ball, fearing that my small-shot would not reach it. The animal being mortally wounded, bounded up, and came tumbling down the rock, very near me. I picked it up, and found it to be a creature not much unlike our rabbits, but with shorter ears, a longer tail, and hooped like a kid, though it had the perfect fluck of a rabbit. I put it into my boat, to contemplate on when I arrived at the ship; and plying my oars, got safe, as I said, on the third day.

I made me a fire to cook with as soon as I had got my cargo out of the boat into my ship, but was under debate which of my dainties to begin upon. I had sometimes a mind to have broiled my rabbit, as I called it, and boiled some of my fish; but being tired, I hung up my flesh till the next day, and boiled two or three sorts of my fish, to try which was best. I knew not the nature of most of them, so I boiled a piece of my eel, to be sure, judging that, however I might like others, I should certainly be able to make a good meal of that. This variety being ready, I took a little of my oil out of the hold for sauce, and sat down to my meal, as satisfied as an emperor. But upon tasting my several messes, though the eel was rather richer than the smaller fishes, yet the others were all so good, I gave them the preference for that time, and laid by the rest of the eel, and of the other fish, till the next day, when I salted them for future use.

I kept now a whole week or more at home, to look farther into the contents of the ship, bottle off a cask of Madeira, which I found leaking, and to consume my new stores of fish and

flesh;

fish; which being somewhat stale, when first salted, I thought would not keep so well as the old ones that were on board; I added also some fresh bread to my provision, and sweetened more water by the aforementioned method; and when my necessary domestic affairs were brought under, I then projected a new voyage.

CHAP. X.

LAYS IN GREAT STORE OF PROVISION—RESOLVES TO TRAVERSE THE ROCK—SAILS FOR THREE WEEKS, STILL SEEING IT ONLY—IS SUCKED UNDER THE ROCK, AND HURRIED DOWN A CATACT—CONTINUES THERE FIVE WEEKS—HIS DESCRIPTION OF THE CAVERN—HIS THOUGHTS AND DIFFICULTIES—HIS ARRIVAL AT A GREAT LAKE—AND HIS LANDING IN THE BEAUTIFUL COUNTRY OF GRAUNDEVOLET.

I Had for a long time wanted to see the other side of the rock, and at last resolved to try if I could not coast it quite round; for, as I reasoned with myself, I might possibly find some landing-places, and perhaps a convenient habitation on shore. But as I was very uncertain what time that might take up, I determined on having provisions, instruments of divers kinds, and necessary utensils in plenty, to guard against accidents as well as I could. I therefore took another sea-chest out of the hold of the ship, and letting it into my boat, replenished it with a stock of wine, brandy, oil, bread, and the like, sufficient for a considerable voyage. I also filled a large cask with water, and took a good quantity of salt to cure what fish I should take by the way. I carried two guns, two brace of pistols, and other arms, with ammunition proportionable; also an ax or two, a saw to cut wood if I should see any, and a few other tools, which might be highly serviceable if I could land. To all these I added an old sail, to make a covering for my goods and artillery against the weather. Thus furnished and equipped, having secured my hatches on board, and every thing that might spoil by wet, I set out, with a God's speed, on

my expedition; committing myself once more to Providence and the main ocean, and proceeding the same way I went the first time.

I did not fail extraordinary fast, but frequently fished in proper places, and caught a great deal, salting and drying the best of what I took. For three weeks time and more, I saw no entrance into the island, as I call it, nor any thing but the same unscaleable rock. This uniform prospect gave me so little hopes of landing, that I was almost of a mind to have returned again. But, on mature deliberation, resolving to go forward a day or two more, I had not proceeded twenty-four hours, when, just as it was becoming dark, I heard a great noise, as of a fall of water; whereupon I proposed to lie by and wait for day, to see what it was: but the stream insensibly drawing me on, I soon found myself in an eddy; and the boat drawing forward, beyond all my power to resist it, I was quickly sucked under a low arch, where, if I had not fallen flat in my boat, having barely light enough to see my danger, I had undoubtedly been crushed to pieces, or driven over-board. I could perceive the boat to fall with incredible violence, as I thought, down a precipice, and suddenly whirled round and round with me; the water roaring on all sides, and dashing against the rock with a most amazing noise.

I expected every moment my poor little vessel would be staved against the rock, and I overwhelmed with waters; and for that reason never once attempted to rise up, or look upon my peril, till after the commotion had in some measure ceased. At length, finding the perturbation of the water abate, and as if by degrees I came into a smoother stream, I took courage just to lift up my affrighted head; but guess, if you can, the horror which seized me, on finding myself in the blackest of darkness, unable to perceive the smallest glimmer of light.

However, as my boat seemed to glide easily, I roused myself, and struck a light: but if I had my terrors before, what must I have now! I was quite stupified at the tremendous view of an immense arch over my head, to which I could see no bounds; the stream itself, as I judged, was about thirty yards broad, but in some places wider,

in some narrower. It was well for me I happened to have a tinder-box, or, though I had escaped hitherto, I must have at last perished; for in the narrower parts of the stream, where it ran swiftest, there were frequently such craggs stood out from the rock, by reason of the turnings and windings, and such sets of the current against them, as, could I not have seen to manage my boat, which I took great care to keep in the middle of the stream, must have thrown me on them, to my inevitable destruction.

Happy it was for me, also, I was so well victualled, and that I had taken with me two bottles of oil, (as I supposed, for I did not imagine I had any more) or I had certainly been lost, not only through hunger, for I was, to my griefs, five weeks in the vault or cavern, but for want of light, which the oil furnished, and without which all other conveniences could have been of no avail to me. I was forced to keep my lamp always burning; so, not knowing how long my residence was to be in that place, or when I should get my discharge from it, if ever, I was obliged to husband my oil with the utmost frugality; and notwithstanding all my caution, it grew low, and was just spent, in little above half the time I stayed there.

I had now cut a piece of my shirt, for a wick to my last drop of oil, which I twisted and lighted. I burnt the oil in my brass tobacco-box, which I had fitted pretty well to answer the purpose. Sitting down, I had many black thoughts of what must follow the loss of my light, which I considered as near expiring, and that, I feared, forever. 'I am here,' thought I, 'like a poor condemned criminal, who knows his execution is fixed for such a day, nay, such an hour, and dies over and over in imagination, and by the torture of his mind, till that hour comes: that hour, which he so much dreads! and yet that very hour which releases him from all farther dread!—Thus do I—My last wick is kindled—my last drop of fuel is consuming!—and I am every moment apprehending the shocks of the rock, the suffocation of the water; and, in short, thinking over my dying thoughts, till the snuff of my lamp throws up it's last curling, ex-

piring flame, and then my quietus will be presently signed, and I released from my tormenting anxiety! Happy minute! Come, then; I only wait for thee!'

My spirits grew so low and feeble upon this, that I had recourse to my brandy-bottle to raise them; but, as I was just going to take a sip, I reflected that would only increase thirst, and, therefore, it were better to take a little of my white Madeira: so, putting my dram-bottle again into the chest, I held up one of Madeira, as I fancied, to the lamp; and seeing it was white, (for I had red too) I clapped it eagerly to my mouth, when the first gulp gave me a greater refreshment, and more cheered my heart, than all the other liquors I had put together could have done; inasmuch as I had almost leaped over the boat's-side for joy. 'It is oil!' cried I, aloud, 'it is oil!' I set it down carefully, with inexpressible pleasure; and examining the rest of the bottles I had taken for white Madeira, I found two more of those to be filled with oil. 'Now,' says I, 'here is the counter-part of my condemned prisoners! For let but a pardon come, though at the gallows, how soon does he forget he has been an unhappy villain! And I, too, have scarce a notion now, how a man, in my case, could feel such sorrow as I have for want of a little oil.'

After my first transport, I found myself grow serious; reflecting upon the vigilance of Providence over us poor creatures, and the various instances wherein it interposes to save or relieve us, in cases of the deepest distress, where our own foresight, wisdom, and power, have utterly failed, and when, looking all around, we could discover no means of deliverance. And I saw a train of circumstances leading to the incident I have just mentioned, which obliged me to acknowledge the superintendence of Heaven over even my affairs; and as the goodness of God had cared for me thus far, and manifested itself to me now, in rescuing me, as it were, from being swallowed up in darkness, I had ground to hope he intended a complete deliverance of me out of that dismal abyss, and would cause me yet to praise him in the full brightness of day.

A series of these meditations brought me

me (at the end of five weeks, as nearly as I could compute it by my lamp) to a prodigious lake of water, bordered with a grassy down, about half a mile wide, of the finest verdure I had ever seen: this again was flanked with a wood or grove, rising like an amphitheatre, of about the same breadth; and behind, and above all, appeared the naked rock to an immense height.

CHAP. XI.

HIS JOY ON HIS ARRIVAL AT LAND
—A DESCRIPTION OF THE PLACE
—NO INHABITANTS — WANTS
FRESH WATER — RESIDES IN A
GROTTO—FINDS WATER—VIEWS
THE COUNTRY — CARRIES HIS
THINGS TO THE GROTTO.

IT is impossible to express my joy at the sight of day once more. I got on the land as soon as possible, after my dismissal from the cavern, and, kneeling on the ground, returned hearty thanks to God for my deliverance, begging, at the same time, grace to improve his mercies, and that I might continue under his protection, whatever should hereafter befall me, and at last die on my native soil.

I unloaded my vessel as well as I could, and hauled her up on the shore; and, turning her upside down, made her a covering for my arms and baggage: I then sat down to contemplate the place, and eat a most delightful meal on the grass, being quite a new thing to me.

I walked over the green-sward to the wood, with my gun in my hand, a brace of pistols in my girdle, and my cutlass hanging before me; but, when I was just entering the wood, looking behind me, and all around the plain, 'Is it possible,' says I, 'that so much art (for I did not then believe it was natural) could have been bestowed upon this place, and no inhabitant in it? Here are neither buildings, huts, castle, nor any living creature to be seen!—It cannot be,' says I, 'that this place was made for nothing!'

I then went a considerable way into the wood, and inclined to have gone

much farther, it being very beautiful; but, on second thoughts, judged it best to content myself at present with only looking out a safe retreat for that night; for, however agreeable the place then seemed, darkness was at hand, when every thing about me would have more or less of horror in it.

The wood, at it's first entrance, was composed of the most charming flowering shrubs that can be imagined; each growing upon it's own stem, at so convenient a distance from the other, that you might fairly pass between them any way without the least incommodity. Behind them grew numberless trees, somewhat taller, of the greatest variety of shapes, forms, and verdures, the eye ever beheld; each, also, so far asunder as was necessary for the spreading of their several branches, and the growth of their delicious fruits, without a bush, briar, or shrub, amongst them. Behind these, and still on the higher ground, grew an infinite number of very large, tall trees, much loftier than the former, but intermixed with some underwood, which grew thicker and closer the nearer you approached the rock. I made a shift to force my way through these as far as the rock; which rose as perpendicular as a regular building, having only here and there some crags and unevennesses. There was, I observed, a space all the way between the underwood and the rock, wide enough to drive a cart in; and, indeed, I thought it had been left for that purpose.

I walked along this passage a good way, having tied a rag of the lining of my jacket at the place of my entrance, to know it again at my coming back, which I intended to be ere it grew dark; but I found so much pleasure in the walk, and surveying a small natural grotto which was in the rock, that the day-light forsook me unawares: whereupon I resolved to put off my return unto the boat till next morning, and to take up my lodging for that night in the cave.

I cut down a large bundle of underwood with my cutlass, sufficient to stop up the mouth of the grotto, and laying me down to rest, slept as sound as if I had been on board my ship; for I never had one hour's rest together since I shot the gulph till this. Nature, in-

deed, could not have supported itself thus long under much labour; but as I had nothing to do, but only keep the middle stream, I began to be as used to guide myself in it with my eyes almost closed, and my senses retired, as a higger is to drive the cart to market in his sleep.

The next morning I awaked sweetly refreshed; and, by the sign of my rag, found the way again through the underwood to my boat. I raised that up a little, took out some bread and cheese, and, having eat pretty heartily, laid me down to drink at the lake, which looked as clear as chrystal, expecting a most delicious draught; but I had forgot it brought me from the sea, and my first gulp almost poisoned me. This was a sore disappointment, for I knew my water-cask was nigh emptied; and, indeed, turning up my boat again, I drew out all that remained, and drank it, for I was much athirst.

However, I did not despair; I was now so used to God's providence, and had a sense of it's operations so rivetted in my mind, that though the vast lake of salt-water was surrounded by an impenetrable rock or barrier of stone, I rested satisfied that I should rather find even that yield me a fresh and living stream than that I should perish for want of it.

With this easy mind did I travel five or six miles on the side of the lake; and sometimes stepped into the wood, and walked a little there, till I had gone almost half the diameter of the lake, which lay in a circular or rather an oval figure. I had then thoughts of walking back, to be near my boat and lodging, for fear I should be again benighted if I went much farther; but, considering I had come past no water, and possibly I might yet find some if I went quite round the lake, I rather chose to take up with a new lodging that night, than to return: and I did not want for a supper, having brought out with me more bread and cheese than had served for dinner, the remainder of which was in the lining of my jacket. When it grew darkish, I had some thoughts of eating; but I considered, as I was then neither very hungry nor dry, if I should eat it would but occasion drought, and I had nothing to allay that with; so I contented my-

self for that night to lay me down superfluous.

In the morning I set forward again upon my water-search, and hoped to compass the whole lake that day. I had gone about seven miles more, when, at a little distance before me, I perceived a small hollow or cut in the grass from the wood to the lake; thither I hasted with all speed, and blessed God for the supply of a fine fresh rill, which, distilling from several small clefts in the rock, had collected itself into one stream, and cut it's way through the green sod to the lake.

I lay down with infinite pleasure, and swallowed a most cheering draught of the precious liquid; and, sitting on the brink, made a good meal of what I had with me, and then drank again. I had now got five-sixths of the lake's circumference to go back again to my boat; for I did not suspect any passage over the cavern's mouth where I came into the lake; and I could not, without much trouble, consider, that, if I would have this water for a constant supply, I must either come a long way for it, or fix my habitation near it. I was just going back again, revolving these uneasy thoughts in my breast, when this rose suddenly in my mind; that, if I could possibly get over the mouth of the cavern, I should not have above three miles from my grotto to the water. Now, as I could not get home that night, otherwise than by crossing it, and as, if I lost my labour, I should be but where I was, whereas if I should get over it, it would very much shorten my journey, I resolved to try whether the thing was practicable; first, however, looking out for a resting-place somewhere near my water, if I should meet with a disappointment.

I then walked into the wood; where, meeting with no place of retreat to my liking, I went to my rill, and taking another sup, determined not to leave that side of the lake till morning; but having some time to spare, I walked about two miles to view the inlet of the lake, and was agreeably surprized, just over the mouth of the cavern, to see a large stone-arch like a bridge, as if it had been cut out of the rock, quite across the opening: this cheered me vastly; and, pushing over it, I found
a path

a path that brought me to my boat before night.

I then went up to my grotto, for the third night in this most delightful place; and the next morning early I launched my boat, and taking my water-cask and a small dipping-bucket with me, I rowed away for the rill, and returned highly pleased with a sufficiency of water, whereof I carried a bucket and a copper-kettle full up with me to the grotto. Indeed, it was not the least part of my satisfaction that I had this kettle with me; for though I was in hopes, in my last voyage, I should have come to some shore, where I could have landed and enjoyed myself over some of my fish, and for that reason had taken it, notwithstanding things did not turn out just as I had schemed, yet my kettle proved the most useful piece of furniture I had.

Having now acquainted myself with the circumference of the lake, and settled a communication with my rill, I began to think of commencing house-keeper. In order therunto, I set about removing my goods up to the grotto. By constant application, in a few days I had gotten all thither but my two great chests and my water-cask; and how to drag or drive any of those to it, I was entirely at a loss. My water-cask was of the utmost importance to me, and I had thoughts, sometimes, of stopping it close, and rolling it to the place; but the ascent through the wood to the grotto was so steep, that, besides the fear of staving it, which would have been an irreparable loss, I judged it impossible to accomplish it by my strength; so, with a good deal of discontent, I determined to remit both that and the chests to future consideration.

CHAP. XII.

AN ACCOUNT OF THE GROTTO—A ROOM ADDED TO IT—A VIEW OF THAT BUILDING—THE AUTHOR MAKES A LITTLE CART—ALSO A WET DOCK FOR HIS BOAT—GOES IN QUEST OF PROVISION—A DESCRIPTION OF DIVERS FRUITS AND PLANTS—HE BRINGS HOME A CART-LOAD OF DIFFERENT SORTS—MAKES EXPERIMENTS ON THEM—LOADS HIS CART

WITH OTHERS—A GREAT DISAPPOINTMENT—MAKES GOOD BREAD—NEVER SEES THE SUN—THE NATURE OF THE LIGHT.

HAVING come to a full resolution of fixing my residence at the grotto, and making that my capital seat, it is proper to give you some description of it.

This grotto, then, was a full mile from the lake, in the rock which encompassed the wood. The entrance was scarcely two feet wide, and about nine feet high, rising, from the height of seven feet upward, to a point in the middle. The cavity was about fifteen feet long within, and about five wide. Being obliged to lie lengthwise in it, full six feet of it were taken up at the farther end for my lodging only, as nothing could stand on the side of my bed that would leave me room to come at it. The remaining nine feet of the cave's length were taken up, first, by my fire-place, which was the deepest side of the door-way, ranging with my bed, (which I had set close to the rock on one side) and took up near three feet in length; and my furniture and provisions, of one sort or other, filled up the rest, that I had much ado to creep between them into my bed.

In the chest which I had taken for a seat in the boat, as aforesaid, upon breaking it open by the water-side, I found a mattress, some shirts, shoes, stockings, and several other useful things; a small case of bottles with cordials in them, some instruments of surgery, plaisters and salves; all which, together with a large quantity of fish that I had salted, I carried to the grotto.

My habitation being thus already over-charged, and as I could not, however, bear the thoughts of quitting it, or of having any of my goods exposed to the weather on the outside, I was naturally bent on contriving how I should encrease my accommodations. As I had no prospect of enlarging the grotto itself, I could conceive no other way of effecting my desire but by the addition of an outer-room. This thought pleased me very much, so that the next day I set myself to plan out the building, and trace the foundation of it.

I told you before there was about the

the space of a cart-way between the wood and the rock clear; but this breadth, as I was building for life, (so I imagined) not appearing to me spacious enough for my new apartment, I considered how I should extend it's bounds into the wood. Here-upon I set myself to observe what trees stood at a proper distance from my grotto, that might serve as they stood, with a little management of hewing and the like, to compose a noble doorway, posts, and supporters; and I found, that upon cutting down three of the nearest trees, I should answer my purpose in this respect; and that there were several others, about twenty feet from the grotto, and running parallel with the rock, the situation of which was so happily adapted to my intention, that I could make them become, as I fancied, an out-fence or wall: so I took my ax, to cut down my nearest trees; but as I was going to strike, a somewhat different scheme presented to my imagination that altered my resolution.

In conformity with this new plan, I fixed the height of my intended ceiling, and sawed off my nearest trees to that, sloping from the sides to the middle, to support cross beams for the roof to rest on, and left the trunks standing, by way of pillars, both for the use and ornament of the structure. In short, I worked hard every day upon my building for a month, in which time I had cut all my timber into proper lengths for my out-works and covering; but was at a great stand how to fix my side-posts, having no spade or mattock, and the ground almost as hard as flint, for to be sure it had never been stirred since the creation. I then thought I had the worst part of my job to get over; however, I went on, and having contrived, in most of my upright side-quarters, to take the tops of trees, and leave on the lower parts of their cleft, where they began to branch out and divide from the main stem, I set one of them upright against the rock, then laid one end of my long ceiling-pieces upon the cleft of it, and laid the other end upon a tree on the same side, whose top I had also sawed off with a proper cleft. I then went and did the same on the other side; after this, I laid on a proper number of cross-beams and tied all very firmly to-

gether with the bark of young trees stripped off in long thongs, which answered that purpose very well. Thus I proceeded, crossing, joining, and fastening all together, till the whole roof was so strong and firm that there was no stirring any part of it: I then spread it over with small lop-wood, on which I raised a ridge of dried grass and weeds, very thick, and thatched over the whole with the leaves of a tree very much resembling those of a palm, but much thicker, and not quite so broad; the entire surface, I might say, was as smooth as a dye, and so ordered, by a gentle declivity every way, as to carry off the wet.

Having covered in my building, I was next to finish and close the walls of it; the skeleton of these was composed of sticks, crossing one another checker-wise and tied together: to fill up the voids, I wove upon them the longest and most pliable twigs of the underwood I could find, leaving only a door-way on one side, between two stems of a tree, which dividing in the trunk, at about two feet from the ground, grew from thence, for the rest of it's height, as if the branches were a couple of trees a little distant from one another, which made a sort of stileway to my room. When this was all done, I tempered up some earth by the lakeside, and mixing it to a due consistence with mud, which I took from the lake, applied it as a plastering in this manner: I divided it into pieces, which I rolled up of the size of a foot-ball; these lumps I stuck close by one another on the lattice, pressing them very hard with my hands, which forced part of them quite through the small twigs, and then I smoothed both sides with the back of my saw, to about the thickness of five or six inches, so that by this means I had a wall round my new apartment a foot thick. This plaster-work cost me some time, and a great deal of labour, as I had a full mile to go to the lake for every load of stuff, and could carry but little at once, it was so heavy; but there was neither water for tempering, nor proper earth to make it with, any nearer. At last, however, I completed my building in every respect but a door, and for this I was forced to use the lid of my sea-chest; which, indeed, I would have chosen not to apply that way, but I had

had nothing else that would do; and there was, however, this conveniency, that it had hinges ready fixed thereon.

I now began to enjoy myself in my new habitation, like the absolute and sole lord of the country, for I had neither seen man nor beast since my arrival, save a few animals in the trees like our squirrels, and some water-rats about the lake; but there were several strange kinds of birds I had never before seen, both on the lake and in the woods.

That which now troubled me most was, how to get my water nearer to me than the lake, for I had no lesser vessel than the cask which held above twenty gallons, and to bring that up was a fatigue intolerable. My next contrivance, therefore, was this: I told you I had taken my chest-lid to make a door for an anti-chamber as I now began to call it; so I resolved to apply the body of the chest also to a purpose different from that it originally answered. In order to this, I went to the lake where the body of the chest lay, and sawed it through within about three inches of the bottom. Of the two ends, having rounded them as well as I could, I made two wheels; and with one of the sides I made two more. I burnt a hole through the middle of each; then preparing two axle-trees, I fastened them, after setting on the wheels, to the bottom of the chest, with the nails I had drawn out of it. Having furnished this machine, on which I bestowed no small labour, I was hugely pleased with it, and only wished I had a beast, if it were but an ass, to draw it; however, that task I was satisfied to perform myself, since there was no help for it; so I made a good strong cord out of my fishing-lines, and fixed that to drag it by. When all was thus in readiness, filling my water-cask, I bound it thereon, and so brought it to the grotto, with such ease, comparatively, as quite charmed me. Having succeeded so well in the first essay, I no sooner unloaded, but down went I again with my cart, or truckle rather, to the lake, and brought from thence on it my other chest, which I had left entire.

I had now nothing remaining near the lake but my boat, and had half a mind to try to bring that up too; but having so frequent occasion for her to

get my water in, which I used in greater abundance now than I had done at first, a great part going to supply my domestick uses, as well as for drinking, I resolved against that, and sought out for a convenient dock to stow it in, as a preservative against wind and weather, which I soon after effected; for having pitched upon a swampy place, overgrown with a sort of long flags or reeds, I soon cut a trench from the lake, with a sort of spade or board that I had chopped and sharpened for that use.

Thus having stowed my boat, and looked over all my goods, and sorted them, and taken a survey of my provisions, I found I must soon be in want of the last if I did not forthwith procure a supply; for though I had victualled so well at setting out, and had been very sparing ever since, yet, had it not been for a great quantity of fish I took and salted in my passage to the gulph, I had been to seek for food much sooner. Hereupon, I thought it highly prudent to look out before I really wanted.

With this resolution I accoutred myself, as in my first walk, with my instruments and arms: but instead of travelling the lake-side, I went along the wood, and therein found great plenty of divers kinds of fruits; though I could scarce persuade myself to taste, or try the effects of them, being so much unlike our own, or any I had seen elsewhere. I observed amongst the shrubs abundance of a fruit, or whatever else you may call it, which grew like a ram's horn; sharp at the point next the twig it was fastened to, and circling round and round, one fold upon another, which gradually increased to the size of my wrist in the middle, and then as gradually decreased till it terminated in a point again at the contrary extreme; all which spiral, if it were fairly extended in length, might be a yard or an ell long. I surveyed this strange vegetable very attentively; it had a rind, or crust, which I could not break with my hand, but taking my knife, and making an opening therewith in the shell, there issued out a sort of milky liquor in great quantity, to at least a pint and half, which having tasted, I found as sweet as honey, and very pleasant: however, I could not persuade

suade myself any more than just to taste it. I then found on the large trees several kinds of fruits, like pears or quinces, but most of them exceeding hard and rough, and quite disagreeable; so I quitted my hopes of them.

About three miles from my grotto I met with a large space of ground full of a low plant, growing only with a single woody stalk half a foot high, and from thence issued a round head, about a foot or ten inches diameter, but quite flat, about three quarters of an inch thick, and just like a cream-cheese, standing upon it's edge: these grew so close together, that, upon the least wind stirring, their heads rattled against each other very musically; for though the stalks were so very strong that they would not easily either bend or break, yet the fanning of the wind upon the broad heads twisting the stalks, so as to let the heads strike each other, they made a most agreeable sound.

I stood some time admiring this shrub, and then cutting up one of them, I found it weighed about two pounds: they had a tough, green rind, or covering, very smooth, and the inside full of a stringy pulp, quite white. In short, I made divers other trials of berries, roots, herbs, and what else I could find, but received little satisfaction from any of them, for fear of bad qualities. I returned back ruminating on what things I had seen, resolving to take my cart the next walk, and bring it home loaded with different kinds of them, in order to make my trials thereof at leisure: but my cart being too flat, and wanting sides, I considered it would carry very little, and that what it would otherwise bear, on that account, must tumble and roll off; so I made a fire, and turned smith; for with a great deal to do, breaking off the wards of a large key I had, and making it red-hot, I by degrees fashioned it into a kind of spindle, and therewith making holes quite round the bottom of my cart, in them I stuck up sticks, about two feet high, that I had tapered at the end to fit them.

Having thus qualified my cart for a load, I proceeded with it to the wood, and cutting a small quantity of each species of green, berry, fruit, and

flower, that I could find, and packing them severally in parcels, I returned at night heavy laden, and held a council with myself what use they could most properly be applied to.

I had amongst my goods, as I said, a copper-kettle, which held about a gallon; this I set over my fire, and boiled something, by turns, of every sort in it, watching all the while, and with a stick stirring and raising up one thing and then another, to feel when they were boiled tender: but of upwards of twenty greens which I thus dressed, only one proved eatable, all the rest becoming more stringy, tough, and insipid, for the cooking. The one I have excepted, was a round, thick, woolly-leaved plant, which boiled tender, and tasted as well as spinnage; I therefore preserved some leaves of this, to know it again by; and, for distinction, called it by the name of that herb.

I then began upon my fruits of the pear and quince kind, at least eight different sorts; but I found I could make nothing of them, for they were most of them as rough and crabbed after stewing as before, so I laid them all aside. Lastly, I boiled my ram's-horn and cream-cheese, as I called them, together. Upon tasting the latter of these, it was become so watery and insipid, I laid it aside as useless. I then cut the other, and tasted the juice, which proved so exceeding pleasant, that I took a large gulp or two of it, and tossed it into the kettle again.

Having now gone through the several kinds of my exoticks, I had a mind to re-examine them after cooling; but could make nothing of any of my greens but the spinnage. I tried several berries and nuts too; but, save a few sorts of nuts, they were all very tasteless. Then I began to review the fruits, and could find but two sorts that I had any the least hopes from. I then laid the best by, and threw the others away. After this process, which took me up near a whole day, and clearing my house of good-for-nothings, I returned to re-examine my cheese, that was grown cold, and was now so dry and hard I could not get my teeth into it; upon which I was going to skim it away out of my grotto, saying, 'Go, thou worthless!' (for

(for I always spoke aloud my thoughts to myself) I say, I was just dispatching it, when I checked my hand, and, as I could make no impression with my teeth, had a mind to try what my knife could do. Accordingly I began at the edge of the quarter, for I had boiled but a quarter of it; but the rind was grown so hard and brittle that my knife slipping, and raking along the cut-edge of it, scratched off some powder, as white as possible; I then scraped it backward and forward some time, till I found it would all scrape away in this powder, except the rind; upon which I laid it aside again for farther experiment.

During this review, my kettle and ram's-horn had been boiling, till hearing it blubber very loud, and seeing there was but little liquor in it, I whipped it off the fire, for fear of burning it's bottom, but took no farther notice of it till about two hours after; when, returning to the grotto, I went to wash out my kettle, but could scarce get my ram's-horn from the bottom; and when I did, it brought up with it a sort of pitchy substance, though not so black, and several gummy threads hanging to it, drawn out to a great length. I wondered at this, and thought the shell of the ram's-horn had melted, or some such thing; till venturing to put a little of the stuff on my tongue, it proved to my thinking as good treacle as I had ever tasted.

This new discovery pleased me very much. I scraped all the sweet thing up, and laid it near my grotto, in a large leaf of one of the trees, (about two feet long, and broad in proportion) to prevent it's running about. In getting this curiosity out of my kettle, I found in it a small piece of my cheese, which I suppose had been broke off in stirring; and biting it, (for it was soft enough) I think it was the most luscious and delicate morsel I ever put into my lips. This unexpected good fortune put me on trying the best of my pears again; so, setting on my kettle, with very little water, and putting some of my treacle into it, and two of the best pears quartered, I found, upon a little boiling, they also became an excellent dainty.

Having succeeded so well, I was

quite ripe for another journey with my cart; which I accordingly undertook, taking my route over the stone-bridge, to see what the other side of the lake produced. In travelling through the trees, I met, amongst other things, with abundance of large gourds, which, climbing the trees, displayed their fruit to the height of twenty or thirty feet above the ground. I cut a great many of these, and some very large ones of different hues and forms; which of themselves making a great load, with some few new sorts of berries and greens, were the gathering of that day. But I must tell you, I was almost foiled in getting them home; for coming to my stone-bridge, it rose so steep, and was so much ruggedger than the grass or wood-ground, that I was at a set upon the first entrance, and terribly afraid I should either break my wheels, or pull off my axle-trees. Hereupon I was forced to unload, and carry my cargo over in my arms to the other side of the bridge; whither having then, with less fear but much caution, drawn my cart, I loaded again, and got safe home.

I was mightily pleased with the acquisitions of this journey; 'For now,' thought I, 'I shall have several convenient family-utenils;' so spent the next day or two in scooping my gourds and cleaning away the pulp. When I had done this, finding the rinds to be very weak and yielding, I made a good fire, and setting them round it at a moderate distance, to dry, I went about something else without doors: but, alas! my hopes were ill-founded; for coming home to turn my gourds, and see how dry they were, I found them all warped, and turned into a variety of uncouth shapes. This put me to a stand; but, however, I recovered some pieces of them for use, as the bottom parts of most of them, after paring away the sides, would hold something, though they by no means answered my first purpose.

'Well,' thought I, 'what if I have lost my gourds, I have gained experience. I will dry them next time with the guts in, and having stiffened their rinds in their proper dimensions, then try to cleanse them.' So, next morning, (for I was very eager at it) I set out with my
G cart

cart for another load; and having handed them over the bridge, got safe with them to the grotto. These by proper management proved exceedingly valuable to me; answering, in one way or other, the several uses of plates, bottles, pans, and divers other vessels.

I now got a large quantity of the vegetable ram's-horn, and filled a great many of my gourds with the treacle it yielded; I also boiled and dried a large parcel of my cheeses, and hung them up for use, for I had now for some time made all my bread of the latter, scraping and bruising the flour, and mixing it with my treacle and water; and this, indeed, made such a sweet and nourishing bread, that I could even have lived wholly upon it: but I afterwards very much improved it, by putting the milky juice of the ram's-horn, unboiled, to my flour, in a small quantity, and then baking it on the hearth, covered over with embers. This detracted nothing from the sweetness and mellowness of my bread, but made it much lighter than the treacle alone would have done.

Finding there was no fear of starving, but so far from it, that from day to day I found out something new to add to my repasts, either in substantials or by way of dessert, I set me down very well contented with my condition. I had nothing to do but to lay up store against sickness and the dark weather; which last I expected would soon be upon me, as the days were now exceeding short. Indeed, though I had now been here six months, I had never seen the sun since I first entered the gulph; and though there was very little rain, and but few clouds, yet the brightest day-light never exceeded that of half an hour after sun-set in the summer-time in England, and little more than just reddened the sky. For the first part of my time here, there was but little, if any, difference between day and night; but afterwards, what I might call the night, or lesser degree of light, took up more hours than the greater, and went on gradually encreasing as to time, so that I perceived total darkness approached, such as I had on board my ship the year before.

C H A P. XIII.

THE AUTHOR LAYS IN A STORE
AGAINST THE DARK WEATHER—
HEARS VOICES—HIS THOUGHTS
THEREON—PERSUADES HIMSELF
IT WAS A DREAM—HEARS THEM
AGAIN—DETERMINES TO SEE IF
ANY ONE LODGED IN THE ROCK
—IS SATISFIED THERE IS NO-
BODY—OBSERVATIONS ON WHAT
HE SAW — FINDS A STRONG
WEED LIKE WHIPCORD—MAKES
A DRAG-NET—LENGTHENS IT—
CATCHES A MONSTER—IT'S DE-
SCRIPTION—MAKES OIL OF IT.

I Had now well stored my grotto with all sorts of winter provisions; and feeling the weather grow very cold, I expected, and waited patiently for, the total darkness. I went little abroad, and employed myself within doors, endeavouring to fence against the approaching extremity of the cold. For this purpose, I prepared a quantity of rushes; which being very dry, I spread them smoothly on the floor of my bed-chamber a good thickness, and over them I laid my mattresses. Then I made a double sheet of the boat's awning, or sail, that I had brought to cover my goods; and having skewered together several of the jackets and cloaths I found in the chest, of them I made a coverlid; so that I lay very commodiously, and made very long nights of it now the dark season was set in.

As I lay awake one night, or day, I know not which, I very plainly heard the sound of several human voices, and sometimes very loud; but though I could easily distinguish the articulations, I could not understand the least word that was said; nor did the voices seem at all to me like such as I had any where heard before, but much softer and more musical. This startled me, and I rose immediately, slipping on my cloaths, and taking my gun in my hand, (which I always kept charged, being my constant travelling companion) and my cutlafs. Thus equipped, I walked into my anti-chamber, where I heard the voices much plainer, till, after some little time, they by degrees died quite away. After watching here, and hearkening a good while, hearing

hearing nothing, I walked back into the grotto, and laid me down again on my bed. I was inclined to open the door of my anti-chamber, but I own I was afraid; besides, I considered that if I did, I could discover nothing at any distance, by reason of the thick and gloomy wood that inclosed me.

I had a thousand different surmises about the meaning of this odd incident; and could not conceive how any human creatures should be in my kingdom (as I called it) but myself, and I never yet see them, or any trace of their habitation. But then again I reflected, that though I had surrounded the whole lake, yet I had not traced the out-bounds of the wood next the rock, where there might be innumerable grottos like mine; nay, perhaps, some as spacious as that I had failed through to the lake; and that though I had not perceived it yet, this beautiful spot might be very well peopled. 'But,' says I again, 'if there be any such beings as I am fancying here, surely they don't skulk in their dens, like savage beasts, by day-light, and only patrol for prey by night! if so, I shall probably become a delicious morsel for them ere long, if they meet with me.' This kept me still more within doors than before, and I hardly ever stirred out but for water or firing. At length, hearing no more voices, nor seeing any one, I began to be more composed in my mind, and at last grew persuaded it was all a mere delusion, and only a fancy of mine without any real foundation; and sometimes, though I was sure I was fully awake when I heard them, I persuaded myself I had rose in my sleep, upon a dream of voices, and recollected with myself the various stories I had heard, when a boy, of walking in one's sleep, and the surprising effects of it; so the whole notion was now blown over.

I had not enjoyed my tranquillity above a week, before my fears were roused afresh, hearing the same sound of voices twice the same night, but not many minutes at a time. What gave me most pain was, that they were at such a distance, as I judged by the languor of the sound, that if I had opened my door, I could not have seen the utterers through the trees, and I was resolved not to venture out; but

then I determined, if they should come again any thing near my grotto, to open the door, see who they were, and stand upon my defence, whatever came of it: 'For,' says I, 'my entrance is so narrow and high, that more than one cannot come at a time; and I can with ease dispatch twenty of them before they can secure me, if they should be savages; but if they prove sensible human creatures, it will be a great benefit to me to join myself to their society.' Thus had I formed my scheme, but I heard no more of them for a great while; so that at length, beginning to grow ashamed of my fears, I became tranquil again.

The day now returning, and with it my labours, I applied to my usual callings; but my mind ran strangely upon viewing the rock quite round, that is, the whole circuit of my dominions; 'For,' thinks I, 'there may possibly be an outlet through the rock into some other country, from whence the persons I heard may come.' As soon therefore as the days grew towards the longest, I prepared for my progress. Having lived so well at home since my settlement, I did not care to trust only to what I could pick up in the woods for my subsistence during this journey, which would not only take up time in procuring, but perhaps not agree with me; so I resolved to carry a supply with me, proportionate to the length of my perambulation. Hereupon considering, that though my walk round the lake was finished in two days, yet as I now intended to go round by the rock, the way would be much longer, and perhaps more troublesome than that was; remembering also my journey with Glanlipze in Africa, and how much I complained of the fruits we carried for our subsistence; these circumstances, I say, laying together, I resolved to load the cart with a variety of food, bread and fruits especially, and draw that with me.

Thus provided, I sallied forth with great cheerfulness, and proceeded in the main easily; though in some places I was forced to make way with my hatchet, the ground was so over-run with underwood. I very narrowly viewed the rock as I went, bottom and sides, all the way, but could see nothing like a passage through it, or in-

deed any more than one opening, or inlet, which I entered for about thirty yards, but it was not above three feet wide, and terminated in the solid rock.

After some days travel, (making all the observations I could on the several plants, shrubs, and trees, which I met with, particularly where any of these occurred to me entirely new) finding myself a little faintish, I had a mind for a sup of ram's-horn juice; so I cut me one, but upon opening it found therein only a pithy pulp, and no ways fit to taste. I supposed by this I was too early for the milk, it being three months later the last year when I cut them. Hereon, seeing one upon another shrub, which by it's rusty colour I judged might have hung all the winter, I opened that, and found it full of milk; but putting some of it into my mouth, it was as sour as any vinegar I ever tasted in my life. "So," thinks I, (and said so too; for, as I told you before, I always spoke out) 'here's sauce for something when I want it;' and this gave me a hint to store myself with these gourds, to hang by for vinegar the next winter.

By this time I had come almost to my rill, when I entered upon a large plat of ground miserably over-run with weeds, matted together very thick, These choked up my wheels in such a manner that I could neither free them with my hands, nor get either backwards or forwards, they binding my cart down like so many cords; so that I was obliged to cut my way back again with my hatchet, and take a sweep round in the wood, on the outside of these weeds.

In all my life I never saw any thing of it's size, for it was no thicker than a whipcord, so strong as this weed; and what raised my wonder was the length of it, for I drew out pieces of it near fifty feet long, and even they were broken at the end, so that it might be as long again for aught I know, for it was so matted and twisted together, that it was a great trial of patience to untangle it; but that which was driest, and to me looked the rottenest and weakest, I found to be much the strongest. Upon examination of it's parts, I discovered it to be composed of an infinite number of small threads, spirally overlaying and infolding one another.

As I saw but few things that I could not find a use for, so this I perceived would serve all the common purposes of packthread; a thing I was often in want of. This inclined me to take a load of it home with me. Indeed, the difficulty of getting a quantity in the condition I desired it, puzzled me a little; 'For,' says I, 'if I cut up a good deal of it with my hatchet, as I first designed, I shall only have small lengths good for little, and to get it in pieces of any considerable length, so as to be of service, will require much time and labour.' But reflecting how much I needed it, and of what benefit it would be, I resolved to make a trial of what I could do; so, without more hesitation, I went to work, and cutting a fibre close to it's root, I extricated that thread from all it's windings, just as one does an entangled whipcord. When I had thus disengaged a sufficient length, I cut that off; and repeating the like operation, in about three hours time, but with no little toil, I made up my load of different lengths just to my liking. Having finished this task, I filled the gourd, brought for that purpose, with water; and having first viewed the whole remaining part of the rock, I returned over the stone-bridge home again.

This journey, though it took me up several days, and was attended with some fatigue, had yet given me great satisfaction; for now I was persuaded I could not have one rival, or enemy, to fear in my whole dominions. And from the impossibility, as I supposed, of there being any, or of the ingress of any, unless by the same passage I entered at, and by which I was well assured they could never return, I grew contented, and blamed myself for the folly of my imaginary voices, as I called them then, and took it for a distemper of the fancy only.

The next day I looked over my load of mat-weed, having given it that name, and separated the different lengths from each other. I then found I had several pieces between forty and fifty feet long, of which I resolved to get a good number more, to make me a drag-net, that I might try for some fish in the lake. A day or two after, therefore, I brought home another load of it. Then I picked out a smooth level spot upon

upon the green-sward, and having prepared a great number of short wooden pegs, I strained a line of the matweed about ten feet long, tying it at each end to a peg, and stuck a row of pegs along by that line, about two inches asunder; I next strained another line of the same length, parallel to that, at the distance of forty feet from it, and stuck pegs thereby, corresponding to the former row; and from each peg on one side, to the opposite peg on the other, I tied a like length of my matline, quite through the whole number of pegs; when the work looked like the inside of an harpichord; I afterwards drove pegs in like manner along the whole length of the two outermost longer lines, and tied shorter lines to them; so that the whole affair then represented the squares of a racket; the corners of each of which squares I tied very tight with smaller pieces of the line, till I had formed a compleat net of forty feet long and ten wide.

When I had finished my net, as I thought, I wrapped several stones in rags, and fastened them to the bottom to sink it, and some of the smallest unscopied dry gourds to the top, to keep that part buoyant. I now longed to begin my new trade, and carried the net to my boat with that intention; but after two or three hauls I found it would not answer for want of length; (though by chance I caught a blackish fish without scales, a little bigger than whiting, but much longer, which stuck by the gills in it;) so I left the net in the boat, resolving to make an addition to it with all speed; and returning to my grotto, I supped on the fish I had taken, and considered how to pursue my enterprize with better effect.

I provided me with another large parcel of line; and having brought two more lengths to perfection, I joined all together, and fixing one end on shore, by a pole I had cut for that purpose, I launched my boat, with the other end in it, taking a sweep the length of my net round to my stick again, and getting on shore, hauled up my net by both ends together. I found now I had mended my instrument, and taken a proper way of applying it; for by this means, in five hauls, I caught about sixteen fish of

three or four different sorts, and one shell-fish, almost like a lobster, but without great claws, and with a very small short tail; which made me think, as the body was thrice as long as a lobster's in proportion, that it did not swim backwards, like that creature, but only crawled forwards, (it having lobster-like legs, but much shorter and stronger) and that the legs all standing so forward, it's tail was, by it's motion, to keep the hinder part of the body from dragging upon the ground, as I observed it did when the creature walked on land, it then frequently flacking it's short tail.

These fish made me rich in provisions. Some of them I eat fresh, and the remainder I salted down. But of all the kinds, my lobster was the most delicious food, and made me almost three meals.

Thus finding there were fish to be had, though my present tackle seemed suitable enough to my family, yet could I not rest, till I had improved my fishery by enlarging my net; for as it was, even with my late addition, I must either sweep little or no compass of ground, or it would have no bag behind me. Upon this I set to work, and shortly doubled the dimensions of it. I had then a mind to try it at the mouth of my rill; so taking it with me the next time I crossed the lake for water, and fastening it to my pole, close by the right-side of the rill, I swept a long compass round to the left, and closing the ends, attempted to draw up in the hollow cut of the rill. But by the time I had gathered up two thirds of the net, I felt a resistance that quite amazed me. In short, I was not able to stand against the force I felt. Whereupon, sitting down in the rill, and clapping my feet to the two sides of it, I exerted all my strength, till finally I became conqueror, and brought up so shocking a monster, that I was just rising to run for my life on the sight of it. But recollecting that the creature was hampered, and could not make so much resistance on the land as in the water, I ventured to drag the net up as far from the rill as my strength and breath would permit me; and then running to the boat for my gun, I returned to the net, to examine my prize. Indeed, I had not instantly resolution enough

enough to survey it; and when at length I assumed courage enough to do so, I could not perfectly distinguish the parts, they were so discomposed; but taking hold of one end of the net, I endeavoured to disentangle the thing, and then drawing the net away, a most surprizing sight presented itself: the creature reared upright, about three-feet high, covered all over with long black shaggy hair, like a bear, which hung down from his head and neck quite along his back and sides. He had two fins, very broad and large, which, as he stood erect, looked like arms, and those he waved and whirled about with incredible velocity; and though I wondered at first at it, I found afterwards it was the motion of these fins that kept him upright; for I perceived when they ceased their motion he fell flat on his belly. He had two very large feet, which he stood upon, but could not run, and but barely walk on them, which made me in the less haste to dispatch him; and after he had stood upon his feet about four minutes, clapping his fins to his sides, he fell upon his belly.

When I found he could not attack me, I was moving closer to him; but, upon sight of my stirring, up he rose again, and whirled his fins about as before, so long as he stood. And now I viewed him round, and found he had no tail at all, and that his hinder fins, or feet, very much resembled a large frog's, but were at least ten inches broad, and eighteen long, from heel to toe; and his legs were so short that when he stood upright his breech bore upon the ground. His belly, which he kept towards me, was of an ash-colour, and very broad, as was also his breast. His eyes were small and blue, with a large black sight in the middle, and rather of an oval than round make. He had a long snout like a boar, and vast teeth. Thus having surveyed him near half an hour living, I made him rise up once more and shot him in the breast. He fell, and giving a loud howl, or groan, expired.

I had then time to see what else I had caught; and turning over the net, found a few of the same fish I had taken before, and some others of a flattish make, and one little lump of

flesh unformed; which last, by all I could make of it, seemed to be either a spawn or young one of that I had shot.

The great creature was so heavy, I was afraid I must have cut him in pieces to get him to the boat; but with much ado, having stowed the rest, I tumbled him on board. I then filled my water-cask, and rowed homewards. Being got to land, I was obliged to bring down my cart, to carry my great beast-fish, as I termed him, up to the grotto. When I had got him thither, I had a notion of first tasting, and then, if I liked his flesh, of salting him down, and drying him; so, having flayed him, and taken out the guts and intrails, I broiled a piece of him; but it made such a blaze, that most of the fat ran into the fire, and the flesh proved so dry and rank, that I could no ways endure it.

I then began to be sorry I had taken so much pains for no profit, and had endangered my net into the bargain, (for that had got a crack or two in the scuffle) and was thinking to throw away my large but worthless acquisition.

However, as I was now prone to weighing all things, before I threw it away, I resolved to consider a little; whereupon I changed my mind. Says I, 'Here is a good warm skin, which, when dry, will make me a rare cushion. Again, I have for a long while had no light beside that of the day; but now, as this beast's fat makes such a blaze in the fire, and issues in so great a quantity from such a small piece as I broiled, why may not I boil a good tallow or oil out of it? and if I can, I have not made so bad a hand of my time as I thought for.'

In short, I went immediately to work upon this subject, (for I never let a project cool after I had once started it) and boiled as much of the flesh as the kettle would hold, and letting it stand to cool, I found it turned out a very good oil for burning; though, I confess, I thought it would rather have made tallow. This success quickened my industry; and I repeated the operation till I got about ten quarts of this stuff, which very well rewarded my labour. After I had extracted as much oil as I could from the beast-fish, the creature having

strongly

strongly impressed my imagination, I conceived a new fancy in relation to it; and that was, having heard him make a deep howling groan at his death, I endeavoured to persuade myself, and at last verily believed, that the voices I had so often heard, in the dark weather, proceeded from numbers of these creatures, diverting themselves in the lake, or sporting together on the shore; and this thought, in its turn, contributed to ease my apprehensions in that respect.

CHAP. XIV.

THE AUTHOR PASSES THE SUMMER PLEASANTLY—HEARS THE VOICES IN THE WINTER—VENTURES OUT—SEES A STRANGE SIGHT ON THE LAKE—HIS UNEASINESS AT IT—HIS DREAM—SOLILOQUY—HEARS THE VOICES AGAIN, AND PERCEIVES A GREAT SHOCK ON HIS BUILDING—TAKES UP A BEAUTIFUL WOMAN—HE THINKS HER DEAD, BUT RECOVERS HER—A DESCRIPTION OF HER—SHE STAYS WITH HIM.

I Passed the summer (though I had never yet seen the sun's body) very much to my satisfaction; partly in the work I have been describing, (for I had taken two more of the beast-fish, and had a great quantity of oil from them;) partly, in building me a chimney in my anti-chamber of mud and earth burnt on my own hearth into a sort of brick; in making a window at one end of the abovesaid chamber, to let in what little light would come through the trees, when I did not chuse to open my door; in moulding an earthen lamp for my oil; and, finally, in providing and laying in stores, fresh and salt, (for I had now cured and dried many more fish) against winter. These, I say, were my summer employments at home, intermixed with many agreeable excursions. But now the winter coming on, and the days growing very short, or indeed there being no day, properly speaking, but a kind of twilight, I kept mostly in my habitation, though not so much as I had done the winter before, when I had no light within doors, and slept, or at least lay still, great part of my time; for now my lamp was never

out. I also turned two of my beast-fish skins into a rug to cover my bed, and the third into a cushion, which I always sat upon, and a very soft and warm cushion it made. All this together rendered my life very easy, yea, even comfortable.

An indifferent person would now be apt to ask, 'What would this man desire more than he had?' To this I answer, that I was contented while my condition was such as I have been describing; but a little while after the darkness or twilight came on, I frequently heard the voices again; sometimes a few only at a time, as it seemed, and then again in great numbers. This threw me into new fears, and I became as uneasy as ever, even to the degree of growing quite melancholy, though, otherwise, I never received the least injury from any thing. I foolishly attempted several times, by looking out of my window, to discover what these odd sounds proceeded from, though I knew it was too dark to see any thing there.

I was now fully convinced, by a more deliberate attention to them, that they could not be uttered by the beast-fish, as I had afore conjectured, but only by beings capable of articulate speech; but then, what or where they were, it galled me to be ignorant of.

At length, one night or day, I cannot say which, hearing the voices very distinctly, and praying very earnestly to be either delivered from the uncertainty they had put me under, or to have them removed from me, I took courage, and arming myself with gun, pistols, and cutlafs, I went out of my grotto, and crept down the wood. I then heard them plainer than before, and was able to judge from what point of the compass they proceeded. Hereupon I went forward towards the sound, till I came to the verge of the wood, where I could see the lake very well by the dazzle of the water. Thereon, as I thought, I beheld a fleet of boats, covering a large compass, and not far from the bridge. I was shocked hereat beyond expression. I could not conceive where they came from, or whither they would go; but supposed there must be some other passage to the lake than I had found in my voyage through the cavern, and that for certain they came that way, and

and from some place, of which as yet I had no manner of knowledge.

Whilst I was entertaining myself with this speculation, I heard the people in the boats laughing and talking very merrily, though I was too distant to distinguish the words. I discerned soon after all the boats (as I still supposed them) draw up, and push for the bridge; presently after, though I was sure no boat entered the arch, I saw a multitude of people on the opposite shore all marching towards the bridge; and what was the strangest of all, there was not the least sign of a boat now left upon the whole lake. I then was in a greater consternation than before; but was still much more so, when I saw the whole posse of people, that as I have just said were marching towards the bridge, coming over it to my side of the lake. At this my heart failed, and I was just going to run to my grotto for shelter; but taking one look more, I plainly discovered that the people, leaving one after another from the top of the bridge, as if into the water, and then rising again, flew in a long train over the lake, the lengthways of it, quite out of my sight, laughing, hallooing, and sporting together; so that looking back again to the bridge, and on the lake, I could neither see person nor boat, nor any thing else, nor hear the least noise or stir afterwards for that time.

I returned to my grotto brim-full of this amazing adventure, bemoaning my misfortune in being at a place where I was like to remain ignorant of what was doing about me. 'For,' says I, 'if I am in a land of spirits, as now I have little room to doubt, there is no guarding against them. I am never safe, even in my grotto; for that can be no security against such beings as can sail on the water in no boats, and fly in the air on no wings, as the case now appears to me, who can be here and there, and wherever they please. What a miserable state, I say, am I fallen to?' I should have been glad to have had human converse, and to have found inhabitants in this place; but there being none, as I supposed hitherto, I contented myself with thinking I was at least safe from all those evils mankind in society are obnoxious to: 'But

now, what may be the consequence of the next hour I know not; nay, I am not able to say, but whilst I speak, and shew my discontent, they may at a distance conceive my thoughts, and be hatching revenge against me for my dislike of them.'

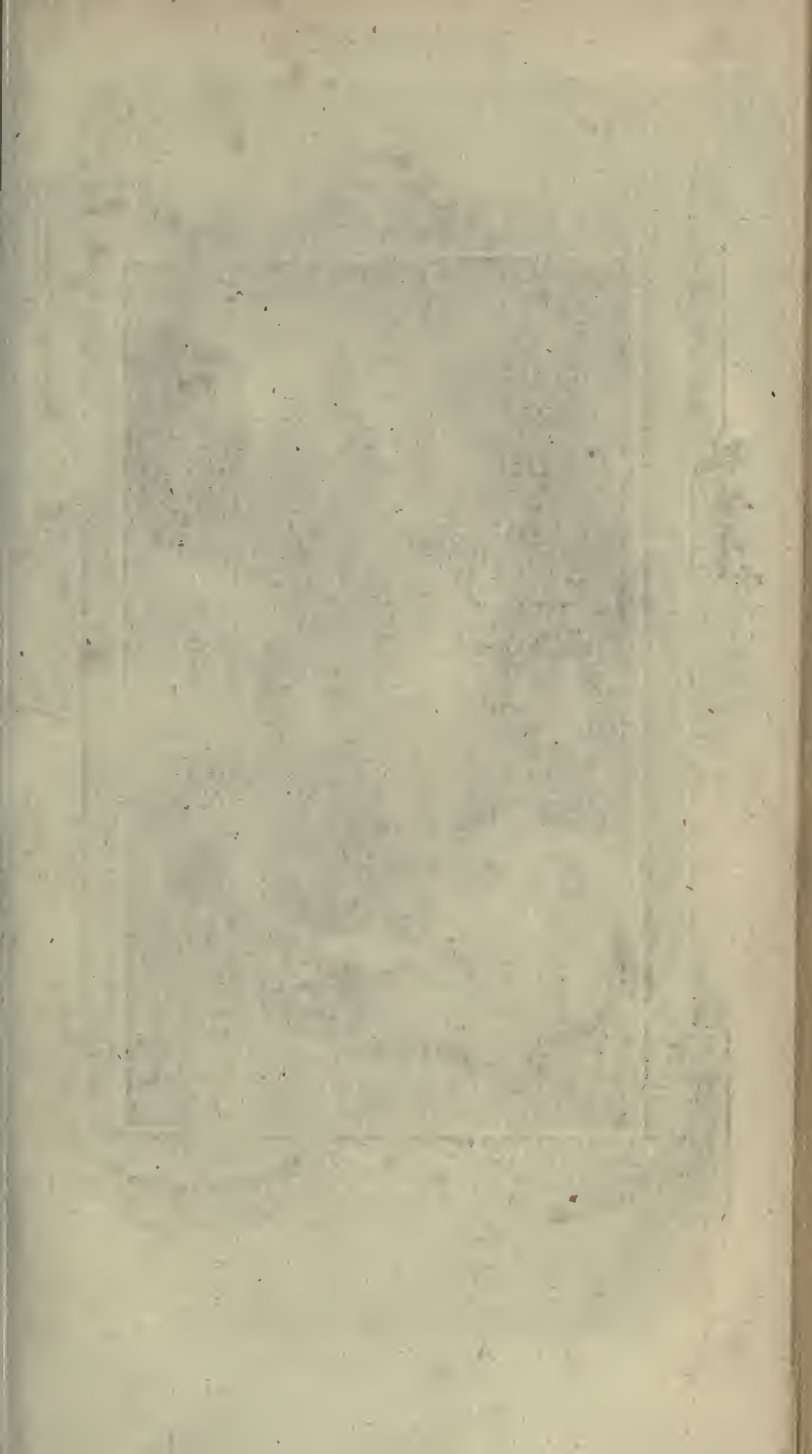
The pressure of my spirits inclining me to repose, I laid me down, but could get no rest; nor could all my most serious thoughts, even of the Almighty Providence, give me relief under my present anxiety: and all this was only from my state of uncertainty concerning the reality of what I had heard and seen; and from the earnestness with which I coveted a satisfactory knowledge of those beings who had just taken their flight from me.

I really believe, the fiercest wild beast, or the most savage of mankind that had met me, and put me upon my defence, would not have given me half the trouble that then lay upon me; and the more, for that I had no seeming possibility of ever being rid of my apprehensions: so, finding I could not sleep, I got up again; but as I could not fly from myself, all the art I could use with myself, was but in vain to obtain me any quiet.

In the height of my distress I had recourse to prayer, with no small benefit; begging, that if it pleased not the Almighty Power to remove the object of my fears, at least to resolve my doubts about them, and to render them rather helpful than hurtful to me. I hereupon, as I always did on such occasions, found myself much more placid and easy, and began to hope the best, till I had almost persuaded myself that I was out of danger; and then laying myself down, I rested very sweetly, till I was awakened by the impulse of the following dream.

Methought I was in Cornwall, at my wife's aunt's; and enquiring after her and my children, the old gentlewoman informed me, both my wife and children had been dead some time, and that my wife, before her departure, desired her (that is, her aunt) immediately upon my arrival to tell me, she was only gone to the lake, where I should be sure to see her, and be happy with her ever after. I then, as I fancied, ran to the lake to find her. In my passage she stopped me, crying, 'Whither so fast, Peter?

'I am





'I am your wife, your Patty.' Me-thought I did not know her, she was so altered; but observing her voice, and looking more wistfully at her, she appeared to me as the most beautiful creature I ever beheld. I then went to seize her in my arms; but the hurry of my spirits awakened me.

When I got up, I kept at home, not caring even to look out at my door. My dream ran strangely in my head, and I had now nothing but Patty in my mind. 'Oh!' cries I, 'how happy could I be with her, though I had only her in this solitude. Oh! that this was but a reality, and not a dream.' And, indeed, though it was but a dream, I could scarce refrain from running to the lake to meet my Patty. But then I checked my folly, and reasoned myself into some degree of temper again. However, I could not forbear crying out, 'What, nobody to converse with! Nobody to assist, comfort, or counsel me! This is a melancholy situation indeed.' Thus I ran on lamenting till I was almost weary; when, on a sudden, I again heard the voices, 'Hark!' says I, 'here they come again. Well, I am now resolved to face them; come life, come death! It is not to be alone I thus dread; but to have company about me, and not know who or what, is death to me worse than I can suffer from them, be they who or what they will.'

During my soliloquy the voices increased, and then by degrees diminished as usual; but I had scarce got my gun in my hand, to pursue my resolution of shewing myself to those who uttered them, when I felt such a thump upon the roof of my anti-chamber, as shook the whole fabrick, and set me all over into a tremor; I then heard a sort of shriek, and a rustle near the door of my apartment: all which together seemed very terrible. But I, having before determined to see what and who it was, resolutely opened my door and leaped out. I saw nobody; all was quite silent, and nothing that I could perceive but my own fears a moving. I went then softly to the corner of the building, and there looking down by the glimmer of my lamp, which stood in the window, I saw something in human shape lying at my feet. I gave the word, 'Who's

there?' Still no one answered. My heart was ready to force a way through my side. I was for a while fixed to the earth like a statue. At length, recovering, I stepped in, fetched my lamp, and returning, saw the very beautiful face my Patty appeared under in my dream; and not considering that it was only a dream, I verily thought I had my Patty before me, but she seemed to be stone dead. Upon viewing her other parts, (for I had never yet removed my eyes from her face) I found she had a sort of brown chaplet, like lace, round her head, under and about which her hair was tucked up and twined; and she seemed to me to be clothed in a thin hair-coloured silk garment, which, upon trying to raise her, I found to be quite warm, and therefore hoped there was life in the body it contained. I then took her into my arms, and treading a step backwards with her, I put out my lamp; however, having her in my arms, I conveyed her through the door-way in the dark into my grotto; here I laid her upon my bed, and then ran out for my lamp.

'This,' thinks I, 'is an amazing adventure. How could Patty come here, and dressed in silk and whalebone too? sure that is not the reigning fashion in England now? But my dream said she was dead. Why, truly,' says I, 'so she seems to be. But be it so, she is warm. Whether this is the place for persons to inhabit after death or not, I can't tell, (for I see there are people here, though I don't know them;) but be it as it will, she feels as flesh and blood; and if I can but bring her to stir and act again as my wife, what matters it to me what she is! it will be a great blessing and comfort to me; for she never would have come to this very spot, but for my good.'

Top-full of these thoughts, I re-entered my grotto, shut my door, and lighted my lamp; when going to my Patty, (as I delighted to fancy her) I thought I saw her eyes stir a little. I then set the lamp farther off, for fear of offending them if she should look up; and warming the last glass I had reserved of my Madeira, I carried it to her, but she never stirred. I now supposed the fall had absolutely killed

her, and was prodigiously grieved; when, laying my hand on her breast, I perceived the fountain of life had some motion. This gave me infinite pleasure; so, not despairing, I dipped my finger in the wine, and moistened her lips with it two or three times, and I imagined they opened a little. Upon this I bethought me, and taking a teaspoon, I gently poured a few drops of the wine by that means into her mouth. Finding she swallowed it, I poured in another spoonful, and another, till I brought her to herself so well as to be able to sit up. All this I did by a glimmering light, which the lamp afforded from a distant part of the room, where I had placed it, as I have said, out of her sight.

I then spoke to her, and asked divers questions, as if she had really been Patty, and understood me; in return of which, she uttered a language I had no idea of, though in the most musical tone, and with the sweetest accent I ever heard. It grieved me I could not understand her. However, thinking she might like to be on her feet, I went to lift her off the bed; when she felt to my touch in the oddest manner imaginable: for, while in one respect, it was as though she had been cased up in whalebone, it was at the same time as soft and warm as if she had been naked.

I then took her in my arms and carried her into my anti-chamber again; where I would fain have entered into conversation, but found she and I could make nothing of it together, unless we could understand one another's speech. It is very strange my dream should have prepossessed me so of Patty, and of the alteration of her countenance, that I could by no means persuade myself the person I had with me was not she; though, upon a deliberate comparison, Patty, as pleasing as she always was to my taste, would no more come up to this fair creature, than a coarse ale-wife would to Venus herself.

You may imagine we stared heartily at each other, and I doubted not but she wondered as much as I by what means we came so near each other. I offered her every thing in my grotto, which I thought might please her; some of which she gratefully received, as appeared by her looks and behaviour.

But she avoided my lamp, and always placed her back toward it. I observing that, and ascribing it to her modesty in my company, let her have her will, and took care to set it in such a position myself as seemed agreeable to her, though it deprived me of a prospect I very much admired.

After we had sat a good while, now and then, I may say, chattering to one another, she got up, and took a turn or two about the room. When I saw her in that attitude, her grace and motion perfectly charmed me, and her shape was incomparable; but the strangeness of her dress put me to my trumps, to conceive either what it was, or how it was put on.

Well, we supped together, and I set the best of every thing I had before her, nor could either of us forbear speaking in our own tongue, though we were sensible neither of us understood the other. After supper I gave her some of my cordials, for which she shewed great tokens of thankfulness, and often, in her way, by signs and gestures, which were very far from being insignificant, expressed her gratitude for my kindness. When supper had been some time over, I shewed her my bed, and made signs for her to go to it; but she seemed very shy of that, till I shewed her where I meant to lie myself, by pointing to myself, then to that, and again pointing to her and to my bed. When, at length, I had made this matter intelligible to her, she lay down very composedly; and after I had taken care of my fire, and set the things I had been using for supper in their places, I laid myself down too: for I could have no suspicious thoughts, or fear of danger, from a form so excellent.

I treated her for some time with all the respect imaginable, and never suffered her to do the least part of my work. It was very inconvenient to both of us only to know each other's meaning by signs; but I could not be otherwise than pleased to see, that she endeavoured all in her power to learn to talk like me. Indeed, I was not behind-hand with her in that respect, striving all I could to imitate her. What I all the while wondered at was, she never shewed the least disquiet at her confinement; for I kept my door shut at first, through fear of losing her, thinking
she

she would have taken an opportunity to run away from me; for little did I then think she could fly.

CHAP. XV.

WILKINS AFRAID OF LOSING HIS NEW MISTRESS—THEY LIVE TOGETHER ALL WINTER—A REMARK ON THAT—THEY BEGIN TO KNOW EACH OTHER'S LANGUAGE—A LONG DISCOURSE BETWEEN THEM AT CROSS-PURPOSES—SHE FLIES—THEY ENGAGE TO BE MAN AND WIFE.

AFTER my new love had been with me a fortnight, finding my water run low, I was greatly troubled at the thought of quitting her any time, to go for more; and having hinted it to her, with seeming uneasiness, she could not for a while fathom my meaning; but when she saw me much confused, she came at length, by the many signs I made, to imagine it was my concern for her which made me so; whereupon she expressively enough signified I might be easy, for she did not fear any thing happening to her in my absence. On this, as well as I could declare my meaning, I entreated her not to go away before my return. As soon as she understood what I signified to her, by actions, she sat down, with her arms across, leaning her head against the wall, to assure me she would not stir. However, as I had before nailed a cord to the outside of the door, I tied that for caution's sake to the tree, for fear of the worst; but I believe she had not the least design of removing.

I took my boat, net, and water-cask, as usual; desirous of bringing her home a fresh fish dinner, and succeeded so well as to catch enough for several good meals, and to spare. What remained I salted, and found she liked that better than the fresh, after a few days salting; though she did not so well approve of that I had formerly pickled and dried. As my salt grew very low, though I had been as sparing of it as possible, I now resolved to try making some; and the next summer I effected it.

Thus we spent the remainder of the winter together, till the days began to be light enough for me to walk abroad

a little in the middle of them: for I was now under no apprehensions of her leaving me, as she had before this time had so many opportunities of doing so, but never once attempted it.

I must here make one reflection upon our conduct, which you will almost think incredible, viz: that we two, of different sexes, not wanting our peculiar desires, fully inflamed with love to each other, and no outward obstacle to prevent our wishes, should have been together, under the same roof, alone for five months, conversing together from morning to night, (for by this time she pretty well understood English, and I her language) and yet I should never have clasped her in my arms, or have shewn any farther amorous desires to her, than what the deference I all along paid her could give her room to surmise. Nay, I can affirm, that I did not even then know that the covering she wore was not the work of art, but the work of nature, for I really took it for silk; though it must be premised that I had never seen it by any other light than of my lamp. Indeed, the modesty of her carriage, and sweetness of her behaviour to me, had struck into me such a dread of offending her, that though nothing upon earth could be more capable of exciting passion than her charms, I could have died rather than have attempted to salute her only without actual invitation.

When the weather cleared up a little, by the lengthening of day-light, I took courage one afternoon to invite her to walk with me to the lake; but she sweetly excused herself from it, whilst there was such a frightful glare of light, as she said; but, looking out at the door, told me, if I would not go out of the wood, she would accompany me: so we agreed to take a turn only there. I first went myself over the stile of the door, and thinking it rather too high for her, I took her in my arms and lifted her over. But even when I had her in this manner, I knew not what to make of her cloathing, it sat so true and close; but seeing her by a steadier and truer light in the grove, though a heavy, gloomy one, than my lamp had afforded, I begged she would let me know of what silk or other composition her garment was made. She smiled, and asked me if mine was not the same under my jacket.

'No, lady,' says I, 'I have nothing but my skin under my cloaths.'— 'Why, what do you mean?' replies she, somewhat tartly; 'but, indeed, I was afraid something was the matter, by that nasty covering you wear that you might not be seen. Are not you a glumm?'— 'Yes,' says I, 'fair creature.' (Here, though you may conceive she spoke part English, part her own tongue, and I the same, as we best understood each other, yet I shall give you our discourse, word for word, in plain English) 'Then,' says she, 'I am afraid you must have been a very bad man, and have been a crashee, which I should be very sorry to hear.' I told her I believed we were none of us so good as we might be, but I hoped my faults had not at most exceeded other men's; but I had suffered abundance of hardships in my time; and that at last Providence having settled me in this spot, from whence I had no prospect of ever departing, it was none of the least of it's mercies to bring to my knowledge and company the most exquisite piece of all his works, in her, which I should acknowledge as long as I lived. She was surprized at this discourse; and asked me, (if I did not mean to impose upon her, and was indeed an ingrathee glumm) why I should tell her I had no prospect of departing from hence. 'Have not you,' says she, 'the same prospect that I or any other person has of departing?' Sir, added she, 'you don't do well, and really I fear you are slit, or you would not wear this nasty cumbersome coat,' taking hold of my jacket-sleeve, 'if you were not afraid of shewing the signs of a bad life upon your natural cloathing.'

I could not for my heart imagine what way there was to get out of my dominions. 'But certainly,' thought I, 'there must be some or other, or she would not be so peremptory.' And as to my jacket, and shewing myself in my natural cloathing, I profess she made me blush; and, but for shame, I would have stripped to my skin to have satisfied her. 'But, Madam,' says I, 'pray pardon me, for you are really mistaken; I have examined every nook and corner of this new world, in which we now are, and can find no possible outlet; nay, even by the

same way I came in, I am sure it is impossible to get out again.'— 'Why,' says she, 'what outlets have you searched for, or what way can you expect out, but the way you came in? And why is that impossible to return by again? If you are not slit, is not the air open to you? Will not the sky admit you to patrol in it, as well as other people? I tell you, Sir, I fear you have been slit for your crimes; and though you have been so good to me, that I can't help loving of you heartily for it, yet if I thought you had been slit, I would not, nay could not, stay a moment longer with you; no, though it should break my heart to leave you.'

I found myself now in a strange quandary, longing to know what she meant by being slit; and had a hundred strange notions in my head whether I was slit or not; for though I knew what the word naturally signified well enough, yet in what manner, or by what figure of speech she applied it to me, I had no idea of. But seeing her look a little angrily upon me, 'Pray, Madam,' says I, 'don't be offended, if I take the liberty to ask you what you mean by the word crashee, so often repeated by you; for I am an utter stranger to what you mean by it.'— 'Sir,' says she, 'pray answer me first, how you came here?'— 'Madam,' replied I, 'if you will please to take a walk to the verge of the wood, I will shew you the very passage.'— 'Sir,' says she, 'I perfectly know the range of the rocks all round, and by the least description, without going to see them, can tell from which you descended.'— 'In truth,' said I, 'most charming lady, I descended from no rock at all; nor would I for a thousand worlds attempt what could not be accomplished but by my destruction.'— 'Sir,' says she, in some anger, 'it is false, and you impose upon me.'— 'I declare to you,' says I, 'Madam, what I tell you is strictly true, I never was near the summit of any of the surrounding rocks, or any thing like it; but as you are not far from the verge of the wood, be so good as to step a little farther, and I will shew you my entrance in hither.'

— 'Well,'

—‘Well,’ says she, ‘now this odious dazzle of light is lessened, I don’t care if I do go with you.’

When we came far enough to see the bridge, ‘There, Madam,’ says I, ‘there is my entrance, where the sea pours into this lake from yonder cavern.’—‘It is not possible,’ says she; ‘this is another untruth: and as I see you would deceive me, and are not to be believed, farewell; I must be gone.—But, hold,’ says she, ‘let me ask you one thing more; that is, by what means did you come through that cavern? You could not have used to have come over the rock!’—‘Bless me, Madam!’ says I, ‘do you think I and my boat could fly!’—‘Come over the rock,’ did you say?—‘No, Madam; I failed from the great sea, the main ocean, in my boat, through that cavern into this very lake here.’—‘What do you mean by your boat?’ says she. ‘You seem to make two things of your boat you say you failed with and yourself.’—‘I do so,’ replied I; ‘for, Madam, I take myself to be good flesh and blood, but my boat is made of wood and other materials.’—‘Is it so?’ says she. ‘And, pray, where is this boat that is made of wood and other materials? under your jacket?’—‘Lord, Madam!’ says I, ‘you put me in fear that you was angry; but now I hope you only joke with me. What, put a boat under my jacket!’—‘No, Madam; my boat is in the lake.’—‘What, more untruths!’ says she. ‘No, Madam,’ I replied; ‘if you would be satisfied of what I say, (every word of which is as true as that my boat now is in the lake) pray walk with me thither, and make your own eyes judges what sincerity I speak with.’ To this she agreed, it growing dusky; but assured me, if I did not give her good satisfaction, I should see her no more.

We arrived at the lake; and going to my wet-dock, ‘Now, Madam,’ says I, ‘pray satisfy yourself whether I spake true or no.’ She looked at my boat, but could not yet frame a proper notion of it. Says I, ‘Madam, in this very boat I failed from the main ocean through that cavern into this lake; and shall at last think myself the happiest of all men if you continue with me, love me, and credit

me; and I promise you I’ll never deceive you, but think my life happily spent in your service.’ I found she was hardly content yet to believe what I told her of my boat to be true; till I stepped into it, and pushing from the shore, took my oars in my hand, and failed along the lake by her, as she walked on the shore. At last, she seemed so well reconciled to me and my boat, that she desired I would take her in. I immediately did so, and we failed a good way; and as we returned to my dock, I described to her how I procured the water we drank, and brought it to shore in that vessel.

‘Well,’ says she, ‘I have failed, as you call it, many a mile in my lifetime, but never in such a thing as this. I own it will serve very well where one has a great many things to carry from place to place; but to be labouring thus at an oar, when one intends pleasure in sailing, is, in my mind, a most ridiculous piece of slavery.’—‘Why, pray, Madam, how would you have me fail? for getting into the boat only, will not carry us this way or that without using some force.’—‘But,’ says she, ‘pray where did you get this boat, as you call it?’—‘O Madam!’ says I, ‘that is too long and fatal a story to begin upon now: this boat was made many thousand miles from hence, among a people coal-black, a quite different sort from us; and, when I first had it, I little thought of seeing this country: but I will make a faithful relation of all to you when we come home.’ Indeed, I began to wish heartily we were there, for it grew into the night; and having strolled so far without my gun, I was afraid of what I had before seen and heard, and hinted our return; but I found my motion was disagreeable to her, and so I dropped it.

I now perceived, and wondered at it, that the later it grew, the more agreeable it seemed to her; and as I had now brought her into a good-humour again, by seeing and failing in my boat, I was not willing to prevent its increase. I told her, if she pleased, we would land, and when I had docked my boat, I would accompany her where and as long as she liked. As we talked and walked by the lake, she made a little run before me, and springing into

into it. Perceiving this, I cried out; whereupon she merrily called on me to follow her. The light was then so dim, as prevented my having more than a confused sight of her when she jumped in; and looking earnestly after her, I could discern nothing more than a small boat on the water, which skimmed along at so great a rate that I almost lost sight of it presently; but, running along the shore for fear of losing her, I met her gravely walking to meet me; and then had entirely lost sight of the boat upon the lake.—

'This,' says she, accosting me with a smile, 'is my way of sailing, which, I perceive, by the fright you were in, you are altogether unacquainted with; and, as you tell me, you came from so many thousand miles off, it is possible you may be made differently from me: but, surely, we are the part of the creation which has had most care bestowed upon it; and I suspect, from all your discourse, to which I have been very attentive, it is possible you may no more be able to fly than to sail as I do.'—'No, charming creature,' says I, 'that I cannot, I'll assure you.' She then stepping to the edge of the lake, for the advantage of a descent before her, sprung up into the air, and away she went, farther than my eyes could follow her.

I was quite astonished. 'So,' says I, 'then all is over! all a delusion which I have so long been in! a mere phantom! Better had it been for me never to have seen her, than thus to lose her again! But what could I expect had she staid? For it is plain she is no human composition.—But,' says I, 'she felt like flesh, too, when I lifted her out at the door!' I had but very little time for reflection; for, in about ten minutes after she had left me in this mixture of grief and amazement, she alighted just by me on her feet.

Her return, as she plainly saw, filled me with a transport not to be concealed; and which, as she afterwards told me, was very agreeable to her. Indeed, I was some moments in such an agitation of mind from these unparalleled incidents, that I was like one thunder-struck; but coming presently to myself, and clasping her in my arms with as much love and passion as I was ca-

pable of expressing, and for the first time with any desire, 'Are you returned again, kind angel,' said I, 'to bless a wretch who can only be happy in adoring you! Can it be, that you, who have so many advantages over me, should quit all the pleasures that nature has formed you for, and all your friends and relations, to take an asylum in my arms! But I here make you a tender of all I am able to bestow—my love and constancy.'—'Come, come,' says she, 'no more raptures; I find you are a worthier man than I thought I had reason to take you for, and I beg your pardon for my distrust; whilst I was ignorant of your imperfections; but now I verily believe all you have said is true; and I promise you, as you have seemed so much to delight in me, I will never quit you till death, or other as fatal accident shall part us. But we will now, if you chuse, go home; for I know you have been some time uneasy in this gloom, though agreeable to me: for, giving my eyes the pleasure of looking eagerly on you, it conceals my blushes from your sight.'

In this manner, exchanging mutual endearments and soft speeches, hand in hand, we arrived at the grotto; where we that night consummated our nuptials, without farther ceremony than mutual solemn engagements to each other; which are, in truth, the essence of marriage, and all that was there and then in our power.

CHAP. XVI.

THE AUTHOR'S DISAPPOINTMENT AT FIRST GOING TO BED WITH HIS NEW WIFE—SOME STRANGE CIRCUMSTANCES RELATING THERETO—SHE RESOLVES SEVERAL QUESTIONS HE ASKS HER, AND CLEARS UP HIS FEARS AS TO THE VOICES—A DESCRIPTION OF SWANGEANS.

EVERY calm is succeeded by a storm, as is every storm by its calm; for, after supper, in order to give my bride the opportunity of undressing alone, which I thought might be most agreeable the first night, I withdrew into the anti-chamber till I thought she was laid; and then, having first disposed

disposed of my lamp, I moved softly towards her, and stepped into bed too; when, on my nearer approach to her, I imagined she had her cloaths on. This struck a thorough damp over me; and asking her the reason of it, not being able to touch the least bit of her flesh but her face and hands, she burst out a laughing; and, running her hand along my naked side, soon perceived the difference she before had made such doubt of between herself and me. Upon which she fairly told me, that neither she, nor any person she had ever seen before, had any other covering than what they were born with, and which they would not willingly part with but with their lives. This shocked me terribly; not from the horror of the thing itself, or any distaste I had to this covering; (for it was quite smooth, warm, and softer than velvet or the finest skin imaginable) but from an apprehension of her being so wholly incased in it, that, though I had so fine a companion, and now a wife, yet I should have no conjugal benefit from her, either to my own gratification, or the increase of our species.

In the height of my impatience, I made divers essays for unfolding this covering, but unsuccessfully. 'Surely,' says I, 'there must be some way of coming at my wishes! or why should she seem so shy of me at first, and now we are under engagements to each other, meet me half way with such a yielding compliance?' I could, if I had had time to spare, have gone on, starting objections and answering them, in my own breast, a great while longer, (for I now knew not what to make of it;) but being prompted to act as well as think, and feeling, as tenderly as possible, upon her bosom, for the folds or plaits of her garment, she lying perfectly still; and perceiving divers flat broad ledges, like whale-bone, seemingly under her covering, which closely infolded her body, I thought it might be all laced on together somewhat like stays, and felt behind for the lacing. At length, perceiving me so puzzled, and beyond conception vexed at my disappointment, of a sudden, lest I should grow outrageous, (which I was almost come to) she threw down all those seeming ribs flat to her side so imperceptibly to

me, that I knew nothing of the matter, though I lay close to her; till putting forth my hand again to her bosom, the softest skin, and most delightful body, free from all impediment, presented itself to my wishes, and gave up itself to my embraces.

I slept very soundly till morning, and so did she; but at waking I was very solicitous to find out what sort of being I had had in my arms, and with what qualities her garment was endued, or how contrived; that, notwithstanding all my fruitless attempts to uncover her, she herself could so instantaneously dispose of it, undiscerned by me. 'Well,' thought I, 'she is my wife, I will be satisfied in every thing; for, surely, she will not now refuse to gratify my curiosity.'

We rose with the light; but, surely, no two were ever more amorous, or more delighted with each other. I being up first, lighted the fire, and prepared breakfast of some fish-soup, thickened with my cream-cheese; and then calling her, I kept my eye towards the bed to see how she dressed herself; but throwing aside the cloaths, she stepped out ready dressed, and came to me. When I had kissed her, and wished her a good day, we sat down to breakfast; which being soon over, I told her I hoped every minute of our lives would prove as happy as those we so lately passed together; which she seemed to wish with equal ardour. I then told her, now she was my wife, I thought proper to know her name, which I had never before asked, for fear of giving uneasiness; for, as I added, I did not doubt she had observed in my behaviour, ever since I first saw her, a peculiar tenderness for her, and a sedulous concern not to offend, which had obliged me hitherto to stifle several questions I had to ask her whenever they would be agreeable to her. She then bid me begin; for, as she was now my wife, whilst I was speaking, it became her to be all attention, and to give me the utmost satisfaction she could in all I should require, as she herself should have so great an interest in every thing for the future which would oblige me.

Compliments (if, in compliance with old custom, I may call them so, for they were by us delivered from the heart)

heart) being a little over on both sides, I first desired to know what name she went by before I found her: 'For,' says I, 'having only hitherto called you Madam, and my Lady, besides the future expression of my love to you in the word dear, I would know your original name, that so I might join it with that tender epithet.'— 'That you shall,' says she, 'and also my family at another opportunity; but as my name will not take up long time to repeat at present, it is YOUWARKEE.—And, pray,' says she, 'now gratify me with the knowledge of yours.'— 'My dear Youwarkee,' says I, 'my name was PETER WILKINS when I heard it last; but that is so long ago, I had almost forgot it.—And now,' says I, 'there is another thing you can give me a pleasure in.'— 'You need, then, only mention it, my dear Peter,' says she. 'That is,' says I, 'only to tell me, if you did not, by some accident, fall from the top of the rock over my habitation, upon the roof of it, when I first took you in here; and whether you are of the country upon the rocks?' She, softly smiling, answered, 'My dear Peter, you run your questions too thick; as to my country, which is not on the rocks, as you suppose, but at a vast distance from hence, I shall leave that, till I may hereafter, at more leisure, speak of my family, as I promised you before; but as to how I came into this grotto, I knew not at first, but soon perceived your humanity had brought me in, to take care of me, after a terrible fall I had; not from the rock, as you suppose, for then I must not now have been living to enjoy you, but from a far less considerable height in the air. I'll tell you how it happened. A parcel of us young people were upon a merry swangean round this arkoe, which we usually divert ourselves with at set times of the year, chasing and pursuing one another, sometimes soaring to an extravagant height, and then shooting down again with surprizing precipitancy, till we even touch the trees; when of a sudden we mount again and away. I say, being of this party, and pursued by one of my comrades, I descended down to the very trees, and she after

me; but as I mounted, she over-shooting me, brushed so stiffly against the upper part of my graundee, that I lost my bearing; and being so near the branches, before I could recover it again, I sunk into the tree, and rendered my graundee useless to me; so that down I came, and that with so much force, that I but just felt my fall, and lost my senses. Whether I cried out or no upon my coming to the ground I cannot say; but if I did, my companion was too far gone by that time to hear or take notice of me; as she, probably, in so swift a flight, saw not my fall. As to the condition I was in, or what happened immediately afterwards, I must be obliged to you for a relation of that: but one thing I was quickly sensible of, and never can forget, viz. that I owe my life to your care and kindness to me.'

I told her she should have that part of her story from me another time: 'But,' says I, 'there is something so amazing in these flights, or swangeans, as you call them, that I must, as the questions for this day, beg you would let me know what is the method of them. What is the nature of your covering?' (which was at first such an obstacle to my wishes) 'How you put it on? And how you use it in your swangean?'

'Surely, my dearest Peter,' says she, 'but that I can deny you nothing, since you are my barkatt, which you seem so passionately to desire, the latter of your questions would not be answered, for it must put me to the blush. As to our method of flight, you saw somewhat of that last night, though in a light hardly sufficient for you; and for the nature of my covering, you perceive that now: but to shew you how it is put on, as you call it, I am afraid it will be necessary, as far as I can, to put it off, before I can make you comprehend that; which having done, the whole will be no farther a mystery. But, not to be tedious, is it your command that I uncover? Lay that upon me, it shall be done.' Here I was at a plunge whether to proceed or drop the question. Thinks I, 'If my curiosity should be fatal to me, as I may see something I can never bear hereafter, I am undone. She waits
' the

‘the command!—Why so?—I know not the consequence!—What shall I do?’ At last, somewhat resolutely, I asked her whether her answer either way to my command would cause her to leave me, or me to love her less. She seeing my hesitation, and perceiving the cause, was so pleased, that she cried out, ‘No, my dear Peter, nor that, nor all the force on earth, shall ever part me from you. But I conceive you are afraid you shall discover something in me you may not like: I fear not that; but an immodest appearance before you I cannot suffer myself to be guilty of, but under your own command.’

‘My lovely Youwarkee,’ says I, ‘delay then my desires no longer; and since you require a warrant from me, I do command you to do it.’ Immediately her graundee flew open (discovering her naked body just to the hip, and round the rim of her belly) and expanding itself was near six feet wide. Here my love and curiosity had a hard conflict; the one to gain my attention to the graundee, and the other to retain my eyes and thoughts on her lovely body, which I had never beheld so much of before. Though I was very unwilling to keep her uncovered too long, I could not easily dismiss so charming a sight. I attentively viewed her lovely flesh, and examined the case that enshrined it: but as I shall give you a full description of this graundee hereafter, in a more proper place, I will mention it no farther here, than to tell you that when I had narrowly surveyed the upper part of it, she in a moment contracted it round her so close that the nicest eye could not perceive the joining of the parts.

‘Indeed, my dear Youwarkee,’ says I, ‘you had the best of reasons for saying you was not fearful I should discover any thing in you displeasing; for if my bosom glowed with love before, you have now therein raised an ardent flame which neither time, nor aught else, will ever be able to extinguish. I now almost conceive how you fly; though yet I am at a loss to know how you extend and make use of the lower part of your graundee, which rises up and meets the upper; but I will rather guess at that by what I have seen, than raise the colour higher in

‘those fair cheeks which are, how ever adorned with blushes.’ I then running to her, and taking her in my arms, I called her the gift of Heaven; and left off farther interrogatories till another opportunity.

CH A P. XVII.

YOUWARKEE CANNOT BEAR A STRONG LIGHT—WILKINS MAKES HER SPECTACLES WHICH HELP HER—A DESCRIPTION OF THEM.

YOUWARKEE and I having no other company than one another’s, we talked together almost from morning to night, in order to learn each other’s dialect. But how compliant soever she was in all other respects, I could not persuade her to go out with me to fetch water, or to the lake, in the day-time. It being now the light season, I wanted her to be more abroad; but she excused herself, telling me her people never came into those luminous parts of the country during the false glare, as they called it, but kept altogether at home, where their light was more moderate and steadier; and that the place where I resided was not frequented by them for half the year, and at other times only upon parties of pleasure, it not being worth while to settle habitations where they could not abide always. She said, Normbdsgrfutt was the finest region in the world, where her king’s court was, and a vast kingdom. I asked her twice or thrice more to name the country to me, but not all the art we could use, her’s in dictating, and mine in endeavouring to pronounce it, would render me conqueror of that poor monosyllable, (for as such it sounded from her sweet lips;) so I relinquished the name to her; telling her, whenever she had any more occasion to mention the place, I desired it might be under the stile of Doorpt Swangeanti, which she promised; but wondered, as she could speak the other so glibly, as she called it, I could not do so too.

I told her, that the light of my native country was far stronger than any I had seen since my arrival at Graundeviolet, (for that, I found by her, was the name my dominions went by;)

and that we had a sun, or ball of fire, which rolled over our heads every day with such a light and such a heat, that it would sometimes almost scorch one it was so hot, and was of such brightness that the eye could not look at it without danger of blindness. She was heartily glad, she said, she was not born in so wretched a land; and she did not believe there was any other so good as her own. I thought no benefit could arise from my combating these innocent prejudices, so I let them alone.

She had often lamented to me the difference of our eye-sight, and the trouble it was to her that she could not at all times go about with me, till it gave me a good deal of uneasiness to see her concern. At last I told her, that though I believed it would be impossible to reduce my sight to the standard of her's, yet I was persuaded I could bring her's to bear the strongest light I had ever seen in this country. She was mightily pleased with the thought of that, and said she wished I might, for she was sensible of no grief like being obliged to stay at home when I went abroad on my business, and was resolved to try my experiment if I pleased, and in the mean time should heartily pray for the success. I hit on the following invention.

I rummaged over all my old things, and by good luck found an old crape haband. This I tried myself, single, before my own eyes, in the strongest light we had; but believing I had not yet obscured it enough, I doubled it, and then thought it might do; but for fear it should not, I tripled it, and then it seemed too dark for eyes like mine to discover objects through it, and so I judged it would suit her's; for I was determined to produce something, if possible, that would do at first, without repetition of trial, which I thought would only deject her more, by making her look on the matter as impracticable. I now only wanted a proper method for fixing it on her, and this I thought would be easily effected, but had much more difficulty in it than I imagined. At first I purposed to tie the crape over her eyes, but trying it myself I found it very rough and fretting: I then designed fixing it to an old crown of a hat that held my fish-hooks and lines, and so let it hang down before her face, but that also had

its inconveniences, as it would flap her eyes in windy weather, and would be not only useless but very troublesome in flight; so that I was scarce ever more puzzled before. At last I thought of a method that answered exceedingly well, the hint of which I took from somewhat I had seen with my master when I was at school, which he called goggles, and which he used to tie round his head to screen his eyes in riding. The thing I made upon that plan was composed of old hat, pieces of ram's-horn, and the above-mentioned crape.

When I had finished the whole apparatus, I tried it first upon myself, and finding great reason to believe it would perfectly answer the intention, I ran directly to Youwarkee. 'Come,' says I, 'my dear, will you go with me to the water-rill; for I must fetch some this morning?' She shook her head, and with tears in her eyes wished she could. 'But,' says she, 'let me see how light it is abroad.'—'No,' says I, 'my love, you must not look out till you go.'—'Indeed,' says she, 'if it did not affect my eyes and head you should not ask me twice.'—'Well,' says I, 'my Youwarkee, I am now come to take you with me; and that you may not suffer by it, turn about, and let me apply the remedy I told you of for your sight.' She wanted much to see first what it was, but I begged her to forbear till she tried whether it would be useful or not. She told me she would absolutely submit to my direction, so I adjusted the thing to her head. 'Now,' says I, 'you have it on, let us go out and try it, and let me know the moment you find the light offensive, and take particular notice how you are affected.' Hereupon away we marched, and I heard no complaint in all our walk to the lake.

'Now, my dear Youwarkee,' says I, when we got there, 'what do you think of my contrivance? Can you see at all?'—'Yes, very well,' says she. 'But, my dear Peter, you have taken the advantage of the twilight, I know, to deceive me; and I had rather have stayed at home than have subjected you to return in the night for the sake of my company.' I then assured her it was mid day, and no later, which pleased her mightily; and,

and, to satisfy her, I untied the string behind, and just let her be convinced it was so. When I had fixed the shade on her head again, she put up her hands and felt the several materials of which it consisted; and after expressing her admiration of it, 'So, my dear Peter,' says she, 'you have now encumbered yourself with a wife indeed, for since I can come abroad in a glaring light with so much ease, you will never henceforward be without my company.'

Youwarkee being thus in spirits, we launched the boat, watered, took a draught of fish, and returned; passing the night at home, in talking of the spectacles, (for that was the name I told her they must go by) and of the fishing, for that exercise delighted her to a great degree: but, above all, the spectacles were her chief theme; she handled them and looked at them again and again, and asked several rational questions about them; as how they could have that effect on her eyes, enabling her to see, and the like. She ventured out with them next day by herself; and, as she threatened, she was as good as her word, for she scarcely afterwards let me go abroad by myself, but accompanied me every where freely, and with delight.

CHAP. XVIII.

YOUWARKEE WITH CHILD—WILKINS'S STOCK OF PROVISIONS—NO BEAST OR FISH IN YOUWARKEE'S COUNTRY—THE VOICES AGAIN—HER REASON FOR NOT SEEING THOSE WHO UTTERED THEM—SHE BEARS A SON—A HARD SPEECH IN HER LYING-IN—DIVERS BIRDS APPEAR—THEIR EGGS GATHERED—HOW WILKINS KEPT ACCOUNT OF TIME.

ABOUT three months after we were married, as we called it, Youwarkee told me she believed she was breeding, and I was mightily pleased with it, for though I had had two children before by Patty, yet I never had seen either of them, so that I longed to be a father. I sometimes amused myself with whimsical conjectures, as whether the child would

have a graundee or not; which of us it would be most like; how we should do without a midwife; and what must become of the infant, as we had no milk, in case Youwarkee could not suckle it. Indeed, I had leisure enough for indulging such reveries; for having laid in our winter stores, my wife and I had nothing to do but enjoy ourselves over a good fire, prattling and toying together, making as good cheer as we could; and truly that was none of the worst, for we had as fine bread as need to be eaten; we had pears preserved; all sorts of dried fish; and once a fortnight, for two or three days together, had fresh fish; we had vinegar, and a biting herb, I had found, for pepper; and several sorts of nuts; so there was no want.

It was at this time, after my return from watering one day, where Youwarkee had been with me, that, having taken several fish, and amongst them some I had not before seen, I asked her, as we were preparing and salting some of them, how they managed fish in her country, and what variety they had of them there; she told me, she neither ever saw nor heard of a fish in her life till she came to me. 'How!' says I, 'no fish amongst you! why you want one of the greatest dainties that can be set upon a table. Do you wholly eat flesh,' says I, 'at Doorpt Swangeanti?'—'Flesh!' says she, laughingly, 'of what?'—'Nay,' says I, 'you know best what the beasts of your own country are; we have in England, where I was born and bred, oxen, very large hogs, sheep, lambs, and calves; these make our ordinary dishes: then we have deer, hares, rabbits, and these are reckoned dainties; besides numberless kinds of poultry, and fish without stint.'—'I never heard of any of these things in my life,' says Youwarkee; 'nor did I ever eat any thing but fruits and herbs, and what is made from them at Normnbdsgfsutt.'—'You will speak that crabbed word,' says I, 'again.'—'I beg your pardon, my dear,' says she; 'at Doorpt Swangeanti I say, nor I, nor any one else, to my knowledge, ever eat any such thing: but seeing you eat fish, as you call them, I made no scruple of doing so too, and like them very well, especially the salted ones.'

'ones, for I never tasted what you call salt neither till I came here.'—'I cannot think,' says I, 'what sort of a country yours is, or how you all live there.'—'O,' says she, 'there is no want; I wish you and I were there.' I was afraid I had talked too much of her country already, so we called a new cause.

Soon after winter had set in, as we were in bed one night, I heard the voices again: and though my wife had told me of her country-folks, Swan-geans, in that place, I being frightened a little waked her; and she hearing them too, cried out, 'There they are! it is ten to one but my sister or some of our family are there: hark! I believe I hear her voice.' I myself hearkened very attentively; and by this time understanding a great deal of their language, I not only could distinguish different speakers, but knew the meaning of several of the words they pronounced.

I would have had Youwarkee have gotten up and called to them. 'Not for the world,' says she. 'Have you a mind to part with me?' 'Though I have no intent to leave you, as I am with child, if they should try to force me away without my consent, I may receive some injury, to the danger of my own life, or at least of the child's.' This reason perfectly satisfying me, endeared the loving creature to me ten times more, if possible, than ever.

The next summer brought me a yacom as fair as alabaster. My wife was delivered without the usual assistance, and had as favourable a labour as could be. The first thing I did, after giving her some fish-soup, made as skilfully as I was able, and a little cordial, was to see if my yacom had the groundee or not: finding it had, 'So,' says I to Youwarkee, 'you have brought me a legitimate heir to my dominions, whose title sure cannot be disputed, being one of you.' Though I spoke this with as much pleasure, and in as endearing a way as ever I spoke in my life, and quite innocently, the poor Youwarkee burst into tears to such excess there was no pacifying her. I asked her the reason of her grief, begged and intreated her to let me know what disturbed her, but all in vain; till, seeing me in a violent

passion, such as I had never before appeared to be in, she told me she was very sorry I should question her fidelity to me. She surprized me in saying this, as I never had any such apprehension. 'No, my dearest wife,' says I, 'I never had any such suspicion as you charge me with, I can safely affirm; nor can I comprehend your meaning by imputing such a thing to me.'—'Oh!' says she, 'I am sure you have no cause for it! but you said the poor child was one of us; as much as to intimate, that had it been your own it would have been born as you were, without the groundee: which thought I cannot bear; and if you continue to think so it must end me; therefore take away my life now, rather than let me live to see my farther misery.'

I was heartily sorry for what I had said, when I saw the effects of it, though I did not imagine it could have been perverted to such a contrary meaning. But considering her to be the faithfullest and most loving creature upon earth, and that true love cannot bear any thing that touches upon or can be applied (though with ever so forced a construction) to an opprobrious or contemptuous meaning, I attributed her groundless resentment to her excess of fondness only for me; and falling upon the bed by her, and bathing her face in my tears, I assured her the interpretation she had put on my words was altogether foreign from the view they were spoken with; professing to her, that I never had, nor ever could have, the least cause of jealousy. On my confirming this absolute confidence in her virtue by the strongest asseverations, she grew fully convinced of her error, and acknowledged she had been too rash in censuring me; and growing pleased at my fresh professions of love to her, we presently were reconciled, and became again very good friends.

When Youwarkee had gathered strength again, she proved an excellent nurse to my Pedro, (for that was the name I gave him) so that he soon grew a charming child, able to go in his twelfth month, and spoke in his twentieth. This and two other lovely boys I had by her within three years; every one of which she brought up with the breast, and they thrived delicately.

I do not mention the little intervening

ing occurrences which happened during this period; they consisting chiefly of the old rota of fishing, watering, providing in the summer for the winter, and in managing my salt-work; which all together kept me at full employment, comfortably to maintain an increasing family.

In this time I had found out several new sorts of eatables. I had observed, as I said before, abundance of birds about the wood and lake in the summer months. These, by firing at them two or three times on my first coming, I had almost caused to desert my dominions. But as I had for the last two or three years given no disturbance at all to them, they were now in as great plenty as ever; and I made great profit of them by the peace they enjoyed; and yet my table never wanted a supply, fresh in the summer, or salted and pickled in winter.

I took notice it was about October these birds used to come; and most of the month of November they were busy in laying their eggs, which I used at that time to find in great plenty along the banks of the lake in the reeds, and made great collections of them; I used also to find a great many in the woods amongst the shrubs and underwood. These furnished our table various ways; for with my cream-cheese flour, and a little mixture of rams-horn juice, I had taught my wife to make excellent puddings of them; abundance of them also we eat boiled or fried alone, and often as sauce to our fish. As for the birds themselves, having long omitted to fire at them, I had an effectual means of taking them otherwise by nets, which I set between the trees, and also very large pitfall nets, with which I used to catch all sorts even from the size of a thrush to that of a turkey. But as I shall say more of these when I come to speak of my ward bye and bye, and of my poultry, I shall omit any farther mention of them here. You may perhaps wonder how I could keep an account of my time so precisely, as to talk of the particular months. I will tell you. At my coming from America, I was then exact; for we set sail the fourteenth of November, and struck the first or second day of February. So far I kept perfect reckoning. But after that I was not so exact; though I kept it as

well as my perplexity would admit even then, till the days shortening upon me, prevented it.

Hereupon I set about making a year for myself. I found the duration of the comparative darkness, or what might with me be termed night, in the course of the twenty four hours or day, gradually increased for six months; after which it decreased reciprocally for an equal time, and the lighter part of the day took it's turn, as in our parts of the world, only inversely: so that as the light's decrease became sensible about the middle of March, it was at the greatest pitch the latter end of August, or beginning of September; and from thence, on the contrary, went on decreasing to the close of February, when I had the longest portion of light. Hereupon, dividing my year into two seasons only, I began the winter half in March, and the summer half in September. Thus my winter was the spring and summer quarters of us in Europe, and my summer those of our autumn and winter.

From my settling this matter I kept little account of days or weeks, but only reckoned my time by summer and winter; so that I am pretty right as to the revolutions of these; though the years, as to their notation, I kept no account of, nor do I know what year of the Lord it now is.

CH A P. XIX.

WILKINS'S CONCERN ABOUT CLOATHING FOR PEDRO HIS ELDEST SON—HIS DISCOURSE WITH HIS WIFE ABOUT THE SHIP—HER FLIGHT TO IT—HIS MELANCHOLY REFLECTIONS TILL HER RETURN—AN ACCOUNT OF WHAT SHE HAD DONE, AND OF WHAT SHE BROUGHT—SHE CLOATHS HER CHILDREN, AND TAKES A SECOND FLIGHT.

AS my boy Pedro grew up, though, as I said before, he had the graundee, yet it was of less dimensions than it ought to have been to be useful to him; so that it was visible he could never fly, for it would scarce meet before, whereas it ought to have reached from side to side both ways.

This

This pleased my wife to the heart; for now she was sure, whatever I had done before, I could not suspect her. Be that as it will, the boy's graundee not being a sufficient vestment for him, it became necessary he should be clothed.

I turned over my hoard, but could find nothing that would do; or, at least, that we knew how to fit him with. I had described my own country vest for lads to Youwarkee, and she formed a tolerable idea of it, but we had no tackle to alter any thing with. 'O my dear,' says I, 'had I but been born with the graundee, I need not be now racking my brains to get my child cloaths.'—'What do you mean by that?' says she.—'Why,' says I, 'I would have flown to my ship,' (for I had long before related to her all my sea-adventures, till the vessel's coming to the magnetical rock) 'and have brought some such things from thence, as you, not wanting them in this country, can have no notion of.' She seemed mighty inquisitive to understand how a ship was made, what it was most like to, how a person who never saw one might know it only by the description, and how one might get into it; with abundance of the like questions. She then enquired what sort of things those needles and several other utensils were, which I had at times been speaking of; and in what part of a ship they usually kept such articles. And I, to gratify her curiosity, as I perceived she took a pleasure in hearing me, answered all her questions to a scruple; not then conceiving the secret purpose of all this inquisitiveness.

About two days after this, having been out two or three hours in the morning, to cut wood; at coming home I found Pedro crying, ready to break his heart, and his little brother Tommy hanging to him, and crawling about the floor after him: the youngest, pretty baby! was fast asleep upon one of the beak-fish skins, in a corner of the room. I asked Pedro for his mother, but the poor infant had nothing farther to say to the matter, than 'Mammy run away, I cry! Mammy run away, I cry!' I admired where she was gone, never before missing her from our habitation. However, I waited patiently till bed-time, but no wife. I grew very uneasy then. Yet,

as my children were tired and sleepy, I thought I had best go to bed with them, and make quiet. So, giving all three their suppers, we lay down together. They slept; but my mind was too full to permit the closure of my eyes. A thousand different chimeras swam in my imagination relating to my wife. One while I fancied her carried away by her kinsfolks; then, that she was gone of her own accord to make peace with her father. But that thought would not fix, being put aside by her constant tenderness to her children, and regard to me; whom I was sure she would not have left without notice. 'But, alas!' says I, 'she may even now be near me, but taken so ill she cannot get home, or she may have died suddenly in the wood.' I lay tumbling and tossing in great anxiety, not able to find out any excusable occasion she could have of so long absence. 'And then,' thinks I, 'if she should either be dead, or have quite left me, which will be of equally bad consequence to me, what can I do with three poor helpless infants? If they were a little more grown up, they might be helpful to me, and to each other; but at their age how shall I ever rear them without the tenderness of a mother? And to see them pine away before my face, and not know how to help them, will distract me.'

Finding I could neither sleep nor be still, I rose, intending to search all the woods about, and call to her, that if any accident had prevented sight of her, she might at least hear me. But upon opening the door, and just stepping out, how agreeably was I surprised to meet her coming in, with something on her arm. 'My dear Youwarkee,' says I, 'where have you been? What has befallen you to keep you out so long? The poor children have been at their wit's end to find you; and I, my dear, have been inexpressible, and was now, almost distracted, coming in search of you.'

Youwarkee looked very blank, to think what concern she had given me and the children. 'My dearest Peter,' says she, (kissing me) 'pray forgive me the only thing I have ever done to offend you, and the last cause you shall ever have, by my good will, to complain of me; but walk within doors,

‘doors, and I will give you a farther account of my absence. Don’t you remember what delight I took the other day to hear you talk of your ship?’—‘Yes,’ says I, ‘you did so; but what of that?’—‘Nay, pray,’ says she, ‘forgive me, for I have been to see it.’—‘That’s impossible,’ says I: and truly this was the first time I ever thought she went about to deceive me. ‘I do assure you,’ says she, ‘I have; and a wonderful thing it is! But if you distrust me, and what I say, I have brought proof of it; step out with me to the verge of the wood, and satisfy yourself.’—‘But pray,’ says I, ‘who presented you with this upon your arm?’—‘I vow,’ says she, ‘I had forgot this; yes, this will, I believe, confirm to you what I have said.’ I turned it over and over; and looking wistfully upon her, says I, ‘This waistcoat, indeed, is the very fellow to one that lay in the captain’s locker in the cabin.’—‘Say not the very fellow,’ says she, ‘but rather say the very same, for I’ll assure you it is so; and had you been with me, we might have got so many things for ourselves and the children, we should never have wanted more, though we lived these hundred years; but as it is, I have left something without the wood for you to bring up.’ When we had had our talk out, she hearing the children stir, took them up, and was going, as she always did, to get their breakfasts. ‘Hold,’ says I, ‘this journey must have fatigued you too much already, lay yourself to rest, and leave every thing else to me.’—‘My dear,’ says she, ‘you seem to think this flight tiresome, but you are mistaken; I am more weary with walking to the lake and back again, than with all the rest. Oh,’ says she, ‘if you had but the graundee, flying would rest you, after the greatest labour; for the parts which are moved with exercise on the earth, are all at rest in flight; as, on the contrary, the parts used in flight are when on earthly travel. The whole trouble of flight is in mounting from the plain ground, but when once you are upon the graundee, at a proper height, all the rest is play, a mere trifle; you need only think of your way, and incline

‘to it, your graundee directs you as readily as your feet obey you on the ground, without thinking of every step you take; it does not require labour, as your boat does, to keep you a going.’

After we had composed ourselves, we walked to the verge of the wood, to see what cargo my wife had brought from the ship. I was astonished at the bulk of it; and seeing, by the outside, it consisted of cloaths, I took it with much ado upon my shoulders, and carried it home. But upon opening it I found far more treasure than I could have imagined; for there was a hammer, a great many spikes and nails, three spoons, about five plates of pewter, four knives and a fork, a small china punch-bowl, two chocolate-cups, a paper of needles, and several of pins, a parcel of coarse thread, a pair of shoes, and abundance of such other things as she had heard me wish for and describe; besides as much linen and woollen, of one sort or another, as made a good package for all the other things; with a great tin porridge-pot, of about two gallons, tied to the outside; and all these as nicely stowed as if she had been bred a packer.

When I had viewed the bundle, and poised the weight; ‘How was it possible, my dear Youwarkee,’ said I, ‘for you to bring all this? You could never carry them in your hands.’—‘No, no,’ replied she, ‘I carried them on my back.’—‘Is it possible,’ says I, ‘for your graundee to bear yourself and all this weight too in the air, and to such an height as the top of these rocks?’—‘You will always,’ replies she, ‘make the height a part of your difficulty in flying; but you are deceived; for as the first stroke (I have heard you say often) in fighting is half the battle, so it is in flying; get but once fairly on the wind, nothing can hurt you afterwards. My method, let me tell you, was this; I climbed to the highest part of the ship, where I could stand clear, having first put up my burden, which you have there; and then getting that on my back near my shoulders, I took the two cords you see hang loose to it in my two hands, and extending my graundee, leaped off flatwise with my face towards the water; when

‘when instantly playing two or three good strokes with my graundee, I was out of danger; now, if I had found the bundle too heavy to make my first strokes with, I should directly have turned on my back, dropped my bundle, and floated in my graundee to the ship again, as you once saw me float on the lake.’ Says I, ‘you must have flown a prodigious distance to the ship, for I was several days sailing, I believe three weeks, from my ship before I reached the gulph; and after that could be little less than five weeks (as I accounted for it) and at a great rate of sailing too under the rock, before I reached the lake; so that the ship must be a monstrous way off.’—‘No, no,’ says she, ‘your ship lies but over yon cliff, that rises as it were with two points; and as to the rock itself, it is not broader than our lake is long; but what made you so tedious in your passage was, many of the windings and turnings in the cavern returning into themselves again; so that you might have gone round and round till this time if the tide had not luckily struck you into the direct passage: this,’ says she, ‘I have heard from some of my countrymen, who have flown up it, but could never get quite through.’

‘I wish with all my heart,’ says I, ‘fortune had brought me first to light in this country; or (but for your sake I could almost say) had never brought me into it at all; for to be a creature of the least significancy of the whole race about one, is a melancholy circumstance.’—‘Fear not,’ says she, ‘my love, for you have a wife will hazard all for you, though you are restrained; and as my inclinations and affections are so much yours, that I need but know your desires to execute them as far as my power extends; surely you, who can act by another, may be content to forego the trouble of your own performance. I perceive, indeed,’ continued she, ‘you want mightily to go to your ship, and are more uneasy now you know it is safe, than you was before; but that being past my skill to assist you in, if you will command your deputy to go backwards and forwards in your stead, I am ready to obey you.’

Thus ended our conversation about the ship for that time. But it left not my mind so soon; for a stronger hankering after it pursued me now than ever since my wife’s flight, but to no purpose.

We sat us down, and sorted out our cargo, piece by piece; and having found several things proper for the children, my wife longed to enter upon some piece of work towards cloathing Pedro in the manner she had heard me talk of, and laid hard at me to shew her the use of the needles, thread, and other things she had brought. Indeed, I must say she proved very tractable; and from the little instruction I was able to give her, soon outwrought my knowledge; for I could only shew her that the thread went through the needle, and both through the cloth to hold it together; but for any thing else I was as ignorant as she. In much less time than I could have imagined, she had cloathed my son Pedro, and had made a sort of mantle for the youngest. But now seeing us so smart, (for I took upon me sometimes to wear the green waistcoat she had brought under my dirty jacket) she began to be ashamed of herself, as she said, in our fine company; and afterwards (as I shall soon acquaint you) got into our fashion.

Seeing the advantages of her flight to the ship, and that so many conveniences arose from it, she was frequently at me to let her go again. I should as much have wished for another return of goods as she, but I could by no means think of parting with my factor; for I knew her eagerness to please me, and that she would stick at nothing to perform it; ‘And,’ thinks I, ‘should any accident happen to her, by over loading, or otherwise, and I should lose her, all the other commodities of the whole world put together would not compensate her loss.’ But as she so earnestly desired it, and assured me she would run no hazards, I was prevailed on at length, by her incessant importunities, to let her go; though under certain restrictions, which she promised me to comply with. As first, I insisted upon it that she should take a tour quite round the rock, setting out the same way I had last gone with my boat; and, if possible, find out the gulph, which I told her she could not mistake, by reason

reason of the noise the fall of the water made; and desired her to remark the place, so as I might know within-side where it was without. And then I told her she might review and search every hole in the ship as she pleased; and if there were any small things she had a mind to bring from it, she was welcome, provided the bundle she should make up was not above a fourth part either of the bulk or weight of the last. All which she having engaged punctually to observe, she bid me not expect her till I saw her, and she would return as soon as possible. I then went with her to the confines of the wood; (for I told her I desired to see her mount) and she, after we had embraced, bidding me to stand behind her, took her flight.

CHAP. XX.

THE AUTHOR OBSERVES HER FLIGHT—A DESCRIPTION OF A GLUMM IN THE GRAUNDEE—SHE FINDS OUT THE GULPH, NOT FAR FROM THE SHIP—BRINGS HOME MORE GOODS; MAKES HER A GOWN BY HER HUSBAND'S INSTRUCTION.

I Had ever since our marriage been desirous of seeing Youwarkee fly, but this was the first opportunity I had of it; and indeed the sight was worthy of all the attention I paid it; for I desired her slowly to put herself in proper order for it, that I might make my observation the more accurately; and shall now give you an account of the whole apparatus, though several parts of the description were taken from subsequent views; for it would have been impossible to have made just remarks of every thing at that once, especially as I only viewed her back parts then.

I told you before, I had seen her graundee open, and quite extended, as low as her middle; but that being in the grotto by lamp-light, I could not take so just a survey as now, when the sort of light we ever had was at the brightest.

She first threw up two long branches or ribs of the whale-bone, as I called it before, (and indeed for several of it's properties, as toughness, elasticity, and

pliability, nothing I have ever seen can so justly be compared to it) which were jointed behind to the upper-bone of the spine, and which, when not extended, lie bent over the shoulders on each side of the neck forwards, from whence, by nearer and nearer approaches, they just meet at the lower rim of the belly in a sort of point; but when extended they stand their whole length above the shoulders, not perpendicularly, but spreading outwards, with a web of the softest and most pliable and springy membrane that can be imagined, in the interstice between them, reaching from their root or joint on the back up above the hinder part of the head, and near half-way their own length; but when closed the membrane falls down in the middle upon the neck, like an handkerchief. There are also two other ribs rising as it were from the same root, which, when open, run horizontally, but not so long as the others. These are filled up in the interstice between them and the upper ones with the same membrane; and on the lower-side of this is also a deep flap of the membrane, so that the arms can be either above or below it in flight, and are always above it when closed. This last rib, when shut, flaps under the upper one, and also falls down with it before to the waist, but is not joined to the ribs below. Along the whole spine-bone runs a strong, flat, broad, grisly cartilage, to which are joined several other of these ribs; all which open horizontally, and are filled in the interstices with the above membrane, and are jointed to the ribs of the person just where the plane of the back begins to turn towards the breast and belly; and, when shut, wrap the body round to the joints on the contrary side, folding neatly one side over the other. At the lower spine are two more ribs, extended horizontally when open, jointed again to the hips, and long enough to meet the joint on the contrary side cross the belly; and from the hip-joint, which is on the outermost edge of the hip-bone, runs a pliable cartilage quite down the outside of the thigh and leg to the ankle; from which there branch out divers other ribs horizontally also when open, but when closed they encompass the whole thigh and leg, rolling inwards cross the back of the leg.

and thigh, till they reach and just cover the cartilage. The interstices of these are also filled up with the same membrane. From the two ribs which join to the lower spine-bone there hangs down a sort of short apron, very full of plaits, from hip-joint to hip-joint, and reaches below the buttocks, half way or more to the hams. This has also several small limber ribs in it. Just upon the lower spine-joint, and above the apron, as I call it, there are two other long branches, which, when close, extend upon the back from the point they join at below to the shoulders, where each rib has a clasper, which reaching over the shoulders, just under the fold of the uppermost branch or ribs, hold up the two ribs flat to the back like a V, the interstices of which are also filled up with the afore-said membrane. This last piece, in flight, falls down almost to the ankles; where the two clasps lapping under each leg within-side, hold it very fast; and then also the short apron is drawn up, by the strength of the ribs in it, between the thighs forward, and covers as far as the rim of the belly. The whole arms are covered also from the shoulders to the wrist with the same delicate membrane, fastened to ribs of proportionable dimensions, and jointed to a cartilage on the outside in the same manner as on the legs.

It is very surprizing to feel the difference of these ribs when open and when closed; for closed they are as pliable as the finest whalebone, or more so; but when extended, are as strong and stiff as a bone. They are tapering from the roots, and are broader or narrower, as best suits the places they occupy, and the stress they are put to, up to their points, which are almost as small as a hair. The membrane between them is the most elastick thing I ever met with, occupying no more space, when the ribs are closed, than just from rib to rib, as flat and smooth as possible; but when extended in some postures, will dilate itself surprizingly. This will be better comprehended by the plates, where you will see several glumms and gawreys in different attitudes, than expressed by words.

As soon as my wife had expanded the whole graundee, being upon plain ground, she stooped forward, moving

with a heavy wriggling motion at first, which put me into some pain for her; but after a few strokes, beginning to rise a little, she cut through the air like lightning, and was soon over the edge of the rock, and out of my sight.

It is the most amazing thing in the world to observe the large expansion of this graundee when open; and, when closed, (as it all is in a moment upon the party's descent) to see it sit so close and compact to the body, as no taylor can come up to it; and then the several ribs lie so justly disposed in the several parts, that instead of being, as one would imagine, a disadvantage to the shape, they make the body and limbs look extremely elegant; and by the different adjustment of their lines on the body and limbs, the whole, to my fancy, somewhat resembles the dress of the old Roman warriors in their buskins; and, to appearance, seems much more noble than any fastitious garb I ever saw, or can frame a notion of to myself.

Though these people in height, shape, and limb, very much resemble the Europeans, there is yet this difference, that their bodies are rather broader and flatter, and their limbs, though as long and well-shaped, are seldom so thick as ours: and this I observed generally in all I saw of them during a long time among them afterwards; but their skin, for beauty and fairness, exceeds ours very much.

My wife having now taken her second flight, I went home, and never left my children till her return: this was three days after our parting. I was in bed with my little ones when she knocked at the door. I soon let her in, and we received each other with a glowing welcome. The news she brought me was very agreeable. She told me she first went and pried into every nook in the ship, where she had seen such things, could we get at them, as would make us very happy. Then she set out the way I told her to go, in order to find the gulph. She was much afraid she should not have discovered it, though she flew very slow, that she might be sure to hear the water-fall, and not over-shoot it. It was long ere she came at it; but when she did, she perceived she might have spared most of her trouble, had she set out the other way; for, after she had flown almost

almost round the island, and not before, she began to hear the fall, and, upon coming up to it, found it to be not above six minutes flight from the ship. She said the entrance was very narrow, and, she thought, lower than I represented it; for she could scarce discern any space between the surface of the water and the arch-way of the rock. I told her that might happen from the rise or fall of the sea itself. But I was glad to hear the ship was no farther from the gulph; for my head was never free from the thoughts of my ship and cargo. She then told me she had left a small bundle for me without the wood, and went to look after her children. I brought up the bundle; and though it was not near so large as the other, I found several useful things in it, wrapped up in four or five yards of dark blue woollen-cloth, which I knew no name for, but which was thin and light, and about a yard wide. I asked her where she met with this stuff: she answered, where there was more of it, under a thing like our bed, in a cloth like our sheet, which she cut open, and took it out of.—

‘Well,’ says I, ‘and what will you do with this?’—‘Why, I will make me a coat, like yours,’ says she; ‘for I don’t like to look different from my dear husband and children.’—‘No, Youwarkee,’ replied I, ‘you must not do so: if you make such a jacket as mine, there will be no distinction between glumm and gawrey; the gowren praave, in my country, would not on any account go dressed like a glumm; for they wear a fine flowing garment called a gown, that sits tight about the waist, and hangs down from thence in folds, like your barras, almost to the ground, so that you can hardly discern their feet, and no other part of their body but their hands and face, and about as much of their necks and breasts as you see in your graunde.’

Youwarkee seemed highly delighted with this new-fancied dress, and worked day and night at it against the cold weather. Whilst she employed herself thus, I was busied in providing my winter stores; which I was forced to do alone now, herself and children taking up all my wife’s time. About a fortnight after she had began

mantua-making, she presented herself to me one day as I came from work in her new gown: and, truly, considering the scanty description I had given her of such a garment, it appeared a good comely dress. Though it had not one plait about the body, it sat very tight thereto, and yet hung down full enough for a countess; for she would have put it all in (all the stuff she had) had there been as much more of it. I could see no opening before, so asked her how she got it on. She told me she laid along on the ground, and crept through the plaits at the bottom, and sewed the body round her after she had got her hands and arms through the sleeves. I wondered at her contrivance; and, smiling, shewed her how she should put it on, and also how to pin it before: and after she had done that, and I had turned up about half a yard of sleeve, which then hung down to her fingers ends, I kissed her, and called her my country-woman, of which and her new gown she was very proud for a long time.

CHAP. XXI.

THE AUTHOR GETS A BREED OF
POULTRY, AND BY WHAT MEANS
—BUILDS THEM AN HOUSE—
HOW HE MANAGED TO KEEP
THEM IN WINTER.

ONE day, as I was traversing the woods to view my bird-traps, looking into the underwood among the great trees on my right-hand, I saw a wood-hen (a bird I used to call so; from its resemblance in make to our English poultry) come out of a little thicket. I know not whether my rustling or what had disturbed it; but I let her pass, and she ran away before me. When she was fairly out of sight, I stepped up, and found she had a nest and sixteen eggs there. I exactly marked the place; and taking away one of the eggs, I broke it, at some distance from the nest, to see how forward they were; and I had no sooner broke the shell but out came a young chicken. I then looked into the nest again, and taking up more of the eggs, I found them all just splintered in the shell, and ready for hatching. I had immediately a desire to save them, and bring them-up tame;

but I was afraid if I took them away before they were hatched, and a little strengthened under the hen, they would all die; so I let them remain till next day. In the mean while I prepared some small netting of such a proper size as I conceived would do; and with this I contrived, by fastening it to stakes which I fixed in the ground, to surround the nest, and me on the outside of it. All the while I was doing this the hen did not stir, so that I thought she had either been absent when I came, or had hatched and gone off with the young ones. As to her being gone I was under no concern; for I had no design to catch her, but only to confine the chickens within my net if they were hatched. But, however, I went nearer, and peeping in, found she sat still, squeezing herself as flat to the ground as she could. I was in twenty minds whether to take her first, and then catch the chickens, or to let her go off, and then clap upon them; but as I proposed to let her go, I thought if she would sit still till I had got the chickens, that would be the best way; so I softly kneeled down before her, and sliding my hand under her, I gently drew out two, and put them in a bag I had in my left-hand. I then dipped again and again, taking two every turn; but going a fourth time, as I was bringing out my prize, the hen jumped up, flew out, and made such a noise, that, though I the minute before saw six or seven more chicks in a lump where she had sat, and kept my eye upon them, yet, before I could put the last two I had got into my bag, these were all gone, and in three hours search I could not find one of them, though I was sure they could not pass my net, and must be within the compass of a small room, my toils inclosing no more. After tiring myself with looking for them, I marched home with those eight I had got.

I told Youwarkee what I had done, and how I intended to manage the little brood, and, if I could, to bring them up tame. We kept them some days very warm by the fire, and fed them often, as I had seen my mother do with her early chickens; and in a fortnight's time they were as stout and familiar as common poultry. We kept them a long while in the house; and when I fed them I always used them

to a particular whistle, which I also taught my wife, that they might know both us and their feeding time; and in a very short while they would come running, upon the usual sound, like barn-door fowls to the name of Biddy.

There happened in this brood to be five hens and three cocks; and they were now so tame that, having cut their wings, I let them out, when the weather favoured, at my door, where they would pick about in the wood, and get best part of their subsistence; and having used them to roost in a corner of my anti-chamber, they all came in very regularly at night, and took their places. My hens, at the usual season, laid me abundance of eggs, and hatched me a brood or two each of chickens; so that now I was at a loss to know what to do with them, they were become so numerous. The anti-chamber was no longer a proper receptacle of such a flock, and therefore I built a little house, at a small distance from my own, on purpose for their reception and entertainment. I had by this time cleared a spot of ground on one side of my grotto, by burning up the timber and underwood which had covered it: this I inclosed, and within that inclosure I raised my aviary; and my poultry thrived very well there, seemed to like their habitation, and grew very fat.

My wife and I took much delight in visiting and feeding them, and it was a fine diversion also to my boys; but at the end of summer, when all the other birds took their annual flight, away went every one of my new-raised brood with them, and one of my old cocks, the rest of the old set remaining very quiet with me all the winter. The next summer, when my chicks of that year grew up a little, I cut their wings, and by that means preserved all but one, which I suppose was either not cut so close as the rest, or his wings had grown again. From this time I found, by long experience, that not two out of a hundred that had once wintered with me would ever go away, though I did not cut their wings; but all of the same season would certainly go off with the wild ones, if they could any ways make a shift to fly. I afterwards got a breed of black-necks, which was a name I gave them from the peculiar blackness of their necks,

let

let the rest of their bodies be of what colour they would, as they are indeed of all colours. These birds were as big or bigger than a turkey, of a delicious flavour, and were bred from turkey eggs hatched under my own wood-hens in great plenty. I was forced to clip these as I did the other young fowl, to keep them; and at length they grew very tame, and would return every night during the dark season. The greatest difficulty now was to get meat for all these animals in the winter, when they would sit on the roof two days together, if I did not call and feed them, which I was sometimes forced to do by lamp-light, or they would have starved in cloudy weather. But I overcame that want of food by an accidental discovery; for I observed my black-necks in the woods jump many times together at a sort of little round heads or pods, very dry, which hung plentifully upon a shrub that grew in great abundance there. I cut several of these heads, and carrying them home with me broke them, and took out a spoonful or more from each head of small yellow seeds; which giving to my poultry, and finding they greedily devoured them, I soon laid in a stock for twice my number of mouths, so that they never after wanted. I tried several times to raise a breed of water-fowl by hatching their eggs under my hens; but not one in ten of the sorts, when hatched, were fit to eat; and those that were would never live and thrive with me, but got away to the lake, I having no sort of water nearer me; so I dropped my design of water-fowl as impracticable. But by breeding and feeding my land-fowl so constantly in my farm-yard, I never wanted of that sort at my table, where we eat abundance of them; for my whole side of the lake in a few years was like a farm-yard, so full of poultry that I never knew my stock; and upon the usual whistle they would flock round me from all quarters. I had every thing now but cattle, not only for the support but convenience and pleasure of life; and so happily should I have fared here, if I had had but a cow and bull, a ram and sheep, that I would not have changed my dominions for the crown of England.

C H A P. XXII.

REFLECTIONS ON MANKIND—THE AUTHOR WANTS TO BE WITH HIS SHIP—PROJECTS GOING, BUT PERCEIVES IT IMPRACTICABLE—YOUWARKEE OFFERS HER SERVICE, AND GOES—AN ACCOUNT OF HER TRANSACTIONS ON BOARD—REMARKS ON HERSAGACITY—SHE DISPATCHES SEVERAL CHESTS OF GOODS THROUGH THE GULPH TO THE LAKE—AN ACCOUNT OF A DANGER SHE ESCAPED—THE AUTHOR HAS A FIT OF SICKNESS.

STRANGE is the temper of mankind; who, the more they enjoy, the more they covet. Before I received any return from my ship, I rested tolerably easy, and but seldom thought upon what I had left behind me in her, thinking myself happy in what I had, and completely so since my union with my dear wife: but after I had got what I could never have expected, I grew more and more perplexed for want of the rest, and thought I should never enjoy true happiness while even a plank of the ship remained. My head, be I where I would, or at what I would, was ever on board. I wished for her in the lake, and could I but have got her thither, I thought I should be an emperor: and though I wanted for nothing to maintain life, and had so good a wife and five children I was very fond of, yet the one thing I had not, reduced the comfort of all the rest to a scanty pattern, even so low as to destroy my whole peace. I was even mad enough to think of venturing up the cavern again, but was restrained from the attempt by the certain impracticableness of it. Then I thought Youwarkee should make another trip to the ship: 'But what can she bring from it,' says I to myself, 'in respect of what must be left behind? Her whole life will not suffice to clear it in, at the rate she can fetch the loading hither in parcels.' At last a project started, that as there were so many chests on board, Youwarkee should fill some of them, and send them through the gulph to take their chance for the lake. This at first sight seemed feasible; but then I considered how

how they could be got from the ship to the gulph; and again, that they would never keep out the water, and if they filled with a lading in them they would sink; or, if this did not happen, they might be dashed to pieces against the craggs in the cavern. These apprehensions stopped me again; till, unwilling to quit the thought, 'True,' says I, 'this may happen to some; but if I get but one in five, it is better than nothing.' Thus I turned and wound the affair in my mind; but objections still started too obstinate to be conquered.

In the height of my soliloquy in comes Youwarkee; and seeing my dejected look, would needs know the meaning of it. I told her plainly that I could get no rest from day to day ever since she first went to the ship, to think such a number of good things lay there to be a prey to the sea, as the ship wasted, when they might be of such infinite service here; and that, since her last flight, I had suffered the more, when I thought how near the gulph was to the ship; so that could I but get thither myself with my boat, I would contrive to pack up the goods in the chests that were on board, and, carrying them in the boat, drop them near the draft of the water, which of itself would suck them under the rock down the gulph; and when they were passed through the cavern, I might take them up in the lake. 'Well,' says she, 'Peter, and why cannot I do this for you?'—'No,' says I, 'even this has it's objections.' Then I told her what I feared of their taking water, or dashing against the rock, and twenty other ways of frustrating my views: 'But, above all,' says I, 'how can you get such large and weighty things to the gulph without a boat? There is another impossibility! it won't do.'

Youwarkee eyed me attentively.—'Pr'ythee, my dear Peter,' says she, 'set your heart at rest about that. I can only try: if no good is to be done, you shall soon know it, and must rest contented under the disappointment.' I told her if I was there, I could take all the things out of the chest, and then melt some pitch and pour into every crack, to keep out the water when they were set afloat.

'Pitch!' says she, 'what's that!'—'Why,' says I, 'that is a nasty, hard, black sticking thing, that stands in tubs in the ship, and which being put over the fire in any thing to melt, will grow liquid, and when it is cold be hard again, and will resist the water and keep it out.' Says she, 'How can I put this pitch within-side of the chest-lid when I have tied it up?'—'It is to no manner of purpose,' says I, 'to talk of it; so there's an end of it.'—'But,' says she, 'suppose yourself there, what things would you bring first?' I then entered into a long detail of particulars; saying, I would have this and that, and so on, till I had scarce left out a thing I either knew of or could suppose to be in the ship; and, for fear I had not mentioned all, says I, at last, 'If I was there, I believe I should leave but little portable behind me.'

'So, so, my dear,' says Youwarkee, 'you would roll in riches, I find; but you have mentioned never a new gown for me.'—'Why, aye!' says I, 'I would have that too.'—'But how would you melt the pitch?' says she. 'O,' says I, 'there is a tin-der-box and matches in a room below, upon the side of the fire-hearth.' And then I let her see one I had brought with me, and shewed her the use of the flint and steel. 'Well, my dear,' says she, 'will you once more trust me?' I told her, her going would be of little more use than to get a second gown, or some such thing; but if she was desirous, I would let her make another flight on her promise to be back as soon as possible.

In the evening she set out, and staid two days, and till the night of the third. I would here observe, that though it was much lighter and brighter on the outside of the rock where the ship lay, than with us at Graundevolet, yet having always her spectacles with her, I heard no more complaint of the glare of light she used to be so much afraid of: indeed, she always avoided the fire and lamp at home as much as she could, because she generally took off her spectacles within doors; but when at any time she had them on, she could bear both well enough.

Upon her return again, she told me she

she had shipped some goods to sea for me, which she hoped would arrive safe, (for by this time she had had my seafaring terms so often over, she could apply them very properly) and that they were in six chests, which she had pitched after my directions. 'Ay!' says I, 'you have pitched them into the sea, perhaps; but, after my directions, I am satisfied, was beyond your ability.'—'You glumms,' says she, 'think us gawreys very ignorant; but I'll satisfy you we are not so dull of apprehension as you would make us. Did not you shew me one day how your boat was tarred and caulked, as you call it?'—'I did,' says I; 'what then?'—'I'll tell you,' says she. 'When I had emptied the first chest, and set it properly, I looked about for your pitch, which at last I found by it's sticking to my fingers; I then put a good piece into a sort of a little kettle, with a long handle, that lay upon the pitch.'—'O, the pitch-ladle!' says I. 'I know not what you call it,' says she; but then I made a fire, as you told me, and melted that stuff; afterwards turning up the chest side-ways, and then end-ways, I poured it into it, and let it settle in the cracks, and with an old stocking, such as yours, dipped into the pitch, I rubbed every place where the boards joined. I then set the chest on the side of the ship, and when the pitch was cold and hardened in it, filled it top-full of things: but when I had done thus, and shut the lid, I found that would not come so close but I could get the blade of a knife through any where between it and the chest; whereupon I cut some long-slips of the cloth I was packing up, and fitting them all round the edge of the chest, I dipped them into the pitch, and laid them on hot; and where one slip would not do, I put two; and shutting the lid down close upon them, I nailed it, as I had seen you do some things, quite round; then tying a rope to the handle, I tipped the chest into the sea, holding the rope. I watched it some time, and seeing it swim well, I took flight with the rope in my hand, and drew the chest after me to the gulph, when letting go the rope, away it went. I served five more in the same manner:

'and now, my dearest, I am here to tell you I hope you will be able to see at least some of them, one time or other, in the lake.'

I admired in all this at the sagacity of the gawreys. 'Alas!' thinks I, 'what narrow-hearted creatures are mankind? Did I not heretofore look upon the poor blacks in Africa as little better than beasts, till my friend Glanlipze convinced me, by disabling the crocodile, the passage of the river, and several other achievements, that my own excellences might have perished in a desert without his genius; and now what could I, or almost any of us master-pieces of the creation, (as we think ourselves) and Heaven's peculiar favourites, have done in this present case, that has been omitted by this woman, (for I may justly stile her so in an eminent degree) and that in a way to which she was bred an utter stranger.'

After what I had heard from Youwarkee, I grew much more chearful; which she, poor creature, was remarkably pleased with. She went with me constantly once, and sometimes twice, a day, for several days together, to see what success at the lake; till at length she grew very impatient, for fear, as she afterwards told me, I should either think she had not done what she said, or had done it in an ineffectual manner. But one day, walking by the lake, I thought I saw something floating in the water at a very great distance. 'Youwarkee,' says I, 'I spy a sail!' Then running to my boat, and taking her in, away we went, plying my oars with all my might; for I longed to see what it was. At nearer view I perceived it to be one of my wife's fleet. But what added to my satisfaction was to see Youwarkee so pleased, for she could scarcely contain herself.

When we came close to it, up she started: 'Now, my dear Peter,' says she, 'torment yourself no more about your goods on board; for if this will do, all shall be your own.' She then lent me a hand to take it in; but we had both work enough to compass it, the wood had soaked in so much water. We then made the best of our way homewards to my wet-dock; when, just as we had landed our treasure,

sure, we saw two more boxes coming down the stream both together; whereupon we launched again, and brought them in one by one; for I did not care to trust them both on one bottom, my boat being in years, and growing somewhat crazy.

We had now made a good day's work of it; so, mooring the boat, we went home, intending to be out next morning early with the cart, to convey our imports to the grotto.

After supper, Youwarkee looking very earnestly at me, with tears just glittering in her eyes, broke out in these words—'What should you have thought, Peter, to have seen me come sailing, drowned, through the cavern, tied to one of your chests?'—'Heaven forbid! such a thought, my charmer!' says I. 'But, as you know I must have been rendered the most miserable of all living creatures by such a sight, or any thing else that would deprive me of you, pray tell me how you could possibly have such a thought in your head?' She saw she had raised my concern, and was very sorry for what she had said. 'Nothing, nothing,' says she, 'my dear! it was only a fancy just come into my head.'—'My dear Youwee,' says I, 'you must let me know what you mean; I am in great pain till you explain yourself; for I am sure there is something more in what you say than fancy; therefore, pray, if you love me, keep me on the rack no longer.'—'Ah, Peter!' says she, 'there was but a span between me and death not many days ago; and when I saw the line of the last chest we took up just now, it gave me so much horror, I could scarce keep upon my feet.'—'My dear Youwee, proceed,' says I; for I cannot bear my torment till I have heard the worst.'—'Why, Peter,' says she, 'now the danger is over, I shall tell you my escape with as much pleasure as I guess you will take in hearing of it.—'You must know, my life,' says she, 'that having cast that chest into the sea, as I was tugging it along by that very line, it being one of the heaviest, and moving but slowly, I twisted the string several times round my hand, one fold upon another, the easier to tow it; when, drawing it rather too quick into the eddy, it

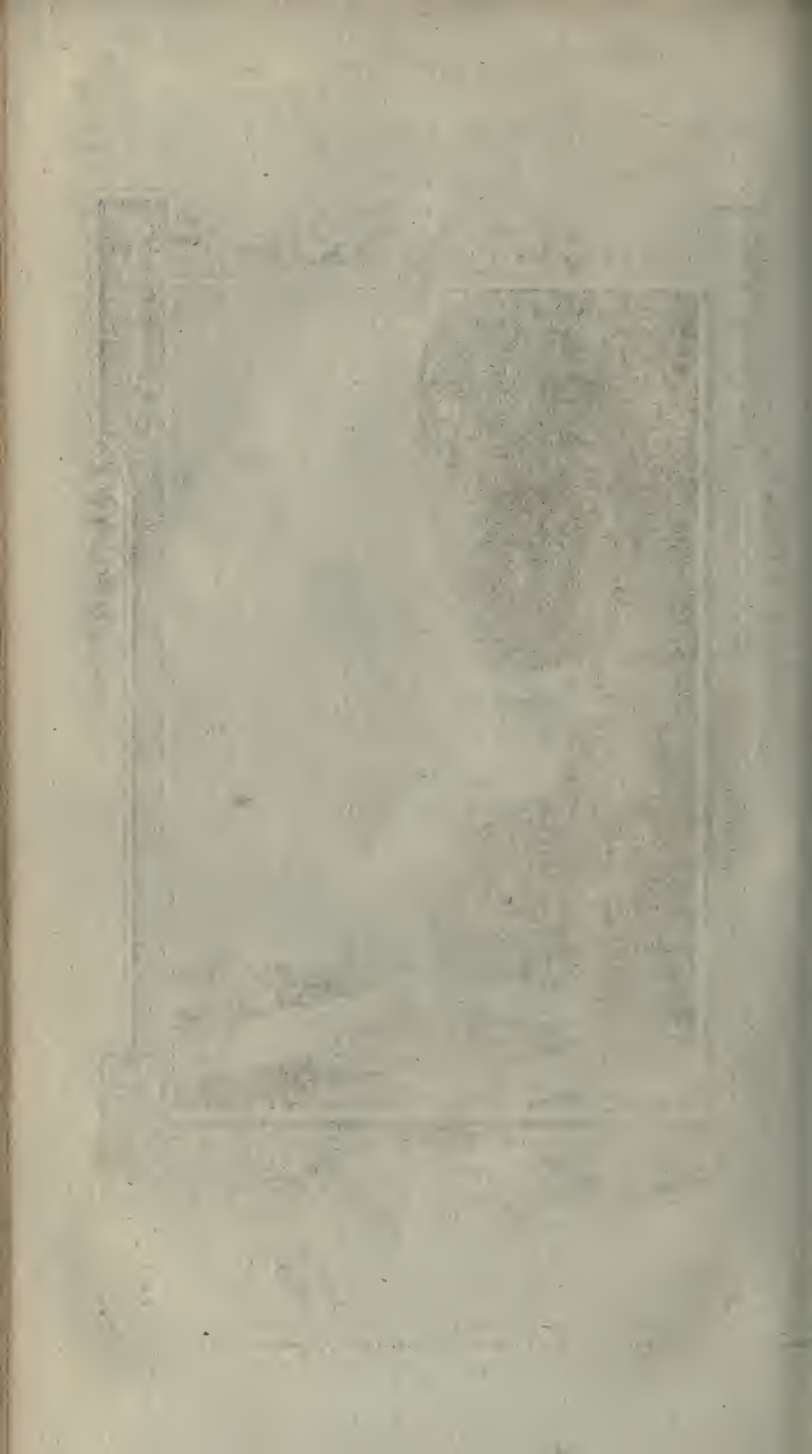
'pulled so hard against me, towards the gulph, and so quick, that I could no way loosen or disengage the cord from my fingers, but was dragged thereby to the very rock, against which the chest struck violently. My last thought, as I supposed it, was of you, my dear,' (on which she clasped me round the neck, in sense of her past agony;) 'when, taking myself for lost, I forbore further resistance; at which instant the line, slackening by the rebound of the chest, fell from my hand of itself; and the chest, returning to the rock, went down the current. I took a turn or two round on my graundee to recollect my past danger, and went back to the ship, fully resolved to avoid the like snare for the future. Indeed I did not easily recover my spirits, and was so terrified with the thought, that I had half a mind to have left the two remaining chests behind me; but as danger overcome gives fresh resolution, I again set to work, and discharged them also down the gulph, as I hope you will see in good time.'

My heart bled within me all the while she spoke, and I even felt ten times more than she could have suffered by the gulph. 'My dearest Youwee,' says I, 'why did not you tell me this adventure sooner?'—'It is too soon I fear now!' says she; for she then saw the colour forsake my lips, my eyes grow languid, and myself dropping into her arms. She screamed out, and ran to the chest, where all was empty; but turning every bottle up, and from the remaining drops in each collecting a small quantity of liquor, and putting it by little and little to my lips, and rubbing my wrists and temples, she brought me to myself again; but I continued so extremely sick for some days after, that it was above a week before I could get down with my cart to fetch up my chests.

When I was able to go down, Youwarkee would not venture me alone, but went herself with me. We then found two more of the chests, which we landed; and I had work sufficient for two or three days in getting them all up to the grotto, they were so heavy, and all the way through the wood being up hill.

We had five in hand, and watched several





several days for the sixth, when seeing nothing of it we gave it over for lost: but one day, as I was going for water, Youwarkee would go with me, and urged our carrying the net, that we might drag for some fish; accordingly we did so; and now having taken what we wanted, we went to the rill, and pushing in the head of the boat, (as I usually did, for by that means I could fill the vessel as I stood on board) the first thing that appeared was my sixth chest. Youwarkee spied it first, and cried, pointing thereto, 'O, Peter, what we have long wished for, and almost despaired of, is come at last! let us meet and welcome it.' I was pleased with the gaiety of her fancy. I did as she desired; we got it into the boat, after merrily saluting it, and so returned home. It took us up several day's time in searching, sorting, and disposing our cargo, and drying the chests; for the goods themselves were so far from being wetted or spoiled, that even those in the last chest, which had lain so long in the water, had not taken the least moisture.

Youwarkee was quite alert at the success of her packing, but left me to ring her praises, which I did not fail of doing more than once at unpacking each chest, and could see her eyes glow with delight to see she had so pleased me.

She had been so curious as to examine almost every thing in the ship; and as well of things I had described, and she did know, as of what she did not, brought me something for a sample; but, above all, had not forgot the blue stuff, for the moment she had seen that she destined it to the use of herself and children.

C H A P. XXIII.

THE RELIGION OF THE AUTHOR'S FAMILY.

YOUWARKEE and I having fixed ourselves, by degrees, into a settled rota of action, began to live like Christians, having so great a quantity of most sorts of necessaries about us. But I say we lived like Christians on another account, for you must not think, after what I have said before; that I and my family lived like

heathens: no, I will assure you, they by degrees knew all I knew, and that, with a little artificial improvement, and a well-regulated disposition, I hoped, and did not doubt, would carry them all to Heaven. I would many a time have given all my interest in the ship's cargo for a Bible; and a hundred times grieved that I was not master of a pocket-one, which I might have carried every where about me. I never imagined there was one aboard, and if there were, and Youwarkee should find it, I supposed it would be in Portuguese, which I knew little of; so it would be of small service to me if I had it.

Since I am upon the topic of religion, it may not be amiss, once for all, to give you a small sketch of my religious proceedings after coming into my new dominions. I have already told you that from my first stop at the rock I had prayed constantly morning and evening, but I cannot say I did it always with the same efficacy. However, my imperfect devotions were not without good effect; and I am confident, wherever this course is pursued with a right view, sooner or later the issue will prove the same to others as I found it to myself; I mean, that mercies will be remembered with more gratitude; and evils be more disregarded, and become less burdensome: and surely the person whose case this is, must necessarily enjoy the truest relish of life. As daily prayer was my practice, in answer to it I obtained the greatest blessing and comfort my solitude was capable of receiving; I mean my wife, whose character I need not farther attempt to blazon in any faint colours of my own; after what has been already said; her acts having spoken her virtues beyond all verbal description.

After we were married, as I call it, that is, after we had agreed to become man and wife, I frequently prayed before her, and with her, (for by this time she understood a good deal of my language;) at which, though contrary to my expectation, she did not seem surprized, but readily kneeled by and joined with me. This I liked very well: and upon my asking her one day after prayer, if she understood what I had been doing, (for I had a notion she did not) 'Yes, verily,' says she,

'you have been making petitions to the image of the great Collwar.'—'Pray,' says I, (willing gently to lead her into a just sense of a Supreme Being) 'who is this Collwar? and where does he dwell?'—'He it is,' says she, 'that does all good and evil to us.'—'Right,' says I, 'it is in some measure so; but he cannot of himself do evil, absolutely and properly as his own act.'—'Yes,' says she, 'he can; for he can do all that can be done, and as evil can be done he can do it.' So quick a reply startled me. Thinks I, 'She will run me aground presently; and from being a doctor, as I fancied myself, I shall become but a pupil to my own scholar.' I then asked her where the great Collwar dwelt: she told me, 'In heaven, in a charming place.'—'And can he know what we do?' says I. 'Yes,' replied she, 'his image tells him every thing; and I have prayed to his image, which I have often seen; and it is filled with so much virtue that it is his second self: for there is only one of them in the world who is so good, he gives several virtues to other images of himself, which are brought to him, and put into his arms to breathe upon; and the only thing I have ever regretted since I knew you is, that I have not one of them here to comfort and bless us and our children.'

Though I was sorry for the oddity of her conceptions, I was almost glad to find her so ignorant, and pleased myself with thinking that as she had already a confused notion of a Supreme Power, I should soon have the satisfaction of bringing her to a more rational knowledge of him.

'Pray, Youwee,' says I, 'what is your God made of?'—'Why of clay,' says she, 'finely painted, and looks so terrible he would make you tremble to behold him.'—'Do you think,' says I, 'that is the true Collwar's real shape, if you could see himself?' She told me, 'Yes; for that some of his best servants had seen him, and took the representation from himself.' And pray, do you think he loves his best servants, as you call them, and is kind to them?'—'You need not doubt it,' says she. 'Why, then,' replied I, 'how came

he to look so terrible upon them when they saw him, as you say they did? for I can see no reason how terrible soever he looks to others, why he should shew himself so to those he loves. I should rather think, as you say he is kind to them, that he should have two images, a placid one for his good, and a terrible one for his bad servants; or else, who by seeing him can tell whether he is pleased or angry? for even you yourself, Youwee, when any thing pleases you, have a different look from that you have when you are angry; and little Pedro can tell whether he does well or ill by your countenance: whereas, if you made no distinction, but looked with the same face on all his actions, he would as readily think he did well as ill in committing a bad action.' Youwarkee could not tell what to say to this, the fact seeming against her.

I then asked her, if she thought the image itself could hear her petitions. She replied, 'Yes.'—'And can he,' says I, 'return you an answer?' She told me, he only did that to his best servants. 'Did you ever hear him do it?' says I. 'For unless he can speak too, I should much suspect his hearing; and you being one of his best servants, seeing you love him, and pray heartily to him, why should you not hear him as soon as others?'

—'No,' says she, 'there are a great number of glumms on purpose to serve him, pray for us to him, and receive his answers.'—'But to what purpose then,' says I, 'is your praying to him if their prayers will serve your turn?'—'O,' says she, 'the image hears them sooner than us, and sends the petitions up to the great Collwar, and lets him know who makes them, and desires him to let them have what they want.'—'But suppose,' says I, for argument sake, 'that you could see the great Collwar, or know where he was, and should pray to himself, without going about to his image first, do you think he could not hear you?'—'I cannot tell that,' says she. 'But how then,' says I, 'can he tell what (if it could speak) his image says, which is as far from him as you are?'

'And, pray, do you think he can hear

‘an image which he did not make, which could not make itself, and which can neither hear, nor see, nor speak, better than he can hear a glumm whom he did make, and who made that image, and who himself can hear, and see, and speak to him?’ She paused here a good while. At last, says she, ‘Why, truly, I cannot think but he might as well, or better, hear me than the image.’—‘Why, then,’ said I, ‘don’t you make your petitions to himself, and not to the image? It is for the reason I have given you, my dear Youwarkee, that I pray to him, and not to his image, or any representation of him upon earth; and, consequently, am more sure of being heard and answered.’—‘Indeed,’ says she, ‘I never thought of that before, for our ragans always charged me to pray to the image, or to let them know what I wanted, and they would pray to him for me; and they have had many a roppin of me for so doing, and sometimes two or three, when they told me I should have what I wanted: but you have convinced me it is better to pray to himself, and I shall always do it hereafter.’

Having conducted my scholar thus far, I left off, thinking I had now laid a solid basis, that I need be in no fear for my superstructure; and as the slower you build, the firmer it settles, I thought fit to let this first work settle into a firm principle before I raised any farther doctrine upon it, which, as occasion offered, I determined to pursue. I propagated no theological notions in my children till they were capable of conceiving the truth of them from principles of reason; but only inculcated on them justice, truth, and love to myself, their mother, and each other. Having brought my wife firmly to believe in a Supreme Being, (let her call him what she would) who could hear our prayers, see our actions, and answer our petitions as he sees fit, and to an assurance that his love to us is so great that he will do what is most beneficial for us, though it should not always prove what we think so; the great truths concerning his dispensations in our creation and redemption, and our duty towards him, followed

of course, as direct consequences, of such his love and knowledge of us, and she easily came into them. Accordingly, I opened the doctrine of the creation to her as well as I could. I am sorry to say my explication of this great point was not so just, so particular, and clear, as it might have been if I had had a Bible, any more than was the succeeding history of our redemption; however, in general, I explained both so effectually, that though it required time to ground her in the full practical faith of it, yet the opinion she had of me, and my fidelity to her, with the reasons I was able to urge for what I taught her, persuaded her I was in the right, and disposed her to hearken to what I delivered; and then her own zealous application, with God’s grace, soon brought her to a firm belief in it, and a suitable temper and conduct with respect to God and man.

After I had begun with my children, I frequently referred their farther instruction to their mother, for I have always experienced that a superficial knowledge, with a desire of becoming a teacher, is, in some measure, equivalent to better knowledge; for it not only excites every principle one has to the utmost, but makes matters more clear and conspicuous even to one’s self.

By these means, and the Divine blessing thereon, in a few years, I may fairly say, I had a little Christian church in my own house, and in a flourishing way too, without a Schismatick or Heretick amongst us.

CHAP. XXIV.

THE AUTHOR’S ACCOUNT OF HIS CHILDREN — THEIR NAMES — THEY ARE EXERCISED IN FLYING — HIS BOAT CRAZY — YOUWARKEE INTENDS A VISIT TO HER FATHER, BUT FIRST TAKES ANOTHER FLIGHT TO THE SHIP — SENDS A BOAT AND CHESTS THROUGH THE GULPH — CLOATHS HER CHILDREN — IS WITH CHILD AGAIN, SO HER VISIT IS PUT OFF — AN INVENTION OF THE LAST FREIGHT OF GOODS — THE AUTHOR’S METHOD OF TREATING HIS CHILDREN —

DREN—YOUWARKEE, HER SON TOMMY, WITH HER DAUGHTERS PATTY AND HALLYCARNIE, SET OUT TO HER FATHER'S.

I Had now lived here almost fourteen years; and besides the three sons before-mentioned, had three girls and one boy. Pedro, my eldest, had the graundee, but too small to be useful; my second son Tommy had it compleat; so had my three daughters; but Jemmy and David, the youngest sons, none at all. My eldest daughter I named Patty, because I always called my first wife so; I say my first wife, though I had no other knowledge of her death than my dream; but am from that as verily persuaded if ever I reach England I shall find it so, as if I had heard it from her aunt's own mouth. My second daughter my wife desired might be called by her sister's name Hallycarnie; and my youngest I named Sarab, after my mother. I put you to the trouble of writing down the names, for as I shall hereafter have frequent occasion to mention the children severally, it will be pleasanter for myself and you to call them by their several names of distinction, than to call them my second son, or my eldest daughter, and so-forth.

My wife now took great delight in exercising Tommy and Patty (who were big enough to be trusted) in flight, and would often skim round the whole island with them before I could walk half through the wood. And she would teach them also to swim or sail; I know not which to call it, for sometimes you should see them dart out of the air as if they would fall on their faces into the lake, when coming near the surface they would stretch their legs in an horizontal posture, and in an instant turn on their backs, and then you could see nothing from the bank, to all appearance, but a boat sailing along, the graundee rising at their head, feet, and sides, so like the sides and ends of a boat, that you could not discern the face or any part of the body. I own I often envied them this exercise, which they seemed to perform with more ease than I could only shake my leg, or stir an arm.

Though we had perpetually Swan-geans about us, and the voices as I

used to call them, I could never once prevail on my wife to shew herself, or to claim any acquaintance with her country-folks. And what is very remarkable in my children is, that my three daughters and Tommy, who had the full graundee, had exactly their mother's sight, Jemmy and David had just my sight, and Pedro's sight was between both, though he was never much affected with any light; but I was obliged to make spectacles for Tommy and all my daughters when they came to go abroad.

I had in this time twice enlarged my dwelling, which the increase of my family had rendered necessary. The last alteration I was enabled to do in a much better manner, and with more ease, than the first; for by the return of my flota, I had gotten a large collection of useful tools; several of iron, where the handles or wood-work preponderated the iron; but such as were all, or greatest part of that metal had got either to the rock, or were so fast fixed to the head of the ship, that it was difficult to remove them; so that my wife could get comparatively few of this latter sort, though some she did. It was well, truly, I had these instruments, which greatly facilitated my labours, for I was forced to work harder now than ever, in making provision for us all; and my sons Pedro and Tommy commonly assisted. I had also had another importation of goods through the gulph, which still added to my convenience. But my boat made me shudder every time I went into her; she had leaked again and again, and I had patched her till I could scarce see a bit of the old wood. She was of unspeakable use to me, and yet I could not venture myself in her, but with the utmost apprehension and trembling. I had been intending a good while, now I had such helps to build a new one, but had been diverted by one avocation or other.

About this time Youwarkee, who was now upwards of thirty-two years of age, the fondest mother living, and very proud of her children, had formed a project of taking a flight to Arndrumstake, a town in the kingdom of Doorpt Swangeanti, as I called it, where her father, if living, was a colamb under Georigetti, the prince of that country. She imparted her desire

to me, asking my leave; and she told me, if I pleased, she would take Patty and Tommy along with her. I did not much dislike the proposal, because of the great inclination I had for a long time to a knowledge of, and familiarity with, her countrymen and relations; and now I had so many of her children with me, I could not think she would ever be prevailed on, but by force, to quit me and her offspring, and be contented to lose six for the sake of having two with her; especially as she had shewed no more love for them than the rest: so I made no hesitation, but told her she should go.

I expected continually I should hear of her departure; but she saying no more of it, I thought she had dropped her design, and I did not chuse to mention it. But one day as we were at dinner, looking mighty seriously, she said, 'My dear, I have considered of the journey you have consented I should take, but in order thereto it is necessary that I prepare several things for the children, especially those who have no graundee, and I am resolved to finish them before I go, that we may appear with decency, both here and at Arndrumn-stake; for I am sure my father, whose temper I am perfectly acquainted with, will, upon sight of me and my little ones, be so overjoyed, that he will forgive my absence and marriage, provided he sees reason to believe I have not matched unworthily, unbecoming my birth; and after keeping me and the children with him, it may be two or three months, will accompany me home again himself with a great retinue of servants and relations; or, at least, if he is either dead or unable for flight, my other relations will come or send a convoy to take care of me and the children: and, my dear, as I shall give them all the encomiums I can of you, and of my situation with you, while I am among them, I would have them a little taken with the elegance of our domestick condition when they come hither, that they may think me happy in you and my children; for I would not only put my family into a condition to appear before them, but to surprize the old gentleman and his company, who never in their lives saw any part of

the mankind with another covering than the graundee.' When she had done, I expressed my approbation of her whole system, as altogether prudent; and she proceeded immediately to put it in execution. To work she went, opened every chest, and examined their contents. But while she was upon the hunt, and selecting such things as she thought fit for her purpose, she recollected several articles she had observed in the ship, which she judged far more for her turn than any she had at home. Hereupon she prayed me to let her take another trip to the vessel, and to carry Tommy with her.

After so many trials, and such happy experience of her wise and fortunate conduct, I consented to her flight, and away went she and her son. Upon their return, which was in a few days, she told me what they had been doing, and said, as she so often heard me complain of the age of my boat, and fear to sail in her, she had fitted me out a little ship, and hoped it would in due time arrive safely. As she passed quickly on to other things, I never once thought of asking her what she meant by the little ship she spoke of; but must own, that, like a foolishly fond parent, I was more intent on her telling me how Tommy had found a hoard of playthings, which he had packed up for his own use.

As to this last particular, I learned by the sequel of the story, when the spark, proud of his acquisition, came to me, that he had been peeping about in the cabin whilst his mother was packing the chests, and seeing a small brass knob in the wainscot, took it for a plaything, and pulling to get it out, opened a little door of a cupboard, where he had found some very pretty toys, that he positively claimed for himself; among which were a small plain gold ring, and a very fine one set with diamonds, which he shewed me upon two of his fingers. I wondered how the child, who had never before seen such things, or the use of them, should happen to apply these so properly; but he told me in playing with this, meaning the diamond ring about his fingers, it slipped over his middle finger joint, and he could not get it off again, so he put the other upon another finger to keep it company.

We watched daily, as usual on such occasions,

occasions, for the arrival of our fleet. It was surprizing that none of the chests which Youwarkee shot down the gulph were ever half so long in their passage as I was myself, but some came in a week, some in a few days more, and even some in less; which I attributed to their following directly the course of the water, shooting from shelf to shelf as the tide sat; and I believe my keeping the boat I sailed in so strictly and constantly in the middle of the stream, was the reason of my being detained there so long. In less than a fortnight every thing came safe but one chest, which, as we never heard of it, I suppose was either sunk or bulged.

Being one day upon shore, watching to see if any thing more was come through the cavern, I spied at a distance somewhat looking very black and very long, and by the colour and shape thereof I took it for a young whale. Having observed it some time making very little way, I took my old boat and followed it; but was afraid to go near it, lest a stroke with it's tail (which I then fancied I saw move) might endanger my boat and myself too; but creeping nearer and nearer, and seeing it did not stir, I believed it to be dead; whereupon, taking courage, I drew so close, that at length I plainly perceived it was the ship's second boat turned upside-down. It is not easy to express the joy I felt on this discovery. It was the very thing I was now, as I have said, in the greatest want of. I presently laid hold of it and brought it ashore; and it was no small pleasure to find, on examining, that though it had lain so long dry, it was yet quite sound, and all it's chinks filled up in it's passage; and it proved to me afterwards the most beneficial thing I could have had from the ship.

I got all my goods home from the lake to my grotto, by means of the cart, as usual. My wife and daughters waited with impatience for me to unpack, that they might take possession of such things as would be needful for rigging out the family against the supposed reception of the old glumm, and had set all the chests in the order they desired they might be opened in. But Tommy running to me, with a 'Pray, daddy, open my chest first! pray, give me my play-things first!' it was, to satisfy him, concluded

in favour of his demand. So, he pointing to the chest which he regarded as his property, I opened it whilst his eyes were ready to pierce through it, till I came to his treasure. 'There, there they are, daddy!' says he, as soon as I had uncovered them. And indeed, when I saw them I could not but much commend the child for his fancy; for the first things that appeared were a silver punch or wine-cann and a ladle, then a gold watch, a pair of scissars, a small silver-chasing-dish and lamp, a large case of mathematical instruments, a flagellet, a terrella, or globular load-stone, a small globe, a dozen of large silver spoons, and a small case of knives and forks and spoons; in short, there was, I believe, the greatest part of the Portuguese captain's valuable effects.

These Tommy claiming as his own proper chattels, I could not help interposing somewhat of my authority in the affair. 'Hold, hold, son!' says I, 'these things are all mine; but as I have several of you who will all be equally pleased with them, though, as the first finder, you may be entitled to the best share, you are not to grasp the whole, you must all have something like an equality; and as to some things which may be equally useful to us all, they must be set up to be used upon occasion, and are to be considered as mine and your mother's property.' I thereupon gave each of them a large silver spoon, and with a fork I scratched the initials of their names respectively on them, and divided several of the trifles amongst them equally. 'And now, Tommy,' says I, 'you for your pains shall have this more than the rest,' offering him the flagellet. Tommy looked very gloomy; and though he durst not find fault, his dissatisfaction was very visible by coolly taking it, tossing it down, and walking gravely off. 'I thought,' says I, 'Tommy, I had made a good choice for you; but, as I find you despise it—here Pedro, do you take that pretty thing, since your brother slight's it.' Tommy replied, (speaking but half out, and a little surly, more than I ever observed before) 'Let him take it if he will, I can get bits of sticks enough in the wood.'

My method had always been to avoid either beating or scolding at my children,

dren, for preferring their own opinion to mine; but I ever let things turn about so, that from their own reason they should perceive they had erred in opposing my sentiments; by which means they grew so habituated to submit to my advice and direction, that for the most part my will was no sooner known to them than it became their own choice; but then I never willed according to fancy only, but with judgment, to the best of my skill.

Tommy, therefore, (as I said before) having shewn a disapprobation of my doings; to convince him of his mistake, I took the flagellet from Pedro, 'And now, Pedro,' says I, 'let me teach you how to manage this piece of wood, as Tommy calls it, and then let me see if in all the grove he can cut such another.' On this I clapped it to my mouth, and immediately played several country-dances and horn-pipes on it; for though my mother had scarce taught me to read, I had learnt musick and dancing, being, as she called them, gentleman-like accomplishments. My wife and children, especially Tommy, all stared as if they were wild, first on me, then on one another, whilst I played a country-dance; but I had no sooner struck up an hornpipe, than their feet, arms, and heads, had so many twitchings and convulsive motions, that not one quiet limb was to be seen amongst them; till having exercised their members as long as I saw fit, I almost laid them all to sleep with Chevy Chase, and so gave over.

They no sooner found themselves free from this enchantment, than the children all hustled round me in a cluster, all speaking together, and reaching out their little hands to the instrument. I gave it Pedro. 'There,' says I to him, 'take this slighted favour as no such contemptible present.'

Poor Tommy, who had all this while looked very simple, burst into a flood of tears at my last words, as if his heart would have broke; and running to me, fell on his knees, and begged my pardon, hoping I would forgive him. I took him up, and kissing him, told him he had very little offended me; for, as he knew, I had more children to give any thing to

which either of the rest despised, it was equal to me who had it, so it was thankfully received. I found that did not satisfy; still in tears, he said, might he not have the stick again, as I gave it to him first. 'Tommy,' says I, 'you know I gave it to you first; but you disapproving my kindness, I have now given it Pedro, who, should I against his will take it from him, would have that reason to complain which you have not, who parted with it by your own consent; and therefore, Tommy, as I am determined to acquaint you as near as I can with the strict rules of justice, there must no more be said to me of this matter.' Such as this was my constant practice amongst them; and they having always found me inflexible from this rule, we seldom had any long debates.

Though I say the affair ended so with regard to what I had to do in it, yet it ended not so with Tommy; for though he knew he had no hopes of moving me, he set all his engines at work to recover his stick (as he called it) by his mother's and sister's interest. These solicited Pedro very strongly to gratify him. At length Pedro (he being a boy of a most humane disposition) granted their desire, if I would give leave; and I having signified, that the cause being now out of my hands, he might do as he pleased, he generously yielded it. And indeed he could not have bestowed it more properly; for Tommy had the best ear for musick I ever knew; and in less than a twelve-month could far outdo me, his instructor, in softness and easiness of finger; and was also master of every tune I knew, which were neither inconsiderable in number, nor of the lowest rate.

Youwarkee, with her daughters, sat close to work, and had but just completed her whole design for the family cloathing when she told me she found herself with child again. As that circumstance ill-suited a journey, she deferred her flight for about fifteen months; in which time she was brought to bed, and weaned the infant, which was a boy, whom I named Richard, after my good master at the academy. The little knave thrived amain, and was left to my farther nursing during

it's mammy's absence; who, still firm to her resolution, after she had equipped herself and companions with whatever was necessary to their travelling, and locked up all the apparel she had made till her return, because she would have it appear new when her father came, set out with her son Tommy and my two daughters Patty and Hallicarnie; the last of which by this time being big enough also to be trusted with her mother.

CHAP. XXV.

YOUWARKEE'S ACCOUNT OF THE STAGES TO ARNDRUMSTAKE—THE AUTHOR UNEASY AT HER FLIGHT—HIS EMPLOYMENT IN HER ABSENCE, AND PREPARATIONS FOR RECEIVING HER FATHER—HOW HE SPENT THE EVENINGS WITH THE CHILDREN.

MY wife was now upon her journey to her father's; but where that was, or how far off, it was impossible for me to conceive by her description of the way; for she distinguished it not by miles or leagues, but by swangteans, and names of rocks, seas and mountains, which I could neither comprehend the distance of from each other, nor from Graundevolet where I was. I understood by her, indeed, there was a great sea to be passed, which would take her up almost a day and night, having the children with her, before she reached the next arkoe; though she could do it herself she said, and strain hard, in a summer's night; but if the children should flag by the way, as there was no resting-place between us and Battringdrigg, the next arkoe, it might be dangerous to them; so she would take the above time for their sakes. After this I found by what she said there was a narrow sea to pass, and a prodigious mountain, before she reached her own country; and that her father's was but a little beyond that mountain. This was all I could know in general about it. At their departure she and the children had taken each a small provision for their flight, which hung about their necks in a sort of purse.

I cannot say, notwithstanding this journey was taken with my concurrence and consent, that I was perfectly easy when they were gone; for my affection for them all would work up imaginary fears too potent for my reason to dispel, and which at first sat with no easy pressure upon my mind. This my pretty babies at home perceiving, used all the little winning arts they could to divert and keep up my spirits; and from day to day, by taking them abroad with me, and playing with and amusing them at home, I grew more and more persuaded that all would go right with the absent, and that in due time I should see them return again.

But as the winter set in, I went little abroad, and then we employed ourselves within doors in preparing several things which might not only be useful and ornamental, if the old glumm should come to see us, but might also divert us, and make the time pass less tediously. The first thing I went upon was a table, which, as my family consisted of so many, I intended to make big enough for us all. With that view I broke up a couple of chests; and, taking the two sides of one of them, I nailed them edge to edge by strong thick pieces underneath at each end and in the middle; then I took two chest-lids with their hinges, nailing one to each side of my middle piece, which made two good flaps; after this, with my tools, of which I had now a chest-full, I chopped out of new stuff and planed four strong legs quite square, and nailed them strongly to each corner of my middle board; I then nailed pieces from one leg to the other, and nailed the bed likewise to them; then I fastened a border quite round within six inches from the bottom, from foot to foot, which held all fast together. When all this was done, still my table was imperfect, I could not put up the flaps, having no proper support. To remedy this I sawed out a broad slip from a chest-side, and boring a large hole through the center, I spiked it up to the under-side of the table's bed, with a spindle I contrived just loose enough to play round the head of the spike, filing down that part of the spindle which passed through the bed of the table, and rivetting it close; so that

whca

when my flaps were set up, I pulled the slip crosswise of the table, and when the flaps were down, the slip turned under the top of the table lengthwise: next, under each flap, I nailed a small slip lengthwise of the flaps, to raise them on a level, when up, with the top of the table. When I had thus compleated the several parts of this needful utensil, I spent some time and pains, by scraping and rubbing, to render it all as elegant as could be; and the success so well answered my wish, that I was not a little proud of the performance: and what rendered my work thereon a still more agreeable task, was my pretty infants company, who stood by, expressing their wonder and approbation at every stroke.

Now I had gotten a table, I wanted chairs to it; for as yet we had only sat round the room upon chests, which formed a bench of the whole circumference, they stood so thick. There was no moving of them without a monstrous trouble every time I might have occasion to set out my table; besides, if I could have dragged them backwards and forwards, they were too low to be commodious for seats; so I resolved to make some chairs and stools also, that might be manageable. I will not trouble you with the steps I took in the formation of these; only, in general, you must know, that some more chests I broke up to that purpose served me for timber, out of which I framed six sizeable handsome chairs, and a competent number of stools.

But now that I was turned joiner I had another convenience to provide for. I had nothing wherein to inclose things, and preserve them from dust, except the chests; and they were quite unfit for holding liquors, victuals, and such-like matters, in open shells, as most of my vessels were. Wherefore, having several boards now remaining of the boxes I had broken up for chairs and stools, I bethought me of supplying this great deficiency; so of these spare boards, in a workmanlike way, (for by this time I was become a tolerable mechanick) I composed a very tight closet, holding half a dozen broad shelves, shut up by a good pair of doors, with a lock and key to fasten them.

These jobbs took me up almost three months, and I thought I had not employed them idly, but for the credit and service of my family. I was now again at leisure for farther projects. I was uncertain as to my wife's return, how soon she might be with me, or how much longer she might stay; but I was sure I could do nothing in the mean while more grateful than increasing, by all means in my power, the accommodations of my house; for the more polite as well as convenient reception of her father, or any else who might accompany her home in the way of a retinue, as she talked of. I saw plainly I had not room for lodging them, and that was a circumstance of main importance to be provided for. Hereupon I thought of adding a long apartment to one of my outer-rooms, to range against the side of the rock; but reflecting that such a thing would be quite useless, unless I could finish it in time, so as to be compleat when my guests came, and not knowing how soon that might be, I resolved to quit this design; and I fell upon another which might do as well, and required much less labour and fewer days to perfect.

I remembered, that amongst those things my wife had packed up on board the ship, and which came home through the gulph, there were two of the largest sails, and a couple of smaller size. These I carried to the wood, and tried them in several places to see where they might be disposed to most advantage in the nature of a tent; and having found a convenient spot to my purpose, I cut divers poles for supporters, and making straining-lines of my mat-weed, I pitched a noble one, sufficient to cover or entertain a numerous company, and so tight every where as to keep out the weather. The front of this new apartment I hung with blue cloth, which had a very genteel effect. I had almost forgotten to tell you that I contrived (by hanging one of the smaller sails across, just in the middle, which I could let down or raise up at pleasure) to divide the tent occasionally into two distinct rooms.

When I had proceeded thus far, there were still wanting seats for this additional building, as I may call it; and though I could spare some chests to sit on, I found they would not half do.

For a supplement, then, I took my axe, and felled a couple of great trees, one from each side of the tent, sawed off the tops, and cut each of the trunks in two about the middle: these huge cylinders I rolled into the tent with a good deal of toil and difficulty; two of them I thrust into the inner division, and left two in the outer; I placed them as benches on both sides; then, with infinite pains, I shaved the upper face of each smooth and flat, and pared off all the little knots and roughnesses of the front; so that they were fitted to sit on, and their own weight fixed them in the place where I intended them to be. At the upper-end of the farther chamber I set three chests lengthwise for seats, or any other use I might see fit to put them to.

During these operations we were all hard at it, and no hand idle but Dicky in arms, and Sally, whom he kept in full employ; but Pedro, being a sturdy lad, could drive a nail, and lift or carry the things I wanted; and Jemmy and David, though so young, could pick up the chips, hold a nail, or the lamp, or be some way or other useful: for I always preached to them the necessity of earning their bread before they eat it, and not think to live on mine and their brother's labour.

The nights being pretty long, after work was over, and Sarah had fed her brother and laid him in his hammock, we used to sit all down to enjoy ourselves at a good meal; for we were never regular at that till night; and then, after supper, my wife being absent, one or other of the young ones would begin with something they had before heard me speak of, by saying, 'Daddy, how 'did you use to do this or that in 'England?' Then all ears were immediately open to catch my answer, which certainly brought on something else done either there or elsewhere; and by their little questions and my answers they would sometimes draw me into a story of three hours long, till, perhaps, two out of three of my audience were falling asleep, and then we all went to bed.

I verily believe my children would, almost any of them, from the frequent repetition of these stories, have given a sufficient account of England to have gained a belief from almost any Englishman of their being natives there.

I frequently observed, that when we had begun upon Cornwall, and traversed the mines, the sea-coast, or talked of the fine gentlemen's seats, and such things, one would start up, and, if the discourse flagged ever so little, would cry, 'Aye, but daddy, 'what did you do when the crocodile 'came after you out of the water?' And another, before that subject was half-ended, (and I was forced to enter on every one they started) would be impatient for the story of the lion; and I always took notice that the part each had made the most reflections on, was always most acceptable to the same person: but poor Sally would never let the conversation drop without some account of the muletto, it was such a pretty, gentle creature, she said.

CHAP. XXVI.

THE AUTHOR'S CONCERN AT YOU-
WARKEE'S STAY—REFLECTIONS
ON HIS CONDITION—HEARS A
VOICE CALL HIM—YOUWARKEE'S
BROTHER QUANGROLLART VI-
SITS HIM WITH A COMPANION—
HE TREATS THEM AT THE CROT-
TO—THE BROTHER DISCOVERS
HIMSELF BY ACCIDENT—WIL-
KINS PRODUCES HIS CHILDREN
TO HIM.

MY head, as well as my hands, had now been employed for five months in adjusting all things in the most suitable manner for the reception of Youwarkee and her friends; but nobody coming, and light days getting forward apace, I began to grow very uneasy, and had formed divers imaginations of what might occasion her stay. Thought I, 'I am afraid all 'the pains I have been taking will 'be to no purpose; for either her fa- 'ther will not let her return, or she 'has of herself come to such a reso- 'lution: for she knows I cannot fol- 'low her, and had rather, perhaps, 'live and enjoy the three children she 'has with her, amidst a number of her 'friends and acquaintance, than spend 'the remainder of her days with me 'and all our offspring in this solitude.'—But then I reflected she chose it herself, or at least declared herself perfectly satisfied, yea, delighted therewith!—And here are her children with me, the 'major

major part of them: yet, what can I think? since her return is put off till the swangeans are over at this arkoe, she will never bring her relations now in this unseasonable time for flight; therefore I must think, if she intended to return at all, it would have been before now: and as the case is not so, my fear of losing her entirely prevails greatly.—O!’ says I, ‘that we had but a post here as we have in England; there we can communicate our thoughts at a distance to each other without any trouble, and for little charge! What a country is this to live in! and what an improper creature am I to live in it! Had I but the graundee, I would have found her out by this time, be she where she would; but, whilst every one about me can pass, repass, and act as they please, I am fixed here like one of my trees, bound to the spot, or, upon removal, to die in the attempt. Alas! why did I beget children here, but to make them as wretched and inconsolable as myself! Some of them are so formed, indeed, as to shift for themselves; but they owe it to their mother, not to me. What! am I a father of children who will be bound one day to curse me!—Severe reflection!—Yet I never thought of this till now. But am I the only father in such a case? No, surely! for am not I as much bound to curse my father as my children are to curse me? He might have left me happy if he would; I would them if I could. Again, are there not others who, by improper junction with persons diseased in body, or vicious in mind, have entailed greater misery upon their posterity than I have on mine? My children are all healthy, strong, and sound, both in body and mind; and is not that the greatest blessing that can be bestowed on our beings? But they are imprisoned in this arkoe!—What then!—With industry, here is no want; and as they increase they may settle in communities, and be helpful to each other. I have lived well here nigh sixteen years, and it was God’s pleasure I should be here; and can I think I was placed here with an injunction contrary to the great command, “*Increase and multiply?*” If that were so, can it be possible I should have re-

ceived the only means of propagating, as it were from Heaven itself? No, it was certainly as much my Maker’s will that I should have posterity here as that I myself should at first be brought hither. This is a large and plentiful spot, and capable of great improvement, when there shall be hands sufficient. How many petty states are less than these my dominions! I have here a compass of near twenty miles round, and how many thousands grow voluntarily grey in a far less circuit!’

I had hardly finished my reflections (for I was sitting by myself in my tent upon one of the trees I had turned into benches) when I heard a musical voice call—‘Peter! Peter!’ I started. ‘What’s this?’ says I. ‘It is not Youwarkee’s voice! What can this mean!’ Listening, I heard it again, but at so great a distance I could but just perceive the sound. ‘Be it where it will,’ says I, ‘I will face it!’ Thus speaking, I went out of the tent, and hearkened very attentively, but could hear nothing. I then ran for my gun, and walked through the wood as fast as I could to the plain; but still I neither saw nor heard any thing. I was then in hopes of seeing somebody on the lake, but no one appeared; for I was fully determined to make myself known to whomsoever I should meet; and, if possible, to gain some intelligence of my wife. But after so much fruitless pains, my hopes being at an end, I was returning, when I heard ‘Peter! Peter!’ again, at a great distance, the sound coming from a different quarter than at first. Upon this I stopped, and heard it repeated; and it was as if the speaker approached nearer and nearer. Hereupon I stepped out of the wood, (for I had just re-entered it upon my return home) when I saw two persons upon the swangean just over my head. I cried out, ‘Who’s that?’ And they immediately called again, ‘Peter! Peter!’—‘Ors clam gee,’ says I; that is, ‘Here am I.’ On this they directly took a small sweep round, (for they had overshot me before they heard me) and alighted just by me: when I perceived them to be my wife’s countrymen, being dressed like her, with only broader chaplets about their heads, as she had told me the glumms all wore. After a short

obedience, they asked me if I was the glumm Peter, barkatt to Youwarkee. I answered, I was. They then told me they came with a message from Pendlehamby, colamb of Arndrumnstake, my goppa, and from Youwarkee, his daughter. I was vastly rejoiced to see them, and to hear only the name of my wife. But though I longed to know their message, I trembled to think of their mentioning it, as one of them was just going to do, for fear of hearing some things very displeasing; so I begged them to go through the wood with me to the grotto, where we should have more leisure and convenience for talk, and where, at the same time, they might take some refreshment. But though I had thus put off their message, I could not forbear enquiring by the way after the health of my goppo and my wife and children, how they got to Arndrumnstake, and how they found their relations and friends. They told me all were well; and that Youwarkee, as she did on me, desired I would think on her with true affection. I found this was the phrase of the country. As for the rest, I hoped it would turn out well at last, though I dreaded to hear it.

Being arrived at the grotto, I desired my guests to sit down, and take such refreshment as I could prepare them. When they were seated, I went to work in order to provide them a repast. Seeing my fire piled up very high, and burning fierce, and the children about it, they wondered where they were got, and who they had come to, and turned their faces from it; but I setting some chairs, so that the light might not strike on their eyes, they liked the warmth well enough; though, I remarked, the light did not affect them so much as it had done Youwarkee.

Whilst I was cooking, the poor children got all up in a corner, and stared at the strangers, not being able to conceive where they came from; and by degrees crept all backwards into the bed-chamber, and hid themselves; for they had never before seen any body but my own family.

I observed that one of my guests paid more than ordinary respect to the other; and though their graundees made no distinction between them, yet

there was something, I thought, much more noble in the address and behaviour of the latter; and taking notice that he was also the chief spokesman, I judged it proper to pay my respects to him in a somewhat more distinguishing manner, though so as not to offend the other if I should happen to be mistaken.

I first presented a cann of my Madeira, and took care, as if by accident, to give it to Mr. Uppermost, as I thought him, who drank half of it, and would have given the remainder to his companion; but I begged him to drink it all up, and his friend should be served with some presently: he did so, and thanked me by lifting his hand to his chin. I then gave the other a cann of the same liquor, which he drank, and returned thanks as his companion had before. I then took a cann myself, and telling them I begged leave to use the ceremony of my own country to them, I drank, wishing their own health, and that of all relations at Arndrumnstake. He that I took for the superior fell a laughing heartily: 'Ha, ha, ha!' says he, 'this is the very way my sister does every day at Arndrumnstake.'—'Your sister, Sir!' says I. 'Pray, has she ever been in Europe or in England?'—'Well!' says he, 'I have plainly discovered myself, which I did not intend to do yet; but, truly, brother Peter, I mean none other than your own wife Youwarkee.'

The moment I knew who he was, I rose up, and taking him by the right-hand, lifted it to my lips and kissed it. He likewise immediately stood up, and we embraced each other with great tenderness. I then begged him, as I had so worthy and near a relation of my wife's with me, that he would not delay the happiness I hoped for, in a narrative from his mouth, how it fared with my father, wife, and children, and all their kinsfolks and friends, whom I had so often heard mentioned by my dearest Youwarkee, and so earnestly desired to see.

My brother Quangrollart (for that he told me was his name) was preparing to gratify my impatience; but seeing I had set the entertainment on the table, which consisted chiefly of bread, several sorts of pickles and preserves, with some cold salted fish, he said that eating would but interrupt the thread

of his discourse; and therefore, with my leave, he would defer the relating of what I desired for a little while; which we all thinking most proper, I desired him and his friend (who might be another brother for aught I knew) to refresh themselves with the poor modicum I was able to provide them.

Whilst my brother Quangrollart was looking upon and handling his plate, being what he had never before seen, his friend had got the handle of one of the knives in his mouth, biting it with all his force; but finding he could make nothing of that end, he tried the other, and got champing the blade. Perceiving what he was at, though I could not help laughing, I rose, and begging pardon, took the knife from him; telling him I believed he was not acquainted with the use of that instrument, which was one of my country implements; and that the design of it, which was called a knife, and of that other, (pointing to it) called a fork, was the one to reduce the food into pieces proper for chewing, and the other to convey it to the mouth without daubing the fingers, which must happen in handling the food itself: and I then shewed him what use I put them to, by helping each of them therewith to somewhat, and by cutting a piece for myself, and putting it to my mouth with the fork.

They both smiled, and looked very well pleased; and then I told them that the plate was the only thing that need be daubed, and when that was taken away, the table remained clean. So, after I had helped each of them for the first time, I desired them to help themselves where they liked best; and, to say the truth, they did so more dextrously than I could have expected.

During our repast, we had frequent sketches of the observations they made in their flight, and of the places where they had rested; and I could plainly see that neither of them had ever been at this arkoe before, by hinting that if they had not taken such a course they had missed me.

I took particular notice which part of my entertainment they eat most of, that I might bring a fresh supply of that when wanted; and I found, that though they eat heartily of my bread and preserves, and tasted almost of every thing else, they never once

touched the fish; which put me upon desiring I might help them to some. At this they looked upon each other, which I readily knew the meaning of, and excused themselves, expressing great satisfaction in what they had already gotten. I took however a piece of fish on my own plate, and eating very heartily thereof, my brother desired me to give him a bit of it; I did so, taking care to cut it as free from bones as I could, and for greater security cautioning him, in case there should be any, to pick them out, and not swallow them. He had no sooner put a piece in his mouth, but, 'Rosig,' says he to his friend, 'this is padfi.' I thought indeed I had puzzled my brother when I gave him the fish, but by what he said of it, he puzzled me; for I knew not what he meant by padfi, my wife having told me they had no fish: or else I should have taken that word for their name of it. However, I cut Rosig a slice; and he agreeing it was padfi, they both eat heartily of it.

While we were at dinner, my brother told me he thought he saw some of my children just now; for his sister had informed him she had five more at home; and he asked me why they did not appear, and eat with us. I excused their coming, as fearing they would only be troublesome; and said, when we had done they should have some victuals. But he would not be put off, and entreated me to admit them. So I called them by their names, and they came, all but Dicky, who was asleep in his hammock. I told them, that the gentleman, pointing to Quangrollart, was their uncle, their mamma's brother, and ordered them to pay their obeisance to him, which they severally did. I then made them salute Rosig. This last would have had them sit down at table; but I positively forbade that; and giving each of them a little of what we had before us, they carried it to the chests, and eat it there.

When we had done, the children helped me to clear the table, and were retiring out of the room; but then I recalled them, and desired their uncle to excuse their stay: for as he had promised me news of their mammy and her family, it would be the height of pleasure to them to hear him. He

seemed

seemed very much pleased with this motion, desiring by all means they might be present while he told his story. Whereupon I ordered them to the chests again, while Quangrollart delivered his narrative.

CH A P. XXVII.

QUANGROLLART'S ACCOUNT OF YOUWARKEE'S JOURNEY, AND RECEPTION AT HER FATHER'S.

HAVING set on the table some brandy and Madeira, and each of us taken one glass of both, I shewed, by the attentiveness of my aspect and posture, how desirous I was he should proceed to what he had promised. Observing this, he went on in the following manner. 'Brother Peter,' says he, 'my sister Youwarkee, as I don't doubt you will be glad to hear of her first, arrived very safe at Arndrumstake, the third day after she left you, and after a very severe flight to the dear little Hallycarnie, who was a full day and a night on her graundee; and at last would not have been able to have reached Battringdrigg but for my sister's assistance, who, taking her sometimes on her back for a short flight, by those little refreshments enabled her to perform it; but from Battringdrigg, after some hours rest, they came with pleasure to the White Mountains, from whence, after a small stay, they arrived at Arndrumstake.

'They alighted at our coovett, but were opposed at their entrance by the guards, to whom they did not chuse to discover themselves, till notice was given to my father; who, upon hearing that some strangers desired admittance to him, sent me to introduce them, if they were proper for his presence, or else give orders for such other reception as was suitable to them.

'When I came to the guard, I found three gawreys and a glummboss, whose appearance and behaviour, I must own, prejudiced me very much in their favour. I then asked from whence they came, and their business with the colamb. Youwarkee told me they came not

'about business of publick concern, relating to the colamb's office, but out of a dutiful regard, as relations, to kiss his knees. "My father," said I, "shall know it immediately; but first, pray inform me of your name?" "Your father!" replied Youwarkee, "are you my brother Quangrollart?" "My name is so," says I, "but I have only one sister, now with my father, and how I can be your brother, I am not able to guess."—"Have you never had another sister?" says she. "Yes," says I, "but she is long since dead; her name was Youwarkee." At my mentioning her name she fell upon my neck in tears, crying, "My dear brother, I am that dead sister Youwarkee, and these with me are some of my children, for I have five more; but pray how does my father and sister?" I started back at this declaration, to view her and the children, fearing it was some gross imposition, not in the least knowing or remembering any thing of her face, after so long an absence; but I desired them to walk in, till I told my father.

'The guard, observing the several passages between us, were amazed to think who it could be had so familiarly embraced me; especially as they plainly saw I only played a passive part in it.

'When I went in, I did not think proper directly to inform my father what had happened; but calling my sister Hallycarnie, I let her into the circumstances of this odd affair, and desired her advice what to do: "For," says I, "surely this must be some impostor; and as my father has scarce subdued his sorrow for my sister's loss, if this gawrey should prove a deceiver, it will only revive his affliction, and may prove at this time extremely dangerous to him: therefore let's consider what had best be done in the matter."

'Hallycarnie, who had attentively weighed all I said, seemed to think it was some cheat, as well as I did; for we could neither of us conceive that any thing but death, or being slit, could have kept Youwarkee so long from the knowledge of her relations; and that neither of them could be the case was plain, if the person attending was Youwarkee. "Besides,"

"brother,"

"brother," says Hallicarnie, "she cannot surely be so much altered in fifteen years, but you must have known her: and yet, now I think, it is possible, you being so much younger, may have forgot her; but whilst we have been talking of her, I have so well recollected her, that I think I could hardly be imposed upon by any deceiver."

"I then desired her to go with me to the strangers, and see if she could make any discovery. She did so, and had no sooner entered the abb, but Youwarkee called out, "My dear sister Hallicarnie!" and she as readily recollecting Youwarkee, they in transport embraced each other; and then your wife presenting to us her three children, it proved the tenderest scene, except the following, I ever saw.

"My father having kept his chamber some time with a fever, and though he was pretty well recovered, having not yet been out of it, we consulted how we might introduce our sister and her children to him, with as little surprize as might be, for fear of a relapse by too great a hurry of his spirits. At length we concluded, I should go tell him that some strangers had arrived, desiring to see him; but, on inquiry, finding their business was too trifling to trouble him upon, I had dispatched them: I was then to say, how like one of them was to my sister Youwarkee; and whilst I was speaking, Hallicarnie was to enter, and keep up the discourse, till we should find a proper opportunity of discovery. I went in, therefore, as had been agreed; and, upon mentioning the name of Youwarkee, my father fetched a deep sigh, and turned away from me in tears. At that instant Hallicarnie came in as by accident; "Sir," says she, "what makes you so sad? are you worse to-day?"—"O!" says he, "I have heard a name that will never be out of my heart, till I am in *hoximo*."—"What, I suppose my sister?"—" 'Tis true," replied he, "the same." Says she, "I fancied so; for I have just seen a stranger as like her as two doors could be, and would have sworn it was she, if that had been possible. I thought,

"my brother had been so imprudent as to mention her to you; and I think he did not do well to rip up an old sore he knew was almost healed, and make it break out afresh."—"Ah! no, child," says my father, "that sore never has, nor can be healed. O Great Image! why can't I by some means or other be ascertained what end she came to?"

"Sir," says my sister, "I think you are much to blame for these exclamations, after so long absence: for, if she be dead, what use are they of? and if she be not, all may be well, and you may still see her again."—"O never, never!" says my father; but could I be sure she was alive, I would take a swangean, and never close my graundee, till I found her, or dropt dead in the search."—"And suppose you could meet with her, Sir," says I, "the very sight would overcome you, and be dangerous."—"No, believe me, boy," says he, "I should then be fully easy and composed; and were she to come in this moment, I should suffer no surprize, but pleasure."—"No surprize, Sir?" says I. "Not if she were alive and well," says he. "Then, Sir," says Hallicarnie, "will you excuse me if I introduce her?" and went out directly without staying for an answer.

"When she was gone, "Quangrol-lart," says my father, sternly, "what is the meaning of yours and your sister's playing thus upon my weakness? It is what I can upon no account forgive. It looks as if you were weary of me, and wanted to break my heart. To what purpose is all this prelude of yours, to introduce to me somebody who, by her likeness to my daughter, may expose me to your scoff and railery? This is a disobedience I never expected from either of you."

"The Great Image attend me!" says I, "Sir, you have much mistaken me; but I will not leave you in doubt, even till Hallicarnie's return, you shall see Youwarkee with her; for all our discourse, I'll assure you, has but been concerted to prepare you for her reception, with three of her children."—"And am I then," says he, in a transport,

"still

"still to be blessed?"—"You are, Sir," says I; "assure yourself you are."

'By this time we heard them coming; but my poor father had not power to go to meet them: and upon Youwarkee's nearer approach, to fall at his knees, his limbs failing him, he sunk, and without speaking a word, fell backwards on a couch, which stood behind him; and being quite motionless, we concluded him to be stone-dead. On this the women became entirely helpless, screaming only, and wringing their hands in extravagant postures. But I, having a little more presence of mind, called for the callentar; who, by holding his nose, pinching his feet, and other applications, in a little time brought him to his senses again.

'You may more easily conceive than I describe, both the confusion we were all in during my father's disorder, and the congratulations upon his recovery; so, as I can give you but a defective account of these, I shall pass them by, and come to our more serious discourse, after my father and your wife had, without speaking a word, wept themselves quite dry on each other's necks.

'My father then looking upon the three children, (who were also crying to see their mammy cry) "And who are these?" says he. "These, Sir," says Youwarkee, "are three of eight of your grand-children."—"And where is your barkatt?" says he. "At home with the rest, Sir," replied she, "who are some of them too small to come so far yet: but Sir," says she, "pray excuse my answering you any more questions, till you are a little recovered from the commotion I perceive my presence has brought upon your spirits; and as rest, the callentar says, will be exceedingly proper, I will retire with my sister till you are better able to bear company." My father was with much difficulty prevailed with to part with her out of his sight; but the callentar pressing it, we were all dismissed, and he laid down to rest.

My brother would have gone on, but I told him, as it grew near time for repose, and he and Rosig must needs be-fatigued with so long a flight, if

they pleased, (as I had already heard the most valuable part of all he could say, in that my father had received my wife and children so kindly, and that he left them all well) we would defer his farther relation till the next day: which they both agreeing to, I laid them in my own bed, myself sleeping in a spare hammock.

CHAP. XXVIII.

A DISCOURSE ON LIGHT—QUANGROLLART EXPLAINS THE WORD CRASHEE—BELIEVES A FOWL IS A FRUIT—GIVES A FARTHER ACCOUNT OF YOUWARKEE'S RECEPTION BY HER FATHER, AND BY THE KING—TOMMY AND HALLY-CARNIE PROVIDED FOR AT COURT—YOUWARKEE AND HER FATHER VISIT THE COLAMBS, AND ARE VISITED—HER RETURN PUT OFF TILL NEXT WINTER, WHEN HER FATHER IS TO COME WITH HER.

THE next day I prepared again of the best of every thing for my new guests. I killed three fowls, and ordered Pedro (who was as good a cook almost as myself) to get them ready for boiling, whilst we took a walk to the lake. Though we went out in the clearest part of the morning, I heard no complaint of the light. I took the liberty to ask my brother, if the light did not offend him; for I told him my wife could not bear so much without spectacles. 'What is that spectacle?' says he. 'Something I made your sister,' says I, 'to prevent the inconvenience of too much light upon her eyes.' He said the light was scarce at all troublesome to him, for he had been in much greater, and was used to it; and that the glumms, who travelled much abroad, could bear more light than the gawreys, who staid much at home: these stirring but little out, unless in large companies, and that of one another, and very rarely admitted glumms amongst them before marriage. For his own part, he said, he had an office at Crashdoorpt, which, though he executed chiefly by a deputy, obliged him to reside there sometimes for a long season together; and that being a more luminous country than Arndrumn-stake,

stake, light was become familiar to him; for it was very observable, that some who had been used to it young, though they might in time overcome it, yet at first it was very uneasy.

I was upon the tenter whilst he spoke, lest, before he had done, a question I had a thousand times thought to have asked my wife, should slip out of my head, as it had so often done before, and was what I had for years desired to be resolved in; viz. what the meaning of the word slit was, when applied to a man. So, on his pausing, I said, that his mention of Crashdoorpt reminded me of enquiring what crashiee meant, when applied to a glumm or gawrey. It would be no hard task, he said, to satisfy me in respect of that, as I already understood the nature of the graundee; whereupon he went on thus—'Slitting is the only punishment we use to incorrigible criminals: our method is, where any one has committed a very heinous offence, or, which is the same thing, has multiplied the acts of offence, he has a long string tied round his neck, in the manner of a cravat; and then two glumms, one at each end, take it in their hands, standing side by side with him; two more stand before him, and two behind him; all which in that manner take slight, so that the string keeps the criminal in the middle of them: thus they conduct him to Crashdoorpt, which lies farther on the other side of Arndrumnstake than this arkoe does on this side of it, and is just such an arkoe as ours, but much bigger within the rocks. When they come to the coovett they alight, where my deputy immediately orders the malefactor to be slit, so that he can never more return to Normmbdsgrutt, or indeed by any means get out of that arkoe, but must end his days there. The method of slitting is thus: the criminal is laid on his back with his graundee open, and after a recapitulation of his crimes and his condemnation, the officer with a sharp stone slits the gume between each of the fluses of the graundee, so that he can never fly more. But what is still worse to new comers, if they are not very young, is, the light of the place, which is so strong, that it is

'some years before they can overcome it, if ever they do.'

This discourse gave me a great pleasure; thereupon I repeated the dialogue that had passed between me and Youwarkee about my being slit, and how we had held an argument a long time, without being able to come at one another's meaning. 'But pray, brother,' says I, 'how comes that light country to agree so well with you?'—'Why,' says he, 'the combat of Crashdoorpt is reckoned one of the most honourable employments in the state; by reason of the hazard of it, and the person accepting it must be young; it was, by my father's interest at court, given to me at nine years of age; my friend Rosig has followed my fortune in it ever since, being much about my age, and has a post under me there: in short, by being obliged to be so much there, and from so tender an age too, I have pretty well enured myself to any light.'

By this time we had got home again to dinner, which Pedro had set out as elegantly as my country could afford, consisting of pickles and preserves, as usual, a dish of hard eggs, and boiled fowls with spinage.

My guests, as I expected, stared at the fowls, but never offered to touch them, or seemed in the least inclined to do so. I was afraid they would be cold, and begged them to let me help them. I put a wing on each of their plates, and a leg on my own; but perceiving they waited to see how I managed it, I stuck in my fork, cut off a slice, dipped it in the salt, and put it in my mouth. Just as I did they did, and appeared very well pleased with the taste. 'I never in my life,' says Rosig, 'saw a crullmott of this shape before;' and laid hold of a leg, (taking it for a stick I had thrust in, as he told me afterwards) intending to pull it out; but finding it grew there, 'Mr. Peter,' says he, 'you have the oddest-shaped crullmotts that ever I saw; pray, what part of the woods do they grow in?'—'Grow in?' says I. 'Ayé,' says he, 'I mean whether your crullmott-trees are like ours or not?'—'Why,' says I, 'these fowls are about my yard and the wood too.'—'What,' says he,

'is it a running plant like a bott?'—
 'No, no,' says I, 'a bird that I keep
 'tame about my house; and these,'
 (shewing him the eggs) 'are the eggs
 'of these birds, and the birds grow
 'from them.'—'Pr'ythee,' says Quan-
 grollast, 'never let's enquire what
 'they are till we have dined; for my
 'brother Peter will give us nothing
 'we need be afraid of.'

It growing into the night by that
 time we rose from table, I set a bowl
 of punch before them, made with my
 treacle and four rams-horn juice,
 which they pulled off plentifully.
 After some-bumpers had gone round,
 I desired my brother to proceed where
 he left off, in the account of my wife's
 reception with her father.

'When my father,' says he, 'had
 'recovered himself by some hours re-
 'pose, the first thing he did was to
 'order my sister Youwarkee to be
 'called; who coming into his pre-
 'sence, he took her from her knees,
 'kissed her, and ordered all to depart
 'but myself and Hallycarnie. Then
 'bidding us sit down, says he to your
 'wife, "Daughter, your appearance,
 "whom I have so long lamented as
 "dead, has given me the truest cor-
 "dial I could have received, and I
 "hope will add both to my health and
 "years. I have heard, you suspect my
 "anger for some part of your past
 "conduct," (for she had hinted so to
 "her sister and me) "which you just-
 "ly enough imagine may be censured;
 "but, my dear life, I am this day,
 "what I did not expect any more to
 "be, a father of a new-born child;
 "and not of one only, but of many;
 "and this day, I say, daughter, shall
 "not be spent in sorrow and excuses,
 "or any thing to interrupt our mu-
 "tual felicity; neither will I ever
 "hereafter permit you to beg my for-
 "giveness, or attempt to palliate any
 "of your proceedings; for know,
 "child, that a benevolence freely be-
 "stowed, is better than twice it's va-
 "lue obtained by petition: I there-
 "fore, as in presence of the Great
 "Image, your brother and sister, at
 "this instant, erase from my mind
 "for ever what thoughts I may have
 "had prejudicial to the love I ever
 "bore you, as I will have you to do
 "all such as may cloud the unreserv-
 "ed complacency you used to appear

'with before me—and now, Quan-
 "grollast," says he, "let the guard
 "be drawn out before my coovett, and
 "let the whole country be entertain-
 "ed for seven days; proclaim li-
 "berty to all persons confined; and
 "let not the least sorrow appear in
 "any face throughout my colambat."

'I retired immediately, and gave
 'the necessary orders for the speedy
 'dispatch of my father's commands;
 'which indeed were performed to the
 'utmost; and nothing for seven days
 'was to be heard through the whole
 'district of Arndrumstake, but joy
 'and the name of Youwarkee.

'My father, so soon as he had dis-
 'patched the above orders, sent for
 'the children before him, whom he
 'kissed and blessed, frequently lifting
 'up his eyes in gratitude to the Great
 'Image, for the unexpected happiness
 'he enjoyed on that occasion; and then
 'he ordered Youwarkee to let him
 'know what had befallen her in her
 'absence, and where she lived, and
 'with whom.

'Youwarkee was setting out with
 'some indirect excuses; but my fa-
 'ther absolutely forbid her, and
 'charged her only to mention plain
 'facts, without flourishes. So she
 'began with her swangean, and the ac-
 'cidental fall she had, your taking her
 'in after it, and saving her life. She
 'told him, your continued kindness
 'so wrought upon her, that she found
 'herself incapable of disesteeming
 'you, but never shewed her affection,
 'till, having examined every parti-
 'cular of your life, and finding you
 'a worthy man, she could not avoid
 'becoming your wife; and she said,
 'the reason why she always declined
 'being seen by her friends, in their
 'swangeans, was, for fear she should
 'be forced from you, though she
 'longed to see us; and that at last,
 'she was come by your consent; and,
 'that had it rested there only, she might
 'have come much sooner; for that
 'you would often have had her shew
 'herself to her friends, when you
 'heard them, having strong desires
 'yourself to be known to them.

'My father, upon hearing this, was
 'so charmed with your tenderness and
 'affection to his daughter, that you
 'already rival his own issue in his
 'esteem, and he is persuaded he can

'never

‘ never do enough for you or your children.

‘ The noise of Youwarkee’s return, and my father’s rejoicing, soon spread over all Normnbdgrfutt; and King Georigetti sent express to my father, to command him to attend with your wife and children at Brandleguarp, his capital. Thither accordingly we all went, with a grand retinue, and staid twenty days. The king took great delight, as well as the ladies of the court, to hear Youwarkee and her children talk English, and in being informed of you and your way of life; and so fond was Yaccombourse (who, though not the king’s wife, is instead of one) of my nephew Tommy, that, upon my father’s return, she took him to herself, and assured my sister he should continue near her person till he was qualified for better preferment. The king’s sister Jahamel would also have taken Patty into her service; but she begged to be permitted to attend her mother to Arndrumstake; so Hallycarnie her sister, who chose to continue with Jahamel, was received in her room.

‘ Upon my father’s return to Arndrumstake, he found no less than fifteen expresses from several colombs, desiring to rejoice with him on the return of his daughter, with particular invitations to him and her to spend some time with them. My father, though he hates more pomp than is necessary to support dignity, could do no less than severally visit them, with Youwarkee, attended by a grand retinue, spending more or less days with each; hoping when that was over, he should have some little time to spend in retirement with his daughter before her departure, who now began to be uneasy for you, who, she said, would suffer the greatest concern in her absence; but, upon their return from those visits, at about the end of four months progress, they found themselves in as little likelihood of retirement as the first day; for the inferior colombs were continually posting away, one after another, to perform their respects to my father, and all the inferior magistrates of smaller districts sending to know when they might be permitted to do the same. Poor

‘ Youwarkee, who saw no end of it, expressed her concern for you in so lively a manner to my father, that, finding he could by no means put a stop to the good-will of the people, and not bearing the thoughts of Youwarkee’s departure till she had now received all their compliments, he resolved to keep her with him till the next winter set in, in these parts, and then to accompany her himself to Graundevole. In the mean while, that you might not remain in an uneasy suspense what was become of my sister, he ordered me to dispatch messengers express to inform you of the reasons of her stay; but I told him, if he pleased, I would execute that office myself, with my friend Rosig, with which he was very well pleased, and enjoined me to assure you of his affection, and that he himself was debtor to you for the love and kindness you had shewn his daughter.

‘ Thus, brother,’ says Quangrollart, ‘ I hope I have acquitted myself of my charge to your satisfaction, and it only now remains that I return you my acknowledgments for your hearty welcome to myself and friend; which (with concern I speak it) I am afraid I shall not have an opportunity to return at Arndrumstake, the distance being so immensely great, and you not having the graundee. To-morrow morning my friend and I will set out on our return home.’

Quangrollart having done, I told him I could not but blush at the load of undeserved praises he had laid on me; but, as he had received his notion of my merits from a wife, too fond to let my character sink for want of her support, it would be sufficient if himself could conceive of, and also represent me at his return, in no worse a light than other men; and though it gave me pain to think of losing my wife so long, yet his account of her health, and the company he assured me she would return in, would doubly compensate my loss; and I begged of him, if it might be with any convenience, he would let some messenger come the day before her, to give me notice of their approach. As to their departure on the morrow, I told them I could by no means think of that, as

I had proposed to catch them a dinner of fresh fish in the lake, and to shew them my boat, and how and where I came into this arkoe; believing, by what I had observed, it would be no small novelty to them. So, having engaged them one day more, we parted for that night to rest.

C H A P. XXIX.

THE AUTHOR SHEWS QUANGROL-LART AND ROSIG HIS POULTRY—THEY ARE SURPRIZED AT THEM—HE TAKES THEM A FISHING—THEY WONDER AT HIS CART, AND AT HIS SHOOTING A FOWL—THEY ARE TERRIBLY FRIGHTENED AT THE FIRING OF THE GUN—WILKINS PACIFIES THEM.

I Was heartily sorry to lose my brother thus quickly, and still more so to find it would be a long time yet ere I should see my wife; however, I was resolved to behave as chearfully as possible, and to omit nothing I could do, the few remaining hours of Quangrollart's stay with me, to rivet myself thoroughly in his esteem, and to dismiss him with a most cordial affection to me and the rest of my children here with him. I rose early in the morning, to provide a good breakfast for my guests, and considering we should be in the air most part of that day, I treated them with a dish of hot fish-soup, and set before them on the table a jovial bottle of brandy, and my silver cann: this last piece I chose to shew them, as a specimen of the richness of my household furniture, and the grandeur of my living; concealing most of my other curiosities till Pendlehamby my father-in-law's arrival; for I thought it would be imprudent not to have somewhat new of this kind to display at his entertainment.

After a plenteous meal, we set out on our pleasurable expedition, having told Pedro what to get for dinner, and that I believed we should not return till late.

We first took a turn in the wood, but I did not lead them near my tent, because I did not chuse my wife should hear of that till she came; I then shewed them my farm-yard and poultry,

which they were strangely surprized at, and wondered to see so many creatures come at my call, and run about my legs only upon a whistle, though before there were only two or three to be seen. They asked me an hundred questions about the fowl, which I answered, and told them these were some such as they had eaten, and called crullmotts, the day before. I afterwards carried them to hear the musick of those plants that I call my cream-cheese; which, as there happened to be a small breeze stirring, made their usual melody.

When we had diverted ourselves some time in the wood, we went to the wet-dock, where I shewed them my boat. At first view they wondered what use it was for; to satisfy them in that I stepped in, desiring them to follow me, but seeing the boat's agitation, they did not chuse to venture till I assured them they might come with the greatest safety: at length, with some persuasion, and repeated assurances, I prevailed on them to trust themselves with me.

We first rowed to the bridge, where I informed them by what accident I was drawn down the stream on the other side of the rock, and after a tedious and dangerous passage, discharged safe in the lake through that opening.

I then told them how surprized I had been, just before I knew Youwarkee, with the sight of her country-folks, first on the lake, and then taking flight from that bridge, and what had been my thoughts, and how great my terrors, on that occasion.

After we had viewed the bridge, I took them to my rill, (for by this time they were reconciled to the boat, and would help me to row it) and shewed them how I got water. I then landed them to see the method of fishing, for which purpose I laid my net in proper order, and fixing it as usual, I brought it round out at the rill, and had a very good haul, with which I desired them to help me up; for though I could easily have done it myself, I had a mind to let them have a hand in the sport, with which they were pleased. I perceived, however, the fish were not agreeable to them; for when any one came near their hands, they avoided touching it: notwithstanding, having got the net on shore, I laid it open; but

to see how they stared at the fish, creeping backwards, and then at me and the net, it made me very merry to myself, though I did not care to shew it.

I drew up at that draught twenty-two fishes in all, of which a few were near an ell long, several about two feet, and some smaller. When they saw me take up the large ones in my arms, and tumble them into the boat, they both, unrequested, took up of the small ones, and put them in likewise; but dropping them every time they struck their tails, the fish had commonly two or three falls ere they came to the boat.

I asked them how they liked that sport, and they told me it was something very surprizing, that I should know just where the fish were, as they could see none before I pulled them up, and yet they did not hear me whistle. I perceived by this, they imagined I could whistle the fish together as well as the fowls, and I did not undeceive them, being well enough pleased they should think me excellent for something, as I really thought they were on account of the graundee.

Upon our return, when I had docked my boat, as there were too many fish to carry up by hand to the grotto, I desired them to take a turn upon the shore till I fetched my cart for it. I made what haste I could, and brought one of my guns with me, which I determined, upon some occasion or other, to fire off; for I took it they would be more surprized at the explosion of that than at any thing they had yet seen. Having loaded my fish, and marched backwards, they eyed my cart very much, and wondered what made the wheels move about so, taking them for legs it walked upon, till I explained the reason of it, and then they desired to draw it, which they did with great eagerness, one at a time, the other observing it's motions.

As we advanced homewards, there came a large water-fowl, about the size of a goose, flying cross us. I bid them look at it, which they did. Says my brother, 'I wish I had it!'—'If you have a mind for it,' says I, 'I'll give it you.'—'I wish you would,' says he, 'for I never saw any thing like it in my life!'—'Stand still then,' says I; and stepping two or three yards before them, I fired, and

down it dropped. I then turned about to observe what impression the gun had made on them, and could not help laughing to see them so terrified. Rosig, before I could well look about, had got fifty paces from me, and my brother was lying behind the cart of fish. I called and asked them what was the matter, and desired them to come to me, telling them they should receive no harm, and offered my brother the gun to handle; but he, thanking me as much as if he had, retired to Rosig.

Finding they made a serious affair of it, (for I saw them whispering together) I was under some apprehension for the consequences of my frolick. Thinks I, 'If under this disgust they take flight, refusing to hear me, and report that I was about to murder them, or tell any other pernicious story to my father of me, I am absolutely undone, and shall never see Youwarkee more.' So I laid down the gun by the fish, and moving slowly towards them, expostulated with them upon their disorder; assuring them, that though the object before them might surprize them, it was but a common instrument in my country, which every boy used to take birds with; and protested to them, that the gun of itself could do nothing without my skill directing it, and that they might be sure I should never employ that but to their service. This, and a great deal more, brought us together again; and when we came to reasoning coolly, they blamed me for not giving them notice. Says I, 'There was no room for me to explain the operation of the gun to you whilst the bird was on the wing, for it would have been gone out of my reach before I could have made you sensible of that, and so have escaped me; which, as you desired me to get it you, I was resolved it should not do. But for yourselves, surely you could have no diffidence in me; that is highly unbecoming of man to man, especially relations; and, above all, a relation to whom you have brought the welcomest news upon earth, in the love of my dear father, and his reconciliation to my wife.'

At last, by degrees, I brought them to confess, that it was only a groundless sudden terror which suppressed their reason for a while, but that what I said

said was all very true; and as their serious reflection returned, they were satisfied of it. I then stepped for the bird, and brought it to them: it was a very fine-feathered creature, and they were very much delighted with the beauty of it, and desired it might be laid upon the cart and carried home.

All the way we went afterwards to the grotto, nothing was to be heard from them but my praises, and what a great and wise man brother Peter was. 'And no wonder now, sister Youwarkee,' says Quangrollart, 'once knowing him, could never leave him.' It was not my business to gainsay this, but only to receive it with so much modesty as might serve to heighten their good opinion of me; and I found, upon my wife's return, that Quangrollart had painted me in no mean colours to his father.

I once more had the pleasure of entertaining them with the old fare, and some of the fresh fish, part boiled and part fried, which last they chose before the boiled. We made a very cheerful supper, talking over that day's adventures, and of their ensuing journey home, after which we retired to rest, mutually pleased. We all arose early the next morning. We took a short breakfast, after which Quangrollart and Rosig stuck their chaplets with the longest and most beautiful

feathers of the bird I shot, thinking them a fine ornament. Being now ready for departure, they embraced me and the children, and were just taking flight, when it came into my head that as the king's mistress had taken Tommy into her protection, it might possibly be a means of ingratiating him in her favour if I sent him the flagellet, (for I had, in my wife's absence, made two others near as good, by copying exactly after it.) I therefore desired to know, if one of them would trouble himself with a small piece of wood I very much wanted to convey to my son. Rosig answered, with all his heart; if it was not very long he would put it into his colapet. So I stepped in, and fetching the flagellet, presented it to Rosig. My brother seeing it look oddly, with holes in it, desired (after he had asked if it was not a little gun) to have the handling of it. It was given him, and he surveyed it very attentively. Being inquisitive into the use of it, I told him it was a musical instrument, and played several tunes upon it; with which he and his companion were in raptures. I doubt not they would have sat a week to hear me if I would have gone on; but I desiring the latter to take care of it's safety, he put it in his colapet, and away they went.

END OF THE FIRST VOLUME.



THE
LIFE AND ADVENTURES
OF
PETER WILKINS.

VOLUME THE SECOND.

CHAP. I.

PETER PREPARES FOR HIS FATHER'S
RECEPTION — ARGUMENTS A-
BOUT HIS BEARD — EXPECTS HIS
WIFE — REFLECTIONS ON HER
NOT COMING — SEES A MESSENGER
ON THE ROCK — HAS NOTICE
OF PENDLEHAMBY'S ARRIVAL,
AND PREPARES A TREAT.



THE news my late visitors had brought me, set my mind quite at ease; and now, having leisure to look into my own affairs, with the summer before me, I began to consider what preparations I must make against the return of my wife; for, according to the report I had heard, I concluded there would be a great number of attendants; and, as her father would no doubt pique himself upon the grandeur of his equipage, if his followers should see nothing in me but a plain dirty fellow, I should be contemned, and perhaps my wife, through my means, be slighted; or, at least, lose that respect the report of me had in a great measure procured her.

The first thing therefore that I did, was to look into my chests again, wherein I knew there were many of the Portuguese captain's cloaths, and

take out such as would be most suitable to the occasion, and lay them all by themselves. I found a blue cloth laced-coat, double-breasted, with very large gold buttons, and very broad gold button-holes, lined with white silk; a pair of black velvet breeches, a large gold-laced hat, and a point neckcloth, with two or three very good shirts, two pair of red-heeled shoes, a pair of white and another of scarlet silk-stockings, two silver-hilted swords, and several other good things; but upon examination of these cloaths, and by a letter or two found in the pockets of some of them, directed to Captain Jeremiah Vauclaile, in Thread-needle Street, London, I judged these belonged to the English captain, taken by the Portuguese ship in Africa. I immediately tried some of them on, and thought they became me very well, and laid all those in particular chests, to be ready when the time came, and set them into one of my inner rooms.

Upon examining the contents of another chest, I found a long scarlet cloak laced, a case of razors, a pair of scissors, and shaving-glass; a long-wig, and two bob-wigs, and laid them by; for I was determined, as I might possibly have no other opportunity, to make myself appear as considerable as I could.

When I had digested in my mind upon

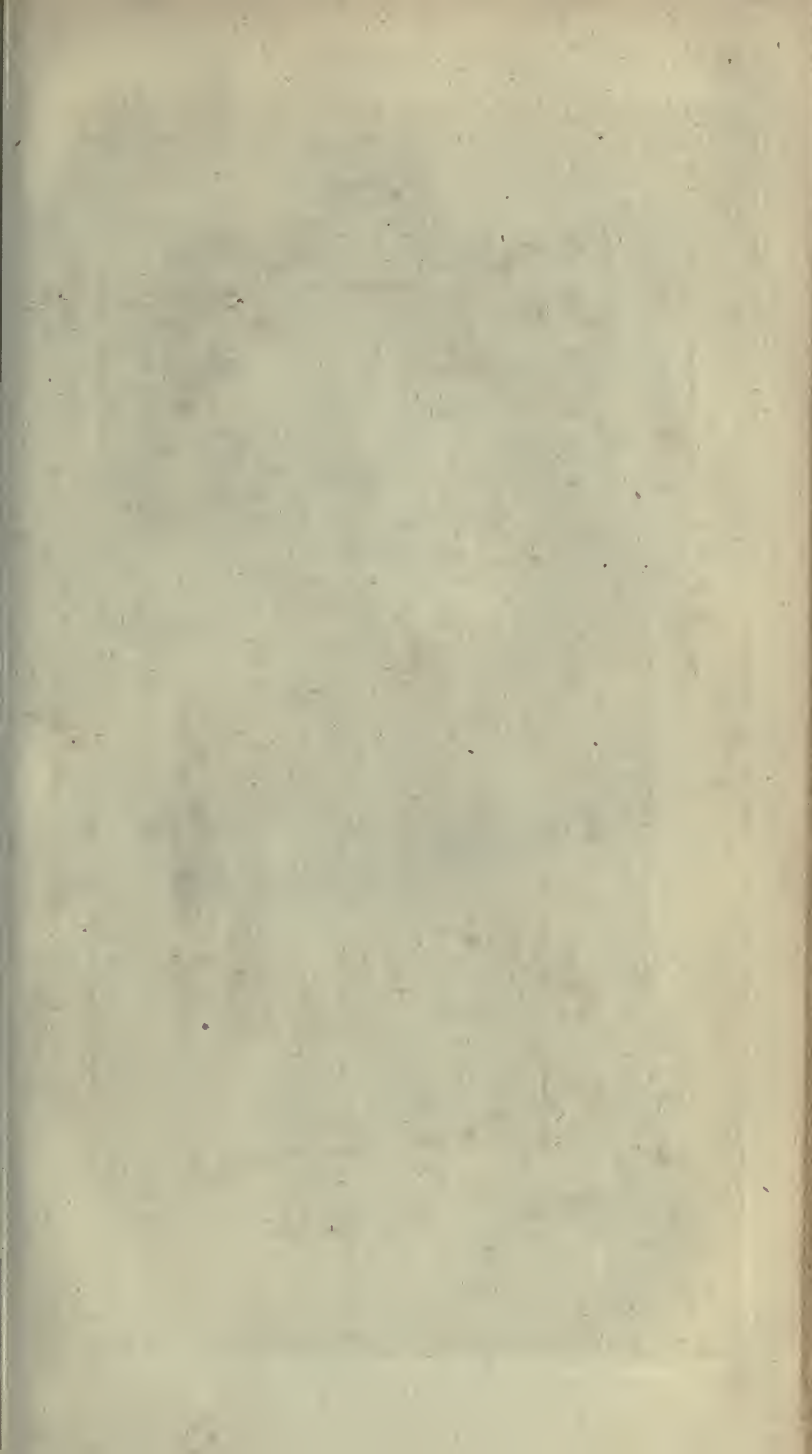
upon what occasions I would appear in either of them, and laid them in proper order, Pedro and I went several days to work with the net, and caught abundance of fish, which I salted and dried; and we cut a great quantity of long grafs to dry, and spread in my tent for the lower gentry, and made up a little cock of it; we also cut and piled up a large parcel of fire-wood; and as I had now about thirty of the best fish-skins, each of which would cover four chairs, I nailed them on for cushions to my chairs, and the rest I sewed together, and made rugs of them.

I had observed, that my brother Quangrollart, and Rosig, neither of them had beards, and as they were quite smooth-chinned, I conjectured, that none of their countrymen had any; 'So,' says I, 'if that is the case, as I have now both scissars and razors, I will e'en cut off mine, to be like them.' I then set up my glass, taking my scissars in hand; but had not quite closed them for a snip, when I considered, that as I was not of their country, and was so different from them in other respects, whether it would not add to my dignity to appear with my beard before them. This I debated some time, and then determined in favour of my beard; but as this question still ran in my mind, and I wavered sometimes this way, sometimes that, I some days after prepared again for execution, and took a large snip off; 'When,' says I, 'how can I tell whether I can shave after all? I have not tried yet, and if I can't, how much more ridiculous shall I look with stubbed hair here and there, than with this comely beard?' I must say, I never in my life had so long a debate with myself, it holding upwards of two months, varying almost every time I thought of it; till one day, dressing myself in a suit I had not before tried on, and looking in the glass; 'It can never be,' says I, 'that this grave beard should suit with these fine cloaths: no, I will have it off, I am resolved.' I had no sooner given another good snip, than spying the cloak, I had a mind to see how I looked in that: 'Aye,' says I, 'now I see I must either wear this beard or not this cloak. How majestick does it look! So sage, so grave, it denotes wisdom and soli-

dity; and if they already think well of me, don't let me be fool enough to relinquish my claim to that for a gay coat.' I had no sooner fixed on this, than I took up all the implements to put again into the chest; and the last of them being the glass, I would have one more look before I parted with it: but my beard made such a horrid, frightful figure, with the three great cuts in it, that though it grieved me to think I must part with it just when I had come to a resolution to preserve it, I fell to work with my scissars, and off it came; and after two or three trials, I became very expert with my razor.

Winter coming on, as I knew I must soon have more occasion than ever for a stock of provision, from the increase of mouths I expected, I laid in a stock for a little army, and when the hurry of that was over, I kept a sharp look-out upon the level, in expectation of my company, and had once a mind to have brought my tent thither to entertain them in; but it was too much trouble for the hands I had, so I dropped the design. I took one or other of the children with me every day, and grew more and more uneasy at hearing nothing of them; and as uncertain attendance naturally breeds thoughtfulness, and the hours in no employ pass so leisurely as in that, my mind presaged numberless intervening accidents, that might, if not entirely prevent their coming, at least postpone it.

Thinks I, (and that I fixed for my standard) 'Youwarkee, I am sure, would come if she could; but then,' says I, 'here is a long flight, and to be undertaken by an old man too, (for I thought my father-in-law much older than I afterwards found him) who is now safe and quiet at home; and having his daughter with him, is no doubt desirous of continuing so: now, what cares he for my uneasiness? He can find one pretence or other, no doubt, of drilling on the time till the dark weather is over; and then, forsooth, it will be too light to come; and thus shall I be hung up in suspense for another year; or what if my brother, as he called himself, for he may be no more a brother of mine than the pope's, for aught I know, came only on a pretence to see how I went on; and not finding, for all





his sham compliments to me, his sister married to his father's liking, should advise him not to send my wife back again; and so all the trouble I have had on their account should only prove a standing monument of my foolish credulity! Nay, it is not impossible, but as I have already had one message to inform me Tommy and Hallicarnie are provided for, as much as to say in plain English, I shall see them no more, so I may soon have another by some sneaking puppy or other, whom I suppose I am to treat for the news, to tell me my wife and Patty are provided for too, and I am to thank my kind benefactors for taking so great a charge off my hands. Am I? No! I'll first set my tent, cloaths, chairs, and all other mementos of my stupidity on fire, and by perishing, what's left of us, in the blaze, exterminate at once the wretched remains of a deserted family. I hate to be made a fool of!

I had scarce finished my soliloquy, when I heard a monstrous sort of groan or growl in the air, like thunder at a distance. 'What's that, Pedro?' says I; 'I never heard the like before, daddy!' says he. 'Look about, boy,' says I, 'do you see any thing?' We heard it again. 'Hark!' says Pedro, 'it comes from that end of the lake.' While we were listening to the third sound, says Pedro, 'Daddy, yonder is something black upon the rock, I did not see just now.'—'Why, it moves,' says I, 'Pedro; here is news, good or bad.'—'Hope the best, daddy,' says Pedro; 'I wish it may be mammy.'—'No,' says I, 'Pedro, I don't expect her before I hear from her.'—'Why then,' says Pedro, 'here they come; I can plainly discern three of them. If my brother Tommy should be there, daddy!'—'No,' says I, Pedro, 'no such good news; they tell me Tommy's provided for, and that's suffice for the loss of my child: and yet Pedro, if I could get you settled in England in some good employ, I should consent to that: but what Tommy's to be I know not.'

By this time the three persons were so near, that seeing us, they called out 'Peter!' and I making signs for them to alight, they settled just before me,

and told me that Pendlehamby and Youwarkee would be with me by light next day.

I had no sooner heard this, but so far was I from firing my tent, that I invited them to my grotto, set the best cheer before them, and with overhaste to do more than one thing at once, I even left undone what I might have done.

I asked them who came with my father; and they told me about two hundred guards: that knocked me up again, as I had but prepared for about sixty; thinks I, 'My scheme is all un-twisted.' I then asked them, what loud noise it was, and if they heard it just before I saw them over the rock. They told me they heard only the gripsack they brought with them to distinguish them from ordinary messengers; and then one of them shewed it me, for I had before only taken it for a long staff in his hand; 'But,' says he, 'you will hear them much louder to-morrow, and longer, before they come to you.'

Having entertained them to their content, I sent them to rest, not chusing to ask any questions; for I avoided anticipating the pleasure of hearing all the news from Youwarkee herself. However, the boys and I prepared what provisions of fowl and fish we could in the time, to be ready cold against they came, and then laid down ourselves.

CHAP. II.

PETER SETTLES THE FORMALITY OF HIS FATHER'S RECEPTION—DESCRIPTION OF THEIR MARCH, AND ALIGHTING, RECEIVES HIS FATHER—CONDUCTS HIM TO HIS GROTTO—OFFERS TO BEG PARDON FOR HIS MARRIAGE—IS PREVENTED BY PENDLEHAMBY—YOUWARKEE NOT KNOWN IN ENGLISH HABIT—QUARTERS THE OFFICERS IN THE TENT.

MY mind ran so all night upon the settling the formality with which I should receive Pendlehamby, that I got little or no rest. In the morning I spread my table in as neat a manner as I could, and having dressed myself, Pedro, Jemmy, and David, we marched to the plain; myself carrying a chair,

a chair, and each of them a stool. I was dressed in a cinnamon-coloured gold-button coat, scarlet waistcoat, velvet breeches, white silk stockings, the campaign-wig flowing, a gold-laced hat and feather, point cravat, silver sword, and over all my cloak: as for my sons, they had the cloaths my wife made before she went.

When we heard them coming, I marshalled the children in the order they were to sit, and charged them to do as they saw me do; but to keep rather a half-pace backward than me; and then sitting down in my chair, I ordered Pedro to his stool on my right-hand, and Jemmy to his on my left, and David to the left of Jemmy.

I then sent two of the messengers to meet them, with instructions to let Youwarkee know where I waited for them, that they might alight at a small distance before they came to me. This she having communicated to her father, the order ran through the whole corps immediately when and where to alight.

It will be impossible for me by words to raise your ideas adequate to the grandeur of the appearance this body of men made, coming over the rock; but, as I perceive your curiosity is on the stretch to comprehend it, I shall faintly aim at gratifying you.

After we had heard for some time a sound as of distant rumbling thunder, or of a thousand bears in concert, serenading in their hoarsest voices, we could just perceive by the clearness of the dawn gilding the edge of the rock, a black stream arise above the summit of it, seemingly about forty paces broad; when the noise increasing very much, the stream arose broader and broader; and then you might perceive rows of poles, with here and there a streamer; and as soon as ever the main body appeared above the rock, there was such an universal shout as rent the air, and echoing from the opposite rock, returned the salute to them again. This was succeeded with a most ravishing sound of voices in song, which continued till they came pretty near me; and then the first line consisting of all the trumpets mounting a considerable height, and still blowing, left room for the next ranks, about twenty abreast, to come forward beneath them; each of which dividing in the

middle, alighted in ranks at about twenty paces distant from my right and left, making a lane before me, at the farther end of which Pendlehamby and his two daughters alighted, with about twenty of his guards behind them; the remainder consisting of about twenty more, coming forward over my head, and alighting behind me; and during this whole ceremony, the grip-sacks sounded with such a din, it was astonishing.

Poor Youwarkee, who knew nothing of my dress, or of the loss of my beard, was thunder-struck when she saw me, not being able to observe any visage I had for my great wig and hat; but putting a good face on the matter, and not doubting but if the person she saw was not me, she should soon find her husband, for she knew the children by their cloaths, she came forward at her father's right-hand, I sitting as great as a lord, till they came within about thirty paces of my seat; and then gravely rising, I pulled off my hat and made my obeisance, and again at ten steps forwarder; so that I made my third low bow close at the feet of Pendlehamby, the children all doing the same. I then kneeling with one leg, embraced his right-knee; who raising me up, embraced me. Then retiring three steps, and coming forward again, I embraced Youwarkee some time; during which the children observed my pattern with Pendlehamby, who took them up and kissed them.

I whispered Youwarkee to know if any more of her relations were in the train, to whom I ought to pay my compliments; she told me only her sister Hallycarnie, just behind her father; I then saluted her, and stepping forward to the old gentleman's left-hand, I ushered him through the lines of guards to my chair; where I caused him to sit down with Youwarkee and Hallycarnie on each side, and myself on the left of Hallycarnie.

After expressing the great honour done me by Pendlehamby in this visit, I told him I had a little grotto about half a mile through the wood, to which if he pleased to command, we would retire; for I had only placed that seat to relieve him immediately upon his descent.

Pendlehamby rose, and all the grip-sacks

sacks founded; he leading Youwarkee in his right-hand, and I Hallycarnie in mine.

At the grotto, my father being seated, taking Youwarkee in my hand, we paid our obedience to him. I would have asked his pardon for taking his daughter to wife without his leave, and was going on in a set speech I had studied for the purpose; but he refused to hear me, telling me I was mistaken, he had consented. I was replying I knew he had been so good as to pass it over, but that would not excuse—when he again interrupted me, by saying, ‘If I approve it, and esteem you, what can you desire more!’ So, finding the subject ungrateful, I desisted.

I then gave each of them a silver cann of Madeira, and Youwarkee retired. I soon made an excuse to follow her, to learn if she was pleased with what I had done. Says she, ‘My dearest, what is come to you? I will promise you, but for fear of surprizing my father, I had disowned you for my husband.’—‘Dear Youwee,’ says I, ‘do you approve my dress, for this is the English fashion?’—‘This, Peter,’ says she, ‘I perceived attracted all eyes to you, and indeed is very showy, and I approve it in regard to those we are now to please; but you are not to imagine I esteem you more in this than your own old jacket; for it is Peter I love, in this and all things else: but step in again, I shall only dress, and come to you.’

My wife being dressed in her English gown, just crossed the room where my father sat, to see Dicky, who was in another side-room. I was then sitting by, and talking with him. ‘Son,’ says my father, ‘I understood you had no other woman in this arkoe but my daughter; for surely you have no child so tall as that,’ pointing to my wife. ‘No, Sir,’ said I, ‘that is a friend.’—‘Is she come to you,’ says he, ‘in my daughter’s absence?’—‘O Sir,’ says I, ‘she is very well known to my wife.’

Whilst we were talking, in comes Youwarkee, with the child in her arms, which she kept covered to her wrists with her gown-sleeve, to hide her graundee; and playing with the child, talked only in English to it. ‘Is this your youngest son?’ says my father. I told him ‘Yes.’—‘Pray, Madam,’ says

I, ‘bring the child to my father.’—‘Madam,’ says he, ‘you have a fine baby in your arms; has his mother seen him since she came home?’ He speaking this in his own tongue, and Youwarkee looking at me, as if she could not understand him, I interpreted it to her. My sister then desired to see the child, but I was forced again to interpret there too. In short, they both talked with my wife near half an hour, but neither of them knew her; till at last, saying in her own language, ‘That is your grand-daddy, my dear Dicky!’ the old gentleman smooched her out; ‘I’ll be slit,’ says he, ‘if that is not Youwarkee!’—‘It’s impossible,’ says Hallycarnie. ‘Indeed,’ says Youwarkee, ‘you are mistaken!’ and my father protesting he had not the least suspicion of her, till she spoke in his tongue, rose, and kissing her and the child, desired her to appear in that habit during his stay.

I asked Pedro what provision had been made for the guards: ‘Son,’ says my father, ‘I bring not this number of people to eat you up; they have their subsistence with them;’ and he would by no means suffer me to allow them any. I then desired to know if there were any officers or others to whom he would have shewn any particular marks of distinction. ‘Son,’ says the old glumm, ‘you seem to have studied punctilios; and though I should be sorry to incommode you for their sakes, if you could procure some shelter and sleep-room for about twenty of them, who are superiors, ten at a time, while the rest are on duty, I should be glad.’ I told him I had purposely erected a tent, which would with great ease accommodate a greater number; and as they were of distinction, with his leave I insisted upon providing for them; to which, with some reluctance, I procured his consent.

When Pendlehamby was refreshed, he would go with me to see the officers quarters; and shewing him my tent, he having never seen such a thing before, was going to climb up the out-side of it, taking it for earth. ‘Hold, Sir,’ said I, ‘you cannot do so!’ Then taking him to the front of it, I turned aside the blue cloth, and desired him to walk in; at which he seemed wonderfully pleased, and asked me how it was made. I

told him in as few words as I could; but he understood so little of it, that any thing else I had said might have done as well. He mightily approved it; and calling the chief officer, I desired he would command my house, and that provision should be supplied to his quarters daily; at which he hesitating, I assured him I had my father's leave for what I offered; whereupon he stroked his chin.

I then asked him if he had any clever fellows under him to serve them, and dress their provisions; but he hoped, he said, they were ready-dressed, as his men knew little of that matter; but for any other piece of service, as many as I pleased should be at my command.

CHAP. III.

THE MANNER OF THEIR DINNER—BELIEVE THE FISH AND FOWL TO BE FRUITS—HEARS HIS BROTHER AND THE COLAMBS ARE COMING—ACCOUNT OF THEIR LYING—PETER'S REFLECTIONS ON THE WANT OF THE GRAUNDEE—THEY VIEW THE ARKOE—SERVANTS HARDER TO PLEASE THAN THEIR MASTERS—REASONS FOR DIFFERENT DRESSES THE SAME DAY.

PENDLEHAMBY having a mind to view my arkoe, took a long walk with Halleyearnie in the wood till dinner-time; and he having before told me, that some of his guards always waited on him at meals, I ordered their dinner before his return, sending a large dish of cold fowls, cut into joints, into the tent, to be spread on clean leaves I had laid on the chests, and setting a sufficient quantity of bread and fish there also, I desired the officers present to refresh themselves now; and the rest, when relieved, should have a fresh supply. I saw there was an oddity in their countenances, which at first I did not comprehend; but presently turning about to the superior, 'Sir,' says I, 'though this food may look unusual to you, it is what my island affords, and you will be better reconciled to it after tasting.' So taking a piece of fowl, and dipping it in the salt, I eat a bit

myself, and recommended another to him; who, eating it, they all fell to without farther scruple; above all things commending the salt, as what they had never tasted the like of before, though they thought they had both of the fish and fowl.

I then told them where my supply of water came from, and that they must furnish themselves with that by their own men.

Upon the return of my father and sister, the gripsack sounded for dinner; when four officers on duty entering, desired, as their posts, to have the serving up of the dishes; one of them I perceived having set on the first dish, never stirred from behind Pendlehamby; but upon his least word or sign, ordered the others what to do or bring, which he only presented to my father; and he frequently gave him a piece from his own plate; but the other officers served at the table promiscuously.

After dinner I brought in a bowl of punch; when begging leave to proceed in my country method, I drank to my father's health. 'So, daughter,' says he, to my wife, 'we are at the old game again.—Son,' says he, 'this is no novelty to me,' Youwarkee constantly drinking to the health of her dear Peter, and the children at Graundevoleto, and obliging us to pledge her, as she called it: but I thank you, and will return your civility; so taking a glass, 'Son and daughter,' says he, 'long life, love and unity, attend you and my grand-children!' Youwarkee and I both rising till he had done, returned him our thanks.

When we had sat some time, 'Son,' says my father, 'you and your wife having lived so retired, I fear my company and attendants must put you to an inconvenience; now, as my son intends you a visit also, in company with several of my brother colambs, if we shall be too great a load upon you, declare it, for they will be at Batttrindrigg arkoe to-morrow, to know whether it will be agreeable for them to proceed.

'You know, son,' says my father, 'the mouth is a great devourer, and that the stock your family cannot consume in a year, by multiplying their numbers, may be reduced in a day: now freely let me know (for you say

'you

' you provided for us) how your stock stands, that you may not only pleasure us, but we not injure you.'

I told him, as for dried fish I had a vast quantity, and that my fowls were so numerous I knew not my stock; as to bread, I had a great deal, and might have almost what more I would; and then for fresh fish, the whole province of Arndrumstake could not soon devour them; but for my pickles and preserves, I had neither such large quantities, nor conveniences to bestow them if I had.

' If this be the case, son,' says my father, ' I may send your brother word ' to proceed: ' and dispatched ten messengers with a grip sack to hasten his son's arrival.

It now began to be time for rest, and the old gentleman growing pretty mellow with the punch, which, by the heavy pulls he took at it, I perceived was no disagreeable entertainment to him, I conducted him to his repose; and disposing of the rest of the family, Youwarkee and I with great impatience retired.

You may imagine I was sincerely glad to find myself once more along with my Youwarkee; when, after a transport of mutual endearments, I desired to know how Pendlehamby first received her; which she told me, with every circumstance, in so affecting a manner, that the tears forced passage from mine eyes in perfect streams; and I loved the dear man ever after as my own father.

She told me Tommy was in great favour at court before her brother returned from me; but ever since I sent him the flagellet he had been caressed above measure, and would soon be a great man: that Hallycarnie was a constant attendant on Jahamel both in her diversions and retirement; and, she did not doubt, would in time marry very well: as for Patty, she said her father intended, with my leave, to adopt her as his own child.

My wife slept very sound after her journey; but my hurry of spirits denying me that refreshment, I never so much as now lamented the want of the graundee: ' For,' thinks I, ' now I ' have once again tasted the sweets of ' society, how shall I ever relish a total ' desertion of it, which in a few days ' must be the case, when all this com-

' pany are fled, and myself am reduced ' to my old jacket and water-cart ' again! Now, if I was as others here ' are, I might make a better figure ' than they by my superior knowledge ' of things, and have the world my ' own; nay, I would fly to my own ' country, or to some other part of ' the world, where even the strangeness of my appearance would procure me a good subsistence.—But,' says I, ' if with my graundee I should ' lose my sight, or only be able to live ' in the dark in England, why I should ' be full as bad as I am here! for ' nobody would be able to keep me ' company abroad, as my hours for ' the air would be theirs of retirement; ' and then, at home, it would be much ' the same; no one would prefer my ' company in a dark room in the daytime, when they could enjoy others ' in the light of the sun; then how ' should I be the better for the graundee, unless I fixed a resolution of ' living here, or hereabouts? and then ' to get into company, I must retire ' to still darker regions, which my eyes ' are no ways adapted to: in short, I ' must be quite new-moulded, new-made, and new-born too, before I ' can attain my desires. Therefore, ' Peter,' says I, ' be content; you ' have been happy here in your wife ' and children without these things; ' then never make yourself so wretched ' as to hope for a change which can ' never possibly happen, and which, ' perhaps, if obtained, might undo ' you; but intend only what you can ' compass, by weighing all circumstances, and your felicity will lie in ' very narrow bounds, free from two ' of the greatest evils a man can be ' beset by, hopes and fears; two inseparable companions, and deadly ' enemies to peace: for a man is destroyed by hope through fear of disappointment.' This brought me a shew of peace again: ' Surely,' says I, ' I am one of the most unaccountable ' amongst mankind! I never can rest ' till I am worn down with vexation. — O Glanlipze! Glanlipze!' says I, ' I shall never forget thy speech ' after engaging the crocodile, that ' every thing was to be attained by resolution by him that takes both ends ' of a thing in his view at once, and ' fairly deliberates what may be given ' and

'and taken from end to end. Surely,' says I, 'this ought to be engraven on brass, as I wish it was on my heart, it would prevent me many painful hours, help me with more ease to compass attainable ends, and to rest contented under difficulties insuperable: and if I live to rise again, I will place it where it shall never be more out of my sight, and will enforce it not only more and more on myself, but on my children.'

With this thought I dropped to sleep, and with this I awaked again, and the first thing I did was to find a proper place to write it, which, having fixed for the door of my cupboard, I took a burnt stick for my pencil, and wrote as follows—'He that is resolved to overcome, must have both ends of an object in view at once, and fairly deliberate what may be given and taken from end to end; and then pursue the dictates of cool reason.' This I wrote in English, and then in the Doorpt Swangeantine tongue; and having read it twice or thrice over, I went for water and fish, and returned before the family were up.

I took care to-day also, that the officers should be as well served as possible, and where an accommodation must be wanting, I rather chose to let it fall on my father than on them; for I had ever observed it to be an easier thing to satisfy the master than the man; as the master weighs circumstances, and, from a natural complacency in himself, puts a humane construction upon that error or omission which the servant wholly attributes to slight and neglect.

My company being abroad, about the time I expected their return, I dressed myself as the day before, only without my cloak, and in a black bob-wig, and took a turn to meet them.

Pendlehamby spying me first among the trees, 'Daughter Youwarkee,' says he, 'you have an husband, I think, for every day in the week. Who's this, my son Peter? Why, he is not the same man he was yesterday.' She told him she had heard me say we changed our apparel almost every day in England; nay, sometimes twice or thrice the same day. 'What!' says Pendlehamby, 'are they so mischievous there they are fearful of being known in

'the latter by those who saw them in the former part of the day?'

By this time I was come up, and after paying due compliments, says Youwarkee, 'My father did not know you, my dear, you are so altered in your other wig; and I told him in your country they not only change wigs, but their whole cloathing, two or three times a day sometimes.'—'Son,' says my father, 'if it be so, I cannot guess at the design of a man's making himself unlike himself.'—'O, Sir,' says I, 'it is owing to the different functions he is to perform that day: as, suppose, in the morning he is to pursue business with his inferiors, or meet at our coffee-houses to hear and chat over the news of the day, he appears in a light easy habit proper for dispatch, and comes home dirty: then, perhaps, he is to dine with a friend at mid-day, before whom, for respect's sake, not chusing to be seen in his dirty dress, he puts on something handsomer; and, after spending some time there, he has, it may be, an appointment at court, at play, or with his mistress, in all which last cases, if he has any thing better than ordinary, it is a part of good-breeding to appear in that: but if the very best was to be used in common, it might soon become the worst, and not fit for a nice man to stir abroad in.'—'The different custom of countries you have told me of,' says my father, 'is surprizing: here are we born with our cloaths on, which always fit, be we ever so small or large; nay, are never the worse for constant wearing; and you must be eternally altering and changing colour, shape, and habit. But,' says he, 'where do they get all these things? Does every man make just what he likes?'—'No,' says I, 'there are a particular set of men whose business it is to make for all the rest.'—'What,' says he, 'I suppose their larks make them?'—'No, Sir, they are filgays,' says I. 'It is their trade, they do it for a livelihood, being paid by them they work for. A suit of these cloaths,' says I, 'taking up the flap of my coat, will cost what we call twelve or fourteen pounds in money.'—'I don't understand you,' says he. 'Why, Sir,' says

says I, 'that is as much as will provide one moderate man with all the necessary things of life for two months.'—'Then,' says he, 'these nice men must be very rich.'—'No,' Sir,' said I, 'there you are under a mistake; for if a man, very rich, and who is known to be so, neglects his habit, it is taken to be his choice; but one who is not known to be rich, and is really not so, is, by appearing gay sometimes, thought to be so; for he comes little abroad, and pinches miserably at home, first to get that gay suit, and then acts on the same part to preserve it, till some lucky hit may help him to the means of getting another, as it frequently happens by a good marriage: for though he is but seldom seen in public, yet always appearing so fine when he is, the ladies, whose fancies are frequently more tickled with shew than sense, admitting him only at first as a companion, are at last, if worth any thing, taken in the toils he is ever spreading for them; and, becoming his wife, produce a standing fund to make him a rich man in reality, which he but personated before.'

Pendlehamby could not well understand all I said; and I found by him that all the riches they possessed were only food and slaves; and, as I found afterwards when amongst them, they know the want of nothing else: but I am afraid I have put them upon another way of thinking, though I aimed at what we call civilizing of them.

CHAP. IV.

QUANGROLLART ARRIVES WITH THE COLAMBS—STRAITENED FOR ACCOMMODATION—REMOVE TO THE TENT—YOUWARKEE NOT KNOWN—PETER RELATES PART OF HIS TRAVELS—DISPUTE ABOUT THE BEAST-FISH SKINS.

SLEEPING longer than usual, I was awakened next morning by a gripsack from Quangrollart; upon hearing of which I roused immediately, thinking they were at my door; but the messenger told me they could not be there in what I understood by his signs to be about two hours; for they

have no such measure for time as hours; so I dressed at leisure, and then went to Youwarkee, and waked her. 'Youwee,' says I, 'your brother will be here presently, and I having a mind you should appear as my country-woman, would have you dress yourself.'

We walked down to the level, and but just saved our distance; for the van of them were within the arkoe before we arrived, and with such a train after them as seemed to reach the whole length of the arkoe. The regularity and order of their flight was admirable, and the break of the trumpets so great, sounding all the way they came, (for we had not only one set of them, but at least thirty, there being so many colombs and petty princes in the train, each with fifty attendants) that I wondered how they could bear it. As the principals alighted, which was at least an hundred paces from me, the gripsacks still kept wing, sounding as long as we staid.

This was a very tedious ceremony; for the guards alighting with their colombs, ranged just as Pendlehamby's had done, but reached as far as the eye could see. As they moved towards us, Youwarkee and I having stood still some time, moved slowly forward to meet them.

It would have surprized you to have seen the deference they paid us; and I believe the guards took us for something above the mortal race. Youwarkee shewed no part of her grandee, having on sleeves down to her wrists, white silk stockings, and red-heeled shoes; so that none of them knew her for one of them.

The first that we met was my brother, to whom we had only an opportunity of paying our compliments *en passant*, before another grandee came up, who was succeeded by another and another, to the number of thirty; some out of respect to my father and brother, and some out of mere curiosity to see me; and as fast as each had paid his salutes, he passed us, till we found we had no more to meet; when we turned about, and fell in with the company.

When we came to the grotto, I was very much put to it for room, we scarce being able to stand upright by each

each other, much less to sit down; which my father perceiving, 'My dear friends,' says he, 'had my son known in time of so much good company, he would have been better provided with seats for us all; but, considering all we see is the labour only of his own hands, we should rather admire at the many conveniences we see here, than be uneasy there are no more.—And, son,' says he, 'as we are now so large a body, I propose that we adjourn to the officers quarters, and let them take ours.' I returned my father thanks for the hint, and led the way, the rest following; where we found room enough, and to spare.

Though Youwarkee was with us all dinner-time helping the guests, we had no sooner done, 'But,' says Quangrollart, aloud, 'brother Peter, are we not to see my sister?' I not hearing perfectly what he said, though I perceived he spoke to me, 'Sir!' says I. 'My sister Youwarkee!' says he, 'why won't she appear? Here are several of her good friends, as well as myself, will be glad to see her.' My father then laughed so heartily, that the rest taking notice of it, my poor brother was put to the blush. 'Son,' says my father, 'don't you know your own sister?'—'We have not seen her yet,' says one of the colambs, 'or any lady but your daughter Hally-carnie and that attendant.' My brother then seeing how it was, came up to salute my wife; but even then had his scruples, till he saw her smile, and then begged pardon for his oversight, as did all the colambs upon saluting her: my brother declaring, that as she was somewhat behind me on the level, he had only paid her the respect of his chin, taking her for some one attending me. The colamb following my brother, assured her the little regard shown her by Quangrollart, who he thought should know best where to bestow his respects, was the reason of his taking no more notice of her; and each confessing his mistake arose from too nearly copying the steps of his immediate predecessor, they all made excuse, and the mistake made us very merry, till they proposed taking a turn in the woods, it being a great novelty to them, they said; but I begged they would

leave me behind to prepare for their return.

Having refreshed themselves after they came home, Quangrollart (being put upon it by some of the colambs) told me I could not render a more acceptable favour to the whole company than to relate to them an account of my adventures: 'For though,' says he, 'I told them last night what I remembered to have heard from you, yet the variety was so great I could not deliver the facts in order as I heard them, but was obliged to take here a piece, and there another, as they occurred to me, making rather several stories of it than a continued series of facts.'

All the colambs immediately seconded the motion, and desired me to begin. I then ordering a clear table and a bowl of punch, and having drank all the company's healths, began my narration, hoping to have finished it before bed-time; but they pressing me to be very particular, and frequently one or other requiring explanations upon particular facts, and then one making a remark upon something, which another answered, and a third replied to, they got the talk out of my hands so long, that having lost themselves in the argument, and forgot what I said last, they begged my pardon, and desired me to go on; when one, who in contemplation of one fact had lost best part of another, prayed me to go on from such an incident, and another from one before that; so that I was frequently obliged to begin half-way back again. This method not only spun out my story to a very great length; but, instead of it's being finished that evening, as I had purposed, it was scarce well begun before bed-time drew on: so I just having brought them to Angola, told them, as it grew late, if they pleased, I would finish the remainder next night, which they agreed to.

Quangrollart then asked my father if he had been fishing since he came; but he told him he knew not what he meant. Then all the company desired I would shew them what that was. I told them they might command me as they pleased; so we appointed the next morning for that exercise. 'But, gentlemen,' says I, 'your lodging to-

night

* night gives me the greatest pain; for
 ' I know not what I shall do about
 ' that. I have a few beast-fish skins,
 ' which are very soft and hairy, but
 ' not a sufficiency for so many friends
 ' as I would at present be proud to
 ' oblige: but I can lay them as far as
 ' they will go upon as much dry reeds
 ' and grafs as you please.' I then
 sent a servant to Youwarkee for the
 skins; after which, they one and all
 crying out if they had but good dry
 reeds they desired no better lodging, I
 dispatched hands to bring away a large
 parcel of them to the tent, which they
 did in a trice. Then waiting on those
 few who lay at the grotto to their quar-
 ters, and having sent Youwarkee to
 her sister, I returned to the tent to take
 up my own lodging with those I had
 left there.

I had not yet entered the tent, when
 I heard a perfect tumult within, every
 one talking so loud, and all together,
 that I verily thought they had fallen
 out, and were going to handy-cuffs;
 however, I resolved to go in amongst
 them, and try to compose their differ-
 ence; when just entering, and they
 spying me, several ran to me, with
 each a skin in his hand, the rest fol-
 lowing as fast as they could. ' Gen-
 tlemen,' says I, ' I hoped to have
 ' found you all at rest.' — ' So we
 ' should have been,' says one of them,
 ' but for these, what you call 'ems.' —
 ' It is my unspeakable misfortune,'
 says I, ' that I have no more at your
 ' service, and am sorry I should cause
 ' them to be brought, since each of
 ' you cannot have one.' Says one of
 them, ' I don't want one, I have seen
 ' enough of it.' — ' Then, gentlemen,'
 says I, ' it is possible there may be so
 ' many more of that colamb's mind,
 ' that there may be sufficient for those
 ' who desire them.' They neither
 knew what to make of me, nor I of
 them, all this while; till an old col-
 lamb perceiving our mistake, ' Mr.
 ' Peter,' says he, ' we have only had
 ' a dispute.' — ' I am sorry at my heart
 ' for it,' says I; ' but I perceived you
 ' were very warm before I entered,
 ' and am in great hopes of compro-
 ' mising matters to all your satisfac-
 ' tions.' — ' I was going,' says the
 same colamb, ' to tell you we had a
 ' dispute about what these things were,
 ' nothing else.' I was then struck on

a heap, being quite ashamed they should
 think I suspected they had been quar-
 relling for the skins; and how to come
 off I knew not. ' You'll excuse me,
 ' Sir,' says I, ' for expressing a con-
 ' cern that you could not each have
 ' one to examine into at the same time,
 ' that one of you need not have wait-
 ' ed to make your remarks, till the
 ' other had done.' — ' No occasion, no
 ' occasion for that, Mr. Peter,' said
 they all together; ' we shall have lei-
 ' sure enough to examine them to-
 ' morrow; but we want to know what
 ' they are, and where they grow.' —
 ' Gentlemen,' says I, ' each of these
 ' is the cloathing of a particular fish.'
 — ' And where do they grow?' said they.
 ' In the lake,' says I; ' they are a liv-
 ' ing creature, who inhabit that great
 ' water; I often catch them when I am
 ' fishing; the same exercise we shall go
 ' upon to-morrow.'

I had much ado to persuade them
 they did not grow on trees, which I
 was then much more surprized at
 than some time after, that I returned
 their visit; but having satisfied them,
 and given them some possible hopes
 they might see one alive next day, they
 were very well contented, and we all
 lay down to rest.

CHAP. V.

GO A FISHING—CATCH A BEAST-
 FISH—AFRAID OF THE GUN—
 HOW PETER ALTERED HIS NET—
 FISH-DINNER FOR THE GUARDS
 —METHOD OF DRESSING AND
 EATING IT.

I Appeared before them, in the morn-
 ing, in my old jacket, and an old
 hat with brims indented almost to the
 crown, a flannel night-cap, and
 chequered shirt. ' How now, son!'
 says my father, ' what have we here?' —
 ' Sir,' says I, ' this will shew you the
 ' use of our English fashion I mentioned
 ' the other day, and the necessity of
 ' it. You see me in this indifferent
 ' habit, because my next business re-
 ' quires it; but when I come back,
 ' and have no farther dirty work to
 ' do, I shall then dress, as near as I
 ' can, to qualify me for your com-
 ' pany.'

'Are you for moving gentlemen?' says my brother; 'I believe it is time:' they then all arising, we went to the lake; where getting into my boat, and telling them, that any six of them might go with me, they never having seen such a thing before, and not much liking the looks of it, all made excuses; till my brother, assuring them it was very safe, and that he had failed in it the last trip, three or four of them, with my father, and Hally-carnie, who was very desirous of seeing me fish, got in; and we sailed a great way up the lake, taking my gun as usual with me.

It gave me exceeding delight, to see the whole body of the people then in the arkoe on the graundee; some hovering over our heads, and talking with us; others flying this way, others that, till I had pitched upon a spot to begin my operation; when rowing to shore, and quitting my boat, the whole body of people settled just by me, staring at me and my net, and wondering what I was doing. I then taking a sweep as usual, got some of the soldiers to assist me to shore with it; but when the cod of the net landed, and the fish began to dash with their tails at the water's edge, away ran all my soldiers, frightened out of their wits to think what was coming; but it being a large hale, and a shelving bank, I could not lift it to the level myself; which my brother, who had seen the sport before, perceiving, though not one of the rest stirred, lent me a hand, and we got it up.

You cannot imagine what surprize appeared in every face upon opening the net, and seeing all the fish naked: they drew up by degrees closer and closer, for I let the fish lie some time for their observation; but seeing the large fish, upon my handling them, flap their tails, they very expeditiously retired again. I then tossed several of them into the boat; but two of them being very large, and rough-scaled ugly fish, I did not think I could lift them myself, so desired assistance, but nobody stirred; I expected some of the colambs would have ordered their men to have helped me, but they were so terrified with seeing me handle them, that they could not have the conscience to order their men on so severe a duty, till a common man came to me, and

taking the tail, and I the head, we tossed them both into the boat.

I went higher up the lake than usual, in hopes of a beaft-fish to shew them; but, though I could not meet with one, I had several very great hawls, and took three or four of my lobsters, very large ones. This was the second trial I had made of my net since I had altered it, and gave me great satisfaction, for I could now take as many fish at one draught as I could before have done at ten; I had found, that though my net was very long, yet for want of a bag, or cod to inclose the fish, many that were included within it's compass would, whilst I drew round, swim to the extremes, and so get out, for want of some inlet to enter at; for which reason I sawed off the top of a tree at about ten feet from the ground, and drawing a circle of six feet diameter round the tree, on the ground, I stuck it round with small pegs, at two inches distance; then I drove the like number of nails round the top of the trunk of the tree, and straining a length of mat-line from each peg on the ground to a correspondent nail on the tree, I tied my mat-line in circles round the strained lines, from top to bottom, about two inches distance at the bottom, but at a less distance where the strained lines grew nearer to each other towards the top; and having secured all the ends, by some line twisted round them, I cut a hole in the middle of my net, and tied the large ground-end over the hole in the net, and gathered the small end up in a purse, tying it up tight; and by this means I now scarce lost any fish which once were within the sweep of my net.

Having had so good success, I had a design of returning, but thought, as I could now so easily entertain a multitude, I might as well take another haul or two, and make an handsome treat for the soldiery; then coming up to my drill's mouth, I fixed my implements for a draught there, and beginning to draw up, I found great resistance in the net, and got two or three to help me; but, coming near shore, when the company saw the net tumble and roll, and rise and fall, they all ran as if they were mad, till I called them, and told the colambs it was only one of the fish whose skins I had shewn them; upon which, by that time I had discharged

discharged the fish from the net, they were all round me again: but no sooner had he got loose, than up he rose, whirled his wings, and at the same instant uttered such a groan that my whole company retreated again, thinking me somewhat more than a man, who could face so dreadful an enemy. I entreated them to come and view it; but finding no arguments could bring them nearer, I edged round till I got him between me and the water, and shot him dead.

Upon the report of my gun, the whole field was in the air, darting and screaming, as I have often seen a flight of rooks do on the same occasion; and I am apt to believe some of them never returned again, but went directly home.

I was a little concerned to see the confusion I had caused; and laying down my gun, my brother, who though at a distance when I shot, knowing what I was at, and coming up to me, it put the rest upon their consideration; and they alighted one by one, at a distance, till they were all on the level again.

My father and the colombs, who were the first that durst approach, wondered what I had done, and how the fish came to be dead, and whence so much fire and smoke proceeded, for they were sure I brought none with me, and asked me abundance of questions; but as I knew I must have occasion for answering to the same thing twenty times over, had I entered upon an explanation there, I deferred giving them satisfaction till we came home; when all at once might be capable of hearing what was said. So I told them the most necessary thing at present was to stow the fish in the boat; for it was the largest I had ever taken, and I could not wholly do it myself. I made several efforts for help, but in vain, till the same soldier who had helped me with one of the first fish, came to my relief, and, desiring my orders what to do, assisted me; and the rest seeing the difficulty we both had to manage it, one or two more of them came up, and we shipped it on board.

I then called the colombs to me, telling them I was sorry I had given such a general disturbance to them, by shooting the fish; but, as they kept at too great a distance from me to have notice of my design, and if I had fol-

lowed them, the fish might have escaped before my return, I was obliged to do as I did, which was without any possibility of hurting them. But, as I had given them such a fright, I hoped they would this one day give me an opportunity of complimenting their guards with a fish-dinner, if we could any way contrive to dress it; for whoever did that must be able to bear the close light of a large fire. They all shook their heads but my brother, who told me he had in his retinue six men from Mount Alkoe, purposely retained for their strong light, to attend him always to Crashdoorpt, who, he believed, for the benefit of the rest, would undertake the cookery, if I would shew them how. I desired he would give them orders to attend me on the other side the lake, and I would instruct them at my landing; and then I crossed over with my booty.

Finding the Mount Alkoe men waiting for my landing, I asked if they could bear the sight of fire: they told me they were used to much greater light and flames than I had ever seen, they believed. 'Very good,' said I; 'then get into my boat, three of you, and hand out that fish to the shore.' I found they were more afraid of the fish than of the fire, for not one of them stirred till I got in and tossed out several small ones; and then taking up a large one, 'Help me, somebody!' says I, they looking a little at one another, till one of them venturing to take it, the rest fell heartily to work, and dispatched the whole lading presently. I then laid a small parcel upon my cart, for our own eating and the officers, and sending them to the grotto, I gave the cooks their charge.

'Now,' says I, 'my lads, do you serve all the rest of the fish as I do this;' cutting it open at the same time, and throwing away the guts; 'and I will send each of you such an instrument as I use here,' pointing to my knife. 'I shall order six large heaps of wood to the level, to be piled up there: when you have done the fish, do you set fire to the heaps, and let them burn till the flame is over and the coals are clear; then lay on your fish, and if any are too large to be manageable, cut them in proper pieces, and with sticks, which I will send you, turn them over and

‘over, walking round the fire, and
 ‘with the forked end of the stick tofs
 ‘the leaf off first, and afterwards the
 ‘greater; but be sure throw the fish
 ‘as far as ever you can from the fire,
 ‘amongst the men, that they may not
 ‘be obliged to come too near it: and
 ‘in this manner go on, till either they
 ‘have enough, or your fish are gone;
 ‘and when you have done, come to
 ‘the grotto for your reward.’

I then set abundance of hands to work to carry wood, to be laid in six heaps, two hundred paces from each other, and told them how to pile it. I then prepared six long taper sticks with forked ends, and ordered more hands to divide the fish equally to the piles. I sent others with salt and bread; and I ordered them to let me know when all was ready.

While these preparations were making, my tent-villitors had all dined, and my cart had returned with the beast-fish, which the company desired might be brought in; when every one passed his judgment upon it, and a long dissertation we had on the marvellous works of Collwar. I let them go on with their shew, though I could have disproved most of their conclusions from the little knowledge I had of things; but I never was knight-errant enough to oppose my sentiments to a multitude already prepossessed on the other side of the question; for this reason, because I have ever observed that where several have imbibed the same ridiculous principle in infancy, they never want arguments, though ever so ridiculous, to support it; and, as no one of them can desert it without impeaching the judgment of the rest, they encourage each other in their obstinacy, and quite out-vote a single person; and then, the laugh beginning on the strongest side, nothing is so difficult as to get it out of their hands; but when a single man in the wrong hears a just argument from a single antagonist which he cannot contradict, he imbibes it's force, and whilst that lasts, as nothing but a better argument, with better reasons, can remove it, he from thenceforth adopts his adversary's reasons for his own, to oppose against his own former opinion.

In the height of our disputations on the beast-fish, came news that the broil was going to begin; and, as I expect-

ed very good diversion at it, I invited the company to go see it, telling them, in my opinion, it would exceed the sport in taking them. We passed through the wood till we came amongst the shrubs, where I placed them to be out of harm's way; and the fire, which was now nothing but cinders, was of no inconvenience to them. They were pleased with it to perfection; for, first, the six men who walked round the fires, by the glowing light of the embers, and the shining of their graundes, looked like men on fire; then, to see each fire surrounded with a circle of men at the diameter of near two hundred paces, as close as they could well stand, by a more distant shine of the fire, had a very pleasing effect; but, when the broilers began to throw the fish about, (for each man stood with some salt and a cut of bread in his hand) to see a body of an hundred men running for it, and whilst they were stooping and scrambling for that, to see a hot fish fall on the back of one, which was whipped off by another, who, scalding his mouth with it, threw it in the face of a third; when a fourth, fifth, and sixth, pulling it in pieces, ran away with it: and to see the different postures, courses, and groupes, during this exercise and running-feast, was the most agreeable farce my guests had ever seen in their lives; and, to the great saving of my liquors, kept us in the wood for full three hours, not a soul stirring till the feast was over.

We spent best part of this evening in discourse on the passages of the day, the reflections on which not being concluded till bed-time, my adventures were postponed till the next night; but we had first concluded upon a shooting for the next morning, (for they were all extremely desirous of knowing how I did it) at a time they should have opportunity of seeing me and making remarks; and I, being unwilling they should think me a conjuror, agreed to make them masters of part of the mystery of powder and ball.

CHAP. VI.

A SHOOTING PROPOSED—ALL AFRAID OF THE GUN BUT ONE
 PRIVATE GUARD—HIS BEHAVIOUR—

VIOUR—PENDLEHAMEY, AT PETER'S REQUEST, MAKES HIM A GENERAL—PETER'S DISCOURSE THEREON—REMAINDER OF HIS STORY—THE COLAMBS RETURN.

THIS being the fifth morning, I cleaned up my best gun, and prepared my balls, and we all took a walk towards the bridge, every one admiring my gun as we went; but I could get none of them to carry it, and we had at least five hundred questions proposed about it. I told them they need not be afraid of it, for it was only wood and iron, but they knew nothing of iron. I then shewed them how I made it give fire, by snapping the cock; they thought it was very strange. I then put a little powder in the pan, and made it flash, and shewing them the empty pan, they would not be persuaded but I had taken away the powder before the flash, or else, they said, it was impossible that should be all gone upon flashing only; for they said it was a little nut, using the same word to express both nut and seed. I then desired one of them to put in some powder, and snap it himself; but having prevailed with him to try the experiment, if I had not through caution held my hand upon the barrel, the gun had been on the ground, for the moment it flashed, he let go and ran for it.

I had a great inclination to gain the better of their prejudices, and used abundance of arguments to prove the gun as innocent a thing as a twig I took up; and that it was the powder which, when set on fire, the flame thereof wanting more room than the powder itself did, forced itself, and all that opposed it, out of the mouth of the gun with such fury as to make the noise they heard; and being just come to the rock, 'Now,' says I, 'you shall see that what I tell you is true.' They told me they desired nothing more than that I would make them understand it, for it was the strangest thing they had ever seen. 'Well, then,' says I, 'observe; I put in this much powder only, and with this rag I stop it down close. Now,' says I, 'you see by the length of this stick that the rag and powder take up the space only of a finger's depth on the inside of the gun.' They saw that plainly

they said; 'But how could that kill any thing?'—'Now look again,' says I, 'I put in a little more powder, as I did before when I made a flash, and you see there is a little hole from this powder through the side of the gun to the powder within. Do you observe that this communicates with that through this hole?'—'Yes,' they said, they did. 'Now,' says I, 'when I put fire to this, it sets fire to that within, which fire turning to flame, and wanting room, bursts out at the mouth of the gun; and to shew you with what force it comes out, here handle this round ball,' giving them a bullet to handle; 'you feel how heavy it is: now, can any of you throw this ball as far as that rock?' for I stood a good hundred paces from it. They told me, 'No.'—'And don't you think,' says I, 'that if the force of the fire made by this powder can throw this ball to that rock, that force must be very great?' They said, they thought it must, but believed it to be impossible. 'But,' says I, 'if it not only throws it to the rock, but beats out a piece of the stone, must not that be much more violent?' They agreed it must. Then putting in the ball, 'Now,' says I, 'we will try.' I then ordered one to daub a part of the rock, about breast high, with some mud, and first to observe about it, if the rock was any where fresh broken or not; who, returning, reported that the rock was all of a colour and sound, but somewhat ragged all about the mud. 'Did you lay the mud on smooth?' says I. He replied, 'Yes.' Then lifting up my gun, I perceived they were creeping off; so I took it down again, and calling, reasoned with them upon their fears. 'What mischief,' says I, 'can you apprehend from this gun in my hand? Should I be able to hurt you with it, are you not all my friends or relations, could I be willing to do it? If the gun of itself could hurt, would I handle it as I do? For shame! be more courageous, rouse your reason, and stand by me; I shall take care not to hurt you. It looks as if you mistrusted my love to you, for this gun can do nothing but what I direct it to.'

By such like persuasions, rough and smooth, I prevailed upon the major part

part of the colombs and officers to stand near me to see me fire, and then I shot; but though my words had engaged them to stand it, I had no sooner snapped but the graundeers flew all open, though they closed again immediately; and then we fell to question and answer again. I desired them to walk to the rock; and sent the person who put up the mark before, to see and shew us exactly what alteration there was: he told us there was a round hole in the mud, pointing to it, which he did not leave there, and taking away the mud, a thick shiver of the rock followed it. They then all agreed, that the ball must have made both the hole in the mud and also splintered the rock; and stood in amaze at it, not being able to comprehend it: but, by all the art I had, I could not prevail with a man of them to fire the gun himself, till it had been buzzed about a good while, and at last came to my ears, that a common soldier behind said he should not be afraid of it, if the gentleman would shew him how.

I then ordered the fellow to me, and he told me, with a composed look, that it had always been his way of thinking, that what he saw another do he could do himself, and could not rest till he had tried. 'And, Sir,' says he, 'if this gun, as you call it, does not hurt you, why should it hurt me? And if you can make it hit that rock, why should not I, when you have told me how you manage it?'—'Are not you the man that first helped me up with the large fish yesterday?' says I. He told me, he was.

I was prodigiously pleased with the fellow's spirit, 'And,' says I, 'my friend, if you will, and I live, you shall hit it before you have done.' I then shewed him the sight of the gun, and how to hold it; and being perfect in that, 'Now,' says I, 'shut your left eye, and observe with your right, till this knob, and that notch, are exactly even with each other and the middle of that mark; and when they are so, pull this bit with your fore-finger, holding the gun tight to your shoulder.' He so exactly pursued my directions, that he hit the very middle of the mud; and then, without any emotion, walked up with the gun in his hand, as I had done

before; and turning to me, very gravely, 'Sir,' says he, 'it is hit.' I told him the best marksman on earth could not be sure of coming so near his mark. He stroaked his chin, and giving me the gun again, was walking to his place; but I stopped him, and seeing something so modest and sincere in his countenance and behaviour, and so generous in his spirit, I asked him to which colamb he belonged. He told me to Colamb Pendlehamby. 'To my father?' says I; 'then sure I shall not be denied.'

I took him with me to my father, who was not yet come up to the rock. 'Sir,' says I, 'there is a favour I would beg of you.'—'Son,' says he, 'what is it you can ask that I can refuse you?' Says I, 'This man belongs to your guards; now there is something so noble and daring in his spirit, and yet so meek and deserving in his deportment, that if you will load me with obligation, it is to make him an officer: he is not deserving of so ill a station as a private man.'

My father looking at me, 'Son,' says he, 'there is something to be done before he can be qualified for what you require.'—'This,' thinks I, 'is a put-off.'—'Pray, Sir,' says I, 'what can a man of courage, sense, and a cool temper, want to qualify him for what I ask?'—'Something,' says he, 'which none but myself can give; and that, at your desire, I will supply him with.' Then, my father calling him, 'Lask Nafsig, bonyoe,' says he, that is, 'Slave Nafsig, lie down.' Nafsig (for that was his name) immediately fell on his face, with his arms and hands straight by his sides; when my father, setting his left-foot on Nafsig's neck, pronounced these words: 'Lask, I give thee life, thou art a filgay!' Then Nafsig, raising himself on his knees, made obeisance to my father, and standing up, stroaked his chin; and my father taking him by the hand, in token of equality, the ceremony ceased.

'Now, son,' says my father, 'let me hear your request?'—'It is only, Sir,' said I, 'preference for the deservings, equal to his merit.' My father asked him if he understood the duty of a gorpell. He did not reply
yes,

yes, but beginning, gave a compendious sort of history of his whole duty; at which, all the colombs were very much surprized, for even his comrades were not apprized, or ever imagined, he knew more of military affairs than themselves. My father then asked him, if he knew how to behave as a cluff; but he made as little difficulty of that as the other, going through the several parts of duty in all the different branches, in peace and war, at home and abroad. 'Son,' says my father, 'it is a mystery to me, you should have found out more in an hour, than I myself could in half an age; for this man was born in my palang, of my own lask, and has been mine, and my father's, these forty years. I shall be glad if you will look on the rest of my lasks, and give me your opinion; I may have more as deserving.' I told him, such as Nasgig were not to be met with very often; and when they were found, ought to be cherished accordingly.

'Sir,' says I, 'nature works upon the same sort of materials divers ways; on some in sport, and some in earnest; and if the necessary qualifications of a great man are impressed on our mafs, it is odds but we improve regularly into one, though it may never be publickly known, or even to ourselves, till a proper occasion: for as a curious genius will be most inquisitive after, and is most an end retentive of knowledge, so no man is less ostentatious of it. He covets knowledge, not from the prospect of gain, but merely for it's own sake; the very knowing, being his recompence; and if I may presume to give you a hint, how properly to bestow your favours, let it be on persons like this; for the vain, knowing man, who is always shewing it, as he for the most part labours for it, to shew out with, and procure his rise by it, were it not for the hopes of that, would not think knowledge worth attaining; and as his rise is his aim, if he could invent any more expeditious method than that, he would not pretermitt any ill act, that might advance him according to his lust of rising. But the man who aims at perfection, from his natural inclination, must, to at-

tain his end, avoid all ill courses, as impediments to that perfection he lusts after: and that, by Nasgig's worth being so little known, I'll answer for it is his character. And this being true, yourself will deduce the consequence, which is the fitter man to bear place; for with me it is a maxim, he that labours after truth for truth's sake, (and that he surely must who proposes no worldly view in it) can't arrive at his ends by false methods; but is always the truest friend to himself and others, the truest subject to his lord, and the most faithful servant to his God.'

My father then turning to me, 'Son,' says he, 'you have enlightened me more than ever I was before, and have put me on a new way of thinking; for which I am to return you many thanks.' And the whole company doing the same; says my father, 'I lost a brave general officer lately, who was destined to the western wars, which are breaking out, and have been long debating in my mind, to whom I should commit his corps; and, but for the hazard of the enterprize, I would have now given it to Nasgig; but shall be loth to lose him so soon after I am acquainted with his worth; so will think of some other post nearer my person for him, less dangerous, though perhaps not so honourable.'

'Great Sir,' says Nasgig, 'I am too sensible of the honour already done me, to think any post wherein I may continue to serve you either too mean or too hazardous for me; and as valour is no where so conspicuous as in the greatest dangers, I shall esteem my blood spent to great advantage in any enterprize where my duty under your command leads me: I therefore the rather humbly request this dangerous post, that I may either lose my life in your service, or live to see you justified in your advancement of me by the whole nation. For what can I do, or how can I demonstrate my affection to your person and pleasure, in an inactive state?'

Here the whole rang with applause to Nasgig.

My father then giving his hand to Nasgig, in token of friendship, and his

his word for investiture in the command of that vacant post, the whole level again resounded with, 'Long live Pendlehamby, and his servant Naf-gig!'

This being the last day of my company's stay, for they had agreed to go homewards next morning, some of them moved to return the sooner, that they might have time to hear out my story. So that our stay was very little longer.

In our return home, Nafgig singled me out, to return his acknowledgments for my favour; and, viewing my gun, told me, they had no such thing growing in his country. I told him, if he had it, it would do no good without my powder. I then, at his request, described what I had heard of our method of fighting in battle in Europe; and mentioning our cannon, he said, he supposed they killed every man they hit. 'No,' says I, 'not so bad as that; sometimes they hit the flesh only, and that is commonly cured; sometimes break a leg or arm, and that may in time be cured, some so well as to be useful again, and others are cut off, and healed up again; but if the ball hits the head or vitals, it is commonly mortal.'—'O,' says he, 'give me the head or vitals, then; no broken limbs for me.'

After dinner, at their request, I went on with my story, at repairing the castle, and my escape with Glanlipze, and so on to the crocodile; when I repeated his speech to me on that account, and told them it had made such an impression upon me that I had endeavoured to make it the leading thought of my mind, and had set it down upon one of my doors at the grotto, that it might the oftener be in my sight when any difficulty arose.

One of the colombs begged pardon for interrupting, but told me, though he understood what Glanlipze meant, he could not tell how I could set what he said down at my grotto, or have it in my sight; and desired me to explain that. I would have told my guest I took it down in writing, if that would not have puzzled the cause more; but, to go the nearest way I could, I told him, we had a method in my country, of conveying to a man at a great distance whatever we have a mind to say to him; and in such a manner, that

nobody but himself would know what we would have him know. And pausing here a little, to consider the easiest method of demonstrating this to their senses, they told me they had gone as far as their conjectures could carry them, but could conclude on nothing so probable as sending it by a messenger. I told them, that in part was my way; but my messenger should not know the message he carried. That gravelled them quite, and they were unanimous that was what could not be done. By this time I had sent for a wood-coal, to write with upon my deal-table; and kneeling down to the table, I began to write, 'Honoured Sir, I send this to gain by your answer to it an account of your arrival at Arndrumstake.' I then called them all to me: 'Now,' says I, 'suppose I want to know how my father gets back to Arndrumstake, my way is this: I set down so many words as will express my meaning to my father, after the manner you see on this table, and make a little distance between each word, which is the same thing as you do in speaking; for there, if you run one word into another, and don't give each it's proper sound, who can understand you? For though you speak what contains all the words, yet, without the proper sound and distinction, it is only confusion. Do you understand that?' They told me they did. 'Then,' says I, 'these are the words I would have my father know, I being at this arkoe, and he at Arndrumstake. "Honoured Sir," and so I read on; here,' says I, 'you must take us to be countrymen, and that he and I understand both the same method. Now look, this word, which ends where you see the gap, stands for *honoured*, and this next for *Sir*, the next for *I*; and so on; and we both using the same method, and seeing each other's words, are able to open our minds at a distance.' I was now in hopes I had done, and was going on with my story; but, says one of the colombs, 'Mr. Peter, though this is a matter that requires consideration, I plainly see how you do it, by agreeing that all these strokes, put into this form, shall stand for the word *honoured*, and so on, as you say, let who will make them; but have

' not

‘not you set down there the word ‘Arndrumstake?’—‘Yes,’ says I. ‘Why, then,’ says he, ‘none of your countrymen could understand what that means.’—‘No!’ says I, smiling; ‘but they could!’ Says he, ‘You say, you agree what strokes shall stand for one word, and what for another; but then, how could your countryman, who never knew what strokes you would set down for ‘Arndrumstake, know that your strokes meant that very country?’ for that you could not have agreed upon before either of you knew there was any such place.’

I was at a loss, without spending more words than I was willing about it, how to answer this close reasoner; and talking of syllables and letters would only have perplexed the affair more, so I told him the readiest for dispatch; that as every word consisted of one or more distinct sounds, and as some of the same sounds happened in different words, we did not agree so much upon making our strokes stand for several words, as for several sounds; and those sounds, more or less of them, added together, made the particular words. ‘As for example,’ says I, ‘*Arn* is one sound, *drumn* is another sound, and *stake* is another; now, by our knowing how to set down these several sounds by themselves, we can couple them, and apply them to the making up any word, in the manner we please; and therefore he, by seeing those three sounds together, knows I mean *Arndrumstake*, and can speak it as well, though he never heard the whole word spoken together, as if he heard me speak to him.’—‘I have some little notion of what you mean,’ says he, ‘but not clear enough to express myself upon it; and so, go on! go on! And pray what did you do about the reeds?’

I then resuming my discourse where I left off, completed my narration that night; but I could perceive the water in my father’s eyes, when I came to the account of Youwarkee’s fall, and the condition I took her up in.

When I had done, they adjusted the order of their flight, for avoiding confusion, one to go so long before another, and the junior colombs to go first.

In the morning nothing was to be

heard but the gripsacks; the men were all ranged in order to go off with their respective colombs; and after all compliments passed, the junior colomb arising, walked half way to the wood, where his gripsack standing to wait for him, preceded him to the level, the next gripsack standing ready to sound as soon as the first removed; and this was the signal for the second colomb to move; so that each colomb was a quarter of a mile before the other.

My father was the last but two; but I shall never forget his tenderness at parting with his daughter and grandchildren, and I may say with myself too; for by this time he had a high opinion of me. Patty went with my father, she so much resembling my wife, that my father said; he should still have his two daughters in his sight, having her with him.

At parting, I presented Nasgig with a broad-sword; and, shewing him the use of it, with many expressions of gratitude on his part, and respect on mine, he took flight after the rest.

CHAP. VII.

PETER FINDS HIS STORES LOW—
SENDS YOUWARKEE TO THE SHIP
—RECEIVES AN INVITATION TO
GEORIGETTI’S COURT.

FOR the first few days after our company had left us, Youwarkee could not forbear a tear now and then for the loss of her father and sister; but I endeavoured not to see it, lest I should, by persuading her to the contrary, seem to oppose what I really thought was a farther token of the sweetness of her disposition; but it wore off by degrees, and having a clear stage again, it cost us several days to settle ourselves, and put our confused affairs in order; and when we had done, we blessed ourselves that we could come and go, and converse with the pleasing tenderness we had hitherto always done.

She told me, nothing in the world but her concern for so tender a father, and the fear of displeasing me if she disobliged him, should have kept her so long from me; for her life had never been so sweet and serene as with me and her children; and if she was

to begin it again, and chuse her settlement and company, it should be with me in that arkoe. I told her, though I was entirely of her opinion for avoiding a life of hurry, yet I loved a little company, if for nothing else but to advance topicks for discourse, to the exercise of our faculties; but I then agreed, it was not from mere judgment I spoke, but from fancy. 'But, 'Youwee,' says I, 'it will be proper for us to see what our friends have left us, that we don't want before the time comes about again.' Then she took her part, and I mine; and having finished, we found they would hold out pretty well, and that the first thing to be done, was to get the oil of the beast-fish.

When we came to examine the brandy and wine, I found they had suffered greatly; so I told Youwarkee, when she could spare time, she should make another flight to the ship; 'And,' says I, 'pray look at all the small casks of wine or brandy, or be they what they will, if they are not above half full, or thereabouts, they will swim, and you may send them down.' I desired her to send a fire-shovel and tongs, describing them to her; 'And there are abundance of good ropes between decks, rolled up, send them,' says I, 'and any thing else you think we want, as plates, bowls, and all the cutlasses and pistols,' says I, 'that hang in the room by the cabin: for I would, methinks, have another cargo, as it may possibly be the last; for the ship can't hold for ever.'

Youwarkee, who loved a jaunt to the ship mightily, sat very attentive to what I said, and told me, if I pleased, she would go the next day; to which I agreed.

She stayed on this trip till I began to be uneasy for her, being gone almost four days, and I was in great fear of some accident; but she arrived safe, telling me, she had sent all she could any ways pack up; and any one who had seen the arrival of her fleet would have taken it for a good ship's cargo, for it cost me full three weeks to land and draw them up to the grotto: and then we had such a redundancy of things, that we were forced to pile them upon each other, to the top of the room.

It began to draw towards long days again, when one morning, in bed, I heard the gripsack. I waked Youwarkee, and told her of it; and we both got up, and were going to the level, when we met six glumms in the wood, with a gripsack before them, coming to the grotto. The trumpeter, it seems, had been there before; but the others, who seemed to be of a better rank, had not. We saluted them, and they us; and Youwarkee knowing one of them, we desired them to walk to the grotto.

They told us, they came expressly from Georigetti's palace, with an invitation to me and Youwarkee to spend some time at his court. I let them know what a misfortune I lay under in not being born with a graundee, since Providence had pleased to dispose of me in a part of the world where alone it could have been of such infinite service to me; or I should have taken it for the highest honour to have laid myself at their master's feet: and after some other discourse, one of them pressed me to return his master my answer; for they had but a very little time to stay. I told them, they saw plainly, by bareing my breast to them, that I was under an absolute incapacity for such a journey, and gratifying the highest ambition I could have in the world; for I was pinned down to my arkoe, never more to pass the barrier of that rock. One of them then asking, if I should chuse to go, if it was possible to convey me thither, I told him, he could scarce have the least doubt, was my ability to perform such a journey equal to my inclination to take it, that I should in the least hesitate at obeying his master. 'Sir,' says he, 'you make me very happy, in the regard you shew my master; and I must beg leave to stay another day with you.' I told him, they did me great honour; but little thought what it all tended to.

We were very facetious; and they talked of the number of visitors I had had here; and they mentioned several facts which had happened, and, amongst the rest, that of Nasgig, who they said, since his return, had been introduced by Pendlehamby to the king, and was for his great prudence and penetration become Georigetti's great favourite. They told me war was upon the point of breaking

breaking out, and several other pieces of news, which, as they did not concern me, I was very easy about.

The next morning they desiring to walk, and view what was most remarkable in my arkoe, and above all to see me fire my gun, which they had heard so much of; I gratified them at a mark, and hit the edge of it, and found them quite staunch, without the least start at the report. I paid them a compliment upon it, and told them how their countrymen had behaved, even at a second firing: 'But,' says he, who was the chief spokesman, and knew, I found, as much as I could tell him, 'that second fright was from seeing death the consequence of the first; and though you had then to do mostly with soldiers, you must not think they chuse death more than others, though their duty obliges them to shun it less.'

The same person then desired me to shew him how to fire the gun; which I did, and believe he might hit the rock somewhere or other; but he did not seem to admire the sport, and I having but few balls left, did not recommend the gun to the rest.

A little before bed-time, the strangers told me, they believed I should see Nasgig next morning. I presently thought there was somewhat more than ordinary in this visit; but could no ways dive to the bottom of it.

Just before they went to rest, they ordered the trumpeter to be early on the rock next morning; and upon the first sight of Nasgig's corps, to sound notice of it, for us to be ready to receive him.

CHAP. VIII.

NASGIG COMES WITH A GUARD TO FETCH PETER—LONG DEBATE ABOUT HIS GOING—NASGIG'S UNEASINESS AT PETER'S REFUSAL—RELATES A PREDICTION TO HIM, AND PROCEEDINGS THEREON AT GEORIGETTI'S COURT—PETER CONSENTS TO GO—PREPARES A MACHINE FOR THAT PURPOSE.

WE were waked by the trumpet giving notice of Nasgig's coming; I did not care to enquire of

the strangers into the particulars of his embassy; 'For be it what it will,' thinks I, 'Nasgig is so much my friend that I can know the motives of it from him, and, or I am much deceived, he is too honest to impose upon me.' But I had but little time for thought, for upon our entering the level, we found him and his train, of at least an hundred persons, just alighting before us.

We embraced, and professed the particular pleasure fortune had done us in once more meeting together. When we arrived at the grotto, he told me he was assured I had been informed of the occasion of his visit; and that it would be the greatest honour done to his country that could be imagined. He then laid his hand on my beard, which was now of about five months growth, having never shaved it since my father went, and told me he was glad to see that. 'And are you not so to see me?' says I. 'Yes, surely,' says he, 'for I prize that for your sake.'—'But,' says I, 'pray be open with me, and tell me what you mean by my being informed of the occasion of your coming?'—'Why,' says he, 'of Georigetti's message to you; as it will be of such infinite service to our country: and,' says he, 'if you had not consented to it, the messengers had returned and stopped me.'—'True,' says I, 'one of the messengers told me the king would be glad to see me; which as I, so well as he, knew it was impossible he should, in return to his compliment, I believe I might say, what a happiness it would be to me if I could wait on him. But pray what is your immediate message; for I hear you are in great favour at court, and would never have come hither with this retinue in so much ceremony on a trifling account?'

'My dear Peter,' says Nasgig, 'know that your fame has reached far and near since I saw you before; and our state, though a large and populous one, and once of mighty power and twice it's present extent, by the revolt of the western part of it, who chose themselves a king, has been so miserably harraffed by wars, that the revolters, who are ever fomenting discontent and rebellion amongst us, will by the encroachments they daily make

'make on us, certainly reduce us at last to a province under their government; which will render us all slaves to an usurped power, set up against our lawful sovereign. Now these things were foretold long enough before they actually began to be transacted; but all being then at peace, and no prospect of what has since happened, we looked not out for a remedy, till the disease became stubborn and incurable.'—'Pray,' says I, 'by whom were the things you mention foretold?'—'By a very ancient and grave ragan,' says he. 'How long ago,' says I?—'O, above four times the age of the oldest man living,' says he. 'And when did he say it would happen,' says I? 'That,' says he, 'was not quite so clear then.'—'But how do you know,' says I, 'that he ever said any such thing?'—'Why the thing itself was so peculiar,' says he, 'and the ragan delivered it so positively, that his successors have ever since pronounced it twelve times a year publicly, word for word, to put the people in mind of it, and from whom they must hope for relief; and now the long expected time being come, we have no hopes but in your destruction of the tyrant-usurper.'—'I destroy him!' says I: 'if he is not destroyed till I do it, I fear your state is but in a bad case.'—'My good friend Peter,' says he, 'you or nobody can do it.'—'Pugh,' says I, 'Nasgig, I took you for a man of more sense, notwithstanding the prejudices of education, than to think, because you have seen me kill a beast-fish that could not come to hurt me, at the distance of twenty paces, that I can kill your usurper at the distance he is from me.'—'No, my good friend,' says Nasgig, 'I know you take me to have more judgment than to think so.'—'Why, what else can I do?' says I, 'unless he will come hither to be killed by me.'—'Dear Peter,' says he, 'you will not hear me out.'—'I will,' says I; 'say on.'—'You, as I said before, being the only person that can, according to our prediction, destroy this usurper, and restore peace among us, my master Georigetti, and the whole state of Normnbdsgrfutt, were going to send a splendid embassy to you; but your father

advising to repose the commission wholly in me, they all consented to it, and I am come to invite you over to Brandleguarp for that purpose. I know you will tell me you have not the graundee, and cannot get thither: but I am assured you have what is far better; the wisdom you have will help you to surmount that difficulty, which our whole moucheratt cannot get over. And I am sure did you apply half the thought to accomplish it, you seem to do to invent excuses against it, you would easily overcome that. And now, dear friend,' continues he, 'refuse me not; for as my first rise was owing to your favour, so my downfall as absolutely attends your refusal.'

'Dear Nasgig,' says I, 'you know I love you, and could refuse you nothing in my power; but for me to be mounted in the air, I know not how, over these rocks, and then drowned by a fall into the sea, which is a necessary consequence of such a mad attempt; and all this in prosecution of a project founded upon an old wife's tale, is such a chimera as all men of sense would laugh at; as if there was no way of destroying me, but with a guard of an hundred men, to soufe me into the wide ocean. A very pretty conqueror of rebels I should prove, truly, kicking for life, till the next wave sent me to the bottom.'

Nasgig looked then so grave, I almost thought I should have heard no more of it; but, after a short pause, 'Peter,' says he, 'I am sorry you make so light of sacred things; a thing foretold so long ago by a holy ragan, kept up by undoubted tradition ever since, in the manner I have told you, in part performed, and now waiting your concurrence for it's accomplishment; but if I cannot prevail with you, though I perish at my return, I dread to think you may be forced without thanks to perform what generously to undertake will be your greatest glory.'

'Pray,' says I, 'Nasgig, (for now I perceive you are in earnest) what may this famous prediction be?'

'Ah, Peter!' says Nasgig, 'to what purpose should I relate so sacred a prediction to one who, though the most

‘most concerned in it, makes such a jest of it?’

His mentioning me as concerned in it, raised my curiosity once more to desire a relation of it. ‘Why should I relate it,’ says he, ‘if you are resolved not to fulfil it?’ I told him I had no resolution against any thing that related to my own good, or that of my friends; ‘But the greatest question with me,’ says I, ‘is, whether I am at all concerned in it.’—‘O clearly,’ says he, ‘there is no doubt of it; it must mean you or nobody.’ I told him I must judge by the words of it, that I was the person intended by it; and till that was apparent to my reason, it would be difficult to procure my consent to so perilous an undertaking. ‘And,’ says he, ‘will you upon hearing it, judge impartially, and go with me if you can take the application to yourself?’—‘I cannot go quite so far as that,’ says I; ‘but this I’ll promise you, I’ll judge impartially, and if I can so apply it to myself, that it must necessarily mean me, and no other, and if you convince me I may go safely, I will go.’

Nasfig was so rejoiced at this, he was at a loss how to express himself. ‘My dear Peter,’ says he, ‘you have given me new life! our state is free! our persons free! we are free! we are free! And, Peter,’ says he, ‘now I have given vent to my joy, you shall hear the prediction.’

‘You must know, this holy ragan lived four ages ago; and from certain dreams and revelations he had had, set himself to overturn our country-worship of the Great Image; and by his sanctity of life, and sound reasonings, had almost effected it under the assistance of Begsurbeck, then our king, who had fully embraced his tenets; but the rest of the ragans opposing him, and finding he could not advance his scheme, he withdrew from the ragans to a close retirement for several years; and just before his death, sending for the king and all the ragans, he told them he should certainly die that day; and that he could not die at peace till he had informed them what had been revealed to him; desiring them to take notice of it, not as a conjecture of his own, but a certain verity which should hereafter come to pass.

Says he, “You know you have rejected the alteration in your religion I proposed to you; and which Begsurbeck, here present, would have advanced: and now I must tell you what you have brought upon yourselves. As for Begsurbeck, he shall reign the longest and most prosperously of all your former and future kings; but in twice his time out-run, the west shall be divided from the east, and bring sorrow, confusion, and slaughter, till the waters of the earth shall produce a glumm, with hair round his head, swimming and flying without the graundee; who, with unknown fire and smook shall destroy the traitor of the west, settle the ancient limits of the monarchy, by common consent establish what I would have taught you, change the name of this country, introduce new laws and arts, add kingdoms to this state, and force tributes from the bowels of the earth, of such things as this kingdom shall not know till then, and shall never afterwards want; and then shall return to the waters again. Take care,” says he, “you miss not the opportunity when it may be had; for once lost, it shall never, never more return; and then, woe, woe, woe, to my poor country!” The ragan having said this, expired.

‘This prediction made so great an impression on Begsurbeck, that he ordered all the ragans singly before him, and heard them repeat it; which having done, and made himself perfect in it, he ordered it to be pronounced twelve times in the year on particular days, in the moucheratt, that the people might learn it by heart; that they and their children being perfect in it, might not fail of applying it, when the man from the waters should appear with proper description.

‘Thus, Peter,’ says he, ‘has this prediction been kept up in our memories as perfectly as if it had but just been pronounced to us.’

‘Tis very true,’ says I, ‘here may have been a prediction, and it may have been, as you say, handed down very exactly from Begsurbeck’s days till now; but how does that affect me? how am I concerned in it? Surely, if any marks would have de-

‘noted

“noted me to be the man, some of the colambs who have so lately left me, and were so long with me, would have found them out in my person, or among the several actions of my life I recounted to them.”

“Upon the return of the colambs from you,” says Nafgig, “they told his majesty what they had heard and seen at Graundeviolet, and the story was conveyed through the whole realm: but every man has not the faculty of distinction. Now, one of the ragans, when he had heard of you, applying you to the prediction, and that to you, soon found our deliverer in you; and at a publick moucheratt, after first pronouncing the prediction, declared himself thereon to the following effect—

“May it please your majesty—and you the honourable colambs—the reverend ragans—and people of this state,” says he—“you all know that our famous King Begfurbeck, who reigned at the time of this prediction, did live sixty years after it in the greatest splendor, and died at the age of one hundred and twenty years, having reigned full ninety of them; and herein you will all agree with me, no king before or since has done the like. You all likewise know, that within two hundred years after Begfurbeck’s death, that is, about twice his reign of ninety years out-run, the rebellion in the west began, which has been carried on ever since; and our strength diminishing as theirs increases, we are now no fair match for them, but are fearful of being undone. So far you will agree matters have tallied with the prediction: and now, to look forward to the time to come, it becomes us to lay hold of the present opportunity for our relief; for that, once slipped, will never return; and, if I have any skill in interpretations, now is the time of our deliverance.

“Our prediction foretells the past evils, their increase and continuance, till the waters of the earth shall produce a glumm. Here I must appeal to the honourable colambs present, if the waters have not done so in the person of glumm Peter of Graundeviolet, as they have received it from his own report.”

“All the colambs then rising, and making reverence to the king, declared it was most true.

“The next part,” says the ragan, “is, he is to be hairy round his head; and how his person in this respect agrees with the prediction, I beg leave to be informed by the colambs.”

“The colambs then rising, declared, that having seen and conversed with him, they could not observe any hair on the fore-part of his head; but I answered, that when I left you, I well remembered your having short stubbs of hair upon your cheeks and chin; which I had no sooner mentioned, than your father arose, and told the assembly, that though he did not mind it whilst he was with you, yet he remembered that his daughter, a year before, had told him that you had hair on your face before as long as that behind.

“This again putting new life into the ragan, he proceeded—“Then let this,” says he, “be put to the trial by an embassy to glumm Peter; and if it answers, there will be no room to doubt the rest. Then,” says the ragan, “it is plain by the report of the colambs, that glumm Peter has not the graundee.

“As to the next point, he is to swim and fly. Now I am informed he swims daily in a thing he calls a boat.”—To which the colambs all agreed. “And now,” says he, “that he flies too, that must be fulfilled; for every word must have a meaning, and that indeed he must do if ever he comes hither. I therefore advise, that a contrivance be somehow found out for conveying glumm Peter through the air to us, and then we shall answer that part of the prediction; and I think, and do not doubt, but that may be done.

“Now,” says he, “let us see the benefit predicted to us upon the arrival of glumm Peter. Our words are—“Who, with unknown fire and smoak, shall destroy the traitor of the west.”—What can be plainer than this? For I again appeal to the colambs for his making unknown fire and smoak.

“Thus far,” says the ragan, “we have succeeded happily towards a
“discovery.”

"discovery of the person; but it ends not here with the death of the traitor; but such other benefits are to accrue as are mentioned in the following part of the prediction: they are blessings yet to come; and who knows the end of them?"

"I hope," says the ragan, "I have given satisfaction in what I have said, and shall now leave it to the care of those whose business it is to provide, that none of those woes pronounced against us may happen, by missing the time which, when gone, will never return."

"The assembly were coming to a resolution of sending you a pompous embassy, but your father prevailed for sending me only; "For," says he, "my son thinks better of him than of the rest of our whole race." So this important affair was committed to me, with orders to prepare a conveyance for you, which I cannot attempt to do; but shall refer myself to your more solid judgment in the contrivance of it."

I had sat very attentive to Nasgig, and from what he had declared, could not say but there was a very great resemblance between myself and the person predicted of; "But, then," says I, "they are idolaters; Providence would not interpose in this affair, when all the glory of it's success must redound to an idol. But," says I, "has not the same thing often happened from oracular presages, where the glory must redound to the false deity? But what if, as is predicted, their religion is to be changed to the old ragan's plan, and that will be to the abolition of idolatry? I know not what to say; but if I thought my going would gain a single soul to the eternal Truth, I would not scruple to hazard my life in the attempt."

I then called in Youwarkee, told her the whole affair of the prediction, which she had often heard, I found, and could have repeated. I told her that the king and states had pitched on me as the person intended by their prediction, and that Nasgig was sent to fetch me over: "And, indeed," says I, "Youwee, if this be a true prediction, it seems very applicable to me as far as I can see."—"Yes, truly," says she, "so it does, now I consider it in the light you say the ragan puts

it."—"Why," says I, "prophecies and predictions are never so plain as to mention names; but yet, upon the solution, they become as intelligible as if they did, the circumstances tallying so exactly. But what would you have me do? Shall I, or shall I not, go?"—"Go!" says she, "how can you go?"—"O," says I, "never fear that. If this is from above, means will soon be found; Providence never directs effects without means."

Youwarkee, whose head ran only on the dangers of the undertaking, had a violent conflict with herself; the love of me, of her children, and of her country, divided her so, she was not capable of advising. I pressed her opinion again, when she told me to follow the dictates of my own reason; "And, but for the dread of losing you, and for my children's sakes," says she, "I should have no choice to make when my country is at stake: but you know best."

I told Youwarkee that I really found the prediction the plainer the more I thought of it; and that, above all, the change of religion was the uppermost: "For if I can reduce a state from the misery and bondage of idolatry, to a true sense of the Supreme Being, and seemingly by his own direction, shall I fear to risk my own life for it; or, will he suffer me to perish till somewhat at least is done towards it? And how do I know but the whole tendency of my life has been by impulse hither for this very purpose? My dear Youwee," says I, "fear nothing, I will go."

I called Nasgig, and told him my resolution, and that he had nothing now to do but prepare a means of conveying me. He said, he begged to refer that to me, for my own thoughts would suggest to me both the safest and easiest means.

I wanted to venture on the back of some strong glumm; when Nasgig told me, no one could endure my weight so long a flight. But what charmed me most was, the lovely Youwarkee offered to carry me herself if she could; "And if I can't hold out," says she, "my dear, we can but at last drop both together." I kissed the charming creature with tears in my eyes, but declined the experiment.

I told

I told Nasgig I wanted to divide my weight between two or four glumms, which I believed I could easily do; and asked if each could hold out with a fourth part of my weight. He told me there was no doubt of that; but he was afraid I should drop between their graundeeds, he imagining I intended to lie along on their backs, part of me on each of them, or should bear so much on them as to prevent their flight. I told him I did not purpose to dispose of myself in the manner he presumed, but if two or four could undoubtedly bear my weight so long a flight, I would order myself without any other inconvenience to my bearers than their burden. He made light of my weight between four, as a trifle, and said, he would be one with all his heart. 'Nay,' says I, 'if four cannot hold out, can eight?' He plainly told me, as he knew not what I meant, he could say nothing to it, nor could imagine how I could divide so small a body as mine into eight different weights, for it seemed impossible, he said, to him; but if I would shew him my method, he would then give me his opinion.

I then, leaving him, took out my tools: I pitched upon a strong broad board my wife had sent me from the ship, about twelve feet long, and a foot and half broad; upon the middle of which I nailed down one of my chairs; then I took one cord of about thirty-four feet long, making hand-loops at each end, and nailed it down in the middle to the under side of my board, as near as I could to the fore-end of it; and I took another cord of the same length and make, and this I nailed within three feet of the farther end of my board. I then took a cord of about twenty feet long, and nailed about three feet before the foremost, and a fourth of the same length, at the farther end of my board; by which means, the first and third ropes being the longest, and at such a distance from the short ropes, the glumms who held them, would fly so much higher and forwarder than the short rope ones, that they and their ropes would be quite out of the others way, which would not have happened if either the ropes had been all of one length, or nearer to or farther from one another: and then considering that if I should re-

ceive a sudden jerk or twitch, I might possibly be shook off my chair, I took a smaller rope to tie myself with fast to the chair, and then I was sure, if I fell into the sea, I should at least have the board and chair with me, which might possibly buoy me up till the glumms could descend to my assistance.

Having carried the machine down to the level with the help of two of Nasgig's men, he being out on a walk, and having never seen it, I ordered one of the men to sit upon the chair, and eight more to hold by the loops, and rise with him; but, as I found it difficult at their first rising, not being able to mount all equally, to carry the board up even, and the back part rising first, the front pitched against the ground, and threw the fellow out of the chair: I therefore bade them stop, and ordering eight others to me, said I, 'Hold each of you one of these ropes as high as you can over your heads; then,' says I, to the eight bearers, 'mount on your graundeeds, and come round behind him in the chair gently, two and two, and take each of you a loop, and hover with it till you are all ready, and then rise together, keeping your eye on the board that it rises neither higher at one end or one side than the other; and see you all feel your weight alike; then fly cross the lake and back again.' They did so, and with as much ease, they told me, as if they had nothing in their hands; and the man rode with so much state and composure, he said, that I longed to try it myself; so, shifting places with the glumm, I mounted the chair, and tying myself round, I asked if any one knew which way Nasgig walked: one of them pointing to where he saw him just before in the wood, I ordered them to take me up as before, and go that way.

Upon coming to the place where I expected Nasgig was, I hallooed and called him; who, knowing my voice, ran to the skirt of the wood; and seeing me mounted in my flying chair, I jokingly told him I was going, if he had any commands; but he mounting immediately came up to me, and viewing me round, and seeing the pleasure the men seemed to carry me with, says he, 'Are you all sure you can carry him

‘him safe to Battringdrigg?’ They all replied, ‘Yes, with ease.’—‘This,’ then, says he, ‘is your doom; if you perform it not, every one shall be slit; but if you carry the deliverer safe, you are filgays every man of you!’ he verily thinking I was then going off; but I undeceived him, by ordering them to turn about and set me down where I was taken up.

Nasgig alighting, and viewing my contrivance, ‘This, Peter,’ says he, ‘is but a very plain thing.’—‘It is so,’ says I, ‘but it is as far as my ingenuity could reach.’—‘Ah, Peter!’ says he, ‘say not so, for if the greatest difficulties, as I and all my nation thought it would be to convey you to them, are so plain and easy to you, what must lesser things be?’ No, Peter, I did not call it plain because it might be easily done when it was seen, but in respect to the head that formed it; for the nearest way to attain one’s end is always the best, and attended for the most part with fewest inconveniences; and I verily think, Peter, though we believe the rise or fall of our state wholly depends on you, you must have stayed at Graundevolt but for your own ingenuity. Well, and ‘when shall we set out?’ says he. I told him it would take up some time to settle the affairs of my family, and to consider what I had best take with me; and required at least three days, being as little as I could have told him for that purpose.

Nasgig, who as he was an honest man, and for making the best for his patrons, was sorry it was so long, though he imagining at the same time it was short enough for one who was to go on such an enterprize, was glad it was no longer; and immediately dispatched a trumpet express with notice, that on the fourth day he should beat the height of Battringdrigg, and that having myself formed a machine for that purpose, I would accompany him.

I began next to consider what part I had to act at Doorpt Swangeanti, (for I neither could nor would call it by any other name when I came thither) and what it was they expected from me. ‘I am,’ says I, ‘to kill a traitor; good, that may be, but then I must take a gun and ammunition; and

‘why not some pistols and cutlasses?’ ‘If I cannot use them all, I can teach others who may: I will take several of them, and all my guns but two, and I will leave a pair of pistols; I may return and want them. I will take my two best suits of cloaths, and other things suitable; for, if I am to perform things according to this prediction, it may be a long time before I get back again.’ Thinks I, ‘Youwarkee shall stay here with the children, and if I like my settlement I can stand for her at any time.’ I then began to see the necessity of making at least one more machine to carry my goods on: ‘And,’ says I, ‘as they will be very weighty, I must have more lasks to shift in carrying them, for I will retain sixteen for my own body-machine, in order to relieve each other; and as the distance is so great, I will not be stinted for want of fresh hands.’

Being come to this resolution, I called Nasgig, and ordered eight fresh lasks to attend my baggage; these he soon singled out: so, having settled all matters with my wife, and taken leave of her and the children, I charged them not to stir out of the grotto till I was gone; and leaving them all in tears, I set out with a heavy heart for the level, where the whole convoy and my two machines waited for me.

CHAP. IX.

PETER’S SPEECH TO THE SOLDIERY—OFFERS THEM FREEDOM—HIS JOURNEY—IS MET BY THE KING—THE KING SENT BACK, AND WHY—PETER ALIGHTS IN THE KING’S GARDEN—HIS AUDIENCE—DESCRIPTION OF HIS SUPPER AND BED.

WHEN we came to the level, I desired Nasgig to draw all his men into a circle as near as they could stand; I then asked them who would undertake to carry me; when not a man but proffered his service, and desired to have the post of honour, as they called it. I told them my question was only in case of necessity, to know whom I might depend upon, for my bearers were already provided, having accidents. ‘But, my friends,’ says I,

'as you are equally deserving for the offered service, as if you were accepted, are any of you desirous of being filgays?' They all answering together, 'I, I, I!'—'Nasfig,' says I, 'you and I must come to a capitulation before I go, and your honour must be pledged for performance of articles.'

I began with telling them what an enemy I was to slavery; 'And,' says I, to Nasfig, 'as I am about to undertake what no man upon earth ever did before; to quit my country, my family, my every other conveniency of life, for I know not what, I know not where, and from whence I shall never return; I must be indulged, if I am ever so fortunate as to arrive safe in your country, in the satisfaction of seeing all these my fellow-travellers as happy as myself; for which reason I must insist upon every man present alighting with me in safety, being made free the moment we touch the ground: and unless you will engage your honour for this, I will not stir a step farther.'

Nasfig paused for an answer; for though my bearers were his own lasks, and he could dispose of them at pleasure, yet, as the rest were the kings, he knew not how far he might venture to promise for them; but being desirous to get me over the rock, fearing I might still retract my purpose, he engaged to procure their freedom of the king. And this, I thought, would make the men more zealous in my service.

I then permitting them to take me up, we were over the rock as quick as thought; and when I had a little experienced the flight, I perceived I had nothing to fear; for they were so dextrous on the graundee, that I received not the least shock all the way, or scarce a wry position, though every quarter of an inch at hand made a considerable deflection from the perpendicular. We shifted but twice till we came to Battringdrigg; the manner of which I directed as I sat in my chair: for I ordered the new man to hover over him he was to relieve, and reaching down his hand to meet the others, which were held up with a rope, the old bearer sunk beneath the chair, and the reliever took his course. This we did one by one, till all were chang-

ed; but there was one, a stout young fellow, at the first shortrope on my right-hand, who observing me to eye him more than the rest, in a bravado would not be relieved before we arrived at Battringdrigg arkoe; and I afterwards took him into my family.

As it was now somewhat advanced into the light season, I had hopes of a tolerable good prospect; but had it been quite light, I should have been never the better for it. I had been upon very high mountains in the inland parts of Africa; but was never too high to see what was below me before, though very much contracted; but here, in the highest of our flight, you could not distinguish the globe of the earth but by a sort of mist, for every way looked alike to me; then sometimes on a cue given, from an inexpressible height my bearers would dart as it were sloping like a shooting-star, for an incredible distance, almost to the very surface of the sea, still keeping me as upright as a Spaniard on my seat. I asked them the reason of their so vast descent, when I perceived the labour they had afterwards to attain the same height again. They told me, they not only eased their graundees by that descent, but could fly half as far again in a day, as by a direct (they meant horizontal) flight; for though it seemed laborious to mount so excessive high, yet they went on at the same time at a great rate; but when they came to descend again, there was no comparison in their speed. And, on my conscience, I believe they spoke true, for in their descents I think no arrow could have reached us.

In about sixteen hours, for I took my watch with me, we alighted on the height of Battringdrigg; when I thought I had returned to my own arkoe, it was so like it, but much larger. Here we rested four hours; I opened my chest, and gave each of my bearers a drop of brandy. Nasfig and I also just wetted our mouths, and eat a piece of preserve to moisten us; the rest of the lasks sitting down, and feeding upon what they had brought with them in their colapets; for their method is, when they take long flights, to carry a number of hard round fruits, flat like my cream-cheeses, but much less, which containing a sort of flower they eat dry; then drinking, that swells, and fills

fills them as much as a good meal of any thing else would. Here we met with abundance of delightful pools of water on the vast flat of the rocks. They told me, in that arkoë the young glumms and gawreys came in vast flights separately; to divert themselves on the fine lake of waters, and from thence went sometimes as far as my arkoë, for that purpose; but that was but seldom.

When we had sufficiently rested, they shut their colapets, which sometimes hung down from their necks, and were sometimes swung round to their backs, and crossing the arkoë and another large sea; but nothing comparable to the first, we arrived in about six hours more to the height of the white mountains, which Nasgig told me were the confines of Georigetti's territories; 'But,' thinks I, 'it may belong to whom it will for the value of it; for nothing could be more barren than all the top of it was; but the inside of it made amends for that, by the prodigious tall and large trees it abounded with, full of the strangest kinds of fruits I had ever seen; and these trees most of them seemed to grow out of the very stone itself, not a peck of dirt being to be collected near them. Without-side of these mountains, it was scarce darker than at my arkoë; for I made all the observation my time would allow me; when spying at a vast distance several lights which were unusual things to me in that country, they told me, the largest was the burning mountain Al-koe: this I remembered to have heard the name of upon some former occasion, though I could not recollect what; and that the rest were of the same sort, but smaller. I asked if they were in Georigetti's territories. They said no, they belonged to another king formerly, whose subjects were as fond of fire as Georigetti's were of avoiding it; and that many of them worked with it always before them, and made an insufferable noise by it.

At hearing the above relation, an impression struck my fancy, that they might be a sort of smiths or workers in iron, or other metals; and I wished myself with them, for I had a mighty notion of that work, having been frequently at a neighbouring forge when a boy, and knew all their tools, and resolved to get all the information I

could of that country some other time; for our company drawing to their posts, and preparing to set forward again, I could have no more talk now; and you must know, I had observed so many idle rascals before I left England, who could neither strike a stroke, nor stir a foot, whilst you talked with them, that I feared if I asked questions by the way, they should in answering me neglect their duty, and let me drop.

When we came near our journey's end, Nasgig asked me where I would please to alight. I told him I thought at my father's; for though I came on a visit to the king, it would not shew respect to go before him just off a journey. But I might have spared me the trouble of settling that point; for we were not gone far from the Black Mountain, it going by that name within side, though it is called the White without, before we heard the gripfacks, and a sort of squeaking or screaming musick, very loud. Nasgig told me the king was in flight. I asked him, how he knew that, for I could see nobody. He knew it, he said, by the gripfack, and the other musick, which never played but on that occasion; and, presently after, I thought the whole kingdom were on the graundee, and was going to order my bearers back to the mountain, for fear of the concourse. Thinks I, 'They will jostle me down out of civility, and I shall break my neck to gratify their curiosity.' So I told Nasgig, if he did not somehow stop the multitude, I would turn back for the mountain, for I would never venture into that crowd of people.

Nasgig sprung away to the king, and informed him; but the king fearing the people should be disgusted at his sending them back, gave orders for the whole body to file off to the right and left, and taking a vast sweep each way, to fall in behind me; but upon no account to come near me for fear of mischief. This was no sooner said than done, and all spreading into two vast semicircles, met in a train just behind my chair.

Nasgig had also persuaded the king to retreat back to the palace, telling him it was not with me as with them, who could help themselves in case of accident; but as I was under the

guidance of others, and on a foundation he should scarce, in my condition, have ventured upon, he was sure I should be better satisfied with his intended respect only, than to receive it there: 'But,' says he, 'that your majesty may see his contrivance, I will cause him to alight in the palace-garden, where you may have the pleasure of viewing him in his machine.'

The king returning, ordered all the colombs, who waited my arrival, to assemble in council again; and as I went over the city, I was surprized to see all the rock of which it consisted quite covered with people, besides prodigious numbers in the air, all shouting out peals of welcome to me; and as we were then but little above their heads, every one had something to say of me; one wondering what I had got on, another swearing he saw hair on my face as long as his arm; and in general, every one calling on the Image for my safety.

The king was present when I alighted in the garden; and himself taking me from my chair, I bent on one knee to kiss his hand; but he took me in his arms, called me his father, and told me, he hoped I would make his days equal in glory to his great ancestor Begfurbeck. We complimented some time, before he took me into a small refectory in the garden, and gave me some of his sort of wine; which I found was loaded with rams-horn, and some dried and moist sweetmeats. He then told me, I had a piece of ceremony to go through, after which he hoped to have me to himself. I told him, whatever forms of state were customary, they become necessary, and I should obey him.

His majesty then called one of the persons in waiting, and telling him he was going to the room of audience, ordered him to conduct me thither forthwith.

Following my guide, after a long walk through a sort of piazza, we entered under a stately arch, curiously carved, into a very spacious room, lighted with infinite numbers of globe-lamps; where he desired me to sit down on a round stone pedestal covered with leaves, and all round the sides of it were running foliages exquisitely wrought; on the walls were carved figures of glumms in several actions, but chiefly

in battle, or other warlike exercises, in alto-relievo, very bold; with other devices interspersed. I sat down, having first paid my submission to the throne, and to the several colombs who sat on the king's right and left, down the sides of the room.

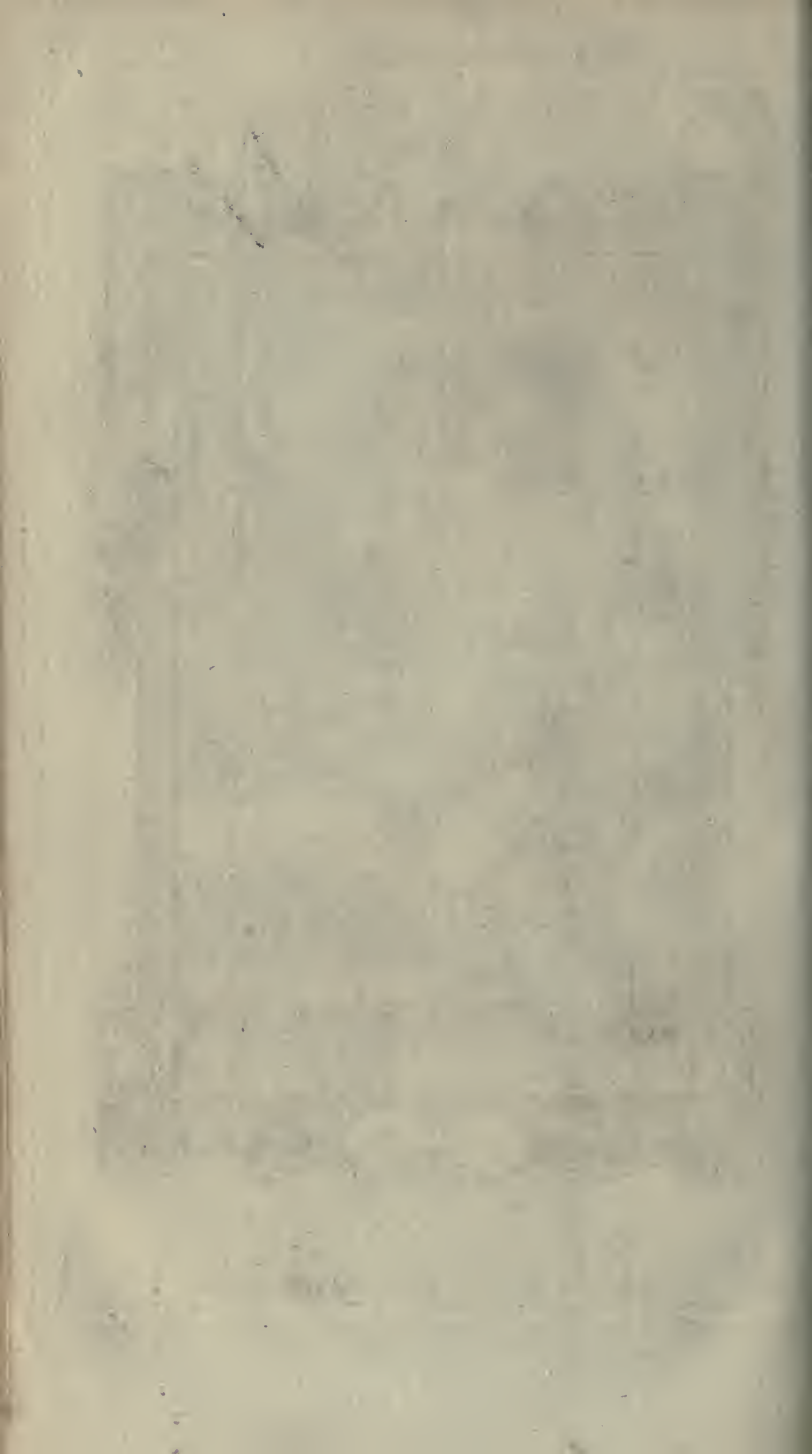
The person then who introduced me, going into the middle of the room, spoke to this effect—'Mighty king—and you honourable lords his colombs—here is present the glumm Peter of Graundevolet; I wait your commands where to dispose him.'

Then the king and all the colombs arising, another person stepped forth, and looking at me, for I was standing, 'Glumm Peter of Graundevolet,' says he, 'I am to signify to you that the mighty King Georigetti, and all his honourable colombs, congratulate your arrival in Normbdsgrutt, and have commanded me to give you rank according to your merit.' Then the king and colombs sat down, and I was led to the king's right-hand, and placed on the same stone with, but at some small distance from, his majesty.

The king then told me the great pleasure I had done him and the colombs, in my so speedy arrival upon their message; but said, he would give me no farther trouble now, than to know how I chose to be served; and desired me to give orders to a bash he would send to me, for whatever I wanted; and then giving orders to a bash to shew me my lodgings, I was permitted to retire to refresh myself.

I was then conducted to my apartment, up a sloping flight of stone, very long, with a vast arch over my head; I believe it might be fifty paces long at least, but being a very broad easy ascent, and smooth, it was not in the least fatiguing. All the way I went, were the same sorts of globe-lights as in the audience-room. The stair-case, if I may call it so, it answering the same purpose, was most beautifully carved, both sides and top; at length I came into a very large gallery, at least fourscore paces long, and about twenty broad; on each side of which hung the same globes. At the farther end of this gallery I entered by an arch, very narrow, but most neatly wrought into an oval room; in the middle of this room, on the right-hand, was another small neat archway;





way; entering through which about ten paces, there were two smaller arches to the right and left, and within them, with an easy ascent of about three paces, you came to a flat trough of stone, six or seven feet long, and about the same width; these, I understood by my bath, were the beds to lie on. I asked him, if they were used to lie on the bare stone. He told me some did; but he had orders to lay me on dossee; and presently up came four fellows with great matts, as I took them for by my globe-light, full of something, which by their so easily carrying so great bulk, I perceived was very light. They pitched it down upon my stone bedstead, and first with great sticks, and then with small switches having beat it soundly, retired.

Whilst I was looking about at the oddity of the place, I found my bath was gone too. 'So,' says I, 'all gone! I suppose they intend I shall now go to bed.' I then went into my bed-chamber, for there were globe-lights there too, and observing my bed lay full four feet above the stone, and sloping higher to the sides and head, I went to feel what it was; but laying my hand upon it, it was so soft I could feel no resistance till I had pressed it some way; and it lay so light, that a fly must have sunk upon it.—'Well,' thinks I, 'what if I never lay thus before, I believe I have lain as bad!'

I then took a turn into my oval room again, and observed the floor, sides, and all was stone, as smooth as possible, but not polished; and the walls and cieling, and in short every place, where they could be ornamental, were well adorned with carvings as can be conceived.

Though nobody came near me yet, I did not care to be too inquisitive all at once, but I longed to know what they burnt in the globes, which gave so steady a light, and yet seemed to be inclosed quite round, top and sides, without any vent-hole for the smoke to evaporate. 'Surely,' thinks I, 'they are a dullish glass,' for they hung almost above my touch, 'and must be exceeding hot with the fire so inclosed, and have some small vent-hole, thought I can't see it.' Then standing on tip-toe to feel, it struck quite cold to my finger; but I could only reach to touch that, or any of the rest, being all of one height.

Whilst I was musing thus, I heard the sound of voices coming along the gallery; and presently came a train of servants, with as much victuals as an hundred men could eat, and wines proportionable; they set it down at the upper end of the oval room, on a flat of stone, which on making the room had been left in the upper bend of the oval quite cross it, about table high, for that purpose. These eatables, such as were liquid, or had sauces to them, were served up in a sort of grey stone-bowls; but the dry were brought in neat wooden baskets of twig-work.

The servants all retiring into the gallery, except my bath, I asked him, if any body was to eat with me: he told me, 'No.'—'I wonder,' says I, 'they should send me so much, then.' He replied, it was the allowance of my apartment by his majesty's orders; which silenced me.

I believe there were twenty different things on the table, inasmuch that I did not know where to begin, and heartily wished for an excuse to get rid of my bath, who stood close at my elbow, that I might have smelt, and tasted, before I helped myself to any thing; for I knew not what any one thing was.

In this perplexity, I asked my bath, what post he was in under his majesty. He said, one of the fifty bathes appointed to be near the king's favourites when at court. 'And pray,' said I, 'are you the person to attend me?' He was, he said, the principal to wait on my person; but there were at least sixty others, who had different offices in this apartment. 'I would be glad,' said I, 'to know your name, that I may the more readily speak to you.' He told me his name was Quilly. 'Then, pray, Quilly,' says I, 'do you know what is become of my baggage and my chair?' I found, though he guessed at my baggage, he was puzzled at the name of chair; 'My seat,' says I. 'O, I understand you,' says he. 'Then, pray, will you go bring me word of them, and see them brought safe up into the gallery.' He tripped away on my errand. 'So,' thinks I, 'now I am fairly rid of you!' but I had scarce turned any of my viands over, before I found he had but stepped into the gallery, to send some of the idle fellows in waiting there; and this putting

ting me to a nonplus, 'Quilly,' says I, 'you know I am a stranger here; and as different countries have different ways and customs, as well of dressing their eatables as other things, and these dishes being dressed contrary to my custom, I shall be glad if you will name some of them to me, that I may know them when I see them again.'

Quilly began with this, and run on to that, which was a fine dish; and the other few but the king have at their tables: 'And here,' says he, 'is a dish of padfi; and there —' 'Hold,' 'hold,' says I, 'Quilly! let's try these first, before you proceed;' for I remembered, at my grotto, they all eat my fish for padfi, and I cut a slice of it, (for I always carried my clasp-knife in my pocket, and they had no such thing there) and laying it on a round cake I took for my trencher, I tasted it, and found it so, to my apprehension, in the palate; but it did not look or flake like fish, as I observed by the slices they had cut it into; for all the victuals were in long slices ready to bite at. I asked him if these things were not all cut, and with what; (for I understood they had no knives, shewing him mine:) he said the cook cut it with a sharp stone. I then asked him the names of several other things, and at last he came to crullmott; which having heard of before, I now tasted, and could have sworn it had been a hashed fowl. I asked him if crullmotts were very common; he told me 'Yes,' towards the bottoms of the mountains there were abundance of crullmott-trees. 'No, no,' says I, 'not trees; I mean fowls, birds.' — 'I don't know what they are,' said he; 'but these crullmotts grow on very large trees.' Indeed, I did not know yet what I was at; 'But,' says I, 'if your fowls do, sure your fish don't grow on trees too!' — 'We have none of them,' says he, 'in this country.' — 'Why,' says I, 'it is but this moment I tasted one.' — 'I don't know,' then, said he, 'where the cook got it.' — 'Why, here,' says I, 'what you call padfi I call fish.' — 'Aye,' padfi,' says he, 'grows upon a bush in the same woods.' — 'Well done,' says I, 'this is the first country I was ever in where the fish and fowl grew on trees; it is ten to one but I meet

'with an ox growing on some tree by the tail before I leave you.'

I had by this time, out of these two and some other pickings, made up a very good meal; and putting my knife into my pocket, desired something to drink. My bash asked me what I pleased to have; I told him, any thing to take a good draught of. Then he filled me a bott of wine, very well tasted, though too sweet for meals; but putting some water to it, it did very well.

My messengers being returned, and having set all my things in the gallery, I desired Quilly to let the victuals be taken away: upon which there came more servants than dishes, who took all at once, but some wine and water I desired might remain.

I told Quilly I saw there were two beds — 'Who are they for?' says I. 'One for you, and one for me,' says he; 'for we bashes never leave the king's favourites.' — 'Pray, Quilly,' says I, 'what is the meaning that to the several rooms I have been in, there is never a door?' — 'Door!' says he, 'I don't know that.' — 'What!' says I, 'don't you shut your rooms at night?' — 'No, not shut at night! I never heard of that!' — 'I believe,' says I, 'Quilly, it is almost bed-time, is it not?' — 'No, no!' says Quilly, 'the gripfack has not founded.' — 'How do you know,' says I, 'in this country, when you shall lie down, and when arise? for my wife has told me you have no clocks.' — 'No! no clocks!' says he. 'Then,' says I, 'does every one rise and lie down when they please? or do you all lie down and all rise together about the same time?' — 'O,' says Quilly, 'you will hear the gripfack presently; there are several glumms who take it by turtis to sound it for rest, and then we know it is time to lie down; and when they sound it again, we know it is time to rise.' And afterwards I found these people guessed the time (being twelve hours between found and found) so well, that there were but few minutes variation at any time between them and my watch; and I set my watch to go from their soundings at six o'clock.

I found myself pretty much fatigued after my journey; for though I had only to sit still, yet the excessive velocity

city of such an unusual motion strained every muscle as much as the hardest labour: for, you may imagine, I could not at first be without my fears upon ever so small a variation of my chair; which, though I could not possibly by my own inclination one way or other rectify, yet a natural propensity to a perpendicular station involuntarily biases one to incline this or that way in order to preserve it: and then, at first, my breath being ready to fail me in proportion to the celerity of the flight, and to my own apprehensions, and being upon that exercise near thirty hours, and without sleep for almost forty, you may judge I wanted rest: so I told Quilly I would lie down, and ordered him not to disturb me till I waked of myself.

I could not prevent the officiousness of my valet to put me to-bed, and cover me with the down, or whatever it was; for having no sheets, I pulled off nothing but my coat, wig, and shoes; and putting on my flannel night-cap, I laid me down.

CHAP. X.

THE KING'S APARTMENTS DESCRIBED — IS INTRODUCED TO THE KING — A MOUCHERATT CALLED — HIS DISCOURSE WITH THE KING ABOUT RELIGION.

I Have known some travellers so peculiar in their taste as not to be able to sleep in a strange lodging; but, thanks to my kind stars, that did not prove my case; for having looked on my watch when I went to-bed, as I call it, and finding it was down, I wound it up, and observed it began to go at about three o'clock, whether day or night, matters not; and when I waked it was past nine, so that I know, I had slept eighteen hours; and finding that a very reasonable refreshment, and myself very hungry, I called Quilly to get me my breakfast.

Quilly told me his majesty had been to visit me, but would not have me disturbed. I begging him to dispatch my breakfast as soon as possible, and let me have some water for my hands, he ordered the gallery-waiters, and every thing came immediately.

My breakfast was a brown liquid, with a sort of seeds or grain in it, very sweet and good; but the fear of the king's return before I was ready for him, prevented my enquiring into what it was: so having finished it, and washed my hands, Quilly presented me a towel, which looked like an unbleached coarse linen, but was very soft and spongy; and I found afterwards was made of threads of bark stripped from some tree. I put on my brown suit, sword, and long wig, and sent Quilly to know when it was his majesty's pleasure I should wait upon him.

I had been so much used to lamp-light in my grotto, that the lights of this gloomy mansion did not seem so unusual a thing to me as they would have done to a stranger. The king sent me word he would admit me immediately, and Quilly was my conductor to his majesty's apartment.

We passed through the gallery, at the farther end of which was a very beautiful arch even with the stair-case, through which Quilly led me into a large guard-room, wherein were above an hundred glumms posted in ranks, with their pikes in hand, some headed with sharp-pointed stone, others with multangular stone, and others with stone globes. Passing through these, we entered another gallery as long as that to my apartment; then under another arch we came into a small square room, carved exceeding fine; on the right and left of which were two other arch-ways leading into most noble rooms; but we only saw them, passing quite cross the little room, through an arch that fronted us into a small gallery of prodigious height; at the farther end of which Quilly turning aside a mat, introduced and left me in the most beautiful place in the universe; where, neither seeing nor hearing any body stir, I employed myself in examining the magnificence of the place, and could, as I then thought, have feasted my eye with variety for a twelvemonth. I paced it over one hundred and thirty of my paces long, and ninety-six broad: there were arches in the middle of each side, and in the middle of each end; the arch-ceiling could not be less than the breadth of the room, and covered with the most delightful carvings, from whence hung globe-lights innumera-
ble,

ble, but seemingly without order, which I thought appeared the more beautiful on that account. In the center of the room hung a prodigious cluster of the same lights, so disposed as to represent one vast light; and there were several rows of the same lights hung round the room, one row above another at proper distances: these lights represented to me the stars, with the moon in the middle of them; and after I came to be better acquainted with the country, I perceived the lights were to represent the southern constellations. The arch-ways were carved with the finest devices imaginable, gigantick glumms supporting on each side the pediments. At every ten paces, all along the sides and ends, arose columns, each upon a broad square base, admirably carved; these reached to the cornice or base of the arched cieling, quite round the room. On the pannels between each column were carved the different battles and most remarkable achievements of Begfurbeck himself. Over the arch I entered at, was the statue of Begfurbeck, and over the opposite arch the old prophetick ragan. In the middle of the room stood a long stone-table lengthwise, most exquisitely carved, almost the length of the room, except where it was divided in the middle about the breadth of the arch-ways, in order for a passage from one arch to the other. In short, to describe this one room particularly, would make a volume of itself.

I staid here a full hour and half, wondering why nobody came to me; at length turning myself about, I saw two glumms coming towards me, and having received their compliments, they desired me to walk in to the king. We passed through another middling room, and taking up a matt at the farther side of it, I was conducted in where his majesty was sitting with another glumm. They both arose at my entrance, and calling me their father, and leading me, one by each hand, obliged me to sit down between them.

After some compliments about my journey, and accommodation since, the king told me I had not waited so long without, but he had some urgent dispatches to make; and as he chose to have me in private with him, he imagined, he said, I would be able to divert myself in the boskee. I declared

I had never seen any thing like it for grandeur and magnificence before; but the beauty of the sculpture, and disposition of the lights, were most exquisite.

All this while I felt the other glumm handling my long wig, and feeling whether it grew to my head, or what it was; for he had by this time got his finger under the caul, and was pulling my hair down: when I turning about my head, 'Glumm Peter,' says the king, 'don't be uneasy, the ragan will do you no hurt, it is only to satisfy his curiosity; and I chose to have the ragan here, that we may more leisurely advise with you what course to take in the present exigences of my state. I have fully heard the story of your travels from my colombs, and we have returned thanks to the Great Image for bringing you, after so many hazards and deliverances, safe to my dominions for our defence.'

The ragan desired to know whether all that hair (meaning my wig) grew upon my head or not. I told him no, it was a covering only, to put on occasionally; but that hair did grow on my head, and pulling off my wig I shewed them. The ragan then asked me if I had hair of my own growing under that too, (meaning my beard, which he then had in his hand, for their glumms have no beards;) but I told him that grew there of itself. 'O parly Puly!' says the ragan, rising up, and smiting his hands together, 'it is he! it is he!'

'Pray,' says I, 'ragan, who is this Puly you speak of?'—'It is the Image,' says he, 'of the great Coll-war.'—'Who is that?' says I.—'Why, he that made the world,' says he. 'And; pray,' says I, 'what did his Image make?'—'O,' says he, 'we made the Image.'—'And, pray,' says I, 'can't you break it again?'—'Yes,' says he, 'if we had a mind to be struck dead, we might: for that would be the immediate consequence of such an attempt; nay, of but holding up a finger against it in contempt.'—'Pray,' says I, 'did ever any body die that way?'—'No,' says he, 'no one ever durst presume to do it.'—'Then, perhaps,' said I, 'upon trial, the punishment you speak of might not be the consequence of such

‘such an attempt. Pray,’ says I, ‘what makes Collwar have so great a kindness for that Image?’ — ‘Because,’ says he, ‘it is his very likeness, and he gives him all he asks for us; for we only ask him. Why,’ says he, ‘it is the Image that has brought you amongst us.’

I did not then think it a proper time to advance the contrary to the person I then had to do with, as I was sure it would have done no good; for a priest is only to be convinced by the strongest party: so I deferred my argument on that head to a fitter opportunity.

‘Most admirable Peter,’ says the king, ‘you, you are the glumm we depend upon to fulfil an ancient prediction delivered by a venerable ragan. If you will, Ragan I. O. shall repeat it to you, and therein you will be able to discern yourself plainly described, in not only similar, but the express words I myself, from your story, should describe you in.’

In good earnest, I had from divers circumstances concluded that I might be the person; and resolved, as I thought I had the best handle in the world for it from the prediction, to do what I could in the affair of religion, by fair means or stratagem, (for I was sensible my own single force would not do it) before I began to shew myself in their cause, or else to desert them; and having had a small hint from Nafgig of what the old ragan’s design was in part, and which I approved of, I purposed to add what else was necessary as part of his design, if his proposals had been approved of.

I told the king I would excuse the ragan the repetition of the prediction, as I had partly been informed of it by Nafgig; and that conceiving myself, as he did, to be the person predicted of by the ragan, I had the more readily set out on this expedition, which nothing but the hopes of performing so great a good could have prevailed with me to undertake; and I did not doubt, with God’s blessing, to accomplish it.

The king grew exceeding joyous at what I said, and told me he would call a moucheratt, at which all his colombs should attend to have their advice; and then we would proceed to action; and ordered the ragan to let it be for the sixth day, and in the mean time that he and

his brethren should, day and night, implore the Image to guide their deliberations.

The ragan being gone, I told the king I had something to impart to him, in which it was my duty to obtain his majesty’s sentiments before I appeared publicly at the moucheratt. He desired me to proceed: I told him I had been some time considering the old ragan’s prediction, with the occasion of it; ‘And,’ says I, ‘it is plain to me that all these mischiefs have befallen you for neglect of the ragan’s proposal concerning religion; as I understand your great ancestor would have come into it, and would have had his people done so too but for the ragans, who hindered it.’

‘You find,’ says I, ‘by your traditional history, that Begsurbeck lived long, and reigned gloriously; and I would aim at making you as prosperous as he was, and infinitely more happy, not only in outward splendor here, but in great glory hereafter.’

Perceiving that my discourse had quickened the king’s attention, says I, ‘I must let your majesty know it is the old ragan’s plan I must proceed upon in every branch of it.’ — ‘Why,’ says the king, ‘he would have abolished our worship of the image.’ — ‘And so would I,’ says I; ‘nay, not only would, but must and will, before I engage myself in your deliverance; and then with the only assistance of the great Collwar, whom I adore, and whom you must too, if you expect any service from me, I don’t doubt to prevail.’

‘Your majesty sees,’ says I, ‘in few words, I have been very plain with you; and I desire you, in as concise and plain a manner, to answer me, what are your thoughts on this head? for I can say no more till I hear them.’

The king seeing me so peremptory; ‘Glumm Peter,’ says he, looking about to see no one was near, ‘I have too much sense to imagine our Image can do either good or hurt; for if it could have done us good, why would it not in our greatest distress, now near two hundred years past? For my own part, I put no trust in it, nor did my famous ancestor the great Beg-

surbeck;

‘furbeck: but here is my difficulty, where to chuse another object of worship; for I perceive by myself, mankind must, through natural impulse, look to somewhat still above them, as a child does to his father, from whom he hopes for and expects succour in his difficulties; and though the father be not able to assist him, still he looks to him; and therefore, I say, we must have another before we can part with this, or the people, instead of the part who have been in the desertion, will all desert me; for they are easy now in hopes of help from the Image, and every little gleam of success is attributed to it; but for the disadvantages we receive, the ragans charge them on the people's not praying, and paying sufficiently; which they, poor souls, knowing in their consciences to be true enough, are willing rather, as they are bid, to take the blame upon themselves, than to suffer the least to fall on the Image.’

‘All this,’ says the king, ‘I am sensible of; but should I tell them so, my life must pay for it; for the ragans would bring some message from the Image against me, to desert or murder me; and then happy would be the first man who could begin the mischief, which the rest would soon follow.’

This so frank and unexpected declaration, gave me great confidence in the king; and I told him, if that was his opinion, he might leave the rest to me. I would so manage it, that the thing should be brought about by my means; and I would then satisfy all his scruples, and make him a flourishing prince. But I could not help reflecting with myself, how nearly this distant prince, and his state, copied some of my neighbours in Europe.

CHAP. XI.

PETER'S REFLECTIONS ON WHAT HE WAS TO PERFORM—SETTLES THE METHOD OF IT—HIS ADVICE TO HIS SON AND DAUGHTER—GLOBE-LIGHTS LIVING CREATURES—TAKES MALECK INTO HIS SERVICE—NASGIG DISCOVERS TO PETER A PLOT AT

COURT—REVOLT OF GAUINGRUNT.

HAVING now fully entered into the spirit of the business with my own good liking, I was determined to push it vigorously, or perish in the attempt. ‘Have I,’ says I, ‘so large a field before me now to manifest my Maker in to a whole nation, and under his own call, and to fulfil their own prediction too; and shall I shrink at the possible danger? Or may there not rather be no probability of danger in it? The nation is in distress, the readier therefore to try any remedy for help: their Image has stood idle two hundred years; there has been an old prophecy, or at least if not true, as firmly believed to be true as if it was so; and this, in regard to the people, answers in all respects as well. But why should it not be true? It is better attested by the frequent repetition, from the original delivery to this time, than are many traditions I have heard of amongst us christians, which have come out spick and span new from the repositories of the learned, of twelve or fifteen hundred years old, little the worse for lying by; though they are not pretended to have seen light all that time, and are undoubted verities the moment they receive the grand sanction. Then if any means but fraud or force can gain so large a territory to the truth, and I am the only person can introduce it, shall not I endeavour it? Yes, surely; but I am not excluded all advantages neither, for all the works of Providence are brought to pass by appointed means: and, indeed, were it otherwise, what could we call providence? For a peremptory fiat, and it is over, may work a miracle, it is true, but will not exhibit the proceedings of Providence. Therefore let me consider, in a prudential way, how to proceed to the execution of what I am to set about—and guide me, Providence! I beseech you, to the end!’

Upon the best deliberation I could take, I came to the following resolutions: first, to insist on the abolition of the Image worship, and to introduce true religion by the fittest means I could find opportunity for.

Secondly,

Secondly, as the revolvers had been one people with those I would serve, and had this prediction amongst them too, and were interested in it, in hopes of it's distant accomplishment; so if they came properly to the knowledge, that the person predicted of had appeared, and was ready for execution of his purposes, it must stagger their fidelity to their new master; and therefore I would find means to let them know it.

Thirdly, that I would not march till I was in condition not easily to be repulsed; for that would break both the hopes and hearts of my party, and destroy my religious scheme; and therefore I would get some of my cannon.

Fourthly, that I would go to the war in my flying-chair, and train up a guard for my person with pistols and cutlasses.

These resolutions I kept to myself till the moucheratt was over, to see first how matters would turn out there.

Whilst I waited for the approaching moucheratt, my son Tommy, and daughter Hallycarnie, paid their duties to me. It is strange how soon young minds are tainted by bad company. I found them both very glad to see me, for every body, they said, told them I was to be their deliverer. They had both got the prophecy by heart, and mentioned the Image with all the affection of natural subjects. The moment Tommy spoke of it to me; 'Hold,' says I, 'young man, what's become of those good principles I took so much pains to ground you in? Has all my concern for your salvation been thrown away upon you? Are you become a reprobate? What! an apostate from the faith you inherited by birth-right? Is the God I have so often declared to you a wooden one? Answer me, or never see my face more.'

The child was extremely confounded to see me look so severe, and hear me speak so harsh to him. 'Indeed, father,' says he, 'I did not willingly offend, or design to shew any particular regard to the Image; for, thanks to you, I have none; but what I said was only the common discourse in every body's mouth; I meant neither good nor harm by it.'

'Tommy,' says I, 'it is a great fault to run into an error, though in company of multitudes; and where

a person's principle is sound at bottom, and founded upon reason, no numbers ought to shake it. You are young, therefore hearken to me—and you, Hallycarnie—whatever you shall see done by the people of this country, in the worship of this idol, don't you imitate it, don't you join in it. Keep the sound lessons I have preached to you in mind; and upon every attempt of the ragans, or any other, to draw you aside to their worship, or even to speak or act the least thing in praise of this idol, think of me and my words; pay your adoration to the Supreme Father of spirits only, and to no wooden stone or earthen deity whatever.'

The children wept very heartily, and both promised me to remember and to do as I had taught them.

Being now in my oval chamber, and alone with my children, I had a mind to be informed of some things I was almost ashamed to ask Quilly. 'Tommy,' says I, 'what sort of fire do they keep in these globes? and what are they made of?'—'Daddy,' says he, 'yonder is the man shifting them, you may go and see.' Being very curious to see how he did it, I went to him; as I came near him, he seemed to have something all fire on his arm. 'What has the man got there?' says I. 'Only sweecoës,' says Tommy. By this time I came up to him; 'Friend,' says I, 'what are you about?'—'Shifting the sweecoës, Sir,' says he, 'to feed them.'—'What oil do you feed with,' says I? 'Oil!' says he, 'they won't eat oil; that would kill them all.'—'Why,' says I, 'my lamp is fed with oil.'

Tommy could scarce forbear laughing himself; but for fear the servant should do so too, pulled me by the sleeve, and desired me to say no more. So turning away with him; 'Daddy,' says he, 'it is not oil that gives this light, but sweecoës, a living creature; he has got his basket full, and is taking the old ones out to feed them, and putting new ones in; they shift them every half-day, and feed them.'—'What,' says I, 'are all these infinite number of globes I see living creatures?'—'No,' says he, 'the globes are only the transparent shell of a bott, like our calabashes, the light comes from the sweecoë with-

‘in.’—‘Has that man,’ says I, ‘got any of them?’—‘Yes,’ says he, ‘you may see them; the king, and the colombs, and, indeed, every man of note, has a place to breed and feed them in.’—‘Pray, let us go see them,’ says I, ‘for that is a curiosity indeed.’

Tommy desired the man to shew me the sweecoos, so he set down his basket, which was a very beautiful resemblance of a common higler’s basket, with a handle in the middle, and a division under it, with flaps on each side to lift up and down. It was made of straw-coloured small twigs, nearly compacted, but so light as scarce to be of any weight. Opening one of the lids, I could make very little distinction of substances, the bottom seeming all over of a quite white colour. I looking surprized at the light, the man took out one, and would have put it into my hand, but perceiving me shy of it, he assured me it was one of the most innocent things in the world; I then took it, and surveying it, it felt to my touch as smooth and cold as a piece of ice. It was about as long as a large lob-worm, but much thicker. The man seeing me admire the brightness of it’s colour, told me it had done it’s duty, and was going to be fed; but those which were going upon duty were much clearer: and then opening the other lid, those appeared far exceeding the others in brightness, and thickness too. I asked what he fed them with. He said, ‘Leaves and fruit,’ but grass, when he could get it, which was not often, they were very fond of.

Having dismissed my children, I sent for Nasgig, to gain some intelligences I wanted to be informed of. The moment I saw him, it came into my mind to enquire after my new filgays. He said the king granted my request at the first word. I told him then he had saved his honour with me, and I was obliged to him: ‘But,’ says I, ‘you told me my bearers should be free too.’—‘They are so,’ says he. ‘Then there is one thing I want,’ says I; ‘and that is, to see the second bearer on my right-hand, who came through without shifting. I have a fancy for that fellow,’ says I, ‘to be about my person; I like him; and, if

‘you can give him a good word, I should be glad to treat with him about it.’

‘My friend Peter,’ says he, ‘you are a man of penetration, though it ill becomes me to say so in regard of persons; but I can say that for him, if he likes you as well as you seem to like him, he is the trustiest fellow in the world: but as he knows his own worth, he would not be so to every body, I can tell you that.’—‘I don’t fear his disliking me,’ says I, ‘for I make it my maxim to do as I would be done by; and if he is a man of honour, as you seem to say, he would do the same, and we shall be soon agreed.’—‘But,’ says Nasgig, ‘it being now the fourth day since he was freed, he may be gone home perhaps, for he is not of our country, but of Mount Alkee. If Quilly can find him, he will come.’ So he ordered Quilly to send for Maleck of Mount Alcoe, with orders to come to me.

We descended from one discourse to another, and at length to King Georigetti’s affairs; when Nasgig, giving a sigh, ‘Ah, Peter!’ says he, ‘we shall loiter away our time here till the enemy are upon our backs. There is venom in the grass; I wish my good master is not betrayed.’—‘By whom?’ says I. ‘By those he little suspects,’ says he. ‘Why,’ says I, ‘they tell me you are much in his favour; if so, why do you suffer it?’—‘I believe,’ says Nasgig, ‘I am in his favour, and may continue in it if I will join in measures to ruin him; but else I shall soon be out of it.’—‘You tell me riddles,’ says I. ‘These things,’ says he, ‘a man talks with his head in his teeth. There is danger in them, Peter; there is danger!’—‘You don’t suspect me,’ says I, ‘do you?’—‘No,’ says he, ‘I know your soul too well; but there are three persons in these dominions who will never let my master rest till out of his throne, or in hoximo. I am but lately in favour, but have made as many observations, perhaps, as those who have been longer about the king.’

‘Nasgig,’ says I, ‘your concern proceeds from an honest heart; don’t stifle what you have to say: if I can counsel

‘counsel you with safety I’ll do it; if not, I’ll tell you so.’

‘Peter,’ says he, ‘Georigetti was the only son of a well-beloved father, and ascended his throne ten years ago on his decease; but Harlokin, the prince of the revolvers, whose head is never idle, finding that whispers and base stories spread about, did not hurt Georigetti, or withdraw his subjects’ affections, has tried a means to make him undo himself.’—‘As how?’ says I. ‘Why,’ said he, ‘by closely playing his game he has got one of his relations into the king’s service, than whom he could never have chosen a fitter instrument. He by degrees, feeding the king’s humour, and promising mountains, has pushed into the best places in the kingdom: his name is Barbarfa, a most insolent man, who has had the assurance to corrupt the king’s mistresses, and has prevailed and brought her over to his interest.’—‘O perfidy!’ says I, ‘is it possible?’—‘Yes,’ says he; ‘and more than that, has drawn in, till now, an honest man called Nicor; and it has been agreed between them to protract this war, till by their stratagems in procuring the revolt of Gauringrunt, a very large and populous province, and now the barrier between us and the rebels, and two or three more places, they shall have persuaded Georigetti to fly; and then Barbarfa is to be king, and Yaccambourse his queen. A union is then to be struck between him and Harlokin, and peace made, by restoring some of the surrendered provinces: and upon the death of the first of them, or their issue, childless, the survivor, or his issue, is to take the whole. They laugh at your uniting the dominions, and the old prediction.’

‘These,’ said I, ‘Nasgig, are serious things, and, as you say, are not lightly to be talked of; but, Nasgig, know this, he that conceals them is a traitor. Can you prove this?’—‘I have heard them say so,’ says Nasgig. ‘How!’ says I, ‘and not discover it?’—‘I am as anxious for that as you can be,’ says he; ‘but for me to be cashiered, slit, and sent to Crashdoort, only for meaning well, without power to perfect my good intentions, where will be the benefit

‘to my master or me?’—‘When and where did you hear this?’ says I. ‘Several and several times,’ says he, ‘in my own bed.’—‘In your own bed!’ says I. ‘I’ll tell you,’ says he; ‘it so happens that when I rest at the palace, as I am bound to do when on duty, there is a particular bed for me: now, as the whole palace is cut out of one solid rock, though Yaccambourse’s apartment at the entrance is at a prodigious distance from the entrance to mine, yet my bed, and one in an inner apartment of hers, stand close together; the partition, indeed, is stone; but either from the thinness of it, or some flaw in it I have not yet discovered, I can plainly hear every word that is spoken. And there it is, in their hours of dalliance, when they use this bed, that I hear what I have now told you.’—‘Say nothing of it,’ says I, ‘but leave the issue to me.’

By this time the messenger returned with Maleck, and he and I soon agreeing, I took him into my service.

I went to bed as usual, but could get no rest, Nasgig’s story engrossing my whole attention; I was resolved, however, to be better informed before I acquainted the king of it: but rising pretty early next morning, the king came into my chamber, leaning upon Barbarfa, to tell me he had received an express that Gauringrunt had revolted. ‘Peter,’ says he, ‘behold a distressed monarch; nay, an undone monarch!’—‘Great Sir,’ says Barbarfa, ‘you afflict yourself too much; here is Mr. Peter come to assist you, and he will settle all your concerns, never fear.’ I eyed the man, and (though prejudice may hang an honest person) found him a villain in his heart; for even while he was forcing a feeling tone of affliction, he was staring at my laced hat and feather that lay on the seat, by which I was sure nothing could be at a greater distance than his heart and tongue. His sham concern put me within a moment of seizing him in the king’s presence; but his majesty, at that instant speaking, diverted me.

Before the king left me, I told him, having certain propositions to make to the moucheratt next day, it was possible they might require time to consider them; wherefore it would be proper, at this critical time, to let them meet every

every other day, business or none, till this affair was over. The king ordered Barbarfa to see it was so, and then we parted.

C H A P. XII.

HOLD A MOUCHERATT—SPEECHES OF RAGANS AND COLAMBS—PETER SETTLES RELIGION—INFORMS THE KING OF A PLOT—SENDS NASGIG TO THE SHIP FOR CANNON.

ATTENDING at the moucheratt to-day, I happened to be seated within two paces of the idol. There was the most numerous assembly that had ever been seen; and when all was quiet, the king opened with signifying the revolt of Gaingrunt, the approach of the enemy, and no forces in the field to stop them. This he set forth in terms so moving, that the whole assembly were melted into sighs; till one of the colambs rising up, says he, 'His majesty has set forth the state of his affairs in such a manner, and, I am satisfied, a true one, that it becomes us all to be vigilant. We all seem to have, and I believe have, great faith in the remedy this day to be proposed to us, in answer to our ancient prediction: and as I doubt not but glumm Peter is the man, so I doubt not but through his management we shall still receive help; but let us consider, if we might not have prevented these pressing evils, and especially this last, by speedier preparations against them. What province, or member of a state will not revolt to a numerous host just ready to devour them, if they can receive no assistance from their head? for, to my certain knowledge, his majesty had ordered this almost a year ago, and not a man gone yet. Can we expect Peter to go singly to fight an army? Did your prediction say he should go alone? No, he shall slay; that is, he and his army; what is done by them, being always attributed to their general. Enquire therefore into your past conduct, send Peter your general, and trust to the Great Image.'

His majesty then said, if there had been any remissness in executing his

commands, he believed it was done with a view to his service; but a more proper opportunity might be found for an enquiry of that nature. As for the present moucheratt, it was called solely to propose to Peter the execution of the remaining part of the prediction; or at least such part of it as seems now, or never, to wait it's accomplishment.

Here arose a ragan, and told the assembly, in the name of himself and brethren, that the prediction had never yet been applicable to any one person till glumm Peter arrived; and that his sagacity of itself was a sufficient recommendation of him to the guidance of the enterprize; and requested, that glumm Peter might forthwith be declared protector of the army, and set forward with it, that the state might receive safety, and the Great Image it's proper honour.

I could now hold out no longer; but, standing up, made my speech in the following manner, or very near it. 'Mighty king—you reverend ragans—and honourable colambs—with the good people of this august assembly—I am come hither, led by the force of your own prediction, at the request of his majesty and the states, at the peril of my life, to accomplish things said to be predicted of me glumm Peter. If then you have a prediction, if then your prediction describes me, and the circumstances of these times, it consisting of several parts, they ought seriously to be weighed, that I may know when and where I am to begin my operation, and when and where to leave off; for in predictions, the whole is to be accomplished as much as any member of it.

'It is said, I shall destroy the traitor of the west; I am ready to enter upon it, and settle the ancient limits of your monarchy. Are you willing, therefore, that should be done? yea, or nay?' Then every one answered, 'Yea!'—'And by common consent establish what the old ragan would have taught you?' Here the king rose up; but Barbarfa giving him a touch, (for every one waited to be guided by the voice of the ragans) he sat down again; and no one answering, 'Yea,' I again put the same question, and told them, as it was their own

own concern, I would have an answer before I proceeded. One of the ragans then rose, and said, that part of the prediction was too loose to be relied on, for it was to settle what he would have taught: 'Now who knows,' says he, 'what he would have taught.' The assembly paused a considerable time, and just as I was opening my mouth to speak, an ancient and venerable ragan rose: says he, 'I am sorry, at my years, to find that truth wants an advocate; my age and infirmities might well have excused me from speaking in this assembly, so many of my brethren being present, younger and better qualified for that purpose than myself; but, as we are upon a sacred thing, and left, as I find none of them care to declare the truth, I should also be thought to consent to it's suppression if I sat silent and suffered it to be hid under a quibble, I must beg to be heard a few words. My brother who spoke last, says, the words are too loose, which say, "And by common consent establish what I would have taught;" but I beg leave to think it far otherwise, for we all know what he would have taught, and the memory of that hath been as exactly kept as the prediction; for how could our ancestors have opposed his doctrine, but from hearing and disapproving it? And we all know, not only the prediction, but the doctrine, hath been punctually handed down to us; though, woe be to us! we have not proclaimed it as we have the prediction: and let me tell you, when you, my brethren, severally come to my years, and have but a single step farther to homino, you will wish you had taught it, as I do, who do believe and approve it.'

The poor old man, having spoke as long as his breath and spirits would permit him, sat down, and I again resumed the question, as I now thought, on a much better foundation than before, and was immediately told by another ragan, that there would be no end to the assembly, if we considered every point at once, for we might next go upon what countries we should conquer, and of whom to demand tribute; which would be debating about the fruit before the seed was sown. But

his opinion was, to go on and quell the rebellion, and restore the monarchy, and then go upon the other points.

I told them, if they made so light of the prediction as not to declare publicly, since they knew it, what the ragan would have taught, it ill became me to be more zealous in their own concerns than they were themselves; and I should imagine there was very little truth in any part of it, and would never hazard my life for their sakes, who would not speak the truth to save the kingdom; and desired leave of the states for my departure; for I was not a person, I told them, to be cajoled into any thing. I undertook it at first voluntarily; and no man could, or should compel me to it: my life they might take, but my honour they should never stain, though I was assured I could easily, with their concurrence, compleat all that related to them.

The senior colamb immediately rising, desired me to have a little patience, and not to leave the assembly (for I was going out) till I had heard him.

'Here is,' says he, 'this day a thing started, which, I think, every whit as much concerns us all, and the body, and every member of the people to know, as it does Peter; and I am surprized, unless the present ragans believe what their predecessor would have taught to be better than what they now teach, (for nothing else can make us consent to it) that they should scruple to let us know it, and keep us ignorant, who are worshippers as well as themselves, of any matter which so nearly concerns us to know. I am for obliging the ragans to declare the truth. If this be a true prediction, all the relatives to it are true, and I insist that we hear it.'

This speech emboldened several others; and all the populace siding with the colombs out of curiosity, cried out to know it.

Perceiving the ragans still hush; I rose; and, beckoning the populace to silence, 'Mighty king—you, honourable colombs—and you, good people,' says I—'for it is to you I now speak, hear me with attention. You think, perhaps, that the suppression of the truth by your ragans; (charged to their teeth by the most
reverend

'reverend of their whole body, whose infirmities rendering him unable, though his will is good, to declare this secret to you) will prevent the knowledge of that truth your old ragan would have taught; but you are mistaken: and that you may know I don't come here at a venture to try if I can relieve you, but with an assurance of doing it if you consent, I must let you know, from me, what the ragan would have taught. The ragan would have demolished this trumpery piece of dirt, this grimalkin, set out with horrid face and colour to fright children; this, I say, he would have demolished, being assured it could neither do good nor hurt, give joy or grief to any man, or serve any other purpose whatsoever; but to procure a maintenance to a set of men who know much better than they dare to tell you. Can any of you believe this stupid piece of earth hears me?' Some of the ragans cried, 'Yes!' And that he can revenge any affront 'I shall give him?' Again, 'Yes, to be sure!'—'Let him then, if he dare,' says I, whipping out my cut-throat, and with the backside of it striking his head off. 'This,' says I, 'O glumms, is: what the ragan knew, and what I defy them to deny. Now,' says I, 'I will farther shew you, to whom the old ragan would have taught you to make your petitions, and pay your adoration; and that is to the Supreme Being, Maker of heaven and earth, of us and all things; who provides for us meat and drink, and all things, by causing the earth, which he has made, to produce things necessary for our use. That Being whom you have heard of, by the name of Collwar, and are taught at present to be afraid to speak to. And I appeal to your own hearts; if many of you have ever thought of him. Again,' says I; 'let any thing in the shape of man, that gives himself leave to consider at all, only tell me, if what he can make; and does make, with his own hands, hath not more occasion to depend on him as it's maker, than he on that? Why, then, should not we depend upon and pray to our Maker?'

'You very greatly mistake me, O

'glumms,' says I, 'if you imagine I would have all those reverend men turned out of employment as useless. No, I find they know too much of what is valuable; and therefore those who are willing to continue in the service of the mouch, and faithfully to teach you the old ragan's doctrine, and such farther lights of the great Being as they shall hereafter receive, let them continue your ragans still; and let others be chosen, and trained up in that doctrine.'

Here the poor old man got up again with much difficulty. 'Mr. Peter,' says he, 'you are the man predicted of; you have declared the old ragan's mind, and all my brethren know it.'

Finding I had the populace on my side, (for I did not doubt the king and the colombs) I put the question to the ragans: 'Reverend,' says I, 'you see your prediction this day about to be fulfilled; for if it is a true one, no force of man can withstand it. You see your image disgraced; you see, and I appeal to you all for the truth of it, that what the ragan would have taught, has, without your assistance, been disclosed. I therefore would have you the first to break the bondage of idolatry, and turn to the true Collwar, as it will be so much glory to you. Will you, and which of you, from henceforth serve Collwar, and no longer worship an idol? Such of you as will do so, let them continue in the mouch; if none of you will, it shall be my business to qualify a sufficient number of true ragans to form a succession for that purpose. The issue of this great affair depends upon your answers.' They waited some time for a spokesman to begin; and so soon as he was able to get up, the poor old ragan said, 'I will continue in it, and do all the little good I can; and blessed be the day this prediction is fulfilled, to succeeding generations! I have lived long enough, to have seen this.' Then the rest of the ragans, one by one, followed his example. And thus, with prodigious acclamations, both the ragans and people ended the great affair of religion.

I now more and more believed the truth of the prediction; and told them I should have occasion for seven hundred men before I set out against the rebels;

rebels; and desired that they might be commanded by Nasgig. This was readily granted. I then told them, as I purposed to act nothing without their concurrence, I desired the colombs would remain in the city till I set out, that they might be readily called together.

I then desired I might be quite private from company till I departed.

I took Nasgig home with me; and, when we came there, 'My dear friend,' says he, 'what have you done to day! You have crushed a power hitherto immoveable; and I shall never more think any thing too difficult for you to attempt.'—'Nasgig,' says I, 'I am glad it is over. And now,' says I, 'you must enter on a new employ: but, first, can you provide me fifty honest, faithful glumms, for a particular expedition? they must be sensible, close, and temporizing.' He said he would, and come to me again.

I then desired a private audience of the king; who, on seeing me, began upon my success at the moucheratt. I told his majesty, if I alone, and a stranger, could gain such influence there, I might have had much more if he had joined me, especially as he had told me he gave no credit to the Image; and that I expected he would have appeared on my side. 'Ah, Peter!' says he, 'monarchs neither see, hear, nor perceive, with their own eyes, ears, or understandings. I would willingly have done it; but Barbarfa prevented me, by assuring me it would be my ruin; and as he is my bosom friend, what reproaches must I have suffered if it had gone amiss! Nay, I will tell you, that he and Nicor are of opinion that your coming hither, which is looked upon by us all as such a blessing, will one day undo me: "For," say they, "though he may perform what you expect from him, it is not to be supposed he should suffer it to redound to you. No," say they, "if he can do these great things, he can soon set you aside." Thus, though I have no doubt of you, is my spirit wasting within me through perpetual fears and jealousies; and I cannot get these men, who, knowing all my secrets, are feared by me, into my own way of thinking.'

'Mighty Sir,' says I, 'don't think I came hither to possess, but redress a kingdom. I lived far more to my ease in my grotto, than I can in this palace; but I now desire you,' drawing my sword and putting it into his hand, 'to pierce this heart's blood, and make yourself easy in my death, rather than, suffering me to survive, live in distrust of me. No, great king,' says I, 'it is not I that would injure you; but, though I have been so short a time in your dominions, I find there are those who would, and will too, unless you exert the monarch, and shake off those harpies, which lying always at your ear, are ever buzzing disquiet and mischief to you.'—'Peter,' says he, 'what do you mean? sure I have no more traitors in my state!'—'Your majesty has,' says I. 'How can you prove it?' says he. 'But pray inform me who they are?'—'I came not hither, great king,' says I, 'to turn informer, but reformer; and so far as that is necessary in order to this, I will give you satisfaction. I only desire you will wholly guide yourself by my direction for three days, and you shall be able to help yourself to all the information you can require, without my telling you. In the mean time, appear no more thoughtful than usual, or in any other way alter your accustomed habits.'

Nasgig having sent me the fifty men, I asked them if they were to be trusted, and if they could carefully and artfully execute a commission I had to charge them with. They assuring me they would, I told them I would let them into my design, which would be the best instructions I could give them, and let the management alone to them.

My confidence in them made them twice as diligent as all the particular directions in the world would have done; so I only told them I had a mind the revolted towns, and also the enemy's army, should know that the person so long ago predicted of, was now at Brandleguarp, and had, as the first step towards reducing them, and killing the traitor Harlok, already altered their religion to the old ragan's plan; and that they had nothing now to expect but destruction to themselves.

as soon as I appeared against them with my unknown fire and smoke, which I always had with me; and that the thing was looked upon to be as good as done already at Brandleguarp; and then to slip away again unperceived. They all promised me exact performance, and went off.

Nasfig then coming in, I told him he was now under my command, and must take six hundred glumms with him to Graundevoleit; tell Youwarkee to shew him my ship, and then he must bring me the things I had described to her by the name of cannon; he must bring them by ropes, as I was brought; and bring powder, which she would direct him to, and about fifty heavy balls which lay in the room with the powder. I told him if he thought he should not have men enough, he must take more; and must be as expeditious as was consistent with safety. I desired him to tell Youwarkee I hoped in a short time to send for her, and all the family, over to me. 'And now,' Nasfig, says I, 'my orders are finished: but,' says I, 'the king! I must assist that good man. I therefore want to know the particular times Barbarfa and Yaccomboursse usually meet.'—'That,' says he, 'is every night when she is not with the king; for he is excessive fond of her, and seldom lies without her; but whenever he does, Barbarfa is admitted to her.'—'And how can I know,' says I, 'when she will or will not lie with the king?'—'When she is to lie with him,' says he, 'the king never sups without her.'—'Now,' says I, 'you must shew me your lodging, that I may find it in your absence; and give orders to the guard to let me, and whoever comes with me, enter at any time.' He then took me to his chamber; but I passed through so many rooms, galleries, and passages, that I was sure I should never find it again, so I asked him if Maleek knew the way; and he assuring me he did; I took my leave of him, and he set out for Graundevoleit.

CHAP. XIII.

THE KING HEARS BARBARFA AND YACCOMBOURSE DISCOURSE ON

THE PLOT — THEY ARE IMPEACHED BY PETER AT A MOUCHERATT — CONDEMNED AND EXECUTED — NICOR SUBMITS, AND IS RELEASED.

I Had now several important irons in the fire, and all to be struck whilst hot; there was the securing religion, sowing sedition amongst the enemy, tripping up the heels of two ministers, and a she-favourite, and transporting artillery in the air some hundred leagues; either of which failing might have been of exceeding bad consequence: but as the affair of the ministers now lay next at hand, I entered upon that in the following manner.

The king coming to me the next day, as by appointment; and having assured me he had hinted nothing to any one, no, not to Barbarfa or Yaccomboursse, told me that Barbarfa had given orders for stopping Nasfig and his men; and had persuaded him not to be in such haste in suffering me to do as I pleased, but to shew his authority, and keep me under. Says I, 'Your majesty's safety is so near my heart, that even want of confidence in me shall not make me decline my endeavours to serve you. But have you suffered him to stop Nasfig?'—'No,' says he, 'Nasfig was gone some time before he sent.'—'O Sir!' says I, 'you do not half know the worth of that man! but you shall hereafter, and will reward him accordingly. But now, Sir,' says I, 'to what we meet upon; if you will, as I told you, but comply with me for three days, without asking questions, I will shew you the greatest traitors in your dominions, and put them into your power too.' He promised me again he would. 'Then,' Sir, says I, 'you must not send to Yaccomboursse to sup with you to-night.'—'Nor lie with me?'—'No,' says I. 'Pray, what hurt can arise to my affairs from her?' says he. 'Sir,' says I, 'you promised me to ask no questions.'—'Agreed, agreed!' says he. 'Then,' says I, 'please to meet me at Nasfig's lodgings without being perceived, if you can; at least without notice taken.'—'Good,' says he. 'And when you are there, see or hear what you will; you must not say a word

'a word till you are retired again.' All which the king engaging to perform, we parted till evening.

I called Maleck, and asked if he knew the way to Nafsig's lodging. He told me, very well; and, the time being come, he conducted me thither; where I had not waited long before the king came, most of the court being in bed. I desired the king to stay in the outer room till I went into the bed-chamber two or three times, and I thought we must have put it off till another night; but listening once again, I found they were come; so I called the king, and led him to the place; intreating him, whatever he heard, to keep his patience, or he would ruin all. We first heard much amorous discourse between Barbarfa and Yaccomboursé, and then the ensuing dialogue.

YAC. 'My dearest Barbarfa, what was all that uproar at the moucheratt the other day?'

BAR. 'Nothing, my love, but that mad fellow Peter, who sets up for a conjuror, and wants us all to dance to his pipe.'

YAC. 'I heard he overcame the ragans at an argument about the Image.'

BAR. 'Why, I don't know how that was; but it was the doating old ragan did their business; and truly the king's fingers itched to be on Peter's side, but I gave him a judicious nod, and you know he durst not displease so dear a friend as I am; ha, ha, ha! Am not I a sad fellow, my love, to talk so of my king?'

YAC. 'He that wants but one step to a throne, is almost a king's fellow.'

BAR. 'And that but a short one too, my dear Yaccee; but I must get rid of that Nafsig, though I think I have almost spoiled him with the king, too. I don't love your thinking rascals; that fellow thinks more than I do, Yaccee.'

YAC. 'He'll never think to so good purpose, I believe; but how goes cousin Harlokin on? I find Gaun-grunt is gone over.'

BAR. 'And so shall Bazin, Istell, Pezele, and Ginkatt too, my dear; for I am at work there—And then good night, my poor King Georigetti;

thou shalt be advised to fly, and I'll keep the throne warm for thee.—I don't see but King Barbarfa, and Queen Yaccomboursé, sound much better than Georigetti. Well, my dear, whenever we come to sovereignty, which now cannot be long, if Nicor has but played his part well, for I have not had an account of his success yet; I say, when we come into power, never let us be above minding our own affairs, or suffer ourselves to be led by the nose, as this poor insignificant king does. For, in short, he may as well be a king of matts, as a king of flesh, if he will not use his faculties, but suffer me to make a fool of him thus; and I should be a fool indeed to neglect it, when he thinks it the greatest piece of service I can do him.'

YAC. 'Come, come, my dear! let us enjoy ourselves like king and queen till we come to the dignity.'

Finding a pause, the king, who had admirably kept his temper, even beyond imagination, stole into the outer room. 'Peter,' says he, 'I thank you, you have shewn me myself. What fools are we kings! In endeavouring to make others happy, how miserable do we make ourselves! How easily are we deceived by the designing flattery of those below us! —Ungrateful villain!—Degenerate strumpet—I hate you both.—Peter,' says he, 'give me your sword; I'll destroy them both immediately.'

'Hold, Sir,' says I, 'your majesty has heard sufficient to found a true judgment upon; but kings should not be executioners, or act by passion and revenge; but as you would punish that in others, so carefully avoid it yourself. You, who are in so exalted a station, as always to have it in your power to punish a known crime in individuals, have not that necessity to prompt you to a violent act, that private persons have, to whom it may be difficult to obtain justice. Therefore, my advice is, that you summon the colombs to-morrow; when Barbarfa and Nicor cannot fail to attend; and I would also desire Yaccomboursé to be there, you having great proposals to make to the states which you shall want her to hear. I will in the mean time prepare the servants under Quilly,

and order Maleck with another posse to attend, as by your command, to execute your orders given by me; and I myself will impeach those bad persons in publick; and Nicor, if he will not ingenuously confess what commission he was charged with from Barbarfa, shall be put to the torture I direct, till he discovers it.

The king was very well pleased with this method; so I ordered Quilly, as from the king, to bring all my servants to the assembly, appointing him his place; and Maleck to select me fifty stout persons, and to wait to execute my orders on a signal given. So soon as the assembly met, I told them, since I had concerned myself in their affairs, I had made it my business to search into the cause of their calamities; and finding some of the traitors were now approached not only near to, but even into, the capital city, his majesty had therefore ordered me to ask their advice, what punishment was adequate, in their judgments, to the crime of conspiring against him and the state, and holding treasonable correspondence with his enemies, under the shew of his greatest friends.

I stopped, and looked at Barbarfa; he turned as pale as ashes, and was rising to speak; when the senior colamb declared, if any such thing could be made appear, the common punishment of Crahsdoörpt was too trivial; but they deserved to be dropt alive either to hoximo or Mount Alkoe. The several colombs all declaring the same to be their judgment, and even those to be too mild for their deserts, I then stepped up to Barbarfa, who sat at the king's left-hand, as did Yaccombourse at his right, and telling them and Nicor they were all prisoners of state, I delivered Barbarfa and Yaccombourse in custody to Quilly and his men, and Nicor to Maleck and his men; ordering them into separate apartments, with strict commands that neither should speak to the other upon pain of the last pronounced judgment.

Barbarfa would have spoke, and called out to the king, begging him not to desert so faithful a servant for the insinuations of so vile a man as Peter; but the king only told him the vile man could be made appear presently, and he hoped he would meet his deserts.

I then stood up, and told the assembly the whole of what we heard, how it first came to be discovered, and that the king himself had been an ear-witness of it; which the king confirming, the whole assembly rang with confusion; and revenge and indignation appeared in every face.

I then proposed, as we yet knew not what that secret commission was which Nicor was charged with, having enough against the rest, that Nicor might be brought forth; and, upon refusal to answer, be put to the torture.

Nicor appearing before the assembly, I told him I was commanded by the king to ask him what commission he was charged with by Barbarfa, and to whom. I told him the safest way for his life, his honour, and his country, was to make a true confession at first, or I had authority to put him to the torture: for, as for sitting and banishment, as they were too slight to atone for this offence, he might rest satisfied his would be of another sort, if he hesitated at delivering the thing in it's full truth.

My prelude terrifying him, he openly confessed that his last commission was to several towns, as from the king, and with his gripfack, to order their submission to Harlokin, the king not being in any condition to relieve them; and that as soon as they had submitted, Harlokin would be let into this city, which could not stand against him.

He also declared, that it had been agreed, and the boundaries settled, how far Barbarfa, who was to be declared king, and marry Yaccombourse, should govern, and how far Harlokin; that Barbarfa was to be stiled King of the East, and Harlokin King of the West; and that either of them, on the other's dying childless, was to inherit the whole monarchy.

The king declaring this to be all true, and that by my procurement he heard it all mentioned but the last night between Barbarfa and Yaccombourse, as they were solacing themselves in bed, the whole assembly ordered them to be brought out, carried with cords about their necks, and precipitated into Mount Alkoe.

I then begged they might be suffered to speak for themselves before execution; and, acquainting them severally with the evidence, I first asked
Barbarfa

Barbarfa what he had to say against his sentence. He declared, his ambition, and the easiness of his master's temper, had instigated him to attempt what had been charged upon him; having, as he thought, a fair opportunity of so doing. I then asked Yaccombourse the same question; she answered me, her ambition had been her sole governor from a child, and I had done my worst in preventing the progress of that; and whatever else I could do was not worth her notice: 'But to 'have reigned,' says she, with some emotion, 'was worth the lives of 'millions, and over-balanced every 'thing!'

I pleaded hard for Nicor, as I perceived him to be only the favourite's favourite, and not in the scrape for his own views, more than what he might merit from his new master; and as he had declared the truth, and I believed I might make farther use of him, I obtained that he might be only committed to me, and that I might have liberty of pardoning or sitting as I saw fit: and, as I expected, he afterwards proved very useful to me and my designs, and I pardoned him.

Before the assembly rose, a party of the natives of Mount Alkoe were ordered to convey Yaccombourse and Barbarfa to the mountain, slip their graundes, and drop them there: and thus ended the lives of these two aspiring persons.

'When I came home, I called Nicor before me—'You know,' says I, 'Nicor, you are obliged to me for this moment of your life; but I don't remind you of it for any return I want to myself; but as you are sensible my endeavours are to serve this state, I offer you life and freedom upon condition you employ your utmost diligence to repair your past conduct, by a free declaration of every thing in your power that may be for the benefit of the kingdom, as you know the springs by which all these bad movements have been set at work: and I desire your opinion how best to counteract the schemes formed, and redress the evils.'

Nicor being fully convinced of his error, and having lost his patron, was very submissive; and declared he believed none of the provinces would have gone over to Harlokin, unless

they had thought it was the king's order Barbarfa had acted by; which, by hearing his gripfack, they made no doubt of. He advised to send expresses with the king's gripfack to such places as had lately submitted, and to such as were about it, to put a stop to them. I told him I had done that; 'But not 'by the gripfack,' says he; 'and unless they see and hear that, they will 'give no credit to the message.' He then gave me some particular hints in other affairs of no mean consequence: and seeing him truly under concern, and, to my thinking, sincere in what he said, I told him I was an absolute enemy to confinement, and if any person of repute would engage he should be forthcoming upon all occasions, that I might have recourse to him, I would let him have his liberty.

Poor Nicor, as it commonly happens to great men in disgrace, finding himself abandoned by all his friends, after trying every body, dropping some tears, told me next morning he was highly sensible of what a dye his offences had been, for that not one amongst all his former friends would even look upon him in his present circumstances, wherefore he must submit to fate.

Nicor having borne a good character before seduced by Barbarfa, and knowing that an obliged enemy often becomes the sincerest friend, I pressed him again to try his friends. He told me every body was shy of engaging in such an affair; and that he had rather suffer himself, than meanly to intreat any one into an unwilling compliance: 'Come, Nicor,' says I, 'will you be 'your own security to me? May I take 'your own word?' He said he could not expect that; for as the terror of sitting lay over him, and in my hands too, he could not answer but he might deceive me in case he should conceive I had a design against him; which I myself, too, might have from a mistaken motive.

'Why, then, Nicor,' says I, 'you 'are free; now use your own discretion. I think you will never cause 'my judgment to be impeached for 'what I have done; but if you do, 'I can't condemn myself for it, and 'hope I shall have no reason to repent it.'

Nicor fell at my feet, embraced them, and was so overcome with my generosity

sity to him, that I could with difficulty prevail on him to rise again; saying he was now, more than ever, ashamed to see my face. I told him I had not done with him, but would use him henceforth as my friend; and ordered him to call upon me daily, for I might have several occasions for him; and, truly, next to Nasgig, he proved the usefullest man in the kingdom.

CHAP. XIV.

NASGIG RETURNS WITH THE CANNON—PETER INFORMS HIM OF THE EXECUTION—APPOINTS HIM A GUARD—SETTLES THE ORDER OF HIS MARCH AGAINST HARLOKIN—COMBAT BETWEEN NASGIG AND THE REBEL-GENERAL—THE BATTLE—PETER RETURNING WITH HARLOKIN'S HEAD, IS MET BY A SWEEOAN—A PUBLIC FESTIVAL—SLAVERY ABOLISHED.

THE tenth day Nasgig arrived, whilst I happened to be in the king's garden; and hearing the trumpet coming before, I called out to him, to give Nasgig notice where I was, and to desire him to alight there.

After ceremonies past, and I had enquired after my wife and children, and his answers had informed me of their healths—'Well,' says Nasgig, 'my friend, am I to live or die?'—'Explain yourself,' says I. 'Nay, I only mean,' says he, 'have you discovered me to the king?'—'Pardon me,' says I, 'dear Nasgig, I must own the truth; I have.'—'Then,' says he, 'I suppose his majesty has no more commands for me?'—'No,' says I, 'it is not so bad as that neither.'—'But, pray,' says he, 'what says Barbarfa to it?'—'O nothing at all!' says I; 'quite quiet.'—'Nor Yaccombourfe? Did you discover her baseness to the king?'—'Yes,' says I; 'and the king behaved like a king upon the occasion.'—'And where are they now?' says he. 'Only in Mount Alkoe,' says I. 'Mount Alkoe!' replies he, 'what do you mean by that? How can they be in Mount Alkoe? Did they go of their own accords?'—'They fled off, I suppose, with ropes about their necks,'

says I, 'as your criminals go to Crafs-doorpt.'—'Are they slit, too?' says he. 'No,' says I, 'but slit, I'll assure you. Come, my good friend, I'll let you into the history of it.' And then I told all that had happened, and the king's satisfaction at the judgment of the moucheratt. 'And now,' says I, 'Nasgig, you may call yourself the favourite, I promise you; for his majesty enjoys himself but to greet you on your return: but have a care of power; most grow giddy with it, and the next thing to that is a fall.'—'Pray,' says he, 'what is become of Nicor? Is he under the same condemnation?'—'No,' says I, 'Nicor is now by my means absolutely free; and no two greater than he and I.' I told him then my proceedings with him: he was glad of it; for, he said, Nicor he believed was honest at bottom.

By this time up came the cannon; and, truly, had my countrymen but the graundee to convey their cannon at so easy an expence from place to place, the whole world would not stand before us. They brought me five cannon, and three swivel guns, and a larger quantity of ammunition than I had spoken for.

I introduced Nasgig to the king upon his return, as the person to whose conduct the safe arrival of my cannon was owing. His majesty embracing him, told him the service he had done him was so great in the affair of Barbarfa, and his management of it so prudent, he should from thenceforth take him into his peculiar confidence and esteem.

Nasgig thanked his majesty for his acceptance of that act of his duty; and desired to know when he pleased the operations for the campaign should begin. 'Ask my father,' says the king: 'do you conduct the war, and let him conduct you.'

Then Nasgig desired to know what number of troops would be requisite. I asked him what number the enemy had: he said, about thirty thousand. 'Then,' says I, 'take you six only, besides the bearers of me and the artillery; and pick me out fifty of the best men you have, as a guard for my person, and send them to me.'

I shewed these men my cutlasses and pistols, and shewed them the use and management

management of them; 'And,' says I, 'as our enemies fight with pikes, keep you at a distance first; and when you would assault, toss by the pike with your hand, and closing in, have at the graundee; and this edge,' (showing them the sharpness of it) 'will strip it down from shoulder to heel; you need strike but once for it; but be sure come near enough: or,' says I, 'if you find it difficult to turn aside the pike, give it one smart stroke with this, it will cut it in two, and then the point being gone, it will be useless.'

'These instructions,' says I, 'if rightly observed, will make us conquerors.'

The next thing was to settle the order of my march, which I did in the following manner; and, taking leave of the king, I set out.

First, Ten companies of one hundred men, including officers, with each a gripsack, in ten double lines, fifty abreast.

Secondly, Four hundred bearers of the cannon, with two hundred to the right, the like to the left, as relays.

Thirdly, Two hundred men with the ammunition, stores, hatchets, and other implements.

Fourthly, Fifty body-guards, in two lines.

Fifthly, Myself, borne by eight; with twelve on the right, and as many on the left, for relays.

Sixthly, Two thousand men in columns, on each side the cannon and me; fifty in a line, double lines.

Seventhly, One thousand men in the rear, fifty in a line, double lines.

I consulted with Nafsig, how Harlokin's army lay, that I might avoid the revolted towns, rather chusing to take them in my return; for my design was to encounter Harlokin first; and I did not doubt if I conquered him, but the towns would surrender of course.

When we arrived within a small flight of his army, I caused a halt at a proper place for my cannon; and having pitched them, which I did by several flat stones, one on another to a proper elevation; I loaded them, and also my small arms, consisting of six muskets, and three brace of pistols; and placing my army, two thousand just behind me, two thousand to my right, and the same number to my left;

I gave a strict command for none of them to stir forwards without orders; which Nafsig, who stood just behind me, was to give. I then sent a defiance to Harlokin by a gripsack; who sent me word, he fought for a kingdom, and would accept it; and, as I heard afterwards, he was glad I did; for since the intelligence I had scattered in his army, they had in great numbers deserted him, and he was afraid it would have proved general. I then putting the end of a match into a pistol-pan with a little powder, by flashing, lighted it; and this I put under my chair, for I sat in that, with my muskets three on each side, a pistol in my right-hand, and five more in my girdle. In this manner I waited Harlokin's coming, and in about an hour we saw the van of his army, consisting of about five thousand men, who flew in five layers, one over another. I had not loaded my cannon with ball, but small sized stones, about sixty in each; and seeing the length of their line, I spread my cannons mouths somewhat wider than their breeches, and then taking my observation by a bright star, for there was a clear dawn all round the horizon, I observed, as I retired to my chair, how that star answered to the elevation of my cannon; and when the foremost ranks, who, not seeing my men stir, were approaching almost over me to fall on them, and had come to my pitch, I fired two pieces of my ordnance at once, and so mauled them, that there dropped about ninety upon the first discharge, together with their commander; the rest, being in flight, and so close together, not being able to turn fast enough to fly, being stopped by those behind them, not only hindered those behind from turning about, but clogged up their own passage. Seeing them in such a prodigious cluster, I so successfully fired two more pieces, that I brought down double the number of the first shot; and then giving the word to fall on, my cutlass-guard, and the pikemen, did prodigious execution. But fearing the main body should advance before we had got in order again, I commanded them to fall back to their former stations, and to let the remainder of the enemy go off.

This did me more good in the event, than if I had killed twice as many;

for

for they not only never returned themselves, but flying some to the right, some to the left, and passing by the two wings of their own army, consisting of six thousand men each, they severally reported, that they were all that was left of the whole van of the army; and that the prediction would certainly be fulfilled, for that their companions had died by fire and smoke. This report struck such terror into each wing, that every one shifted for himself, and never appeared more.

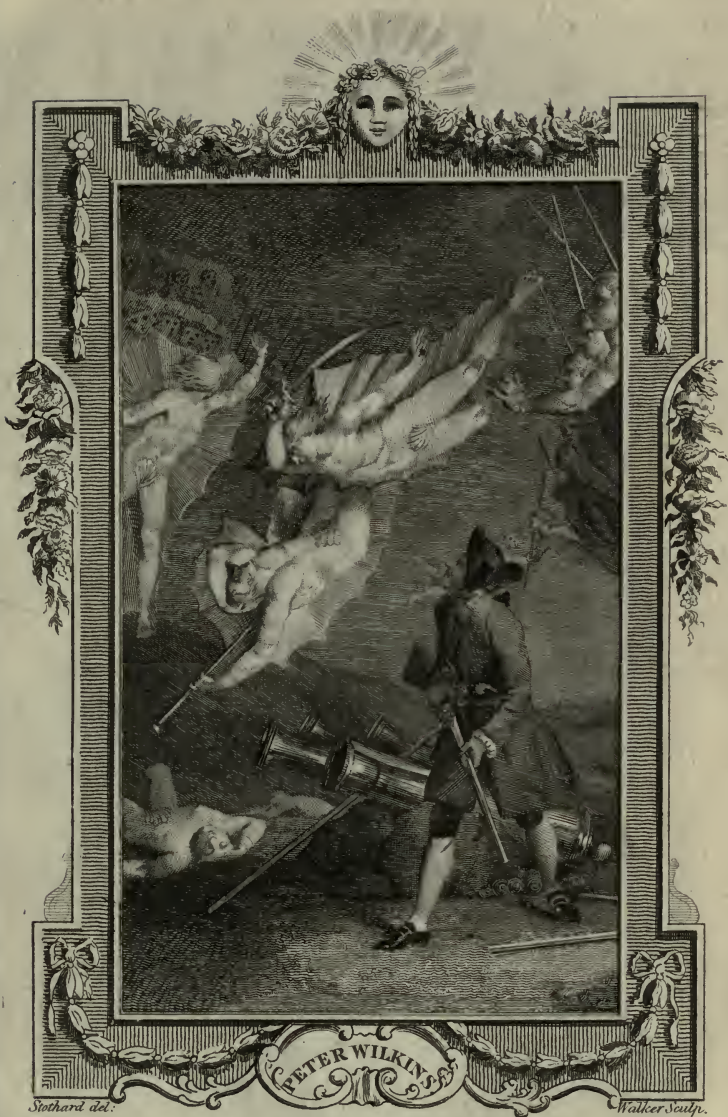
The main battle consisting of about ten thousand men, knowing nothing of what had happened to the wings, (for Harlokin had ordered the wings to take a great compass round to inclose us) hearing we were but a handful, advanced boldly; and as I had ordered my men not to mount too high, the enemy sunk to their pitch. When they came nearer, I asked Nasgig who led them, and if it was Harlokin. He told me no, his general, but that he was behind; and Nasgig, begging me to let him try his skill with the general, I consented, they not being yet come to the pitch of my cannon. Nasgig immediately took the graundee, and advancing singly with one of my cutlasses in his hand, challenged the general in single combat. He like a man of honour, accepting it, ordered a halt, and to it they went, each emulous of glory, and of taking all the advantage he could, so that they suddenly did not strike or push; but sometimes one, then the other, was uppermost, and whirling expeditiously round, met almost breast to breast; when the general, who had not a pike, but a pike-staff, headed with a large stone, gave Nasgig such a stroke on his head, that he reeled and sunk considerably; and I began to be in pain for him, the general lowering after him. But Nasgig springing forward beneath him, and rising light as air behind the general, had gained his height again before the general could turn about to discern him; and then plunging forward, and receiving a stroke across his left-arm, at the same time he gave the general such a blow near the out-side of the shoulder, as slit the graundee almost down to his hip, and took away part of the flesh of the left-arm; upon which the general fell fluttering down in vast pain, very near me; but not before Nasgig,

in his fall, descending, had taken another severe cut at him.

Immediately upon this defeat, Nasgig again took his place behind me; our army shouting to the skies; but no sooner had the general dropt, but on came Harlokin, with majesty and terror mixt in his looks; and seeming to disdain the air he rode on, waved his men to the attack with his hand. When he came near enough to hear me, I called him vile traitor, to oppose the army of his lawful sovereign; telling him, if he would submit, he should be received to mercy. 'Base creeping insect!' says Harlokin, 'if thou hast aught to say to me worth hearing, meet me in the air? This hand shall shew thee soon who'll most want mercy: and though I scorn to stoop to thee myself, this messenger shall satisfy the world thou art an impostor, and send thee lifeless back to the fond king that sent thee hither.' With that he hurled a javelin pointed with flint, sharp as a needle at me; but I avoiding it, 'This, then,' says I, 'if words will not do, shall justify the truth of our prediction.' And then levelling a musket at him, I shot him through the very heart, that he fell dead within twenty paces of me; but perceiving another to take his room, notwithstanding the confusion my musket made amongst them, I ran to my match, and giving fire to two more pieces of ordnance at the same time, they fell so thick about me, that I had enough to do to escape being crushed to death by them; and the living remainder separating, fled quite away, and put an end to the war. I waited in the field three days, to see if they would make head again; but they were so far from it, that before I could return, as I found afterwards, most of the revolting provinces had sent their deputies, who themselves carried the first news of the defeat, to beg to be received into mercy; all of whom were detained there, till my return with Harlokin's head.

At my return to Brandleguarp, I was met by the king, the colanibs, and almost the whole body of the people; every man, woman, and child, with two sweecoe lights in their hands; which unusual sight in the air, gave me great alarm, till I enquired of Nasgig what it meant; who told me it

must



must certainly be a sweecoan, or he knew not what it was. I asking again what he meant by that, he told me it was a particular method of rejoicing he had heard of, but never seen; wherein, if the king goes in triumph, all the people of Brandleguarp, from fifteen to sixty, are obliged to attend him with sweecoos. He said, it was reported amongst them, that in Begsurbeck's time there were two of them, but there had been none since.

When we met them, I perceived they had opened into two lines or ranks of a prodigious length; at the farther end of which was the king with innumerable lights about him; the whole looked like a prodigious avenue or vista of lights, bounded at the farther end where the king was, with a pyramid of light. This had the most solemn and magnificent effect on the eye, that any thing of light could possibly have; but as we passed through the ranks, each of the spectators having two lights, one was given to each soldier of the whole army. And then to look backward, as well as forward, the beauty of the scene was inexpressible. We marched all the way amidst the shouts of people, and the sound of the gripfacks, going very slowly between the ranks; and at length arriving at the pyramid, where the king was, I heard abundance of sweet voices, chaunting my actions in triumphal songs: but I could take little notice of these, or of my son with his flagellet amongst them, for the extravagant appearance of the pyramid, which seemed to reach the very sky. For, first, there was a long line of a full half mile, which hovered at even height with the two side ranks; in the centre of that, and over it, was the king single; over him, another line, shorter than the first, and again over that, shorter and shorter lines; till, at a prodigious height, it ended in one single light. These all hovering, kept their stations; while the king darted a little space forward to meet me, and congratulate my success; then turning, and preceding me, the whole pyramid turned, and marched before us, singing all the way, to the city; the pyramid changing several times into divers forms, as into squares, half-moons, with the horns sometimes erect, and again reversed, and various other fi-

gures; and yet amongst this infinite number of globes, there was not the least glaring or offensive light; but only what was agreeable to the people themselves. As the rear of the army entered the lines, they closed upon it, and followed us into Brandleguarp. While we passed the city to the palace, the whole body of people kept hovering, till the king and myself were alighted; and then every one alighted where he best could. All the streets and avenues to the palace were blocked up with people, crowding to receive the king's beneficence; for he had proclaimed a feast, and open house-keeping to the people for six days. The king, the colombs, ragans, and great officers of state, with myself, had a magnificent entertainment prepared us in Begsurbeck's great room; and his majesty, after supper, being very impatient to know how the battle went, I told him, the only valorous exploit was performed by my friend Nasgig, who opened the way to victory, by the slaughter of Harlokin's general. Nasgig then rose, desiring only that so much might be attributed to him, as fortune had accidentally thrown into his scale; for it might have been equally his fate, as the general's, to have fallen: 'But except that skirmish,' says he, 'and some flying cuts at the van, we have had no engagement at all, nor have we lost a single man; Peter only sitting in his chair, and commanding victory: he spake aloud but thrice, and whispered once to them; but so powerfully, that having at the two first words laid above three hundred of the enemy at their lengths, and brought Harlokin to his feet, with a whisper, at the third word he concluded the war. The whole time, from the first sight of the enemy to their total defeat, took not up more space than one might fairly spend in traversing his majesty's garden. In short, Sir,' says Nasgig, 'your majesty needs no other defence against publick or private enemies, as I can see, than Peter; and my profession, whilst he is with us, can be of little use to the state.'

After these compliments from Nasgig, and separate ones from the king, and the rest, I told them, it was the highest felicity to me to be made an instrument by the great Collwar, in free-

ing so mighty a kingdom and considerable a people from the misery of a tyrannical power. 'You live,' says I, 'so happily, under the mild government of Georigetti, that it is shocking but to think into what a distressed state you must have fallen under the power of an usurper, who claiming all as his own by way of conquest, would have reduced you to a miserable servitude. But,' says I, 'there is, and I am sorry to see it, still amongst you, an evil that you great ones feel not, and yet it cries for redress. Are we not all, from the king to the meanest wretch amongst us, formed with the same members? Do we not all breathe the same air? inhabit the same earth? Are we not all subject to the same disorders? and do we not all feel pain and oppression alike? Have we not all the same senses, the same faculties? and, in short, are we not all equally creatures of, and servants to, the same master, the great Collwar? Would not the king have been a slave, but for the accident of being begotten by one who was a king? and would not the poorest creature amongst us have been the king had he been so begotten? Did you great men, by any superior merit before your births, procure a title to the high stations in which you are placed? No, you did not. Therefore give me leave to tell you what I would have done. As every man has equal right to the protection of Collwar, why, when you have no enemy to distress you, will you distress one another? Consider, you great ones, and act upon this disinterested principle; do to another, what you, in his place, would have him do to you: dismiss your slaves, let all men be what Collwar made them, free. But if this unequal distinction amongst you, of man and man, is still retained, though you are at present free from the late disaster, it shall be succeeded with more, and heavier. And now, that you may know I would not have every man a lord, nor every one a beggar, remember, I would only have every serving-man at liberty to chuse his own master, and every master his own man: for he that has property and benefits to bestow, will never want dependants,

'for the sake of those benefits, to serve him, as he that has them not must serve for the sake of obtaining them. But then let it be done with free-will; he that then serves you will have an interest in it, and do it, for his own sake, with a willing mind; and you, who are served, will be tenderer and kinder to a good servant, as knowing by a contrary usage you shall lose him. I desire this may now be declared to be so, or your reasons, if any there are, against it.'

One of the ragans said, he thought I spoke what was very just, and would be highly acceptable to Collwar.

Then two of the colombs rose to speak together, and after a short compliment who should begin, they both declared they only rose to testify their consents.

The king referring it to me, and the colombs consenting, I ordered freedom to be proclaimed through the city; so that every one appeared at their usual duties, to serve their own masters for a month, and then to be at liberty to come to fresh agreement with them, or who else they pleased.

'This, Sir,' says I, to the king, 'will now be a day of joy indeed, to those poor hearts who would have been in no fear of losing before, let who would have reigned; for can any man believe a slave cares who is uppermost? he is but a slave still. But now,' says I, 'those who were so before, may by industry gain property; and then their own interest engages them to defend the state.'

'There is but one thing more I will trouble you with now—and that,' says I to the ragans, 'is, that we all meet at the mouch to-morrow,' to render Collwar thanks for the late, and implore future, favour.' And this passed without any contradiction.

When we met, the poor ragans were at a great loss for want of their Image, not knowing what to do or say: for their practice had been to prostrate themselves on the ground, making several odd gestures; but whether they prayed, or only seemed to do so, no one knew.

While the people were gathering, I called to a ragan, seeing him out of character. 'Suppose,' said I, '(for I see you want your image) you and your

‘ your brethren had received a favour
‘ of the king, and you was deputed
‘ by them to thank him, you would
‘ scarce be at a loss to express your
‘ gratitude to him, and tell him how
‘ highly you all esteemed his benefits,
‘ hoping you should retain a just sense
‘ of them, and behave yourselves as
‘ dutiful subjects for the future; and
‘ then desire him to keep you still in
‘ his protection. And this,’ says I,
‘ as you believe in such a Being as
‘ Collwar, who understands what you
‘ say, you may with equal courage do
‘ to him, keeping but your mind in-
‘ tent upon him, as if you saw him
‘ present.’—‘ Indeed,’ says he, ‘ I be-
‘ lieve you are right; we may so: but
‘ it is a new thing, and you must ex-
‘ cuse us if we do it not so well at
‘ first.’

I found I had a very apt scholar, for after he had began, he made a most extraordinary prayer in regular order, the people standing very attentive. It was not long, but he justly observed the points I hinted to him.

When he had done, another and another went on, till we had heard ten of them, and in every one something new, and very *a-propos*; and several of them afterwards confessed, they never had the like satisfaction in their lives, for they had new hearts and new thoughts, they said.

We spent the sixth-day feast in every gaiety imaginable, and especially in dancing, of which they were very fond, in their way; but it was not so agreeable to me as my own country way, there being too much antick in it. New deputies daily arrived from the revolted towns; and several little republicks, not claimed by Georigetti before, begged to be taken under his protection; so that, in one week, the king saw himself not only released from the dread of being driven from his throne, but courted by some, submitted to by others, and almost at the summit of glory a sovereign can attain to.

CHAP. XV.

A VISITATION OF THE REVOLTED PROVINCES PROPOSED BY PETER—HIS NEW NAME OF THE COUNTRY RECEIVED — RELI-

GION SETTLED IN THE WEST—
SLAVERY ABOLISHED THERE—
LASMEEL RETURNS WITH PE-
TER—PETER TEACHES HIM LET-
TERS—THE KING SURPRIZED AT
WRITTEN CORRESPONDENCE—
PETER DESCRIBES THE MAKE
OF A BEAST TO THE KING.

THE festival being over, the col-
lombs begged leave to depart;
but the king, who now did nothing
without me, consulted with me, if it
was yet proper. I told him, as things
had so long been in confusion in the
west, that though the provinces had
made their submission, yet the necessity
of their circumstances, and the general
terror, might have caused them only
to dissemble till their affairs were com-
posed again; and that as it was more
than probable some relations of the de-
ceased Harlokin, or other popular per-
son, might engage them again in ano-
ther revolt, I thought it would not be
improper to advise with his colombs
about the establishment of the present
tranquillity, and not by too great a se-
curity give way to future commotions;
and as all the colombs were then pre-
sent, it might be proper to summon
them once more.

When they were met, the king de-
clared the more particular satisfaction
he took in that meeting than he had
heretofore done, when they had been
put to it for means to secure their lives
and properties: ‘ For now,’ says he,
‘ our deliberations must turn upon se-
‘ curing our new acquisitions, and on
‘ settling those provinces which, till
‘ now, have never fallen under my
‘ power. But,’ says he, ‘ I shall re-
‘ fer it to Peter to propose to you what
‘ at present seems most necessary for
‘ you to consider of; and, that adjust-
‘ ed, shall dismiss you.’

I told them, that as the too sudden
healing of wounds in the body natu-
ral, before the bottom was clean and
uncorrupt, made them liable to break
out again with greater malignity, so
wounds in the body political, if skin-
ned over only, without probing and
cleansing the source and spring from
whence they arose, would rankle and
fret within, till a proper opportunity,
and then burst forth again with redou-
bled violence. I would therefore pro-
pose a visitation of the several provinces;

an enquiry into their conduct; an examination into the lives and principles of the colombs, the inferior officers, and magistrates; and either to retain the old, or appoint new, as there should be occasion. 'This visitation I would have performed by his majesty—and so many of you the honourable colombs,' says I, 'as he shall see fit should attend him in royal state, that his new subjects may see his majesty, and hear his most gracious words; and being sensible of his good disposition towards them, may be won by his equity and justice, to a zealous submission to his government, which nothing but the perception of their own senses can establish in the heart. This, I don't doubt, will answer the end I propose, and consolidate the peace and happiness of Norm—Normus—I must say Doorpt Swangeanti.'

Hearing me hesitate at the word Normbdfgrsutt, and call it Doorpt Swangeanti, the whole assembly rang with 'Doorpt Swangeanti!' and, at last, came to a resolution that the west being now united again to the east, the whole dominions should be called Safs Doorpt Swangeanti, or the Great Flight Land.

They approved the visitation, and all offered to go with the king, but insisted I should be of the party; which agreeing to do, I chose me out two of the most knowing ragans, to teach the new religion amongst them; for in every project I had my view to advance religion.

Some were for having the deputies released, and dispatched with notice of the king's intentions; but I objecting, that they might disrelish their confinement, and possibly raise reports prejudicial to our proceedings, it was thought better to take them with us, and go ourselves as soon as possible.

We set out with a prodigious retinue, first to the right, in order to sweep round the whole country, and take all the towns in our way, and occasionally enter the middle parts, as the towns lay commodious.

We were met by the magistrates and chief officers of each district, at some distance from each city, with strings about their necks, and the crashee instrument borne before them in much humility. His majesty said but little

to them on the way, but ordered them to precede him to the city, and conduct him to the colomb's house; when he was commanded to surrender his employment to his majesty, as did all the other officers who held posts under him. Then an examination was taken of their lives, characters, and behaviour in their stations; and finding most of them had behaved well to the government they had lived under, (for their plea was, they had found things under an usurpation, and being so, that government was natural to them, having singly no power to alter it;) upon their perfect submission to the king, and solemn engagement to advance and maintain his right, they received their commissions anew from his majesty's own mouth. But where any one had been cruel or oppressive to the subjects, or committed any notorious crime, or breach of trust, (for the meanest persons had liberty to complain) he was rejected, and for the most part sent to Crasdoorpt, to prevent the ill effects of his disgrace.

We having displaced but five colombs, and a few inferior officers, the moderation and justice of our proceedings gave the utmost satisfaction both to the magistrates and people.

Having observed at Brandleguarp a abundance of the small images my wife had spoken of, and thinking this a proper opportunity to shew my resentment against them, I ordered several of the ragans of the west before me, and asked what small images they had amongst them. One, who spoke for the rest, told me, very few, he believed; for he had scarce had any brought to him to be blessed. 'Where,' says I, 'is your Great Image?' He told me, 'At Youk.'—'And have not the people here many small ones?'—'Very few,' says he; 'for they have not been forced upon us long.'—'How forced upon you?' says I; 'don't the people worship them?'—'A small number now do,' says he. 'Pray speak out,' says I. 'When might you not worship them?'—'Never, that I know of,' says he, 'in our state, till about ten years ago, when Harlokin obliged us to it.'—'What, did you not worship them before?' says I. 'No,' says he, 'never since it has been a separate kingdom; for we would follow the old

'old ragan's advice of worshipping Collwar, which they not admitting of, the state was divided between us who would, and them who would not, come into the ragan's doctrine: and though Harlokin was a zealous image-worshipper, yet all he could do, would not bring the people heartily into it, for Collwar never wanted a great majority.' This pleased me prodigiously, being what was never hinted to me before; and I resolved not to let my scheme be a loser by it.

As we were to visit Youk in about eight days, I summoned the ragans and people to meet at the mouch; there recounting the great things done by Collwar in all nations. 'This I could make appear,' says I, 'by many examples; but as you have one even at your own towns, I need go no farther.

'I must begin in ancient times, when, I presume, you all worshipped an idol; have you any tradition before this?' They said, 'No.'— 'This Image,' says I, 'was worshipped in Begsurbeck's days, when an old ragan, whose mind Collwar had enlightened with the truth, would have withdrawn your reverence from the Image, to the original Collwar himself; you would not consent; he threatens you, but promises success to Begsurbeck, who did consent; and he had it to an old age. Then those who would also consent, were so far encouraged as to be able to form an independent kingdom. Could nobody yet see the cause? was it not apparent Collwar was angry with the east, that would not follow the old ragan, and cherished the west, who would? But, to be short, let us apply the present instance, and sure it will convince us who is right, who wrong.

'So long as the west followed Collwar, they flourished, and the east declined; but no sooner had the west degenerated under the command of Harlokin, and the east by my means had embraced Collwar, but the tables were turned: the east is found weighty, and the west kicks the beam. These things whose sees not, is blind indeed: therefore let publication be made, for the destruction of all small images; and let the harbourers of them, contrary to this

'order, be slit: and for myself, I will destroy this mother-monster. Take you, holy ragans, care to destroy the brood.' And having said this, I hacked the new idol to pieces.

I ordered proclamation for abolishing slavery, under the restrictions used at Brandleguarp: and thus having composed the west, and given a general satisfaction, we returned, almost the whole west accompanying us, till the east received us; and never was so happy an union, or more present to testify it, since the creation, I believe.

I ordered several of the principal men's sons to court, in order for employments, and to furnish out future colombs; and this I did, as knowing each country would rather approve of a member of their own body for their head, than a stranger; and, in my opinion, it is the most natural union. And then breeding them under the eye of the king eight or ten years, or more, they are, as it were, naturalized to him too, and in better capacity to serve both king and country.

As my head was constantly at work for the good of this people, I turned the most trifling incidents into some use or other; and made the narrowest prospects extend to the vastest distances. I shall here instance in one only. There was at Youk a private man's son, whom by mere accident I happened to ask some slight question of; and he giving me, with a profound respect and graceful assurance, a most pertinent answer; that, and the manner of it's delivery, gave me a pleasure, which upon farther discourse with him, was, contrary to custom, very much increased; for I found in him an extensive genius, and a desire for my conversation. I desired his father to put him under my care, which the old man, as I was then in so great repute, readily agreed to; and his son desiring nothing more, I took him with me to Brandleguarp. I soon procured him a pretty post of but small duty, for I had purposed other employment for him, but of sufficient significance to procure him respect. I took great delight in talking with him on different subjects, and observed by his questions upon them, which often puzzled me, or his answers to them, he had a most pregnant fancy and surprizing solidity, joined to a continual and unwearied application,

application. I frequently mentioning books, writing, and letters to him, and telling him what great things might be attained that way; his inquisitive temper, and the schemes he had formed thereon, put me upon thinking of several things I should never have hit upon without him. I considered all the ways I could contrive to teach him letters; and letting him into my design, he asked me how I did to make a letter. I described a pen to him, and told him I put a black liquor into it, and as I drew that along upon a flat white thing we make use of, called paper, it would make marks which way ever I drew it, into what shape I pleased. 'Why then,' says he, 'any thing that will make a mark upon another thing as I please, will do.'—'True,' says I, 'but what shall we get that will make a black mark?' We were entering farther into this debate; but the king sending for me, I left him unsatisfied. I stayed late with the king that night, so did not see Lasmeel (for that was his name) till next night, wondering what was become of him. I asked him then, where he had been all the day. He told me he had been looking for a pen and paper. I laughed, and asked him if he had found them. 'Yes,' says he, 'or something that will do as well:' so he opened one side of his graundee, and shewed me a large flat leaf, smooth and pulpy, very long and wide, and about a quarter of an inch thick, almost like an Indian fig-leaf. 'And what am I to do with this?' says I. 'To mark it,' says he, 'and see where you mark.'—'With what?' says I. 'With this,' says he, putting his hand again into his graundee, and taking out three or four strong sharp prickles. I looked at them both; and, clapping him on the head, 'Lasmeel,' says I, 'if you and I were in England, you should be made a privy-counsellor.'—'What, won't it do, then?' says he. I told him we would try. 'I thought,' says he, 'it would have done very well; for I marked one all about, and though I could not see much at first, by that time I had made an end, that I did first was quite of a different colour from the leaf, and I could see it as plain as could be.' I told him, as he was of an age to comprehend what I meant, I would take another

method with him than with a child; so I reasoned from sentences, backwards to words, and from them to syllables, and so on to letters. I then made one, the vowel A, told him it's sound, and added a consonant to it, and told him that part of the sound of each distinct letter put together, as the two letters themselves were, made another sound, which I called a syllable; and that joining two or more of them together, made a word, by putting the same letters together as made the sounds of those syllables which made that word. Then setting him a copy of letters, which with very little difficulty were to be drawn upon the leaf, and telling him their sounds, I left him to himself; and when he had done, though I named them but twice over, his memory was so strong as to retain the sounds, as he called them, of every one but F, L, and Q.

In two months time I made him master of any thing I wrote to him; and, as he delighted in it, he wrote a great deal himself; so that we kept an epistolary correspondence, and he would set down all the common occurrences of the day, as what he heard and saw, with his remarks on divers things.

One day, as the king and I were walking in the gardens, and talking of the customs of my country, and about our wars, telling him how our soldiers fought on horseback, the king could not conceive what I meant by an horse. I told him my wife had said there were neither beasts nor fishes in her country; which I was very much surprized at, considering how we are bounded with both; 'And therefore,' says I, 'to tell your majesty that an horse is a creature with four legs, you must naturally believe it to be somewhat like a man with four legs.'—'Why, truly,' says he, 'I believe it is; but has it the graundee?' I could not forbear smiling, even at his majesty; and wanted to find some similitude to compare it to, to carry the king's mind that way; for else he would sooner, I thought, conceive it like a tree or a mountain, than what it really was; and as I was musing, it came into my head, I had given Lasmeel a small print of an horse, which I found in one of the captain's pockets at Graundevolet, and believing it to be the stamp of a tobacco-paper, had kept

kept it to please the children with; so I told the king I believed I could shew him the figure of an horse. He told me it would much oblige him.

Seeing several of the guards waiting at the garden-arch, I looked, and at last found one of Lafmeel's leaves in the garden, and cutting one of them up with my knife, I took the point of that, and wrote to Lafmeel to send me by the bearer the picture of an horse I gave him, that I might shew it the king. And calling one of the guards, 'Carry that to Lafmeel,' says I; 'he is, I believe, in my apartment, and bring me an answer directly.' Then falling into discourse again with the king, and presently turning at the end of the walk, I saw the same guard again. Says I, 'You cannot have brought me an answer already.'—'You have not told me,' says he, 'what to bring you an answer to.'—'Nor shall I,' says I; 'do as you are bid;' for I perceived then what the fellow stuck at. He walked off with the leaf, but very discontentedly. The king said he wondered how I could act such a contradiction. 'This, father,' says he, 'is not what I expected from you; to order a man to bring an answer, without giving him a message.' I desired his patience only till the man came back. Presently says the king, 'Here he comes!'—'Well,' says he, 'what answer?'—'Sir,' says the fellow, 'I have only had the walk for my pains; for he sent it back again, and a little white thing with it.'—'Ha, ha!' says the king, 'I thought so—come, father, own you have once been in the wrong; for I am sure you intended to give him a message, but having forgot it, would not submit to be told of your mistake by a guard.' I looked very grave, reading what Lafmeel had wrote; which was to tell me he had obeyed my orders by sending the horse; for he was just then drawing it out upon a leaf.

'Come, come,' says the king, 'give the man his message, father, and let him go again.'—'Sir,' says I, 'there is no need of that, he has punctually obeyed me; and Lafmeel was then at the table in my oval chamber with a leaf, and this picture in my hand, before him.'

The king was ready to sink when I said so, and shewed the print. 'Truly, father,' says he, 'I have been to

'blame to question you; for though these things are above my comprehension, I am not to think any thing beyond your skill.' I made no reply to it; but shewing the king the picture, the guard sneaked off, and glad he was, I believe, he could do so.

I went then upon the explanation of my horse; and, answering fifty questions about him, at last he asked what his inside was; 'Exactly the same as your majesty's,' said I. 'And can he eat and breathe too?' says he. 'Just as you can,' says I. 'Well,' says he, 'I would never have believed there had been such a creature: what would I give for one of them!' I set forth the divers other uses we put them to, besides the wars; and by the picture, with some supposed alterations, I described a cow, a sheep, and numberless other quadrupedes; my account of which gave him great pleasure.

CHAP. XVI.

PETER SENDS FOR HIS FAMILY—A RISING OF FORMER SLAVES ON THAT ACCOUNT—TAKES A VIEW OF THE CITY—DESCRIPTION OF IT, AND OF THE COUNTRY—HOT AND COLD SPRINGS.

HAVING now some leisure time on my hands to consider over my own affairs, I had thoughts of transporting my family, with all my effects, to Saks Doorpt Swangeanti; but yet had no mind to relinquish all thought of my ship and cargo; for the greatest part of this was still remaining, I having had but the pickings through the gulph. I once had a mind to have gone myself; but considering the immense distance over sea, though I had once come safe, I thought I ought not to tempt Providence, where my presence was not absolutely necessary.

Nasfig, to whose care and conduct any enterprize might be trusted, offered his service to go and execute any commands I should give him. His only difficulty, he said, was, that it would be impossible for him to remember the different names of many things, which he had no idea of to convey the knowledge of them to his mind when he saw them; but barring that, he doubted not to give me satisfaction. I told him I would send an assistant with him,

who

who could remember whatever I once told him; and that I might not burden his memory with names only, Lasmeel should carry his memory with him; and that he, Nafgig, should only have the executive part.

Lasmeel, who had sat waiting an opportunity to put in for a share in the adventure, having a longing desire to see the ship, told Nafgig he had a peculiar art of memory, so as to remember whatever he would as long as he pleased; and that if he carried that with him, they need fear no mistakes.

The king having granted me as many of his guards as I pleased, for the carriage of my things, we appointed them to be ready on the fourth day; when Nafgig and Lasmeel set out with them.

I ordered Lasmeel, however, to be with me the next morning, that we might set down proper instructions; which I told him would be very long, and that he must bring a good number of leaves with him.

When Lasmeel entered my chamber next morning, he informed me that the whole city was in an uproar, especially those who had been freed by me. 'What!' says I, 'have they so soon forgot their subjection, to misapply their liberty already? But step and bring me word what's the matter, and order some of the ringleaders hither to me.'

Lasmeel upon enquiry found, that it had been given out I was going to leave the country, and they all said, wherever I went they were determined to go and settle with me; for if I left them they should be reduced to slavery again. However, he brought some of them to me; and upon my telling them I thanked them for their affection to me, but blamed them for shewing it in so tumultuous a manner, and that I was so far from intending to leave them, that I was sending for my family and effects, in order to settle amongst them, they rejoiced very much, and told me they would carry the good news to their companions, and disperse immediately: but I was now in more perplexity than before, for they having signified my designs to the rest, they rushed into the gallery in such numbers, that they forced up to my very chamber. I told them this was an unprecedented manner of using a person they pretended a kindness for; and told

them, if they made use of such risings to express their gratitude to me, it would be the direct means to oblige me to leave them: 'For,' says I, 'do you think I can be safe in a kingdom where greater deference is paid to me, than to the crown?' They begged my pardon, they said, and would obey me in any thing; but the present trouble was only to offer their services to fetch my family and goods, or to do any thing else I should want them for; and if I would favour them in that, they would retire directly. I told them, when I had considered of it they should hear from me; and this again quieted them.

This disturbance not only took up much of my time, which I could have better employed, but put me to a non-plus, how to come off with them; till I sent Maleck to tell them, though I set a great value upon their esteem, yet after what had passed, it would be the most unadvisable thing in nature for me to accept their kindness; for having before requested a body of men of the king, as he had graciously granted them, it would be preferring them to the king, should I now relinquish his grant, and make use of their offer; and after this I heard no more of it.

I had scarce met with a more difficult task than to fix exact rules for the conduct of my present undertaking, there being so many things to be expressed, wherein the least perplexity arising, might have caused both delay and damage; for I was not only forced to set down the things I would have brought, but the manner and method of packing and securing them; but, as Lasmeel could read my writing to Pedro at home, and Youwarkee on board, it would be a means, though far from an expeditious one, of bringing matters into some order; and after I had done, as I thought, I could have enumerated many more things, and was obliged to add an *et cetera* to the end of my catalogue; and while they were ready for flight, I added divers other particulars and circumstances. Nay, when they were even upon the ground, I recollected the most material thing of all; for my greatest concern was, having broke up so many of my chests, to find package for the things; I say, even so late as that, I bethought me of the several great water-casks I had on-board, that would hold

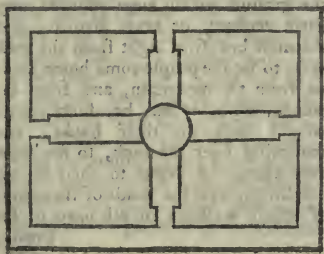
an infinite number of small things, and would be slung easily; so I stopped them, and set down that; and they were no sooner out of sight and hearing, but remembering twenty more, I was then forced to trust them to my *et cætera*.

I had sent my own flying-chair to bring the boys who had not the graundee, with orders for Pedro to sit tied in the chair, with Dickie tied in his arms; Jemmy to sit tied to the board before the chair, and David behind: so I hoped they would come safe enough; and then my wife and Sally were able to help themselves.

Having dispatched my caravan, and being all alone, I called Quilly the next morning, and telling him I had thoughts of viewing the country, I bade him prepare to go with me.

I had now been here above six months, and yet upon coming to walk gravely about the city, I found myself as much a stranger to the knowledge of the place as if that had been the first day of my arrival, though I had been over it several times in my chair.

This city is not only one of, but actually the most curious piece of work in the world, and consists of one immense entire stone of a considerable height, and it may be seven miles in length, and near as broad as it is long. The streets, and habitable part of it, are scooped, as it were, out of the solid stone, to the level with the rest of the country, very flat and smooth at bottom, the rock rising perpendicular from the streets on each side. The figure of the city is a direct square; each side about six miles long; with a large open circle in the centre of the square, about a mile in diameter; and from each of the sides of the outer streets to the opposite side, runs another street, cutting the centre of the circle as in the figure.



Along the whole face of the rock, bounding the streets and the circle, there are arch-ways; those in the circle, and the four cross streets, for the gentry and better people; and those in the outer streets, for the meaner; and it is as easy to know as by a sign, where a great man lives, by the grandeur of his entrance, and lavish distribution of the pillars, carving, and statues, about his portico, within and without: for as they have no doors, you may look in, and are not forbid entrance; and though it should look odd to an English reader, that an Englishman should speak with pleasure of a land of darkness, as that almost was, yet I am satisfied, whoever shall see it after me, will be persuaded, that for the real grandeur of their entrances, and for the magnificence of the apartments and sculpture, no part of the universe can produce the like; and though within doors there is no other manner of light than the sveecoës, yet that, when you are once used to it, is so agreeable and free from all noisome favour, that I never once regretted the loss of the sun within doors, though I often have when abroad; but then that would be injurious to the proper inhabitants, though they can no more see in total darkness than myself.

I have been over some of these private houses, which contain, it may be, thirty rooms, great and small, some higher, some lower, full of sveecoëlights, and extremely well proportioned and beautiful.

The king's palace, with all the apartments, stands in, and takes up, one full fourth-part of the square of the whole city; and is, indeed, of itself a perfect city.

There is no great man's house without one or more long galleries, for the ladies to divert themselves at divers sports in; particularly at one like our bowls on a bowling-green, and at somewhat like nine-holes, at which they play for wines, and drink a great deal, for none of them will intoxicate.

In my walk and survey of the city, one of the colombs being making a house to reside in when at Brandleguarp, I had the curiosity to go in. I saw there abundance of botts stand filled with a greenish liquor, and asked Quilly what that was. He said, it was what the stone-men used in making the houses. I proceeded farther

in, where I saw several men at work, and stayed a good while to observe them. Each man had a bott of this liquor in his left-hand, and stood before a large bank of stone, it may be thirty feet high, reaching forward up to the cieling of the place, and ascending by steps from bottom to top; the workmen standing some on one step, some on another, pouring on this liquor with their left-hands, and with their right holding a wooden tool, shaped like a little spade: I observed wherever they poured on this water, a smoke arose for a little space of time, and then the place turned white, which was scraped off like fine powder with the spade-handle; and then pouring new liquor, he scraped again, working all the while by sweecoe-lights.

Having my watch in my pocket, I measured a spot of a yard long, about a foot high, and a foot and a half on the upper flat, to see how long he would be fetching down that piece; and he got it away in little above two hours. By this means I came to know how they made their houses; for I had neither seen any tool I thought proper, nor even iron itself, except my own, since I came into the country. Upon enquiry, I found that the scrapings of this stone, and a portion of common earth, mixed with a water they have, will cement like plaster; and they use it in the small ornamental work of their buildings. I then went farther into this house, where I saw one making the figure of a glumm by the same method; but it standing upright in the solid rock against the wall, the workman held his liquor in an open shell, and dipping such stuff as my bed was made of, bound up in short rolls, some larger, some less, into the liquor, he touched the figure, and then scraped till he had reduced it into a perfect piece.

It is impossible to imagine how this work rids away; for in ten months time after I saw it, this house was compleated, having a great number of fine, large, and lofty rooms in it, exquisitely carved to all appearance.

My wonder ceased as to the palace, when I saw how easily this work was done; but sure there is no other such room in the world as Begsurbeck's, that I described above.

The palace, as I said before, taking-

up one quarter of the city, opens into four streets by four different arches; and before one of the sides, which I call the front, is a large triangle, formed by the entrance out of one of the cross streets, and the two ends of the front of the palace. Along the lower front of it, all the way runs a piazza of considerable height, supported by vast round columns, which seemed to bear up the whole front of the rock; over which was a gallery of equal length, with balustrades along it, supported with pillars of a yet finer make; and over that a pediment with divers figures, and other work, to the top of the rock; which being there quite even for it's whole length, was inclosed with balustrades between pedestals all the way; on which stood the statues of their ancient kings, so large as to appear equal to the life. The other two sides of the triangle were dwellings for divers officers belonging to the palace. Under the middle-arch of the piazza, was the way into the palace, through a long, spacious arched passage, whose farther end opened into a large square: on each side of this passage were large stair-cases, if I may so call them, by which you ascend gradually, and without steps, into the upper apartments.

The next morning we took another walk, for I told Quilly I had a mind to take a prospect of the country; we then went out at the back arch of the palace, as we had the day before at one of the sides, there being a like passage through the rock from that we went out at, to an opposite arch leading into the garden. I say, we went out at the back-arch, and after passing a large quadrangle with lodgings all round it, we ascended through a cut in the rock to a large flat, where we plainly saw the black mountain with it's top in the very sky, the sides of which afforded numberless trees, though the ground within view afforded very little verdure, or even shrubs. But the most beautiful sight from the rock was, to see the people come home loaded from the mountain, and from the woods, with, it may be, forty pound weight each on their backs; and mounting over the rock, to see them dart along the streets to their several dwellings, over the heads of thousands of others walking in all parts of the streets,

streets, while others were flying other ways. It was very pleasant to see a man walking gravely in one street, and as quick as thought to see him over the rock, settled in another, perhaps two miles distant.

The near view of the country seeming so barren, naturally led me to ask Quilly from whence they got provision for so many people as the city contained, which, to be sure, could not be less than three hundred thousand. He told me, that they had nothing but what came from the great forest, or the skirts of the mountain. 'But for the grain of it, and some few outward marks,' says I, 'I could have sworn I had eaten some of my country beef the other day at the king's table.'—'I don't know what your beef, as you call it, is; but I am sure we have nothing here but the fruit of some tree or shrub, that ever I heard of.'—'I wonder,' says I, 'Quilly, how your cooks dress their victuals. I have eaten many things boiled, and otherwise dressed hot, but have seen no rivers, or water, since I came into this country, except for drinking, or washing my hands; and I don't know where that comes from.' And another thing, says I, 'surprizes me, though I see no sun as we have to warm the air, you are very temperate in the town, and it is seldom cold here; but I neither see fire nor smoak.'—'We have,' says Quilly, 'several very good springs under the palace, both of hot water and cold; and I don't know what we should do with fires, we see the dread of them sufficiently at Mount Alkoe. Our cooks dress their fruits at the hot springs.'—'That is a fancy,' says I; 'they cannot boil them there.'—'I am sure we have no other dressing,' says he. 'Well, Quilly,' says I, 'we will go home the way you told me of, and to-morrow you shall shew me the springs: but, pray, how come you to be so much afraid of Mount Alkoe? I suppose your eyes won't bear the light; is not that all?'—'No, no,' says Quilly, 'that is the country of bad men; some of us have flown over there accidentally, when the mountain has been cool, as it is sometimes for a good while together, and have heard such noises as would frighten any honest man

out of his senses; for there they beat and punish bad men.' I could not make much of his story, nor did I enquire farther; for I had before determined, if possible, to get over thither. As we were now come into the garden, I ordered Quilly to get ready my dinner, and I would come in presently.

We went next morning to view the springs; and, indeed, it was a sight well worth considering: we were in divers offices under the rock, (Quilly carrying two globe-lights before me) in which were springs of very clear water, some of hot, and some of cold, rising within two or three inches of the surface of the floor. We then went into the kitchen, which was bigger than I ever saw one of our churches, and where were a great number of these springs, the hot all boiling full speed day and night, and smoaking like a caldron, the water rising through very small chinks in the stone into basons, some bigger, some less; and they had several deep stone-jars to set any thing to boil in. But what was the most surprising was, you should see a spring of very cold water within a few feet of one of hot, and they never rise higher or sink lower than they are. I talked with the master-cook, an ingenious man, about them; and he told me they lie in this manner all over the rocky part of the country, and that the first thing any one does in looking out for an house is to see for the water, whether both hot and cold may be found within the compass he designs to make use of; and, finding that, he goes on, or else searches another place. And, he told me, where this convenience was not in great plenty, the people did not inhabit, which made the towns all so very populous. He said, too, that those warm springs made the air more wholesome about the towns than in other parts where there were none of them. I thanked him for his information, which finished my search for that time.

C H A P. XVII.

PETER SENDS FOR HIS FAMILY—
PENDLEHAMBY GIVES A FABULOUS ACCOUNT OF THE PEOPLE—
THEIR POLICY AND GOVERNMENT—PE-

TER'S DISCOURSE ON TRADE—
YOUWARKEE ARRIVES—INVITES
THE KING AND NOBLES TO A
TREAT—SENDS TO GRAUNDEVOL
LET FOR FOWLS.

THE days hanging heavy on my hands till the arrival of my family, I sent Pendlehamby word, that, as I had sent for my family and effects, in order to settle in this country, and expected them very soon, I should be glad of his, my brother, and sister's company, to welcome them on their arrival.

My father came alone, which gave me an opportunity of informing myself in the rise and policy of the state, as I purposed to take several farther steps in their affairs, if they might prove agreeable and consistent: for hitherto, having had only slight sketches or hints of things, I could form no just idea of the whole of their laws, customs, and government. Explaining myself, therefore, to him, I begged his instruction in those particulars.

'Son Peter,' says my father, 'you have already done too much in a short time to leave any room to think you can do no more; and as you have hitherto directed your own proceedings with such incredible success, neither the king nor colombs will interpose against your inclination, but give you all the advices in our powers; and I shall esteem your selecting me for that purpose no small honour.'

'Know, then, that this state, by the tradition of our ragans, has subsisted eleven thousand years; for, before that time, the great mountain Emina, then not far from the Black Mountain, but now fallen and sunk in the sea, roaring and raging in it's own bowels for many ages, at last burst asunder with great violence, and threw up numberless unformed fleshy masses to the very stars; two of which happening in their passage to touch the side of the Black Mountain, (for all the rest fell into the sea and were lost) lodged there, and lying close together as they grew, united to each other till they were joined in one; and in process of time, by the dews of Heaven, became a glumm and a gawrey; but being so linked together by the adhesion of their flesh, they

were obliged both to move which way either would: living thus a long time in great love and fondness for each other, they had but one inclination, lest both should be sufferers upon the least disagreement.

'In process of time they grew tired of each other's constant society, and one willing to go here, and the other there, bred perpetual disorders between them; for prevention whereof, for the future, they agreed to cut themselves asunder with sharp stones. The pain, indeed, was intolerable during the operation; but, however, they effected it, and the wounds each received were very dangerous, and a long time before they were perfectly healed: but at length, sometimes agreeing, sometimes not, they begat a son, whom they called Perigen, and a daughter they called Philella. These two, as they grew up, despising their parents who lived on the top of the mountain, ventured to descend into the plains, and living upon the fruits they found there, sheltered themselves in this very rock. Mean time, the old glumm and gawrey, having lived to a great age, were so infirm, that neither of them was able to walk for a long time; till one day, being near each other, and trying to rise by the assistance of each other, they both got up, and leaning upon and supporting each other, they also walked commodiously: this mutual assistance kept them in good-humour a great while; till, one day, passing along near hoximo, they both fell in.

'Perigen and Philella had several children in the plains; who, as they grew up, increasing, spread into remote parts, and peopled the country: at last, one of them being a very passionate man, at the instigation of his wife, became the first murderer, by slaying his father. This so enraged the people, that the murderer and his wife, in abhorrence of the fact, were conveyed to Mount Alkoe, where was then only a very narrow deep pit, into which they were both thrown headlong; but the persons who carried them thither had scarce retired from the mouth of the pit, when it burst out with fire, raging prodigiously, and has kept burning ever since, Arco and Telamine (the murderer

derer and his wife) lived seven thousand years in the flames; till having with their teeth wrought a passage through the side of the mountain, they begat a new generation about the foot of the mountain; and having brought fire with them, resolved to keep it burning ever after in memory of their escape; and power being given them over bad men, they and their progeny are now wholly employed in beating and tormenting them.

A great while after Arco and Telamine were thus disposed of, the people of this country multiplying, it happened, one year, that all the fruits were so dry, that the people, not able to live any longer upon the moisture of them only, as they had always done before, and fearing all to be consumed with drought, one of their ragans praying very much, and promising to make an image to Collwar, and preserve it for ever, if he would send them but moisture, in one night's time the earth cast up such a flood, that they were forced to mount on the rocks for fear of drowning: but the next day it all sunk away again, except several little bubbles which remained in many places for a long time, and the people lived only on the moisture they sucked from the stone where those bubbles settled for many years; for they found that the water arose to the height of the surface, and no higher; and where they found most of those chinks and bubbles, they settled, and formed cities, living altogether in holes of the rock; till one Lallio, having found out the art of crumbling the rock to dust by a liquor he got from the trees, and working himself a noble house in the rock, in the place where our palace now stands, he told them, if they would make him their king, they should each have such an house as his own. To this they agreed, and then he discovered the secret to them.

This Lallio directed the cutting out this whole city, divided the people into colonies where the waters were most plenty; and while half the people worked at the streets and houses, the other half brought them provisions. In short, he grew so powerful, that no one durst dispute

his commands; all which authority he transmitted to his successors, who finding by the increase of the people, and the many divisions of them, that they grew insolent and ungovernable, they appointed a colamb in every province, as a vice-king, with absolute authority over all causes, except murder and treason, which are referred to the king and colombs in moucheratt.

As we had no want but of victuals and habitations, the king, when he gave a colambat, gave also the lands and the fruits thereof, together with all the hot and cold springs, to the colamb, who again distributed parcels to the great officers under him, and they part of theirs to the meaner officers under them, for their subsistence, with such a number of the common people as was necessary in respect to the dignity of the post each enjoyed, who for their services are fed by their masters.

In all cases of war, the king lays before the moucheratt the number of his own troops he designs to send; when each colamb's quota being settled at such a proportion of the whole, he forthwith sends his number from out of his own lasks, and also from the several officers under him; so that every man, let the number be ever so great, can be at the rendezvous in very few days.

We have but three professions, besides the ragans and soldiery, amongst us, and these are cooks, house-makers, and pike-makers, of which every colamb has several among his lasks; and these, upon the new regulation, will be the only gainers, as they may work where they please, and according to their skill will be their provision; but how the poor labourers will be the better for it, I cannot see.

'Dear Sir,' says I, 'there are, you see, amongst lasks, some of such parts, that it is great pity they should be confined from shewing them; and my meaning in giving liberty is in order for what is to follow; that is, for the introduction of arts amongst you. Now, every man who has natural parts will exert them, when any art is laid before him; and he will find so much delight in making new discoveries, that, did no profit attend it,

'it, the satisfaction of the discovery to a prying genius would compensate the pains: but I propose a profit also to the artificer.'—'Why, what profit,' says my father, 'can arise but food, and perhaps a servant of their own to provide it for them?'

'Sir,' says I, 'the man who has nothing to hope, loses the use of one of his faculties; and, if I guess right, and you live ten years longer, you shall see this state as much altered as the difference has been between a lark and a tree he feeds on. You shall all be possessed of that which will bring you fruits from the woods without a lark to fetch it. Those who were before your slaves, shall then take it as an honour to be employed by you, and at the same time shall employ others dependent on them; so as the great and small shall be under mutual obligations to each other, and both to the truly industrious artificer; and yet every one content only with what he merits.'

'Dear son,' says my father, 'these will be glorious days indeed! But, come, come, you have played a good part already; don't, by attempting what you can't master, eclipse the glory so justly due to you.'

'No, Sir,' says I, 'nothing shall be attempted by me to my dishonour; for I shall ever remember my friend Glanlipze.—Sir,' says I, 'see here,' (shewing him my watch.) 'Why, this,' says he, 'hung by my daughter's side at Graundeyolet.'—'It did so,' says I; 'and, pray, what did you take it for?'—'A bott,' says he. 'I thought so,' says I; 'but as you asked no questions, I did not then force the knowledge of it upon you. But put it to your ear:' he did so. 'What noise is that!' says he. 'Is it alive?'—'No,' says I, 'it is not; but it is as significant. If I ask it what time of the day it is, or how long I have been going from this place to that, I look but in it's face, and it tells me presently.'

My father looking upon it a good while, and perceiving that the minute-hand had got farther than it was at first, was just dropping it out of his hand, had I not caught it. 'Why it is alive,' says he; 'it moves!—Sir,' says I, 'if you had dropped it, you had done me an inexpressible in-

jury.'—'O ho,' says he, 'I find now how you do your wonders; it is something you have shut up here that assists you; it is an evil spirit!' I laughing heartily, he was sorry for what he had said, believing he had shewn some ignorance. 'No, Sir,' says I, 'it is no spirit, good or evil, but a machine made by some of my countrymen, to measure time with.'—'I have heard,' says he, 'of measuring an abb, or the ground, or a rock; but never yet heard of measuring time.'—'Why, Sir,' says I, 'don't you say three days hence I will do so; or such a one is three years old? Is not that a measuring of time by so many days or years?'—'Truly,' says he, 'in one sense I think it is.'—'Now, Sir,' says I, 'how do you measure a day?'—'Why, by rising, and lying down,' says he. 'But suppose I say I will go now and come again, and have a particular time in my head when I will return, how shall I do to make you know that time?'—'Why, that will be afterwards, another time,' says he; 'or I can think how long it will be.'—'But,' says I, 'how can you make me know, when you think it will be.'—'You must think too,' says he. 'But then,' says I, 'we may deceive each other, by thinking differently. Now this will set us to rights:' then I described the figures to him, telling him, how many parts they divided the day into, and that by looking on it, I could tell how many of such parts were passed; and that if he went from me, and said he would come one, or two, or three parts hence, I should know when to expect him. I then shewed him the wheels, and explained where the force lay, and why it went no faster or slower, as well as I could; and, from my desire of teaching, insensibly perfected myself more and more in it. So that beginning to have a little idea of it, he wished he had one. 'And,' says he, 'will you teach all our people to make such things?'—'Then they would be disregarded, Sir,' says I. 'It is impossible,' says he. 'I'll tell you, Sir, how I mean,' said I. 'I can hereafter shew you an hundred things as useful as this; now, if every body was to make these, how would other things be made? Besides, if every body

'body made them, nobody would want them; and then what would any body get by them, besides the pleasing their own fancy? But if only twenty men make them in one town, all the rest must come to them; and they who make these, must go to one of twenty others, who make another thing that these men want, and so on; by which means, every man wanting something he does not make, it will be the better for every maker of every thing.'

'Son,' says my father, 'excuse me; I am really ashamed, now you have better informed me, I asked so foolish a question.' I told him, we had a saying in my country, that every thing is easy when it is known. 'I think,' says he, 'a man might find every thing in your country.'

Two days after, my wife and daughter Sally came very early; but sure no joy could be greater than ours at sight of each other. I embraced them both over and over, as did my father, especially Sally, who was a charming child. They told me, I might expect every thing that evening, for they left them alighting at the height of Battringdrigg; for though they came out the last, yet the body of the people with their baggage could not come so fast as they did. And little Sally said, 'We staid and rested ourselves, purely, daddy, at Battringdrigg, before the crowd came; but as soon as mammy had seen all my brothers safe, who came before the rest, and kissed Dicky, we set out again.'

About seven hours after, arrived the second convoy from abroad, that ever entered that country. I had too much to do with my wife and children that night, to spare a thought to my cargo; so I only set a guard over them: for though I had now been married about sixteen years, Youwarkee was ever new to me.

I was now obliged to the king again, for some additional conveniences to my former apartment; and the young ones were mightily pleased to have so much more room than we had at home, and to see the sweetcoes; but finding themselves waited upon in so elegant a manner, and by so many servants (for with our new rooms, we had all the servants belonging to them) they thought themselves in a paradise to the grotto,

where all we wanted we were forced to help ourselves to.

The next day Tommy came to see us, the king having given him a very pretty post, since the death of Yaccombourse; and Hallicarnie, with the Princess Jahamel her mistress, who was mightily pleased to see Youwarkee in her English dress, and invited her and the children to her apartment.

It was but a few months since my wife saw the children; yet the scarce knew them, they were so altered; for the two courtiers behaved with so much politeness, that their brothers and Sally looked but with an ill eye upon them, finding all the fault, and dropping as many little invidious expressions on them as possible. But I sharply rebuked them: we were all made chiefly, I told them, to please our Maker, and that could be done only by the goodness of the heart; and if their hearts were more pure, they were the best children; but if they liked their brothers and sisters outward behaviour better than their own, they might so far imitate them.

When we were settled in our new apartment, I unpacked my chairs and tables, and set out my side-board, and made such a figure as had never before been seen in that part of the world. I wanted now some shoes for Pedro, his own being almost past wear, for the young ones never had worn any, but could find none; till applying to Lasseel, and shewing him what I wanted, he pointed to one of the great water-casks; but as there were eleven of them, big and little, I knew not where to begin; till, having invited the king and several of the ministers to dine with me, I was forced to look over my goods for several other things I should want.

In my search, I found half a ream of paper, a leather ink-bottle, but no ink in it, some quills, and books of accounts, and several other things relative to writing. The prize gave me courage to attempt the other casks; but I found little more that I immediately wanted. In the last cask were several books, two of them romances, six volumes of English plays, two of devotion, the next were either Spanish or Portuguese, and the last looked like a bible; but just opening it, and taking it to be of the same language, I put them

them all in again, thinking to divert myself with them some other time. I here found some more paper, and so many shoes, as when I had felled them, served me as long as I staid in the country.

Having, as I said before, invited the king to eat with me, I was sorry I had not ordered my fowls to be brought; and Youwarkee said, she thought to have done it, but I had not wrote for them. I told her, I would send Maleck for some of them, I was resolved; for I should pique myself on giving the king a dish he had never before tasted. So I called Maleck, telling him, he must take thirty men with him to Graundevolet; 'And carry fix empty chests with you,' says I, 'and put eight of my fowls in each chest, and bring them with all expedition.'—'Where do they lie, Sir?' says he. 'You will find them at roost,' says I, 'when it is dark.'—'I never was there,' says he, 'and don't know the way.'—'What,' says I, 'never at Graundevolet?'—'Yes,' says he, 'but not at roost.' I laughed, saying, 'Maleck, did not you see fowls when you was there?' He said, he did not know, what were they like. 'They are a bird,' says I. 'And what sort of a thing is that?' says he. Youwarkee hearing us in this debate, 'Maleck,' says she, 'did not you see me tofs down little nuts to something that you stared at; you saw them eat the nuts.'—'O dear,' says he, 'I know it very well, with two legs and no arms.'—'The same,' says I, 'Maleck; do you go look for a little house almost by my grotto, and at night you will find these things stand on sticks in that house. Take them down gently, and come away with them in the chests.' Maleck performed his business to a hair, but instead of forty-eight, brought me sixty, telling me, he found the chests would hold them very well; and I kept them afterwards in the king's garden.

C H A P. XVIII.

PETER GOES TO HIS FATHER'S—
TRAVERSES THE BLACK MOUNTAINS—TAKES A FLIGHT TO MOUNTALOE—GAINS THE MINERS—OVLRCOMES THE GOVERNOR'S

TROOPS—PROCLAIMS GEORIGETTI KING—SEIZES THE GOVERNOR—RETURNS HIM THE GOVERNMENT—PETER MAKES LAWS WITH THE CONSENT OF THE PEOPLE—AND RETURNS TO BRANDLEGUARP WITH DEPUTIES.

NO farther project being ripe for execution, I took a journey home with my father to Arndrumstake, and he would take all the children with him. Youwarkee and I stayed about six weeks, leaving all the children with my father.

Upon my return, I frequently talked with Maleck about his country; who they originally were, and how long it had been inhabited, and what other countries bordered thereon, and how they lay. He told me, his countrymen looked upon themselves to be very ancient, but they were not very numerous; for the old stock was almost worn out by the hardships they had undergone; that about three hundred years before, he said, as he had it from good report, there were a people from beyond the sea, or as they called themselves from the little lands, had strangely over-ran them; and he had heard say, they would have over-run this country too, but they thought it would not answer. He said, when those people first came, they began to turn up the earth to a prodigious depth; 'And now,' says he, bringing some nasty hard earth of several sorts, 'they put it into reat fires till it runs about like water, and then beat it about with great heavy things into several shapes; and some of it, Sir,' says he, 'looks just like that stuff that lay at the bottom of your ship, and some almost white, and some red; for when I was a boy I was to have been sent to work amongst them, as my father did; but it having killed him, I came hither, as many more have done, to avoid it.'—'And what do they do with it,' says I, 'when they have beat it about as you say?'—'Then,' says he, 'they carry it a long way to the sea.'—'What then?' says I. 'Why then the little landers take it, and swim over the sea with it.'—'And what do they do with it?' says I. 'Why,' says he, 'there are other people who take it from them, and go

'go away with it.'—'Why do they let them take it?' says I. 'Because,' says he, 'they give them cloaths for it.'—'Do they want cloaths,' says I, 'more than you?' He told me they had no graundee. 'And what other countries have you here about?'—'There is one country,' says he, 'north of Alkoe, where they say there is just such another people as the Little-landers, and they get some of the things from Mount Alkoe.'—'What do they do with them?' says I. 'I don't know,' says he; 'they fetch a great deal; but they won't let any body come into their country.'—'Is there nobody inhabits between the Mountain Alkoe and the sea?' He told me no, the Little-landers would not let them.

Having got what information I could from Maleck, and also from a countryman or two of his, he had brought to me, I considered it all over; 'And,' thinks I, 'if I could but get Mount Alkoe to submit,' (for they had told me they were only governed by a deputy from the Little-lands) 'to see the work done, I might, by intercepting the trade to the sea, turn the profit of the country my own way, and make it pass through our hands.'

I next enquired of those who brought the fruits from the great forest, what sort of land they had there; and found, by their description, it was a light mould, and in many places well covered with grass and herbs; and, by all the report I could hear, must be a fruitful country, well managed; and being a flat country, and not encompassed on that side with the black mountain, was much higher than Doorpt Swangetti. This news put me upon searching the truth of it; and I made the tour of the black mountain and the great forest, alighting often to make my observations. The forest is a little world of wood without end, with here and there a fine lawn very grassy; and indeed the wood-grounds bear it very well, the trees not standing in crowds, but at a healthy distance from each other. I went abundantly farther than any one had before been, but saw no variation in the woody scene; and coming round westward home, I had a view of hoximo; which is nothing but a narrow cleft in the earth, on the top of the black mountain, of a most

extraordinary depth; for, upon dropping a stone down, you shall hear it strike and hum for a long time before all is quiet again; and laying my ear over the cleft, whilst I ordered one of my attendants to throw a large stone down, after the usual thumps and humming, I imagined I heard it dash in water, so that it is not impossible it may reach to the sea; which is at least six or seven miles below it. Into this hole all dead bodies are precipitated, from the king to the beggar; for four glunms holding by the ancles and wrists of the deceased, fly with them to hoximo, and throw them down, whilst the air is filled with the lamentations of the relations of the deceased, and of such others as are induced to follow the corpse for the sake of the wines, on such occasions plentifully distributed to all comers, by the gentry; and in the best proportion they are able by even the meanest amongst them.

After a stay of about fourteen days at home, I fixed my next trip for Mount Alkoe; and having told Maleck my design, he said he would go with me with all his heart, but feared I should get no Brandleguarpine to bear me; for he told me they had an old tradition, that Mindrack lived there, and would not go for all the world; 'Which has been the greatest security that country has had, for this would have devoured them else,' says he.

I spoke to the king, to Nalgig, and the ragans; and found them all unanimous, that the mountain Alkoe was the habitation of Mindrack, and that the noises which had been heard there, were his servants beating bad men. Says I to myself, 'Here is one of the usefulest projects upon earth spoiled, by an unaccountable prepossession: what must be done to overcome this prejudice?'

I told Maleck I found what he said to be too true, as to the people of Brandleguarp; 'But,' says I, 'are there not enough of your country-men here to carry me thither?' He believing there were, I ordered him to contract with them; but it vexed me very much to be obliged to take these men. However, though I resolved to go, yet I chose to reason the ragans into the project, if I could; thinking they would soon bring the people over.

Y

I called

I called several of the ragans together, and said: 'Because you are a wiser and more thinking people than the vulgar, I have applied myself to your judgments in the affair of Mount Alkoe. Now, consider with yourselves, whether you have any real reason beyond a prepossession, for thinking these people fiends or devils servants, as you call them, without farther examination; for, according to my comprehension, they only understanding the nature of several sorts of earth, reduce them by labour and fire to solid substances for the use of mankind; and the want of these things is the reason of your living as you do, without an hundredth part of the benefits of life. These sort of people, these noises, and these operations, which you hear and see carried on at Alkoe, are to be heard and seen in my country; and we deal and traffick with their labours, from one end of the world to the other; and we who are with them the happiest, without them should be the most miserable of people. Did not some of you see, at my entertainment, what I called my knives and forks, and spoons, my pistols, cutlasses, and silver cup? All these, and infinitely more, are the produce of these poor men's industry. Now,' says I, 'if we settle a communication with these people, your dues will be all paid in these curious things; you will have your people employed in working them, and have strangers applying to you to serve them with what they want; who, in return, will give you what you want; and you will find yourselves known and respected in the world.' Finding some of these arguments, applied to the men, had staggered them a little, I applied to their senses. Says I, 'It still appears to me that you have your prejudices hanging on you: but what will you say if I go thither and return safe; will you be afraid to follow me another time?' They persuaded me from it, as a dangerous experiment; but said, if I did return, they would not think there was so much in it as they suspected.

Maleck having chosen me out four-score of his countrymen, in about a month's time I trained them up to the

knowledge of my pistols and cutlasses, and the management of them; and taking a chest with me for the arms and other necessaries, we sallied up to the black mountain. I rested there; and there Naigig and Lasmeel overtook me; saying, that when they found me obstinate to go, they could not in their hearts leave me, happen what would. This put new spirits into me, and we consulted how the noises lay, and agreed to engage first upon the skirts of them, where the smokes were most straggling. I charged six guns, and all my pistols, which I kept in my chest, and ordered them to alight with me about an hundred paces from the first smoke they saw; then ordered three of them to carry my guns after me, and twelve of them to take pistols and follow me; but not to fire till I gave orders. The remainder I left with the baggage.

We marched up to the smoke, which issued out of a low arch-way just at the foot of the mountain. It was very light there with the flames of the volcano; and, entering the arch, a fellow ran at me with a red-hot iron-bar, him I shot dead; and seeing two more and a woman there, who stood with their faces to the wall of the hut or room, as unwilling to be seen, I ordered Maleck to speak to them in a known tongue, and tell them we were no enemies, nor intended them any hurt; and that their companion's fate was owing to his own rashness in running first at me with the hot bar; and that if they would shew themselves good-natured and civil to us, we would be so to them; but if they offered to resist openly, or use any manner of treachery towards us, they might depend upon the same fate their companion had just suffered.

Upon hearing this, they approached us; and shewing great tokens of submission, I delivered my gun to Maleck, and bade them go on with their work, ordering all the guns out of the shop, for fear of a spark. I then perceived they were direct forges, but made after another manner from ours, their wind being made by a great wheel, like a wheel of a water-mill, which worked with the fans or wings in a large trough; and caused a prodigious issue of air through a small hole in the back of the fire-place. They were then drawing out iron-bars.

I gave

I gave each of these men, and also to the woman, a dram of brandy; which they swallowed down very greedily, and looked for more, and seemed very pleasant. I then enquired into the trade; by whom, and how it was carried on; and they told me just as Maleck had done. I then asked where the mines lay; and one of them looking full at me said, 'Then you know what we are about.'—'Yes,' says I, 'very well.' He told me the mine was (in his language, as Maleck interpreted it) about a quarter of a mile off, and directed me to it. I ordered them to go on with their work, telling them, though I left a guard over them, it was only that they might not raise their neighbours to disturb me; though if they did, I should serve them all as I had done their companion; and left four men with pistols at the arch-way.

I proceeded to the iron-mine, but supposed the men were all within, for I saw nobody; but there were many large heaps of ore lying, which I felt of; and, being vastly heavy, I supposed it might be rich in metal.

I returned to my men at the arch, and asked them what other mines there might be in that country, and of what other metals; but Maleck not knowing the metals themselves, was not able to interpret the names they called them by. I then shewed them an English halfpenny, a Portuguese piece of silver-money, and my gold watch; and asking if they had any of those, they pointed to the halfpenny and silver-piece, but shook their heads at the watch. I then shewed them a musket-ball, and they said they had a great deal of that.

I desired them to shew me the way to the copper-mine, (pointing my finger to the halfpenny) and told them if they would go with me, they should have some more, (pointing to my brandy;) and they readily agreed, if I would stand by them for leaving their work. I believe it might be two miles farther on the right to the copper-mine; and as these men had the graundee, I expected they would have shown by me; but I found they had a light chain round their graundee, which prevented them; so I walked too; and having made them my friends by being familiar with them, I desired they would go in, and let the head-man of the

works know that a stranger desired to speak with him, and view his works, and to inform him how peaceable I was if he used me civilly; but that I could strike him dead at once if he did not.

I do not know how they managed, or what report they made; but the man came to me very courteously, and I bade Maleck ask if he came in friendship, as I did to him; and he giving me that assurance, I went in with him, taking Nasgig and Maleck with me, and leaving our fire-arms without. I ordered them both, as I did myself, to carry their cutlasses, sheathed in their hands, for fear of a surprize. We saw a great quantity of copper-ore, and several melting-vats, being just at the mouth of the mine, the mine running horizontally into the side of the mountain, and, as they said, was very rich. I gave the head-man a little brandy, and two or three more of them, who had been industrious in shewing and explaining things to me.

I desired the foreman to walk out with me; and, asking how long he had been in that employ, he told me he was a native of the Born Isles, and was brought thither young, where he first wrought in the iron, then in the silver, and now in this mine: that he had been there twenty years, and never expected to be delivered from his miserable slavery; but as he was now overseer of that work, he did pretty well, though nothing like freedom. He told me they expected several new slaves quickly; for the mines killed those they did not agree with so fast, they were very thinly wrought at present, and that the governor was gone to the isles to get more men. I was glad to hear this: 'And, pray,' says I, 'where does the governor reside?' He (pointing to the place) told me. 'And what guard,' says I, 'may he keep?'—'About four hundred men; but nobody durst molest him,' says he; 'for he tortures them in such a manner, never killing them, that not the least thing can be done against his will.'

After we had talked a good while on the misery of slavery, and finding him a man fit for my purpose, I asked him if he would go with me to Brandedguarp; 'For,' said I, 'there are certainly good mines in those moun-

'tains; and if you will overlook them, you shall be free, and have whatever you desire.' He shook his head, saying, how could he expect to be free where all the rest were slaves; 'And, besides,' says he, 'they are in such commotions among themselves, that it is said the state will be torn to pieces.'—'You are mistaken,' says I; 'very much; I myself have settled peace amongst them, and killed the usurper.'—'Is it possible!' says he; 'and are you the man it was said they expected to come out of the sea?'—'The very same,' says I: 'and as to slavery, there is not a slave in the kingdom; nor shall be here, if you will hearken to me.'—'That would be a good time indeed,' says he. 'Well,' says I, 'my friend, I promise you it shall be so; only observe this, that when I come to reduce the governor, do none of you miners assist him.' He promised he would let the other miners secretly know it, and all should be as I wished; but desired me to be expeditious, for the governor was expected every day.

I went from him to the other mines, and my guides with me; who seeing me so well received at the copper-mine, and reporting it to the others, it caused my proceedings to go on smoothly, and my offers to be readily embraced wherever I came.

Having prepared matters thus, I set Maleck and his countrymen upon the natives, to treat with them about submission to Georigetti, on promise of freedom; who being assured of what I had done at Brandleguarp, and in hopes of like liberty, readily came into it; so that the only thing remaining was, before the governor's return, to attack the soldiery. Having, therefore, renewed my engagements with the miners, and believing myself upon as good terms with the natives as I could wish, I was advised by Nasgig and Lasneel to return for cannon and a large army, before I attacked the soldiery: but I, who had all my life rode upon the spur, having considered that an opportunity once lost is never to be regained; and though I could have wished for some cannon, I valued the men but for shew: I therefore formed my resolves to march with the force I had next morning, and pitch upon a plain just by the governor's

garrison, in order, if I could, to draw his men out. I did so, and it answered; for, upon the first news of my coming, they appeared with a sort of heavy-headed weapons, which hurling round, they threw upwards alope, in order to light upon the backs of their enemies in flight, and beat them down; but they could not throw them above thirty paces.

I sat still in my chair, with a gun in my hand, and Maleck with another at my elbow, with four more lying by me, ready to be presented; Lasneel standing by to charge again as fast as we fired. I ordered a party of twenty of my men, with cutlasses, to attack the van of the enemy, by rushing impetuously upon them, they coming but thin against me; for I was not willing to employ my pieces till I could do more execution. They began the attack about an hundred yards before me, not very high in the air; and my cutlass-men having avoided the first flight of their weapons, fell upon them with such fury, that chopping here a limb, and there a graundee, which disabling their flight, was equally pernicious, they fell by scores before me: but I seeing those in the rear, which made a body of near three hundred, coming very swift and close in treble ranks, one above the other, hoping to bear down my handful of men with their numbers, I ordered my men all to retire behind me, and not, till the enemy were passed over my head, to fall on them. Maleck and I, as they came near, each firing a piece together, and whipping up another, and then another, in an instant, they fell round us, roaring and making a horrid yell. This the rest seeing, went over our men's heads, not without many falling from the cuts of my men; and those who escaped were never heard of more.

The miners, who from their several stations had beheld the action, came singing and dancing, from every quarter, round me; and if I had not drawn my men close in a circle about me, would probably, out of affection, have done me more hurt than two of the governor's armies; for against these common gratitude denied the use of force; and they crowding every one but to touch me, they said, for fear of being pressed to death myself, as
some,

some of them almost were, I ordered them to be let in through my men, at one side of the ring, and, passing by and touching me, to be let out on the other side; and this quieted them, but kept me in penance a long time.

We then marched in a body all into the town, where we were going to proclaim Georigetti King of Mount Alkoe; when a surly fellow, much wiser than the rest, as he thought, being about to harangue the people against being too hasty in it, was knocked down, and trod to death for his pains; and we went on with the proclamation, giving general liberty to all persons without exception.

The next thing to be considered was, how to oppose the governor when he came; and for that purpose I enquired into the manner of his coming, the road he came, and his attendants; and being informed that an hundred of his guards, who had not the graundee, waited for him at the sea-side, and that he had got no other guard, except a few friends and the slaves he went for, and that the slaves always came first, six in a rank tied together, under convoy of a few of his guards, I went in person to view the rout he came, and seeing a very convenient post in a thick wood through which they were to pass, from whence we might see them before they came near us, I posted a watch on the sea-side of the wood, and myself and men lay on the hither-side of it, just where the governor's party must come out of it again: so that my watch giving notice of their approach, we might be ready to fall on at their coming out of our side of the wood.

When we had waited three days, our watch brought word they were coming; so we kept as close as possible, letting the slaves and guards march on, who came by about two hours march before the governor: but so soon as he approached, I drew up my men on the plain within the wood in ranks, ordering them to lie close on their bellies, till they saw me rise, and then to rise, follow me, and obey orders.

Several of the first ranks having passed the wood, just as the governor had entered the open country, I rose, and bade Maleck call aloud, that if any of them stirred or lifted up a weapon, he was a dead man; and then seeing one of the foremost running, I

fetched him down with a musket-shot, bidding Maleck tell the rest, that if they submitted and laid down their weapons, they were safe; but if they refused, I would serve them all as I had done him who fled. This speech, with the terror of the gun, fixed every man to his place like a statue.

I then went forward to the governor, and by Maleck, my interpreter, asked him who they all were with him: he told me his slaves. I then made him call every man before him, and give him freedom; which, finding no way to avoid, (for I looked very stern) he did, and I had enough to do to quiet my new freemen, who, I thought, would have devoured me for joy. I asked whither he was going; he said, to his government. 'Under whom do you hold it?' says I. 'Under the zaps of the isles,' says he. I then told him, that whoever held that government for the future, must receive it from the hands of Georigetti, the king of that country, to whom all the natives and miners had already engaged their fidelity. I told him both natives and foreigners had been all declared free.

The governor seemed much dejected, and told me he hoped I would not use him or his company ill. I told him that depended entirely on his own and their good behaviour. I asked who his friends were that were with him; he said, they were some of the zaps relations, who were come to see the method of the government, and inspect the mines.

Ordering all the governor's guards and friends to go before, and all my own, but Maleck, to keep backwards some paces, I entered into discourse with him about the state of the isles, and the country of Alkoe; and finding him a judicious person, and not a native of the isles, I thought, with some management, he might prove a useful person to me, but did not like the character I had heard of his severity: so I plainly told him, that only one thing prevented my making him a greater man than ever he was; which was, I had been informed he had a roughness in his nature which drove him to extremities with the poor slaves, which I could not bear. 'Sir,' says he, 'whatever a man is in his natural temper, where slavery abounds it is necessary

' necessary to act, or at least be thought to do so, in a merciless manner. I am intrusted with the government of a land of only slaves; who have no more love, nor are they capable of any, for me, than the herbs of the ground have. I am to render an account to my masters of their labours; they work by force, and would not stir a step without it, or the fear of correction; for which reason the rod must be ever held over them; and though I seldom let it fall, when I do, the suffering of one is too long remembered to permit others quickly to subject themselves to the like punishment: and this method I judged to be the most mild, as the death or sufferings of one but seldom, must, though ever so severe, be milder than the frequent execution of numbers. And as to my appearing severe to them, my post required it; for mercy to slaves being interpreted into fear, arms them with violence against you.'

I could not gainsay this, especially as he told me he was glad I had freed them all; 'For no man,' says he, 'but if he were to chuse, would rather reign by love (which he may in a free country, but it is impracticable in one of slaves) than by fear, which alone will keep the latter in subjection.'

I asked him whether, as he knew the nature of the country, and the business of the governor, he could become faithful to my master Georigetti: he told me he had ever been faithful to his masters the zaps, and would till he was sure (without suspecting in the least my veracity) all was true that I was pleased to tell him; for nothing could satisfy his conscience but being an eye-witness of it; and then being discharged from any farther capacity of serving them in an open way, he should be free to chuse his own master; of all whom, Georigetti should to him be most preferable; but begged me not to interpret his desire of retaining fidelity to his old masters till he could no longer serve them, into an implication of assisting them, by either open or concealed practices; for, wherever he engaged, he would be true to the utmost.

At the end of six days (for I travelled on foot with them) we arrived at

the governor's palace, which we found without a guard, and all the slaves he had sent before him at liberty: so I ordered my men to supply the usual guard, and took my lodging in the governor's apartment.

As Gadfi (for that was the governor's name) was not confined, or any of his friends, he came into my apartment, and told me, since he had found all things answered my report, if I pleased, he would quit the palace to me, and every thing belonging to the government. I told him he said well. He did so, taking with him only some few things, his own property. So soon as he was without the territory of the palace, I sent for him and his friends back again: he could not help being dejected at his return, fearing some mischief. 'Gadfi,' says I, 'this palace and this country, which I now hold for my master Georigetti, I deliver in custody to you as his governor; and now charge you to make acknowledgment of your fidelity to him.' Then taking it from him in terms of my own proposing, I delivered him the regalia of his government, charging him to maintain freedom: 'But,' says I, 'let no man eat who will not work, as the country and the produce are the king's.'

I then summoned an assembly of the people, and sent notice to all the miners to attend me. I told them, all that the king desired of them was to make themselves happy; 'And as the mines at present,' says I, 'are the only employment of this country, I would have it agreed by your own consent; for I will force nothing upon you, that every man amongst you, from sixteen to sixty, shall work every third week at the mines, and other duties of the government; and two weeks out of three shall be your own to provide in for your families: and if I live to come back again, you shall each man have so much land of his own, as shall be sufficient for his family; and I will make it my business to see for seeds to improve it with. And this week's work in three, and if afterwards it can be done with less, in four, shall be an acknowledgment to the king for his bounty to you. Do you agree to this?' They all, with one voice, cried out, 'We do!' — 'Then,' says I, 'agree

'agree amongst yourselves, and part into proper divisions for carrying on the work; that is, into four parts, one for each sort of metal; and then again, each of those four into three parts; and on every seventh day in the morning, let those who are to begin meet those who are leaving off work; so that there be clear six days work, and one of going and returning. Do you all agree to this?' All cried, 'We do!'—'Then,' says I, 'whoever neglects his duty, unless through sickness, or by leave of the governor, shall work a double week. Do you agree to this?'—'We do!'—'Then all matters of difference between you shall be decided by the governor; and in case of any injury or injustice, or wrong judgment in the governor, by Georgetti. Do you agree?'—'We do!'—'Then,' says I, 'agree upon ten men, two for the natives, and two for each mineral work, to send with me to Brandleguarp, to petition Georgetti to confirm these laws, till you shall make others yourselves, and to acknowledge his sovereignty. Do you agree?'—'We do!'

I then told them, that as those who had been slaves were now free, they might, if they pleased, return home; but, as I should make it my endeavour to provide so well for them in all the comforts of life, I believed most of them would be of opinion, their interest would keep them where they were. And, above all things, recommending a hearty union between the new freemen and the natives, and to marry amongst each other, and to continue in love amongst themselves, and duty to the king and his governor; and promising speedily to return and settle what was wanting, I dismissed the assembly, and set out for Brandleguarp with the ten deputies: but I left Lameel behind with the governor, and two servants with him, to give me immediate notice in case any disturbance should happen in my absence.

CHAP. XIX.

PETER ARRIVES WITH THE DEPUTIES—PRESENTS THEM TO THE KING—THEY RETURN—A COLONY DECREED TO BE SENT

THITHER—NASCIG MADE GOVERNOR—MANNER OF CHUSING THE COLONY—A FLIGHT-RACE, AND THE INTENT OF IT—WALSI WINS THE PRIZE, AND IS FOUND TO BE A GAWREY.

AS we alighted at the palace late at night, I kept the deputies with me till next morning; when I went to the king, desiring them to stay in my apartment till I had received his majesty's orders for their admission.

The king was but just up when I came in; and seeing me, embraced me, saying, 'Dear father, I am glad to meet you again alive; your stay has given me the utmost perplexity; and could I have prevailed with any of my servants to have followed you, I had sent before this time to have known what was become of you.'

I told his majesty, the greatest pleasure of my life consisted in the knowledge of his majesty's esteem for me; and he might depend upon it, I would take care of myself from a double motive, whilst I was in his dominions; the one, from the natural obligation of my own preservation; and the other, equally compulsive, of continuing serviceable to his majesty, till I had made him more famous than his ancestor, the great Begfurbeck.

I told his majesty, as a small token of my duty and affection to him, I was come to make him a tender of the additional title of King of Mount Alkoe. 'Father,' says he, 'we shall never be able to get a sufficient number of my subjects to go thither; for though your safe return may be some encouragement, yet, whilst their old apprehensions subsist, (and I know not what will alter them) we can do no good: and, indeed, were they free to go, and under no suspicion of danger, it would cost abundance of men to conquer Mount Alkoe.'

'Great Sir,' said I, 'you mistake me: I told you I came to make you a tender of it; I have proclaimed you king there, and freedom to the people; I have held an assembly of the kingdom; placed a governor; taken the engagement of himself and subjects to you; settled laws amongst them for your benefit, the full third part of all their labour; have brought

ten

‘ten deputies, two from each denomination of people among them: and they only wait your command to be admitted, to beg your acceptance of their submission, and pray your royal protection.’

‘Father,’ says the king, ‘you amaze me! but, as it is your doing, let them come in.’

The deputies being received, and heard by Maleck, their interpreter, very graciously, the king told them, in a very favourable speech, that whatever his father had done, or should do, they might accept as done by himself; and commanded them to remind the governor, for, whom he had the highest esteem, to observe the laws, without the least deviation, till his father should make such farther additions as were consistent with his own honour and their future freedom: and having feasted them in a most magnificent manner, they returned, highly satisfied with the honours they had received.

This transaction being immediately noised abroad, all the colambs came themselves; and the great cities, by their deputies, sent his majesty their compliments upon the occasion; and there was nothing but mirth and rejoicing throughout the whole kingdom. And those who had refused going with me, as Maleck told me, hung their heads for shame and sorrow, that they had missed the opportunity of bearing a part in the expedition.

I demonstrated to the king, that the only way to preserve that kingdom was to settle a large colony on the plains, between the mountain and the sea, to intercept clandestine trade, and make a stand against any force that might be sent from the Little lands to recover the mines. And I promised to be present at the settlement, and an assistant in it.

Most of the colambs, as I said, being at court upon this complimentary affair, the king summoned them for their advice on my proposals; and told them he had ordered me to lay before them my thoughts on the affairs of that kingdom; and, after many compliments and encomiums had passed on me, I told them the necessity of the colony, the commodity that would arise from it, how I intended to manage it, and what prospect I had of introducing amongst them several extraordinary conveniences they had never before had.

The colambs, who, for want of practice this way, knew but little of the matter, thinking, nevertheless, that in the general turn of things, they must somehow come in for a share, approved of all I said. I desired them then to settle, out of what part of the people, and how to be nominated, such choice of the colony as should be made for the new settlement; but found them much at a loss to fix on any method of doing it. So I told them, I believed it would be the best way to issue an order for such as would willingly go, to repair to a particular rendezvous; and in case sufficient should not appear voluntarily, to issue another order, that the colambs, out of their several districts, should compleat the number, so as to make a body of twelve thousand men of arms, besides women and children; and that such a territory should be allotted to each, with so much wood-grounds, in common to all, as would suffice for their subsistence: all which passed the vote.

I then told them, that this large people must have an head, or governor, to keep them to their duties, and to determine matters of property, and all disputes amongst them. Here they one and all nominated me; but I told them, I apprehended I could be more useful other ways, having too many things in my head for the general good, to confine myself to any particular province; but if they would excuse me in presuming to recommend a person, it should be Nasgig. And immediately Nasgig being sent for, and accepting it, they conferred it upon him.

All things, as I judged, went on in so smooth a way, in reference to the new colony, that I was preparing, with the assistance of the proper officer, expresses to be sent with the king's gripsacks, into the several provinces, with notice of these orders, and an appointment for a rendezvous. But while this was doing, abundance of people came crowding about me, to be informed, whether I thought it safe for them to go; and I believe I had fully satisfied all their scruples, when by some management of the ragans, who, having so long declared Mount Alkoe to be inhabited by Mindrack, did not care the people should all of a sudden find out they had deceived them, there was a report ran current, that though I and my bearers, who were all Mount Alkoe men, returned safe, yet if any of
the

the Brandleguarpines had gone, they would never have come back again. This rumour coming to my ears, and fearing whitherto it might grow, I had no small prospect of a disappointment; and I thereupon stopped issuing the orders till I had considered what farther to do in the affair: at length, being persuaded I had already satisfied abundance of their scruples, and in order to dissipate the doubts of others, and to familiarize them in some measure to the country and people of Mount Alkoe, I proposed a prize to be flown for, and gave notice of it for six days all about the country, both to those of Mount Alkoe, and those of Sals Doorpt Swangeanti; that whoever, except those who were with me in the late expedition, should make the most speedy flight to the governor's of Mount Alkoe, to carry a message, and bring me an answer from Lasmeel, should have one of my pistols, with a quantity of powder, and so many balls; and the person who should be second, should have a cut-las and belt. The time being fixed, very few had entered in the first two or three days; but on the third day came several over from Alkoe to enter, which the Brandleguarpines seeing, and having equal inclination to the prize, after half a dozen of them had entered on the fourth morning, before noon on the fifth, I had near sixty of them on my list, besides the Alkoe men; making in all about one hundred.

The time of starting was fixed for the sixth morning, from off the rock, on the back-side of the palace, upon my firing a pistol.

This unusual diversion occasioned a prodigious confluence of spectators; for scarce a person in Brandleguarp, except those who were either too young or too old for flight, but were upon one or other of the rocks: even the king himself and all his court were there, with infinite numbers from all distant parts.

I had dispatched a letter, by one of my old bearers, to Lasmeel some days before, to inform him of it, that he might get two letters ready wrote, one to deliver to the first, and another to the second messenger; but not to take farther notice of the rest: now, my flight-race being for the equal benefit of both the kingdoms, it happened, as

I was in hopes it would, that so many of the Mount Alkoans coming over to me to be entered, and staying with me till the flight began; and such vast numbers of persons meeting of both nations upon the black mountains, to see them go and return; and several of the Swangeantines going, out of bravado, quite through with the flyers; the intercourse of the two nations was that day so great, and the discourse they had with the natives and miners, so stripped the Swangeantines of their old apprehensions of danger from Mount Alkoe, that in three days after the whole dread of the place was vanished, and he would then have been thought mad who had attempted to revive it.

The time being come, I set my flyers in a row on the outer edge of the rock; and having given notice that no one should presume to rise till the flyers were on the ground, and at such a distance, I then let the flyers know I should soon give fire; which I had no sooner done but down they all dropped as one man, as it were, headlong from the edge of the mountain; and presently the whole field were after them. They skimmed with incredible swiftness cross the face of the plain, between the rock and the mountain; the force of which descent swung them as it were up the mountain's side in an almost upright posture; till seeming to sweep the edge of the mountain with their bellies, they slid over it's surface, till they were lost in the body of the Swangean, our rocks echoing the shouts of the mountaineers. I fired my pistol, by my watch, at nine o'clock in the morning, but had no occasion to enquire when it was thought they would return, for every one was passing his opinion upon it. Some said, it could not be till midnight, or very near it; and others, that it would be almost next morning. However, we went to dinner, and coming again about six o'clock by my watch, I was told by the people on the rock, as the general opinion, (for it was then top-full) that they could not yet be expected a long time; and the major part concluded they could not be half way home yet; when, on a sudden, we heard a prodigious shout from the mountain, which growing nearer and nearer to us, and louder and louder,

in a few moments came a slim young fellow, and nimbly alighting on the rock, tripped briskly forward, as not able to stop himself at once, from the violence of the force he came with, and delivered me a letter from Laf-meel as I was sitting in my chair. I gave him joy of the prize, and ordered him to come to my apartment so soon as I got home; and he should have it. I then asked him where he left the other flyers: he told me, he knew nothing of them since he came past the forges in his return; for there he met them going to Laf-meel. 'Why that,' says I, 'must be a great way on this side the governor's.' He told me, about half an hour's flight. I then told him, as he must be strained with so hard a flight, it would be better if he laid down, and called on me in the morning. He thanked me; and after he had told me his name was Walsi, he said he would take my advice; and, springing up as light as air, went off, the rock being quite thronged with those who had followed from the mountain to see the victor.

When Walsi came in, it was just seven o'clock by my watch; so that, according to the best computation by miles I could make from their descriptions of things, I judged he had flown at little more or less than at the rate of a mile a minute.

I stayed till near nine o'clock upon the rock, where it being cold, and the time tedious, I was taking Quilly home with me, and designed that Maleck should wait for the coming of the second; but hearing again a shout from the mountain, I resolved to see the second come in myself. The noise increasing, I presently saw the whole air full of people, very near me, for I had retired near two hundred paces from the edge of the rock to give room to the flyers to alight, and expected nothing less than to be borne down by them; when I spied two competitors, one just over the back of the other, the uppermost bearing down upon the other's graundee, their heads being just equal; so that the under man perceiving it impossible to sink lower for the rock, or to mount higher, for the man above him, and as darting sideways would lose time, and fearing to brush his belly against the rock, he slackened, just to job up his head in

his antagonist's stomach; which giving the upper man a smart check with the pain, and the under-one striking, at that instant, one bold stroke with his graundee, he fell just with his head at my feet, and the other upon him, with his head in the under man's neck.

Thus they lay, for a considerable time, breathless and motionless, save the working of their lungs, and heaving of their breasts; when each asked me if he was not the first, and the under man giving me a letter; I told them, 'No,' Walsi had been in almost two hours ago. They both said, it was impossible; they were sure no glumm in the Doorpt could out-fly either of them. I ordered them both to call on me in the morning, and I would see they should have right done to their pretensions. The under man had but just told me his name was Naggitt, when another arrived, who, seeing Naggitt before him, told me he was sure he was second; but on seeing the other also, he gave it up.

I would stay no longer, it being now so late; but the next morning I was informed, that all the rest had stopped at the mountain but two, who were obliged to give out before, being overstrained, and unable to hold it.

The next morning, Walsi was the first at my apartment, when I happened to be with the king; and, speaking of his business to Quilly, he ordered him to stay in my gallery till I came back; and Quilly presently after seeing Youwarkee, told her the victor at the flight-race was waiting for me in the gallery. Youwarkee, who had great curiosity to see him; having heard how long he came in before the rest, stepped into the gallery, and taking a turn or two there, fell into discourse with him about his flight. And, as women are very inquisitive, she distinguished, by the flyer's answers, speech, shape, and manner of address, that it was certainly a gawrey she was talking with; though she had endeavoured to disguise herself, by rolling in her hair, and tying it round her head with a broad chaplet, like a man; and by the thinness of her body, and flatness of her breasts, might fairly enough have passed for one, to a less penetrating eye than Youwarkee's. But Youwarkee putting some questions to her, and saying she was more like a gawrey than

than a glumm, she put the poor girl (for so it was) to the blush, and at last she confessed the deceit; but, upon her knees, begged Youwarkee not to mention it, for it would be her undoing.

This confession gave Youwarkee a fair opportunity of asking how she came to be an adventurer for this sort of prize. The girl, finding there was no remedy, frankly confessed, she had a strong affection for a glumm-boss, who was a very stout glumm, she said, but somewhat too corpulent for speedy flight; who ever since the prize had been proposed, could rest neither night nor day, to think he was not so well qualified to put in for it as others; especially one Naggitt, who he well knew made his addresses to her, and also was an adventurer. 'Had it been a matter of strength, valour, or manhood,' says he, 'I had had the best of chances for it; but to be under a natural incapacity of obtaining so glorious a prize, as even the king himself is not master of such another, I cannot bear it!' She then said, he had told her, he was resolved to give in his name, and do his utmost, though he died in the flight. 'What!' said he, 'shall I see Naggitt run away with it, and, perhaps, with you too, when he has that to lay at your feet which no glumm else can boast of? No, I'll overcome, or never come home without it.'— 'I must confess, Madam,' says Walsi, 'as I knew his high spirit could never bear to be vanquished, I was afraid he would be as good as his word, and come to some unlucky end; and told him, that though he need not have feared being conqueror in any thing else, had it been proposed, yet in flight, there were so many, half-glumms as they were, who from their effeminate make and size, and little value for any thing else, would certainly be in before him; that it was unworthy of a thorough glumm to contend with them, for what could be obtained only by those who had no right to, or share in any thing more excellent; and that he must therefore not think of more than his fatigue for his pains. But as he had set his heart so much upon it, I would enter, and try to get it for him; as, from my size and make,

I believed few would have a better chance for it than myself. And, thanks to Collwar, Madam,' says she, 'I hope to make him easy in it, if you will but please to conceal your knowledge of who and what I am.'

Youwarkee was mightily pleased with her story, and promised she would; but engaged her to come again to her apartment, so soon as she was possessed of the prize.

When I returned, hearing Walsi waited for me, I called him in, read the letter he brought, and finding it Lasmeel's, I looked over my list for Walsi's name, for I set them all down as they entered; and finding it the very last name of all, and that it was entered but on the morning the race was flown, 'So,' says I, 'Walsi, I find the last at entering is the first at returning; but I see you have been there, by what Lasmeel has sent me; though there were some last night who questioned it, by your so speedy return. Here,' says I, 'take the prize, and see they are only used in the service of your country;' and then I dismissed him.

My two competitors appeared next for the cutlafs; and had each of them many arguments to prevail with me, in favour of him, but I told them, I must do justice; and that, though the difference was so small between them, yet certainly Naggitt was the nearest me at the time they both ceased flight, his face lying on my foot; so that as they both complained of foul play, and were therefore equal in that respect, Naggitt in justice must have it. And I gave it him with these words, however: 'Take it, Naggitt, as certainly yours by the law of the race, but with a diffidence in myself who best deserves it.'

I own I pitied the other man's case very much, as I should Naggitt's, had the other won it; but seeing the other turning away, and hearing him say, 'But by half a head! when I had strove so hard!' as in a sort of dejection, I told them, they were both brave glumms, and of intrepid resolution; and gave him also one, with the like instruction as to Walsi.

Walsi went from me, as she had promised, to Youwarkee, who wanted more discourse with her; for in an af-

fair of love, her gentle heart could have dwelt all day upon the repetition of any circumstances which would create delight in the enamoured. Youwarkee and Walsi sat on thorns, wanting to be gone; but Youwarkee asking question upon question, Walsi got up, and begged she would excuse her, she would come and stay at any other time. 'But,' says she, 'Madam, when the man one loves is in pain, (for I am sure he is on the rack for fear of a discovery, till he sees me) if you ever loved yourself, you cannot blame me for pressing to relieve him.'

When she was gone, Youwarkee, finding me alone, was so full of Walsi's adventure she could not be silent; but after twenty round-about speeches, and promises that I was to make, not to be angry with any body, or undo any thing I had done that day, and I know not what, out came the story. I was prodigiously pleased with it, and wished I had taken more notice of her. Says Youwarkee, 'I endeavoured to keep her till you had done, that you might have seen her.'—'And why did not you?' says I. 'My dear,' says Youwarkee, 'had you seen the poor creature's uneasiness till she got off with it, yourself could not have had the heart to have deferred that pleasure you would have perceived she expected when she came home; nor could you in conscience have detained her.'

CHAP. XX.

THE RACE RECONCILES THE TWO KINGDOMS—THE COLONY PROCEEDS—BUILD A CITY—PETER VIEWS THE COUNTRY AT A DISTANCE—HEARS OF A PROPHECY OF THE KING OF NORBON'S DAUGHTER STYGEE—GOES THITHER—KILLS THE KING'S NEPHEW—FULFILLS THE PROPHECY, BY ENGAGING STYGEE TO GEORIGETTI—RETURNS.

THIS race, notwithstanding all that the ragans could say to keep up their credit, and to prevent the people's perceiving what fools they had made of them, had so good and sudden an effect on the people's preju-

dices, that upon issuing the first proclamation, there was no occasion for the second; for at least twenty-five thousand men appeared voluntarily at the rendezvous, of the old slaves, whose masters, though they were declared free, had used divers devices to oppress them, and render even their freedom a sort of slavery, besides women and children: so that we had now only to pick and chuse those who would be likeliest to be of service to the new colony.

Nasgig and I differed now about the choice of persons; he, as a soldier, was for taking mostly single young men, and I for taking whole families, though some were either too old or too young for war; and, upon farther consideration, he agreed with me; for I told him, young men would leave a father, mother, or mistress, behind them, which would either cause a hankering after home, and consequently the bad example of desertion, or else create an uneasy spirit, and perhaps a general distaste to the settlement, so we chose those whole families, where they offered, which had the most young men in them, first; then others, in like order; after that, man by man, asking them severally, if any woman they liked would go with them; and if so, we took her, till we had about thirteen thousand fighting men, besides old men, women, and children; and then, marching by the palace, the king ordered ten days stores for every mouth, and with this we took our flight: but as I was always fearful of a concurrence in the air, Nasgig led them, and I brought up the rear.

Besides the above number of people, I believe we could not have less than ten thousand volunteers to the black mountain; some to take leave of their friends, and others out of curiosity to see our flight. I took three pieces of cannon with me, and proper stores.

Our first stage, after a short halt on the black mountain, was to the governor's palace; where Gadsi received us with great respect. I told him my errand, which he approved; 'For,' says he, 'countryman, it is now as much my interest to keep my old masters out, as ever it was to serve them when in: and you have taken the only method in the world to do it effectually.' I consulted him where

where I should fix my colony; and, by his advice, fixed it on this side the wood, with some scattering habitations behind the wood, as watch-houses, to give notice of an enemy, having the wood for shelter, before they could reach the town, and, at the worst, the town for a retreat.

I found, by Gadfi, that the ships from the Little-lands were soon expected, for that, he said, the zaps knew nothing yet of the change of government, nor could, till the ships returned: he asked me, as there was now a good lading, whether I thought fit to let them have it upon proper terms. I told him, I would not hinder their having the metals, or endeavour to stop their trade in the least; but should be glad to treat with them about it myself.

I gave the forge-men descriptions for making shovels, spades, pickaxes, hammers, and abundance of other iron implements I should want in the building the new town; all which we got ready, and carried with us. We then took flight, and alighted on the spot of our intended city; and having viewed the ground some miles each way, we drew the out-lines, and set a great number of hands to cutting down trees, digging holes, and making trenches for the foundations. In short, we were all hands at it, and the women fetched the provisions; but I was obliged to shew them every single step they were to take, towards the new erections: and, I must say, it was with great pleasure I did it, they seldom wanting to be told twice, having as quick an apprehension of what they heard or saw, as any people I had ever met with.

The whole city, according to our plan, was to consist of several long straight streets, parallel to each other, with gardens backwards each way, and traverse-passages at proper distances, to cross each street, from one to the other, quite through the whole city.

While this work was in hand, I took a progress to view the other country Maleck had told me of. We had not taken a very long flight, before we saw at a distance several persons of that country travelling to Mount Alkoe for metals. I had a great mind to have some talk with them about their kingdom, and ordered my bearers to go to them;

they told me, they durst not, for one of them would kill ten men. I did not chuse to force them to it, for fear of some mischief; but observing which way they came, and that they came in several small bodies, of six or eight together, and that there was a little wood, and some bushes between me and them, I ordered my bearers to sink beneath the trees out of their sight, and to ground me just at the foot of the wood; for I resolved to know something more of them before we parted.

I lay perdue, till they arrived within sixty paces of me; then asking Maleck if he knew their language, and he telling me he did, having often conversed with them at the mines, I bid him greet them, and tell them I was a friend, and be sure to stand by me. There were seven of them, and many more at different distances. I shewed myself, and Maleck spoke to them, when two or three of the hindmost ran quite away; one stood and looked very furly; but the rest, who had stood with him, turning to run, I bid Maleck tell him, if he did not call them back, I would kill them. He that stood then called to them, but they mending their pace upon it, I let fly, and shot one in the shoulder; who dropping, I was afraid I had killed him. I then went up to the other, who had not stirred even at the report of the gun; seeming quite terrified. I took him by the hand, and kissed it; which made him recover himself a little, and he took mine and kissed it.

I bid Maleck tell him I was a great traveller, and only wanted to talk with him; but seeing the man I had shot stir, I went to him, and by Maleck told him I was sorry I had hurt him; which I should not have attempted, had he not shewn a mistrust of me by running away, for I could not bear that: this I said to keep the other with me. I saw I had hurt his shoulder, but, being at a great distance, the ball had not entered the blade-bone, but stopping there, had fallen out; so tying my handkerchief over it, I told him I hoped it would soon be well.

I enquired into their country, it's name, the intent of their journey this way, their trades, the fruits, birds, and beasts of the country.

The man I had shot, I found, was in pain, which gave me no little concern;

cern; so I chiefly applied myself to the other, who told me the name of his country was Norbon, a large kingdom, and very populous, he said, in some parts of it, and was governed by Oniwheske, an old and good king. 'He has only one daughter,' says he, 'named Stygee; so that I am afraid, when he dies, it will go to a good for nothing nephew of his, a desperate debauched man; who will probably ruin us, and destroy that kingdom, which has been in the Oniwheske family these fifteen hundred years.'—'Won't his daughter have the kingdom,' says I, 'after his death, or her children?'—'Children,' says he, 'no, that's the pity; all would be well if she had but children, and the state continue fifteen hundred years longer in the same good family.'—'How is it possible for any one to know that?' says I. 'You may know how long it has, but how long it will last, is mere guess-work.'—'No,' says he, 'this very time, and the present circumstances of our kingdom, were foretold at the birth of the first king we ever had, who was of the present royal family.'—'How so?' says I. 'Why,' says he, 'before we had any king, we had a very good old man, who lived retired in a cave by the sea; and to him every body, under their difficulties, repaired for advice. This old man happening to be very ill, every body was under great affliction for fear they should lose him; when flocking to his assistance, he told them, they need not fear his death till the birth of a king, who should reign fifteen hundred years. At hearing this, all persons then present apprehended that his disorder had turned his brain; but he persisted in it, and recovered.'

'After a few years, a great number of persons being about him, he told them he must now depart, for that their king was born, and pointed to a sucking child a poor woman had then in her arms. It caused a great wonder in his audience, at the thoughts of that poor child's ever becoming a king: but he told them, it was so decreed; and farther, that as he was to die the next day, if they would gather all together, he would let them know what was to come in future times.'

'When they were met, the woman and child being amongst them, he told them, that child was their king; and that his loins should produce them a race of kings for fifteen hundred years; during which time, they should be happily governed; but then a female inhabitant of the skies should claim the dominion, and, together with the kingdom, be utterly destroyed, unless a messenger from above, with a crown in each hand, should procure her a male of her own kind; and then the kingdom should remain for the like number of years to her posterity. Now,' says he, 'the time will expire very soon, and as no one has been, or it is believed will ever come, with two such crowns, the Princess Stygee, though she undoubtedly will try for it, has little hopes of succeeding her father; for her cousin Felbamko pretends, as no woman ever reigned with us, he is the right heir, and will have the kingdom.'—'Pray,' says I, 'what do you mean by an inhabitant of the air?'—'O,' says he, 'she flies.'—'And do most of your country folks fly?' says I, 'for I perceive you you don't.'—'No,' says he, 'no one but the Princess Stygee.'—'How comes that about?' says I. 'Her mother, when she was with child with her,' says he, 'being one day in a wood near the palace, and having straggled from her company, was attacked by a man with a graundee, who, not knowing her, clasped her within his graundee, and would have debauched her; but perceiving her cries had brought some of her servants to her assistance, he quitted her, and went off: this accident threw her into such a fright, that it was a long time before she recovered; and then was delivered of a daughter with a graundee.'—'My friend,' says I, 'your meeting with me will be a very happy affair for your kingdom. I am the man the princess expects; go back to the princess and let her and her father know, I will be with them in six days, and establish his dominions in the princess.'

The fellow looked at me, thinking I joked, but never offered to stir a foot. 'Why don't you go?' says I. 'And for the good news you bear to the princess, I'll see you shall be made
' one

'one of the greatest men in Norbon.' The man smiled still, but could not conceive I was in earnest: I asked him then how long he should be in going to the palace; he said three days at soonest; 'Deliver but your message right,' says I, 'and I'll assure you it shall be the better for you.' The man seeing me look serious, did at length believe me, and promised he would obey me punctually; but he had not seen how I came to the place he met me at, for I had ordered my bearers into the wood with my chair, before I shewed myself.

He arrived, as I afterwards found, at the palace, the fourth morning very early; and passing the guard in a great heat, with much ado was introduced to the king, and discharged himself of my message. His majesty giving no credit to him, thought he had been mad; but he affirming it to be true, and telling the king at what a distance I had knocked down his companion, and made a great hole in his back, only holding up a thing I had in my hand, which made a great noise; Oniwheske ordered his daughter to come before him, who having herself heard the man's report, and being very willing to believe it, with the king's leave, desired that the messenger might be detained till the appointed day, and taken care of; and that preparation should be made for the reception of the stranger, in case it should be true.

The noise of my coming, and my errand, excited every one's curiosity to see me arrive; and the day being come, I hovered over the city a considerable time, to be sure of grounding right. The king and his daughter, on the rumour of my appearing, came forth to view me, and receive me at my alighting. The people were collected into a large square, on one side of the palace, and standing in several clusters at different places, I judged where the king might seem most likely to be, and ordered my bearers to alight there; but I happened upon the most unlucky post, as it might have proved, and at the same time the most lucky I could have found there; for I had scarce raised myself from my chair, but Felbamko pushing up to me through the throng, and lifting up a large club he had in his hand, had certainly dispatched me, if I had not at the instant,

drawn a pistol from my girdle, and shot him dead upon the spot; inasmuch, that the club which was then over my head, fell gently down on my shoulder.

I did not then know who it was I had killed; but for fear of a fresh attempt, I drew out another pistol and my cutlass, and enquiring at which part of the square the king was, I walked directly up to him, he not as yet knowing what had happened. His majesty and his daughter met me, and welcomed me into his dominions. I fell at the king's feet, telling him I brought a message, which I hoped would excuse my entering his majesty's dominions without the formality of obtaining his leave.

When we came to the palace, the king ordered some refreshments to be given me and my servants; and then that I should be conducted to the room of audience.

The report of Felbamko's death had reached the palace before us, and that it was by my hand: this greatly surprized the whole court, but proved agreeable news to Stygee.

At my entrance into the room of audience, the king was sitting at the farther end of it against the wall, with his daughter on his right-hand; and a seat was placed for me at his left, but nearer to the middle of the room sideways, on which I was ordered to sit down: there were abundance of the courtiers present, and above me was a seat ordered for one of them, who I found afterwards was one of the religious.

His majesty asked me aloud how it happened, that the first moment of my entering his dominions I should dip my hands in blood, and that, too, of one of his nearest relations.

I then got up to make my answer; but his majesty ordering me to my seat again, I told him, that as it was most certain I knew no one person in his kingdom, so it could not be supposed I could have an ill design against any one, especially against that royal blood, into whose hands I then came to render myself; but the truth was, that what I had done was in preservation of my own life; for that the person slain had rushed through the crowd upon me with a great club, intending to murder me; and that whilst the blow

blow was over my head, I killed him in such position, that by his fall the club rested on my shoulder, but was then too weak to hurt me.

The king asking if that was the real case, several from the lower end of the room said they were informed it was; and one in particular said he saw the transaction, and I had declared it faithfully. 'Then,' says the king, 'you are acquitted: and, now, what brings you hither? relate your business.'

'Great Sir,' says I, 'it is my peculiar happiness to be appointed by Providence as the proposer of a marriage for the prince's Stygee, your daughter, with a potent neighbouring monarch; having already been enabled to perform things past belief for his honour. Know then, great Sir, I am a native of the north, and, through infinite perils and hardships, at last arrived in the dominions of Georigetti, where I have given peace to his state by the death of the usurper Harlokin. I have also just conquered the kingdom of Mount Alkoe for my master, and am here come to make your daughter an offer of both crowns, and also of all that is my master's, with his person in marriage.'

The old priest then rose, and said, 'May it please your majesty, we are almost right: but what has always staggered me, is, how the person should come; for the messenger to us on this errand is to come from above. Now this person has not the graundee, and therefore could not come from thence: as for the rest, I understand the prince from whom he brings this offer to your daughter has the graundee, and so is a male of her own kind; and I understand the two kingdoms in his possession to be the two crowns in the messenger's hands; but, I say, what I stick at is, his coming from above.'

'What,' says Stygee, 'did not you see him come?'—'No,' says he. 'O,' says she, 'he came in the air, and was a long time over the city before he descended.'—'That's impossible,' says the old priest; 'for he is smooth, like us.'—'Indeed, Sir,' says she, 'I saw him, and so did most of the court.' The king and nobles then attesting this truth—'Sir,' says the priest to the king, 'it

'is compleated, and your majesty must do the rest.'

'I little expected,' says the king, 'to see this day—and now, daughter, as this message was designed for you, you only can answer it; but still I must say it surpasses my comprehension, that in the decree of Providence it should be so ordered, that the very hand which brings the accomplishment of what has been so long since foretold us, should, without design, have first destroyed all that could have rendered the marriage-state uncomfortable to you.'

Stygee then declared she submitted to fate and her father's will.

I staid here a week to view the country and the sea, which I heard was not far off. Here were many useful beasts for food and burden, fowls also in plenty, and fish near the sea-coasts, and the people eat flesh; so that I thought myself amongst mankind again. I made all the remarks the shortness of the time would allow, and then, taking my leave, departed.

I returned to the colony, where I heard that the Little-landers had been on the coast; but I not being there, or any lading ready, they were gone away again: however, they had detained two of them. I was pleased with that, but sorry they were returned empty.

I examined the prisoners; and, by giving them liberty and good usage, they settled amongst us; and the next fleet that came, the sailors to a man were all my own the moment they could get to shore: this, though I thought it would have spoiled our trade at first, brought the islanders and me to the following compromise, and upon this occasion. Their ships having laid on our coasts one whole season for want of hands to carry them back, I came to an agreement with their commanders, (for they were all willing to return) that such a number of them should be left as hostages with me till the return of a number of my own men, which I should lend them to navigate their ships home; and I sent word to the zaps, that as it might be beneficial to us both to keep the trade still on foot, to prevent the like inconveniences for the future, I would buy their shipping, paying for them in metals, and agree to furnish them yearly with such a quantity of my goods at a stated

a stated price, and would send them by my own people; which they approving, the trade went on in a very agreeable and profitable manner, and we in time built several new vessels of our own, and employed abundance of hands in the trade, and had plenty of handicraftsmen of different occupations, each of whom I obliged to keep three natives under him, to be trained up in his business.

CHAP. XXI.

A DISCOURSE ON MARRIAGE BETWEEN PETER AND GEORIGETTI—PETER PROPOSES STYGEE—THE KING ACCEPTS IT—RELATES HIS TRANSACTIONS AT NORBON—THE MARRIAGE IS CONSUMMATED—ACCOUNT OF THE MARRIAGE-CEREMONY—PETER GOES TO NORBON—OPENS A FREE TRADE TO MOUNT ALKOE—GETS TRADERS TO SETTLE AT NORBON—CONVOYS CATTLE TO MOUNT ALKOE.

AT my return to Saks Doorpt Swangeanti, I went directly to the king, and giving him an account of the settlement, and my proceedings thereon, he told me his whole kingdom would not be an equivalent for the services I had done him. I begged of him to look on them in no other light than as flowing from my duty; but if, when I should be no more, he or his children would be gracious to my family, it was all I desired.

'This, father,' says the king, 'I can undertake for myself; but who's to come after me, nobody knows, for I shall never marry. No! Yaccomboursse has given me a surfeit of woman-kind; and unless the states will settle the kingdom on you, to which I will consent, it will probably be torn to pieces again by different competitors; for I am the last of the line of Begsurbeck, and of all the blood-royals: and, indeed, who is so proper to maintain it flourishing, as he who has brought it to the present perfection?'

'Great Sir,' says I, 'my ambition rises no higher than to abound in good deeds whilst I live, and to perfect my children in the same principle; and

'this, I hope, will entitle them to a support when I am gone. But,' says I, 'why is your majesty so averse from marriage, merely on account of a woman you could not expect to be true to you?'—'Not expect it!' says he; 'what stronger tie upon earth could she have had to be true, than my affection, and all that my kingdom could afford her?'—'Weak things all, Sir,' says I. 'Why, what could she have had?' says he, in some warmth. 'Honour, Sir,' says I, 'and virtue, both which she abandoned to become yours; and those once lost, how could you expect her to be true?'—'You are too hard for me, father,' says he: 'but they are all alike, and I don't believe there's a grain of honour in any of them.'—'In any of them like Yaccomboursse, I admit,' Sir, says I; 'but think not so of others, for no part of our species abounds more with it, or is more tender of it, than a good woman; and, take my word for it, Sir, there is more real sincerity in an ordinary wife than in the most extraordinary mistress. We are all biased naturally by interest; and as there can be but one real interest between the man and wife, so the interest of a mistress is, and ever will be, only to accommodate herself; for it's all one to her with whom she engages, so she can raise but the market by a change. Now, if your majesty could find an agreeable and virtuous wife, one deserving of your royal person and bed, and perhaps with a kingdom for her dowry, a partner fit to share your cares as well as glory, would it not be a great pleasure to you to be possessed of such a mate; and to see heirs arising under your joint-tuition, to convey down your royal blood to the latest posterity? Would not this, I say, be a grateful reflection to you in your declining years?'

'Truly, father,' says the king, 'as you have painted it, the prospect could not fail to please; and under the circumstances you have put it, it would meet my approbation: but where is such a thing as a woman of this character to be found? I fear only in the imagination.'

'Sir,' says I, after a seeming muse for some time, 'what should you think of Oniwhefke, the king of Norbon's daughter;

'daughter; he has but that one child, I hear?'—'Dear father, have done,' says his majesty; 'to what purpose should you mention her? We but barely know that there is such a state, we have never had an intercourse; and, besides, as you say he has but one child, can you suppose she will ever marry, to leave so fine a kingdom, and live here?'—'But, Sir,' says I, 'now we are supposing, suppose she should, with her father's consent, be willing to marry you, would you have her for your queen?'—'To make any doubt of that, father,' says he, 'is almost to suppose me a fool.'—'Then, Sir,' says I, 'her father has consented, and she too; and if I durst have presumed so far, or had known your mind sooner, she would, I believe, have ventured with me to have become yours: but you might have slighted her, and crowned heads are not to be trifled with; but since you are pleased to shew your approbation of it, I can assure you, Sir, her person will yield to none in your majesty's dominions; for, Sir, I have been there, and have seen her, and she is your own, and her kingdom too, upon demand.'

'Father,' says the king, looking earnestly at me; 'I have been frequently, since I knew you first, in doubt of my own existence; my life seems a dream to me; for if existence is to be judged of by one's faculties only, I have been in such a delusion of them ever since, that as I find myself unable to judge with certainty of any other thing, so I am subject to doubt whether I really exist. Are these things possible that you tell me, father?'

I then told him the whole affair, and advised him by all means to accept the offer, and marry the princess out of hand.

His majesty, when I had brought him thoroughly to believe me, was as eager to consummate the marriage, as I was to have him; but then, whether he should go to her, or she come to him, was the question. I told him it was a thing unusual for a sovereign to quit his own dominions for a wife; but would advise an embassy to her father, with notice, that his majesty would meet and espouse her on the frontiers of the two kingdoms,

The ambassadors returning with an appointment of time and place, it was not above a month before I had settled Stygee on the thrones of Saks Doorpt Swangeanti and Mount Alkoe, with the reversion of the kingdom of Norbon, without a competitor.

I shall here give you an account of the marriage-ceremony. The king being arrived on the borders, Stygee, who had waited but a few hours at the last village in Norbon, advanced to his majesty on the very division, as they called it, of the two kingdoms, a line being drawn to express the bounds of each. The king and Stygee having talked apart from the company a little space, each standing hand in hand, on their own respective ground, the chief ragan advanced, and began the ceremony.

He first asked each party aloud, if he and she were willing to be united in body and affections, and would engage to continue so their whole lives; to which each party having answered aloud in the affirmative; 'Shew me then a token!' says he; and immediately each expanding the right-side of their graundees, laid it upon the other's left-side, so that they appeared then but as one body, standing hand in hand, incased round with the graundee. The ragan then having descended upon the duties of marriage, concluded the ceremony with wishing them as fruitful as Perigen and Philella. So soon as it was over, and the gripsacks and voices had finished an epithalamium, the bride and bridegroom taking wing, were conducted to Brändleguarp, amidst the acclamations of an infinite number of Georigetti's subjects.

The king had made vast preparations for the reception of the princess Stygee; and nothing was to be heard or seen but feasting and rejoicing for many days: and his majesty afterwards assured me of his entire satisfaction in my choice of his bride, without whom he confessed, that notwithstanding the many other blessings I had procured him, his happiness must have been incomplete.

Intending another flight to Norbon, I was charged with the king and queen's compliments to Oniwbeske; which having executed, I opened a free trade to Mount Alkoe; and hearing that small vessels came frequently on the Norbone

Norbonese coast, to carry off the iron and other metals from thence unwrought, and paid part of their return in wrought metals, I ordered some of the next that came to be stopped, and brought to me; and the day before I had fixed for my departure, notice was sent that twelve of those traders were stopped, and in custody at the sea-side: I longed to see them, but then considering that it would take up more time to bring them to Apilo the capital, where I was, than I should take in going to them and returning, I resolved to go and examine them myself.

They told me they traded with small vessels to Norbon for metals, which they carried home, and wrought great part of it themselves, sending it to, and dispersing it in, several islands at a distance; and also sold the unwrought to several people who carried it they knew not whither in great ships. They said they kept abundance of hands at work in the trade. I asked if their artificers wrought it for their own profit or their masters. They told me for masters, themselves being all slaves. 'And are you all slaves?' says I. They told me 'Yes,' all but one, pointing to him. I then ordered him to be secured and removed; and told them if they would procure some hands to settle at Norbon and Mount Alkoe, they should all be made free, have lands assigned them, and have other privileges, and I did not doubt in time would become the richest men in the country; for I understood by them they were acquainted with the use of money. I asked them what other commodities they brought to Norbon in exchange: they said cloaths for the people, both what they received in exchange from others who bought their iron, and some of a coarser sort of their own making. I found, in my discourse I had with them, that out of my eleven men there were persons of four different occupations; so I promised those who would stay with me their freedoms, good houses, and other rewards; and sending three hands home with the vessel, and a full freight, according to the value of the cargo they brought, I ordered them to engage as many as they could of their countrymen of distinct trades, to come and settle with me; and to be sure, if they had any grain, corn, roots, plants, or seeds, usually eaten for food, to

bring all they could get with them, and they should have good returns for them; and as to those good hands that settled here, they should be allowed all materials to work for their own profit the first year, and after that they should also work for themselves, allowing the king one tenth of the clear profit. This took so far with them, that it was with the utmost difficulty I got any of them to carry the ship back, for fear they should not be able to return.

Before I parted from them, I assigned the eight who were left all proper conveniences, and recommended them to the king's protection; and I ordered the owner, then in custody, to be conducted to Mount Alkoe, and from thence to Brandleguarp; where, treating him kindly, and giving him liberty, I made my proper use of him.

The king having lent me a convoy to conduct my prisoner, and given me a license for as many cattle of the sorts I chose, as I pleased to drive to Georigetti's dominions, I made them drive a great number of sheep of the finest wool I ever saw, and very large also; a great number of creatures not unlike an ass for shape, but with two upright horns and short ears, which gave abundance of rich milk; and also some swine. All these were drove to, and distributed at, my new colony, where I let them remain till I had provided a proper receptacle for them at Doorpt Swangeanti, near the woods; when I brought many over the black mountain, and distributed there, with directions how to manage them; and in about seven years time we held a little beast-market near Brandleguarp, twice a year, where the spare cattle were brought up, and preserved in salt till the next market; for I had some years before made large salt-works near the sea at Mount Alkoe, which employed abundance of hands, and was now become a considerable trade.

We had iron, copper, and silver money, which went very current; and had butter and cheese from the farms near the woods, as plenty as we had the fruits before, great numbers of families having settled there; and there was scarce a family but was of some occupation or other.

By the accounts I received from the mines, from time to time, it was prodigious to hear what vast quantities of

metals were prepared in one year now, by little above one third of the hands that were usually employed in them before; for now the men's ambition was, to leave a good week's work done at their return, for an example to those who were coming; and the overseers told me, they would sing and work with the greatest delight imaginable, whilst they pleased themselves with telling one another how they intended to spend the next fourteen days.

CHAP. XXII.

PETER, LOOKING OVER HIS BOOKS, FINDS HE HAS GOT A LATIN BIBLE—SETS ABOUT A TRANSLATION—TEACHES SOME OF THE RAGANS LETTERS—SETS UP A PAPER MANUFACTURE—MAKES THE RAGANS READ THE BIBLE—THE RAGANS TEACH OTHERS TO READ AND WRITE—A FAIR KEPT AT THE BLACK MOUNTAIN—PETER'S REFLECTION ON THE SWANGEANTINES.

ALL things being now so settled, that they would go on of themselves, and having no farther direct view in my head, I spent my time with my wife; and looking over my books one day to divert myself, with the greatest joy imaginable, I found that the Bible I had taken to be in the Portuguese tongue was a Latin one. It was many years since I had thought of that language; but on this occasion, by force of memory and recollection, and with some attention, consideration, and practice, I found it return to me in so plentiful a manner, that I fully resolved to translate my Bible into the Swangeantine tongue.

I sent directly for Lasmeel to be my amanuensis; and to work we went upon the translation.

We began at the creation, and descending to the Flood, went on to the Jewish captivity in Egypt, and deliverance by Moses; leaving out the genealogies, and all the Jewish ceremonies and laws, except the Ten Commandments. I translated the Books of Samuel and Kings, down to the Babylonish captivity. I then translated such parts of the Prophets as were necessary to introduce the Messi-

ah, and discover him; the Book of Psalms, Job, and the Proverbs; and with the utmost impatience hastened to the New Testament. But then considering that when I had done, as only Lasmeel and myself could read it, in case of our deaths, the translation must die with us, I chose out six of the junior ragans, and two of the elder, to learn letters; and in less than twelve months I had brought them all to read mine and Lasmeel's writing perfectly well.

I instructed these ragans at spare hours, whilst I went on with my translation; but finding my paper grow low, having had a great supply of coarse linen, and a sort of calicoes from the isles, in return for our metals, I set up a manufactory from that, and some gums of the trees, which we boiled with it to a pulp in iron pans, and beating it to pieces, made a useful paper, which would bear ink tolerably. But I could find nothing to make ink of, though I sent over all the country to search for every herb and fruit not commonly used; till at last I found an herb and flower on it, which if taken before the flower faded, would, by boiling thoroughly, become blue: this, by still more boiling in a copper-pan, till it was dry and burnt hard to the bottom, in some measure answered my purpose; and I fixed upon it as the best I could obtain from all my experiments.

When the ragans were masters of their pens, I set six of them to copy what Lasmeel had finished, and the other two to teach their brethren; and in two years time, by a pretty constant application, (for I made them transcribe it perfectly fair and intelligible) we finished our translation, and two fair copies.

I then ordered the ragans to read a portion of it to the people constantly in the mouth: they, from the novelty of the story, at first grew so exceeding fond of it, that upon the proper explications of it I taught the ragans afterwards to make, they began to apply it seriously to religious purposes.

My writing-ragans were very fond of their knowledge of letters; and trade and commerce now increasing, which put every one more or less in want of the same knowledge, they made

made a great profit of it, by instructing all who applied to them. This increase of writing necessarily provided a maintenance for several persons who travelled to Norbon for quills, and sold them to the Swangeantines at extravagant rates; till the Norboneſe hearing that, brought them themſelves to the foot of the mountain, where the Swangeantines bought them, as they did ſeveral other commodities, which one country had, and the other wanted, eſpecially iron wares of almoſt every denomination; ſo that the mountain, being ſo exceſſively high, was the barrier; for the Norboneſe finding that difficulty in aſcending and deſcending, which the Swangeantines with their graundees did not, there was a conſtant market of buyers and ſellers on the Mount Alkoe ſide of the black mountain; which by degrees grew the general mart of the three kingdoms.

I have often reflected with myſelf, and have been amazed to think, that ſo ingenious and induſtrious a people as the Swangeantines have ſince appeared to be, and who, till I came amongſt them, had nothing more than bare food, and a hole to lie in, in a barren rocky country, and then ſeemed to deſire only what they had, ſhould in ten years time, be ſupplied not only with the conveniences, but ſuperfluities of life; and that they ſhould then become ſo fond of them, as rather willingly to part with life itſelf, than be reduced to the ſtate I found them in. And I have as often, on this occaſion, reflected on the goodneſs of Providence, in rendering one part of mankind eaſy under the abſence of ſuch comforts as others could not reſt without; and have made it a great argument for my aſſent to well-attested truths above my comprehension. 'For,' ſays I, 'to have affirmed, at my firſt coming, either that theſe things could have been made at all, or when done could have been of any additional benefit to theſe people, would have been ſo far beyond their imaginations, that the reporter of ſo plain a truth, as they now find it, would have been looked upon as a madman or an impoſtor: but by opening their views by little and little, and ſhewing them the dependance of one thing upon another, he that ſhould now affirm the inutility of them, would be ob-

ſerved in a much worſe light. And yet, without any embellishments of art, how did this ſo great a people live under the protection of Providence? Let us firſt view them at a vaſt diſtance from any ſort of ſuſtenance, yet from the help of the graundee, that diſtance was but a ſtep to them. They were forced to inhabit the rocks; from an utter incapacity of providing ſhelter elſewhere, having no tool that would either cut down timber for an habitation, or dig up the earth for a fence, or materials to make one: but they had a liquor that would diſſolve the rock itſelf into habitations. They had neither beaſt or fiſh, for food or burden; but they had fruits equivalent to both, of the ſame reliſh, and as wholeſome, without ſhedding blood. Their fruits were dangerous, till they had fermented in a boiling heat; and they had neither the ſun, or any fire, or the knowledge how to propagate or continue it. But they had their hot ſprings always boiling, without their care or concern. They had neither the ſkins of beaſts, the original cloathing, or any other artificial covering from the weather; but they were born with that warm cloathing the graundee, which being of a conſiderable density, and full of veins flowing with warm blood, not only defended their fleſh from all outward injuries, but was a moſt ſoft, comely, and warm dreſs to the body. They lived moſtly in the dark rock, having leſs difference of light with the change of ſeaſons, than other people have; but either by cuſtom or make, more light than what Providence has ſent them in the ſweecoe, is diſagreeable: ſo that where little is to be obtained, Providence, by conſining the capacity, can give content with that; and where apparent wants are, we may ſee, by theſe people, how careful Providence is to ſupply them; for neither the graundee, the ſweecoos, or their ſprings, are to be found where thoſe neceſſaries can be ſupplied by other means.'

Amongſt my other conſiderations, I have often thought, that if I had gone to the top of the black mountains northward of Brandleguarp, in the very lighteſt time, I might have ſeen the ſun; but theſe mountains were ſo elevated,

elevated, that our lightest time was only the gilded glimmering of their tops, having never seen so much light on them as totally to eclipse all the stars; of which we had always the same in view, but in different positions.

CHAP. XXIII.

PETER'S CHILDREN PROVIDED FOR—YOUWARKEE'S DEATH—HOW THE KING AND QUEEN SPEND THEIR TIME—PETER GROWS MELANCHOLY—WANTS TO GET TO ENGLAND—CONTRIVES MEANS—IS TAKEN UP AT SEA.

I Had now been at Brandleguarp ten years; and my children were all provided for by the king but Dickey, as fast as they were qualified for employment, and such as were fit for it were married off to the best alliances in the country; so that I had only to sit down, and see every thing I had put my hand to prosper, and not an evil eye in the three kingdoms cast at me: but about my eleventh or twelfth year, my wife falling into a lingering disorder, at the end of two years it carried her off. This was the first real affliction I had suffered for many years, and so soured my temper, that I became fit for nothing, and it was painful to me even to think of business.

The king's marriage had produced four children, three sons and a daughter, which he would frequently tell me were mine.

Old Oniwheske was dead, and the king and queen divided their whole time equally between Brandleguarp and Apulo; but he was building a palace at my new colony, which by this time was grown to a vast city, and was called Stygena, in compliment to the queen; and this new palace was designed to receive the court one third of the year, as it lay almost at equal distance between both his other palaces. This method, which his majesty took, at my persuasion, on the death of Oniwheske, though it went against the grain at first, was now grown so habitual to him, and he saw his own interest so much in it, in the love and esteem it procured him from the people, that at last he wanted no spur to it.

My melancholy for the death of my

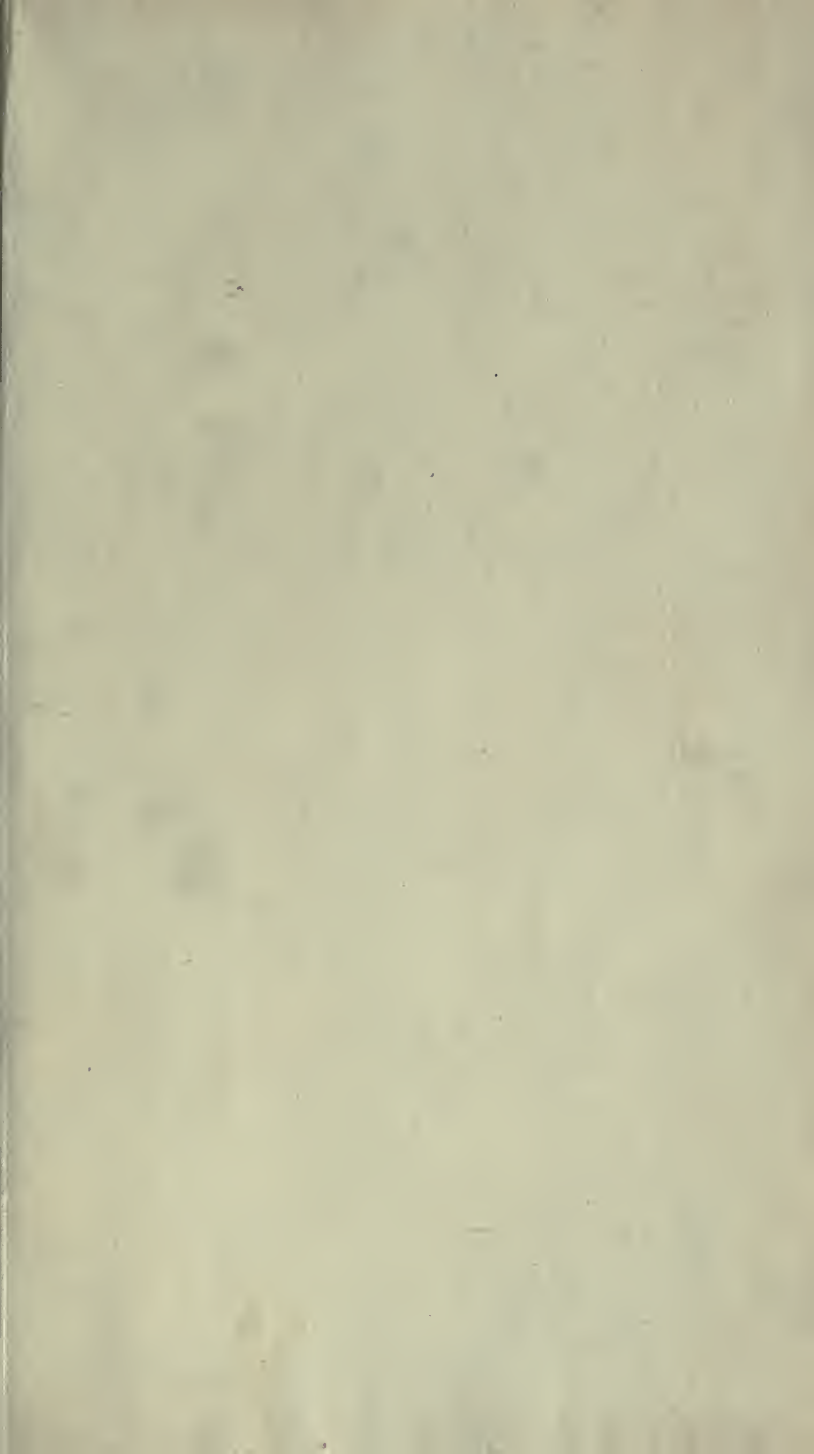
wife, which I hoped time would wear off, rather gained ground upon me; and though I was as much regarded as ever by the whole court, yet it grew troublesome to me even to be asked my advice; and it not only surprised those about me, but even myself, to see the same genius, without any visible natural decay, in so short a time, from the most sprightly and enterprising, become the most phlegmatick and inactive.

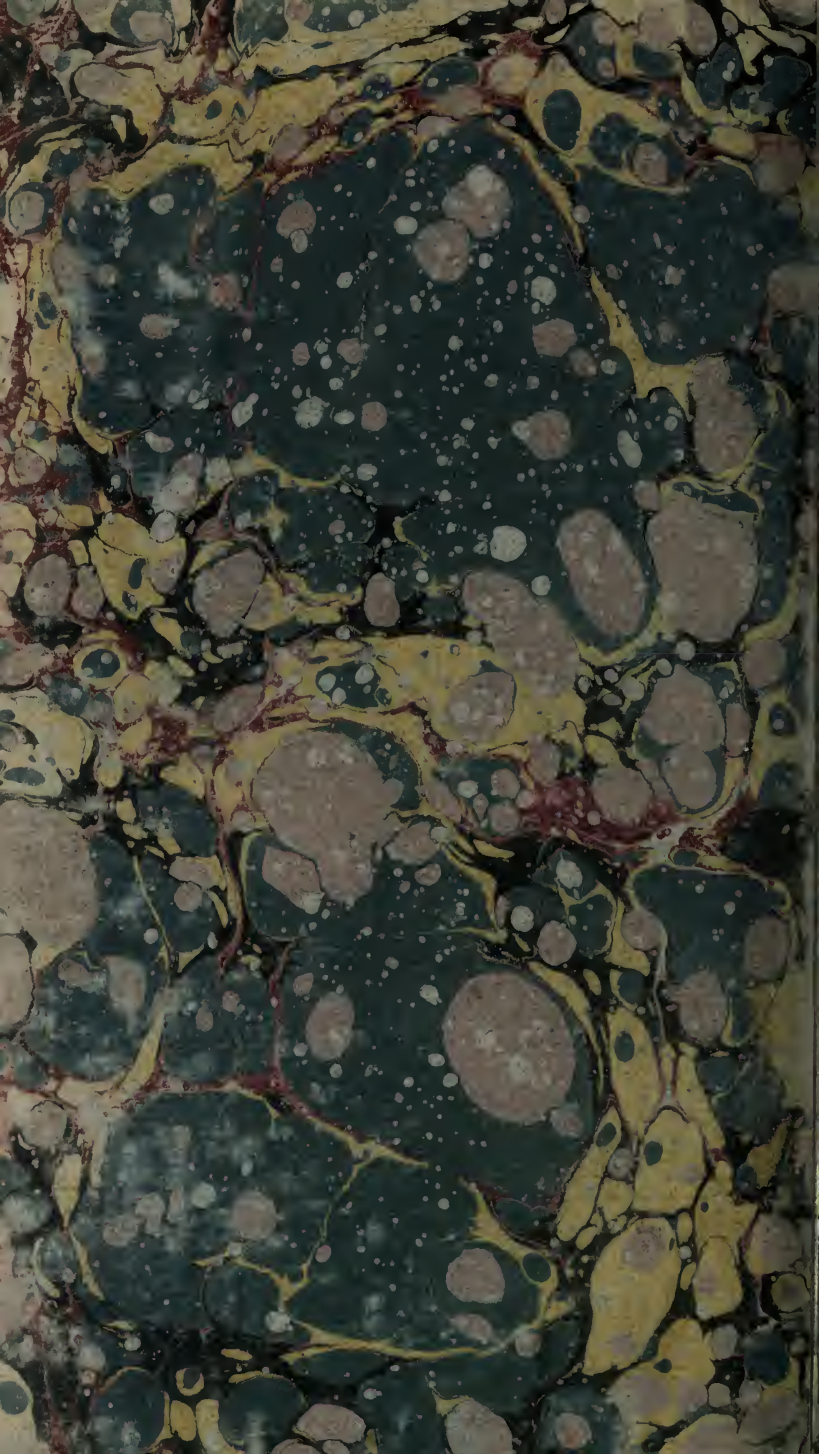
My longings after my native country, ever since my wife's death, redoubled upon me, and I had formed several schemes of getting thither, as first, I had formed a project of going off by the islands, as I had so many small vessels at command there, and to get into the main ocean, and try my fortune that way; but, upon enquiry, I found that my vessels could not get to sea, or elsewhere, but to the zaps islands, by reason of the many rocks and sand-banks which would oppose me, unless I went through the zaps country, which, in the light they had reason to view me, I was afraid to do. Then I had thoughts of going from the coast of Norbon; but that must have been in one of the foreign vessels, and they coming from a quite different quarter than I must go, in all probability if I had put to sea any way they were unacquainted with, they having no compass, we must have perished; for the more I grew by degrees acquainted with the situation of Doorpt Swangeanti, the stronger were my conjectures, that my nearest continent must be the southern coast of America; but still it was only conjecture. At length, being tired and uneasy, I resolved, as I was accustomed to flight, and loved it, I would take a turn for some days, carry me where it would, I should certainly light on some land, whence at worst I could but come back again. I then went to see if my chair, board, and ropes, were sound, for I had not used them for several years past; but I found them all so crazy, I durst not venture in them; which disappointment put off my journey for some time. However, as I had still the thought remaining, it put me on seeking some other method to put it in practice: so I contrived the poles from which you took me, being a sort of hollow cane the Swangeantines make their

their spears of, but exceeding strong and springy, which interwoven with small cords, were my seat, and were much lighter than my chair; and these buoyed me up when your goodness relieved me. I had taken Mount Alkoe bearers, as I knew I must come to a country of more light; and I now find, if I had not fallen, I must soon have reached land, if we could have held out; for we were come too far to think of returning, without a resting-place: and what will become of my poor

bearers, I dread to think; if they attempted to return, they must have dropt, for they had complained all the last day and night, and had shifted very often. If in your history you think fit to carry down the life of a poor old man any farther, you will as well know what to say of me, as I can tell you; and I hope what I have hitherto said, will in some measure recompence both your expence and labour.

F I N I S.





PR
1297
N6
v.12

The Novelist's magazine

PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET

UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY

